

LEGENDARY MOONLIGHT SCULPTOR

3RD COMPILATION

Nam Heesung

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Legendary Moonlight Sculptor

(달빛 조각사)

by

NAM Heesung

(火星引力)

Synopsis

The man forsaken by the world, the man a slave to money and the man known as the legendary God of War in the highly popular MMORPG Continent of Magic. With the coming of age, he decides to say goodbye, but the feeble attempt to earn a little something for his time and effort ripples into an effect none could ever have imagined.

Through a series of coincidences, his legendary avatar is sold for 3.1 billion won, bringing great joy to him, only to plunge him into despair at losing almost all of it to vicious loan sharks. With revelation of money through gaming, he rises from the abyss with new found resolve and steps forward into the new age of games led by the first ever Virtual Reality MMORPG, Royal Road.

This is the legend of Lee Hyun on his path to becoming Emperor with only his family loving heart, his boundless desire for money, his unexpected mind, his diligently forged body and the talent of hard work backing him.

Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

First Edition: October 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Rainbow Turtle @ Rainbow Turtle Translations

Translation Checker by Sunova @ Rainbow Turtle Translations

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Book 21: Message In A Bottle

Chapter 1: Imperial Construction Secret

"Yes, I do."

Seo Yoon said while trembling since she was afraid of speaking. Weed considered the times she spoke and decided that, like him, she was interested in items. (She made him a friend to get her stuff back, married to get the benefits of the rings, etc.) He figured she was forcing herself to speak for the item, so he was being nice.

"Say no more. I understand."

The last thing on the schedule was the wedding meal with the guests. Death Knight Van Hock and vampire Torido were also summoned to attend the meal and were asked to pack up the food. Weed was planning to eat the special food to reproduce the recipes to bring up his cooking skills!

Van Hock, Torido, Seo Yoon and the Golden Bird were walking around collecting food. Afterwards, the castle as well as the nobles and wizards inside scattered like smoke.

Ding!

Seulroeo's last wishes have been solved.

Seulroeo's rings have sealed abilities in them that can be transmitted.

+ Seulroeo’s wisdom

Maximum mana will increase permanently by 3500.

+ Seulroeo’s blessing

Luck is slightly increased by 20 and damage from magic is reduced.

+ Wedding vows

Through the sacred rings, two people’s lives can be shared.

When a person’s health is low enough, up to 50 percent of health can be transferred.

If you wear rings with reduced vitality, the characteristics of the job of the spouse can be applied.

You can use your spouse’s skills at 70% proficiency.

The proprieties of the ring cannot be changed or passed to others.

The ring can be destroyed when the wedding vows are released.

After reading the message, Weed, Seo Yoon and the sculptured life-forms returned to the Inferno dungeon. A heartwarming smile appeared on Weed's face. The wedding was very satisfying.

At the final stage of the difficult S-class quest, not far from where Kubicha died, the ground glittered. The sand was mixed with pieces of Goldman's body.

Weed ordered the sculpture life-forms to search for the remnants and pick them up. There were some parts missing; it was not easy to recover all of what was lost. As Weed went to the Inferno Knight's Circle, he still did not want to give up and tried to search for more remains. When he had almost given up in the chaotic battle with Kubicha, Goldman had rushed in and sacrificed his life to save Weed. Weed doubted Goldman could be restored to the way he was before, which saddened Seo Yoon and the other sculpture life-forms.

Ivan, the leader of the Inferno knights, approached and thanked them for helping to finish off Kubicha. Weed asked him what happened after Kubicha's death. Weed was worried about his quest since he did not meet the requirements, but still received the items. Apparently, Ivan did not recognize that Weed was the Lich and dragon. He spoke of how the remaining Chaos Warriors had just wandered around, lost, since their leader died and they have been able to drive them out, with the help of the fire giants. Weed was trying to get more familiar with Ivan. Although he had suffered many hardships, Weed did not complain. Completing the quest and getting the rewards was more important.

The engraved circle, from the floor scale to the ceiling, ranged

hundreds of meters. At the center of the circle, mana and fire expanded and contracted repeatedly. It resembled a blazing sun aura. Just getting close made the body hot and sweaty. Without the circle, Jigolaths would have sunk due to the volcanic eruptions. The Circle of Power, constructed by the Archmage Imbul, had some cracks made by Kubicha. The trapped mana and fire within was shaking, as if to escape. However, the circle was being repaired. After a while, the circle was whole once again, and pure, white flames burst out.

Ding!

You have witness the Archmage Imbul's Circle of Flame

-Health increases by 900.

-Resilience increases by 35.

-Fire resistance increases permanently by 7%.

Knowledge of the principles of creation of Mana deepens.

But only for elemental shamans or summoners, and wizards otherwise it has no effect.

You have appreciated the scene created in the ancient circle.

-Art stat increases by 4.

-Wisdom increases by 2.

It was the effect of Imbul's reconstructed Magic circle.

Subsequently, another message window appeared.

Ding!

Red Star quest Completed (3)

Kubicha of the Chaos warriors was killed and the dragon weapon was safely recovered.

What happened to the dragon weapon in the end is unknown.

For stopping this dispute, all of the races in Jigolaths can now enjoy peace and tranquility for a while.

All of these adventures, completed by a mere engraver, can be regarded as a miracle.

Quest Reward: Dragon's Sword Red Star, The Golden Bird, Knowledge about the requirements to be the Emperor.

For completing this quest, fame increases by 5200.

Due to the success of this quest, you have taken the title of the “Successor of the Niflheim Empire.”

Through completing quests with high risks, you have gained trust.

It’s possible to be the representative of the authority of each church or kingdom.

Kings, Queens and the nobles can become your sponsors.

With notoriety, you can become the leader of thieves, usurpers or monsters.

Due to the success of the quest, notoriety is reduced by 1200.

Thanks to your heroic risks, your physical ability and related stats will increase by 7.

Level has increased.

Level has increased.

....

With the exception of the Chaos Warriors, friendship and familiarity with all the other tribes have become neutral.

However, Fire Giants will still have a rough impression of you.

Friendship with the savages in the north of the Versailles continent has increased.

In the Versailles continent, the profession of engraver will gain more admiration.

You will receive more respect from residents, and be able to eat free food in the restaurants.

The value of the works made by the engraver and the trading price increases slightly.

A rise of 9 levels and an enormous increase in reputation.

Receiving a quest from a King is a big adventure. With the mysteries and legends of each kingdom, it certain for there to be adventures searching for treasure.

Weed could go to see the King of each kingdom of the continent and receive an audience.

“A quest to gather the people!”

From children to the elderly, they can be exploited.

Building the pyramid in Rosenheim Kingdom, he had received a similar request.

Not only to create a sculpture, a commission to lead a large-scale expedition or to stage a war against the Embinyu church.

“Whoa huhuhu”

He had also gained the Dragon’s Sword Red Star. Weed wondered when it could be used in battle, but anyway, to get to solve an S quest, he could not help that his lips drew into a peaceful smile.

If you fail to clear the quest somehow: it was a bad feeling.

“9 Levels … call stat window!”

Status Window

Character Name

Weed

Alignment

Adventurous

Level

392

Profession

Legendary Moonlight Sculptor

Title

Imugi Slaying Commander

Reputation

37,983

Health

31,360

Mana

17,905

Strength

1,378

Agility

1,065

Vitality

172

Perseverance

753

Fighting Spirit

497

Endurance

226

Wisdom

205

Intelligence

198

Art

1,889

Charisma

414

Luck

75

Leadership

706

Faith

115 +435

Charm

210 +30

Resilience

455

Dignity

36

Concentration

25

Courage

107

Attack

5,641

Defense

1,820

Power of the undead

298

Magic Resistance

Fire

27%

Water

31%

Earth

35%

Black Magic

0%

+All stats are increased by 20 points.

+Art is increased by an additional 80 points.

+30% increase in stats on the moonlit night.

+Able to learn all production skills up to the level of master.

+Able to learn all the sub-skills of each production class. High level skills can be learned.

+Sculptures with high artistic value will increase fame.

+A total of 132 stats have been raised from sculptures, skills, combat, and quests prior to having the title.

Over 100 stat points have been increased from sculptures and production skills since getting the title.

+Bracelet that is currently equipped increases all stats by 15.

+Special Necromancer skills, the body has been imbued with the Power of the Undead.

With his hard work, Weed had steadily raised his stats and his level was close to 400.

Of course, a huge part of the experience was gained through completing quests.

“But the Power of the Undead, what sort of stat is it?”

He had noticed that he had unknowingly created an ominous stat.

“I have never seen this stat before on a message window.”

“Check stat, Power of the Undead.”

Power of the Undead

-It is generated automatically when in an undead state for a long time.

-You cannot distribute stat points to this skill as it automatically increases as you gain experience as an undead.

-The strength and the intelligence of the undead and the summon ability increases with the power of black magic.

-For the good races however, it can cause side effects.

-The “Power of the Undead” sometimes increases in stats rapidly

with combat and sometimes decreases other stats to increase.

-Elegance, charm, luck, faith and morality are vulnerable and a major resource.

-The power of the Undead is overwhelmingly increased, if you stay in the undead stat for too long, you won't be able to come back...

He had received the undead stat, but the stat has serious side effects.

"298, means it's high-level enough to be concerned."

The faith stat, because of the high level, was suppressed.

"I've never heard of this stat before."

Royal Road, and the information related to it, has not made any mention of this stat.

I thought it was impossible an quest to finished...Weed sighed, turned towards Golden Bird and said,

"So...to found an empire, what do I have to do? Once you have created an empire, you get land and taxes and you can sell titles, like knights and nobles, eh?"

Weed was destroying the whole momentum!

Only interested in using the power to accumulate a lot of wealth!

However, with trouble, the Golden Bird explained.

“To found an empire, some necessary conditions need to be fulfilled.”

Weed, of course, thought as much.

“To be an Emperor, you need the recognition and the blessing of at least three of the founding gods.”

Freya’s church and Weed are closely related. Weed is already as close as possible with Alveron.

Also, establishing the faith in Mora can increase the degree of familiarity too.

As a Count, his reputation, comparable to others, is high, and fighting the denomination Church of Embinyu can help him gain friendship.

“I’ll be recognized by the gods. I want to be blessed with the birth of an empire.”

Freya's blessing to create an empire! However, it was not the end of the requirements, as the Golden Bird continued.

"Several species in the northern part should be part of it. In order to create an empire, it should include at least five or more species. The user should also be able to choose them."

"You must have a good reputation for nobles and knights to follow you. Fighting against monsters, solving quests and doing good deeds can reduce your notoriety."

"To construct the vast territory of the empire, enough population is also needed."

"200,000 people should be enough?" The population of Mora was that much.

"It should be at least ten million."

"The people should be able to freely develop skills and hobbies, and many guilds need to be created. To keep away the monsters and fight against thieves, the number of soldiers should be increased too. "

Weed furrowed his brow.

"In order to prevent the attack of monsters, some forts are needed right?"

“Of course.”

“The elite knights must exceed 500, and more than 30,000 heavily armed soldiers are also needed.”

“Necessary facilities should be created, and arts and cultural satisfaction should be high. Craftsmen techniques should be developed…”

Weed was making the face of a person that had received money just to have it stolen away.

If lost money does not come back, you know that a child will feel disappointment!

“Now, you’re not finished. There are more conditions, right?”

…

To build an Empire, there were also many mountains to climb. Weed simply concluded. Reality is cruel.

Weed came closer to Golden Bird.

“What’s going on?”

Weed was summoning Van Hawk and Torido.

“Van Hock and also Torido. Get ready to battle. ”

“Why? Isn’t the battle over?”

The Golden Bird asked him with a strange look.

“I will hit once. …. Guys, beat him up!”

Establishing a hierarchy and delivering commands are good ways to be absolute, but beating gives the best results!

“This is all I get… I’m disappointed, so disappointed.”

“I will not kill you.”

…

“We do not have time, let’s call it a day.”

Weed, after about 10 minutes of beating, stopped. Golden Bird had lost a considerable amount of vitality and dropped feathers here and there.

Decorative golden feathers: Durability 35/35

-Nobles covet these feathers!

-They are very difficult and rare to find.

-Can be traded for some semi-precious stones and, in-store, the owner of the store will welcome you with open arms.

Options: Grace and Charm rises proportionally. Sewing and blacksmith skills needed to make a product.

Weed, of course, put the fallen feathers into a backpack.

“Need to continue pulling some feathers to sell them.”

“Then, let’s go to other places.”

Spreading the underground map of Jigolaths, he wanted to make sure to go to that place.

To find the legendary material, “Helium.”

To increase his sculpture mastery, he had to go there.

“It is at the lowest place, in spite of being the center of Jigolaths.”

Weed was at the head. Seo Yoon and the others followed.

———-

“I guess he is here.”

At the end of a long search, the assassins and the thieves from the Hermes guild tracked Weed to a dungeon their group had never entered.

“Are you sure?”

“Yes, definitely. This dungeon has already been explored.”

“The race war going on for a few days, all we needed was to get to the place?”

Drinpelt was the most professional there for exploring the dungeon.

“By watching TV and the wind movement, the dungeon is fairly deep.”

“Considering the disturbance of the monsters in the dungeon, it would take us three days.”

“From now on, go as fast as possible.”

The Helium mines were just a short stop on the way.

———-

Seo Yoon logged out of the Royal Road capsule and walked out.

Seo Yoon was afraid of going back to reality. It had been a long time since she had spoken to others except in Royal Road.

“But then again, I do not want to be alone…”

Back in Royal Road, she was comfortable with sharing a conversation with Weed.

Overcoming her fears, Seo Yoon opened her trembling lips to attempt to say something in reality. She called the dog given to her by Weed.

Dog Meat was having a nap. Then, he heard his name and woke up. Seo Yoon said his name again.

A beautiful master who gave him delicious food and a bed, was calling him. Dog Meat ran towards her wagging his tail.

Chapter 2: Sculptor's Gallery

Weed looked back at the road several times.

"This is not it?"

"...."

"Well, let's go back."

The number of times that they went the wrong way had already exceeded twelve. Dead ends, dangerous roads that cannot be passed, roads that were too narrow...They had to turn back every time they encountered those!

The ground made it difficult to judge the direction of north, south, east, and west. In addition, the basement dungeons were interconnected, like a complex structure. Since it was so complex, heading to the desired destination was difficult.

Moreover, the place where one would predict helium to be, was unclear.

Seo Yoon hesitantly held out a hand.

"Can I look at the map?"

Weed handed a map of the underground.

“Do what you want. But this map is too complex to easily find out a way to go.”

Because she is sure to be held responsible for the failure of the operation!

“I think we should go there.”

“You think so? Indeed, people can possibly make mistakes. Well, let’s go this way anyway.”

Weed thought in his mind without saying anything, but still followed.

Looking at the map, Seo Yoon guided them to place with a break between sharp stalactites, where there was clean water falling that they could drink. Since Weed became human again, he has to eat like everyone else. Getting drinkable water was no longer a problem anymore now.

“Here’s a bunch of stalactites. We should go to that side...”

“Here, there is also a dungeon. Then let’s go into the dungeon.”

From the passage, the entrance of a large tense dungeon came out.

Weed was lost trying to move in the right direction, but Seo Yoon knew exactly how to find a way.

In order to recover his wounded pride, Weed said to Yellowy:

“I knew the way originally”

“Uh eummeo …”

Yellowy stretched out and yawn.

Thanks to Seo Yoon, the way was easy to find and they were able to save time.

In addition, since the passage was bigger, they could fight better.

You have witnessed “Wandering Hope” by the sculptor Pieche.

Art stat increased by 2.

For appreciating an excellent artwork, sculpting skill proficiency has raised slightly.

They found a sculpture in the passage. Torches in the dark pathways were there to light up the statues!

“In Jigolaths, an engraver came to make this.”

The Helium mine that was estimated to be at a place still far away was near a place like this.

“Identify!”

Weed perhaps wanted to take advantage of the sculptural memories skill to find the way.

Weapons and armor, you can tell directly instead of needing to touch a special part of the work like the sculptural memories skill.

Weed was trying to find the memories of the sculpture and what it saw.

“It’s dark. So dark.”

“….”

The place was dark and the sculpture had been made in the dark. It had never seen anything, so it did not have much memories.

“Let’s continue to move this way…”

Sculptors in the underground passage carved outstanding works. The works were too precious.

“I absolutely have to use this chance to get more art stat.”

———

Users of the Haven Kingdom were angry. The thieves’ actions were like deliberately playing a joke to make them suffer. As well, the reinforcements from the Hermes guild had unpleasant expressions.

“We were in this place two hours before…”

They were confident that they only needed 3-4 days to find Weed. They should have met Weed already. A bunch of battles have made them nervous and they had to fight hard against big monsters like fire giants. They were also hunting, wiping out large groups of monsters; Hermes guild was advancing.

Five days after entering the Inferno dungeon, they found the magic circle and a number of stats went up.

“You feel refreshed after a hard adventure and you get rewards as well.”

Hunting grounds in the Kingdom of Haven were of a competitive level, but skill proficiency had only risen by a little.

But since then, the assassins and thieves had difficulty in

following Weed's tracks.

"I'm sorry, but I think this is the wrong way... a lot of monsters live here, and the underground dungeon floor is made of stone, so it is difficult to find the right trail..."

"I already heard the same thing more than 20 times already."

"Give us a little more time."

"Such words have been heard for a few days. We are forced to go along, but at some point, it will cost gold to keep going..."

There were many people in the tracking team.

They were deep in the dungeon, so you rely on magic and light, and the way Weed went was not easy to keep track. Of course, the footprints went along, but after a long time looking at the ground, you have to discuss the way to go.

"You saw the way clearly..."

His colleagues agreed with him. Weed and his companions had passed this way, there was no doubt.

"But why are we back again to the way we can from?"

Thieves and assassins would agree on the path, only to find themselves back where they had traveled earlier. This was not just due to complex problem of tracking in the dungeon.

Thieves and assassins sighed.

“I don’t know what is going on anymore.”

The dungeons of Jigolaths were indeed complex. Even Weed, between dungeons, lost himself along the many roads and crossroads and went back many times.

However, the trackers were not tied down by that logic since even if the path was relatively unknown to them; they just need to keep track of the trail.

The problem was that Weed and Seo Yoon’s footprints were changing continuously. Weed, with his blacksmith and sewing skills, made a number of counterfeit boots that imitated the tracks of monsters like the Chaos Warriors or the Inferno Knights, and were wearing them alternatively! Monsters and other traces were mixed up so that tracking them was a hassle! Yellowy, Silver Bird and Golden Bird had to walk holding paws.

“I think this is the right path. Those trails lead to the wrong way, so…”

They were tracing the path of the dungeons and making maps. Map created based on various roads with time became erratic

because of Weed! In the middle of the path, the tracks suddenly disappeared.

“This cannot happen, I think. What the hell, how could he move so erratically right?”

Weed guessed there would be trackers. There was nothing wrong with placing several misleading marks in the dungeon. Besides changing shoes, he also had the elemental spirits.

“Dirtman, block this way.”

“Okay, sir.”

“And make it seem as naturally as possible.”

“We will do our best.”

“Footprint traces needed to be concealed. Another way is to disguise the path.”

The thieves and assassins were following footprints that were leading them to the wrong place. However, they were able to notice the smallest details. If the way was blocked, they would use shovels and would even track back and pass the other dungeons and the tracking speed would slow down.

You have witnessed “Flowers Carved in Stone” by the sculptor

Muruni.

-Art stat increased by 1.

-For appreciating an excellent artwork, sculpting skill proficiency has raised slightly.

You have witnessed “Sculptor raising a Pickaxe”, which belonged to Ivance the Master Sculptor of Pierre.

-Art stat increased by 3.

-For appreciating an excellent artwork, sculpting skill proficiency has raised slightly.

Weed and Seo Yoon moved around the dungeon viewing the mining-related artworks, estimating that the place they needed to go was ahead. Of course, along the way, many sculptures were found.

“I see that the headdress is made of silver. Since the craftsmanship is pretty good, it’ll fetch a high price.”

Every time he passed by a sculpture, all the precious metals completely disappeared and those made with precious minerals were broken to pieces.

Weed was someone who would take even the gold teeth off a

sculpture.

He finally arrived at the area with an old rickety sign.

= Helium mines =

-It’s not too late, youth with dreams, to return; I learned too late that even life is an art.

They have reached the Helium mines. Rotten wood was used to build the supporting structures of the entrance of the tunnel. Party has to be disbanded and only a 1-2 people party could go explore inside. Weed’s mining exploration skills were lacking and it was hard to find a way.

“What is beyond this point is unknown.”

Nevertheless, he didn’t want to go back. He decided to go into the Helium mines.

Weed opened his backpack. There was barley bread, drinkable water and the food from the wedding. It was filled with as much food and water as Yellowy could carry. As Weed prepared himself to go into the mines, even Seo Yoon was checking her backpack. Weed shook his head.

“You guys have to stay here.”

Seo Yoon wished to enter the mine, but there must be people waiting outside. It was important to take control of the entrance and protect it from the trackers. However, Golden Bird and Silver Bird combined would not be able to kill them all.

“If these guys run away, you also have to escape and wait in a safe place until I get out, but I don’t know when.”

Weed turned his attention to the sculptures of life. He needed someone to take the load.

Tweet tweet.

The Golden Bird was walking around singing sadly and Silver Bird was pretending to be sick. Even Yellowy was trembling on his four legs.

“I hope he doesn’t pick me.”

The three sculptures of life shared a common thought. They did not want to get into trouble. They were tired of dungeons, but mining was worse!

It was a very arduous place for the body. For the sculpture life forms who valued dignity, it was a place they never wanted to go.

After a while, Weed finally decided to choose someone.

“Yellowy, you will come with me.”

For Yellowy, the decision came out of the blue.

In addition, the feeling worsened since Weed’s eyes were looking at where the rib-eye was on Yellowy’s body.

“If only there was Korean Beef Tartare (yukhoe)….” Weed licked his lips.

“Then, let’s go look for the helium.”

Weed, holding Yellowy by the neck, walked into the mine.

You became an owner of a closed old helium mine.

-Reward: Fame +100.

-Every day for one week, double EXP and double item drops.

-Best possible items will drop from the first monster encountered depending of its type.

Weed and Yellowy was walking down the narrow path. It was dark and the air was hazy.

Somehow, Weed found the dead body of a sculptor and his

carving knife.

Near the entrance of the Helium mine, the atmosphere was as terrifying as a horror film. Even though Weed was not afraid of the dark and thick darkness, there were 8 small paths from the crossroad in front of him; it would be hard to keep track of the trails.

“Let’s enter here.”

The helium mine was like a maze and gave an ominous feeling.

A lot of Sculptors have failed because of its difficulty. But if it was only this level, it did not feel difficult. An unparalleled will for hard work!

2 crossroads were either blocked by lava or had a broken ceiling.

“Well, we have got 6 choices left.”

Occasionally, they were relieved to discover a sculpture. The road lead them to a crossroad, and then another crossroad came out. As feared, the mine was an endless maze.

“Master, what about when we come back to the entrance?”

Yellowy commented, but Weed had a similar idea. If you pay attention too much, you will feel trapped and impatient and that is

dangerous.

“I know, but I think we have already lost the way…”

Weed looked back. Only darkness was spreading from that place. The paths were connected by crossroads, but also covered in the shadows; it was not easy to find the place they were from.

“Let’s go back to where we came from.”

Weed and Yellowy was going to return back to get directions from Seo Yoon.

However, it was very difficult to find the way. Furthermore, the helium might not even be there!

Weed eventually gave up and decided to go back to the entrance.

“When we go the wrong way more than once, without knowing exactly the way, we cannot go back to where we came from. Finding the helium would be just as difficult.”

“Getting monsters would be better than such an atmosphere…”

“This is where many sculptors came. So there should be a way to find your way. There should be monsters and the sculptors who were defending the mine from intruders by creating a maze.”

“A sculptor left a final sculpture in this place…”

Weed would sometimes find sculptures away from the passages.

“This implies that some sculptors came here before. Identify!”

The sculpture was carrying a torch and pointing toward one direction.

“This way.”

Weed moved on confidently. There were sculptures that told the right way one after the other. Yellowy was walking for about 1 hour. Due to Weed’s endurance and perseverance, he could at least hold up with this degree of food intake. It is similar to cockroaches’ overwhelming will to survive. Even if it was the end of the world tomorrow, Weed would still go buy a large detergent at the store for 1+1 deal. Finally, after walking for a long time, at the end of a maze, they found a mining wagon connected to a rail tunnel.

“If we ride the mining wagon, we can go a little faster.”

However, Yellowy was against that idea.

“Master, it just seems that it would be better off walking.”

“We don’t know how much time more it would take us, a wagon

ride would be faster.”

“How about you ride on me instead”

“Believe me, I will not let you have a hard time, but ... you need to get on the front.”

Weed and Yellowy boarded on the back to ride the wagon. There were instructions that said that to move the wagon, move the bar up and down.

Weed used strength to pull the bar and the wheels started to roll.

Kkiiiiiing.

The mining wagon stated to move forward while making a harsh sound. As you moved the bar, the cart was accelerating.

“It sped up quite a lot.”

Weed left the bar and took out the ore obtained from hunting, and used it to illuminate the front of wagon.

Seeing what was in front of the curved tunnel was difficult.

As they were heading in a downward direction, they were speeding up.

Leaning forward, Yellowy spoke:

“Master, you should slow down.”

“Then, let’s reduce the speed.”

Weed pulled the bar.

Cha ka ka ka kang!

Sparks were created as the chart slowed down a little.

“Master you are like me to do it easily…”

Weed heard it just before they got to the end of a rail and the wagon headed sharply down a slope. The speed of the wagon was getting faster exponentially.

“Master, this is frightening.”

“Okay, this should stop it!”

Weed pulled the brakes as much as possible. Because he only invested in the strength and agility stats, the force was incredible. Suddenly, the brake system broke down. The pressure of the opposite forces of the excessive speed, Weed being too forceful, and

the fact that it was getting old, was too much for it to take.

Weed made a judgment.

“Well, we are in trouble.”

The risks needed to be calmly considered. Therefore, Weed objectively analyzed the situation and told Yellowy:

“Perhaps, this wagon might never stop…”

Eum meoeoeoeoeoeoeoeoeo!

“If the railway deviates and we bump into somewhere, we are going to die…”

Any hope was even crushed by this hopeless description!

The wagon was increasing its speed even more as it ran in the tunnel towards deeper in the underground.

“But hopefully…you won’t feel the pain when you die.”

Yellowy was terrified and in tears ,as if he was a cattle being brought into the slaughterhouse!

The mining wagon went even faster.

“Lower your body and hold on tight.”

The railroads were build in straight lines, there were no smooth curves. Every time they turned, as they exceeded the speed limit, the wagon and the whole body were tossed aside as if they could escape the rails. They were in big trouble as the bumpy wagon was still headed down.

And after a while, they climbed up a hill and the speed was reduced.

Yellowy burst into tears of joy.

“Master, now we seem to be able to live!”

With similar happy thoughts, Weed said:

“But we are really lucky. We did not meet any railroads broken in the middle. For a long time, no one has being using the tunnels and it is a miracle that it still works.”

They went uphill and saw a large cavity of unknown depth, linked together by iron pieces between two cliffs. But the most important part was that the railroads in front were cut off in the middle for about 30 meters at the hole. This was a promise of death.

“Master, to be able experience living was great. I have a request for my baby cows in Morata...”

Yellowy, succumbing to his desperate feelings, left a testament.

It was to take deep care of the young cows with affection and not leave then to die. Weed replied as going up on him.

“So you are going to die meaninglessly. Are you going to following Goldman’s example, who died and made me recreate him?”

Yellowy was touched to receive Weed‘s kind words in his last minutes. Weed, in the end, brought out all his resentment.

“The flesh of the rib-eye will go to waste if you die. Do not give up.”

Weed lowered the bar of the wagon to add momentum. They reached the broken parts of the railroad in the blink of an eye. The mining wagon kept up the pace and flew in a parabolic arc without falling down into the hole. For a very short time, they were flying in the air with a frightening speed and were pushed back on the wagon!

kwag wagwag wagwang!

While sliding the wagon back into the railway, it created a huge spark. The wagon, in the narrow rails, advanced without leaving it

in the tunnel.

‘It seems we are not going to die here.”

Yellowy only sighed and in return, Weed, glad that it worked out, said.

“We are really a lucky bunch.”

“…”

“With common sense, that’s true. It has been a long time since it was maintained, and all except that place was fine, and I can do that. It would be normal too if there was something blocking it.”

At that moment, in front of them stood a rock as big as a house and was obscuring and modified the way the trails were going.

“Bump ahead. Get down!”

Weed and Yellowy lowered their body. And the wagon was running towards it at a tremendous pace.

kwagwagwang!

The wagon was smashed into the modifying pit and broke. Weed, to ensure a smooth view, used light sculpture, and his whole body

was glowing. The broken grains and debris were shining, and it was demonstration that was an absolutely fascinating spectacle, but they did not even notice it as they went past so quickly.

Weed said.

“But I sure am a lucky one…”

Kwagwang!

“It’s been twice the case.”

“Like f***! …”

The wagon, as chunks of its parts were coming off, was slowing down. The front of the wagon was broken and Yellowy and Weed had lost some health from the impact. Without his resilience and his perseverance, it could have been really dangerous. Weed, in many ways, was thankful that Yellowy was in front to suffer a greater damage to health!

“Still, it is all thanks to the modifications. Anyway, we are alive…”

Just as that was said, they saw that the rails were cut off in the end. And in front, a wall appeared!

Huhuhuhu!

Yellowy cried out.

It was tough to think that this was the last moment of his life.

“Light fly!”

After Goldman died, the Wings of Light returned back to Weed.

Weed was able to believe they won’t die because of the Wings of Light!

To tease Yellowy, Weed was saying this or that, but he still held his body as the wings unfold and they were waiting for the right moment.

Weed and Yellowy, having confirmed it was time, escaped from the wagon and, at the same time, the Wings of Light emitted a brilliant light and they flew up.

The wagon bumped into the wall and was pushed back more than 40 meters, as its body began to fall apart. Then, after a short moment, the wagon hit a rock and fell completely apart.

Weed, while flapping the Wings of Light, said:

“We’re safe. But, we are still a bit far from getting to the right place.”

Yellowy was happy to have finally landed safely, but he was still too afraid to say anything, in fear that something terrible would happen.

“Yellowy, how about taking another wagon ride when we get back?”

Chapter 3: Coffee Date

KMC's show about Weed's quest achieved the largest viewership in broadcasting ever recorded. Since the broadcast was a hot topic among the audience these days, they organized a subsequent program in the media.

"We couldn't complete the editing as it was a near real-time broadcast. Let's put our efforts and resources in broadcasting it properly instead."

They held a banquet to celebrate the success, and even Saturday was dedicated day and night to finishing work.

Thus, the full version of Weed's adventure was published in 3 parts.

– Part 1: River of Mourning –

Weed repairs the sculptures and creates an alliance of leaders against the Church of Embinyu.

- Part 2: Landing on Jigolaths –

Weed's long voyage across the sea to come to the mysterious Jigolaths.

- Part 3: Dark Mage –

Weed leading the undead armies in battle against the Warriors of Chaos and the Dragon.

The key parts of the live broadcast were delivered, however, in the midst, the viewers' bulletin board were asking when there would be a second broadcast of the adventure and requested for one.

"When is the broadcasting day?"

"Not Sunday afternoon."

Time was determinative to have the highest ratings. KMC media decided to broadcast the full version of Weed's adventure on Sunday evening, and prior to that, they had to agree on the content of the 30 seconds ads.

The director of advertising was displaying his abilities.

"Part 1 is the repairing of the huge sculptures and some short scenes of the fight between King Hydra, the Lich Bar Khan and the Imugi. Part 2 is the volcanic eruptions as well as the arrival of Haven Kingdom's army fleet and the pirates, and the fighting scene. And part 3…"

Directors were expressing their disapproval.

“For part 3, the time for the advertisement is too little.”

“The third part was simply showing the head of a dragon. The dragon’s roar will conclude the advertisement.”

The promotional video made was the work of KMC media, and was as good as it could be. The drifting of war clouds over the Weeping River, the army gathering with majestic music, the lava welling up in the background to attack humans, the Lich and the dragon!

The viewers were watching the trailer and eagerly waiting for the broadcast of the adventure. When they started the broadcast on TV, they had achieved a total of 63.9% of viewership. There was no better moment than that as it was the largest rating recorded, and there wasn’t anyone who didn’t know the name of Weed in Royal Road.

The story of Weed’s adventures in Royal Road was associated with every topic day after day on Internet message boards.

-I am wondering about that sailing skill. How soon do you think you can get on a large sailboat or a ferry and navigate?

-You can raise fish. There are a lot of unknown eggs; dolphins that were born 4 months ago, if you feed them well, they can help raise the speed of mastering the sailing skill. You can keep birds to help too. You are not alone in the open sea. As you navigate, nature will follow.

- Is it possible to find adventure on the sea? Weed discovered an island, can we too go and explore a new continent?

-You can. Assuming that there are many lands unknown in the sea. It is the dream of all sailors to find the legendary Treasure Island.

After the broadcasting of Weed's adventures, the interest for the sea was triggered. Sailing into the vast ocean waters and advancing through its warm surging waves was romantic. The desire to be a necromancer also spread like wildfire.

-I am asking you because you are a former necromancer. After you have gone through your 2nd job as a wizard, were there any major changes?

-Lich! It is totally my dream job. Strong, mean... people under his orders!

Building intimacy with others is hard as a Necromancer, if you kill someone, notoriety will pile up fast, that's the story, thank you. Originally, I did not have any friends.

-Why not create a party of necromancers for adventure? Make like 5000 skeletons, and kill all when exploring a dungeon.

Becoming strong enough to have an undead army, but lonely and alone, you mainly hunt at night. Solo career boasted the ultimate

power of the Necromancer.

It was becoming popular again. In order to become a Lich, the existing Necromancers were eagerly exploring and leveling up. In the Versailles continent, they were often seen by others in towns and castles focusing on equipment or searching for a colleague.

-An adventurer that makes the impossible possible.

- Creating his path step by step.

- The God of War. A hero who does not give up.

Weed became tremendously famous. In Versailles continent, a hero was created instantly. Bards and dancers of the continent made a show about celebrities. They would dress-up as Weed and monsters in the streets, and hold performances to entertain people.

Changes occurred in the sculptures carved by Weed in Rosenheim Kingdom.

- Fox sculpture: Durability: 9 / 10 -

A finely carved sculpture of a fox.

The carved target is a fox that can often be seen outside of the Citadel of Serabourg.

Made in large quantities in a short time, the work is one of many. Is made from wood that can be easily found in a forest.

Despite a long time, it has maintained a vivid appearance since it was well kept.

Artistic value: Negligible

Optional: you can observe the appearance of a fox.

Sold cheaply for only a few silvers before, there was a surge in the value of these sculptures.

- Fox sculpture: Durability: 9 / 10 -

A finely sculpted piece of the fox.

The carved target is a fox that can often be seen outside of the Citadel of Serabourg.

Ordinary people might not know, but it was made by Versailles continent's sculptor Weed.

A sculpture created in his early years, seems to be quite valuable among enthusiasts looking for souvenirs by the famous Weed.

Is made from wood that can be easily found in a forest.

Despite a long time, it has maintained vivid appearance since it was well-kept.Artistic merit: Seems to have some collectible value.

Optional:

-If you use it as a gift for a very big favor, familiarity can be obtained.

-Charm +2

It was not a big change, but Weed's sculptures were bought by collectors. His sculptures prices in the stores tripled, and even the Sculptor guild's requests for Weed's sculptures have arisen.

"How much do you know about the adventurer named Weed? There is a job I want to entrust to him... you're not reliable enough."

"The dangers were high, but... Weed is truly a great adventurer."

"The Warriors of Chaos are a very strong ethnic group. Such species will require great courage to fight."

"In the North, Morata's great lord has successfully completed this expedition. The people in this area are glad to be able to follow such a courageous lord. We are also relieved of the threat of

monsters.”

NPCs, soldiers and residents were talking about Weed.

Even the drinkers would talk about it.

“Ttalkkuk! There is no liquor left. I want to drink more liquor, but I don’t have the money. When I get home, my wife would ask where the money is…today, I’ll sleep outside. I would give a drink to hear Weed’s story though … ”

For completing the first S-level difficulty quest, the praises for Weed reached new heights.

Drinpelt, Grobidune and the users of Hermes guild were burning with motivation to kill Weed.

“Weed, you will surely die by our hands.”

“You and your comrades will surely not get out of Jigolaths.”

“Take the bull and just kill it to make beef-rib soup.”

———-

Weed and Yellowy finally arrived at the mining area!

Ding!

- A sculptor came in the area to excavate ore in the mines.

Rewards: reputation increased by 460.

For one week, vitality consumption is slightly reduced for mining.

“huhu.”

Weed had a smile on his lips. He could sell the land of the mining area since it was a spacious place and he was not forced to keep it.

“My sixth sense was right.”

The mine’s name was connected somehow to monsters hunting, or he might not have an extra request. With his hard work, he might get something. The sculptor had to excavate the various ores scattered around in the land. Weed considered this case and brought Yellowy to help him transport them back.

You have obtained a feldspar.

The smooth surface will make a luxurious nice stone sculpture.

“Yellowy, I’m here.”

You have obtained a moonstone.

It will emit a fragrance in the moonlit night.

When you create a sculpture of a pond, fairies, butterflies and fireflies will fly to it.

“Yellowy, carry it.”

You have obtained a malachite.

The many pieces of materials were treated as merely things in spite of being fairly popular. Naturally, they are handy and can be exchanged for money.

“Yellowy, be careful when holding it.”

The pieces of materials and minerals were put in Yellowy’s backpack. They read what a sculptor had engraved on the wall, and these were what the words said:

The sculptures in the continent are declining.

A new strong challenge is needed for the sculptors.

The sculptures made of helium will give back glory to sculptors.

Is the legend of helium really true?

It is man-made fiction created by greed?

The helium that is an endless source of mana.

If it could be made into a sculpture?

Digging, and digging again.

Here, time is going away and you get old.

Now, there is the power of the pickaxe.

Why would Art be such a poor ability?

Pickaxe hit somewhere.

I was expecting helium, but it was a rock.

How many rocks did I dig?

I would rather have not come to this side...

His words were filled with regrets.

In fact, there were no sculpture made of Helium, but there were a few items made by blacksmith skills.

In the continent, several items such as swords, armor, holy relics and certain sacred stones made by Helium were able to emit limitless mana, and the value of such things were enormous. Weed thought Helium was surely here.

“It means I can openly work hard!”

Although it was easy to dig, digging something was not easy. If it wasn’t for the wedding food they had received, he would starve. Weed could not even imagine not working, since that would violate the laws of nature!

“Let me see that.”

Weed assumed that the sculptor might leave something important and was searching for it.

There was a sack of rotted wood with blunt ends whose performance seemed to be hard to demonstrate.

“In order to work, I need to create something …”

Weed used his blacksmith skills and, with a mixture of steel and a

small amount of Mithril, created a pickaxe. He was using high-quality materials, but the loss could be recovered later by dissolving it.

kkang! kkang! kkang!

Weed's song was top quality. Endless hours had passed.

He had been digging the ground for at least a day, but helium did not come out.

- You have obtained 2 iron ore that you dug up. -

- Found a small amount of copper. -

Sometimes, at least finding some minerals was the only consolation.

Ding!

- Skill earned due to repetitive tasks. -

Beginner Mining Level 1(0%): a miner's skill.

-Skill needed to dig in the mines' grounds.

-Slightly increases the effectiveness of pickaxes and shovels.

-Will increase in strength and perseverance as the skill grows.

-If you find high quality minerals, your luck and fame will increase.

“Damn!”

Weed was feeling remorse and was self-reflecting.

There were a variety of ways to work hard. From digging to be able to get the stats, I should have gotten the mining skills earlier.

“It’s still not enough.”

Weed was caught off guard for a moment, and his position was in a crisis, so he needed to work harder. He could also make sculptures to get the stats, but creating masterpieces would only raise them by 1 at the best.

“A couple of days to gouge what I wish out of the earth…”

After the skill was generated, Weed had improved it a little by digging out rocks. It slightly decreased vitality’s consumption and the range of his pickaxe widened.

“I still need to slightly increase the efficiency.”

Weed left the plow to take the Mithril that Yellowy had brought.

“I brought what you want. I am not eating for free now. I am working diligently to get my 2 coppers each day.”

While carrying, Yellowy made sure to flatter Weed in order to eat!

“I am glad to see the owner. It is really hard to do farm work without complaining while digging.”

With his flattery, Yellowy was able to eat a lot and the work efficiency increased.

However, the mining areas were broad enough to build apartment buildings.

“Nevertheless, there are limits to humans.”

Weed, after a long time, made a statue of the Orc Karichwi. An unmatched ugly-looking face, but it had grown much bigger. His robust muscular shoulders and strong legs were at least 50% bigger.

“Sculpture Transformation!”

He used Sculpture Transformation to transform himself into the

Orc Karachwi.

“Chwiik! Let me see!”

In undead state, there were 2 advantages, infinite vitality and there being no need to eat food. However, when it comes to strength, Orcs were better. Weed was persistently hitting the ground where Helium was believed to be. Orcs were dramatically consuming vitality and had to eat constantly, but due to a significant increase in strength, the digging speed increased and Weed was able to gather quite a lot of ore.

Ding!

- Mining skill has reached beginner level 2.

When using pickaxes and shovels to aim at the gaps of the rocks, vitality consumption is decreased and you will be able to increase the speed of mining operations.

-Perseverance and luck are increased.

The skill proficiency has increased at a very fast speed.

Since robust strength is required for repetitive tasks, to be equipped with tenacious endurance is one of the most important requirements for a miner.

Mining skills has reached beginner level 3.

Mining skills has reached beginner level 4.

He did not know how much time had passed. Weed sang as his whole body sweat. Of course, time intervals were ignored and he was singing in joy and motivation to work.

“When you dig, money comes out, food comes out, rice comes out.

When helium comes out, it`s a jackpot.

With the money, where should it go.

Spend it on delicious food? Of course not, it’s such a waste.

Spend on clothing? After a few years I won’t fit it anymore.

I should keep it to myself and take it to my grave.”

Expressing love for money and thrift song!

The mining skill was increasing and it was now possible to see and determine roughly where they were buried. If you dig more and find better minerals, you could improve the mining skill proficiency. Weed’s strength and perseverance stats were also

phenomenal, and in Jigolaths, you had high quality water and you can dig in mines.

“Let’s dig more and more. Gotta earn money without restraint.”

Weed and Yellowy continued to dig into the ground.

———-

In between his character hunting and adventuring in Jigolaths, Lee Hyun had his midterm exams in his Korean university. Also, the 2nd semester came sooner than expected in November. With the gradual falling leaves, he was waiting for winter break to come. Lee Hyun was walking while carrying his backpack.

“Human’s potential is scary. Living on the borderline of life and death is like waking up to eat while feeling every single cell in the body.”

He was describing the life in the jungle, the life-threatening beasts and insects. He had just gone on an expensive round trip and Lee Hyun felt that the world was weakened by money.

“Hello.”

In Korean University, Lee Hyun only needed to walk and Martial Arts students would greet him politely. Even the seniors would bow respectfully, but Lee Hyun didn’t feel awkward about it. The disciples where formally trained in the large dojo and they would

encounter each other at the same place. They were showing respect and would bow their head to Lee Hyun according to the ranking system.

Lee Hyun went past them. Lee Hyun's name had become famous among the students.

"How did it feel crossing the desert and jumping from an airplane?"

"Africa to Europe and home."

The strange people who enjoy extreme sports spread the rumors that he had traveled to Europe during the break, among the students. Furthermore, it was difficult to hide his past, and the fact that he was called Princess' Knight on the Internet was also known.

"Be quiet. I want to receive a scholarship."

Lee Hyun sighed angrily and let it rest. He needed perfect attendance for a scholarship. Lee Hyun was hoping to be able to go home earlier after school. The spare time to make money was not a lot. He might as well just drop out.

After class began, Seo Yoon passed him a note.

'Would you like to drink coffee after class?'

Naturally, Lee Hyun was extremely troubled. He wanted to get home early to play Royal Road. A few days is needed for the body to feel accustomed to the pickaxe. He needed time to dig and collect minerals, and could not have coffee or eat with a woman. It was Lee Hyun's completely depraved standards.

He did not care for either women or extracurricular activities.

"I don't know why I am called to drink coffee."

However, it was hard to flatly turn down Seo Yoon.

"If I refuse, she'll kill them? Golden Bird and Silver are taken as hostages...They are waiting at the entrance with her, waiting for me to get out, aren't they?"

Seo Yoon was able to talk, but often when she wanted to say something, she mainly wrote notes. Lee Hyun gave a handwritten note.

"Adlay tea."

After the lecture, Lee Hyun dragged Seo Yoon and headed for the vending machines.

"The price for Adlay tea is 300 won. Today, I have to spend 300 won here."

Many students were swarming like blood there in the hallway trying to pull a coin to get a coffee. Seo Yoon pulled his collar.

“Why, you want some Adlay tea too?”

Lee Hyun raised his head, conscious of the stare of other students as he was still been pulled. This meant she wanted to drink at another place.

“You don’t want?”

He looked at Seo Yoon spending patterns, and took a guess. This means a place that was well-decorated, suited for conversation, and with a better atmosphere!

“No way, in the coffee shop?”

Lee Hyun did not understand why people went to the coffee shop. Throwing away money to drink a 3000 won and over coffee. Lee Hyun did not want to pay the price of the expensive coffee! His daily life was better now, but just 2-3 years ago, he did not even have enough money to buy rice. So Lee Hyun stayed in front of the vending machines, despite the fact that Seo Yoon was still holding his collar.

Seo Yoon took out her wallet. There were money and credit cards inside!

“You’re buying?”

Seo Yoon Nodded.

As Seo Yoon shook her head and led, Lee Hyun followed her.

“People gotta get a cultural life. But coffee is not really what I wanted to drink.”

———-

Seo Yoon gave a written note to the taxi driver for the destination. As they rode the taxi, it arrived at the foot of a five-star hotel along the river where the view was very good, a famous place. Again, the gap between rich and poor was showed to Lee Hyun. In the hotel, there was a space for a coffee shop and for watching drama movies.

“I can understand why people come here to drink coffee.”

Of course, if you were eating outdoors, it is especially awesome if you said you were eating on a ship. The drinking coffee as well as the atmosphere and the good place were all icing on the cake!

“I am starving. If you starve for few days, whatever you look at and eat is going to be delicious.”

Lee Hyun sat on a chair in a coffee shop while looking outside.

Through the window of the bridge, he could see the passing river and the lights of cars the were on the road. Meanwhile, it had turned dark and the night came. The clerk put down menus on the table.

"Are you ready to order?"

Lee Hyun opened the menu to get something to eat, and froze up after reading what was written on the menu.

Americano 13,000

Hazelnut 13000

Espresso 13000

————————-

Herbal Tea 14000

Iced coffee 14,000

Coke 8000

————————-

Fruit juices 15000

Cocktails 19,000

———————————-

Tax (10%), extra services fees (10%)

“Gasp!”

Taxes and services charge included, the official price for a cup of coffee was more than 15,000 won. One slice of cake with strawberry jam was priced at over ten thousand won, and hard liquors were priced at anything from hundreds of thousands to even over one million won.

A bottle of water was 6000 won and a small dining menu was between 30, 000 to 50,000 won. Of course, the price was excluding taxes and services. Lee Hyun’s respect for Seo Yoon was soaring quickly. People who usually eat food in these places are not ordinary human beings. Lee Hyun looked through the menu and ordered:

“An Americano, and one egg in it?”

“Excuse me?”

“I want egg coffee.”

Since it was an expensive coffee, not putting eggs in such a case was unfair. Seo Yoon pointed with her finger at the menu entries and ordered a set of coffee and waffles. Coffee with a good flavor, and you could hear calming music. And in front, was Seo Yoon. Since there were people around, it was difficult for Seo Yoon to talk.

She wanted to talk nevertheless. Lee Hyun had gotten used to spending a lot of time together. Looking at her attitude and her glances, he was able to guess what she was thinking. Even in Royal Road, whenever she ordered food, the line was quite impressive.

When she was hungry at the end of a tough battle, he would give her special meals since he knew what her favorite dishes were. He would give her the delicious and easy parts of the roasted meat to eat.

In a fight, he would take the lead since his damage was high. It was difficult to know the warmth of that man. Seo Yoon wanted to take it a step further and forge a dialogue with Lee Hyun.

She opened her mouth and said with a lovely voice:

“Hey, do you want me to tell you how they’re doing now?”

“I wonder.”

“Half Sauce half fried and the other chickens?”

“Have you not eaten them yet?”

“The eggs have hatched and newborn chicks came out.”

“A good earthen pot of chicken soup with ginseng.”

The conversation was running completely parallel.

Chapter 4: Mithril Angel

"Within a few days, we should be able to locate him."

"A few days more and it will be over 3 weeks."

"We narrowed the area, so this time for sure."

Drinpelt and Griffth's tracking team composed of thieves were able to get data on the God of War. The patience they showed while tracking to follow Weed was completely gone.

Although the team that came to Jigolaths, the assassins and the thieves' characters were fairly good. They changed their method and the 8 assassins and the 4 thieves split up the search and any information obtained through this process was noted on a map.

As a result, a lot of information on the underground dungeons of Jigolaths was obtained and also nearly 23% of the entire map was completed. Barely 23% can be considered as negligible, but they excluded the roads and the dungeons that they were certain that Weed will not go. Since this was more practical, they were almost able to grasp Weed's direction.

"It would take 4 days and even including the extra parameters, 6 will be enough."

The assassins and thieves were confident enough as they

narrowed the search. Hermes guild's combat troops and Griffith's pirates were hunting in the nearby dungeons and they were also fully prepared for the meeting.

Seo Yoon was also aware of the trackers who were chasing them, including the thieves and the assassins, were coming.

Excluding KMC Media, the other broadcasting companies got some troops to come to look around Jigolaths via the Hermes Guild. On the Internet, they were looking forward already to see the 2nd showdown between that Weed and the Hermes Guild. In the broadcast, Drinpelt didn't even hide that fact that they were chasing him. In addition, the entire area around Jigolaths was blocked by the Navy and the pirate ships.

Seo Yoon, who was standing at the entrance of the Helium mine which Weed went in, moved to another place. She left traces in many ways wanting to draw the assassins and the thieves, who with their tracking skills based on observing the signs, will be able to see through quickly. To reduce the number of enemies, Seo Yoon deliberately made trackable isolated road signs to lure them in.

"They went in this place."

"Freshly made footprints. Let's follow them."

Looking at the signs, the tracking speed was raised. The assassins were distributed to various locations to ensure the security of the troops due to their low number.

“I’m sorry.”

Seo Yoon, holding her sword, was waiting for them.

“The enemy!”

An assassin who dashed earlier in the dungeon quickly found someone standing in the darkness and threw a dagger at it.

Chou chou syuk!

The thrown weapon was flying and pierced through the darkness! Seo Yoon ran forwards at full power. The dagger brushed by her body. Seo Yoon waved her sword.

“Keuheok!”

The assassin quickly back off from the attack and using an even faster movement speed attacked in front of him.

“How dare you!”

“We’ll have to reckon with you.”

Seo Yoon brandished her sword continuously towards the assassin. The enemy, in defense, was resisting and neutralized her

continuous attacks. The knights of Haven Kingdom's Navy fleet wung their swords towards her. Whenever the knights in armor' attacks hit Seo Yoon 's health would drop. The more the fight last, the Berserker was in more danger since her health was decreasing. Seo Yoon disliked safe hunting. She had died many times while hunting monsters in her early days in Royal Road.

Seo Yoon's attacks were overwhelming the Navy Knights and killed one of them. Suffering continuously under Seo Yoon's attacks, the remaining Navy Knights died easily. Seo Yoon had to move to another place afterwards. The trackers have to handle more things as they were delayed.

***

Kkaang! Kkaang! Kkaang! Kkaang! Kkaang! Kkaang!

Weed was going deeper every time he was digging with the pickaxe. The sideways were also destroyed. In order to preserve his vitality, he took off his armor and was wearing simple clothing to work to find the Helium. Dirtmen were also summoned to help, but they couldn't help at all.

"Incompetent bastards."

Helium was buried deep in the ground and might be protected by divine magic or some special metals since the spirits were not able to find it.

Ding!

Your skill level has reached beginner 10 and it will be changed to intermediate mining skill.

You will be able to dig without damaging along the margins of special minerals.

You will be able to see and feel special properties of minerals.

+2 additional points will be given in all stats.

Since your profession is not that of a miner, your vitality will be increased by a maximum value of 300 and your rate of recovery of vitality is permanently increased by 0.4%.

Your fame has risen by 30.

Strength stat has increased by 5.

“Finally, I have obtained intermediate mining.”

Since he was working hard in silence, the result was that he felt that intermediate mining was still far from reach. A large number of minerals were buried there and he was quietly sweating drops of perspiration in the mine.

Kkoreureureug.

Your stomach is empty.

You are starving.

Your movement speed is decreased by more than 25%.

Up to 65% of the normal vitality will not be recovered.

During a battle, by becoming brutal, Orcs can temporarily exert a strong force.

However when the battle is over, you will feel an even greater hunger.

Weed finely crushed the barley bread in the water and drank it. Due to the nature of Orcs, he had to eat steadily. Yellowy was ruminating about food while plowing. They were endlessly doing mining operations in the area!

Weed would often speak with Yellowy.

“When are we going to find Helium?”

Every time Weed dug using the pickaxe, the area was greatly increased. He obtained many minerals and gems and even found

large monster bones while excavating sometimes. However, no matter what, Helium was not coming out.

“You didn’t end here right, Helium?”

It was understandable if you think about it. An excellent sculptor of Versailles continent came here trying to find the helium!

After coming to Jigolaths to find the legacy of the sculptor, he learned about Helium after witnessing that story. Finally, he became good with the pickaxe with intermediate mining skill. Or course, Orcs could still feel fatigue and had to rest. Weed stopped working and noticed that Yellowy was laying on the ground. Then he looked away carelessly from Yellowy to the wall.

Then, he looked away from Yellowy and carelessly looked at the wall. He learned the mining skill and got used to digging the ground. After digging the ground with the pickaxe, a clear difference was showed between the blocks of piled stone and clay. Weed felt like it was deliberately placed there just to prevent something to be seen.

“There is something beyond I think.”

Weed lightly touched the wall. With intermediate mining skill, just touching the minerals was enough to tell their properties.

“Here, there has to be something. There are not only thick walls.”

Weed quickly ascertained and chose a reliable method. He was piercing the wall with a pickaxe.

Kwareureu Reureung.

Beyond that block of clay walls in the inner space, the figure of the sculpture of angels was revealed.

“There is a sculpture here.”

The gracious sculptured angels were spreading their wings and arms as in welcoming the two visitors.

You saw the Advent of the Seven Angels.

A sculpture by a sculptor standing at the pinnacle in Versailles Continent! The great sculptor master Daycram made it by using Mithril.

The pure Mithril’s crystalline characteristics are fully exposed.

The advent of the angels in the new territories is lively carved.

A hidden treasure in the Versailles Continent.

Will become a great strength for humans including other good

races.

Health, mana, and vitality recovery speed is increased by 40%.

All stats increase by 45.

Faith is permanently increased by 15.

Your footsteps are lighter.

Reduces the damage of black magic.

Reduces armor’s weight by more than a half.

Increases physical strength and enhances the probability to get items.

The brightness of the sculpture weakens evil monsters, making them reluctant to approach it.

- Angels’ blessings are granted.

Racial characteristics double except for every condition above.

If in reduced vitality and health, you can still continue in optimal state during battle.

The divine force will block the special attacks from monsters affiliated with the darkness.

Weed's whole body was overflowing with strength. Due to the sculpture's effect, the orc with ridiculous amount of muscle was overflowing with Herculean strength!

"This is an artwork by the master sculptor Daycram."

It was as though sacred and noble angels just descended on Earth flushing in a magnificent sliver. Heroes tired after a long battle for the salvation of the continent will gather in front of the angels' sculpture which seems to give hope. It was more fitting to be in a shrine or a royal palace.

"Made using Mithril, Holy shit."

The sculpture was completely made with Mithril. If someone has a piece of Mithril, it would be a shame not to melt it to create a weapon. However, to be able to create a whole sculpture with Mithril!

Weed thought that buying wood from a sculpting store was a waste of money, so he cut his own wood. Obviously for stone, it was dug up from the vicinity and used. So with envy, Daycram was thought to be greater. To make artworks using Mithril means that he had very superior blacksmith skill similar to Weed.

“A rich sculptor master with intermediate to advanced level of Blacksmith skill.”

There were no more than five master sculptors on the continent! Weed decided to look for more accurate information on his seniors by identifying the sculpture.

“Identify!”

- The Advent of the Seven Angels

The sculpture master Daycram’s magnum opus!

The world has not yet seen such a work.

If a sculpture of great work is known to the world, it will create a ripple effect.

It was made perfectly by refining Mithril without any impurities.

Do not know of any written means to maintain Mithril in perfect condition.

Mithril’s distinctive brilliance and robustness are showed precisely.

Hidden in the dungeon in Jigolaths, it was discovered by the

sculptor Weed.

As time passes, the value of the artwork was added up.

Artistic merits: The work of a sculptor with divine skills: 57,900.

Options: During the day, the recovery rate of health, mana, and vitality are increased by 40%.

All stats increase by 45.

Moving speed is faster.

Various magic resistances are increased by 25%.

Black magic resistance is temporary added 80%.

The damage of black magic is reduced when you are hit.

Increase in the effectiveness of divine power near the sculpture.

A highly valued religious work: paladins and priests' skills are permanently increased by 3%.

Depending on the profession, the faith stat is permanently increased from a minimum of 15 to 40.

An increase in drop rate for items and a higher chance of getting rare items.

Due to its high durability, it cannot be destroyed.

A manifestation of the angel's blessings.

- Enjoying the artwork has raised the art stat by 87.

Art stat has exceeded 2,000.

When trying to create noble art, it will add slightly some additional effects and reduce the chance of failure.

By appraising a higher artwork, your sculpting skill has increased by 3.5%.

For discovering the Advent of the Seven Angels, your fame is increased by 1,450.

If you disclose it to the public, it will increase the influence of art in the world.

Daycram also made works with terrible options. Other sculptures were heavy or easily damaged so it was difficult to move them. However for the Advent of the Seven Angels, even if it was hard, it would worth of bringing back in Versailles continent.

“Jackpot!”

Weed moved the angels to the wagon that Yellowy was made to drag, increasing Yellowy’s burden even more.

“The sculptures will only sell for a few gold…no, they should be melted and get sold as weapons!”

Weed was thinking of destroying the artworks.

“As expected in any field, reliable seniors lead and the juniors follow. Master sculptor Daycram is a really nice guy.”

Daycram wrote down some words on the wall behind the Advent of the Seven Angels.

Written by Daycram.

Arrived here at the end of a long journey.

For the revival of sculptures in the continent, I came here to find Helium.

“So, Daycram found the Helium.”

Weed desired to be the first one to sculpture the Helium. Being

the first one in any fields of arts and magic, and not only sculpting, is highly praised. He could open the path to a new era, but he was more curious about Daycram's sculpture that would have been made of helium.

Sculpture Life Bestowal, Sculpture Transformation, Sculpting Blade, Elemental Creation Sculpture! Daycram was one of the last master sculptors remaining and he wanted to acquire his skills. Then he could obtain something that was the basis of all sculpting.

Weed continued reading the post left by Daycram.

However, before the story of the Helium, I'll try to talk a little about myself.

Without any disciples, I went to Jigolaths sculpting

I am a sculpting master, but no one wanted to be my disciple, so I went to Jigolaths due to holding a grudge for the painful solitude.

I never expect to meet another sculptor

Wood or stone or metal sculptures, making artworks was so much fun.

However, destroying nature to create a sculpture, is that really the right thing to do?

Magic skills didn’t develop in the past and many sculptures existed.

During those times, craftsmen didn’t destroy nature and regarded it as a friend.

Weed never had any trouble with it even once. He was greedy and only obsessed with obtaining stacks of rocks and harvesting trees in dense forest in good quality.

Weed muttered discontentedly as he kept reading.

“He is just worrying needlessly because things have gotten comfortable.”

Destroying nature in order to artwork was not the right idea.

So if possible, the materials for sculptures were not made from destroying it.

I was also willing to use branches from rotten trees that were eaten by insects.

Picking up fallen petals to make an artwork or make one out of clay.

Of course, the worse the materials were, the harder it was to complete the work.

The sculpture made of rotten tree didn’t look nice and the petals withered and quickly faded away.

I didn’t even attempt to make magnificent sculptures by carving stones and cliffs.

Thus, most of the works were made by melting iron.

After making the sculptures of steel, I was appreciating it alone.

Since I had to melt the steel again in order to create other sculptures, this was the way to cause the least damage to nature.

I was also no longer commissioned by the royal family and the nobles; I had to sell things to live.

I had 1 gold per month and to live, I had to quit drinking and reduce meals.

Without the help of the people around me, I might have died of starvation.

There were unusually rumors known about Daycram among the master sculptors. He was also known for not creating much artwork. Thereby, it was very difficult to find the details about the unexpected stories.

“The master sculptor was an environmentalist.”

Weed was about to let out a sigh.

“But Gayharl’s royal lineage unified the continent, and Zahab confessed his love for a queen.”

Daycram was showing his impoverished and Weed wanted mostly to look away from it. Looking at the angel, he thought that he was rich, but that was a mistake since he judged too quickly. However, Weed, in the end, still didn’t give up on hope.

“He should have something stashed away.”

As other sculpting masters were impressive, he believed that Daycram also held great power.

I even carved using other materials such as the materials discard away by farmers like straw or fertilizer.

When they saw a genuine sculpture by stacking loaf of fertilizer and pining grass on it, people thought of me as a madman.

The beauty that is never seen, but is anywhere.

So, I made a sculpture that is not a sculpture.

Going to the beach to build sand castles on the sand and also watching the waves washing it away leaving fragments of shells on it instead.

The trails on the ground left by the rain were also sculptures.

During that time I saw sculpting in a new light.

If it is a natural piece, then nature is returned to us intact which is great.

Even just fallen trees or rocks lodged deeply in the ground, they all had the breath of nature in them.

I learned the power of using even worthless things myself.

Ding!

-You have learned Nature Sculpting skill.

You can make sculpture out of nature.

You should have high affinity with nature and sculpting.

Will raise the longevity of the sculpture’s materials.

Even with carvings of stone or wood, the remaining force of

nature will not disappear quickly.

If you preserved as much as possible the force of nature, sculpted pieces will be preserved longer.

-An affinity with nature is created.

Since that day, it occurred to me who knew nothing before, to be friends with it

While you create a sculpture while thinking about nature.

I realized that when you a hitting, cutting and breaking to sculpture, you can share a conversation with nature through the skills.

While sharpening a rotten piece of wood, I could still capture mana from the surroundings.

However, people were only concerned about my boat sculpting.

My sculptures which were dirty, steep not good-looking or beautiful, they didn’t want to learn about them since they were hard to understand.

It was very difficult to find natural pieces with mana.

But, they did not believe me since they thought my words were a lunatic's nonsense talk.

- I came to Jigolaths to show the world that I was not wrong.

I made plain works with the Mithril I gathered in this mine while digging.

I tried it because I found the toughness of Mithril and its pure mana to be beautiful.

For a long time, no one was able to see or find it and might never will.

The legend of the Helium is precious information only known to a few among the sculptors and my sculptures were hidden to prevent anyone to find them.

Fortunately, sculptor Weed found out.

"Figure, all that trouble for nothing. It is hard to find what he had deliberately hidden."

The heartwarming respect for the senior sculptor he felt for leaving and giving the sculpture did not even last more than 1 minute and 20 seconds.

Sculpting with perseverance and harmony is a challenge.

Learning to sculpture the nature is tricky, but the force of mana you get from it has great value.

I hope that more sculptors will learn my sculpting.

Teaching and giving it on the behalf of me to the Sculpting Guilds would be nice.

I will leave for Great Debkart Mountains to sculpt this helium piece.

I, Daycram, discovered an unknown sculpting skill, Disaster Sculpting.

If you wish to learn my sculpturing art, climb up the Great Debkart Mountains.

“Oh great. In the end, he grabbed the Helium and left.”

Endless greed and regret for the item. Weed sighed and relaxed since he had to check the newly acquired skill.

“Skill check! Nature Sculpting!”

- Nature Sculpting beginner level 1 (0%):

A sculptor’s common skill. Can be obtained earlier by Sculptors themselves by worshiping nature.

The sculptor master Daycram organized another chance for sculptors to learn it.

Requirements:

Advanced Sculpting needed by default. Might can be demonstrated with higher the affinity with nature.

Based on the natural materials, you can make a sculpture.

Compared to Elves and Fairies, Humans need three times the efforts to raise the skill.

Current Affinity with Nature: 470.

Nature was made the subject of many sculptures. +153.

As a result of the Dark Elves shooting fire arrows on Yuroki Mountains, affinity is reduced.-79.

Due to climbing Horom Mountains, affinity is increased. +15

You have persevered through the great forces of nature such as ice and snow storms and volcanic eruptions. +29.

You have adjusted the distorted climate of the North of the continent. +106.

You have created Elemental Spirits. +80.

You have damage nature for materials for sculptures.. -32.

Due to constructing a mystic pond that preserved nature, you gained the favor of fairies. 9.

Nature has being damaged by building shacks and forts. -47.

You have sailed. +15.

You saw the aurora at Deronhae. +21.

You have kept Jigolaths fire aura. +61.

You have hunted many monsters harmful to nature. +139.

Notice!

At your current level of affinity with nature sculpting, you can use cloud sculpting.

Cloud Sculpting: Nature Sculpting based on what skill you can use. Depending on the level of your sculpting skill and affinity with nature, you can bring up the rain. Can bring nature's wrath and also heavy rain can cause a disaster.

Weed's numerous vandalism of nature was recorded in detail. The various quests, explorations, his perseverance and his sculpting experiences which increased affinity were showed.

"I thought I worked for nothing all this time, but I guess I was wrong."

Even with high perseverance and toughness, it was still difficult to guarantee life, but anyway, until now, as a result of all his sufferings and successes he got affinity.

"Should I go to Great Debkart Mountains?"

For the sake of obtaining the basics of all sculpting, he needed to follow Daycram. Luckily, Morata was a couple of days away.

Disaster Sculpting!

There was no way of knowing what will the sculptures which reproduces natural catastrophes cause. Tsunamis, floods, earthquakes, landslides, snow and ice storms, volcanic eruptions, etc.... If you could create such things...

"It's really a great sculpting skill!"

The skill could not be any more satisfying for a sculptor.

“I have not heard of any rumors about a sculpture made of Helium.”

Perhaps something might have happened to Daycram. The world was dangerous and merciless. If there were no news, the probability of something bad happening was extremely high.

“If you’re already dead, the whole Helium is going to be mine! Kukukukuku.”

Light Wing attached to Weed’s back were resting, exhausted while Yellowy’s body was shivering with fear. Weed quickly regretted that thought and self-reflected on human’s true nature.

Even though he didn’t find Helium, Daycram’s sculpture gave him a clue about its location and he gained nature sculpting.

Chapter 5: Message In A Bottle

After some time only traces of three Assassins and a Thief from the Hermes guild were found. It was a complete massacre.

"Another contact has been lost. The last report that we got from them was disturbing. The search party reported that there is a very strong warrior with Weed"

"Suspend the search party! We need to send reinforcements first, escort the Assassins and Thieves."

Drinpelt reached the destination with the reinforcements from the Hermes Guild. The Holy Knights and Wizards were all battle ready.

The pirates, navy units, assassins and thieves were mobilized to give out support.

The Tracker traced the footsteps near the helium mining region but the track was spread out because of previous fights.

"This way, the footsteps are still fresh."

"Tiel and Dirge create a blockade."

"Make it strong and impenetrable."

Tiel a Navy Knight of the Kingdom of Haven belonged to the top 30 most powerful Knights.

He could conquer any dungeon and come out unscathed.

The initial thieves of the expedition were all wiped out.

Thieves have high agility but very low stamina, a great drawback of the job.

Counting from the escort group a total of 21 people have already died. This massacre was caused by only one person.

Seo Yoon stood by the dead bodies of the 3 assassins and the thief.

Roa: Be careful! There is an incredibly strong woman here!

Travis: Kill immediately! Forget about asking the location of Weed.

AlWynn: The main unit will support you until the very end.

The Hermes Guild members in Jigolaths had non stop chats in their guild chat.

The members of the Hermes guild left in the Kingdom of Haven

kept reading with excitement.

Go chem: It's a fox hunt.

Strauss: More like a wild vixen.

Je Igeo: I've regretted coming to Jigolaths.

Her armor was full of small to large scratches.

Her health and vitality was also diminishing.

The trackers can come out anywhere at anytime.

Due to sleep depravity, she is reaching her limits.

Berserkers fight until they burn their last light of stamina.

The way each job gains experience and skills are different.

When you're only feeding from a party and don't put in the effort you get less of the experience that the party receives.

In this manner it can become a relaxing monster hunt and you still gain the experience.

Whereas if you place yourself in a dangerous room filled with monsters and enemies and fight till the death.

You will not only get the experience but the associated battle stats and skills will rise dramatically.

In such a state of constantly overcoming your limits and facing stronger opponents, putting your life on the line with each fight. This will undoubtedly make you stronger.

Berserker-Yun is in a fairly risky state now.

"No longer seems to be resisting."

One of the few enemies I've encountered so far that could easily win by brute force alone was Seo Yoon.

Mean while the assassins and thieves dragged their affairs were mobbed.

Inflicted with all sorts of poisons the body's resistance collapsed.

"This time!"

"Kill!"

As Seo Yoon shrugged them off, she realized that there was no

place to escape.

Looking at the enemies they're starting hesitate as the fight drags on.

'The fight.'

Attacking while dodging the enemies that consisted of 31 people coming from the Hermes Navy support.

Knocking out these enemies took Seo Yoon's stamina to the very bottom.

After taking all these attacks and injuries it would surely have killed her, if she had another job.

The Berserker's fallout would cause her entire body to get sick and injured, a grave side effect.

At the end of the battle Seo Yoon was taking a breather.

The day before the enemies appeared Weed whispered Seo Yoon.

Weed: "I'm coming out of the mines now."

Seo Yoon was glad to know that Weed was almost with her.

After battling with the enemies for 10 hours Weed sent a whisper again.

Weed: "There was a delay, I'm having trouble with the loot. I'll arrive in an hour."

Another 5 hours have passed.

Weed: "Almost there."

It's been more than 2 hours.

Weed: "Now just around the corner"

Seo Yoon realizing that Weed would be in danger if he were to arrive now, decided to lead the enemies to another place.

GoldenBird and SilverBird were waiting inside the Helium mines.

For their safety Seo Yoon decided to leave.

Grasping her sword she stared at the entrance of the mines, longing for Weed.

Seo Yoon thought to herself. I can't stay here any longer, the tracking team is drawing near.

Her glossy black hair was waving in the air as she turned around and started to walk away.

Scratching sounds could be heard from inside the Helium mines as the wheels of the cart came nearer to the entrance.

GoldenBird and SilverBird were rushing towards the sounds that came from seven wagons tied up in a row that Weed and Yellowy were dragging.

You're late Weed.

Without her knowing, Seo Yoon was smiling brightly.

Weed's heart was inexplicably filled with joy once he saw Seo Yoon.

But was torn apart once he noticed the red letters on top of Seo Yoon's forehead.

Seo Yoon was branded with being a murderer.

Just how many enemies did she have to face for her armor to become like rags.

"It ends here!"

Thanks to Seo Yoon's interception of the thief and assassins, the Hermes guild was still unable to pinpoint their exact location.

We could still escape if we go quickly to the opposite direction.

But Seo Yoon was still fighting Knights and Warriors from the Hermes guild.

Berserker Yoon's status rendered her unable to fight. Even for someone like her there are limits, and she has reached her a long time ago.

Her visor was hanging and she was having trouble breathing.

Drinpelt along with Hermes Guild's military elite composed of Clerics, Magicians, Knights have arrived at the entrance of the Helium mine.

Not one member of the tracking expedition survived. Be it a thief, assassin or navy knight.

Drinpelt: "Thief investigate the footprints"

Thief: "The trail leads into the Helium mines. Looking at the fight that occured here, You can clearly see how savvy Weed fought our tracking team."

Now that Drinpelt has gathered his reinforced army. He is

prepared to face anything that Weed may throw at him.

Weed trapped inside the Helium Mines seems too easy. Weed could be preparing a trap.

"I'm not trying to sound scared, but are you sure that Weed is still in there?"

"I don't know, they may have gotten out before we were able to trap them."

The connected wagons created a clear and easy trail for the trackers.

Seo Yoon then superimposed misleading tracks from very strong creatures that would give the trackers a second thought before continuing their trail.

She hasn't mastered the geography of the place so creating a perfectly discreet circular trail was next to impossible.

"Poison has entered her body and it's in a dangerous quantity."

The tracking team composed of a thief and a group of assassins were exploring the many chambers of the Jigolath caves.

Currently Drinpelt and his men were at a disadvantage because they were chasing Weed in the complex maze of the Jigolath caves.

Drinpelt laughing said, finally the map is complete there is no place where the can hide now.

You can narrow down the search range. It is important to send the troops in an encroaching approach so they can't escape.

"If you look at the trackers even they can get lost in entering the chambers they almost look identical and you need to have a closer look at the chambers to recognize them. In case you didn't know, This mine will be different in the from anywhere in the middle until it's exit."

Helium and other treasures that could have been left by sculptors could be waiting for them inside. This was what was on the mind of the Hermes guild members.

"Go ahead and enter. Have you noticed some of the leaves are out of place."

Drinpelt with more than half of his troops entered the Helium mines.

As Weed expected, nothing's for free. A tough temptation of joining a prestigious guild such as the Hermes Guild was living off at another´s expense. This was also one of Hermes Guild's favorite past time.

It took a while for them to get to the end of the railroad mines. The ride was so rough that it could cause them to get hernia.

"Where is this going to take us?"

The four players who were aboard the wagon got off carefully.

As they got off Weed prepared a meal that was seasoned with sesame oil. As Weed finished the meal everyone ate until their stomachs were full.

- Installed traps killed 3 people and critically injured 1 person.
- Notoriety increases by 29

Weed and Seo Yoon went further into the Helium mines as a burning figure tried to crawl after them.

GoldenBird and SilverBird were carrying Yellowy, and were quickly covering a great distance from the entrance.

"Now where?"

Due to the after effects of the Berserker class, Seo Yoon's every stat and skill were being reduced.

It was very difficult to even walk.

It was very confusing to decide where to begin treating Seo Yoon. She had wounds all over her body, she's poisoned, and her stats

were reducing every second.

"You must run. Escape the Jigolaths you got what wanted right?"

Well, Duh?! Weed thought to himself.

I'd be glad to do that. If only that big oaf Yellowy's legs could carry all the carts. I wouldn't hesitate.

Yellowy thought that since coming to Jigolaths he had only suffered five tribulations and is now finally going to die.

Dreaming about being in the Versailles continent, enjoying the early dawn dew that moisturizes the grass. Grazing happily, enjoying it's sweet wet taste.

Breeding more little Yellowys. Relaxing together with his other living sculptures like Bingryong, Phoenix, the Wyverns.

"But now I'm here in Jigolaths where it's totally packed with enemies ... . In addition, we're going to kill people."

From the scene that took place. Weed looked like the protagonist from a romance movie. Where the protagonist saves the ladies in distress. trapped and isolated.

Where the wicked people to risk their lives to pursue them further.

It was an extreme situation. You can feel the tension in the air. This was the situation where Weed would shine.

The monsters and battles that I've experienced here in Jigolaths had never been easy.

Leading legions of the undead when the fleet of the Kingdom of Haven arrived.

Finding the Helium mines through that labyrinth maze.

As long as there were bad guys who were kind enough to teach me the wickedness of humans, I'll continue to face them.

Weed: "Come on Hermes! Send some more scouting party. I'll be right here waiting."

Seo Yoon: "Be careful."

Seo Yoon left with Yellowy.

The Helium mines were less complex compared to the maze before, soon they will find me.

But the loot from hunting in the Jigolaths, as well as the mithril angel should take top priority. It's a good thing I left those items with Seo Yoon. This should keep my uneasy mind at rest. Thinking

like this should come as no surprise!

Weed muttered softly but nobody was there to hear him.

I was going to look for a place where to put my loot away. In order to dispose of them later once I got back on the continent, Versailles.

Heavy footsteps can be heard. There is no doubt that the Hermes Guild is coming.

The idea here was a bit far out, clearly it would be insane to do this.

"But I have to do this as soon as possible."

Taking out a small sculpture of a raven. As the Hermes Guild came into view. BOOM! A sinister mass of rolling stones came tumbling down.

"Skill: Art of Sculptural Transformation!"

Weed's body was becoming smaller and smaller as he turns into a Raven.

Weed called out to the other birds. GoldenBird and SilverBird! get your assess on top of Yellowy.

-You follow me.

-Roger, owner

-We will be really noticeable, since we are made of gold and silver.

Using common sense. GoldenBird and SilverBird covered their bodies in charcoal powder. Making them as black as the Raven.

And then one by one the backpack hanging from Yellow's back started falling. Yellowy tried to grab them with his mouth. BITE!

-Let it go.

Weed and Seo Yoon on top of the backpacking Yellow grabbed by two birds fly through the passage to the dungeon entrance.

Kya Woo!

The Monsters found them but because they were flying out of reach the monsters couldn't do anything. They gave everyone the slip and escaped.

A group of 3 Ravens with carriages came out of the Jigolaths Cave.

It was a long time since Weed saw the sweet blue clear sky.

Against a backdrop of boiling lava and volcanoes, and those far the white snowy field.

The view of the Jigolaths's skyline and landscape was a sight to behold.

This time his chests feel lighter. It was a sign for one´s fortune changes for the better.

The heaviness brought by using the hoe in all the mining in the Helium Mines was all gone.

Weed use Lion's Roar with all his might!

"CAh CAh CAh CAh CAh Caah CAah CAAH!

Skill: You have used Lion’s Roar.

Morale increases by 200% for all allies in the influence range of Lion’s Roar.

Any present state of confusion will be cleared.

An extra 220% increase in Leadership will be applied for five minutes.

Hearing such a loathing sound, GoldenBird and SilverBird flew out of sight.

Still Weed felt proud. Shameless of the audacious sound that he had just made.

Weed's black pupils quickly surveyed all of Jigolaths that could be seen.

"Well, that's quite a turn out."

Kingdom of Haven's fleet of sailors together with Griffith and his Pirates where on the look out for Weed.

When the Hermes Guild sends reinforcements, they send an entire naval fleet of sailors.

Weed has greatly troubled Drinpelt. Due to the substantial damage of his combat crew. Finding replacements is gonna be difficult.

There are dozens of ships docked around the Unfreezing River. Warships and Pirate ships came in sight.

Art of Sculptural Transformation is really useful. Weed was racking up his brain trying to figure out how to escape this difficult situation. He refuses to give up.

I could get help using Yurin's Picture Teleportation.

Of course even among the enemies they had Magicians who could

use space distortions spells, and landing in the wrong place could easily put them in harm's way.

In any case, the risk is too great and I can't endanger Yurin.

Furthermore, Picture Teleportation requires specific details for it to work and all I did in Jigolaths was hunting and mining for precious minerals.

I can't let the few precious people in my life get caught and be taken hostage in Jigolaths.

Somehow I had to obtain a ship and get the hell out.

-Follow me.

Weed flew to the sky and passed above the warships.

He flew along the Unfreezing River.

It was hard flying. slightly higher above the temperature difference was intense and also there was a strong wind.

The raven took a break once he reached down to the reef, and again repeated the same flight over!

Northeast of the Unfreezing River there was a beach leading to

the entrance of the sea.

"Art of Sculptural Transformation Cancel!"

After returning to human form Weed opened his backpack.

He pulled out several glass bottles.

The bottles were filled with wine, distilled whiskey, medicinal herbs, snakes, several kinds of liquors. Weed was always prepared.

Grudgingly Weed empties the bottles.

"I have to empty these bottles so I can send out my messages."

If you look at the movies often when a person is stuck in a deserted island they would send out their dying notes inside glass bottles. In hope that it would reach someone.

All of my bottles have been sent out to sea.

Weed was also following this behavior.

All the Undead that sees this message. Come here. Renounce the world, embrace the darkness. Let us dye this world with the living. It is time to invite you to death. Hear my call my comrades.

~Immortal Warrior, Weed

He was flexing the palm of his hands while thinking of how the note could make a striking impression.

"And you may never know ....."

Weed started pulling out the dwindling trees on the beach after wards proceeded to chop them into pieces.

Repairing the Ghost Ship's broken mast and hull would require a lot of wood.

Purplish Musty Smelling Ship: Durability 4/49 Old Ship. Soaked in salty waters for a long time, like the Ghost of the Ocean. Known to have bad luck attributes. Bringing around misfortune. Creating something from unsuitable material.

Options:

Luck -15

Riding aboard would cause you to recall hunger and thirst.

Being nearby would cause you to receive many types of minor curses.

Weed used the pieces of wood from the Ghost Ship and started sculpting out a skulls.

"All of these pieces could have been sold as souvenirs."

There are hundreds of bottles containing the skull and note and I drifted them all out to sea.

Tiny pieces of sculptures made from the Ghost Ship headed out to sea, sloshing through waves in the distant.

"And now to test my newly acquired sculptural skill....."

Weed dipped both of his hands in sea water.

"Skill: Sculptural materials comprehension!"

-Sea water.

It is known that there are many components of sea water.

From the shoreline you have gained understanding of its composition.

The water has vitality and broad tolerance properties.

Weed's hand with lit up the waters started to sparkle.

"Water is nature's Mana without compromising the good pieces."

Water can be sculpted without need for cutting off pieces but rather by molding them together.

"Skill: Nature Sculpting!"

Slipping between his fingers the waters started to float into the air.

Being not quite prepared the floating water was in disheveled form.

Weed might be able to do so much for the neck, too Yellowy water up and then pulls out a knife, a piece of v-trim shape.

"You'll need to create decent work."

You can't expect to create a masterpiece on the first try. That's just absurd.

Weed stared at his sculpture on the far off distance. It was the Ghost Ship with The Undead Pirate Deoreol reaching out with one hand.

Ttitring!

Ghost Ship Sculpture Piece

The sea is rich of pirates!

A poorly made sculpture of the undead, even calling alright would be a stretch.

This piece was made purely with water.

Artistic value: 179.

Special options:

Enhances the abilities of the Undead.

Ghost Ship gives up 5% of their movement speed.

If in the ocean leadership increases by 2%.

Water can be sculpted without need for cutting off pieces but rather by molding them together.

An ordinary piece. It could be described as fairly modest work.

"Skill: Cloud Sculpting!"

Weed's created sculpture started to evaporate and slowly started to disappear.

-Cloud Sculpting.

The created Cloud Sculptures would be depending on the nature affinity with the water.

Skill level is low, the affinity with clouds will determine if there will be many mistakes.

High clouds formed over the sky. It was as if the clouds were eating each other creating a gigantic figure.

It was a cloud sculpture in the sky. A perfect reproduction of the Ghost Ship and the Undead Pirate Deoreol!

For the first time Weed created a colossal cloud sculpture, made by putting nimbus clouds together.

Depending on the winds the colossal cloud sculpture started to flow into the sea.

Planer sees the gigantic cloud sculpture flying over. A flying

Ghost Ship.... No it's the Flying Dutchman! That's a clear sign of approaching disaster.

"Goodness..... Was this thing from the sea? From which direction?"

The ghost sailors dressed in rags pulls out a bottle that showed markings from their captain.

Opening the bottle, they wondered what their renowned pirate captain wanted. Even if they were angry for how he treated them while they were still under his commands. They still respected his power and decided to read what the note indicated.

"Right... amidst... called... second. Sail.... to unfold..... have.... all.... inside.... sailing."

Suddenly the rope binding the sails of the Flying Dutchman was released.

The sails needed to be tighten the smashing wind was stretching it out. The sails had holes and correctly tightening them was hard.

Even so, The Flying Dutchman was breezing right through, advancing towards the northeast coast.

Weed received a message in the bottle. It wasn't only going to be the Ghost Ship and The Flying Dutchman.

A group of smaller ghost ships turned up. Deoreol read the note and changed course towards them.

"Fairly good turn out..... Let us see....."

"We ...A bu. ..Roll. Riches ...Dea ...Wealth can. .....People ...A Messenger. "

"Chaos ...Of the ...Warrior ...Champion.... Hatch ...Lucky ... best ...fortune ...Destroyed the ...former. ..Gratitude of fire well this ...Everything."

Weed had transformed again and turns into a lich with advanced Undead Summoning skills.

Skills can give unpredictable effects through most of the glass bottles messages were delivered to Ship Ghost.

From the time of hunting and defeating the Chaos Warriors you have gained the respect of the Undead in addition your Ghost Ship has become famous as well. Your heroic deeds are known throughout the Versailles continent.

Weed who had absolutely no interest in others was being talked by everyone. The heroic tales of the Undead Pirate Deoreol on the high seas.

Had this been the effect of his colossal Fame?

Ghost Ship Captain Deoreol is not the only moving in the vicinity.

"Deo.. Glass Bottle ...Lead, sea ...War ...Now."

Planer, traveling at full speed covered a great distance. They came from the northern coast of the continent. Finally he found the Ghost Ship. He was happy that he could now be of service to the famous Undead Captain.

Their Ghost Ship was being pulled by a strong current and was pulling them near the entrance of a whirlpool that could suck them in.

The Ghost Ship must not be destroyed at all cost, no matter what damage may happen to hull as long as we don't become a ship wreck.

The strong current was sucking their Ghost Ship into the whirlpool, they appeared to be moving westwardly from the continent.

"This... is no mistake.... Oh...."

Weed went near the entrance of the whirlpool where the Ghost Ship from the North was sucked in.

Where are they? There a huge area to cover!

The sunken Ghost Ship slowly began to merge from the sea.

With the advance skill of summoning undead, the undead started to awaken from the sunken ship wreck.

"Kill kill kill, the fight is not over."

200 years ago there was a famous brutal sea pirate, Jabeuricha!

He was abandoned on a deserted island together with his men. There they starved to death making them spiteful Undeads.

Let him on the white sands of the vial was resourceful in where movable but slip.

On his white sandy beach he found a glass bottle with a message. It inspired him with an unshakable resolution.

"HAHAHAHA, HAHAHAHA KILL!"

With no way off the island he was pacing around the beach, when a passing by Ghost Ship appeared he and his men hitched a ride.

"Where ... are you headed to...? "

"Towards.... Weed."

"Come join.... destination.... this forces."

The Ghost Ship was slipping through storms and rough waves advancing towards the assembling mass of Undead.

To navigate the ship through the storms, logs and kegs were used. The Undead were growing in numbers.

Pale and company were in Mordred the former capital of the past Nephilheim Empire after barely finishing a Quest.

"Whoa, that was really difficult!"

Irene was reluctant to relax but collapsed on the floor after knowing the difficult Quest was completed.

"Monster's haven, was not an exaggeration."

Hwaryeong was also exhausted and was catching her breath and said.

"I would've preferred it if I was dancing on stage in front of my fans."

She was used to performing enthusiastically in front of many audiences, but in the end dancing in front of a swarm of monsters was the best.

However until now no one in Morata or anywhere else has professionally forged a knight's sword that could equal that of the descendant from a noble family General Commander Biteoreu.

-Acquired the royal sword of Great General Biteoreu.

Morata city receives the legacy on how to craft Biteoreu's royal sword.

The city's weapons technology grows quickly.

Another reward from Biteoreu's Legacy Quest were a bunch of jewels, which they decided to keep in secret.

"Soon we can professionally produce quality swords on par with that royal sword and our shield making skills have leveled up as well."

It sure was worth it getting rid of all the monsters and bringing back the legacy of Biteoreu's sword.

Off shore Merchant Mapan was eager to trade the jewels, knowing that they want to dispose of them he will surely make a lot of money with it.

"Everyone, Merchant Mapan here, I have some jewels here that I'm sure you'd like you to make an offer on."

"You must see their caliber."

The local residents started moving towards him to see for their own, needless to say the things that Mapan sells are of a certain degree.

But the crowd mellowed out as once again an event popped out.

Weed, beloved/dear, kill/murder, harm/danger, Hermes Guild, send, reinforcements, Jigolaths, arrival

"Our beloved Weed is in danger. The reinforcements that the Hermes Guild has sent to Jigolaths has arrived and they plan to kill him."

"Isn't it our obligation to help him?"

We don't have to tell you this, Everyone's attention was on Maylon's Royal Road show and other related programs that were watching their encounter.

The Hermes Guild from the Kingdom of Haven had been watching the from the start and was excited to see the fight between Weed and their fleet.

High level users that also arrived at the Jigolaths scene came out on TV.

Due to this event the Versailles continent was filled with innumerable debates.

Because of their persistence on hunting Weed, a huge wealth of the Guild was spent on fighting the Chaos Warriors, they had not expected this.

Pale worried about the discussions he was hearing.

"Weed's whisper is also turned off. ... How are you so unaware?"

"Yurin could ask him in person?"

Hwaryeong didn't want to interfere with Weed's sister, but she had to ask Yurin.

-Yurin, where are you now?

-I'm in a picture.

-Picture? Hey I was wondering... How is your brother these days?

-My brother has a lot of challenges.

-Challenges?

-Yes, we are tired of eating rice at home, I have to go, I have to

look for an inspiration for my Painting.

During the time that Weed was mining for the Helium he was always singing.

Any land no matter how fine it looks will not be the same at the end of a storm.

-I'm sure I don't need to worry, I'm sure he is taking care of of it now and everything is progressing as planned.

Yurin strongly believed in Weed.

Since her childhood she had seen her brother encouraging her, assuring her, giving her piggy back rides. She was sure that he'd make everything alright.

She might want to eat cotton candy or want a toy,then a neighborhood kid would "loose" a toy or food, my brother is really reliable in procuring the stuffs that she wanted.

On rainy days he would bring her an umbrella and if the weather was bright and sunny he would bring an unopened ice cream.

Even the famous delinquent kids from the neighborhood would drop in fear when they see Yurin, Weed's younger sister.

Hwaryeong hearing the end of Yurin's summary said.

"Weed sure is a tough one."

Then the rich Sureukaga with a rinkled face thought.

"I think Hermes's users will kick Weed around."

"There's no way Weed can come out of this."

Maylon couldn't believe the interview.

"In order to escape you'd have to run for your life and you'd look really pathetic doing that but eventually you'll just get caught and killed...."

"Ah!"

This reminded them about the movie "The Fugitive" where in the main character was chased everywhere.

So you can relax have a sip of water and watch as the events will naturally happen. The association's campaign in stopping his escape.

Irene's weak heart caused her eyes to moisten in tears.

Drinpelt with his large reinforcements and Pirates where

recklessly chasing after Weed. Despite having the odds against him he cannot abandon his quest.

"We have to go to Jigolaths! We have to go and help Weed."

Hwaryeong filled the party in about her talk and they ran to the nearest sailing port.

They bought a boat and immediately sailed for Jigolaths.

"I'm going to enjoy it. The coming show."

Vera said while sailing with the party, they were on their way.

"Wouldn't it be easier if we used Yurin's Picture Teleportation?"

Vera said surprising herself as she suddenly came upon the realization.

"It's not. They wouldn't let me. I tried to say is fine."

It's best to avoid fighting such a strong enemy! That's why we are taking this route.

The hardest part of fighting the enemy in the Jigolaths was due to the existence of the Magician HyunSik.

And so it was justified why they won't be using Yurin's Picture Teloportation even though it would be faster.

The feared God of War Weed was now within the grasp of the Hermes Guild ready to be taken out.

Will all the fame that Weed has amassed come to nothing? Stated the Reporter.

This is what other people call as the unintentional risks in life.

Vera dropped her suggestion with using Yurin's skill after the hearing the Party's explanation as to why they shouldn't use Picture Teleportation.

From past experiences everyone recognizes that what Eotteoteun says has high chance of coming true.

Weed's never give up attitude goes beyond human insanity.

Hwaryeong and Zephyr still have awful nightmares whenever they recall their hunt in Basara Dungeon.

They had to do over 29 hours of continuous hunting that it drove them to the point of desiring Death.

Weed forcefully kept them alive to continue the slaughter of monsters until the Dungeon was completely cleared.

He only gets to experience short breaks whenever Weed's backpack gets full and he's forced to go to town to dispose of his loot.

Even during those short breaks Weed continues on making sculptures.

Because the Jigolaths didn't have any town or village there was no place to dispose of his loot so he has gathered a massive amount of japtem.

"There is no way I'm going to give up on this loot. I'm not going anywhere without it."

"There would be no meaning in life without it...."

"I'd have to go hunting until I collapse in order to make up for the loss if I leave all this loot behind."

A clear disadvantage of using Picture Teleportation in Jigolaths is that there are a lot of hostile monsters roaming around everywhere. You'd be in a dangerous situation even before you can be completely teleported.

In order to rescue Weed from danger the Party decided to purchase a ship sailing towards Jigolaths.

Weed decided to keep himself hidden since he knew nothing of the enemies exact locations.

Determined to arrive in a day or two.

"I don't know any good ways to sail to Jigolaths..."

"I don't know how Weed did it, I've been searching the map thoroughly for several times and I can't find the route."

Mapan hired a skillful NPC to be their Captain. The NPC Captain worried about the plentiful troublesome straits to choose from.

On the northeast coast you could witness a huge procession of Ghost Ships moving towards the direction of the Jigolaths.

The Ghost Ships were also surrounded with rafts and logs from the wreckage of the other ships. Escorting the Ghosts Ships were floating wraiths lead by the Wraith Sin Gahal.

Until now there has not been as such an amazing sight of sea monsters moving together!

Who would’ve thought that a crazy scene such as this one would come out on the Ocean.

The Party's Ship had not yet reached the northeast coast. Pale and the rest of the Party had yet to see the unerring sight of those

taking refuge.

Only upon seeing the stunning sight did Pale and the rest of the Party felt their spirits raised.

"We can't figure out how he.... Somehow...."

"Looks like a Historical event waiting to happen."

The Undead sailors where steering the ships as black vultures where flying around the mast going along with them.

Pale's Ship naturally joined in the procession of Ghost Ships spaced at a suitable interval.

There were ships of different kinds and sizes in the procession. However from behind them a huge Battleship was coming for them at terrifying speed, cutting through the formation.

"Hard starboard left!"

The hired ship Captain steered with all his might to the left to avoid the incoming Battleship.

The companions aboard the ship narrowly escaped in the opposite direction of the Battleship.

The Battleship was creating waves and ships that were close enough to it heavily swayed.

On the Battleship was a Dark Knight, Navy Ghost Warrior, a Witch, and other types of Undead as well.

The Battleship did not take notice of its companions, the ship was sailing fervently towards the Jigolaths.

"Phew, barely survived."

"Surviving that near death experience feels great."

They gave a sigh of relief as they watched the battleship move further ahead.

Maylon fingers pointed to the flag of the battleship.

"Guys don't you think we've seen that flag from somewhere before? It seems really familiar."

A struggling in pain and screaming Skull Flag.

Admittedly Pale did remember seeing it.

Remembering the Skull Flag design seems really important especially that scar.

"I'm sure that I have seen something identical."

"I'm sure this design feels vaguely familiar."

Pale was sure that he had seen that design before.

"Where have I seen this?"

There's no way for you to recall every single thing you've seen since you were a child until now, argued Mapan.

"Weed has a wooden sculpture that he used for his second sculptural transformation."

"Yes?"

"I've seen that flag from the time when the Lich Shire was with his Undead Legion. The sherpa witches was carrying that flag when they came out."

Mapan shuddered when he heard this.

If you wanna be rich as a merchant you have to experience near death experiences and giving up challenges like these didn’t run in his blood.

"I had to change my attitude every time there is an encounter. I had to remove my anxiety, even if I have inferior combat skills!"

When Karichwi led the combined races of the Dark Elves, Orcs and Humans this elevated his ranking in the Hall of Fame to 5th place.

"Oh, right! The Undead Legion Quest."

Maylon did a big clap as the realization finally came to mind.

"The flag of the Undead King, the ruler of all undead named ....."

"Then those warships that appeared from before belonged to the Undead Legion?"

Everyone's eyes in the Party simultaneously met.

"Let's go!"

"Go!"

"Captain, the maximum sailing speed!"

The crew unfolded the sails making the fastest speed possible to cover the long distance voyage.

However Human Sailors also need to take a break unlike the Undead Sailors. Maintaining the high speed ship also harder for the Human Sailors, this was the reason for the gap between the Ghost Ship and their Ship.

Chapter 6: The Miracle Of Granting Life

Inside the underground dungeon once more. They were bringing back the sculpture that took some time to sculpt.

'To subjugate the enemies with only the gathered Undead proved to be too difficult. I need something that would turn the tides over.'

"Just like the saying 'it has to be by one's own efforts can one survive'. Last night's created sculpture will be a great help."

After he mastered the skill Nature Sculpting, the Sculpture Pieces looked different.

The interior and exterior surface of the material felt different.

- You can feel a form of Mana that re-energizes you when look you at the sculpture.

- Your Mana increases exponentially, by simply appreciating the difficulty of carving the sculpture without damaging the material.

Even though the ore was hard to beat into shape, the continuous shock from the pummelling transformed the ore.

"Smoothly and accurately."

Ding!

Completed Sculpture!

Due to the effect of the artistic value of the sculpture endurance has risen significantly.

For the contribution to the arts infamy decreases by 2.

Another advantage of being a Sculptor!

The sculpture was completed. It greatly increased Endurance, dropped the Notoriety stat by 2, and increased Fame.

Weed laughed satisfactorily.

"This sculpture also indicates the Sculptor's mean spirit"

'I think I'll have to place this impressive work on a high place for display.'

"My Fame is still high, and the degree of difficulty is extremely hard for this quest. But this quest has also increased my Notoriety. I'd have to make a lot of sculptures to decrease it."

"At the end of the day. If there is an opportunity to gain something, even by doing evil acts I'll just scratch those off as allegations because of my Notoriety."

"From this moment on I will be a changed man, badder than the baddest Boss! Everyone better watch out for Weed!"

Mining also increased a substantial amount of Notoriety because of the damage it brought to the land during mining precious minerals.

"I better make a ton of sculptures about angels and young children. In order for my Notoriety to go down faster."

==========

When Weed was not logged in, the glossy sculptures Yellowy, GoldenBird, and SilverBird would search for loot and items.

They were living sculptures by the power of Sculptural Life Bestowal at the expense of Weed's own experience. They were forced to earn their keep even, if they do it little by little.

GoldenBird, SilverBird, and Yellowy were worried.

"Master has been making sculptures for quite some time now. He will surely rejoice when we show him the mountain of loot that

we've gathered within this week."

"Being stinkin' rich is all well and good, but I have to improve my sculpting skills. Being a Sculptor means that improving my Sculpting Skills should be my highest priority."

"We are not aware of Master's true personality. It's good to know that Master has a calm and gentle side to him."

"Yellowy, I'm not really sure of my personality either. If you look at a good man he would know that he can't be sure of the people he would meet and what potential roles they would play in each others life."

"A man gets to eat and live his own life, but from the point of view of the animals they are herded and raised as livestock. Horses live their life according to the good will of their masters."

"Yellowy, that’s not the kind of relationship we are in."

The unfortunate reality of this dialog was that his life as a sculpture wasn't to his liking. Yellowy wanted to have a lot of daughters. Weed would've smacked him if he said this.

Anyone could clearly see the undeniable facts from his eyes.

Weed's increased level of power of the undead had an adverse effect on the sculptures that he made.

Weed simply made numerous carvings that did not intrude on emotions.

"Hmmm. OK, looks like it works sometimes."

You have completed a laughing girl sculpture.

Your problems fade away as you see the naive smiling girl.

Kid's sculpture

Made by the hands of the famous sculptor and adventurer Weed.

There are no special attributes, it could serve as a gift.

Artistic value: 6

Optional: charm + 2.

In a blink of an eye, the sculpture transformed from the carefree looking child, and its description changed as well.

Fiendish flaming child sculpture

The sculpture of a girl that gives off a devilish smile.

There are a lot of bad rumours about the Sculptor being evil and corrupt.

People who are in the possession of this sculpture will continue to experience bad events.

Demonic Value: 15

Options:

breakout, most wanted, notoriety + 2

Good luck -10

There is a very low chance that a fatal incident will happen to the owner of this sculpture.

After completing the sculpture, the notorious red Murderer State above Weed's name completely disappeared.

"I finally got it."

He wasn't really concerned about the Murderer State if he stayed only in Morata.

But there could be a lot of problem when he had business in other

Kingdoms and Holy Cities. The guards at the entrance would most likely put him in prison.

It would certainly hinder him in meeting Lords or Kings.

'I can't believe it, no matter how high your fame is if Notoriety is left unchecked it still becomes that dangerous.'

"Now, I need to widely spread some more of my sculptures."

He was planning to escape Jigolaths which was why he needed to be out of the Murderer State.

With that completed, it was time to execute the plan.

"With the safe arrival of the Undead, it is clear that they are ignorant of the floating bottle messages."

==========

Yellowy persisted to stay well hidden in a narrow place.

Seo Yoon was on Yellowy and was watched by the sculptures. Because of her injuries, her skin had somehow aged by a couple of years.

With that much desire to survive, she had displayed such tenacity!

To stay hidden in the depths of the dungeons, to sparingly eat the food provided by the sculptures just like a refugee.

When not creating sculptures, Weed was seen sewing clothes to improve his Sewing skills.

"If only I could set up a shop here. I already have 20 clothes prepared although they're still of low quality."

Since he didn't really need to create another outfit he decided to store the raw materials for another day.

"However, after joining the pirate crew from the small island leaves me with little options."

Weed as Deoreol was sewing under the orders of the Undead Gisabogina, an aristocrat of the Nifilheim Empire. He wanted to familiarize himself with the situation as it was needed for his plan to work.

Such clothes had slowly made an impact on the Undead Pirates.

'If you're a Pirate, then you'd be wearing a Pirate's shoddy rags. When going out for entertainment, something like getting dressed up is unknown to them.'

Weed's Sewing skills had increased that even if it was on the Pirates' clothes, it made them look so cool that it should be against the law.

Money, skill, and level are the three things that won't betray you.

Weed's Notoriety had lowered thanks to his sculptural pieces. After sewing he transformed into a crow and flew towards the sea, in order for him to see the things he needs to prepare for.

From far away they finally appeared, the notoriously famous Mimihage was the last one left. The sea was now full of Ghost Ships.

"Alright, time to execute the plan."

Who would have believed that all of this was caused by a message on floating glass bottles?

At sea, Ilgwainde and Olliga were lazily getting around their routine route when they suddenly stopped and helplessly watched the parade of ghost ships.

One could say that the most difficult part was planning the whole thing. Having the Ghost Ships made his escape plan an easier job.

Of course that does not mean that they will just let the Ghost

Ship exit the Unfreezing River.

Rather, many of the Ghost Ship on the side of the narrow river blocked the second fleet of the Kingdom of Haven and Pirate Confederacy.

The 2nd fleet of the Kingdom of Haven together with the Pirate Confederacy had sensed their prey. Many of the Ghost Ships were having a hard time in the narrow river.

==========

Weed decided to escape Jigolaths together with the living sculptures and Seo Yoon.

Using sculptural transformation Weed became a crow and took the lead in flying.

After him were the living sculptures GoldenBird and Silverbird covered in cold soot, making the 3 black birds into a convoy.

"As expected we should be there soon."

I've left all of my doubts behind, all we have to see is the outcome.

"No way they could all fit."

Weed's adventure in Jigolaths was particularly severe as he had to experience a lot of suffering.

Another method would be to use his masterpiece, transform into an undead and join the fight. He was thinking about a lot of safety measures if the mobilized undead navy would fail.

If they were to fight he would need the help of the currently recovering Seo Yoon. If she hasn't recovered by then that would mean that the quest will end in a horrible failure!

The difficulty of this Sculptor's quest are overly high. You would need to go beyond your breaking point in order to complete the quest given by the previous Emperor.

This sculpture's life wasn't going to be used without meaning.

And thus GoldenBird came to Jigolaths with an empty bodied shapeless Sculptor.

Anyone would be moved to tears by the dedication shown by this subordinate, a living sculpture, in time to complete the Sculptor's legacy.

With a grudge he was powerless to stop the quest.

The problem is that this came out in the middle of the quest.

"The dubious sculptures are pretty useless though throwing them away would be such a waste. I'll have to store these neglected carvings."

'I have several Masterpieces as a Sculptor. I have made the tower of light as a Magnum Opus.'

'My fancy sculptures are scattered across the continent, not just in the Royal Palace of Versailles, but in other places like the Dwarve's Gold Mine.'

It was not abnormal that these master carvings were often located in uncommon places.

Sculptures often carried great effects and not just a few good attributes. In certain circumstances they could also be brought to life. It was these benefits that the users craved of the sculptures.

Weed thoroughly studied the vicinity controlled by the top guild, Hermes.

Fortunately, the pirates keeping watch of the tower were not at their posts.

To receive the benefits of the sculpture, members of the Hermes Guild came here every morning.

No matter how many times you look at the sculpture the effects does not stack. Its unique effects can only be triggered once per day.

The Sculptors hid this legacy well. Even if it's on flat terrain, because there was no apparent body, it was hard to take notice of this tower without having prominent eyes.

Without a doubt Weed would surely appear here.

Weed had a considerable amount of fighting experience. His fight with Kubicha, the great Chaos Warrior, who was very difficult to kill shocked all the guilds.

Since they've avoided the enemy well, up to now they have been thought to still be lurking in the dungeons of Jigolaths.

It is well known that Weed's character had a way of controlling such a huge army. He had this intangible way of coming back from the dead.

There were a lot of expensive items on the ground so there was no way he could leave those behind.

Weed was troubled because he knew that this could be a trap!

Weed, SilverBird, and GoldenBird stealthily went around the tower and approached the Pirates standing guard.

"Euhahaam! I'm sleepy and it's boring."

"You shouldn't be doing that in a place like this, Riga. Weed could come at anytime. We have to keep watch and keep going."

The old pirates were grumbling when they heard something.

One of the pirates turned over and gave a chance for Weed to jump on him. He casually looked up.

Weed and the other pirate's eyes met.

"A crow?"

Weed popped open his wings and started crying CAW CAW and hit the bridge of the pirate's nose.

Watching out for the incoming stony talons.

SilverBird went after the other body while GoldenBird stood watching, ready to take attention as a contingency.

"Take a look at that. These birds are fun to play with."

The pirates were desperately trying to reach out to them. Weed was watching the pirates as they could no longer live their lives as

a sentry.

Weed was careful as he watched the knocked out pirates, they could just be pretending.

And thus after dealing with those Pirates GoldenBird and SilverBird turned their gaze elsewhere.

Weed then led SilverBird and GoldenBird to approach it!

Ta da da da doc!

Scratching their talons and pecking their feathers as they continued on vertically, consecutively defeating their enemies.

Average pirates have low levels, but the ones they are dealing with have incredibly high levels.

Even with the newly formed 3 prong attack, they were not easy to handle.

Weed turns off his transformation and returns to his human form.

"I was watching the pirates and we could be caught dead at any moment, you'll have to hurry."

Among the many sculptures, only the Sculptor's top designed masterpieces were given life.

Weed is also approaching level 400 soon, and the sculptures given life will not fail themselves and will continue to grow indefinitely.

The difficult Sculptor's Tower Quest did not report the reason for giving life.

From on high you could see sculptural creatures die because they were too worried about that.

Weed was close to entering the Tower Masterpiece with the sculptures on hand as his reinforcements.

"Accordingly should we give this sculpture life?"

He wanted the sculpture to be his subordinate.

Though one of his levels will be consumed, this gives much reason to be cautious.

Finally, Weed made a decision.

"Sculptural Life Bestowal!"

- A very large sea creature, a faceless monster and other varying legendary monsters were scattered all over the sculpture that is popularly known as the ones hunted by the legendary knights.

The sculptural masterpiece was given life.

- According to the stories, this requires a higher level of loyalty. Make sure you thoroughly manage its voracious appetite.

Ttiring!

The legendary monsters vs. Jenbeoringwa & The Sculptor Guild.

This Magnum Opus sculpture was made by Jenbeoringwa & the sculptor guild.

Waiting for a glimpse of movement from the wonder of Jigolaths, the tower that was given life.

"Huh?"

Weed was sure that he gave life to the sculpture.

Still waiting for a glimpse of movement, at the top it said "LOADING... the sculptural memory will be shown shortly."

Thakur-sur-le-Ling!

Sculptor's tower giant cries and sways as a thick cloud of dust piled high on it was washed away by the wind as it moved forward.

Then it revealed a venerable appearance at the top!

You have given life to one of the wonders.

Weed finally saw the video in front of him.

Now that’s more like it.

The Sculptor arrived at their hidden ship in Jigolaths.

They bravely stand at the place in their small station. Even if I didn't find any Helium piece, I won't be deterred.

This Sculptor was strong-willed. No matter what difficulties he may face he won't be demoralized.

The Sculptor had brought them to representatives.

He said with much resolve.

"Let the precious sculptures that cannot defend themselves be safe.

And we will not be the last Sculptors of Jigolaths."

At last in Jigolaths, here is the place the Sculptors were hoping for.

"A place where you can keep your sculptures. To find a place that can hold our hopes and dreams."

Finding Helium was the most important task, but after ending up in Jigolaths and completing the sculptures we were forced to leave this place.

With earthquakes and volcanic eruptions the Sculptor was working together with them and with their cooperation they found a safe place.

"No threat could possibly reach this space? But at the same time the space lets out an artistic feeling."

A whole piece of towering stone mountain.

Chamfering and cutting the entrance, creating layers on the surface of the piece.

It's hard to see the distinction between the hidden structure and the sculpture as they have blended well together. The top of the mountain was discarded as the Sculptor used the whole piece of the mountain.

The magnificent sculpture.

It was the guardian of the Tower of Art.

Magnum Opus! 'A Hero is silently waiting for the completion of the tower.'

After arriving in Jigolaths the Sculptors have created a wonder!

Jenbeoringwa sculpture was created by a group of sculptors by adding their talent and effort.

Inside there are several secure rooms and spacious exhibition halls.

The Tower represents four parts: the Sun, the Volcanoes, the Ocean, and the Sculptor.

Artistic value: 17695.

Special options: After watching 'A Hero is silently waiting for the completion of the tower'

During the day your vitality is doubled.

Increase familiarity with sculpted monsters.

You can learn the laws of monster hunting.

Resting inside this sculpture can rapidly recover your vitality and mana.

Improve the ability to adapt to the environment of Jigolaths.

Reduces the effects of air temperature and climate.

Flame elemental resistance increased by 55%

Increase resistance to monsters of the flame type.

Sculptors who has seen the sculpture for the first time increase their intelligence by 39.

During the day, 8 percent increase in sculpting skills.

There are Sculptures exhibited at the top sculpture,

for the sake of their industry, some sculptures may need some adjustments.

A Magnum Opus sculpture by Jenbeoringwa and his colleagues.

They all died, but Jigolaths was explored, and the sculptures were safe for the other Sculptors to see.

With a melodic background music the scene displayed the piled up sculptures. 'A Hero is silently waiting for the completion of the tower' is a mysterious work.

Ttitring!

-At the top, casted 'permanent conservation spell' over 'A Hero is silently waiting for the completion of the tower'.

Among all the versatility, this Sculptor was also savvy in magic.

A strong protective magic was unfolding over the numerous Tower’ safely kept pieces of art work.

Over hundreds of years has passed since the time it was built and sculptures went to no one.

Weed watched the end of the video.

"This was a great tower why did I not noticed it before?"

The tower was only a few centimeters tall at that time as the dust has piled up.

Because of this, the tower itself will only inadvertently throw away the fact that it was a sculpture.

+ Sculpture has been granted life.

The sculpture ability will be converted from the current art stat of 2041 accordingly to a level of 461.

Since the sculpture is a Magnum Opus and with the effects of a Historic Sculpture, the level will be added an additional 32%, increasing it to 608.

The creature has been given three properties.

Depending on the sculpture's level and form, the granted attributes will differ in level and ability.

Artistic property (100%), Guardian property (100%), Vitality property (100%)

Due to the the effect of Artistic property works of art increases by 150%.

+ Historical sculpture will be given special abilities.

The original creator of this sculpture is not only one but a whole guild.

Due to the effects of Guardian property made by Jenbeoringwa and his colleagues. The sculpture will be defending you from dangers.

Due to the effects of Vitality property sculpture has been given overwhelming life.

5,000 Mana has been used.

The skill efficiency has increased, so the level and stats consumed when bestowing life have decreased by 20%.

Art stat has been permanently reduced by 6. The reduced stats can be recovered through sculpting or other art related activities.

Level has decreased by 1. As a result of the level reduction, the stats you have gained have decreased by 5.

The reduced stats can be restored again by raising your level.

Please cherish the sculpture you have granted life to. If the sculpture is damaged then it can be sculpted again.

In the case where it is completely destroyed, it can not be resurrected.

The recently given life sculptures are curious for their names and look towards Weed at the top.

-Made out of blood and sweat, sculpture. We are not much different from each other, no, everyone is like one body.

-'A Hero is silently waiting for the completion of the tower'. The living sculptures started to separate.

Weed was trying to give life to the first sculpture, but various minor cracks appeared and other statues within the sculpture started to separate.

Then shortly after, the living sculptures started to move.

A stretch of Sculptures was born as they were also given life. Some of them were weird, and some looked wonderful.

But it wasn't over.

The sculptures within the vicinity continued spreading cracks.

"This whole building?"

There are numerous large creatures, monsters, and insects.

The whole area was covered in dust as the sculptures started moving.

There were numerous sculptures that were given the breath of life. Some of them were trying to hide as they started to break apart from the main structure.

It took a long time but it finally stopped, and some of the sculptures started lying around everywhere.

Weed was seeing a scenery filled with sculptures. The Tower was revived.

-Sculptor's legacy Sculpture has awoken due to the sculptural life bestowal skill.

Still waiting for a glimpse, of the tower is divided into zoom in and out of themselves, because of the health requirements, vitality is spread out.

The various sculptural creatures where each heading towards Weed the one who gave them life.

Some were spreading wings, others with a large snout teeth were gnashing or tail flipping, others were carrying swords, and towards the sky the Ureongchaje roared.

This was such an electrifying spectacle. Carefully watching the events from the top, the man who gave them life could be heard saying “I have no complaints”.

"Master why are our bodies so dirty?"

Were all these sculptures neat freaks? All of them were covered in dust after all.

The other living sculptures had dirt cling to their heads, shoulders, torso, and all of them were rubbing it off diligently.

Weed felt like it was time for spring cleaning.

He could use this chance to build rapport with them.

Weed called out to the Sculptural creatures simultaneously they turned to him.

"Master, a name."

"Thank you master, because of you I was born. I will be loyal. "

"Master, my name what is it?"

"Master, we are ready to fight with anybody."

There are so many that even giving a name is not an easy task.

A huge sea monster that resembled his dolphin's Magnum Opus, was tumbling on the floor and rolling. A Fire Giant spewed flames each time it spoke.

There is no one size-like creature that can be seen, everything was such a mess.

"Your name is……."

Weed can't come up with anything.

There is a huge variety of sculptures but there were also similar ones. If the name fits the characteristics than calling them one still be confusing. He continued to ponder.

"Later on."

"It will be hard to recall of them."

The sculptures name should hold the name of their home.

It is important for us to honor it.

"Naming one should make me feel more comfortable. I'll randomly call out one. Hey, Hey you, out there, yes you……. "

"……."

It's not like a person who had just met Weed, these sculptures had high loyalty from the beginning.

It is important to honor the three reasons why he was here. The persons who came to mess with him.

But Weed did not have much time.

"Some distance in the rear, right the battle ready, the one thick as timber. Jeonturaneun."

The sculpture called Jeonturaneun was eyeballed by the rest of the sculptures.

With the ground and naval forces ready Weed thought that now he was ready for warfare.

"Seeing as this place will witness such tremendous destruction. If everything will go according to plan I will not be victim to some senseless death."

The Pirates were told to be extra vigilant in guarding the docks. Ships from the 2nd Fleet of the Kingdom of Haven and joint Pirates were anchored in the Unfreezing River.

"This is so boring, mate."

"When do you think we can catch Weed? We're always instructed to keep guarding the ships but we're completely unaware of what's happening."

"Just wait, I suppose it is going to be soon. Once we've killed Weed we can brag about how we conquered him in this far off place and we will be in everyone's good graces."

The pirates were saying their complaints carefully. One could never tell who was listening.

Come night time they found gambling as a way to kill the boredom.

It seemed like Weed would come out anytime and fight his way out of Jigolaths, but it didn't happen.

Weed is really skillful at running and escaping. He is as slippery as an eel.

He took advantage of the wide underground dungeons of Jigolaths, and when it looked like he was retreating he was actually leading them into a trap.

A group of Thief and Assassins were sent underground, but they were not sure of their location.

Based on the trail left behind in the land of the enemy he was chased by, he used a collection of skills to cover his trails.

After Weed broke the encircling net it was increasingly difficult

to follow his trail.

The user with a race of a mixed blood monster together with his crew, and the Pirates threw away the marks created.

"However, it's just a matter of time before we will catch that scoundrel. The underground Dungeon map has been completed. Your search will be quick, Gundessik."

"I suppose that is a good thing? The reputation of the Hermes guild is already troubled because of how things have turned out."

"Uh huh, hum!"

One pirate coughed and suddenly the pirates around him fell silent.

The other pirates also took notice of this really quickly.

The heads of the pirates guarding the dock turned and saw that it was the Pirate King Griffith that had just arrived.

"Plunder! Plunder Everything!"

Griffith tapped the shoulders of the pirates that he encountered along the way.

"Cause a lot of destruction."

"You ain't seen the power of Griffith."

Griffith, the Pirate King wore the Admiral's Hat, hose level requirement was over 400. Pirates usually wore only caps.

"What brings you here?"

"I come and go like the wind or the air and I got frustrated."

Griffith's voice is stark and deliberately forced it appeared to be caused by hunger.

"Trying to get a ship?"

"Yes, however I myself am hungry...."

Griffith took a moment to stop and say.

Ships anchored at the Marina are on a massive scale.

The pirate ships and the 2nd fleet of the Kingdom of Haven.

A temporary dock on the river was lacking space. More than half the ships were still not anchored in the docks.

The greed of a Pirate Admiral is excessive. His ship, the rowing ship Jungfrau Lake, was dazzlingly large and magnificent.

It also required a lot of manpower to operate the ship.

"Will we start preparations for your ship, the Jungfrau Lake?"

"Simply relying on the wind for sailing is troublesome. I'm going to ride fast without the need of sailing."

"Pirates, listen and be ready to follow my command. I would like to fly directly to the destination."

The Pirate King together with his experience obtained after so many voyages at sea has yet to witness such speed.

Thus they were fairly far away from the fleet. The pirates expected such results.

Griffith was warned, he looked up and rejected the proposal.

"There's going to be time to come back. Now I'm going alone."

"Yes, Sir. The next time we ride to sail!"

"If the opportunity doesn't necessarily make for a ride."

Griffith took the anchored ship from the temporary docks and at once ships departed and made way.

The other pirates were navigating their ships and grumbled.

"You are going to enjoy sailing slowly."

"When you sail with previously speed created by Griffith you reach the end of the voyage really fast."

"From now on the row galley line will be followed as it makes for fast travelling in the sea. We will all be as fast as Admiral Griffith."

A medium-size ship anchored in the Unfreezing River Quail Lake is leaving Jigolaths and going straight out to sea. It was Binggeul's turn.

The volcanoes, covered in layers of white snow, was puffing out smoke.

Such a beautiful scenery was admired by the pirate's hidden target.

At the same moment off the coast of Jigolaths, away from the sight of the pirates, a medium-sized sailboat, Quail Lake.

Throwing down the anchor, the ship is anchored near the reef.

Griffith wanted to be as close as possible.

-Now with me.

Eummeoeoeoeo!

The sailboat anchored near the entrance of the dungeon was greeted by a racing Yellowy.

He came back and was reached by Seo Yoon, GoldenBird, SilverBird and other living sculptures came out in rapid succession.

It's well under cover aboard the sailing boat.

"Revert!"

Griffith's identity is transformed into Weed, he was disguised using sculptural transformation.

By making a lot of sculptures he has lowered his notoriety and is now out of the Murderer State.

Of course there were those in the Navy and the Pirates that were also in the Murderer State. It was common among them.

However, Griffith was not. The hat and the uniform Griffith

usually wore were all fabricated in order to improve the disguise.

Of course, during day time the difference was Heaven and Earth but the real power of the skill was enhanced at night. It would be hard to tell them apart.

Intermediate sewing skills and a couple of fake goods can also make things as close to the original!

The humanoid sculptures took the rope and started climbing aboard and the other bird like sculptures started flying.

The living sculptures started piling aboard the medium-sized sailboat. and some headed for the bottom.

"Agreed, let's all proceed carefully."

Weed took off his hat and waved it towards a distant sculpture.

Moving the sculptural pieces of the tower by boat was a huge work.

And all of it was built in Jigolaths.

The mission of the sculpture heritage was to ensure that the sculptures would last. It is time to leave this land.

"Bye bye."

Weed was looking back with regret.

"It would be nice to head west and take the route towards Versailles Continent."

But for the Tower’s pieces, the understanding was too firm.

However quest from sculptural understanding was absolute.

Sculptors who were convinced that it was impossible to live till the end decided to move to Jigolaths and there hid their masterpieces waiting.

"I look forward to the coming new boss-level monsters in Jigolaths the unknown is exciting."

Kuo Ah Ah Ah Ah Ah Ah Ah!

Come on Tower giant sculpture, stop crying, it's time to leave.

Furthermore, the tower as a whole, from the floor of the downstairs at once was weeping with mystical resonance.

The brilliant sculpture piece as the Tower came into view. It was now time to separate.

"Then let's go."

Weed gave instructions to the sculptural creatures that has been in the anchored ship and ready to go.

GoldenBird and SilverBird took the ropes attached to the masts and the sails.

"Jigolaths, this is goodbye for good then."

It was moving the medium-sized sailboat that weighs heavily.

Living sculptures filled the cabin, corridors, and the deck.

Maximum capacity was more than breached.

The wind started coming, the ship started to move a little bit and it started slicing the river.

Weed took the wheel and turned the large wheel towards the River spreading it more.

The Marina was busy. The Kingdom of Haven's 2nd fleet had gone off.

The fact that Pirate King Griffith gave no such command for a

well known ship to sail was the tip off.

The ship Weed got was rapidly increasing its speed. It was breezing through the Unfreezing River.

Since the ship belonged to the fleet of the Kingdom of Haven, it took a while before the sentries decided to report a fast ship to their superiors.

-Pirate King Griffith drove into the ship.

-What to bring?

-The pirates standing watch were listening. Nothing, stars are outside and the wind is coming out.

-Roger.

The ship's control on entering and exiting were not following the rules so the guards caught on that something was wrong.

The reports started to grow in bulk, they were all the same heading south east.

If anything, dealings with the Pirate King Griffith required a separate permit for authorized passage.

And after a while.

You could see the navy urgently whispering for reinforcements.

-I have had reports that Griffith went out to sea?

-Yes, they have.

-The real Pirate King Griffith?

-Checked the Pirates for this fact.

-At a time like this! I'm seriously angry!

-Circumnavigate, who are you kidding?

-Pirate King Griffith was with Drinpelt. He is now on board of the taken ship and is leaving.

-Yes, Yes? That's absurd .....

-This is no time to be talking long. Get on and catch that ship!

-They disappeared out of sight.

-Then quickly give chase!

With the given instructions the 2nd fleet of the Kingdom of Haven spread their sails wide.

The pirate's fleet have been informed of the news, and prepared to depart simultaneously.

"He absolutely cannot be allowed to escape!"

"After Them!"

The ships in the marina shook as the first shot was fired by a battleship.

But among the living sculptures were sea creatures that were waiting for them.

Cannons were shooting like a rain of arrows but eventually they sunk!

The users on the ground hunting in the dungeons were told to return to the docks as well as the pirates standing guard on the tower sculpture.

"Oh, Oh!"

The soldier sculptures started piling up and were running towards the users whilst trampling them.

Weed watched the sculptural creatures leaving right away for the sake of avoiding danger.

A great powerful destroyer!

Drinpelt's players of the Hermes Guild were trying to battle the sculptures from the Tower.

"Those rogues can be disposed of later. Our first priority is to capture Weed."

The Hermes Guild's flagship and the pirates that were aboard were trying to escape the top Jogaktabeul.

Tremendous damage occurred on the sail and it was gradually slowing down after departing from the docks.

"Oh Ah Ah Ah Ah Ah Ah!"

Until the end, the sculptures of the Tower made a last step of interference and watched from Jigolaths volcano zone.

Chapter 7: Death Aura

"Ahem, nice breeze."

Weed said through his crooked smile.

Since the maximum capacity of the medium-size ship has been reached, its speed was clearly slower.

"We have to quickly escape from this encirclement."

Golden Bird continually goes back and forth doing recons in order to inform Weed on the enemies' location.

They were moving forward into the wide sea. They were trying their hardest to slip past their enemies, determined to see the end of the Unfreezing River and escape. However, their enemies had better mobility.

"It's time to use the preparations we've made for this day……"

Weed gave the numerous living sculptures with beaks and with wings a certain job.

"I want you to go to the nearby ice field, there you will see some places that have cracks. I want you to break that ice off from the main land. Be careful with those things."

The job was to recover the large amount of japtem acquired from monster hunting in Jigolaths.

The living sculptures used their beaks or other tools to chisel the the side of the ravine. Sacks of japtem came out left and right, and they quickly gathered them all.

If you would look at Yellowy you could see such a pathetic sight.

"I'm glad I can’t fly."

Weed was happy with his investments on the living sculptures, they will be working for him forever.

Working 5 days a week with no or annual or monthly bonuses and other business benefits.

Yellowy tried asking for a leave, when the time of his cow calves were born, but he was denied and was made to work around the clock.

Paternity leave is also banned!

Constantly being threatened to be eaten and made to work underground in the mines was the worst possible working condition.

He had buried the japtem in the ice at the river banks anticipating this to happen.

“To pass up on my precious items ...”

Weed said with such sadness that his face crinkled.

Sorrow filled Weed's heart as he looked at the cinematic scene of the Jigolaths landscape and remembered Nada Sōsō(film), he pretended to yawn as tears started to come out.

Weed decided to be honest with his emotions right now.

"Each drop of my tears costs 800 gold, no more like 8,000 gold. No matter what the situation I will never give a discount!"

By no means are this tears not his true feelings.

"Accumulated stress could cause gastrointestinal disease to occur. You can never know when your habitual intake of food will be like having small blades inside your stomach.

To help fight stress of losing that much money, I better buy some antidepressants so that I won't die!"

The ship was pushing towards the sea. Weed who was looking at the direction of Jigolaths saw a massive fleet appear.

The Battleships from both Haven Kingdom’s fleet and the United Pirates’ fleet appeared.

"A bit sooner than I expected. But I don’t have to wait for them!."

Tower sculptures presented the most brilliant play of the year without better knowledge of actual events.

Weed released the Sculptural Transformation from the appearance of Griffith as it has lost its meaning.

He took off the specially made clothes that he made through sewing, to look like him.

When he gets back to Morata he can sell these clothes, so the clothes needs to be kept clean.

Once he turns into a lich, there could be some unwanted alterations done on the clothes as the result of the transformation.

The power of the undead is an ever growing concern, But it is absolutely needed if he wanted to take command of all those Ghost Ships.

"Sculptural Transformation!"

Weed turns into the sculpture of a Lich that he is holding. This makes his appearance much older.

Jubyeoneseoneun Weed floated in midair, he was at least 30 centimeters from the ground, he was covered by a swirling black aura on his body.

Anyone witnessing such a dazzling scene will most likely gulp down their saliva as they feel the massive overpowering presence of his lich form.

- Sculptural Transformation has been used.

As the sculpture has been carved by the Sculptor with enormous affection they now resemble each other!

-The body has now changed to that of a lich so a number of equipment have become unusable and are recommended to switch them. You can not wear mithril or divine equipment and it may be necessary to obtain new equipment based on the species type.

-As a result of the transformation wisdom and intelligence has increased significantly.

Stamina limitations disappear.

When you use the skill of necromancer you will gain 25% additional effects.

Levitation is done spontaneously.

Magic power has increased drastically.

Due to the effects of high art stat you have transformed into an Undead Summoner.

Death Aura has been triggered.

Except for leadership and charisma all the other stats are reduced. The Luck stat is reduced to the lowest.

Health and Mana will increase dramatically.

Life Drain and Mana Drain can be used at 20% efficiency but is unusable in the sunlight. It can be used to recover health and mana. You are now fatally weak to divine power. This form will remain until Sculptural Transformation is removed.

-Warning! As the side effects of using Sculptural Transformation into a Lich all activities done in this form may be taken as actions against humanity.

Complete Lich Variation: 19.3%

-by using Sculptural Transformation into a Lich you've increased sculptural understanding by 1 level.

Look closely at the really awesome Lich!

"But I’m still only at the lower levels."

Weed took a glance at his transformed look and was satisfied with the change.

He had transformed into an absurdly average skeleton lich.

I am lower leveled compared to Lich Shire and he was

insufficient when compared to the higher level Lich Bar Khan.

But now, I do have the necromancer ability Death Aura and by practicing the dark arts I have now amplified undead summoning in exchange for their deaths.

One of the disadvantages of the Death Aura is that its range is small. He would need a better way to satisfy this condition.

"I don’t need to wear high heels in order to get some height."

Because he was floating 30 cm from the ground his eyes sparkled, as his point of view has improved.

Liches are strong at night nevertheless he was able to move well during daytime.

"Hmmm."

On the other hand, Drinpelt's fleet was still chasing them while crossing adverse circumstances.

“They are going to catch up to us in 5 minutes”.

Keeping in mind the speed of the opponent's boat, calculating how much time it would take for them to be within magical range.

Weed's sailboat barely escapes the magical shot as flames whizzed by.

It was while passing by them in the sailboat hauling the japtem, Weed heard.

“Here”

“We are here”

“Weed-nim, we have been waiting for you. Please give us a ride. This way!”

Far from the river there were three humanoid figures, shaking and shivering they weren't looking for trouble. But they found it.

The group was walking past the glacier area, somehow trying their best to stay alive.

Hoping that Weed will come this way when leaving the river.

Weed rose to the deck to ardently see the scene from the rear portion of his vessel.

“What? Stop to help you, Drinpelt’s battleship fleet is chasing us, you know?”

“Please Weed-nim give us a ride.”

“Oh-Oh! Wrong! I'm not going to give you a ride.”

“Weed-nim, we have tried to return to the continent, but there was no way…”

Common sense would suggest that while escaping from the river and running from a massive fleet there was no way he would turn back to get the three of them. He had no obligation to save them.

After weed passed them, the three of them ran across the glacier on foot looking for something to reach the boat.

There were no trees around to build a raft. They were also in a predicament since the levels of the mobs are beyond their reach.

They went along downstream of the Unfreezing River, then they rode across a small board dipped in the icy waters in order to cross to the glacier out in the sea.

Of course, in the middle of the sea, glaciers tend to melt and are discarded but if you were to see their miserable plight, even a blind man could have seen them.

"Please give us a ride!"

The triad tried, desperately shouting, to reduce the speed of the

sailboat when Weed came close.

Weed was on top of the deck.

"Going to the Mainland?"

"Yes, of course. We've changed, all our bad qualities are gone!"

Maybe if they lived here for a few months to one year on this sad isolated land they won't be so ignorant anymore and will change their ways.

In Royal road a place full of joy and happiness, they were trapped in a remote place for so long as if they were locked up!

Tears were hardly seen as they were pretending to cry with a running nose. As they plead, Heinz, Fractal and Bodomir were like gentle lambs.

Weed calmly replied.

"My ship boarding fees are a bit expensive... How much money do you have on you? "

He may have changed into a lich but his love for money had not grown any less.

Heinz eyeballs rolled, however famous of a villain you may be, if you're certain to suffer then you would have to respond obediently.

"The three of us together have 2,759 gold."

In other words the amount was so small that Weed could just easily walk away.

But in reality he had barely half of that proposed amount.

Weed shook his head at the suggested offer.

"The toll is 7,000 gold ... I'm sorry but I will never budge."

"Yes? But Weed ajeossi can't we take this ride for free we've been waiting for you...

There is no way we can pay your proposed amount. You can't leave us here, there is no way to escape this place!"

“There are other ships coming this way. If you have no money, try to get on the other boats."

"You scoundrels have already given me a hard time! I highly doubt it that anyone aside from me would give you a ride, although I could be wrong."

"You discuss amongst yourselves on the decision that you've made, I'm sure after much thought you will agree with my persuasive logic."

Weed saw that Yellowy was about to say something, but then only kept silent and nodded.

If you get into a mess then you better manage to get out of it yourself, commit to your responsibilities and don't desert them.

Weed cut them off with a single stroke saying.

"It's up to yourselves to get out of this circumstance."

As if losing interest.

"Considering the distance, even 200 gold to board would still be expensive."

"If you can't stomach the price then find another alternative."

The ship didn't have to take in villains who doesn't deserve mercy.

Weed's purpose was for one thing.

He was leaving this place anyway and they were returning to the

same destination.

Since these scammers are in a pinch, he might as well overcharge them for the ride and teach them a lesson about their attitude!

“Hey, you guys better give the money soon”

“If we don't go with him, we will stay stuck in this place”

Drinpelt’s fleet who was chasing them came into view.

No time to bargain anymore

At this rate, everything will come to nothing.

Watching the oncoming Drinpelt fleet, both Bodomir and Fractal became more anxious than Weed.

The trio took out all their money, jewels and other valuables and calculated. It only came to 7425 gold.

“Weed-nim, we will pay the 7000 gold”

“In advance”

Between the three of them they barely produced 7000 gold and sprang into the sail boat.

And saw a whole army of living sculptures on deck.

“Where the hell did all these monsters come from?”

“It’s great but very scary.”

All the living sculptures were creepy looking and their appearance would overwhelm anyone.

“You will be stuck here for few months. So behave properly to avoid any trouble.”

“It’s time to work hard.”

They breathed a heavy sigh, knowing there was no way out.

“From now on, you drive this boat .”

“Yes, we will”

The trio are going to do everything he said.

Weed thought that even though his ship sailing skill has improved. Because the ships speed is slow due to overload, he reasoned that their skill might help.

Even though they were called 3 Mad Sharks of Becky Ninh, they were never caught before because of their excellent sailing skills.

Since, the enemy is the Haven Kingdom’s fleet and the United Pirates’ fleet, they would have to increase their speed to escape.

“Adjust the sails to ease into the wind”

“Change the direction of the ship in the direction of the currents to get the most out of it, to speed up the sailing.”

The '3 Mad Sharks of Becky Ninh' are busy running back and forth fixing the sails and ropes in order to a pick up the speed of the sailboat.

Weed was pleased in the corner of his mind.

-He's squeezing us out for all we are worth.

-We only have 425 gold is left.

In spite of the crazy situation. Weed still managed to swindle the famous 3 Mad Sharks of Becky Ninh.

-Does he think we would forget everything he did to us? For now we will go along with it and when the time is right we will rob all his treasures.

-Kill Kill Kill.

They were whispering to each other while working.

Weed walked onto the deck and while looking at the incoming Haven Kingdoms fleet, he said.

“Oh, you guys?”

“Yes?”

“Food costs money.”

“Eh?”

“Its 3 gold for a sip of water and 5 gold apiece of raw fish until we get back to continent.

This is a high level of unspeakable tyranny, to reap excessive profit!

“By what means do you expect us to pay that!”

Fractal tried to strongly protest but paused and with a mild voice continued.

“That is, we will be sailing this ship until we reach our destination, so can you pay us some money for going as fast as we can.”

Yellowy nodded thinking it was actually a smart proposal and a reasonable compromise. There was no reason to refute this level of compromise.

“1 copper per day”

“Eh?”

“If you don't like it then get off!”

"……."

He was like a mugger with knife.

By using the smallest opportunity and efficiently squeezing everything out of his prey.

They couldn’t talk back because it was a decision made from a position of power.

The scary thing were the living sculptures that he gave life to. They follow him like he is their parent.

The living sculptures that were watching everything that Weed was doing learned that, ‘life is all about money.’

Drinpelt was watching when then 3 Mad Sharks of Becky Ninh appeared and were let onto the ship.

Asshole.

Even Drinpelt had a dirty feelings because of the insults.

It may be hard on the land but trying to escape through the sea is going to be even harder.

The leaders of the Hermes Guild had reminded him every single day to catch Weed as soon as possible.

Through the broadcast they saw Weed for the first time in all of the Versailles Continent, completing the most difficult ‘S’ level quest successfully even with their interference.

Even with reinforcement sent to them they were unable to show any improvement in performance.

They may have suffered on land but it’s an entirely different scenario in the sea.

He admitted his lack of experience in land but in sea he was a king.

“He is just running away for his life after all he did, arrogant jerk”

Drinpelt was not worried about winning against him because of

the huge difference between their ship's combat forces, but he was worried about the reaction of others after he wins.

"Should I finish him off in a single attack? No, that's too soon for disposing him after all he did."

Armed with the latest artillery weapon with a very high fire power, 1 medium-sized sailing ship will be easily destroyed without resistance.

"Because it is a naval warfare it would be an easy victory for me without a doubt."

Seeing as they can win without resistance we need to prioritize recovering honor which is a more pressing matter.

Because it's a naval warfare that he can win he may be able to get some ratings for the show.

"Their ship's rear is coming into range"

Petty officer shouted in a loud noise.

The 3 Mad Shark Becky Nin were sailing the ship, but were unable to increase the speed more than the original speed because of the excessive load.

Drinpelt hardened his resolve and gave the command.

"Forward, commence bombarding.”

“A little bit more before they come in range”

“Begin shelling at once but aim at their surroundings.”

The Medium-sized sailing ship would be easily sunk that it would look so lame.

The ability to get rid of the sail while showing off a thoroughly dominant force in the shelling.

He directed the assault operation with his elite forces on the enemy’s boat.

Drinpelt was aiming for a perfect win!

Drinpelt’s order was passed along to the entire fleet.

Haven Kingdom 2nd fleet’s warships came to the front and turned at an angle revealing the side of the ship.

Four doors opened, each with a mounted Cannon and they opened fire sequentially.

Boom… boom.. boom. boom boom boom boom!

More than five ships, putting together the 160 doors opened and the cannons fires were launched.

Shells fired from the artillery cannons flew making a parabolic arc and falling down in places not far from Weed’s ship.

A column of water sprang from river with a deafening roar, which shot up to the heavens with a height of more than 10 meters.

“Reload!”

The artillery units in the ship that just fired were reloaded again.

The captain’s artillery were loaded so fast with speed and accuracy because of the degree of skills and training done of the crew.

The weight due to the number of mounted the cannons, caused the ship's mobility to be very slow, but despite such weaknesses. Drinpelt’s warship joined the chase once more.

This time 7 other ships revealed their sides with open door.

“Fire.”

238 shells were fired simultaneously!

This time the launch angle was even higher and more shells dropped in the river and many columns of water were raised again.

The entire might of the artillery cannons were shown, when there was a huge surge created due to the shelling.

The Shells were getting closer and closer to weed's ship.

"The distance is shrinking. step on it faster!"

"Now, Get the ship to its max speed"

The 3 Mad Shark Becky Nin were struggling at the hull to increase the speed of the ship.

Weed could use black magic to form a shield with dark aura and yet he did not feel the need to use it.

The scene of all the shells falling in the river at once is difficult to see very often.

The best spot to watch while being chased with a narrow margin was the stern.

The timid and cowardly yellowy was hiding in the cabin and next to him was Seoyun with a mask like face.

“Shells are very expensive with the cost 3 gold each.....

Those guys have a lot of money”

They are boasting an enviable amount of money!

The river was occupied by lots of ships that were chasing after them, it hurts my stomach seeing as they have armed their ships to the brim with their wealth.

The commercial development in the central continent is very high because of its high population, because of that the Haven Kingdoms fleet was heavily armed.

Because of the clear view in the sea their vision is good, which made Weed possible to see the enemy from the back of the ship. But just like him Drinpelt also had a clear view of everything from his ship.

Weed had a bad habit of deliberately provoking his enemies.

Just like a heroic knight watching a little lamb eating grass.

If he loses his life, he would lose his precious items and his skill proficiency level would also drop.

So looking and analyzing the enemies constantly was a very important factor.

Great courage is also necessary in order to live.

Haven Kingdoms fleet and pirate ship were chasing them at full speed along the unfrozen river.

“Its time to start”

When the enemy ships came into a fixed position, Weed shouted.

“It’s time to burn everything.”

Out of the sculptures made by the head of the 13th sculpture guild there was a fire giant.

Because he was made out of fire he couldn’t ride in the boat as it was made out of wood. It might have endanger other living sculptures.

The fire giant had to take another ride in place of the ship.

After Weed left on the Ghost Ship. Bingryong, Wyvern and Phoenix were raising their levels while hunting.

"Kueeek! "

Bingryong used ice breath, Wyvern used air drop attacks and Phoenix used fire spin to torments all the monsters while hunting.

They were already very powerful one on one, but when they all gathered together to hunt the monsters on the ground they were a piece of cake.

They were living and eating well but they missed Weed's warm food.

"I wonder what the master is doing."

"Eating food is not delicious without master"

"We are not going to eat anything delicious in a place like this"

Once in a while Wyvern decides to talk about weed. It had become worse because he has been gone for three months of the Versailles Continent's time.

" I want to eat the food made by master.When he comes back I should ask him to make delicious food."

"I want to see the Master. I want to eat the food he makes even if he harasses us."

Having been created first, the Wyverns spent the longest time together with weed seeing him as his parent.

Even though they were made to look ugly, they cannot betray

their master.

“I really want to go to the Master.”

Phoenix was born with five brothers, but now he was alone. Now even though he was burning strongly, he was very lonely. So sometimes he looks towards the ocean and cries sadly while thinking of Weed.

“I really wonder if we can go to where master is?”

“A trip to fly to the Master would be good.”

Wyverns had the most experience with frequently traveling long distances to and fro to the northern mountains.

They roamed the wide continent with free personality.

“Let’s go to where Master is.”

Bingryong, decided to join them, because he did not want to remain alone.

“I will also come with you guys.”

While Flying to the North!

The trip to the north consists of areas covered in glaciers, Bingryong being the most experienced there guided them. So the Wyverns flew in the rear.

They looked like migratory birds, the living sculptures flew in search of their master.

“Go through here”

“It stinks.”

"I can feel Masters presence around, This evil, vulgar and malicious presence is definitely our masters."

The Living sculptures flew over the land rather than the sea and flew closer to the Jigolaths.

“Keuwoeoeoeo! I can feel my strength coming back to me”

Bingryong’s Health and strength increased tremendously because of the cold glaciers.

Wyverns were weak to the cold but they were able to bear with it because of the clothes that Weed made for them. Also by flying close to Phoenix they avoided freezing to death.

“Do you think master will be happy to see us?”

“What if he gets angry and hits us?”

“I don’t want to be bullied and treated badly, forced to eat less and made to work all the time.”

Wy-three raised his head and asked them.

“I cant stand up to it. What if we start hunting in this place and go to master afterwards?”

Given their long, eventful time spent together, they know only too well what Weed will make them do in the high seas.

So the living sculptures waited not far from Jigolaths while hunting.

The power of Phoenix did not weaken even if he was at the glaciers. Blazing hot fire everywhere. He grew up fighting monsters that had high fire resistance,so fighting monsters that had resistance to ice was easy.

The monsters in the glaciers gave high experience and their meat’s nutritional value was high.

The Phoenix, Bingryong and the Wyverns were hunting as a party!

Before they went to find Weed, they saw a figure of a fire giant

striding along the the glacier.

Living among other Living sculptures made with art they were able to recognize him immediately.

“Do you know our Master, Weed?”

Seeing Bingryong, Phoenix and Wyvern blocking the way, the Fire Giant nodded his head and answered.

“He is the person who granted me life.”

"We came to life earlier than you. "

“That mean’s we are all family.”

The Living sculpture created a simple hierarchy and were generally friendly to each other.

Because of Weed’s high Charm and command ability, even though Bingryong and Phoenix had opposite affinity, they were able to become intimately acquainted immediately.

And the Phoenix who had lost his brothers said.

We have similar personalities, so I like you.”

The Fire Giant with a sword in his hand and fire coming from his eyes, said:

“I like you too.”

“Where are you going?”

“Master asked me to go hide and wait in the place where the river is narrow.”

“And it’s not easy walking to that place.”

The Fire Giant was going towards the unfrozen river.

Because of the heat generated by his entire body the glacier easily melts. And whenever his leg slips and touches the water, steam raises. But the Fire Giant was still ceaselessly trying to cover the ground. Looking at this, Phoenix made a suggestion.

"Get on my back. You can't ride others but you can ride on me.”

Phoenix and the Fire Giant flew low shooting past the Unfreezing River.

With wings wide spread over the river. You can't help but be mesmerized.

For creatures unfamiliar with flying like the Fire Giant, they could not help but shout.

"Kiyaaaaa!"

Flying in the sky was ingenious, consequentially they could return at tremendous speed to Weed's summon.

Phoenix tucked his head between his wings while beating furiously above the canyons to speed up to maximal speed.

The sight of them looked like a hot blazing comet, high over the action taking place below.

"Griffith-nim, an unconfirmed group of monsters have appeared in the rear."

The Pirate fleet on the back were the first one to discover the Phoenix and the Fire Giant.

In the night sky they emerged from afar and stood out exceptionally well.

The Pirate fleet who is great at chasing was placed at the rear with good reason. The Kingdom of Haven's fleet has a great defensive power but they will surely be left behind if they were at the rear.

If the Kingdom Of Haven entered into a hundred maritime battles, anyone would be doubtful that they would suffer defeat even once.

The Pirates were busy looting the sunken ships rather than showing their greater mobility skills.

But Griffith believed that a perfect opportunity would come.

"Even if you've thought up of a lot of ways to escape, accidents are still bound to happen as you blindly follow the river."

"Incidentally, it's a really stupid thing for Drinpelt's fleet to give chase, He can't expect to catch up. He should have prepared a better contingency plan."

Griffith had closely followed behind and was ready for battle.

Griffith gave out his command to his Pirate Fleet.

"Unleash the cannons!"

The pirate ships all loaded, fired their cannons and launched them instantly!

"KyaAhAhAAH!"

Immortal Phoenix tucked its wings and spins and swerve to avoid the ammunition shells.

Sticking closely to avoid their weak attempts. Shells pass by barely grazing them and drop into the river.

Gifted with great stamina and vitality, this is nothing beyond the Phoenix.

The shells of the magical bullets carried powerful flames and created big explosions.

"Kiyaooooooo!"

The Phoenix's power did not dwindle.

The Phoenix and the Fire Giant were entrusted with a very difficult mission. Both having flame attributes they could withstand the damage from the shells.

Using the ability to absorb the flames, the destroyed gut is restored to full vitality.

Griffith used the essential tool of a sailor. Looked through the telescope and saw that events vividly. He then said that.

"The ability of a Phoenix sure is great."

Weed knew that situation would best fit them. The gigantic fire monster took damage and had a hard time holding on properly.

"Reload Magic bullet!"

Magician Guilds, sell cannon shells with inherent explosion magic which increases the price making them even more expensive.

Phoenix was stiff and took damage from the line, it began to move as the preparation for magic bullet reload was being done.

Phoenix flew between them leaving an excessive wake.

"Was that our attack?"

When Griffith asked the Pirates they all nodded their heads.

They were gunning for each other not wanting to say that they've wasted the magic bullet.

"Kiyahooooooooo!"

Phoenix was target by the Kingdom of Haven fleet, from the high altitude its feathers were scattered.

They were falling towards the ground and was soon it raining

with a huge open fire plume.

"What a bunch of crap?!"

"Divine shield."

"Neptunian Protection!"

The priests casted the various protection magic spells, as they finished the spell contract, the sea guardians protected the ships.

The power of the divine shield and water barriers weakened as it gave non-stop protection against the surprise attack.

"Take down the sails."

The crew of the large sailing ship were all experienced sailors and they quickly took down the sails.

The debris from the surprise attack continued to rain a few more. The ships were protected with the combination of sorcery and the hung special wards. While the other wooden ships were completely destroyed.

But even a small fire on the sail would mean big trouble, making them vulnerable at any moment.

If you're a weak Monster, the rain of fire might mean instant death. But they are ready to respond to the situation, through several experiences of monster-hunting.

The Holy Knights, soldiers and support Priest of Hermes Guild were protected inside the wide Mana Shield.

"In the case of subsequent attacks, Magicians should prepare their corresponding counter magic attack. Rather than just attack be on the defensive as well men."

Drinpelt said that to his fleet he believed that they had advantage in terms of defensive power.

That limits their ship maneuverability, but come in range of their Magical Bullets and Cannons. You will be placed in the same situation as the Phoenix.

The Fire Giant riding on the Phoenix was not greatly alarmed about it.

"Master sure is crazy."

The place where the Fire Giant landed made a gorge. As it stood up, it wielded its fire sword.

(SFX) Peopeopeopeong!

The ice was covered in flames, the people were placed under fire aura and suffered explosions!

The impact and the heat caused the ravine to be under pressure on both sides, in addition to the stacked up damage from magic bullets. The ravine was split making a terrible sound.

The damage from the magic bullets has taken its toll. The weak incontinence of snow gradually widens and a large part of it starts to fall down the canyon.

"Avalanche! No, the ice is coming!"

"The ice from the canyon is collapsing!"

"Stop it! Stop it! "

Drinpelt was watching as the gorge was split like a thunderbolt had struck.

Controlling the sea, they tried to maneuver elsewhere. As blocks of ice fell on top of each other. The same thing had been happening on the other side. They needed to somehow defend themselves as it was certain that they would receive damage.

Magicians, Holy Knights and Priests who broke through the magical protection as blocks of ice were sticking off the hull.

A giant ice block is hard to predict, sometimes it would crack into smaller pieces while others just stayed the same.

Taking advantage of the natural features of this place was really risky, especially against these kinds of attacks. Usually it is hard to be prepared for them. Everyone in the canyon could easily be slaughtered.

The blocks of ice from the canyon continued pouring, covering the entire fleet. All of the ships have been hit.

"Increase the speed! Show us your navigation abilities. Let's get out of this place!"

Drinpelt's battleship Pilduro unwrapped its sails once more and were wide spread.

Both sides of the canyons had fall lumps of enormous ice falling. Quickly evading them squarely as they tried to escape.

The huge block of ice split in two, aiming to sink the ship. All they could manage was to fire the readied magic bullet shells. The impact caused a huge explosion and spread out a lot of flame.

It topped their ship and broke the magic protection from the special made materials of the hull.

"At full sail!"

Drinpelt's battleship advanced with the other ships.

They continued with the flame shots aimed to bury Weed. But chains of chunks of ice fell everywhere.

"Admiral! The damage we've taken is so huge. For the moment we have to turn back now."

"We have to catch that man through any means. We have to eliminate him."

Drinpelt was already in the mouth of the river. Even if he has to personally steer the ship, he would continue to chase him rather than turn back.

Ice blocks with heights like pillars, continued to fall down into the river. The top of the canyon had a lot of piled up stones and sand.

In spite of such a disaster of taking damage from Drinpelt's fleet. The Phoenix up in the air with his jostled feathers continue to move forward.

The rain caused the fire to be put out, but some of the sails were stoked.

“Set up the emergency sails for battle.”

The trained crew switched to the small triangular sails and readied themselves for battle.

The force of the wind blew. But their special material was fire-resistant and wind resistant.

Drinpelt’s fleet and the Pirate ships looked like wounded beasts. Weed was still ahead and they trailed behind him.

Chapter 8: Counterattack In Rain, Wind, And Fog

Bard Ray recovered the sword from the monster’s body.

As soon as he removed the sword the monster’s body turned gray.

“At long last, it's today.”

I have achieved level 465 from hunting.

This is expedient but there is a faster way in which they can easily raise their levels, such as to gather all monsters at one place, but Bard Ray wanted to fight in a direct combat.

The public can only see his levels but not his pursuit of true strength.

“The time has come to open their eyes to Hermes Guild.”

The time has come to show off Bard Ray’s carefully built guild’s power publicly.

Hermes Guild and 93 other prestigious guilds have joined together to create the United Supremacy and are ready to make

war.

The United Supremacy used the Wondae Formation (TN: Wondae is a province in South Korea). Using their swords and magic, they headed towards the guilds and castles that did not belong to the United Supremacy

Of course, the United Supremacy was only a temporary community.

An endless cycle of creating Guilds would continuously collect power, each with its own ambitions. The dissolution of a federation would instantly cause controversies, with all of the coming wars in the future.

Bard Ray was already waiting for that day to arrive.

"Two people can’t climb to the top and reign supreme."

Versailles Continent is a fierce battlefield of the Central Continent, as elite guilds have put up their power reserves and waited with bated breath.

Monopolizing the hunting grounds that contain luxury items and equipments.

After today's war, everyone shall clearly know the true power of the Hermes Guild.

Haven Kingdom’s fortress, Wellston.

Players all over the Versailles continent were watching the real time battle between Weed and the Haven Kingdom's fleet taking place at Jigolaths.

“Cool!”

"Playing cat and mouse in this river is no joke.

Can we get more bottles of beer here."

Some of the Pirates had contracts with the TV broadcasters which gave an earlier video transfer.

Thanks to the television network the video can actually be seen from the restaurant or a pub inside the game.

KMC media was not falling behind by broadcasting the battle from Weed’s perspective.

The broadcasters were already broadcasting his encounter with Haven Kingdom's fleet and the United Pirates, displaying a view that the other broadcasters can't beat.

The footage of KMC media was from Weed's perspective which increased the overall viewership rating compared to others because only from that perspective can you fully enjoy the

suspense of being chased.

Of course, while airing a long video, the time difference in Royal Road and the real world creates gaps, but that part is solved by placing an ad in the middle!

Currently, game broadcasters have a profound effect on the sales growth of companies on an ongoing basis.

In order for the viewers not to get bored of Royal Road, the news of the Versailles Continent is compiled and shown with music.

The hunting parties that were not out for quest were watching the video while drinking beer and eating meat. The streets in the city were empty.

Whenever Weed's battle was televised, the bars would fill up like a viewing of a football match.

"Kyaa! This strawberry milk tastes crazy."

"Drink sparingly. It's 30 copper each"

Newbies and underage students were ordering milk drinks or juice.

A noisy atmosphere was created when Weed's broadcast is being shown as guests continue to enter the bars.

“Weed escaped unharmed? It was so close that it was scary.”

“Now the chase continues. If he doesn’t get far soon they will catch up to him again.”

Several of the Haven Kingdom's fleet of battleships were sunk under the collapsed canyons.

With the fleet trapped under a block of ice and sank, it also damaged the hull and sails, making sailing condition impossible.

Nevertheless, Drinpelt was chasing Weed closely without a care.

Though they were trying to get away and making a substantial distance, because of the collapsed canyons, they were still within Haven Kingdom's firing range. It was a breathtaking chase.

Thunder rumbling.

Heavy rain started falling, and when it fell on the unfrozen river it created a dense cloud of fog.

Nobody knew why rain started to fall in the high seas suddenly, but it is in fact Weed who used cloud sculpting to call the rain to help them run away.

“If it rains, will it be advantageous for them while running

away?”

"I don't know about that. Is it something like going in the same direction of the rain?”

“With the waves rising, I think that would depend on the types of ships. Typically, a sailboat is favorable and the pirates riding galleys are also not considered to have a disadvantage.”

“The artillery power will be weakened. They can't even take advantage of the bombing tactics, such as fire shells. The vision range will also shrink.”

When thick rain drops fall, the fleets with medium and large sailboats are at a disadvantage.

Because of the fog created by the unfreezing river, the scene of the ships passing through it looked breathtaking.

An explosion ruined the breathtaking scene. They have to get away soon or else they will be caught and a huge fight will break out.

The reporter assigned to the naval warfare happening in Jigolaths suddenly interrupted KMC Studio with a news flash.

Shin Hye Min quickly reported.

"I'm here with breaking news. Currently in Versailles continent simultaneous raids and battles are occurring in the center of the continent."

Players eating their food and drinking in the pub were not interested in the news flash.

The war in Versailles Continent was almost won. Often as the monster's land caught in the invasion is being converted into permanent residences as results of battles.

It was only here that you could see such things occurring regularly.

There has always been many followers of Weed's adventure but many have also found the events in the Versailles Continent much more interesting as it can mean a lot of change.

"Haven Kingdoms, Toreupan Kingdoms, Masen Kingdoms, Thor Kingdoms, Aidel Kingdom, Britten and Kallamore Kingdoms, ranging more than 200 Lords, have entered into battle in the central continent.

"What, 200 Lords? "

"What kind of battle has ever involved so many sides?"

Players drinking in the pub were baffled because of the many participants of the battle.

The central continent is very large, and most of the cities dominated by players were defenseless.

Among them many of the lords of the cities were players.

“There is a battle going on with the guilds and the lords over the ownership of the Granary and the mines in the mountain. Mr. Oh Juwan, there is supposed to be a special chronicling on this battle, right?”

“That’s right. As of now, no concrete information has been obtained and since it was a sudden declaration of war the battle is still going on.”

“What’s the scale of the battle?”

“There will be more than 10,000 in the event of a siege.”

“That includes all the trained soldiers, correct?”

“That’s correct. There are dungeon battles going on right now over the ownership of hunting areas for resources. The News updates are continually coming in. The combat areas are widespread and the nature of combat are said to be more violent. For all those who travel, you will need to take special care while on the road.”

"Indeed, this battle will become the most legendary battle in this area and will be told in the future years to come."

Due to the sudden war, the central continent was engulfed in chaos in its wake.

“Throw away things that can be thrown!”

“Throw the cannons into the river first.”

On the deck there were excess debris, cannon and shells which Heint, Fractal, and Bodomir threw into the river.

Reducing the ship’s weight even a little bit will increase the speed.

“With just the three of us we can not go into a firefight. There is only the ability to flee right now!”

The living Sculptures also joined in and threw the cannons into the river.

The Haven Kingdom and the pirates fleets were right on their tail. The entrance to escape into the sea came closer and closer.

Weed continually made the clouds while watching the Haven Kingdom’s fleet and the pirate ships.

While flying in the air, the Phoenix and the Fire Giant were followed by the continuous rain that was turning into vapors.

The strong Phoenix could not resist the temptation and flew higher up, disappearing into the the clouds.

“It’s really a tremendous amount of rain.”

The wind blew strongly and inflated the sails.

Even though Weed made the clouds, he did not expect the sudden deterioration of the weather.

Originally, the Jigolaths was a place where extreme climate changes occur.

The hot and the cold winds mixed together, making the winds blow furiously.

But it was not possible for thunder and lightning storm to occur.

Weed asked Heint about the situation.

“How favorable is it to run away when it rains?”

Heint answered looking at the map of the unfreezing river while turning the helm frantically as their moving speed was minimal.

“Running away will become harder by the minute because of the bad weather. The accuracy of their cannons will decrease a little because of the waves, and one can also disappear from sight because of the fog. But the way we are going through is a river and since there is no place to hide we will still be giving them an advantage over us.”

Over the years, doing bad things and raising their notoriety got them kicked out.

The trio including Heint had considerable experience sailing through this kind of bad weather.

The trio spoke one by one.

“We need to somehow get out of these glaciers or we might get caught eventually.”

“Even if we avoid and escape in the Jigolaths, in naval warfare Drinpelt fleet has been nicknamed the Armada. There are usually no survivors when they pursue in the sea.”

“Also the pirates chasing us is a nightmare. It would be very tough to escape safely in the sea.”

I should probably mobilize the slaves to row the boat. Even though the waves were weak, it was a disadvantage for the voyage.

In a short distance fight, the pirates would make it very difficult to escape.

- Let's prepare a way out.

- Look, I’ve gotten a wooden plank .

- The ropes are also prepared. We need to tie our body to the plank tightly.

The trio were even ready to throw themselves overboard onto the vast high seas in case the ship sunk.

They were ready to drift while hugging the wooden plank.

Given the situation, they were prepared to drift across waves even for a few days. They will still be very happy.

A medium sized sailboat sailed through the heavy rain .

Due to the river rising, the ship started to rock very dangerously as it proceeds.

The dense fog in the sea made it hard to determine the closeness in front.

They narrowly avoided the reef while sailing past it in the heavy

rain and wind.

The moment they entered the sea, the rain clouds weakened and the fog shrunk, increasing the visibility.

Tring!

-You had the misfortune of encountering a wandering Ghost Ship.

The ship is infested with rats.

Higher chance of the ship to carry plagues.

The probability of being attacked by a large sea creature increases.

Morale of the crew falls to the lowest level.

When morale remains at its lowest state, it will likely lead to insanity and make the chances of mutiny high.

There was an enormous Ghost Ship fleet where no end could be seen.

Even though the Ghost Ships were very old, each of their size was enormous.

In addition, they still kept gathering in the back.

Weed made a Ghost Ship with the rain clouds.

He continued even after seeing the Ghost ship, So the airflow got stronger.

At sea it is always very important to pay attention to the weather and make it favorable.

“Ughh.”

The trio were shocked as Weed raised both of his hands.

Written on the Barkahn’s Tome 'Advanced Undead Summoning Skill'.

It’s finally time to use it.

“The souls of the evil spirit that slumbers here, take this offering and rise from deep beneath the surface of the blue sea. I summon the Ghost Ship Maria.”

The medium sized sailboat that Weed was riding started to age rapidly.

Mast, deck, and other items made of wood started to twist and harden.

The rotten dark sails covered in holes unraveled and fluttered like flags.

From the lower part of the hull were moss and mold swelled up and ultimately transformed completely into a Ghost Ship!

"Kee Kee Kee. Capitan, long time no see! You look very stylish than the last time i saw. You exude stateliness (dignified look).”

Ghost Ship’s first mate appeared, and then a lot of ghosts started to rise up as part of the crew for the ship.

As Weed summoned the Ghost Ship Maria, the Haven kingdom fleet sunk back in the Jigolaths.

At the mouth of the unfrozen river was a densely concentrated gathering of Ghost Ships.

Weed used his Advanced Level 7 Lion’s Roar.

“Prepare for battle!”

– Skill: You have used Lion’s Roar.

Morale increases by 200% for all allies in the influence range of Lion’s Roar.

Any present state of confusion will be cleared.

An extra 285% increase in Leadership will be applied for five minutes.

“How much longer before we get there?”

“We will arrive at the unfreezing river in the morning. I think we can get there within a day.”

Pale and the others were sailing on the boat towards Jigolaths.

Even though it was a long distance to sail, Zephyr supplied fresh fish by fishing. Now there were no worry about losing the route if they followed the Ghost Ships.

Rain started to fall harder as they were heading towards the Jigolaths.

Bellote was collecting rainwater in her hands.

Mapan nodded furiously.

“The rain at the sea is very romantic.”

Mapan looks through the magical orb and saw Weed’s escape from the Drinpelt fleet .

They were hoping that their boat will reach there as soon as possible.

“Move step by step while looking ahead of you!”

“Be careful not to steer the ship towards the reef.”

As the water level of the unfreezing river rose up.

It was very difficult to avoid the large reef near the surface even on a clear day when you can see them easily.

Drinpelt’s pirate fleet's sailing was inadequate.

The 3 Mad Sharks of Becky Ninh were trying to pass by with only one ship so it was simple.

However many ships were trying to pass through the reef and got tangled making it difficult to pass through.

There was one submerged reef out of them, and it will take a lot of time to avoid getting stuck there.

“Incompetent bastards. This is making me frustrated!”

Weed’s medium sailboat was slow so they wouldn’t have gone far, so Drinpelt madly rushed his crew.

“When we get to the open sea we can easily catch them at full sail.”

The vice admiral tried to advise Admiral Drinpelt, but he didn't

even hear him.

He ate happily while screwing us over in the Jigolath.

Several ships sank in the unfreezing river one by one.

They were very anxious that Weed was going further away towards the sea in the fog they were shrouded in.

“Keep sending the fleet to the front. Tell them to keep following Weed at all cost.”

“Yes!”

Under Drinpelt’s order they were preparing many warships for close range hand-to-hand combat, since reloading the cannons is not fast while on the river.

To help shorten the distance between them and Weed they deployed Fluyt type sailing ships to the front of the flag ship which have similar size but high speed. (http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Fluyt)

13 Fluyts from Drinpelt’s fleet were given the special mission.

Previously, they have been following the flag ship in half sail. Now they spread out in full sail.

“The Admiral’s command has been given! Set sail at full speed!”

The clipper ship's captains shouted in a sonorous voice to report.

The sail received the wind and unfolded fully. The clipper ships quickly accelerated on the unfreezing river into a fearsome speed and sailed across the river.

They used excellent sailing skills to increase their speed while crossing the reef.

And after awhile, a report came in from the clipper ships.

-Between the fog we can see the ship that we are chasing from our current location, downstream river.

As they were not far from Weed, Drinpelt hastily sped up.

The main force moved calmly as they were easily catchable, at this distance.

In naval warfare if you have a faster boat than Drinpelt’s fleet, you will be outside the range of the cannons, making it possible to escape safely .

But Weed’s ship was not a clipper ship.

- It seems we will be coming in range of the cannon soon.

Although there weren't a lot of cannons mounted on the clipper ship, but to attack Weed's ship what they had was a lot.

But Drinpelt did not want to pass up Weed to the others.

-Fire. But don't sink it. Damage it to the point where he can not escape.

-Yes. Admiral.

The clipper ships advanced forward in the weakening fog.

They were startled when they reached the clearing and saw the medium sized sailboat.

It was like a brand new rebuilt medium sized ship but aged by 100 year.

The Haven Kingdom's flag was lowered, and in its place a one-eyed skull flag was put up instead.

"It became a Ghost Ship?"

"There are a lot of different ships as well. Why are there suddenly more ships near Jigolath?

“These are all Ghost Ships. All the Ghost Ships that plague the sea have assembled here. Prepare for battle!”

Weed’s ship was in the back of the numerous Ghost Ship Fleet.

The clipper ships tried to stop and retreat after reporting back to the Drinpelt’s fleet, but they were already at the open sea.

Weed’s Lion’s Roar resonated throughout the sea.

“All Ghost Ships! Get ready to fire the cannons!”

“Kekeke, cannons... preparing.”

“What was that, I was able to hear better when I was young... Did you mean the cannons? There is something clogged in it.”

The same thing was happening to all the Ghost Ships anchored at the sea. It was becoming a spectacle.

After 50 years of being unused the artilleries were clogged up with seaweed and wakame. The ghosts were trying to forcefully shove them out of the way.

The ghosts were using flint knives to clear the clogged up cannons. Sparks from their knives caused the wick of the cannons to be lit with fire.

“FIRE!”

Boooom, Boooom, Boooom! The explosion from the cannon caused a small part of the ship to be destroyed so repairs to the Ghost Ship were immediately being done.

“Will it fire properly this time?”

One of the skeletons poked its head on the mouth of the cannon as the wick was lit.

Kwakang! The cannon in working order recoiled. The head of the skeleton disappeared as it was blown off by the cannon as it went off.

“Success. We’ve fired successfully. By the way, did someone see my head?”

With its body and leftover neck, the skeleton wandered around the deck to find its head.

“There is no shell. Did I eat it yesterday because I was hungry? Maybe you lost it while playing with it?”

“Our ship is a merchant ship so we usually don’t have any shells.”

“Let’s shoot with dried fish instead.”

Merchants ships and passenger ships were also changed into Ghost Ships. It was common not to have any shells.

However, there were shells floating around in the sea from other ships that can be used.

“I will go in. Kekekeke. I’m going!”

The ghosts launched themselves by entering into the cannon and using gunpowder. Even though the process was a mess, it was relatively normal on a Ghost ship.

Shells were fired from the Ghost Ship in unison towards the clipper ships that were heading towards Weed’s ship.

Due to the poor accuracy the shells shot towards the clipper ships fell in the water and created high column of water geysers.

Shells also crashed into each other up in the sky and went off like fireworks.

“Take evasive maneuvers!”

“There are too many. We can’t evade them all! Prepare the counterattack, fire!”

The captains of the clipper ships maneuvered in a zigzag pattern and tried to prepare to fire the cannons.

But the Ghost Ship fired at random and didn't even bother to aim.

A lot of shells fell into the sea, but some literally exploded into the clipper ships.

Shells have fallen through the deck and created bright lights caused by explosion inside the hull! Sections of hull broke of and caught on fire.

“Fire!”

The clipper ships fired back even when hit, but the ships began to wobble and shake every time there was an explosion.

“Kuhehehehe. It's a human.”

More ghosts climbed onto the deck, and chaos continued.

Greasy and huge tentacles came out and grabbed the crew members on the deck.

Attached to the hull was a head that resembled a Kraken! The captain of the clipper ship urgently opened a dialogue to Hermes Guild chat.

Stinger: We are being attacked by the Ghost Ships. We are being wiped out one by one..

Haven Kingdoms 2nd fleet vice commander questioned.

Pachel: how many Ghost Ships there?

Haven Kingdom's Fleet in Jigolaths shared a communication window with the Hermes Guild and were also listening in as well in the open dialogue window.

Stinger: The situation now is ... long, there's no time to explain it. This may be the last communication before sinking. Weed's summoned many Ghost Ships, the ship that we were chasing turned into a Ghost Ship, and they are attacking us. Our battleships are wiped out! This is an emergency call.

Pachel: How did it suddenly....I get it. I'll go as soon as possible.

The clipper ship sank and became prey to the Kraken. Drinpelt led the main fleet out of the unfreezing river.

Watching the clipper ships being attacked by the Ghost Ships and the Kraken, they could not hide their surprise.

"Hmm, they left for a minute and for this to happen."

The Kraken was stuck to the hull of a clipper ship. In fact, they seem to have no choice but to give up.

The ghosts came up on deck and were in a hand-to-hand combat. Fire was burning on the sinking ship. It was already too late to save it.

“This battle is going to cause major damage.”

They just came out of the river and they were greeted with the most problematic scene possible. For the players watching as they saw what Drinpelt and Haven Kingdom's fleet had seen.

Ghost Ships spread out and waited in position at the sea, to shoot their cannons.

Under these circumstances, if they go to the front line, becoming a cannon fodder was inevitable.

However, with Admiral Drinpelt’s vast experience in naval warfare he will them lead to victory! It was an unfavorable situation but he was an expert in these things.

“Ghost Ship’s cannon accuracy rate is the worst. Warships that were reinforced with an outer glover stand in the forefront. Do not evade and break through the front. The first battle fleet and the third battle fleet go towards the river and scatter left and right. Attack from outside of the Ghost Ship range.”

They decided to take damage and endure the attack of the Ghost Ships and the sea monsters.

Using overwhelming firepower, it was a daring mission of tearing down and destroying the Ghost Ship.

Assuming that he can recover his past failures and if this fight leads to a huge naval victory for Drinpelt, he will gain more than enough fame.

In a lot of cases Ghost Ships are struck with a bounty. If you compare it with the dungeon battles on land the amount of fame and loot acquired from victory can’t be compared. And usually Ghost Ships contains lots of Antiques and Treasures.

Chapter 9: The High Seas

The five ships rushed into a triangular formation as the Ghost Ships moved next to the clipper ships in the pouring gunfire.

“Hehehe, the humans dare to fight back.”

“Let’s hurry up and sink them”

The Ghost Ships plowed through towards the warships.

“Fire! Why isn’t it hitting?”

The Undead shot the cannons back to the other side without considering the damages occurring to the ship.

“I can’t see. I can’t see anything. The sound of something blowing up is very scary. Every time I hear it I think that our ship is going to sink.”

The Undead were shooting the cannons while closing their eyes tightly. Everyone on the Ghost Ships was completely unruly and undisciplined, doing as they pleased.

However, ships on their side were made with a lot of money. They were firing without even aiming, but just by firing in the direction of the target was sufficient to hit it.

Some shells crashed the masts and blew up sections of the ships, while some created water columns that skyrocketed in the immediate vicinity of the warships.

Since the Ghost Ships were using very old shells, they didn't even explode on contact and were duds.

However, if they were unlucky it would inflict damage later on by suddenly exploding.

But one cannot expect luck when fighting Ghost Ships.

A swarm of rats suddenly came out of the cabins, and an unprecedented epidemic started to spread.

"Advance! Proceed forward! It's the command from the Admiral!"

The Captain charged the crew of the warships towards the center of the Ghost Ships.

The Haven Kingdom's crew consisted mostly of NPC soldiers that were highly loyal to them. The NPCs performed their duties without any hesitation even when there was a high risk of death.

There was an intense bombardment between the battleships. Two of Drinpelt's battleships struck on a submerged reef and

tangled with the seaweed, but they still successfully reached the sea.

“Open fire. Fire. Fire. Fire!”

Due to the continuous crossfire between the battleships, there were flames and smoke coming from the guns and cannons.

And the shells that were fired towards the Ghost Ships hit them with precision.

“Kekekeke, the ship is on fire.”

“Pour the rum. Put out the fire. Huh? The fire is getting bigger. That’s great. It was cold. Keep on burning.”

The Undead were raving on top of the Ghost Ship where flames were escalating, and was on the verge of sinking.

“Fire!”

Many Ghost Ships were defeated every time the cannons were fired from the warships.

“No need to spare the shells. Load the flare shot!”

Specially crafted flare shots were fired, and they exploded

brilliantly over the Ghost Ships.

Streams of fire spread in all direction over the Ghost Ships and covered them.

If not for the raindrops weakening the fire, it would not have been an easy task to stop the fire from spreading.

The 1st and the 3rd battleship fleet blocked the squadron of many Ghost Ships that flocked towards them.

The moment the enemy briefly displayed an opening, a horn was blown from Drinpelt's warship.

"Main Fleet, forward!"

The main fleet led by Drinpelt's warship moved forward towards the Ghost Ships.

Even though the Ghost Ships were firing shells at the warships while surrounding them, they still bravely came out of the unfreezing river.

"Open the side doors. Fire when loaded!"

Doors opened at the sides of the battleships, and cannons started spitting out fire.

On the left and right side of Drinpelt's main fleet, Ghost Ships started sinking.

Yellowy and other living sculptures were given the job of protecting Weed's precious japtems inside the Ghost Ship from burning.

"We want to fight, too. Didn't I say earlier that this was going to be a large scale battle?"

A living sculpture holding a bamboo spear and resembling a goblin hero named Kallanorsaka started protesting.

Among the living sculptures, there were a few that resembles a monster's hero. They had little affection towards their creator.

Weed began to shake his head.

"Do you know why I granted life to all of you?"

Yellowy, Golden bird, and the Silver Bird came up with the same answer at the same time.

"To make money."

"Isn't it all for money?"

“Are there any other reason besides money?”

The miser Weed with the appearance of a Lich put on a gentle smiling face and replied.

“You guys are just like newborn babies.”

“We are not!”

The living sculpture resembling Kallanorsaka strongly opposed.

Even the other monsters and creatures that resembled knights felt as if their honor had been disgraced and were displeased.

The Intimacy will drop considerably when one’s pride is broken, and they may proclaim independence and leave.

Furthermore, the Lich’s appearance was making it worse.

Of course, Weed’s treatment of the living sculptures was poor, but it was all part of a plan.

“Do you know that the Versailles continent is a very beautiful and fun place to live in? You guys are all like my children. Needless to say if you guys were to fight for me and die in battle, it would devastate me. I will do anything in order to protect you. If it is for you guys, even being a Lich is fine.”

The mind of a parent worrying about their child!

“This is a battle that I have to take responsibility for. So please watch the battle from afar.”

“I don’t think so. I still want to participate in the battle.”

The creatures with ferocious nature insisted that they want to fight in the battle, even after I gave them an explanation.

It’s difficult, but once they are tamed they will become pure and faithful.

Yellowy and the Golden bird thought.

“Now, he is going to beat them!”

“He will probably take them separately to someplace quiet to handle it!”

But Weed tried again to explain to the living sculptures in a calm voice, just like an affectionate mother blissfully asking her child who had just passed the medical school what he wants for breakfast as a token of appreciation for her child's achievement.

“I want to build houses, make clothes, and even make delicious food for you guys. But no matter what our destiny is, we should try to stay happily together for a long time.”

“I still want to fight.”

“Yes, yes. There will be lots of opportunities to fight in a battle later on. When the time comes, I will lead the vanguard into the battle.”

“You promise?”

“Sure. For now you guys relax and eat the delicious food, but if you want to fight in the battle, I will let you fight once we reach the shore. I'm your parent. But for now let me take care of things, I am doing this for you. Oh, you don’t think of me as someone who just thinks of money all the time, right?.”

“Of course not.”

The living sculptures were greatly impressed that Weed cared so much for them.

“Ah. We are blessed with a good master.”

Once the intimacy rose, the sculptures stopped opposing Weed.

When there are only few sculptures, it’s easier to handle them by casually blackmailing through violence.

However, when there are many living sculptures, it becomes

difficult to deal with it in the same way, they should be pampered by showing respect and appreciation.

This is a talent acquired by honing and sharpening his skills as a hypocrite!

Even though it was a sudden transformation, it was neither awkward nor sloppy.

Weed's sudden attitude change was meticulously planned and prepared in advance.

Even Seo Yoon fell for his act.

"We are so happy to have such a good father."

Weed spoke to them with a slight touch of modesty.

"So are you two hoping for something? I am not going to start appreciating you. I just did that so those guys will willingly do what I say. You don't want to know what I am expecting in return from them for this."

Yellowy and the Golden bird felt like hurling with disgust.

There are chances that the sculptures may die if they try to go into close combat during a naval warfare.

“Over the next 20 years they will be making me fortunes. I can’t let them die here.”

If the ship sinks, then all the sculptures who can’t swim may die by drowning and it would become an unfortunate event!

Furthermore, sculptures of life had an enormous power that is able to shift the current flow of the battle. In truth, there are also dangerous risks to showing them off here at this place!

Other than the sculptures of life that could fly through the air and swim through the water, the rest were immediately ordered to leave the battlefield.

After the living sculptures left, Weed turned his attention back to the battlefield, where Drinpelt’s fleet was completely entangled with the Ghost Ship fleet.

The Ghost Ships sank every time there was an artillery fire.

At the sea no matter where one looks, there was a blazing fire rising above with the deafening roar of the artillery fire exploding mercilessly on them.

By default, without the Necromancer commanding them, the low intellect undead mindlessly acted on their own.

The Ghost Ships were commanded and controlled in the battlefield by Weed.

“Create a formation and quickly move to intercept the enemy's advance path! On the other hand, Ghost Ship Michelangelo, swing the other way!”

While many small Ghost Ships were used to change their direction and sank, because of the constant bombardment, there was a large cruise ship among them that also turned into Ghost Ship.

Michelangelo!

A ship that suddenly disappeared with its 590 passengers onboard and turned into a Ghost Ship changed its direction to block the 2nd fleet in slanting direction.

“Steer towards the port side!”

The captain of the battleship yelled to avoid hitting Michelangelo, but there were other small ghost boats that were floating there.

The fishermen that had turned into Undead were spreading their fishing nets into the sea.

“I should eat the fish alone after catching it.”

“I hate sharks. I hate sharks. Sharks swallowed me whole. I’m

scared.”

The battleship hit the fishing boats, delaying them and causing the Michelangelo to hit the warship in the middle, causing a chain collision.

A large traffic accident at the sea!

Even without a cannon they were able to deal a great damage to the hull, which caused a severe jolt throwing the crew into the sea.

While the collapsed captain and the crew on the deck were trying to stand up, the undead passengers from the Ghost Ships flew and fell towards them.

“It’s been a long time since we came out in the open.”

“Hurry up and kneel. Sir Lord Marquis is descending!”

Among the passengers there were many noble men and women, who also turned into undead along with the ship.

“It's a new ship. We should probably steal and navigate this as a Ghost Ship".

The Undead from the cruise ship jumped into the warship to capture it while singing a song.

“Kiikikki!”

Even Undead monkeys boarded the ship swinging from the ropes hung from the mast.

There were as many as there were Undead on the passenger ship.

During the time when the battleship was blocked, other Ghost Ships also came and rammed from all sides.

Once the ships finished ramming, many Undead came flying from the Ghost Ships and completely took over the battleship.

Tring!

-All the ship’s personnel has been killed. The ownership of the Warship Predator has been changed to the Undead.

The warship Predator will be transformed into a Ghost Ship.

The Warship underwent a rapid aging process. The newly transformed Ghost Ship manipulated its cannons.

“Fire at will!”

They began bombarding towards Drinpelt’s fleet from the battleship.

Weed cleverly took advantage of the newly transformed Ghost Ship and sunk all the other clipper ships.

The ordinary Ghost Ships were positioned to block Drinpelt's fleet in all possible directions they could move.

While at sea, one could move in many directions. However, the battleship's speed dropped considerably when they turned to fire their cannons.

A gap was deliberately opened in one direction, the warships that went into that gap were ambushed and bombarded by all the Ghost Ship's fleet that were waiting.

The massive assault by the Ghost Ship's fleet created a big impact, stopping the fleet in its path.

"You guys fight as well!"

Weed summoned Van Hawk and Torido.

"I feel a mighty power surging from Master."

"KEAHAHA! The power that I had lost is coming back. They shall be soaked in their own blood."

The Undead strengthening ability from the Death Aura was placed on both Van Hawk and Torido.

The Death Aura flowed through their body as they were summoned.

Being the original Bar Khan's direct subordinates, both Torido and Van Hawk were extraordinarily strong boss monsters.

They were no longer the same level as when they met and have grown by 200~300 levels.

However when the Undead have the characteristic support of a Necromancer, they can exhibit their real full potential.

They fought alone with their own strength due to the Necromancer's enhancement magic.

One must have advanced undead skills to properly summon and use both Van Hawk and Torido, but instead Weed had miserably beaten them loads of time to make them follow him unconditionally.

"We'll get the ships close together."

The 3 Mad Sharks of Becky Ninh were also excited. They brought the Ghost Ship that they were sailing near the Haven Kingdom's fleet whom they were fighting.

"Let's Go!"

Van Hawk jumped into the enemy's deck.

The Death Knight had summoned more than a hundred undead.

Due to Weed's enhanced Necromancer skills Van Hawk's Mana increased, allowing him to summon his own strong undead combat army.

The troops that the Death Knight summoned had phantom steeds running with them on the enemy's deck.

"We will fight however we want. We are the True Blood Vampire Clan! Go out and drain them of their blood!"

Torido transformed into a bat with red eyes.

Due to the dark night, Haven Kingdom's fleet's bombardments were getting weaker while the idea was to use Torido actively as he got stronger.

The vampire bats were considered to be quite difficult to fight against even during a naval battle.

Torido and the other vampires turned into bats and stormed the nearby warships.

The sailors and the crew who were the key to controlling the

cannons got bit on their neck.

The sailors that Torido sucked blood from became his servants.

“You are now my underlings.”

“Yes, my Lord.”

“Attack and take your companion's life.”

“Yes, Lord.”

The Minions fired their cannons against their former naval colleagues.

“What’s happening? Is it a misfire?”

“They are shooting at us again. Counterattack!”

This created a chaos where they didn’t know who to trust.

As the Vampires worked, they unfolded their illusion magic.

The night was the world of vampires where they could freely and swiftly fly in the sky.

As a Lich, Weed fought compatibly with Van Hawk and Torido. Their movements could hardly be traced by the naked eye, making it difficult to follow.

Arriving at the sea, Weed saw Bingryong and the Wyverns flying in circles in the distance, ready to fight.

“You guys fight as well.”

Golden Bird, Silver Bird, Phoenix, and even the sea creatures that had no names were also called into combat.

“Fight in the outskirts. Bingryong and Wyverns, you will be conducting the battle.”

“Yes, Master.”

The Wyverns and Bingryong were very happy.

"They might have suffered longer because they were born earlier but now as the elder brothers they were on top of the hierarchy."

“Come along with us!”

The living sea creatures were mixed up in the fight along with the sea monsters, and flying through the air were Bingryong, Phoenix, and Wyverns in a complete formation

They flew in the night sky lit up by the blazing sea and, with their claws, ripped the sails into shreds. The sailors shooting the cannons were taken and thrown out into the sea.

“The battle situation is not very advantageous for us, Admiral.”

Drinpelt’s fleet was dwindling. But the real problem was the sunken ships turning into Ghost Ships and starting to attack their allies.

The Death Aura emanating from Weed’s Necromancer skill was flowing to the surroundings of his Ghost Ship, causing the sunken ships to rise as Ghost Ships over time.

“They’re very annoying bastards.”

The Ghost Ship fleet had a lot of antique ships. Their sailing speed and artillery wasn’t much, but their battle formation was good.

Weed controlled the defense and fortified the formation, protecting the vulnerable supply ships from being attacked.

Even though the Drinpelt’s fleet had a formidable firepower, the Ghost Ships were ransacking all over the place under the protection of sea monsters.

“This has turned into a hand-to-hand melee combat, Admiral.”

Drinpelt's fleet was centralized based on firepower. Everyone riding in their ship were selected based on the concept that the cannons were better than swords in a naval battle.

They have never fought in a close quarters hand-to-hand combat, since they usually defeat everyone in a firefight whether it was against ships or monsters.

Drinpelt's flagship of fighting troops and Hermes guild volunteers rode around, sinking Ghost Ships with holy and fire magic.

Rather than general naval combat, the Ghost Ships were superior in hand-to-hand combat.

The holy magic protection given by the priests to the ships was completely ignored by the Undead who flew over and attacked in numbers, causing mass hysteria and panic.

Weed's ship was clinging to the side of another battleship at an angle.

Grand goals do not need to be justified to leave a mark in history.

"This is a feast!"

Impoverished humanity!

In Weed's eyes he could only see experience and items.

He fought alongside the Undead, brandishing his sword against the crew.

Weed cut into the fight late.

"It's the Lich!"

As soon as they saw Weed, their will to fight plummeted and the sailors ran away. This was due to Fear being stimulated by the Lich's Death Aura effect.

In fact, every time the battle was difficult for Weed, it excited him.

Necromancers may be weak against priests, but it was an excellent profession.

Weed smoothly grabbed the nape of the fleeing crew members neck.

"Mana Drain!"

He began by taking away Mana from the sailors and then summoned back the sunken Ghost Ships once again.

Bubbles start to foam at the sea, and a moment later a Ghost Ship would surge out from under the sea.

This is the unparalleled Fear the Lich gives off.

As the vitality of the enemies killed are converted to mana, more Undead and Ghost Ships were raised due to the Death Aura.

More health and mana is once again used to strengthen the Undead. From the deep sea a sunken Ghost Ship rises.

Lich's focal point is to rule a legion of Undead as a King.

Drinpelt was watching all of this from a distance.

They were unable to fire because both the Ghost Ships and the allied warships were mixed in the middle close together and this made the magicians to be more wary of the surrounding chaos.

It was to the point where even the falling raindrops were making one nervous.

"It can't be...."

"Pardon?"

“They didn’t deliberately enter into the hand-to-hand combat and idly waited while we were chasing them, right?”

“…”

If Drinpelt’s fleet was to fight at the base of the Unfreezing River, with their superior artillery, it was possible for them to obtain an overwhelming victory against the Ghost Ships, although it would take time to achieve.

However, by the time they were done, Weed would be able to run far away.

They were in a position where they needed to catch Weed in this fight by whatever method they had to use.

Drinpelt wondered if by any chance Weed had already predicted the melee battle with the battleships on the sea.

If so, then one needs to re-evaluate Weed again.

Not only on land but on sea as well, he knows how to fight to his full power and take advantage of the battlefield as much as possible

Orchestrating a battle of this caliber while commanding the undead displayed one’s true ability, which was outside of Drinpelt’s expectations.

Even though the front and the rear side were vulnerable, the deck side was very strong. Indeed, on deck was nine percent more cannons positioned compared to the sides.

The most important factor when fighting among ships is the positioning, but the Ghost Ships have a wide range of turning ability and mobility.

Weed plunged himself into the battle.

Drinpelt's fleet was clustered together with battleships having turned into Ghost Ships, dealing considerable amount of damage to their fleet because of the cannons. Having no escape route, their only option was to fight.

Anyone well versed in naval combat and hand-to-hand battle had no choice but to acknowledge Weed's skill, as he excelled in both beyond any of their expectations.

In Jigolaths, the enemies were accused of being cowardly for doing surprise attacks and creating chaos, now they had no choice but to acknowledge the enemy commander.

He has great qualities of being an Admiral of the sea.

Not just brilliant in one or two fields but three fields put together gave him a better perspective and judgement.

"Hey, you stupid bastards! Hurry up and move. Who told you to

count the gold coins? Do you want to be wrapped up in seaweed and dumped into the deep, dark sea again? The one-armed guy wearing a rag hat, why are you lowering the anchors? Hurry up and quickly move. You need to at least sink one more!”

Weed commanded the Ghost Ships with a massive amount of constant nagging and meddling, making them work in order. Even when they couldn't see him, they still heard his voice perfectly.

“It can’t be helped. Get in touch with the Pirate King Griffith who, more than us, excels in this chaotic hand-to-hand combat. Tell him that they are allowed to fight them as well.”

The pirates have dropped their anchors and were looking around without even coming out of the Unfrozen River .

Drinpelt’s fear was that his fleet would lose the earned respect from Hermes Guild and he would also bring shame to their guild’s name.

“It’s finally our turn. Set out!”

The pirates who were watching silently till now simultaneously moved out.

Coalition of the Navy and the Pirates!

The pirate ships attached themselves to the Ghost Ships who were attached with the navy warship in hand-to-hand-combat.

“Attack.”

“Let’s wipe out the Undead!”

Pirates engaged the battleship. A battle broke out with the Undead.

A fight broke out between the Pirates and the Undead once the ships got attached.

The Ghost Ships attempted to takeover the battleship by getting past them, but they were repelled.

The place where the unfrozen river merged with the sea turned into a battlefield where one half was filled with Haven Kingdom’s battleships and the Pirate’s ships while the other half was filled with Ghost Ships.

Death Knights were doing hand to hand combats on top of the Ghost Ships as other ships were sinking because of the continuous bombardment.

With perfect timing, Weed’s back-up finally arrived.

“Weed, we’re here!”

Pale and his companions’ ship arrived in the nearby waters of Jigolaths.

Heavy rain started falling again.

Hwaryeong started applying makeup made of natural ingredients inside her cabin.

Her skin was fair and clear, soft and smooth like a baby’s.

It’s very essential to put on makeup which helps in giving a distinct look!

Dancers could improve their appearance stat considerably by applying makeup.

“No eyeliner today, because it's raining. I’m only going to touch up my cheeks.”

She untied her hair which naturally came down to her waistline.

One of the privileges of being a dancer is the rate at which their hair grows.

And since their hair grows very fast, it allows them to sport a variety of hairstyles.

Hwaryeong changed into the most shining, attractive, and innocent look from her usual proud look.

Ttring!

-You have completed applying your make up.

Charm +21%,

Charisma +15%

Luck +29%

Effect of the dance skill +31%

When playing the role of a lady selling flowers or bread, the situation will be more favorable to you.

The effect will remain active as long as the makeup is maintained

Since early childhood, she performed on stage and showed many different performances. Now her face was close to the real one, her figure could be said to be unvarnished.

“It’s been a long time, so I should give Weed a most memorable dance show.”

When Hwaryeong was satisfied with her appearance in the mirror, she took off the earrings and necklaces that she wore.

It was a good set of accessories for a dancer, but their bonuses didn't fit the situation.

She was dressed in a flattering see-through white dress.

Pale's ship glided towards the center of the battlefield.

"Tch, when it rains, the power of my magic becomes weaker... can't do anything about it. Fire tornado!"

Romuna casted her magic right in the center of the ongoing sea battle.

The fire rose violently on the sea and expanded outwards, towards the surrounding area. With the swirl of the wind it went up high towards the heavens.

A wavy vortex of flame was floating in the air!

From there, fireballs fell towards the battleships.

"Target set.... Go. Multishot!"

Pale shot an arrow towards the ropes that held the sails on the warship. Trying to hit the swaying rope in the pouring rain was very difficult.

The specially crafted arrowhead that had a broad hook ripped straight down the large sails into half.

Although it didn't stop the battle, he distinguished himself by significantly reducing the mobility of the enemy ship.

'The one who's wearing a red hat must be the captain.'

The captain and the first mate were also shot(sniped) with arrows.

Zephyr was swinging his fishing rod at the approaching pirates, keeping them from boarding the ship and holding them in check.

Even though it wasn't a large role, it did stop the pirates from being able to climb into the ship.

Even Surka swung her fist to block the enemies from getting onto the ship.

Pale was grumbling as he nocked arrows onto his bow while walking.

"Maylon would have definitely loved this if she was here."

It was an adventure Maylon would envy; no one would want to miss a battle like this.

However, her job was to broadcast this as a special program, so

she had no choice but to give up taking part in this.

The woes of a worker.

“Fire. Sink them!”

Of course, there were also cannons in the pirates ships.

With Pale’s instructions they were able to expand their range to sink the Pirates' ships.

Tarararararan.(continuous cannon fire sfx sound)

In this loud battlefield, between the sounds of cannons firing and swords clashing, the distinct sound of a harp playing was heard.

Standing on the Crow’s nest, the Bard Bellotte began playing the harp. She began to play as if she was possessed.

“What the?”

“What is she doing playing in the midst of the battlefield?”

The Pirates burst out laughing.

Under the heavy downpour of the rain, the music they heard was so majestic that it was an exaggeration to say that there was a

fierce battle going on.

It was completely incredible for her to play a dreamy yet soft and gentle music in this place.

Hwaryeong stood up from where she was sitting on the main deck as the music began. She excitedly whispered with a small voice.

“I won’t have another chance to perform on a stage like this?"

She walked softly on top of the mast.

The combined effects of the flaming tornado and the dark clouds created a red glow illusion of a sunset.

The rain soaked Hwaryeong completely, making her white dress cling to her body every time she made a move.

The boobybooby dance that she normally performs was only effective at a close range.

The very critical points in a boobybooby dance was to show vague areas and to tease the viewers with it!

However in this wide battlefield with an on going heavy rain, no ordinary dance would work.

Even on this rainy day, this dancer danced fiercely. It wouldn't have mattered to Hwaryeong even if there were a billion people present there shouting and shrieking.

“Seeing the audience watch me on stage, gives me a familiar feeling. This is my dance.”

Remembering the days of when she was a child, the rain would fall and she thought that they were worms falling from the heavens.

Rain moistens the earth, it was rain that brought life.

This was a type of rain that people purely dreamed about and would like to dance in.

Hwaryeong gracefully started a ballet, drew a circle with her hands and walked on her toes.

Gusty winds shook her, the rainwater drenched her body and took away some heat, it was hard but not impossible.

She danced with the beat of the falling rain as she danced with joy.

“Lalaaalala”

Humming a tune while the rain was falling, she danced and

moved with the wind.

As her hands and feet flexibly drew a line, the eyes and expressions on her face could charm the hearts of the audience.

It felt like you could be sucked away.

It was the ability to dominate the entire stage.

How gorgeous and beautiful she looked..

She danced full of joy, just like a Fairy that loved the rain, as if she would never see it again.

Her clothes soaked in water gave a completely captivating and sensual feel about her.

Slender neckline and innocent face with beautiful eyes, the attractive figure was to the point where you could continually watch throughout the day. (A/N(not T/N) :In the book it states one who has amazing hot devilish body.) As her long hair that was drenched in water, splashed around.

Her long hair drenched in water and splashed around.

Even the pouring rain that hit her was like a decoration that made her stand out.

She really loved to dance, at the moment it was as if the world was the stage she danced on.

The lively dance she started became hot and passionate filled with an intense flow.

On any stage, no matter which audience, it didn't matter even if it there were tens of thousands of people to her.

It was like a dazzling charm of a goddess that no one could touch.

"Ah...."

The Pirates' and the Navies' jaws dropped.

Dancer Hwaryeong is dancing.

You can't take your eyes off from the dance.

Due to Confusion, the success rate of skills will decrease.

Stamina will decrease.

In the nearby water Hwaryeong's dance caught the eyes of the Navy NPCs and the Pirate NPCs, The Pirate users and the Navy users, because of Hwaryeong they all fell into a deep trance.

Chapter 10: Friends

“Hurry up and fight!”

Even though the captain of the Pirate ship yelled, the Pirates continued to watch in awe while drooling with their mouth hanging open.

“Oh, We want to avert our eyes but....we cannot look anywhere else.”

“She’s so pretty. Ah, If i have a girlfriend like that too I would live my life to invite her on a daily basis. Khuck! On board the Pirate ship where you only see guys, even seeing a female puffer fish would make one happy.”

“Its not just the pretty face, its the overall figure. That perfect beauty. If only I could list her as a my friend...”

Even from the distance the Sailors and the Pirates could see Hwaryeong’s face as if it right in front of them. One of Dancer’s ability is to attract the attention of the enemy. Part of Hwaryeong’s collarbone was visible through the cotton, one cannot help but to be engrossed in it to the point where it was as if they could hear the sound of her breath.

The older men were literally frozen due to the temptation of Hwaryeong's dance.

“I need to watch her, even if my wife will hit me or kill me!”

A sense of urgency could be felt. The people outside the range of Hwaryeong’s dance, who were not stupefied, broke out into a violent battle.

“UwAhhhhhhhhh!”

“Kill the sea monster!”

A Pirate ship rammed a squid like sea monster that resembled a Kraken with the front of their ship.

Kaooooooooooo!

Enraged, the kraken stretched out and wrapped its tentacles around the Pirate ship and squeezed it with force.

“Charge! Charge!”

The Pirates climbed aboard the tentacles of the kraken and brandished their swords. The kraken continued to fight while swimming, even as parts of it’s body that was cut, fell into the sea.

The sailing ships converged together towards the Ghost Ships, the cries of the Undead did not stop at the sea. The Pirates even boarded onto the ship that Weed was on.

“I don’t care what happens to the rest of the war. We must capture Weed.”

“Kehehehe, We are going to become the heroes that caught Weed. What should we do with the item that drops?”

“Find the ship’s captain. Let’s sneak up on him so that he won’t notice us.”

The Pirates approached Weed stealthily while he was engaged in fights. There was no way that Weed did not see them. After all, This was the home of excellent items, especially during battles!

‘They are wearing a cheap Pirate coat. The only good items are the boots and the belts, that were limited to levels over 300.’

Belts are generally not items that are often dropped. As the Pirates often boarded and plundered other ships for loot, they did not wear as good of an equipment compared to the Navy Knights.

‘Even If I sell them, I probably won't get much out of it.’

The Pirate equipments were not even good enough to save them. Weed completely ignored them and continued to focus on his fight.

“Keuhahahaha! Give me all your health & mana and die. Hmm, I get vulnerable when I use health & mana drain, but there is

nobody who is a threat to me, so it's fine."

A poor performance by Weed.

He wanted to wipe them all out once the Pirates got closer. But when the Pirates were sneaking in closer to his back, there was another person blocking their path.

This whole time Seo Yoon has been circling near Weed, when she saw Pirates coming towards him she drew her sword.

"Tch. We've been discovered."

"Kill her!"

Seo Yoon confronted the oncoming Pirates, by silently wielding her sword.

"....."

Seo Yoon cut down all the Pirates without even feeling sorry for them.

Weed looked out of the corner of his eyes at the woman who was considered as pretty reliable.

Even though there was a strong girl protecting him, He disliked

missing the chance to get rid of the twelve Pirates personally

‘She is a sensitive girl with a soft corner in her heart and…in her own way she’s taking good care of me.’

Just when he was quietly praising her, Seo Yoon bent down to pick up the items that dropped from the Pirates.

Boots and belts!

Some Pirates even dropped Emeralds and handcrafted jewelry, that appeared to be from an aristocratic family.

“So that’s the case.”

Weed was so annoyed that he couldn’t speak.

Both the sea monsters and the living sculptures were involved in a fierce close combat in an artillery battle.

Although many of The Ghost Ships sank, The price was heavy, as numerous warships and Pirates ships also went under.

The sight of the Drinpelts’s Pirate alliance locked in a deathly struggle with Weed’s Undead was a sight to behold.

“Kekekeke. I want to drink some Lime juice! My throat feels

really dry.”

From the cries of the Undead, one of the Pirates instinctively took out a lime juice and gave it to him.

The Undead swallowed loudly as if he drank the juice.

“Did that work? I even gave you a drink so can you go back to your own ship now.”

However the Undead once again started fighting with even more vigor.

“My thirst has finally been quenched, now it’s time to kill you. Ohehhehehe!”

As they fought mindlessly with one another, they accumulated heavy physical damage with each fight.

Weed thought that he had participated in too many large scale battles recently.

“I just want to live a long and simple life, but there are no days to rest.”

Therefore, he had no intention of being a hero.

I just want live comfortably by getting good rewards while doing several quests and hunting!

The war that's been going on since dawn seems to be near it's end, as the artillery fire reduced showing the declining state of the User's stamina.

Doung! Doung! Doung! Doung! (drum roll sound)

In the rain, the navy fleet of an immortal legion adorned by a fluttering flag with a screaming skull came towards them from the sea.

The battleships fired a volley of cannons at Haven Kingdom's fleet and the Pirate ships.

"What the hell is that?"

Drinpelt was dumbfounded.

As far as he knew, in the open sea, only trade cities and Kingdoms owned battleships.

But dozens of battleships with armed fleet suddenly appeared before them!

With their excellent eyesight they saw the Undead that were lined up on the deck.

Zombies, Ghouls, Burning Skeletons, Lesser Undead along with Witches and Death Knight, there were even Archmages and Dullahans.

They started casting black magic towards the Haven Kingdom's fleet and the Pirate ships.

"That's the flag of the Immortal Legion that Weed had to deal with!"

"What the, why would they attack us? Isn't it normal to attack Weed, against whom they hold a grudge."

Both Drinpelt's fleet and Pirate's felt completely overwhelmed.

Even when they haven't done anything wrong to the Undead yet, for them to have gathered their strongest naval power against them.

Weed was also uncomfortable in many ways. He had many interlaced ill-fated relationships with the Immortal Legions.

"With my own hands I lead to the eternal rest of Lich Shire. During that time, with the help of Orcs and Dark Elves I defeated many Immortal Legions, I even summoned Bar Khan to fight against the Embinyu Church..."

The Immortal Legions were neither friendly nor enemies.

The fleet consisted a total of 45 black sliver battleships! They were similar level to Drinpelt's ship of the line battleship, It had tremendous amount of firepower. (ship of the line is a type of naval battleship constructed in 17th to 19th century to take part in the naval tactic known as line of battle.)

In addition, lined up on the deck were the Undead that were usually not easy to deal with.

Weed, who had previously fought with the Immortal Legions, knew full well about how powerful they were.

"Even if there were no Necromancers it would still be difficult to deal with the Immortal Legions."

It was ridiculous to fight the Immortal Legion when they were not prepared to fight.

There was a possibility that one of the Ghost Ships from his fleet might not follow his orders and attack the Immortal Legion.

Although Bingryong, Phoenix, and the living sculpture did not attack, they were ordered to check them out.

The Immortal Legion that brought over their warships struck first with cannons and magic at Drinpelt and Griffith's battleship.

Fire blazed forth on the battleships that sank due to the shelling!

The fight that The Immortal legion started has been going on for the past 2 hours ended when both the Drinpelt's and Griffith's fleet retreated from the battle.

They could still restart the battle since half of them were still near the others still in battle, but now it was not possible to catch Weed anymore.

Once they all withdrew, the war completely stopped.

As the sound of the deafening cannon fire entirely diminished, the flagship of the Immortal Legion approached Weed.

The Ghost Ships parted through the middle and a path was cleared.

It was not because of Weed's orders, some of the Undead were so afraid that they avoided the Immortal Legions.

That's how dreadful, the Undead fear their seniors.

"Hmmm."

Despite the long battle Weed's mind was processing very fast.

‘I want to live at all cost. But if I were to die it needs to be with very minimal damage.’

The odds of him getting out of this situation alive was like finding a winning lottery ticket on the side of the road.

Hwaryeong stopped dancing, and all the attention was now on Weed’s ship.

As he was standing at the bow while it was rocking, Weed projected a very strong Death Aura.

If it was on land, he could have chickened out on his responsibility and ran away, but this was on the sea.

‘Seeing as they haven’t directly started attacking us, there might be a possibility of having a minimum amount of dialogue with them. Maybe now that I am in a same Undead state as them, they might look over me right?’

In the midst of the battlefield, Wyverns and Bingryong were steadily collecting the items that were left out.

His Talrock’s armour, equipments and treasures were left with Golden Bird, Silver Bird, and Yellowy so now he was penniless! Weed muttered with his yellow teeth.

‘Its fine if I die. 2 times or 3 times I can catch up by doing 2x or even 3x more grinding. The Immortal Legion! I will surely get my revenge.’

If the Immortal Legion kills him, he will get his revenge later.

‘5 years, no…i’ll see you in 20 years. By then I’ll have an enormous amount of levels and I will have my revenge.’

There is no time limit for revenge!

Weed waited on the bow with his chest proudly open and his shoulders pulled back. In any case he did not want to fight with the Legions of Undead.

Even though his level is much higher than before there was no chance to do it alone, even if he uses his friends and a bunch of subordinates they will all still take an enormous amount of damage.

If all the Living Sculptures were to die, there really won’t be anything left, he didn’t take such a dangerous risk.

‘I’ll die for those guys so only kill me.’

In his heart he became solid in his resolution, even in front of the Immortal Legion he didn’t even feel a little bit of inferiority.

On his face and in his eyes, the Immortal Legion were not worth anything to him, he arrogantly gave off the impression that he had the authority and charisma to easily stomp them out and die from him.

-Everyone leave here. Step back and wait where Yellowy is. Bingryong and Wyverns land and protect Yellowy and others and make sure that what happened to Geumini won't happen again..

As the battleship stopped close by to Weed, an Undead human that looks like a reptilian frogman stepped out.

-You have seen the legendary monster Hashilsa.

Ruler of the Ghost Ship on the sea.

A promising admiral was born in the free city and he loved to go on adventures. During one of his travel, looking for legends of the unknown sea, he unfortunately received a terrible curse that transformed him into frog.

His appearance turned hideous after he became too obsessed for more power, he tied his crew’s leg on a stone bridge over the ocean and didn’t even hesitate to drop them while committing atrocities.

Finally he was driven back by the other naval fleets. He was reborn again by the Undead Overlord Bar Khan as a dark mage, to become his underling.

During the Undead great war vast amount of Undead went missing, but since the resurgence of Bar Khan, they appeared once again.

- Due to The appearance of Hashilsa, one begins to slip into a state of fear. Physical ability decrease.

- The moral of the crew drops to the lowest level. It is impossible to bring back order.

The 3 Mad Sharks of Becky Ninh, the navy knights, and even the large Pirate's body stiffen Due to the appearance of Hashilsa.

Weed's Fighting Spirit was high enough, so there were no effect.

'The necklace of Ellekaye, it is a treasure necklace that still seeks for its frozen owner. Contained in the Magician Guild's treasure book, it clearly states that the item's attack skill scope and effect increases by 35%. And supposedly the Mana consumption is also reduced by a half. The one that he is also holding is the Kingdoms Knights magic sword. Even if you do say it's a magic sword, just the necklace is over level 600.'

If you look it at in a certain way, the reason that Bar Khan can not exercise his full ability must be due to his heart being pierced with a sword! Just by identifying the item in his mind he felt more comfortable.

'Come and attack. I am not afraid to die. If he's at that level, even I will die quickly.'

Even Weed couldn’t identify most of the items that Hashilsa was wearing.

It’s possible to say that all the items were unique treasures, anyone can guess Halshilsa’s strength is formidable! But Weed arrogantly began talking to him first.

“Hashilsa, You came to find me for a reason, What did you want to talk to me about?”

Of course Hashilsa could not manage and control the whole Immortal Legion Fleet alone.

Yet, Weed continued to talk with a cold tone while emitting the Death Aura.

Even if he were about to die, he still had the chance to say his last words and even ask questions.

Isn’t this what being a men is all about.

One of the important motto of being a Dark gamer was that even if one was to get attacked by a dragon they had to stay attentive so they can collect as many items before they are killed.

Hashilsa raised one of his arms to his chest and slightly bowed forward.

“I give you my greetings. The reason I am here is to let you know that Sir Bar Khan Demoph is calling for you.”

A heavy hearted predicament! Weed was even popular with the monsters, this was something he did not want.

Weed rolled his eyes as he asked Hashilsa.

“Did he come here too?”

“...No, he did not come.”

Even if Bar Khan didn’t come, it still wasn’t a joyful situation.

If it was just Hashilsa, Weed would have been able to kill him.

Having a big level deference toward Hashilsa made it difficult to avoid him and he made him feel like he had a duty to continue to converse with him.

Also there are often a lot of boss level monsters that have their own back stories.

Rather than trying to blindly fight, it was necessary to speak and learn as much as you can.

‘They may even let me live. I’m even using honorifics right now.’

However he can not just believe in just that, there is a possibility that Hashilsa could transform into a weak personality, and use honorifics to weaker individuals.

Weed put on a rotten smile on his lips.

“Really? Then, are you not here to attack me?”

He asked an important question right from the start.

All of a sudden, an idea brushed his mind.

‘Ah, by any chance?’

He was currently in a Lich form.

Of course, It didn’t make sense to his fellow colleagues when he suddenly started getting unlimited respect from a senior Undead.

But when he sculpted his Lich’s sculpture to transform his appearance, it was modelled after Shire. Even though right now he wasn’t even wearing any of Shire’s equipment.

‘Huhu, I don’t think it is possible. Even if one accidentally see me as a Lich, how is it possible for them to be that confused.’

However Weed's imagination was proven to be true by Hashilsa's next words..

"How can you think that I can attack Bar Khan's protege Shire?"

"....."

"Sir Shire, Bar Khan is urgently looking for you."

Weed's skull face turned askew. To come this far he could not pretend that he didn't know any such Lich.

"Right now I'm a little busy so I'll come later."

He only told him that he will go to Bar Khan so that they could hear exactly what they wanted to hear!

Being called to the monster legion is a huge headache.

"Sir Shire, you are an important apprentice of Bar Khan, so you must come to Bar Khan's calling. Sir Shire, I can personally give 120 days for you to come and join him, I hope its enough time."

-Triling!

Bar Khan's call

The call of the Undead overlord Bar Khan Demoph.

All Undead must obey his command.

Level of Difficulty: C

Reward: Start of a chain quest to meet Bar Khan.

-Quest related to Lich Shire has occured.

A Secret Quest has been triggered!

background explanation

As a second in command under Bar Khan, Lich Shire was a sly evil lich that is unparalleled. He conspired and corrupted his mentor with his darkness and lead the Immortal Legion into war.

-Become an agent and infiltrate into the legion.

-One needs a high notoriety and commanding ability, and also needs to have a similar appearance to Shire.

- You are forced to do the quest.

As a Lich you can not refuse Bar Khan’s Request.

‘How can they do something so underhanded to me.’

He wasn’t even given the chance to politely refuse.

While Weed was still complaining about it, Hashilsa started speaking again.

“Then I shall leave first and head towards Bar Khan. I’ll see you there, Sir Shire.”

Weed wanted him out of there as soon as possible

“I get it, so leave.”

He wanted to curse furiously at them, but he was in a situation where he would not dare to open his mouth.

There are people that are level 200 or higher that go around showing off their strength.

But Weed, who was close to level 400 is even now constantly being entangled with high profile monsters.

This time, Bar Khan must be planning to trample all the Kingdoms

Weed felt that it was his fate.

‘Just my rotten luck. There probably aren't any other users in Versailles that has to go through all this just like me.’

But the people who were watching him, like always had a different idea.

‘Weed got another badass Quest again.’

‘To be the only one to have been commissioned a quest related to the Immortal Legion once again, he is truly awesome.’

‘I’m so envious. Unlike him, we are only doing piracy to live and eat off of others.’

‘Don’t tell me that he will succeed and then throw away the Immortal Legion Quest? I’m sure that it wouldn’t just end without even meeting Bar Khan.’

Players who were of slightly higher level, changed their minds.

‘Hmm, I was thinking about killing Weed and stealing the Quest, but now, it might be better if I don’t steal it.’

‘If it’s a quest related to Immortal Legion then one might have to continually die. He might even have to die at least five or six times.’

‘I’m going to have many troubles. Here at Jigolaths I had went through quite a lot.....It’s better to just live moderately and comfortably.’

They all lost interest in Weed's high sea adventures.

When Hashilsa came, the Ghost Ship that sunk rose up from the sea as if nothing happened to it.

While Drinpelt and Griffith battleships were damaged badly that they could no longer continue to drag on the naval warfare.

The worst possibility was that they could lose everything, though it will be even more difficult to return back to Versailles Continent.

After Naval Warfare concluded and it was finally time to return back to Versailles Continent with his friends. It's gonna be a pleasant voyage.

The living sculptures divided amongst themselves into the three Ghost Ships. Weed, his friends, and Seo Yoon all rode on one ship.

"Kahem! Silver Bird come here and say hello."

Peyoc, tweet, chirp. Silver Bird folded her wings and greeted them cutely.

Zephyr was using his fishing rod to catch food, while Weed cooked his special seafood soup.

While they were eating their food, Hwaryeong began telling the story of their arrival when they came after the Ghost Ship fleet.

“This taste delicious! When we saw the Immortal Legion, we were worried that we might have arrived too late....”

Their ship’s speed was so slow that they arrived just in the nick of time.

Irene added to the explanation.

“Now, Mermaids would always come over, thanks to Bellot singing and dancing. Zephyr also helped out a group of captive dolphins.”

Bellot sang with her voice in precise and fine tune, singing a sweet song joyfully. After gathering the Mermaids, Zephyr did not waste his bait for fishing and instead he tossed and fed the dolphins making them gather.

Thanks to that, they arrived just on time.

Weed introduced his friends and Seo Yoon to each other.

They worked and hunted with her and Seechwi for a brief period in the past, so it was not like they didn’t know each other.

“….”

Seo Yoon face was like a mask, since she usually doesn’t speak with other people.

If it was not something she needed to say to Weed, it was difficult for her to talk.

After all the greetings are done, Weed spread out a cloth on the floor, that he uses when sewing.

“Come on let us begin.”

“huh?”

“Hwaryeong who won 1, 190 gold, please play the game.”

To pass time by playing Go-Stop during the voyage!

Weed proposed to Hwaryeong and Bellot, While Irene, Zephyr and Romuna exchanged glances.

‘As expected It seems he was planning to play again.’

‘that must have been his plan all along…..’

‘There can be no mistake.’

Normally, It isn't a good idea to take sides in advance and do fraudulent gambling. But now, It was just the opposite!

They were going to satisfy Weed by losing to him. Weed even drew Seo Yoon into the game.

"Don't just watch come over and play."

"....."

"Do you not know how to play? I'll show you how to play. Its easy all you need to know are a few rules."

Weed knew the truth that Seo Yoon was rich, so he dragged her in because of his greed.

"All you need to do is to collect a lot. There are several important things having a lot of Sangpi (junk tile) is good. Its even possible to get Gwangman (bright tile)."

They went around in circles a couple of times.

The party that was trying to lose lightly, and Weed who is trying to earn easy money from others their face was very tense as they played.

Bellot and Irene folded their tiles, while Weed, Pale, and Seo

Yoon continued to played GoStop.

In front of Seo Yoon, a lot of tiles were stacked on her side. Weed and Pale had light amount of tiles stacked and they were going after the bonus, on the second rotation a hit has occurred.

And it already it came to a point where a hit was called out twice.

‘Pibak and Gwangbak (another game term), on top of that two GO were called…’

Weed and Pale concentration were sharper than ever.

They had little amounts of tiles, while in front of Seo Yoon there were a lot.

Even the people on the side were immersed in tension, It was finally Seo Yoon’s turn.

Chak.

Chak!

As Seo Yoon took PalGong (go-stop card term), she flips the card and out came Sangpi. (another go-stop term.)

Silence fell on the group.

“Are you really going to choose to go to th…three Go?”

Weed asked with difficulty.

At this moment it concerned him more than anything else.

‘If she has a least bit of conscience she won’t possibly go to three.’

Changdong (game phrase) can earn 10 gold (1st hit is called) and one can win up to 2, 000 gold in one game (when third hit is called).

Seo Yoon nods to Weed’s question and shows him three fingers.

During the whole day Weed lost 6, 290 gold to Seo Yoon who continually wiped the board clean.

KMC Media relayed the Battle of Jigolaths for the whole day. Of course they had the highest rating, but it was not as big an issue as they thought.

-I already thought and expected it would be such a fight.

-Weed knocked down a Dragon while riding on top of a Wyvern. In the continent of magic, God of War slaying a group of users was a very common occurrence.

There were a lot of players that had never experienced the High Seas of the ocean, but now their interest quickly fell and everyone were now concentrating on the Central Continent.

Prestigious Guilds have waged war and conducted a series of raids.

It was a battleground between multiple territories, villages and castles.

Everybody were fiercely involved in the war and previously unknown strong players emerged one by one.

High level users from the prestigious guild were actively fighting in the dark inflicting blows to their opposition.

On the Game television station they were broadcasting it live for 24 hours in an emergency mode, Royal Road was heating up again.

“Sigh, the real Autumn is really short.”

As Lee Hyun saw the leaves falling, he was feeling uncertainty

towards his tuition fees.

“For the semester to be over so soon and to be so expensive, After winter vacation passes I’ll have to do another semester.”

He let out a sigh as he quickly walked home to rest.

They were currently in the midst of a voyage from Jigolaths to Morata, even though they were in no danger, he employed his friends who were stationed at specific position as a precaution.

“I should focus on making sculptures and make some leather robes until we arrive.”

The only person who was excited to do the grinding was Lee Hyun. However when heading back towards his house, he saw that there was a black car and people wearing suit waiting in front of his house. As he was trying to avoid them, they came forward and spoke to him.

“Excuse me, but are you Lee Hyun?”

Lee Hyun answered nonchalantly.

“Yes? And you are?”

If an incident were to occur its best to feign ignorance!

He pretended he didn't hear any of them. But couple of the guys that were there were Seo Yoon's bodyguards he has seen a few times before.

"We came here to discuss about what happened between you and Seo Yoon. The president is waiting, do you mind sparing a few moments?"

Lee Hyun stopped walking.

Seo Yoon's father had called for him.

It was great and wonderful, yet strangely foreboding

He wasn't surprised because he knew that something like this would happen one day. Which was the reason he was being nice to her.

Everytime she gave off a friendly gaze he roughly predicted that a day like today would happen.

"I see. Let's go."

Lee Hyun followed them.

Accompanied by several bodyguards, they arrived in front of a luxurious Mansion with an impressive garden.

“Is this Seo Yoon’s house?”

When Lee Hyun asked, the security flinched but replied as if they didn’t think of it as a secret.

“Seo Yoon does not live here.This is a summer house that the President uses sometimes.”

This is how he met Seo Yoon Dad, President Jeong Deuk Soo.

He offered a seat to Lee Hyun.

“Come on in. Did you have a meal yet?”

In this situation, Lee Hyun would have usually replied to this question that he hadn’t eaten anything at all.

That was his creed.

He felt awkward eating so early as it wasn’t even 5 pm and in any case he didn't want to embarrass himself.

“Thank you but that’s okay. I already ate a lot for lunch.”

“Then we shall have some light refreshments while we speak.”

“If you have anything to say to me please say it, it’s alright.”

“Oh no, you're not in any trouble. To me you are an important guest so don’t worry about it.”

President Jeong Deuk Soo got up and brought out some light refreshment.

“You are the best friend of my daughter Seo Yoon at the Korean National University and I also have heard that you have been going on fun adventures together in Royal Road. What kind of adventures do you mainly do?”

“I just did this and that.”

“Your adventures were even on TV shows, is it famous to that extent?”

President Jeong Deuk Soo was very interested Lee Hyun’s work.

Lee Hyun briefly told him about the Freya’s church Quest, Lich Shire quest, and the fights he had been in.

Although President Jeong Deuk Soo had only been briefed for about 10 mins of the story, it was too vague and he was losing interest.

The only thing that Jeong Deuk Soo was thinking about was his daughter.

“Does Seo Yoon.....occasionally smile?”

“Seo Yoon does smile sometimes, but it only lasts for a brief moment.”

“I've recently heard that .... Seo Yoon has started to speak again. Yet, I have been told that she only speaks with you.”

“Yes.”

“What do you think of my daughter？“

Lee Hyun thought that their talk suddenly took a dangerous turn.

‘From the moment I came here this must have been what he was thinking about.’

Any parents, to be honest wants to know about the guys their daughter is meeting with.

In Lee Hyun’s case, he would show the same urgent concern when it came to his little sister.

It’s best that the guy she met was not a bad guy, it was also best to check the possible opponent to make sure he is not a player.

Lee Hyun had to take care of his younger sister since childhood, so he understood the position of a parent.

And he understand and guessed the thoughts of the President Jeong Deuk Soo feeling for his child.

It’s wasn't much but he did knew a few things nonetheless.

“Just as you said….I see myself as her friend.”

The meaning behind Seo Yoon’s first word ‘Friend’ was ambiguous to Lee Hyun. All he could offer to her was being a friend.

“I heard my daughter relies on you a lot. Nevertheless, are you sure you don’t have any other feelings? You are after all, a man.”

“I just see her as a my friend.”

Seo Yoon is beautiful, smart and kind hearted almost to the point of being angelic.

Although he underwent such a merciless defeat in GoStop, still…..

‘She is someone who is kind to me.’

In addition, she comes from a wealthy household.

Lee Hyun thought that there was nothing that he could give her that she didn’t already have.

Since he was a child he had to face many hardships.

In school, all his classmates boasted about shopping with their parents to buy shoes, and whenever they show off their clothes and toys he had to stay hunched over his desk. While he had to worry about electricity bill, water bill, and rent whenever he came home.

Now Lee Hyun doesn’t have to worry too much about the problems with living expenses, and compared to others his age, he had a considerable amount of savings on his own.

Nevertheless since he was young compared to others he went through many different experiences.

To be a male friend with her, who has everything, was no simple matter.

Even if she wishes for it. It was best to avoid it.

Seo Yoon heart has always been distant.

The distance was not something that could be easily narrowed.

“My daughter, when she was young, she experienced a trauma and for a very long time she could not speak. Only recently, since she has been with you, has she started to speak again. But she still only speaks with you… Lee Hyun”

He heard many thing he didn’t know about Seo Yoon’s life from his father.

‘She really couldn’t speak…’

For 10 years she lived closed off inside a building from the world. Seo Yoon was in a pitiable state, her families that have been seeing her become unspeakably sad.

“To me you are a benefactor. So I have prepared a reward for you. I know this is not remuneration for all that you have done but take this and continue to be Seo Yoon’s best friend and I shall reward you again. Please continue to help heal my daughter’s wound. But beyond that, it would be difficult so I hope you understand.”

President Jeong Deuk Soo put a white envelope next to the teacup.

“I have heard that you have a lot of things to pay for so I have put money in it.”

Lee Hyun raised his head and made eye contact with President Jeong Deuk Soo after he looked at the envelope.

“I’m sorry I can not take this. The reason why Seo Yoon is able to talk is because of her own will. I have done nothing for her.”

“Its not a small amount..... it should help you in your current situation.”

“This is not because of my pride.”

Lee Hyun started thinking about this month expenses.

Living expenses and food cost, his younger sister’s insurance and savings.

Also his grandmother’s hospital bill that he needs to pay continually.

A chronic arthritis, and her treatment for cancer had decrease her vitality making her weak.

During the hospitalization and rehab for a few months, he had hang out with other elderly people.

His growth of his thoughts and speech he learned from sitting in the corner of the market talking with people.

Even though he could go home, there was a bit of treatment and ongoing management to do at the hospital so he stayed.

Every month the amount of money that needs to be paid was a lot, Lee Hyun continued to earn more money through Royal Road.

“Money….is really a precious things. I think that one does not need to stand up for his pride for money. It’s true that I need a lot of money for my family. However I can provide my family with the money that I have earned.”

If it was in Royal Road, he would have deliberately rejected. Just so he could extort much more money!

However in reality he did not want to receive such money. He could provide for his family with his own power. If it was for this reason, he could achieve anything.

The secretary standing next to President Jeong Deuk Soo began to talk.

“This is the money that the president is giving. Think of if as a token of gratitude for all the things that you have done till now.”

“I can not receive this because I think of Seo Yoon as a friend.”

“What?”

“I do not want to earn money by selling my friendship. As a friend, you are there to help when they go through difficult times and I also think that one should not expect anything in return.”

If he was to receive the money, it would have been an immense help to him.

He knew the suffering of being in debt for a long time. He did not want to feed his family by the money earned through selling his friendship.

Lee Hyun thought to himself.

‘The one thing I know is how to earn money.’

President Jeong Deuk Soo did not have any more advice.

“My belief in you, young man is strong. From now on please help Seo Yoon not to get hurt anymore.”

“I’ll try my best.”

After Lee Hyun finished his conversation, he got up from his seat. He followed the bodyguards out of the villa, and looked back at the impressive house owned by Seo Yoon’s father.

Seo Yoon’s father only presented him the money to clarify his motives.

Even though it was a meeting that left a bad taste, he was envious of the fact that she still had her parents.

Since the first time they met, his existence was ignored. Then he created the Freya's Sculpture that resembled her, which the people were in awe of. She was a type of person with a redoubtable worth you only watch and protect from a distance.

'Its must have been a single 10 million won. It's a good thing that I have not taken it. From now on I'm going to commit myself to do more hunting and grinding to make up the money I just turned down.'

President Jeong Deuk Soo drank from his wine glass.

"The impression that I got from him was he is a good man. In order to heal Seo Yoon's heart, I can see that he is the best person to do it. Still to turn down 1 billion won …. was the report that he needed money wrong?"

Powerful forces has been expanding their territory quickly throughout the Versailles Continent.

Since it has been a long time, Hermes Guild's master, Raphael was welcoming his guest happily.

”Its been a while since we split ways in the Sky City Lavias. Why have you come back now?”

“I have just been wandering here and there. I did various adventures and hunts”

“Welcome back. There are lots of people who, if they knew, would be happy that you are back.”

Dain put down her staff and sat on the chair.

Since the beginning of Royal Road, the core players of Hermes Guild, Raphael and many others who have hunted together were all present now.

Book 22: Nature Sculpting

Chapter 1: Mermaid's Bag

They were finally hitting the high seas to return back to Morata after their adventures in the Jigolaths!

Dolphins, symbolizing good luck, as well as thousands of birds and a group of Mermaids were following the ship Weed was riding. Bellot was playing a soothing tune, and Hwaryeong was dancing sexily to the tune. She was certainly doing a good job to attract gazes from the Mermaids. The marine animals were gathered behind the ship because of that.

“Wow, how pretty.”

“I can see straight through the sea water. Oh my god, look at the turtle swimming down there.”

Romuna and Surka exclaimed, when they saw the beautiful sparkling sea that they were sailing through, made one want to dive right in.

Small and pretty schools of fish roamed below, and they could see crayfish, shrimps and other crustacean organisms crawling through the water.

An indescribable, colorful beauty lay below them, consisting of seaweed growing on the boulders, clams, and hundreds of other organisms!

The party members were all clinging to the edge of the deck, and were busy marveling at the sea.

“Look at it jump. Wow!”

As if showing off, the dolphins jumped into the air, and the Mermaids were swimming with fluid motions.

Weed smacked his lips.

“They look so delicious!”

Every time he looked at the marine animals, he was constantly reminded of endless seafood dishes.

Isn’t a hot pot with every single ingredient down there broiled altogether the greatest seafood dish ever!

But Weed wanted to believe that he had some decency.

Mermaids were an oceanic race that was similar to Humans. They possessed high intelligence and communication was possible thanks to their linguistic skills.

But most importantly, they all had the appearance of beautiful women.

A pure and peaceful race.

“And how could they slaughter these Mermaids ruthlessly? That’s just simply unacceptable.”

So Weed decided to do some business.

“Now, now! A day like today won’t come again. Take your pick, everyone. Window shopping’s free! There are many new and beautiful clothes here.”

The Mermaids were suspicious of the Humans and were on high alert around them.

“Something smells dirty.”

“A foul smell. Just like an Undead.”

It was indeed true that Weed gave off a strange smell after playing as a Lich.

However, Weed was able to lessen the Mermaids’ suspicions, as his Fame stat, which he gained through countless sculptures and requests, was very high.

The Mermaids boarded the ship, being unable to trust any other Human apart from Weed!

Weed displayed the clothes that were made from the leather of Tairbeths and Bollards in the Jigolaths.

He also displayed bags, shell earrings and sea-stone rings, that he started selling to the Mermaids.

“Mermaids are still women. And clothes can definitely be sold to women.”

When he bought some sleepwear for his grandmother while she was hospitalized, she complimented him for bringing a pink one with floral patterns, rather than a dull gray one.

“These bags are even useful at sea! You might fall out of times compared to others if you don’t own at least one or two bags. Having a good bag will make your trips more enjoyable.”

Meanwhile, Mapan was blaming himself for his short-sighted thinking.

“Ah, as expected!”

One could say that Mermaids were a race that lived in the sea. They could definitely be customers.

It was Weed’s ideology to split people into either prey or guests in a monochrome fashion!

“I still have so much to work on to catch up with Weed’s business skills.”

The Mermaids’ hair swayed like damp seaweed, while they browsed Weed selection.

- I like this one.

The Mermaids’ voices had a serene ring to them that echoed in his head.

The voices were as vibrant and clear as a chime of bells.

Hearing the voices was like a sign of them warming up towards him, and Weed quickly crunched the figures in his head like a top of the line computer.

“That will be 1520 Gold. But since it suits you so well, I’ll give you two pieces of clothing for the price of one. Why don’t you try on this hat as well? It would be a great pity if you don’t try it on, when it suits you so much. Believe me, I’m not trying to rip off such a beautiful Mermaid like yourself, but I just want to help bring out the best in you.”

A great selling technique of praise, inflation and quantity!

The Mermaid tilted her head left and right, as if she couldn’t

comprehend what he just said.

-Gold? Is such a thing necessary to have these clothes?

Mermaids were an innocent race that didn't often ask questions. They held great interest in the human world, but they were not well-informed because of their reserved nature.

"Gold is necessary to trade between humans."

Producing an old Niflheim Empire's gold coin from his chest pocket, Weed showed it to her.

"Do you have any gold currency like these? If not, I'm more than happy to barter with jewelry, antiques or any other equipments."

If the Mermaids had no money, then establishing a deal would be impossible.

However, Weed was not bothered at all when he couldn't sell objects due to the race barrier.

There should be at least one or two legends floating around out in the sea.

There must have been numerous shipwrecks in this area after a fierce storm, and these

Mermaids should have witnessed those ships many times.

Even picture books tell of such things!

The story of a Mermaid who needlessly saved a prince from a sinking ship.

-Please wait for a moment.

Mermaids who had already decided on their choices jumped into the sea, and after a long time, they resurfaced carrying bags of gold.

Some Mermaids came back with very old antiques.

There were specially made potteries, gold, weapons and armors, old maps and even magical pendants!

“Hmm, I’m not sure if I’ll be able to re-sell these because of the rusting. I’ll be actually making a loss by bartering with these… but since those clothes suit you all so well, I’ll agree to it.”

-Thank you.

Weed was able to rip them off by a satisfactory amount.

These Mermaids in the far sea certainly were not creatures of low

intelligence.

Not only did they have control over the marine animals, all shipwrecks were theirs for taking.

There were no other better customers than them.

-I don’t think this one fits me.

Some of the Mermaids shook their heads, and placed the clothes back down after trying them on.

This type of occurrence was quite common, where the texture or the shape of the clothes didn’t suit the buyers, as the clothes in Weed’s possession were made for humans.

Every time something like this happened, he wore a concerned expression and took the clothes back.

“These clothes now have the lingering traces of your beauty rubbed off on them... so it would be great if you purchase them anyway.“

His flattering words flew out like he was reciting times tables!

And so, Weed was able to sell the clothes from Jigolaths without a hitch.

There was always the option of taking them back to Morata and selling them there, but selling armor-type items was unprofitable because of the set standards there. So he was able to reap greater profit by selling to the Mermaids.

of course, There were some poor Mermaids too.

“Don’t you have any money?”

-No, we have nothing.

The young Mermaids, who appeared to be no more than little girls, were pacing up and down in regret.

Weed liked these young Mermaids, they were great customers.

A good merchant must be able to sell while understanding their customers’ urgency.

The last thing Weed wanted to do while selling these items was to force the weak to buy anything from him.

The soft spot that he had for these customers made him want to give them discounts or special deals.

You already bought this item!

This is the unique item that was specially made just for you in this entire continent!

Forget about your life until now. You will be reborn as soon as you hold this bag.

Let’s see how well you’ll be off without buying this bag!

This motivation that will drive my sweet talk!

Weed’s thoughts were reflected by his actions and words, so the Mermaids had no choice but to grab the bags.

Addressing the young Mermaids, he spoke as sweetly as he could.

“Hey, you girls can cry, right?”

-Well, we don’t cry often, but only sometimes.

“Collect some of your tears for me. Then I’ll let you have the bags.”

-We understand.

Mermaid’s Tears was a rare item.

Letting them Crystallize will transform them into pearls and

after craftsmanship, there won't be anything that could be compared with it.

They were truly the treasures of the sea that would yield high Fame and Trade stats when sold on the mainland!

He even told the young Mermaids some tales, like a friendly uncle.

———————————————————————————————

Once upon a time, there lived a prince in a kingdom called Nephyllos.

Tall, handsome and good-mannered as he was, all the women in that kingdom couldn't help but fall in love with him.

Those ladies were satisfied by simply watching the prince whenever he walked around the towns.

Because they could literally see their prince shining thanks to the smart clothes he wore.

A lady who sold apples at the market, Helen, also loved the prince.

She was an innocent lady, whose smiles were quite cute.

However, she wasn't able to let those feelings come out.

Because it was her job to do everything, from making a living to housework under her foster mother, as her mother had recently passed away from a disease.

She would often wake up to pluck apples at early dawn, and she wasn't able to return home until late at night that too only after she finished selling all the apples.

While snacking on disfigured and unripe apples that couldn't be sold, she had to sell the good apples.

"Fresh apples. Selling ripe apples."

The apples that Helen sold were as sweet as honey, as they reflected her heart.

Even the spirits of the forest blessed the apples she picked.

And when Helen's apples became popular and more people wanted to buy them, she had to wake up even earlier to pluck the apples.

Even the prince who was walking by at that time, visited the apple store.

"Young miss, you have to pay your taxes regul.... no, I came here

after hearing great praise about the delicious apples that you sell."

So Helen wiped a well ripe red apple with a tea-towel, and gave it to the prince.

After eating the apple in a satisfied manner, he said this.

"I will be holding... a ball, this Saturday. However, as I have not yet decided on my partner, may I invite you to join me?"

The prince tried to pick her up... no, he asked her for a date.

Helen didn't know what to do, so she replied.

"I'm sorry, but I have some things to do, so I don't have any time."

Because the girl had stepsisters and a foster mother who despised her.

The prince spoke again.

"But you won't have to work on that day. Everyone will be resting as it is His Majesty, the King's birthday. Who is making you work so hard?"

Not only was the prince handsome, he was wise as well. Helen's

background was quite famous throughout the kingdom, so the prince was well aware of her situation.

“No one should be able to order you to work, Since they can’t ignore me as I am the Prince.”

Her foster mother and the stepsisters became as pale as ghosts. They wouldn’t dare to keep

Helen at bay and ignore the prince’s warning.

Eventually, Helen was allowed to attend the ball, and the promised date of

Saturday came.

The prince liked this gentle lady, and Helen was sure she could live happily with the prince.

But unfortunately, Helen wasn’t able to attend the ball.

Just because she didn’t have a good bag to bring to the ball.

A third-rate story that he made up on the spot!

The young Mermaids that reached the peak of their emotions started to weep.

-Whaaaaa.

-Sniff.

Weed diligently gathered the tears that fell onto the deck in a bottle.

In exchange for the tears, Weed's clothes, bags and accessories sold like pancakes.

Excluding the things he could sell normally, he was able to rip off a profit of at least over 35000 Gold!

The antiques received from the Mermaids could only be truly valued on the mainland.

The rusty swords that couldn't even be drawn were worthless, but they could be melted down to create other weapons.

Mermaids' handiwork or their accessories could fetch a high price on the mainland.

The 35000 Gold was the lowest estimated profit, so his profit for the day was an astronomical one.

-Thank you. I'll use it well.

"Come back whenever you want."

-I'll be back tomorrow.

"I'll have a lot of new products waiting for you then."

Dressed in leather clothes, hats and holding bags, they jumped into the sea.

Players often envied rich Mermaids, but were unable to attack them.

According to the legends on the Versailles Continent, Mermaids were the children of the God of the Sea, and friends of Sea Dragons. So hunting them would bring divine retribution on the hunters. Also, as they had authority over marine animals, angering them would bring headaches.

But on the contrary, Weed received their thanks.

This was because Weed stayed true to his principles of ripping off the customers while satisfying them at the same time.

"Mermaids are also women, so they should like shoes, but what a shame. I could have sold new heels for a really expensive price.... I know, I'll make some webbed feet and sell that!"

Weed was busy trying to corrupt these innocent Mermaids.

Whether on land or at sea, people were victimized wherever Weed passed by!

———————————————————————————————

Navigating back to the Northern part of the continent, where Morata was placed, was faster than the trip to the Jigolaths, with the help from the winds and the sea current.

The mysterious sunrise and sunset of the sea, and a distant singing voice that could be heard.

A sea journey is great for creating those special memories and romance.

Hwaryeong and the other members were enjoying the rare ship cruise by sunbathing or looking at the view.

Yellowy was also resting on the warm deck, lying down on its stomach.

Moooooooo!

They were taking a break while eating some hot octopus chowder.

The bull normally wasn't able to eat such delicacy, but all of that would be deducted from his pay!

Yellowy closed his eyes and rested comfortably.

He had worked hard in Jigolaths, so it was now time for him to rest.

On their trip back to Morata, Weed's party and the Living Sculptures had boarded on three different ships.

But then, there was a large island-like fish that was continuously following behind them.

It was a palm-sized Living Sculpture when they left the Jigolaths, but after diving into the sea, it suddenly grew in size as it consumed coral reefs and other fish.

Its scales sparkled along with the sunlight and the seawater.

Judging by appearance alone, it seemed to possess gigantic strength!

Due to the Wyverns' weight, they were perched on top of the Living Sculpture and followed behind them.

The Wyvern with stretched out eyes, Wy-Seven, slipped off the

scales and fell into the sea with a splash. It then resurfaced.

Even Surka, who loved water, jumped on top of the fish to enjoy the sea, despite being acrophobic.

“What’s your name?”

The fish sank slightly below the surface, then resurfaced saying this.

“Turtle.”

“Your name is Turtle? But you don’t have a shell and you don’t look like a turtle.”

“Turtle, Turtle.”

The turtle Living Sculpture named itself to be Turtle.

This was one of the few existing masterpieces in the Jigolaths by Latcherry, who had only sculptured extinct creatures all his life.

This creature’s original name was Maleins Airnoto Turtle!

It was a Gigantic turtle that lived in the deep sea, and when matured, a shell would form in areas apart from its head and tail.

There were a lot of extinct and rare lifeforms that were given life in the Jigolaths, as well as handsome and artistic-looking ones.

———————————————————————————————

Weed was sewing buttons on the clothes of the dolls. He was attaching doll eyes and this job was a very sensitive task to do!

He was sick and tired of doing it, but he couldn't make a single mistake when sewing buttons or eyes onto the doll.

"I should grind down shells for the buttons. The product value should rise if I sew different colored shells on it. There obviously won't be any material fee, and they'll sell well as they'll have some uniqueness to them."

Weed believed business was all about cutting down the production fee and ripping off customers!

He also checked some old maps that he received from the Mermaids.

"Identify!"

Map of Somewhere in the Sea of Planetis

Durability: 3/10

A map with illegible records

Created based on astronomical positions, wind and sea currents.

Treasure Grade: D

“A treasure map, huh?”

There was a good chance of it leading to the hidden treasures of Pirates’ or a shipwreck.

Or, it might contain information about a valuable marine animal.

It was a pity that the map had bits and pieces of it rubbed out from aging.

“I reckon Yurin should be able to restore this.”

Map Restore was a skill that only Adventurers or Painters possessed. Weed obviously did not possess it.

His Painting skill was low, and he was only capable of mixing paint with his skills.

That was because he needed the paint to dye the clothes that were created, unlike armors, which could be colored by mixing different colored metals.

“A normal D ranked map wouldn’t bring enough profit to even cover the effort that’s needed to complete it.”

Weed knew that there were numerous variety of adventures out at the sea.

There was a pile of maps that he collected from the Mermaids.

There were maps that pointed to locations with marine animals, whirlpools and underwater caves!

There were a lot of things to be done out in the sea, just as there were on land.

However, adventuring out in the sea with Weed’s current level of navigation would take far too long.

Getting his head wrapped around the information regarding the sea, underwater landscape and rocks, as well as the sea winds, would take at least 1~2 years.

He did travel to Jigolaths because he ended up receiving the map and the request, but sea adventures were a whole different story.

“I should just use these maps to make clothes instead.”

Clothes that motivated people to long for adventures. He was

making clothes that actually pointed towards real treasures.

Using the leather and cloths of the old maps, Weed fashioned some clothes and bags.

“Some lucky people should find them somehow.”

Weed was going to sell the clothes with a tag line of ‘Leading Towards Treasures’, so he wasn’t making a loss.

There wasn’t much to do on the ride, so he made all of the oceanic maps into clothes.

Zephyr immersed himself in some proper sea fishing, while Pale and Maylon hid themselves away from everyone else’s sight, and sheepishly fed each other some raw fish (hoe).

Hwaryeong and Bellot were sunbathing first along with Surka and Romuna, but were now performing in front of the marine animals.

Seo Yoon had been standing on the deck, watching Weed work, but was now gazing at the sea while seated on the mast.

Her face wasn’t seen during the fights because of the Warrior’s Helm of Courage that she was wearing, but the current sight of her hair swaying in the wind was like something out of a painting.

She couldn’t talk to anyone apart from Weed, and didn’t even let anyone hear her voice.

She was still uncomfortable and had a lot of awkwardness remaining.

Weed couldn’t approach and talk to her, even though he could see her being alone.

“I’m really indebted to her for what happened in Jigolaths.... I was able to do the request and fight the Hermes Guild thanks to her as well.”

He was obviously very grateful to her, but he couldn’t treat Seo Yoon like before, because he was constantly reminded of her father each time he looked at her.

The only form of communication between them was the occasional glances when he passed some food to her.

“I should just make a sculpture or something.”

Weed gathered some sea water and floated some clouds up into the clear sky.

White clouds and dark clouds.

The sea was the optimum place to familiarize himself with Cloud

Sculpting.

It was such a beautiful and mystifying sight, so it would become quite a hot topic when they return back to the Versailles Continent.

Seo Yoon was looking up at the sky.

Weed was sculpting a sculpture very seriously, with the aim of increasing his

Artistic skills, but he ended up creating a surprising sculpture.

He ended up sculpting the scene when they ate some grilled meat at the instructor’s log house.

Considering it was a cloud sculpture, it had to be sculpted fast to include the details, but

Weed’s Handiwork skill was good enough to sculpt something where people were recognizable.

But of course, it was worthless as a sculpture!

Seo Yoon was wearing a mask, so it was hard to tell what kind of an expression she wore, but Weed thought that she was happy, looking at the cloud sculpture.

“The clouds are really floating across the sea well. And the sea

products in this area should fetch a high price. I wonder how much I'll make if I catch loads of giant crabs and sell them on the mainland. If I fish up some fresh red sea-breams and dig up some cockle on the beach…"

The sea was a storehouse for natural resources. Catching and selling off sea products would all be turned into money.

"If only I could speculate at sea like I would on land."

So, they cut across the sea like that and headed to the Northern part of the continent.

———————————————————————————————

In Morata were some users, feebly dressed in leather armor, were busily walking around.

"Mr Blacksmith, when will the longsword that I ordered be ready?"

"Could you tell me your name?"

"It's Anchovy Stew."

"You're 23rd on the list. I'm afraid you'll have to wait for around 2 days."

“Aww, can’t it come out any sooner?”

“Look at all those people who’re waiting.”

The line of customers who were lining up to make a request to the Blacksmith!

This wasn’t the only place. Blacksmiths and Craftsmen were almost crying at the overflowing number of requests.

“Selling Purple Arrows. They’re arrows made with the poisonous plants from the hill near Morata. You better hurry, because there are only 2000 of these.”

“I’m a skilled Magician and I’m looking for a party to join. Please invite me if you’re willing to hunt seriously for around two days. I can grant some magic as well, guaranteed to last for three days.”

“We’re 3 Warriors that will run straight at monsters upon seeing them. If there is anyone who wants to heal us, we can head to the dungeons right away.”

“Selling 80 Swords of Flios. I’ll be selling them at a fixed, clean price of 150 Gold.

Users who want to hunt together are welcomed as well.”

“Need a guide to lead you to the dungeons?”

The vibrancy that was present all over Morata!

People weren't hesitant in advertising themselves for finding trips, adventures and hunts, or showing their happiness.

After buying and selling some items from the plaza, users formed parties and departed for dungeon crawling or hunting.

"This way."

Mooooo.

A unique trait around this place would be that it was common to see users dragging along at least 1 calf, even if they were not merchants.

Riding a cow had a greater movement speed than walking, and there was also the convenience of being able to have it carry the luggage.

There were a lot of cases where families played Royal Road together.

"I need to buy my brother a longsword... I suppose I should sell a cow."

As cows could be sold to secure equipment, it was a necessary

commodity for new users.

Some users even posted a thread in forums, titled “How to Grow in Morata”.

———————————————————————————————

Title: Oh, you newbie users of Morata!

My name is DeIlbell, a user who started off from the Central Continent, and finally settled here after gaining a shack.

I’m writing this to inform the newbies of Morata about a few things.

1. Appreciate the Sculptures

There are sculptures in various places that are created by the lord of Morata, who happens to be a great Sculptor.

Depending on your profession, seeing the sculptures will be of a great help to you.

A great fortune that can’t even be found in the Central Continent, really.

There are fairies that roam around the Tower of Light at the dead

of night, and faithful clerics can be found near the Statue of Goddess Freya.

2. Gather Enough Money and Enter the Art Hall

The Art Hall of Morata that can be only found here, in the entire continent, is a place you must visit. There is nothing else like it.

The stats that you'll receive in this Art Hall during your newbie days is a huge help.

How good is it, that this Art Hall is placed right at your doorstep, when users from across the Versailles Continent have to travel all the way here?

The entrance fee of 3 Gold is quite a large sum to pay for newbies, but you won't regret it.

When you see the artworks, you'll really start to respect Sculptor or Painter class users and you'll treat them nicely.

Don't forget, the more great works there are in the Art Hall, the more beneficial it is for us.

3. Don't Go Too Far Away

Morata is an ever-evolving city that is growing daily.

There probably isn’t another city in the entire Versailles Continent that is similar to this one.

But on the down side, there are many undiscovered areas in the Northern Continent despite the continuous parties of Explorers.

So your chance of survival is slim if you try to wander off too far away from the city without being properly prepared.

This might be quite a basic fact, but I’ve only written this down because there were so many users who died in hidden places.

4. Stick Close To Your Party Members

There are many users who are of a similar level to you, here in Morata. Try going on adventures with them while growing.

you can make many friends and later on, it can be very helpful.

5. Choose Your Profession Freely

The profession that’s under the spotlight recently is, without a doubt, Elementalist.

The joy of hunting with obedient Fiery Pebbles and Dirtmen!

Elementalists’ appearances are attractive and flamboyant.

But a pooling of professions in Morata is boring.

The lord of Morata is a Sculptor, is he not?

Trying out a non-combat oriented profession such as artistic ones or production ones should also be popular.

Priests of Freya can be said to be the best by everyone.

Isn’t roaming around the Versailles Continent, with the profession that you really want, what you really desire?

6. Own Your Own House

It is easy to own a house in Morata.

Having even a shack would draw your heart closer to this city.

Houses can be used for resting or storing items, and trees can be planted in the garden.

Try gathering some Holy Water from the Temple of Freya after completing an adventure and growing a tree. Trees can grow really fast and bear a lot of fruit.

Not only can those fruits be sold at the marketplace for money,

but they carry the blessings from the Goddess Freya, so you can benefit Luck and other effects from them.

7. Gather Some Items That The Civilians Need

Gathering leather from beasts and monsters from areas around Morata can raise the Friendship Points with your neighbors.

You might even receive some good items in the process, so it's a good way to sell them and buy some newbie equipment.

8. Use The Public Order Forces

- The passage is dragging on.

But this is the most important part of Morata, as well as what I want to inform you about the most.

I've been to many castles and cities in the Central Continent, but this is what really sets Morata apart from any other, along with its artistic advancements.

I would assume that the lord of Morata has a high Fame stat, thanks to the many challenging quests that he had succeeded in.

And this city is surrounded by yet-to-be mapped out dungeons and hunting grounds.

Armed forces of Morata have been continuously cooperating with the Priests of the Church of Freya to maintain order in the surrounding areas through subjugation.

If you join the expedition team and hunt diligently, your Friendship and Contribution points will rise. Not to mention, it's an advantageous way of raising stats and experience points.

Everyone should know that the lord of Morata, Weed, is very friendly with the soldiers and the civilians.

Coincidences are not that common in the world.

People who have raised their stats by appreciating the sculptures should know how helpful these built up stat points are.

We can become like Weed.

9. Let's Embark On Quests

A lot of the scattered civilians of the North are gathered in Morata.

And amongst them are those who have historical antiques or particular stories.

If you follow their quests, it might lead to different linked quests.

Let us continue till the end instead of giving up at the start.

We should enjoy every bit of this Versailles Continent.

I tried to keep it simple, but I got far too worked up while writing it, and it became so long.

If you happen to spot Dellbell, wielding a spear in Morata, please do say hello.

———————————————————————————————

It was a post made by a high-leveled ranker who was living inside Morata.

Tens of users who were ranked in the highest percentage of Royal Road were adventuring in Morata.

Dellbell was one of them, and his post had attracted over 7000 comments.

Iche and Eira were Priestess of Morata.

They were part of the Church of Freya, yet they also went on adventures.

Although difficult, even Priests could go on Party Huntings. It

was the best profession to be when fighting alongside Holy Knights.

The old Priestess of the Church spoke.

“They say that the Sculptor Weed is a trustworthy person. Word has it that no request is impossible for him.”

The Public Order Forces voiced their opinion.

“The Church of Freya will never cease to thank Weed. He was the one who recovered the lost Holy Treasures of the Church of Freya.”

“You should know that the Sculptor Weed completed another respectful adventure. I’d like to take part in an adventure like that. Or even hearing about his adventure would be nice.”

Civilians who gossiped about Weed were quite common in Morata.

That was because he was the lord, and the requests he completed had a great impact on Morata.

“How special must this Weed be?”

“A fearless, smart man who will never back down.”

The passion for Weed was shared not only by Iche and Eira, but by all female users of Morata.

Chapter 2: The Great Construction

Weed’s ships were approaching the northern continent by the sea.

Having already sold most of the japtem that the mermaids were interested in, Weed was currently concentrating on his cloud sculpting, raising it’s proficiency.

“The clouds are quite tricky. It’s very hard to define the sculptural theme that I am trying to create and even portraying expressions are not easy…”

Normally he would use large quantities of stone and wood when sculpting to cover up the lacking parts in art, but it didn’t apply to Cloud Sculpting.

Using water he made thousands of cloud sculptures on the ship as they were sailing the High Seas. Weed didn't take any notice of apparent mistakes that obviously stood out because every time the wind blew, the sculptures dispersed and scattered away.

It was a type of sculptural art that could only be used for a brief moment and was a very difficult subject to understand, let alone master.

“I should create some fish. Perhaps I could also create some basic flounder, rockfish, shrimp, crab or even a whale.”

True artwork does not compromise!

He began making random things, raising his cloud sculpting proficiency through grinding.

After he made hundreds of clouds, a mysterious natural phenomena occurred.

The ship had veered towards the bad weather, where white and dark clouds clashed.

It was Weed’s cloud sculptures that moved in the direction of the blowing wind as they mixed with the oncoming storm and the clouds enveloped the sky.

It wasn’t bad weather, however a misty and light rain started to drizzle down on the sea.

"Amazing……"

"This has to be the most beautiful sight in the world."

The rest of the group that had been lazing around rushed to their feet and headed towards the commotion at the bow of the ship.

Though the dark sky, a heavenly light broke through from in between the clouds.

Triling!

- You have made a Sculpture of Nature.

Mother Nature's Marvel, the picturesque scene of light rays falling onto the sea, has been reproduced by a talented sculptor.

- Sculpting skill proficiency has improved.

- Nature Sculpting skill has increased to Beginner-level 3

- Fame increased by 145.

- Art stat has increased by 7.

- Nature affinity increased by 15.

- Wisdom, intellect and luck increased by 3.

- All Stats increased by 2.

The light rays that fell down upon the sea looked absolutely majestic.

It was still difficult to produce any cloud sculptures as it required a great amount imagination and focus.

However wonderful light and cloud sculptures are not easy to create.

Mother Nature's Marvel gave a substantial increase in stats based on the user's profession.

In Weed's case this phenomenon increased all of his stats,

especially artwork, by a modest amount.

While his friends, that had been watching in awe, realised that they had gained various stat increases.Irene's Priest class had her Faith increase by a lot, in Romuna's case being a mage her Wisdom stats increased by 5. For Hwaryeong it was her Charm that increased due to her dancer class. Everyone acquired different stats as they enjoyed the nature sculpture.

"Wow, this is so epic!."

His friends were unable to conceal their surprise.

Weeds face drew a big rotten smile.

"All this from just the beginner level of cloud sculpting."

When all is said and done all that matters are the results! Yellowy stumbled backwards from astonishment into the living sculpture Griffin.

The ruckus lead the other living sculptures that Weed brought to life at Jigolaths to come out onto the deck of the small ship and see the light that shone brilliantly through the clouds.

Trling!

- Living Sculpture's stat increases.

Even the living sculptures that were created with art were affected just like any other species.

They were approaching land. Their long voyage was finally coming to an end.

The living sculptures quickly got ready while Weed and his friends prepared to disembark.

The fishing rods and cooking tools that were left out were put away with the other luggage and they grabbed their full backpacks.

However the living sculptures that were made after rare and extinct creatures had their own distinct instinct to survive.

They continued to disobey Weed and kept saying that they wanted to leave to breed with their species.

“I want to look for females. I want to bear children. If I go to a far away places I would be able to meet my fellow species.”

“If you were to give us freedom, we want to live and create a family in this large world.”

Strong demands from the Living Sculptures!

They were worried that they were slowly going to die, living

their whole pitiful existence alone, without a mate.

These were not just the demands of one or two, nearly a third of the living sculptures that were created in Jigolaths brought up these demands.

"Keheum."

Weed was in a sticky situation.

Originally, from the moment the living sculptures were born, he had to earn their respect and he must be held in high esteem at all times.

But this time, he gave life for too many sculptures at the same time, so it was not easy to rule them by force as he normally does.

They were staring at Weed with sparkling eyes.

They believed that Weed was a benevolent and kind person that will give them permission!

But in Weed’s mind his thoughts were totally different.

“I should have beaten them all.”

If he were to force and hold them up like slaves they might start a

rebellion, or they might even escape because of the loneliness.

Managing Living Sculptures was not an easy task.

Because of Weed's high leadership status, Wyverns and Bingryong couldn’t just walk away from him.Yet living sculptures were bound to keep pursuing a free-spirited life due to their strong personalities.

Just as it was in the beginning, when he tried to control an army for the first time it was very difficult as he had to win their trust through doing many chores/jobs for them.

This was the time for sacrifice.

Weed had a difficult time actually dismissing the sculptures that had strong personalities.

"In this broad continent..."

Why are they trying to leave me! There were still a lot of things I needed them to do.

"What you guys desire..."

In life, It isn't possible to live in the world doing things that you want to do, while hoping everything turns out right.

"Life..."

Weeds struggle was to the point to where he wanted to put a nose ring on them, just like on a cow, drag them and make them work.

A sculpture would not expect to gain anything from working for Weed, Furthermore they would need to take a lot of time to find their counterpart and raise a family, so he could not expect them to stay.

“You may go and live your life...”

Tears welled up around Weed’s eyes as those last words escaped his lips.

The Living Sculpture’s sincere heartfelt regret was shown on their faces.

From another owner it would be tears of love, but since it’s from Weed it was evident that it was tears of loss.

"We will be leaving now."

Rare creatures of life left by riding on the giant sea turtle and headed back out to sea.

Even though Weed anxiously watched them leave until they completely disappeared, they did not even leave any gold or

compensation behind!

“If we continue at this rate we should arrive in Morata within a day or two.”

Heint got up and he slightly bowed his head muttering under his breath as they neared the shore.

At long last the trip up and down to Jigolaths was finally over.

Even though they did not properly tour Jigolaths, atleast they pioneered new routes.

They had passed through the northern oceans while discovering various hunting grounds, they were able to find safe passages and even though Weed took all the profits that were earned there.

Finally, it was time to depart ways from the devil Weed.

"Heheh. I owe you a lot. Thanks for the fun adventures.”

"In the future, I will be really nice to others players and try to not get into trouble with anyone.”

“Weed, we hope that you do well. We will continue to watch over your adventures.”

"I would live my life like I were to be reborn anew. If you go out to the sea again please call for us.”

Even though the crew started out contracted in a bad way, looking back they visited many places and the overall outcome wasn’t such a bad adventure.

As the 3 mad sharks of Becky Nin politely said their farewells to them, they also replied their goodbyes.

Of course, they did not have the slightest bit of feeling of wanting to come back to Weed when he called.

"Sigh.”

Weed made an exaggerated sigh.

As he received their farewells on land, he felt a bit disdain towards them and he did not know where to start giving them advice.

Weed asked with a scowl.

"Are you sure that you’re not going to harm others and be considerate to others in the future?"

"Of course we will. We will help newbie players and live a fair and honest life.”

Heint slyly rolled his eyes and replied.

He honestly didn't know what was going to happen later on. But right now his feelings were sincere.

Weed had repelled Haven’s entire 2nd royal fleet, Heint would never forget the memories of fighting with pirates and the naval army.

They did not know that they were aired and became enormously popular.

During the events between the Haven Kingdom’s warriors and the pirates, it was as if a key had unlocked something inside themselves and they felt exhilarated.

They got fed up with minor thieving.

They wanted to travel through the seas with their own strength. As they returned from the far seas in Jigolath, their grand aspirations rose.

Weed thought it was silly as he shook his head.

"You don’t need to live a kind and stuffy life.”

"Huh?"

"Its a total waste. Receiving praise from being good has no benefits. Being vicious, mean, cowardly and shameless will make you grow faster than others.”

"Ooooh, that’s true!"

This is the absolute truth of the God of War Weed!

"Always try. Don't lose any of your things and make sure to take dibs first on your enemy’s things. Don’t state that its not yours from the beginning. If you get a bit greedy a chance might appear. And always try to settle affairs.”

Weed and the 3 mad sharks of Becky nin were in fact the same type of people.

"This asshole."

"He is a normal asshole that we have real admiration and respect for.”

"If I tried hard would I be as successful as this asshole?"

This was not profanity but he was an asshole who had their respect.

To the people with villainous dreams, he is an existence that

people have admiration towards.

"Well, it’s time for us to go."

"Take care now. Make sure to pick up money off the ground.”

Becky Nin's three crazy sharks once again bid farewell to Weed’s party.

"So this is how we part ways.”

When Bellot said her farewells, Heint got sad.

Even though he got entangled with them through meeting Bellot at the bar, he had lived through tough times in the rough seas, as he looked at her, a rush of courage rose swept over him. He forgot the resentment he had towards her in his heart, The thought of never seeing her again drove him forward.

Heint nervously gulped as he asked.

"Bellot, If you don't mind I would like to register you as a friend?"

It was an spontaneous friend request.

Bellot hesitated for awhile and nodded her head.

"Yeah, it's okay."

"I will contact you later on."

Heint was delighted beyond measures and he exchanged his farewells with the others.

As Fractal and Bodomir watched the scene gawking, they had the same thought, they couldn’t leave without talking to Hwaryeong.

"I fell in love with your beauty at first sight, Hwaryeong. I just couldn’t tell you how crazy I was about you, but if you would give me the opportunity, I'd like to show you a manlier side of myself. Please register me as a friend."

"Please register me as a friend too Hwaryeong. You are the most beautiful person I ever seen in all my life."

Pale, Irene, Surka and Romuna looked at the two sympathetically.

They didn’t know the fact that Hwaryeong liked Weed!

"They will probably get dumped pathetically.”

"I’m Sorry. Hwaryeong get’s pretty picky if she doesn’t like the person.”

But Hwaryeong readily nods her head.

"I'm honored to travel with wonderful people. I'll register you as a friend."

Fractal and Bodomir silently cheered and this was how the party separated with the Becky nin's 3 mad sharks.

They decided to take and leave with the three ships that they rode in since Jigolaths. They didn't have any money so they bought it with small amount of their valuable good equipments.

If Weed wanted to trade the ships, he needed to take it to the port, making him spend great amount of time and he needed to dispose of them quickly.

If the 3 mad sharks returned back to Becky nin and sold it, they could salvage something out of it.

The ship they were riding disappeared into the fog.

Bellot asked Hwaryeong about what had transpired.

"Why did you accept their friend request?"

"Its awkward and embarrassing to reject in front of everyone. After I accept them I just delete it later."

"I do that too."

The two are quite popular so they get a lot of friend request. They usually tell them their numbers and later change their numbers or blocked their calls.

"We are almost there now."

Weed rode on Yellowy while the rest rode on other living sculptures and Morata was just beyond the next hill.

The streets were busy with Merchants traveling back and forth, and groups of shabby clothed newbies were energetically walking together.

They were finally back in Weed's city.

"Since childhood I raised a puppy in my house so i've always liked dogs. Cerberus, I will give you a bath in the stream later."

Surka thought it was a cute dog and patted its head while riding on the three headed dog.

Living sculpture Cerberus, 'The Gatekeeper of Hell' felt like a dog to her!

It wasn't as bad as Weed, they traveled to many places hunting monsters and they were not frightened by them. On the way back

riding the boat, horribly looking frogman holding a spear attacked them and they were not even intimidated.

"Monsters are food, items and experience!"

Thanks to Weed facing such monsters, they were natural to this party now.

Cerberus wagged his tail and acted charmingly. Its tongue even licked Surka's hand.

It was a spitting image of a large dog, if a battle broke out, no one knew how its temperament might change.

As they traveled to Morata, after a long time they wanted to eat meat so at times they played hunting games.

As Cerberus sniffed the ground, it jumped into the bushes and in under two minutes it came back with a wild boar in its jaws. At that moment Weed gave it a name.

"You are going to be named Hunting Dog."

He just gave a name that randomly came to mind! But his friends couldn't stand by for such atrocities in naming.

"What the hell is that? You're giving it such an ambiguous name."

"It resembles a Cerberus. Name it Cerberus."

Bellot and Romuna protested, but Weed did not listen.

"No, I don’t want too.”

"Why? What is the reason you don’t want to give it the name Cerberus?"

"Because it’s annoying to call it that."

To him, dogs were just dog meat and when summer arrived, their loyalty could decrease.

Because it’s an hunting dog it was perfect to just call it Hunting Dog!

Nevertheless his friends called it by the name, and it wagged its tail hard stating that it liked it. Eventually it was named Cerberus.

Weed gave the other Living Sculptures their names during the middle of the night.

"Let’s call you Countryside Snake."

The elegant snake with dozens of patterns was given a name

called Countryside.

"Let’s call you Worm."

Death Worm. When it digs into the ground, its body can become a colossal monster that can grow up to 200 meters.

When it was given life in Jigolath its size was only about 1 meter.

As it consumed food, it grew up to 8 meters. While fishing, Zephyr wanted to use it for bait, but now it was so big that it could even swallow a whale.

So far, Death Worm was a monster that has never been caught before.

"Should I call you Dolsoe?”

He was about to give the knight the name Dolsoe but he asked for its opinion.

“Knights are detached and have a strong sense of pride, if I give just any name, the knight will ask for his freedom and might possibly leave.”

The knight directly gave his own name.

"I would like my name to be Silver BlackSun."

"And the reason?"

“This is for the remembrance of the creator who created me.”

Loyalty is strong, it was a name that he would not be indebted to the sculptor.

"Alright. Silver. I look forward to working with you."

For the sculptures that were tagging along, he gave them any names.

From the time the living sculptures landed, they hunted together in the forest with the Wyverns separately. The Fire Giant who left Jigolath first riding on the Phoenix and Bingryong arrived before them and were hunting together at the large forest.

"As the living sculptures become stronger, I can make them do a lot of things and make a lot of money!"

Weed had arrived back to Morata.

The Tower of Light on the eastern mountain, a wide lake with the Statue of Goddess of Freya, and the Grand Art Center in city.

Players were crowding the streets everywhere.

In the past, in front of the giant black castle was where the vampires once lived. There once were collapsed buildings of a humble village. But now there are brick roads, sidewalks and residential areas are built.

"Let’s quickly go. If we are late there’s going to be too many people.”

"We will be returning in the evening right?"

"Yeah. The Tower of Light light show will begin.”

The finalized parties for hunting and adventuring rode on cows as they headed towards the nearby dungeons.

The people who passed by the hills on the road saw the formation of the tightly formed shantytowns.

As Weed looked at the shantytown, he felt like he returned home.

"There are quite a bit of increase in people and homes.”

In the 5 squares, the people were doing business and selling japtems.

The increase of the number of players since Weed left could be easily seen.

He knew that Royal Road's bulletin board and various broadcasts from KMC and other stations helped Morata grew. To him, it felt like the increase of players was only a matter of time.

It even became difficult to remember the humble village that it once was and the stores grew larger about four to five times their original size.

Mapan explained it from his side.

"Because of the war in the Central continent, the city got a huge influx of newbie players. In Royal Road, a survey for newbie players about their most wanted place to start in showed that Morata is the favorite one."

From the newbie's point of view, the war over the Central Continent was shrouded in chaos, So they choose Morata over the other Kingdoms from the Central Continent.

Weed walked with his group to the gates, the newbies that were hunting foxes and rabbit stopped what they were doing. Their eyes became enlarged as they saw the group enter.

"That guy... No way, isn't that bull Yellowy?"

Rather than knowing the major level players, they instantly

recognised the famous muscular cow Yellowy!

Weed was not in Lich or Orc appearance but in his casual appearance even so he was caught out by the gate guards.

"It’s the Lord! Morata's lord is back!"

Newbie players gathered around and rumors spread throughout the squares. Merchants put away their business, dancers, bards and the architects that helped build Morata gathered, sculptor and painters converged around Weed too! Ten percent of the people that were gathered there were players that have been staying in Morata, and Weed did not have enough room to step around.

Players gathered around him just like when they would welcome back a hero.

"Weed, we want to hear your thoughts on what happened in Jigolath!"

"Tells us the story about the feud with the Hermes Guild!”

Weed's popularity far exceed that of a cult leader, even though they watched it in a broadcast they all wanted to hear directly from the source.

"Everyone is waiting for me to speak."

Weed thought for a quick second and used his Lion's Roar.

"I went! I fought! I earned!"

It was like the time when the Embinyu Church was beaten and an artificial form of alliance was created!

Among Morata players, Weed’s phrases were very famous.

Players shouted their congrats, as their hype died a little, he shouted with the Lion's Roar once again.

"I went! I fought! I earned so much money!

“Wooooohhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh!“

It was the peak of the frenzy and jubilation.

There were thousands of players congratulating his victory and the success of his quest success.

They wanted to become friendly with Weed. It was because they wanted to join in on his exciting adventures.

Weed withdrew himself into the lord’s residential office and begun his most important tasks.

Counting money!

“If I add up the money made from Jigolaths, trade with the Mermaids and the selling of the quest I have 249,720 gold, 35 silver and 14 copper.”

Even though his income was savory, it was poor in the comparison with the the effort he had to make when he went around as a necromancer for a few months in Jigolaths. It was difficult because he was hunting and mining to obtain minerals to make equipments to sell.

He wouldn't sell the Moon rocks and Malachite that he possessed because using valuable materials increases the quality of the sculptures and sculpting experience so while the minerals were processed, It was an excellent choice to stock up on medicine that he had used.

In Weed’s case using his sculpting skill he can make something simple and etch intricate details on it to make it worth more.

Perhaps a bowl or a ceramic would suffice, because of his high handicraft skill there would be some decent ones that came out.

If there was any Moon rock material leftover, he could make accessories to sell, making a savory profit margin.

"I wonder how much Morata has changed. Regional Status Window!"

Triling!

Morata Region

This region once belonged to the Niflheim Empire.

Currently under the rule of Morata’s Count Weed.

The best city to represent the northern center of Trade and art.

New specialty and art products have been made, performances have attracted people to Morata’s thriving culture.

As there are a lot of young workforce, engineers start to concentrate in the northern areas.

A wide range of various weapons are being manufactured, a call for business for housing has risen.

Military: 91

Economic Power: 1737

Culture: 2261

Technology: 592

Religious Influence: 82

Local politics: 63

Influence on the surrounding area: 59%

The influence of the Niflheim Empire: 7.1% (influence on the military, economy, culture, technology, religion, there are a lot of request relevant to the field.)

Urban development: 171

Hygiene: 37

Public Security: 52%

The increase of northern migrants settling in Morata has deteriorated Morata's public security.

The population of Morata Village has expanded.

In the areas near the high seas, political, economic and cultural influences are exercised.

The people are happy due to the festival that occurred recently after a long time.

The residents have a great amount of pride due to the famous God of War Weed. They have a strong belief in their lord, they do not believe in the recent rumors about their lord doing bad things.

Even though the lord is often away, they understand that he does many things for the Versailles Continent.

There are no disquieting action taking place right now.

There are only a small amount of monsters in the surroundings that the army can keep in check. Talented cadets don't want to train and are playing around.

Famous sculptures are making people happy.

Illustration pieces are highly increasing.

An endless confidence and abundant support of culture is being the major driving forces of development.

A concentrated amount of Morata's art is spread throughout the Art centre, many of Morata's new products that are made are in its possession.

The Art centre's fees have made great financial gains for the village.

As the residents enjoys their culture and improve chances of children being born with higher intelligence and cleverness.

There are many smart kids that will dream of their future in being a merchant or magician.

Morata's past specialty in the sewing industry, has meant that the Morata's sewing skill is continuously improving with a larger variety of clothing being produced.

Seamstress is using leather and cloth to make a abundance of clothes.

Blacksmiths are still learning to treat iron. The materials are used sparingly when creating weapons for the city's defence.

The district's faith has increased their belief in Freya.

By turning the barren land fertile, they are developing the granary.

This year's crops are plentiful.

Aurephen Empire's special grain warehouse permits businesses to maintain cheap prices to the people.

A harvest festival occurred because of excellent quality of grain harvested.

In recent years Lugh's Order has been regularly doing missionary work, but the resident's faiths has been slowly taking hold.

Under the proper and abundant influence of the Freya Order, their hardworking features can be seen. But the deterioration of public order means that thieves have been causing trouble around the town.

Special products: art, leather and cloth, tomatoes, grapes, rice, beef, milk, cheese and wine

Territory total population: 491,898

Monthly tax revenue: 574,006 Gold

Village operating expense: Military force 4%, Economic evolution 34%, cultural investment 16%, monster request and subjugation 10%, village maintenance 30%, Freya Order donations 6%

"Keuheuheu"

A satisfied grin formed on Weed's face.

During the time he was away at Jigolaths, tax income had increased significantly due to the increase in population!

In addition to the northern migrants that were roving around, there is an exponential increase in newbies.

"I really am a good judge of what inherent qualities something possesses."

A good lord that knows how to gather large amount of population!

While the lord was away, houses and commercial buildings were built.

This is why setting up zones was very important. If it was left alone to do whatever they wanted, complex roads would have to be built, making movement for carriages difficult. But Weed, in advance, made several plazas and expanded the following areas around the main roads, keeping the side effects to a minimal.

In the city, Weed lived in a nice neighborhood. It was not in a city where he lived in an apartment that looked over Han River with a lake and a park. The city was spread out like a checkerboard and one can see off into the distance mountains.

In short, it was like living in his town!

In the early evening, the fire lights turned on brightly, he could see the night view of the city.

In the morning, as he ran through a long alleyways set with fog, as he delivered newspapers.

In the middle of winter, it was very difficult and dangerous to travel on the hilly streets.

Based on the experience he had gained through living in the hilly area, it was easier for him to grow and plan his city to make it better.

The placement of commercial area in the center with parks, plaza and residential areas surrounding it.

Later on private residential areas were made near the river.

Of course right now it was filled with the shantytown, but it wasn’t a big problem.

Weed was not aiming for the high level nor medium level but a lord that thought about the newbies.

“Newbies need to buy houses. So I can tax them later!”

In the beginning the newbie players will be satisfied with the shacks, as they level up more and have more money they will be interested in luxury houses. They will fall in love with their house in Morata and they will pay more taxes.

Weed did not think that the shantytown looked hideous.

The shantytown buildings next to the great sculpture looked charming.

“This is all for tax!”

Trilling!

- Morata’s cultural development are enhancing the region's capabilities.

Morata’s cultural propagation.

Morata has become a flourishing cultural area due to the influence of its art, because of its abundant art and technology, trading between different races or monsters is now possible. If you make them a little smarter, it will ease their aggressive side.

If you teach them language and numbers, trade will be possible, humans and other tribes will become intimate.

Degrees, culture and art, the technique for warriors or any related fields with intermediate skills, in some cases knowledge, wisdom and language skills will be sought after.

Due to improved cultural development one can now construct grand architectures.

Construction for unique buildings can be started, the result will depend on the skill levels or ability of the architect or architects working on it.

The main architect of a great architectural building will receive high cultural value and possibly a promotion in their job field.

A cultural job that can thrive without the need of a warrior is a very good job.

If there is an increase in the amount of the tribes that can trade, they can trade for the development and technology. Commercial goods will also increase.

There is a definite possibility that job specific Quests can have variety of benefits.

In the future, cultural jobs will eventually be the best job to have.

Weed decided to begin the jobs that he had earlier decided to put off.

“Later, I should be able to raise taxes by three gold.”

He looked forward to raising taxes even more than hearing about the increase of newbie players.

As he waited patiently, enduring the short term tax break so that later, he could truly enjoy reaping the greater benefits by exploitation!

As thing stand, the Art Center fee, tax, trade tariffs and the property tax for houses is miserably low when compared to the Central Continent kingdoms.

“Lord’s Mode”

- Monitoring the screen through internal affairs mode.(Ah,I think I know why people have so much trouble to write about this.)

Military: 91

Economic Power: 1737

Culture: 2384

Technology: 592

Urban Development: 171

Hygiene: 37

Public Security: 52%

Corruption: 11

Own Funds: 1,202,890 gold

Function available to the Lord who rules over Morata.

‘Internal affairs mode’ Was designed to handle small scale things within a village, for example if residents needed infrastructure or goods such as pubs or cows he can build them and even establish necessary guilds.

In the early stages, the development the village needs to be watched over by the lord, now that Morata has become a big city.

Architects are designing and building places that Weed would have otherwise had to build himself, the size of the city is increasing exponentially.

It's difficult to make larger profit margins on buildings such as bars, restaurants, inns and grocery stores because of the competition in keeping prices down between players.

Up until now, Buildings could be built and make money as they would give a good return on investment, Presently the city of Morata the trade hub of the north and had a huge number of newbie merchants gathered there. Right now, rather than operating inns and bars, it was time to expanding mines and increase taxes in trading.

"But still, there are a lot of things that needs to be developed first."

Weed was going to invest all his money into Morata.

The Art hall fee's had generated a huge 210 thousand gold. Including his 1.7 million gold, Weed had accumulated a huge sum of money!

Weed first used his money on minor things.

"It seems that I need to plants some trees on the side of the road."

Weed was being environmental friendly!

It didn’t seem to be a bad idea to plant trees as he was learning more about Nature Sculpting.

If there were players with a Landscape Architecture profession in Morata, they could nurture the trees on the side of the road and gain experience that way, although such professions were very rare.

He invested 1,298 gold to plant trees!

“Trees need to grow diligently.”

He sprinkled cheap seeds on the side of the streets.

Apple trees, pear trees, grape vines and peach trees, he only picked trees that bear fruit!

Because the seeds were blessed by the Freya Order, the moment the scattered seeds hit the soil, it began to take roots and quickly grew.

Weed quickly made some orchards along the streets!

“I feel proud doing good deeds!”

Weed was satisfied on his contribution to the environment.

Since he became the lord, he aggressively invested in the agricultural area to make sure no one went hungry, as a result, Morata had a vast amount of food.

Together, Morata's farmers and the Freya Order began to clearing the land, planting, growing and harvesting a variety of food such as strawberries, tomato, rice, wheat and sweet potatoes.

It was too far away and expensive to import food from the Central Continent in the other parts of the northern areas, due to monsters ambushing remote towns it was difficult to farm.

The farmers that gathered in Morata, celebrated a harvest festival with their crops.

The northern warriors also gathered to celebrate the festival.

Chefs would cook all kinds of delicacies that could be enjoyed, also the farmers competed against one another for the best crops.

If a harvest festival occurs, the city and surrounding villages will have an exponential increase in birth rate. Food production in Versailles Continent has a close connection to the birth rate, in turn it brings public trust and brings intimate connection between people.

Because it is rich in food production, Morata's economy grew in size, and to some extent the security was able to safeguard it. Any

crop failure due to drought or flood would produce a failure of crops and shortage of food, more people would slip into poverty and become homeless resulting in a decline in Morata's public security.

"I should start making buildings now."

Weed no longer bothered with minor buildings.

"Finally, I can start construction a great architecture..."

Creating a magnificent and striking architecture!

At the lord's request, all the residents and the players will work together to build it.

It was bigger and grander than regular buildings, in fact many people with the architect profession have to come together to build it.

If you looked around in reality there are Parthenon, Chartres Cathedral, Notre Dame and the Lighthouse of Alexandria!

A huge structure can be built at the Lord's command.

Construction funds were even directed to the astronomical construction, the construction period of a grand scale project is at least a couple of months, and because of that the Central Continent

lords did not attempt to make them.

“Let’s decide what to start constructing.”

Even though Weed is a newbie in creating buildings, he could now create great buildings and he didn’t waste any time since he had enough funds to start.

“Even if its ambitious I'm going to see this through till the end.”

As he built and destroyed all the ice sculptures, he had many disappointments!

If someone waited for the perfect time for preparation one would not be able to do anything.

For some reason, if someones mind is concerned with failure then they could change their mind.

If he wanted to make it, it was better to do it sooner rather than later. Even if it’s rough and unrefined, it is best to make it now.

It would not make sense if the promise was to do it later!

“I need to put more effort into this now.”

There was little that Weed could do during the process of making

monumental structures, so he had no choice but to leave it to the players.

To experience failures through trial and errors it can potentially become a great success.

“It’s not gonna be a failure anyway.”

As the lord, he had confidence in the players and the residents.

“If they fail, I am going to just raise the taxes.”

Weed had a strong desire to raise taxes!

He picked out two buildings that he wanted to make first.

Freya’s Cathedral!

And a vast Library for Morata!

Once the Freya’s Cathedral is completed, Freya Order of Paladins and Priests could formally take the 2nd tier job advancement.

They would not need travel far away to the Central Continent in order to do that.

“I can not send them away. They could even get a contract and be

assigned there.”

There is a saying that if you let someone step outside, They may come back with a change of mind.

In addition the cathedral also had the added effect of enhancing the abilities of the Priest and Paladin classes.

The order can use the cathedral to keep cherished and sacred holy items. Also the building has other benefits as well.

The Freya’s Cathedral in the Central Continent empowered the people’s faith and prosperity.

Farmers can pray at the cathedral to bless the surrounding area to ensure good crops and a better harvest, The cathedral could also be a powerful deterrent for the invasion of monsters by using the stationed paladins of the order.

Even towns or castles sometimes held one or two libraries. The development of knowledge is quintessential for any city, It could even help in the development of magical classes.

When a request(quest) is in progress one would need to go to the Versailles Continent to research, even though it was even possible to find private monster’s stories out in the field.

But Weed was going to build a vast library!

In an hunting adventures, when get the Quest, there may be a clue on a phrase or a piece of paper, books, vases and other pebbles and a map and find most of time.

These important items that involved them compared to their true value were quite precious, and majority of these items could be found cheaply in the general stores.

It was for building a vast library for the Versailles Continent books, the books could be displayed and can give clues about different hunts.

As people got a lead on their quests, the experience is shared equally with the original owner of the book. The region, the year and the different rank level of difficulty could be easily categorized.

There can be up to ten clues in five different case needs to be combined!

In the Northern Continent, many different unexplored areas were still has a lot of different monsters lurking around the frontiers hidden. In all other unexplored areas the areas surrounding could be safely explored. Building the vast library would unlock various quests on finding artifacts, and a great boom of hunting and adventures would happen.

In the Central Continents kingdoms, there were only a few cities that have a vast library.

“This should also raise the housing prices.”

A tax increase is his ultimate goal!

“Construction of Freya’s Cathedral and the Morata vast library!”

In Internal Affairs Mode, he built it next to the the Light square and the Bingryong square.

Instead in the plaza he built it on a vast land.

Triling!

Freya Northern Order’s part of the Cathedral!

If the Cathedral was successfully built, the former ministry over the Goddess Freya followers would greatly increase.

Architecture cost: at least 900 thousand gold.

Construction period is at least 5 months.

Depending on the personnel, if there an accident occurs during the construction, it will increase the construction’s building period. Skilled builders are needed. Architects that participate in making it will be able to gain special experiences. A large number of artists and sculptors needs to be mobilized. Participants who worked with art will be able to have an increase in opportunities for their names to be known.

- Great Architecture, would you like to begin commencement of Freya's Cathedral?

"Start."

- By the Lord's command the construction of the Freya's Cathedral construction begins.

This was the first huge investment in nearly two months for Morata.

It didn't matter about the decision of the lord, if the resident and the players did not go through with the plan, the architecture would take a long time to complete or it would not be built at all.

The lord needs to have a foundation of confidence and support!

In Central Continent there are no trust between the residents and the players, because the lords only built things to help themselves and for their own image.

Morata's library!

It will promote the development of learning and adventuring.

There is a possibility of restoring lost magic spells.

It can aid quests related in large amounts of relics and antique books, gathering up vast amounts of works of arts it can help build the continent museum.

Architecture cost: At least 700 thousand gold.

Construction period is at least 5 months.

Depending on the personnel, if there is an accident during construction it will increase the construction's building period.

Skilled builders are needed. Architects that participate in making it will be able to gain special experiences.

- Great Architecture, would you like to begin commencement of the library?

"Hurry up and just build it."

- By the Lord's command the construction of the Morata Library begins.

Depending on the amount of players that will participate, the precise results would not be known in just one day.

Weed built simple buildings with the rest of his money.

There were five guard post on duty.

If they patrolled around a bit they could catch thieves. Security was required to build these buildings. If there was a sharp decline in security, the loyalty of the residents would drop and thieves would steal bit by bit the merchant's items. If the security deteriorated, traders would wind up, avoiding the city.

Weed deployed plenty of security posts around the plaza and the shantytowns.

He also established a simple soup kitchen.

Every month, the operating cost for ingredients was formidable.

Money was needed for social service business!

“Hmm.”

Weed bit his lips to the point where his health dropped.

For high level players, they did not agonize over what they were going to eat.

The joy of traveling as they went around all over Versailles Continent to look for all sorts of tasty restaurants!

However during the time of being a newbie they are struggling to keep up with their equipment, so they often did not eat properly. Weed even ate barks and raspberries, but this did not always managed to maintain his sense of fullness.

He even became friendly with the training hall instructor by flattery just to get something to eat.

“During difficult times, I should help so that it stays in their memory forever.”

Just having the soup kitchen presence alone increased a lot the loyalty of the people. In Morata he wanted to at least prepare a minimal welfare system.

“All I need to give is food! Then they might work harder to give me back through taxes.”

The players needed to eat and grow well so that later he would be able to tax them regularly.

Welfare was also essential for economic growth.

- By the lord’s command, the great architecture Freya’s Cathedral is being built.

Participating residents will get a daily wage and city public service points will be granted.

- By the Lord’s command, a job for building a great library for Morata has been launched.

Participating residents will get a daily wage and public service points will be granted.

Merchants doing business in the squares whispered to one another.

“What is this Cathedral of Freya?”

“What is the lord building this time?”

While the merchants were talking they exchanged information.

Mapan was also conducting business in the square. He purchased vast amounts of weapons from the players and the residents and sold it to other northern towns.

Mapan explained the information from the bulletin to the people around it.

“The great architectural constructions need skill, art, culture and requires certain conditions to be built. It is quite a formidable large project.”

As a trader that was over level 300, he had traded in many places for goods and knew about a lot of things.

“The great architecture cost a lot of money and needs tens of thousands of manpower to do the work. It is something that can not be easily done.”

When Mapan explained, the merchants who came from the Central Continent nodded their heads from understanding.

“Ah. So that was it. I heard about it but isn’t it still premature to build it in Morata?”

“For Morata to be the center of trade for the North that brings a lot of money, I think it’s still to early for it.”

The merchants, for their trades, had traveled to many different kingdoms and villages.

As they traveled to many places they had never seen any amazing piece of architecture done by the lord’s instructions except here.

Doing the construction takes a few months and a lot of money was needed.

“The Cathedral and the Vast Library. Just doing one is very difficult but to build both, the lord is very greedy.”

“Just because he’s a lord, he needs to understand that everything will not just go his way. It is completely different than just hunting high level monster, getting quests, or getting a piece of land.”

“That’s exactly what I mean.”

Central Continent’s merchants were mocking at him this time.

The players in the Bingryong Square that were looking for parties to go hunting suddenly stopped shouting. They all came to

an agreement.

“Let’s go do the hunting next time.”

“If there is time to do the quest let’s do it later.”

“Alright guys thanks.”

The players all ran towards the site of the construction of the Cathedral and the Vast Library.

“Come on, let’s Go!

“Let’s get to work. Work.”

“It’s the construction project.”

“I’m going to do it first.”

The enlisted men looked at the guide and started digging, they also went to the Lord’s warehouse to get supplies. The players were moving like an mobilized army.

“Let’s go cut some trees.”

“Wooooow!”

The merchants experienced something that doesn't happen often.

Axes and many other items ended up selling out in a flash.

Players flocked through the merchants stalls buying up axes.

Hand axes and anything that was appropriate to cut down trees were sold quickly.

Players who purchased axes sprinted towards the nearby woods.

"Let's go gather a lot of trees!"

Going deep into the forests in the mountains, they could find good trees that could be used for building materials.

They removed the branches and hauled it back whole.

There were six people hauling one tree back to Morata.

Merchants that were selling nails, hammers, saw and any necessary things were quickly without merchandise.

Pavo heard the news and quickly came running over.

Since the construction of the Art Center, his name was well known as the best architect in the north and he was overseeing many construction sites.

He built villas, roads and bridges that connected to another town!

As he heard the news from his friend in Morata, he quickly ran over.

“Is this the workplace?”

Pavo and the 35 other architectures that worked together with him checked around the scene.

An estimate of more than 500 people were digging holes with spades.

The ground was flat, so digging was done in an instant.

“The foundation is pretty good!”

“Upon completion, it will overlook the surrounding area. Let’s start working right away.”

The architects got together and immediately started the design work.

For them, building a Cathedral and a Vast Library was a golden opportunity!

Architects order's were the law in the construction site.

The general players were not the only ones that committed to the construction site.

"This is our lord's command."

"Let's go build the library!"

Even Morata's resident's came out of their homes and started to carry dirts and stones.

"Gather together and build the Cathedral using art!"

Many Sculptors who were sitting down on the ground and painters who were painting on the walls all ran towards them.

After the Morata Art hall was constructed, they made a considerable amount of money.

In the Cathedral or the Vast Library, they would need a lot of artwork.

By default there would be decorations of artwork praising the

Goddess Freya!

Walls, ceiling, floor sculptures and painting that are ranging with different art of their own desires!

In Morata different kind of art were mobilized.

“It is Weed’s large request.”

“Come and attend. You will be able to eat grass porridge.”

Morata is well known for the Largest group called Grass porridge.

Vast majority was made of newbies, but they all have an extraordinary bond.

It was created by the girl named Lemon, who carried stones to build the Rosenheim Kingdoms Pyramid, and the many players in Morata that worked together with Weed.

They even help to move stones to create the lake of the Statue of Goddess Freya.

They were able to get a lot of public value with the villagers giving them closer intimacy, this allowed them to get a lot of quests, which made life more enjoyable at Morata.

Morata's performance will be different compared to other towns when this is done.

Even though the city was poor and insufficient, with the players and the residents working together hand in hand, it was possible to quickly drew up a plan and to build it.

A large construction project that has been mobilized and the players with warrior classes waited impatiently for Weed to make it!

Even after the clamouring ended, just in case, the players hanged around excitedly, waiting for Weed to start cooking.

"We have a job!"

"Let's go to work."

When the construction began, in the distance, the players hurriedly ran towards the construction site yelling in excitement.

"Weed set up a soup kitchen!"

"Wooooooooooow!"

The day Weed arrived back at Morata it became a big festival.

After a long time, he came back from his travels, they voluntarily brought things to the lord, because the people's level of loyalty and intimacy were high.

"I brought fruit for the Lord."

- The fruit merchant brought actual apples, pears and pomegranate.

"I would like to give you this Sword to you, Lord. If a monster invades please use it to protect Morata."

- 35 points were gained with the weapon store owner who gave him a long sword.

As the migrants wandered aimlessly around the north, they had finally settled down and delivered their thanks to the Lord.

Weed held on to their warm hands.

"You don't have to do this...I am just a person who live in Morata. But I shall make Morata an even better place and be the first to do it. Thank you. I will not forget this."

He did not refuse the items.

He shook his hand because it encourages the man to work even harder in the future.

He had learnt this method on TV by watching the politicians shake their hands with the warriors!

"If there's anything you need, please tell me at any time. You can tell me now, we are like a family."

"There are a lot of people here who need weapons but I am in short supply of iron."

The blacksmith that was wearing two piece of armor that requires level 150 asked him.

Trilling!

The Blacksmith is urgently in need of iron ore.

In the mountains surrounding Morata, there are unexplored mines that have iron ores. Due to the threat of monsters, the mining will not be easy.

The blacksmith named Salloam has received too many orders and is afraid he will not be able to fulfil them all. You have 13 days to get the required amount of ore.

Level: D

Quest restriction: need to have mining skill

Occurrence of a quest!

As Weed came back to Morata, he went to the River of Despair through a mobile portal.

It was a quest that was related to the Matallost Order, and he had one spare quest space, so he took on the Blacksmith Request.

“But my Lord, you are very busy and famous, and it is not something you should worry about.”

As his fame was high, it was a quest that did not have any penalties.

If there were such quests stories, there were always an exception.

“What are you talking about? If there is such a job, the Lord will definitely help you out.”

- You have accepted the quest.

Weed from his knapsack took out iron ore and gave it to him.

“Here you go.”

“Thank you very much Lord. With this I am able to get through the orders.”

“I had made preparation on iron ore in case of something like this happened, and it's a relief that I have some.”

“I know this isn’t much but I’ll go home and bring you an armor that I have made.”

A Blacksmith that was in a urgent need of Iron Ore is completed.

Salloam was able to obtain very quickly the Iron Ore that he needed.

- You have acquired a little bit of experience.

- Fame increase by 13.

- There is an increase in the loyalty of the residents.

- In the achievement of the Lord quest, an additional compensation is given: a suit of armor.

The farmers also came and told him about their problems.

“My Lord, I know this is a difficult request, I heard stories that you have came back from Jigolaths. I heard there is something like a Sol Reaper flower there. I would like to try planting some of it, would it be possible for me to acquire some? Later, when it grows, I will pay you back.”

“I have it, so I’ll give it to you.”

Weed kept analyzing through the bullet board for information on Morata’s quests. Even though it was a common quest, he was able to receive good intimacy and fame in compensation.

For someone like Weed, who has high fame, it was a rare sight to see him do small quests. If he wanted to receive more loyalty from his people, he needed to do these kind of quests.

Even though he was a lord, the additional compensation in loyalty was small, but it was still a savory quest.

Items from other residents, japtems gotten in Jigolaths, and fishing while sailing, permitted him to acquire foreign goods. Due to these items, he was able to complete quests on the spot..

While he went on adventure through the unknown land, the quest so far that has not been completed in Morata were quickly resolved by him.

If there was a chain quest, even if Weed did not go further with the quest, other players were able to finish it.

“I am trying to turn a barren land fertile but I am in need some money. Would you be able to invest in me?”

He even proceeded with the quests where the crop could be shared with the Lord.

He immediately achieved the quest by giving them money, only during harvest the result could be seen for the crops.

“I need you to do your best so that the people of Morata will be able to have food to eat.”

Weed even welcomed those quests.

The farming was very likely to succeed because Freya’s Order resided in Morata.

There wasn’t any monsters that came and devastated the area, thanks to the player increase, the damaged has receded.

“Thank you very much. I will never forget your kindness, belief you gave me, and the money you have invested in me Lord.”

- The resident’s in Morata has increased in loyalty to the lord.

Weed who acquires quests through people trust!

For a long time the Lord has not taken his position, there were a lot of quests related to the Lord.

“I feel uneasy during the night because of no security. Would you be able to invest in a little bit of security?”

“At night we will catch the thieves, and I will increase the number of soldiers.”

Weed stationed lookouts and guards around the buildings, this was also a part of a quest.

As he broke apart from the party, he did his quests that were back up and it soon became night.

As it became night, the Lord's castle venue that looked over the city was brightly lit with fire.

When Weed came back, a festival stated, stating that the lord was back, enormous amount of players came to town.

The players that were scattered through the nearby hunting grounds also came back to enjoy the festival.

A large scale performance began, he could hear the amused audience laughing.

"It's not such a bad thing seeing people happy."

Protecting the residents, city construction, economic, quests and a lord that has absolute authority in military.

After he came back to Morata, he really felt like he was ruling the land.

"This is all mine."

Chapter 3: Teuresec's Horn That Signals Victory

The festival took place near the statues, the squares, and the Tower of Light.

Newbie elemental shamans were running around dragging their contracted Dirt men, Fiery Pebbles, Wind spirits, and Water spirits.

"The water spirits are performing right now. Anybody who wants to be doused with refreshing water please come and join us."

"Musicians who can only be found in Morata are performing! They will start in 10 minutes."

The streets were filled with musicians and dancers performing together.

The Merchants' businesses were thriving, and even the players that came back from their hunt opened stalls and were selling their Japtem.

Hwaryeong and Bellot chewed on sweet grass as they toured the festival.

They could have become very popular if they performed together

as a dancer and a bard, but they did not.

They wanted to play and relax instead, after working for a long time.

“This is really beautiful.”

“Eunnee, It looks really good on you.”

(Eunnee-Its a formal way when a female calls another older female sister. Regardless of blood relation.)

They were fired up about shopping.

It wasn’t just Hwaryeong and Bellot but other players too, as they traveled around the market square they were fired up buying things.

“Those are some cute furry shoes!”

“Weed makes a lot of cute shoes. Why didn’t you buy it from him earlier?”

“I didn’t want to be seen as a shopping addict.”

"....."

Hwaryeong's house is 120 square meters. Her master bedroom was extremely large and gathered in it were a lot of shoes.

"Eunnee, If Weed told you not to buy shoes will you stop buying it?"

Hwaryeong's face turned white.

She wouldn't be happy if she was to only wear sandals and sneakers for the rest of her life.

"I'll....do what Weed wants."

"Really?"

"Yes. Instead I can buy purses!"

"....."

==========

"The night view is quite pretty isn't it?"

"Try eating this for me. I just bought this."

“You eat it first. I’ll feed it to you.”

Pale and Maylon were sitting on a rock near the Tower of Light.

They were doing lovey-dovey stuff while enjoying Morata’s night view!

There were crowds of other couples sitting together around them as well.

In Morata this area has the best atmosphere, and a good view so it is visited by many couples.

It was an area where singles could not possibly enter.

There were a few hundred pairs of couples sitting on the rocks under the moonlight.

A sculptor, who clearly did not have a girlfriend, was among them. Sculpting a large chicken from memory.

“The wind is making me cold.”

There were couples that could have went back to the city, but they were the type of couples that would still bare the cold.

Then the man will ask.

“Would you like to share my cloak?”

The couples shared their cloaks and the cozy atmosphere together.

There were many cases where couples would go hunting and adventuring together.

“Old man, by doing this don’t you feel like we’ve gotten younger?”

“Ahem! Well, It’s okay.”

It wasn’t an unusual sight to see old couples being intimate as well.

In Royal Road, people were able to feel as if they were young again and fully enjoyed the experience.

==========

“We sell anything. We are willing to trade. Come over and check out our specialities from the sea. You may even find some items leading to quest or items needed for your quest. Looking is free! There are many precious things and by browsing through it for long periods of time you might even get to earn some money.

Mapan's store is now open and ready for business!"

Mapan traded with the mermaids and received special products from the sea such as corals, seaweeds, pearls, and glimmering fish scales that he was selling now.

Since Mapan has been selling in Morata from the beginning he had a lot of regular customers.

"Excuse me, Is it possible for you to cut the price a little?"

Female players who wanted the pretty sparkling pearls tried to get deals.

However Mapan shook his head and did not give them any chance to lower the price.

"No, I can not. It is because of the low supply."

Even then he slily glanced at them and said, "I'll lower it down by two gold."

"Kyaaaah. Thank you!"

The female players who bought the items asked, "when will you be selling again?"

“Right now I’m not so sure. But please stop by, we handle anything from protective equipments to weapons.”

“Can I register you as a friend?”

“Of course.”

Mapan thought these were the best moments for him. This was the time to build friendship with other players.

From beginners to high level players, extensively meeting with others. Even as the Merchant profession, it was rare to meet so many people.

The money that Mapan earned was continually invested into his trade and shops.

==========

“Hey, do you have a party?”

Zephyr was constantly asked this by women.

He was in a square where a lot of lonely women sat and gathered together.

Zephyr told them sadly.

“I... have a party.”

“If you have time later. My name is Elaine...”

“I am sorry. I have someone waiting for me.”

Still, Zephyr was having a good time at the festival of Morata. The streets were full, it was bustling due to the festival! But Yurin, who he liked, was not there with him.

She had cold-heartedly refused to visit and was traveling around the world using Picture Teleportation.

At the cost of his pride, Zephyr pulled up the whisper window and contacted her first.

- When will you be back?

- There’s still a lot of sightseeing to do.

- Do you have time tomorrow?

- I’m hanging out with two of my friends tomorrow.

- How about the day after?

- Sorry, I will be busy drawing.

- Will I be able to see you this week?

- I can’t promise you as I’m busy…when I have the time I’ll tell you.

After that he didn’t hear anything from her.

Obviously, Yurin used her Picture Teleportation to travel the Northern towns, but also after that she went to Rosenheim Kingdom, Brent Kingdom, Central Continent's biggest cities and towns, and drew in Tiananmen Square’s making friends doing easy requests. If Zephyr saw the requests he would have scoffed at it.

The quests involved getting Kobold’s toy figures or getting poisonous serpent teeth.

But with a level difference of 20, she gave the requests to other people.

Even if he was to do something great, they couldn’t share with each other what mattered the most.

“Ahhh, without Yurin here the festival feels boring.”

Zephyr watched as the crowd dissolved into the festival.

Having given his heart away to Yurin, his feelings had grown so large that he easily became embarrassed and it made him tremble.

==========

“Huck huck(sobbing), will she not be coming back?”

There was one more person who fell head over heels over her.

The artist who hung many paintings, Petrov!

Reflection of an elf in the creek(stream or river).

Evil spirits scouring the land.

The view of the stars in the night.

A Young crazy orc.

Petrov expressed these magnificent and mysterious landscapes by using warm colors.

They were all either Masterpieces or Magnum Opus works!

He made his paintings with colorful expression which clearly showed an unique story that would make other painters jealous.

When Petrov showed his drawings to Yurin.

“How did you draw the elf in the stream?”

“When I was invited to go to the elf village, there was an elf girl who asked me to draw a picture of her.”

Yurin admired the painting of the elves that were running around freely between the trees.

Petrov was very familiar with the Elf and Fairy tribes. When he visited villages, he painted and gave some away, and the others he kept for himself as his own collection.

“The night view with the stars is very pretty. I have never thought to draw something like this before.

“As a child while I looked at the stars, I dreamt about moving them into the canvas. It would be very hard to just think about moving it, but when I painted it I had a really fun time.”

There are a total of 10 paintings in the Stellar Night Views series, they were pieces of art that express the exotic night.

The stars high up in the sky even had expressions. As the stars

grouped together into constellation they even expressed themselves as monsters.

There were many different star images like the boy who looks at the stars, the women, the priest, and the magician.

An young boy looking up while working at the rice field, a young boy who climbed a tree on a hill that look down towards the ground and a young man who was fixing something in the stable looked up towards the sky for a brief moment. The girl who woke up early at dawn to make rice for her family looked out the window, and the swordsman who was training in the castle was tired and laid on the ground looking up towards the sky.

When expressing a thief, he was sitting on a person's home wall and looking up towards the sky!

Petrov's small work of art were not negligent, it had composition, volume, and it also stood out.

Until this point Yurin's atmosphere was bright and cheerful.

"I have drawn a lot so please take your time looking at them."

"Do you have more?"

"That's correct. I haven't even showed you one third of my work."

Petrov couldn’t stop himself from talking every time Yurin admired his work.

Everytime he heard her voice praising him, he felt like he was flying away into the clouds!

He even talked about the art that has not even been released, but he did not think it was a waste.

-Art stat has increased by 21 for appreciating a Magnum Opus painting.

-Your art skill and proficiency has risen.

-Wisdom and Knowledge status has risen by 2.

Whenever Yurin listened to him talking about different things a lot of her art stats increased.

For Petrov it wasn’t just the drawings he drew, he also obtained them through requests and had a large amount of art collected, his illustration skill level was to the point of being over two level higher.

“This picture has quite a good feeling to it. Did you make it with purchased paint, or did you make it yourself?”

“I have things that I made, and I also have things that I have purchased at the art store. I have also made homemade paint that are still kept fresh, and the color is still maintained for a longer period of time. But because you need to do it a lot I don’t recommend it for you miss.”

As Yurin looked at the pictures, she started to want to go to the land of high Seas.

“You have quite a skill in art, it’s pretty good.”

“These are my drawings. There are a lot of things that I drew like the elves, spirits, and the people and You are the first one to see them.”

“How were you able to get to their place?”

“There are pictures drawn about spirits. I used picture teleportation to travel there. At first, they avoided me because I was human, but now whenever they see me, they ask to be drawn.”

Using the picture teleportation by traveling through dimension, he was able to do quests and act as intermediaries.

He tried to keep as much secrets as possible, but Petrov told Yurin without any restriction.

“I thought only sculptures were able to get it so I didn’t know that painting could also get Magnum Opus. This is my first time

ever knowing about this.”

“In art, painters and sculptors are often compared to each other. Even though there are a special connection to one another when sculpting, but in drawing you can capture everything. In this piece it includes a majestic sunrise, an aesthetic of odd colors, and you will be able to draw nature pictures of magnificent beauty. Nothing is impossible in art.“

Yurin was curious and asked him a question.

“You have done many great works but Petrov, I have not ever heard your name at the painter guild.”

In Weed’s case it wasn’t just in the Sculptor guild, but if you were a player in Royal Road you knew about them.

But no one had heard of Petrov’s name before.

Even if he did not do many quests, if one had excellent command over painting normally majority of their work will become famous.

“When I was offered quests, I did not like the rowdiness so I did not give my name. When I finished the quest as an anonymous my picture’s fame will become relatively low, if I normally gave my name Petrov, it would be known throughout the Versailles Continent.”

Petrov was hiding in Jeongnyeong and he was the most

outstanding painter.

[T/N: Jeongnyeong: Spirit world(Castle inside a painting)]

His extraordinary work was only known by the nymphs, and his works were equally outstanding.

“The painting is such a waste, are you going to continue painting under a different name?”

Petrov laughed and was embarrassed.

“There are a couple plain ones that are left.”

“Which one is it?”

“Well… the paintings become the best in the world. It’s a burden to become famous. My goal right now is to show the strength of an artist at this time.”

“Then what do you think of the Sculptor Weed of the High Seas? Sculptor Weed is already making sculpting famous right now.”

Petrov did not know that Yurin was Weed’s little sister and he truthfully replied.

“I have never seen Weed as a competitor. Drawing is so much

better than sculpting. He seems to think that he is getting all the respect right now, but if I were to make my presence known right now to the world, he would be humiliated."

After that Petrov was not able to meet Yurin again.

On one side of St. George's Castle's wall Yurin left a graffiti.

Petrov is an idiot. A dog.

==========

Even during the festival in Morata Weed did not play around.

"During the festival it's a must to do food business."

Foods made for special occasion sold well and it was also a good way to increase the skill proficiency.

It won't matter even if he overcharges them!

Cooking skill is intermediate level 8! He had about 4.3% left for it become level 9.

"I need to quickly raise my cooking skill to advanced."

Even when hunting, people made and ate three meals a day diligently.

Cooking is regularly utilized and is very useful, not only will his skill proficiency increases, but his food will taste good and it also increased stats.

Sewing, forging, fishing, sculpting, fencing(sword skill), herbal medicine, bandages.

There were many areas he had encompassed.

If one were to acquire advanced cooking skill, the intimacy with soldiers and the local people(NPC) would be easier to obtain.

What's amazing was he would be able to make a tasty soup from two anchovies and three pieces of seafood.

When Weed was returning from Jigolaths, he caught squids and anchovies and made it into fish sauce, thanks to the food that he had fermented, he was able to complete various dishes.

Sooner or later he had to raise to advanced in cooking skill.

"Fresh seafood house. If there is anyone who wants a taste of the sea, please come this way."

Weed only cooked the fish and other seafood because it was easily

perishable.

There aren't really that many Morata player that go fishing to the remote seaside, this allowed him to properly sell different variety of seafood.

"Please get in line for whale, tuna, and sharks because it will be gone soon. If all three of these fishes is gone, please do not worry. There are other menu like the giant squid slice that are ready."

Weed was able to make spectacular moves with his sword and slice the flesh of the whale.

The ability to focus on cooking, and the talent to concentrate on cutting them with the sword into sashimi.

"I should make it thin. That way, it would look like there is a lot....and I can make more money!"

Even when Weed was boiling spicy stew pot, there was a difference in Weed's cooking compared with others.

If other cooks were cooking in the same pot, they would make about eight servings, while Weed can make ten servings!

Once again, he used plenty of inexpensive vegetable and accurately distributing bones, head, and tails

He did not waste anything even dishing out the last cold serving, made him popular.

Since the hunting trip at the Lair of Litvart where he cooked food for the soldiers, set him apart, by dishing out 20 servings by the time it takes other cooks to do 10 servings.

“This looks amazing. Will you cook and make shark sashimi?”

“What does it taste like? Will it rise our stats by a lot?”

The mere rumors of Weed, who appeared several times on TV, made customers gather around him like clouds!

“If both of us eat it together it’ll taste amazing.”

“Shhh, I am cutting up large squid tentacles right now.”

All of Weed’s cooking at the High Seas were posted on the internet through video, and pictures were edited for the players to stimulate their appetites. It made people want to try eating them.

Weed was able to exploit them more easily.

“How will I be able to cook something this good?”

When young newbie cooks asked questions, Weed gathered them

around and answered while cooking spicy fish soup.

“Use fresh ingredients and clean water, and be conscious of your seasoning that you make yourself.”

The people who ate sashimi loved the taste so they ate it quickly, and since there were a lot of people that wanted more, scorched rice and stew broth were offered as extra service!

If they drink just the soup, their mouth became scalded, then they would drink fruit liquor, with no other choice, they would order sashimi.

This was the 2nd and 3rd time where Weed slily outdone them!

“As you usually drink crab soup, it includes baby clam soup! For your information there are less toxin in this puffer fish. There is a chance that if you eat it you could die, it’s only being sold to people who have resistance to poison and high health, we are not responsible for your actions.”

When Weed’s intermediate cooking skill is level 8. He was able to sell high quality cooking. A vast amount of menu of seafood cooking!

It’s not because of the guest, it was because of his return from Jigolaths in catching fish.

Triling.

-Cooking Skill has reached intermediate level 9. You will be able to draw out deep flavors.

“Finally, I reached level 9.”

Weed's cooking tent was always full with no available seats. The festival restaurants were always busy and crowded.

While simmering the soup, he also made sculptures in the brief moments he had in between.

If you have something interesting to watch while you're having your meal, there is a feeling that it will taste even better!

While cooking, he collected the leftover shells and used them to make a large crab sculpture.

“I would like three servings please!”

“Would they be mixing the food for us as well?”

Making menus relevant to the sculptures became popular!

Crab soup with crab chowder, with some gratings from its shell, together with fried rice, made the perfect one course meal.

Spreading around that irresistible aroma that made everyone wait in the long line.

“There quite a bit of Adventurers now.”

Players of Royal Road all saw the advertisements on the bulletin board, and widely known Adventurers have joined in as well.

Many Adventurers came to explore the Northern continent. These players had deep pockets and would spend so much money eating and enjoying the cooking of the famous player.

"There are still many dungeons that the players didn't know about in the northern continent. We are many parties gathered together and have collected considerable amount of information."

"....."

Adventurer’s offered themselves up to Weed.

"Do you want to go together and explore Pareubek Valley? I like hunting and my top priority at the moment is to use the weapons from the warriors in the high seas."

"From your time in the High Seas, have you heard about Count Valdez's tomb? Right now only formidable warriors can face the equally formidable monsters coming out from that den. The emerging monsters' levels average is 400. We know that Weed-nim's strength can handle this, but when combined with ours, it

will raise our success chance even more."

Weed's video of his legendary expeditions were broadcasted in the Internet and were seen by millions viewers.

The broadcasts became famous and gave plentiful proceeds every time, there were so many skillful Adventurers that he would decline the proposal without hesitation, he saw the potential harm it would cause.

Even for Weed, there weren't many bad offers from joining others. There were other players that had the ability to come to the Northern continents adventures and those with the experiences too. It was also a good place to make parties, there were plenty of hunting and exploration.

They tried to seduce Weed by proposing to give him warrior gear.

"Adventuring can be dangerous so I don't trust it."

There were also reputable parties asking him. They said that the hunting will become pretty fast with Weed and even he wanted to join with them.

However right now Weed's situation was not that good.

It was because of the quest associated to the Immortal legion.

Adventurers and warriors were sniffing around with outstretched hand due to temptation of the food.

There were two people who heard that Weed came back and quickly rushed towards him.

Mandal and his wife.

He gave the 1 copper request, to whom Weed made the dolls as a remembrance of the life of the young girl and many interested parties arrived from everywhere to look to at them.

“Weed you are back.”

Mandal grabbed Weed’s hand.

Weed saw the furry gloved hand grabbing him and saw a bright smiling face.

He enthusiastically smiled back.

Of course, this is because he had already noticed Mandal the warrior running over wearing sparkling mithril boots.

“You haven’t forgotten."

Not only were mithril boots hard to come by, in order to improve

agility enough to make it, the blacksmith must be really skillful. Making weapons would have been simpler, as not even a general would have found it easy to get his hands on mithril boots.

It was an expensive and rare item.

Weed carefully asked him.

“What did you think of my work.”

Weed had put all his efforts into fulfilling Mandal’s request to make the dolls. For other quests, it would have been okay if he failed and just tried again, but this time he could not do that, so he put all his attention into making it.

Mandal gave him a thumbs up.

“It was the best. It exceeded my expectations even though it was only a 1 copper request. I really did not know you would put this much effort into it. My wife also….really liked it as well.”

His wife Delphina slightly bowed her head in greeting.

“Wow!”

“Those people requested the sculpture.”

The customers that had lined up waiting for the art center door to open already knew about the story.

The Lord of Morata made the sculptures for the sake of a couple!

People were doubtful whether this was a scam or not, but parties came forward themselves.

“If it were someone else, they would have been crazy for money, but you only asked 1 copper and made a Magnum Opus art piece?”

“But I am not handing over ownership of it.” (Weed)

“Regardless….If it was me I wouldn’t be able to do it.”

“If you think about it our city is really nice. It even cares about the newbies.”

“If you look at the shacks and all the other things, this really seems like a good place.”

Weed did not personally get the ball rolling.

“I tried really hard, but despite my efforts I was not skilled enough so I apologize.”

“That is not true, we are really thankful”

“Still I apologize for making you come all the way here.”

Truthfully, Weed did that with other things in mind.

Normally once the sculpture job is done he just need to send it to them!

But since Versailles Continent is huge, you never know when you can meet someone again.

In addition to making the surroundings of the artwork perfect, in order to receive the request fee, he needed to make them come.

Delphi brightly smiled and talked. She is a very kind and gracious woman.

“Since we came to Morata a lot of good things have happened. Take a look at this.”

Delphi handed him a small quail looking egg.

Weed received it and checked it out.

“Identify.”

Fairy’s egg: Durability 10/10

An easily breakable egg.

A possibility that a fairy gave this to someone once in its life.

If you keep it warm for a duration of time a baby fairy is born from the egg.

The fairy’s gender is fixed to a female.

Although fairies have a higher nature affinity than elves, they also have an immature side.

Acknowledging the first thing they see as their parent, who can name them. The baby fairy will follow the parent’s words only for the first 6 months as the fairy grows very fast.

Depending on the environment of the village and surroundings, there will be differences in growth.

Based on these differences in its appearance, personality and ability changes its future.

Restrictions:

-The egg must not break.

-If you give the baby fairy too much stress, it may decide to return back to the land of the fairies.

-If an evil fairy is born, notoriety will extremely increase.

Since the mysterious fairy fountain was installed at the castle, fairies flew around every night.

Mandal and Delphina had become friendly with them by giving gifts and food and received the egg in turn.

Weed gave the egg back carefully.

“It’s a very difficult thing to get, congratulations.”

The number of players that had obtained fairy’s eggs were even below 20.

Weed couldn’t just ask them to give this item to him for their request.

To the Mandal and Delphina couple, the fairy will of course not feel like their real child. However, as they take care of the fairy, if their wounds could heal even a little bit, it would be good.

They will be able to decide the problem at hands Amongst themselves, in reality even if they are not its birth parent, they can adopt it and raise it as their own.

Mandal took out money from his pocket.

“Here is the 1 Copper as per the commission.”

For a split second Weed’s face turned blue to the point of wanting to beat up Torido.

“Thank you. I have received your request fee.”

Weed hand trembled as he accepted the 1 copper.

A rule to watch as he received the money. The promised amount of money that he asked for and he could not ask for more money because there were too many watching eyes.

However, for Mandal this was not the only reward.

“Weed I’ve got an item you could use. This is really worth two small castles, please accept it.”

A legendary horn that announces victory, The Teuresec’s Horn.

An Item that belongs to a knight Teuresec.

The horn is used when commanding an army.

When the sound of the horn is heard the moral of the soldiers will increase.

Among the knights, the former knight Teuresec blew this horn and, with the soldiers on his side, traveled to many places in the Versailles Continent leading his warriors to victory.

Requirements: Leadership 850

Class: Knight.

Minimum Level 400.

Can lead more than 300 warriors during battle

Option: It draws out the hidden strength of the warriors.

Can use Healing Hand three times on soldiers

Fame +600.

receive a bonus when Razing a city.

Soldiers will receive a strong will to fight the enemies while it make the enemies lose their will to fight.

Increase the experience points gained by the warriors at the time of victory.

Demoralization of the enemies.

When the horn is used by the lord instead of a knight the effect increases by 20%.

Weed gulped.

It was an item that knights and nobles were searching for with eyes ablaze.

It was so rare that on the item trading website, people even tried selling fakes--that famous item!

To call to attention, to educate the soldiers to a higher standard, it was to the point where people feigned hearing someone calling out their.

“What do you see me as....I didn’t come and seek for such a reward.”

Mandal said with his earnest tone, if he didn't give him something in return it would have been as if he didn't have any manners. It seemed evident to him that he might have seen Mandal having a bit of doubt so he slightly refused.

"I couldn't think of anyone else but Weed to have this. Please accept this."

"Huh, oh dear me. I couldn't just refuse them…"

Weed gave him an awkward frowning face as he stretched out his hand towards him.

Mandal understood what it meant, so he gave the horn to him with palms up.

Triling!

- You have acquired the Teurseuc's Horn announcing victory.

Weed's mouth smiled widely as he talked.

"When the fairy is born…I shall make her some clothes."

He received a precious treasured horn, so he wanted to make her clothes, it doesn't cost much to make a pair of baby clothes.

It’s a necessity to be more friendly and close with players like Mandal!

“It’s seems like you are a generous thief with loose ends. It’s true what people say that you should not judge a person just by their looks….! Not only did he have a rough face, he was vicious to the core.”

Having emotionally received the reward, more than anything, he couldn’t help but be proud.

He was as happy as a warrior who had trained his swordsmanship skill and killed the monster he couldn’t before.

When they looked up, Pale who was eating the food at the restaurant, with Maylon, Hwaryeong, and other party members, saw a new side to Weed.

The stares that the others gave him made Weed’s facial expression contort with satisfaction.

==========

Hermes Guild headquarters.

“The application for the Agolta region is over.”

“After applying for the occupation at Anaborasmaul we are checking the damage on the buildings.”

Hermes Guild recent performance of taking over by force the Haven Kingdom.

Everyone knew that they were strong, Hermes Guild was extremely strong beyond imagination. If one were to compare their level throughout the Versailles Continent, Hermes Guild will be at the top among the rare few who are up there.

New powerhouses above level 400 appeared one after, another leading trained knights and soldiers into magic battles, defeating the armies of other lords and nobles and then putting their flags on the conquered territories.

Hermes Guild’s sphere of influence was increasing daily, as their symbolic yellow flags went across the other kingdoms conquering them.

“I’d like to apply to join Hermes Guild, are there any requirements?”

“Would we as the whole guild be able to switch the whole thing around??”

Thousands of really strong players with levels of at least 200 were attracted to Hermes Guild and knocked on their door every

day.

In Haven kingdom, at the branches in the castles and cities there were long lines of players who wanted to apply for membership from early in the morning. Well armored mercenaries, anti-magicians, and other medium sized guilds were the only things that could keep the anti-Hermes guild coalition away.

The Hermes Guild and the anti-Hermes guild coalition were the two major forces in the Haven Kingdoms and through war, both of their forces became stronger.

The thousands of scattered guilds reorganized and split their strength into either side but whenever the Anti-Hermes guild coalition would send out their armies their warriors would have a series of victories!

Due to the repeated defeats despite the late deployment of more troops and high level players, at this moment the state of Hermes Guild's honour had a major collapse.

Now the final divisions were taking place before them.

"We do not have long until we annex the Haven Kingdom."

Raphael and the governing body of the guild had a constant meeting.

The warriors would check the situation every hour and respond

immediately. Though Bard Ray was the real leader of Hermes Guild, he did not want others to know yet. He could have at least served as a warrior but he was bent on hunting.

“What about Frieg province? The player called Gusweneb who shows us a lot of hate on the high seas is its lord, right?”

“They refused to surrender. They said they would not recognise the jurisdiction of the Hermes Guild.”

“And the nearest troops are?”

“A group of journalist and 2 legions a day away from Teperon.”

“Wipe them out. Show them the meaning of fear, tell the Warriors that we will not accept surrender.”

If a lord surrendered to the Hermes Guild they would be undamaged, if they did not surrender they would be completely trampled. They would destroy everything on their land and the revived players in the Haven Kingdom would be kicked out.

They would show by example on why they should surrender by swinging a weapon called fear. Players were trapped by the strength of the Hermes Guild.

“Now only the capital needs to be captured.”

The king, his royal family and the elite were all in the capital.

Hermes Guild's warriors needs to crush Haven Kingdoms by their own hands. But they did not have to worry about the cost of the life and death struggle.

It was something the warriors prepared long in advance, and the balance of strength was tipped towards Hermes Guild.

In Haven Kingdom, Hermes Guilds warriors had demonstrated their force.

This time it was not due to the warrior in United Supremacy that made it happen, but it was all planned out from the beginning.

When the Hermes guild rose as the biggest force in the Haven Kingdom, Raphael felt nervous.

Inside the Kingdom, there were many forces that did not acknowledge the power of Hermes Guild.

In Central Continent, compared to Hermes, there were other prestigious guild no less in size furiously guarded.

Also the fund for the base dropped to the ground and inside the guilds, the core players were also exhausted. Hermes Guild who were not properly put together needed to give duties to their members.

Of the guilds that manipulated and held them together from the darkness, half of them were Hermes Guild included in the founding of the Union.

The two competing forces were endlessly racing with each other to create a foundation in Haven Kingdom by recruiting players.

They had to give up some territories when the Anti-Hermes Coalition was founded, but it did not cause any visible damage.

In the darkness they joined the guilds and the players, those who had hostility towards the internal affairs of the Hermes guilds were gathered up and divided.

Currently, the fights took place in the Haven’s Kingdom were according to Hermes Guild's plan

"As you can see... Once we have full control of Haven Kingdom, we will have to do the coronation ceremony. How are the preparations for that?"

"Everything is going smoothly. We will occupy the city in three days."

Raphael was thinking Haven Kingdom was already his.

Half of Hermes guild already decided on the union.

The guilds who knew about the plot were absorbed into submission, and they accepted those who had a special agreement in secret.

To take control of the capital, the union of the guild would fight one large scale battle and destroy them.

If Hermes Guild showed their difference of strength then the Union would surely be torn down.

As Hermes Guild nurture and follow this scenario, they had enormous power and influence.

They have secured vast amount of territory that other prestigious guilds could not follow, they even made warrior troops.

“But Weed is in the High Seas...are we going to leave him standing?”

One of the governing member suggested this.

The current Hermes guild strength and influence was the greatest. In every part of Royal Road they were scared or envious of Hermes guild.

Every time they had their own story to talk about.

-Weed broke away?

-That's pretty useful. But it might not be good for Weed.

Even when Hermes Guild had not barred their teeth at Weed, comparatively it was not an objective to considered now. Right now their level was not worth mentioning.

Still the Hermes Guild's honor has been damaged, and the parties had taken great offense to it.

"We can not leave Weed like this. He could get really big and it's best to stamp him out."

"As Hermes, we need to show the people that we can easily kill Weed."

Everyone who were in the top brass had something to say.

Drinpelt and his fleet were originally from the sea.

There were less players who went to sea, even when they were on land they had a lot of disadvantage on land and when fighting they took a lot of damages.

The powerful Hermes Guild sent ground troops for revenge against Weed to capture him. But at that time they went off shore.

They couldn’t show off their strength properly and lost in which it shook up Hermes Guild’s pride.

“We need to catch Weed.”

“We need to show everyone in Versailles Continent that he is not an hero or the God of War with undeniable proof.”

The core leaders group decided to accept Raphael’s decision.

Bard Ray didn’t tell the others about his personal grudge against Weed.

Bard Ray had sent Drinpelt and Griffith to kill Weed, the fact that he hated Weed was apparent!

Raphael walked around the conference room.

“Then who should we send?”

After occupying Haven Kingdom with other Kingdom’s elite guild’s warriors they need to continue, but now, only a fixed amount of warriors remained.

Unlike in Jigolaths, they could send more than enough troops as they needed to catch Weed.

“How about Polon?”

Compared to the knights, Drinpelt were not as strong. Also the private knights were there as well. The Knight of Crema.

Polon was a knight, this time he was a significant contribution in combat power as a warrior.

“I guess Polon and his band of knights should be good.”

“That’s a good idea. Currently the area they are occupying is inside our sphere of influence so there should not be any more life and death struggles.”

“It will happen between sieges when we hit the capital, even if they escape the knights will move heaven and earth to catch them so problems will not arise.”

Nevertheless, the core group still wanted more reinforcements.

“This time if we make any mistake we will be in trouble.”

“We might be able to create an opponent equal to Weed.”

“If there was the battlemages wouldn’t Polon be able to do it safely?”

“Then they would be strong enough to even smash the castle and catch Weed.”

Polon and his division thought it was definite, but they had reinforcement ready just in case he escaped.

This was because he left a memorable impression from the extreme battle in Jigolaths.

“Polon and his knights plus seven battlemages….”

He ordered 200 knights and seven battlemages with 130 deputy magicians.

For these warriors, catching Weed was easy.

In addition to Polon’s division that he commanded, he could also take one thousand rangers with him.

“It seems a bit overkill….but it would be best to rather handle it perfectly. It is to show the power of Hermes.”

Raphael ordered Polon and the battle mages to take care of Weed.

“According to the information, Weed will be going to do the quest of the Immortal legion. It’s best not to let him be successful on his quest and become the buzz again.”

After Raphael ordered Polon to handle this situation.

“Is it alright if I kill him?”

“The goal is to completely destroy him. If he had any colleagues destroy them, do anything you can to disturb him.”

Polon had also thought about fighting against Weed before.

They were waiting for such orders as they were biding their times for an opportunity to strongly pursue.

“Sure. I’ll take care of it cleanly.”

Polon got his knight’s and rangers ready, and as soon as the battle mages joined, they left.

They arrived late to Jigolaths and its terrain was a huge disadvantage. And no one thought that the geographical location would be used against them both in the land and sea.

So right now they went undercover first to collect information on Weed’s arrival while hunting.

==========

Morata's night festival was not yet over.

Lights were kept on in the brisk night and the market was still open.

Weed made specialty seafood soup using leftovers for his party.

"You guys eat a lot. Also this is liquor was made from Jigolaths."

In general, he took out liquors that they could not tell the difference in prices.

Plenty of those ribs used came out for Bollard and Terbet.

Even if they didn't eat for two days, their stats would still temporarily increase by 20 and his cooking this amazingly brought up 30 more.

However, above all the flavor they had made to be able to gulp it down.

Surka naively asked.

"You really are not selling this? I can really eat this?"

"Yea. I purposely just cooked it so eat a lot."

The words that Weed said made him look like an elder brother!

He did not predict to get the horn, if it was now and if he read it last year he would still be extremely happy.

“Thank you, I shall eat well.”

It initially started with Surka then Pale, Mapan, Zephyr, Hwaryeong, Irene, Romuna, and finished on the air with Maylon tearing through the ribs.

Seo Yoon also ate ribs on the corner of the table with forks and knife.

If they were the Geomchi’s they probably couldn’t keep their imagine of dignity.

They would break apart three ribs for each to eat and still wait for more to eat.

Weed had a firm belief that he would not give any free ribs!

“He should be soon talking about it….”

“Would he say to pay for the ribs? But if the taste and nutrition is this, there should be a lot of guest that would want to eat it?”

There were no need to create more troublesome work.

But for Weed, he just continued to grill the Korean Barbeque.

“This is for the colleagues that stayed with me to this point.”

He didn’t even imagine that they would come to the High Seas in Jigolaths. It was for all the faith and caring they given him at the High Seas, so this was what he was doing in return. So back in Morata he purchased seasoning to give better spice for the ribs.

“What kind of difficult favor is he gonna ask…”

“What do you think is happening right now?”

They knew that there was no way Weed would give away free food, so it made them more uneasy when he kept on cooking the Korean Barbeque.

==========

Geomchi’s were practising by the seashore. They swung their swords towards the waves, and ran up and down the beach through the waves with heavy rocks on their back.

“Hey! Look at those muscles.”

Females players yelled as they passed by.

In Royal Road, the people who knew the name of Geomchi that were at the resort, listened to them on training their own body shape.

“Our fame is not so bad.”

“Today is the last day to exercise, at night lets go to the bar and order ten times the amount of fruit juice to drink.”

“Yep!”

Trainees were spurred on to start training for their Vitality.

Even when doing hunting, it was to the point of them being ignorant enough to it.

However during the former struggle at the sea, it was much more difficult to fight the sea monsters.

Triling!

Taking lesson through extreme ways to train the body throughout the ancient ways by yourselves. It will allow physical growth through training.

Difficulty level: Profession training quest.

Compensation: For 200 days interning in accordance will grow one's former combat skill and stats

Quest restriction: quest Limited to Martial artists.

Whenever the Geomchi's saw monsters, without even caring about the level they fought, they repeatedly won or lost. Their hidden growth was associated to martial arts.

"With my physical fitness…there a chance to be strong. From today on there is gonna be special training."

Since that day Geomchi's plunged into training.

Even similarly fighting the sea monsters, the trainee and the instructors nearly did identical quest.

The Geomchi ordered his trainee.

"You need to eat the barely in two days. Provided that you don't die."

Even the full training was extravagant.

“When the sun rises do a light two laps dragging logs on the beach, and wear a weights to do 400 sword swings.”

“Do you think that should be enough for the morning? For the master Geomchi’s it might look a bit too lazy. so adding breaking the rocks with the bare hands 500 times would be good as well.”

“How about we climb that wall with only our left hand and right foot? If we fall from the wall and hit the floor Resilience will probably also improve.”

A stream of innovative ideas were created!

No matter how fast morning training went, it was already noon by the time it was finished, and afterwards more training continued.

“Let’s also fight off hunger. I’ll use Willpower to overcome this damn hunger”

The instructors and practitioners carried two swords in each hand and when a big wave came, used all their Strength to swing their swords.

It was like the waves shattered into many pieces and splashing fresh cold water upside down!

The training that seemed to have no end, used up a lot of strength but it gave a cool sense of accomplishment.

Their task was not over until they collapsed at night one by one when their vitality fell from being exhausted.

“The body is like gum. The more you chew it, the stronger it gets. We’ve been too weak.”

Geomchi3 gathered the practitioners and scolded them. He also wore heavy armor and even carried a rock on his back and ran across the sand.

Training for 200 days like this regardless of day and night, it was unthinkable training!

They felt like they were going to die from their hearts bursting.

‘Run. I am running. I can do it.’

Making the body run made it difficult for the body.

Limit!

It was not a physical fight, but an internal one.

Since the quest appeared, they have been doing extreme practice it has made their body sensitive. It was to the point where they could feel their muscles screaming in distress.

I can give up now.

You're good. That's pretty cool. We can take a rest now.

Take a sweet rest.

Actually a voice could be heard ringing out every time they underwent the training.

They understood it was temptation, but it was to the point where everything became difficult and painful, and now they would rather worry about it actually being the case.

However the Geomchi's ignored these thoughts and kept running.

"I cannot stop here. Sa-hyungs are running. There are priests to cure us, so I cannot quit running first."

The man's pride would not let him quit, so he had to keep running.

In reality there were many things to consider.

Bone and muscles, nerve damage and breaking of the nerves! Reckless exercise implied that it was impossible.

Even if you sleep one night it doesn't mean the broken bones will heal.

Even if the amount of training increases, the body cannot handle it and a permanent loss of function in the body can occur.

But in Royal Road it was possible.

Just suck up on the pain and keep taking another step.

They kept believing as if the society is white in this world and they kept running forward.

-You have overcome your limits

Strength had increased by 2.

Sometimes there were unimportant messages window that showed up.

It was not just the flesh, but also to train the mind. Every time they saw it, they felt happy.

"Training and dying are fun experience. Guys, lets roll!"

Geomichi’s not only did physical training but mental training was also conducted.

Training intensity gradually became harsher each day.

There were times when they were overworked and died, but they did not decrease the amount of training.

Geomchi’s were training at sunny Ipia Island and other different islands!

Today finally, their training was complete.

Mud were plastered on Geomchi’s face as they gathered around.

“For today’s death penalty what would we be doing?”

Their bodybuilding training has increased their strength, vitality, and agility.

Their minimum sword skill level was at Advanced level three, there were also some that were level 5.

But to master the fencing skills, they did basic training and worked hard to gain it.

Geomchi asked as he wildly swung his sword.

“I’m fed up with looking at the sea. Since we have achieved everything here so why not leave.”

“Should we go back to the continent?”

“That should be good too.”

After completing the training the Geomchi took four days as they went on a vacation.

On the beach they showed off their muscles, enjoyed sunbathing, and drank orange juice. In the bar they drank fruit drinks and relaxed.

In some case there were some that were close to women.

“By any chance do you have any parties?”

Geomchi’s gave off a mooney look when asked this.

If anyone were to hear what they were saying in such situation!

At a time like this they have learned from Zephyr.

They could never tell them that there were 500 more of them.

“No. The three guys are here now.”

“It seems we match well with each other would you like to go with me to go to the beach?”

“It would be an honor…if you would go.”

It was really good for them to rest, and they had the chance to talk to girls.

Even though the recreation was short, when they were registered as friends there were times when they were able to meet again.

In the sea they were able to hang out with professional female divers.

“I heard that Ipia’s is pretty famous.”

“Hahaha, is that so?”

“Would you like to eat it with Seaweed soup?”

Women divers at the High Seas has exceptional skills in cooking seafood. However tourist enjoyed the relaxing atmosphere, but for born fighters it did not match with them. They went around island of Ipia and finally decided to return back to the continent.

“Let’s go back to the continent.”

Not just masters but the trainees too, they wanted to explore areas where there were a lot of monsters. They went around Ipia’s island and they finally wanted to return to the continent.

“Should we go catch a kraken for the final?”

Players who supposedly hunt monsters usually first ask and answer.

Level, major attacks, habits, warriors product, and was able to get many things smartly.

However for the Geomchi’s they didn’t have much to say.

“Will it taste good?”

“Well, It’s just for commemoration.”

Large sea monsters.

The whole group decided to fight, catch it, and eat the Kraken.

Without the support of magician and priestess they went after the kraken.

“If we cook it would it taste good?”

“Brothers, I even brought some spices from the island.”

Chapter 4: Visit To The Main Office

The story of the Versailles Continent can be considered as KMC media's headlining program.

Dungeon and hunting ground discovery, merchants that specialized in retailers trade, rumors about a hidden races and legends, and they even informed about the famous Players or like the Quest that become successful even in the High Seas.

Recently, the Central Continent battle news about the war had become the all-time high.

"The area around the Tibot hills was seized by the Xenia magician's forces. The Maple guild looked for mercenaries to block it but the difference in power was too big, and in the end their defense failed.

"Miss Shin Hye Min, I heard that you acquired/obtained the video of the battle?"

"Yes. Currently, we are here to convey the urgent news about the battle on the hill that took place two hours ago, and in a sec we'll give you a brief view. There was a fierce battle front put up by the warriors and how they were swept aside by their enemies."

"People who like magicians might also be interested in it."

The war was actively going on and there are large-scale fights that's happening very often as the mercenaries or the soldiers were marching.

This age was the time for the rise and fall of guilds, and also determined the awakening of sleeping heroes.

"Hermes Guild became the full owner of Haven Kingdom. Oh Ju-Wan, but I heard that half of the members of the Hermes Guild surrendered to the Union?"

"The Knights of the Iron Blood, enemy Magicians, and a lone mercenary, that made up half of Hermes Guild were defeated in battle, unable to afford withdrawal, the players declared unconditional surrender."

Hermes Guild has taken over 147 among 169 parts of the present Haven Kingdoms."

"What about the remaining 22 parts?"

"Hermes Guild formed an alliance of guilds in guild cities. The difference between the forces is so large that they would barely do any harm. Major plans are underway for the complete occupation of Haven Kingdom."

"For the first time, there is an event for the coronation of the Kingdom. It seems there are many people who are wondering about it."

“The Fame of a Castle is just as an important as the Fame of a Kingdom, it is very important to have diplomacy and foreign affairs to act in different areas of intervention. A Kingdom’s Fame is very important on its food production.”

“The Hermes Guild has made all the necessary preparations.”

“Just like you mentioned. Banners were posted inviting everyone to come to the Central Continent. Arendelle Castle in the capital will be open where we are holding a party for a week.”

“What about the eligibility?”

“Hermes Guild still did not reveal the name of their new kingdom, Saerong, to the press. Only current Haven Kingdoms Players can attend.”

“I think it would become an exciting place.”

All the guilds and individual players of the Kingdom were able to participate.

Competition between players and guilds had a massive parade. The Hermes Guild showed off how they were beyond others capabilities.

Including KMC, as well as all the media broadcasters which

covered Royal Road, decided to televise all the related to the coronation ceremony of the Hermes Guild.

“Do you know who is being coronated as the king of the kingdom during the ceremony?”

“According to the news obtained, it’s Bard Ray.”

Bard Ray had the best Fame, Strength and Force.

He recently became the king of one nation.

“I suppose this shows that the Hermes Guild has more wings.”

Gaining control to Haven Kingdom, his name has ascended to the top, whether it was in real world or virtual world.

“How did the Hermes Guild make more than half of them do an unconditional surrender?”

“They abandoned their hostile attitude, and became a part of the Hermes Guild while the other guilds prepared to move to other kingdoms.”

“We overheard that this was just a front to recover from the honor that they lost in Jigolaths.”

“Yes those high-leveled players were a part of the guild, but that doesn’t mean that they represent their guild.”

“Isn’t that the same situation as Haven Kingdom’s subjugation? How is it different from a guild member fighting in a distant land?”

“Well, that still ended in a deadlock.”

In the other kingdoms besides the Haven Kingdom, there were still on-going wars. Millideon and other lesser guilds have expanded their reach and entered the Union. High level players one after another have discarded the charm of the prestigious guilds.

==========

After the Festival ended, the Advent of the Seven Angels was placed into the House of Art and Sculptures.

Sculpting Master Daycram made Dori a great sculpture treasure of the Versailles Continent. It can be evenly compared as on the same level of a Holy Item.

Ding!

The Advent of Seventh Angel was displayed in Morata's Art Hall

The news about the sculpture has become sensational and widespread like a pandemic in the region

The cultural development speed of the area has quickly increased by 5%

This made a huge impact on cultural influence

Due to revival of art, popularity has increased for those who are engaging in art related jobs

Morata has become the sacred place to those who engage with art

The fame of the area has increased

The angels' blessings have greatly improved the stats and faith of priests and knights.

Players in Morata have flocked to the Art Center to see the miraculous art

"Was this work fetched from Jigolaths? I can't really believe this mithril carving's intricacy"

“Will I reach Weed’s capability of this degree?”

“No one among sculptors has reached the master level.”

The Arts Hall’s daily visitors have increased by threefolds, and it was obvious that they were there to visit Daycram’s work, due to its favorable comments spreading widely.

Weed increased the official admission fee of the Art Hall to 5 gold. But to the newbie players, he only increased the charge by 1 gold.

By merely exhibiting the Seven Angels that descended from the sky, The Art Hall which is in Morata has increased its work by a lot day by day. Players Challenge the new sculptures and get admission to come in. Sculptors and Painters compete with each other which made their works improve gradually

Nevertheless, there were still many protesting players.

Booo! This is the Lord’s tyranny

“Before going on the hunt every day, I used to come to the Art Hall, but now I must pay 15 gold to receive its effects.

Morata Art Hall, is a important in every hunt, which is why they ought to lower the price!”

“This insane price increase did not take into consideration the residents’ side at all!”

Some Players protested fiercely in a loud voice from the entrance of the Art Center.

The residents taking advantage of any form of protest against the daily increase of the entrance fee of the building is never an unwelcome action.

Weed therefore announced 3 lengthy statements.

The increase to the admission fee has been minimized, but we still need this increase due to the rise of prices of raw materials, and not to mention the maintenance of the art and the building itself.....

It was the same shameless logic that the government used when they increased the costs for electricity, water and the subway!

There were many protests, but the Newbies were quiet because 4 gold was not that expensive.

On the other hand, there were those who actually looked down upon the complainers. The Tower of Light and the Statue of the Goddess Freya were free to watch, and there still were those with thoughts of sympathy towards those with professions in Art.

Before Weed emerged, the mood of the Sculptor profession was

darker than ever. They received insults from everywhere, and they were only able to eat the cheapest food or beg for scraps on the streets.

Even if they strive to do their best with their artwork, there was even no marketplace which would compensate them fairly.

Having a battle based Profession was in fact what was expected of most players, but they had to accept that the right admission fee felt wrong in mind. The more good works that fills the Art Center, the bigger help it will be to the non-combatant players who are only able to work in these field.

By increasing the entry fee using these stereotypes was a trademark exploitation of the firmly packed Weed!

“One should definitely raise prices by a ton. After all, you can’t make a fortune by simply raising 1 gold at a time.”

Morata’s player level was gradually increasing. Players from the Central Continent will soon be hunting in its grounds. It won’t be long until the number of players exceeding level 100 increase.

Not raising the taxes at all, and then raising it abruptly would just make him eat more insults.

By the time you do have to adapt, you will have forgotten the given increase.

==========

University of South Korea in the second semester.

Early on campus, chilly winds came. At first glance it was unusual that the Royal Road Ltd. Unicorn would schedule a tour for the Virtual Reality Department.

They scheduled a visit to the Institute that would last two nights and three days to be stuck in school.

All college students had their own companies in mind.

However, most of them wanted to be in the world's largest revenue and creative company from its first three years of establishment. Students from the Virtual Reality Department of Korea University and other universities were invited.

"I can't wait to see it. We have to stay for two nights and three days?"

"I wonder if the company is really as great as they say it is."

In order to secure the degree of media coverage, the students were thoroughly screened and their anticipation rose.

Of course, Unicorn's field trips came at a cost, and made the Royal Road Players drop their responsibilities in the game. Lee Hyun thought that all of this was futile.

"Yes, and if you write within the circle of the exam form then you're eligible to get a job!"

The entrance exam that students take for Mills elementary school was harder. It was not clear if being hired in this company was something to be proud of.

It didn't make sense. The Unicorn Company could afford the best doctoral talent, and was only hiring mediocre applicants.

The Virtual Reality Department itself was not established when he graduated from High School and got various jobs.

Since the place was crawling with personnel from the tour, the news about the job opportunity quickly traveled through word of mouth.

Lee Hyun's spirit fell because of the tour schedule.

Being away from Royal Road for 2 nights and 3 days was a great financial loss.

However, this was not as greatly felt in the North when compared with the Versailles Continent group that was covered in catastrophe.

There were many things that needed the attention of Morata's Lord. There were plenty of things that needed to be caught up on.

"By the way, students, these three-day and two-night tour is important in our academic calendar!"

"This is slavery."

Lee Hyun raised his hand abruptly as soon as the lecture was over.

"Student Lee Hyun, Do you have any questions?"

Because Lee Hyun had never asked questions in his class, Professor Ju Jong Hoon asked in wonder.

"I have a really busy schedule at home, so can I skip the scheduled tour?"

He couldn't stand to lose any money, Lee Hyun quickly pulled out various reasons such as Society's demands over class and other schedules that he has to meet.

Exceptions are only exceptions when they're once or twice, but now it felt like he was a wanted suspect!

The Professor replied sharply.

“You may not skip the tour.”

“It’s really important, I have personal reasons that I must attend to…”

“Tours are also classes. If you’re not going to attend them you would need to take supplemental learning during the vacation period.”

Eventually, the reluctant Lee Hyun became involved in the tour.

The students from the University of Korea rode the bus, and stopped in front of the high-rise building, Unicorn headquarters.

There were students from other University who had arrived earlier.

The Unicorn Company authorized a total of 230 students to attend the tour.

Lee Hyun looked up at the building of the headquarters as he got off the bus.

"It’s been a long time."

The last time he was here was when his character climbed the top of the Hall of Honor.

He came straight for the money that was made from all the promotions and advertisements.

Unicorn was already aware of how good Lee Hyun was.

“As sharp as a razor, an honest company violating a payment date has never been seen.”

Money was always well spent by the best of companies.

The public relations staff met the students, and they looked back and saw several departments in the head office.

Their workers were either having a pleasant meeting or a conversation about their wonderful view of the world.

In addition, there were special facilities for the staff!

A Music Hall, a fitness center, a swimming pool, a cinema, and of course the capsule rooms were a given.

The female Public Relations employee who guided them to the restaurant said.

“You can make a saga about meals here with the fresh ingredients prepared by our professional chefs.”

The cafeteria was on par with that of a five star hotel.

“Do the employees have maternity leave?”

A female student had raised her concern. Maybe having a family and raising children were a problem for the company.

"Only once for a year, but as a rule, the holiday is a nominal fee. When you give birth you will receive a paid leave for one year."

The one year maternity leave was very generous. They also gave the child a college tuition fund of 40’ days worth of salary.

The difference in the working conditions to Weed’s sculpture Yellowy from Royal Road was like Heaven and Earth. Here they had proper food and were well pampered.

Sang Jun Choi asked the female Public Relations officer about other useful employee information.

“How… how much is the salary of a new Unicorn employee?”

All the students’ attention were fixed on the Public Relations officer.

“It depends on the department. As company policy, the specific salary cannot be disclosed to outsiders. However, the bonuses and

profit allocation is in the excess of...”

In the end, the most important information, the annual salary was not told.

But the students knew from the news organizations that the new employees of Unicorn receive a ton of salary.

Even after all the welfare the company gives to its employees it still receives astronomical profits from its different businesses. As long as you qualify they will give you a lot of money.

Lee Hyun had to have more tangible evidence.

Since the contract in the Hall of Fame, the unicorn company had sent him four ribs and a fruit set every time it was the holidays. Packaged individually in times, and department store receipts were still stuck showing how much the Unicorn's wealth was spent on the gift package.

"If this is about money... How much money did the company spend on the many toilets with the embossed toilet paper?"

A world-class company which was truly differentiated, can be said that they cared about its staff.

The last time he was there he met with Yoon Soo Jang, Lee Hyun wasn’t able to meet him now because he was dedicated to a long-term project within the Project Relations Department.

There was no employee there who recognized Lee Hyun.

That was the end of their first day at Unicorn Headquarters!

The next day, they were scheduled to visit the factories and laboratories.

The University of Korea students were placed in a resort like hotel with dinner and other accommodations.

The next day, also in accordance with a fixed schedule as if it was a school trip on the employee's description and move with it.

“This is the factory that creates the core system of the capsule.”

Eight robots are assembled and tested simultaneously. It can walk, perform basic commands, and can move the equipment.

The robot which has been inputted by various processes was directly produced by a subsidiary company of Unicorn, Node.

The company had a wide array of products. Be it robots intended to guide blind people, robots designed for cleaning, or an industrial robot that sliced meat for a fish company

The size of the company was indeed colossal

The net profit of this company is so huge that it can't be rivaled by two or three companies combined revenue

Lee Hyun is hostile to these business firms.

“It is my most formidable rival”

When you work in a construction site, you will see how robots are heavily involved. They are substituted for the purpose of carrying heavy materials, cleaning the windows of tall buildings, or any dangerous field of work.

Even though they are just subsidiary company of Unicorn, they still reap huge monthly cash earnings. In fact, 9 years ago before the Royal Road capsule was released, the production cost of the capsule was astronomical and with that, they didn’t reap a profit. But Unicorn’s advanced control technology was developed further. Now, Unicorn has firm grasp of various sectors like electronics, machineries, chemicals, banking, and retail.

With a perfect virtual reality and aggressive maneuvers of company expansion, everything was taken over by the Empire. Lee Hyun can only just sigh.

"In the end, the company is trying to brag about its name. In this way, the past, two nights and three days grudgingly flew away all for the company’s sake.”

Following the guided tour he couldn’t play at all, and it wasn’t working for him.

The Unicorn's Guide of the public relations staff worked hard detailing each department, but just not visible outside her pride.

The factory and the research center were attached to their close proximity

The institute researchers had a villa overlooking the sea which was just a walking distance from their head office which also served as a laboratory. Even though the office was quite small, the various utilities were quite good.

“Woah...”

“I wish to work at a place as good as this”

Having glimpsed the luxury cars in the parking lot, you could roughly estimate the social status of the researchers.

“Unfortunately, the institute does not disclose what is going on inside”

Even the staff of the research institute could not go within the facilities as it is being shutted down when the schedule is over

“You’re all welcome to stay at the hotel Unicorn had gotten you

while you’re in town. After dinner, you’re free to relax. Enjoy your free time.”

As I went there, the atmosphere was thrilling similar to school trip

“A generation of well bodied men have gathered here, 12 for 12!”

“All the girls from the other schools made dates with the boys from our school. So, I’m all that’s left.”

The students of Korea University were out together with the representatives from the other schools and were still out on their dates.

Lee Hyun was tired so he left early to sleep at the hotel.

Early in the morning the next day,

Lee Hyun got up early for his habit of morning exercise.

"The air is not bad."

The many trees that made the air refreshing.

It could be seen that the researchers and staff unwind in the morning by using the exercise facilities. There were also many

scientists from overseas around.

Lee Hyun noticed an elderly man during his light jog around the hotel, sitting alone on a bench.

Lee Hyun approached the man.

"What are you doing?"

"Move along now."

"You seem bored old man. Who are you waiting for so early in the morning?"

"I don't have anything to say, so go away."

Lee Hyun was experienced enough to see that the old man was suffering. And that due to his pride as a man, the old man remained stubborn and refused to speak to others.

"I was going for my morning exercise but should I play with you for a moment?"

"Don't give me that crap, begone."

"Did anything bad happen to you or something?"

"Don't sit down."

Lee Hyun sat beside him on the bench.

There was a poisonous feeling coming from the old man, but after a brief moment, it became the loneliness of longing to talk with someone.

They both fell silent for a while.

"Have any children? You look lonely old man."

“What do I have to do in order for you to disappear?”

The two were sitting in thought.

The old man adjusted his position on the bench. For a long time he avoided Lee Hyun.

Only a few more leaves were remaining on the trees, however the leaves were still gradually falling. They watched their surroundings for a long time.

The old man's identity was the scientist who lived in a castle of his own genius while ridiculing the world of men. He was Yu Byeong-jun!

He recognized the face of Lee Hyun through the goddess of the Versailles.

He was aware of this fact before he sat down next to him.

He only pretended not to know.

Yu Byeong-jun saw him as only one of many players he could recall having observed.

Only Yu Byeong-jun knew about the true end objective of his own plan.

Finally, Yu Byeong-jun was the first one to speak.

"What is life?"

Yu Byeong-jun was dressed in plain clothes that resembled what the paid workers at the institute wore.

It was a costume.

There were only a handful of people at Unicorn who knew his true identity which was generally limited to executives and a few scientists.

Lee Hyun would never be able to imagine the true identity of Yu

Byeong-jun.

He thought it would be a good opportunity to ask questions.

Lee Hyun was trying to think of some profound answer to say to the old man.

Yu Byeong-jun realized this fact and said,

"Relax, just tell me what comes to your mind immediately."

Lee Hyun replied quite simply

"I don't know. I just live. To eat, live, and make money."

Lee Hyun gave an answer that Yu Byeong-jun expected.

It was a simple answer with unmatched clarity.

"Emotions are like the falling leaves in autumn. Have you felt the cold winter come to empty the leaves from the trees?

"Fall and winter are just cold. So I make sure to wear thick clothes. And also good underwear."

"Young guys aren't supposed to wear underwear because fashion dictates you shouldn't wear any."

"It's best to live warm."

"What do you think is the most important thing needed to live?"

Lee Hyun didn't need to think twice.

"Money."

"For money?"

"Are honor, friends, and family not important?"

"Is Honor which is splashed on me by what others think is important? You need money to even maintain a friendship. You've got to take care of your family. There are too many times where if you don't have money, then you won't be able to take care of your family. Money is needed to keep order so that you have something to fall back on."

Yu Byeong-jun slowly nodded his head.

"I don't know that many people who only think of money."

There was no longer anything left to say but Hyun continued to remain sitting on the bench.

Little by little there was an increase in the number of people starting to walk past them.

No story could keep Lee Hyun from skipping breakfast so he stood up from the bench.

"It's cold here old man, so you should leave here soon as well."

"My nerves will tell me whether or not to go."

As Lee Hyun took a few steps toward the direction of the hotel, he looked back.

"Here help yourself to some hot cocoa."

He then took out 200 won and placed it in the hands of Yu Byeong-jun.

Yu Byeong-jun remained silent because it had been the first time he had received such treatment.

He did not know that there was a field trip scheduled for the students from Korea University, and that Lee Hyun would be mixed in this group as well.

If he hadn't gotten up for his early morning jog, they would not have met each other.

The Unicorn corporation had been alive and behind the scenes for decades.

But underneath Yu Byeong-jun's skeletal physique, there seemly flowed sympathy.

"Ha Ha. Unbelievable."

The coldness he felt could never be felt by other people.

The scientists that knew about him as the director of Unicorn were afraid to look him in the face.

But Lee Hyun gave him a coin and treated him like a poor old man.

'The last time I drank something from a vending machine was over 20 years ago.'

Yu Byeong had a sudden desire to drink the cocoa.

He saw the vending machine and looked into it to see the price of cocoa was 300 won.

==========

After the 3 day and 2 night tour, Lee Hyun returned home!

"Finally it's the weekend."

A fresh smile was painted on his mouth.

He cleaned the laundry and dishes then turned on the computer.

Calling ahead in their last march of greed, the guild advanced forward as they got caught up by the whirlpool of war that drove them to Central Continent

Legends in Royal Road were created from its never ending conflicts and various special programs that broadcasted those legends live on air.

“There seems to be a massive war going on in the Central Continent.”

Instead of videos about hunting or quests in the Hall of Honor, there were only videos about the war.

Lee Hyun watched a couple of videos, each for a short amount of time.

A massive army charged toward the fort like a wave, and rolling their wheels, the siege weapons approached as well. At this, the defenders resisted fiercely by firing arrows and casting spells.

Although some managed to heroically defend and stop the invaders, most fell to the invading guilds.

It was because they did not fight unless they were sure of their victory. The fact that they prepared for a long time helped as well.

“Where do we have to go in order to escape the war?”

“Merchants from the Moldroon region please be careful. The armies that have lost their supply lines have begun to raid the trade routes.

“Due to the strengthening of control over the dungeons, the cost to enter dungeons in the Central Continent is continuing to rise.”

“Did you not know? The price has already doubled.”

The notice board was in uproar with information about the war.

There were many recruitment notices as well.

“Those who wish for battles and victory, join the Bane Guild! We promise that we will provide you treatment fitting for your level.

“We deal with players who aren’t in any guilds. When high level players join, we will provide fitting equipment for you.”

The price of weapons and armour in the Central Continent jumped up to twice its original price, and the cost for other war related equipment had shot through the ceiling.

For the Merchants who dealt with weapons, a golden market had opened. It was heaven for Blacksmiths and Tailors as well.

On the other hand, there were many cases where the merchants were raided by other guilds and couldn’t transport the materials.

Lee Hyun logged onto the Dark Gamers Union.

The request board was filled with requests for mercenaries to help in combat.

On the information bulletin, you could find combat situations of each region and the power of each guild.

In the Central Continent, there were many castles, towns and fortresses that were occupied by guilds.

Although the prestigious guilds were powerful, the so-called grass root guilds had superior numbers.

Each guild would had a minimum of 1~2 high level players, and

there were small guilds filled with only high level players.

Those without guilds banded together to form Guilds and resist the scale of the great war which was growing out of control.

Title : The end of the war in the Central Continent?

Title : The relationships between all the guilds?

Title: Top Secret Information. The war with Haven is not over.

Although there were many worthwhile stories to read, Lee Hyun did not think that any were relevant right now.

“Item price is going up, you have to jump at this opportunity to earn money.”

There were many people looking for mercenaries but there weren’t many applicants.

Dark gamers used items to explore unknown dungeons and to hunt in the heat.

This made it impractical to enter the war, it was futile to die only to be thrown away and betrayed by the guild. However, level, skills, and equipment can be relied on as it is your property.

Many people wanted to hire Lee Hyun as a mercenary, but he wasn’t interested since they only wanted to take advantage of him.

“I shall go into Mt. Debkart right now."

Chapter 5: Nature Sculpting

The grey mountains were dangerous as many monsters were breeding at this time.

Without a skilled ranger in your party to safely navigate through the mountains, it was close to suicide.

Because of the steep slopes, monsters could surprise attack you at any time.

Weed was riding one of his Wyverns in large circles.

“It really is a huge mountain range.”

When he fought with the Orcs and Dark Elves in the Yuroki mountains, he thought that was already considered a huge mountain range.

“The sculpting master should be somewhere at the foot of the mountain!”

He was expecting to find a wooden house.

“Though, a nature lover might be opposed to building a wooden house.”

Sculptors excel at handling stone and minerals, however finding such a house seemed unlikely

“A poor hermit would obviously live in the mountains!”

Weed was convinced that such a poor man would be living in the mountain wilderness.

He opened the quest information window to check the quests remaining time.

“Quest information window!”

Bar Khan’s summons

The undead’s Bar Khan has called for a demonstration.

Many undead will surely follow his orders.

Days remaining “84 days”:

Quest difficulty: C

Compensation: Chain quest start, meet with Bar Khan

You are now an undead and may not cancel the quest..

Anyhow this quest which would normally only be granted to the Lich Shire, was obtained because of shape-shifter sculpture.

There was no need to rush the situation as he would much rather take his time and come up with a favorable solution.

Instead of hunting, he would take his time and learn about natural catastrophe sculpting.

“Which direction should I go?”

Weed had to follow his instincts. The bottom of the mountain just didn’t seem right.

“That area just doesn’t look right!”

He wanted to go at least halfway up the mountainside!

“He’s looking for an ideal high class view.”

If you wanted a home you would look for somewhere with an unobstructed view.

“A place where the valley water was nearby.”

Weed on the Wyvern, flew in close proximity to the mountains.

The mountain was huge and lush with trees.

Long tailed monkeys, and other monsters were shouting and waving their clubs but they were not able to reach them.

Diving through the long arms of the branches and vines. Picking up various kinds of fruits such as bananas and chestnuts along the way.

Sometimes unusual metal items could be worn on the body depending on the circumstance and when he was extremely low, he could grab strong monsters off the ground.

“There is nothing here for me. From the perspective of a sculptor, this place is filled with loud and annoying monsters. If I was to work here I would constantly be disturbed, we need to find a quiet place.”

Weed was very close to the monsters in the area, except he couldn't see how people could live in the tough rocky area as he passed by.

Dekarte was an enormously huge mountain by any standard, the possibility of finding DayCram in such a place was small.

You even had to look through the leaves of the forest, trying to scour the woods looking for some obscure target could take quite some time.

So Weed made a decision!

“Golden Bird, Silver Bird, and Wyverns.”

Kkiya Aaaah!

Weed followed Golden Bird and Silver Bird on his Wyvern. They gave out a long cry.

“From now on, you search!”

To supervise troublesome work like this, he had to distribute the workload.

"Keep looking until you find him, even if your search leaves you wondering all night long, find him."

At this point he didn’t mind pushing his minions to obtain the results he wanted.

The Wyverns, Golden Bird, and Silver Bird were dispersed throughout the Great Mountain Dekarte. The Golden Bird brought back results within 30 minutes.

He worked a lot more effectively now that he had been beaten.

“The human lives near the big tree.”

“DayCram, right?”

“There are many sculptures in the area. The sculptures are all amazing.”

“That’s right. Let’s go!”

Weed reassembled the Wyverns, and headed towards civilization.

Both hunters and rangers carefully stayed away from Tebkart as it was a very dangerous place.

Due to a lot of monsters and dangerous terrain, the isolated grey mountain range was considered a bad place by users too.

“It’s that house!”

Looking down from the sky, through some trees, he could see the house where DayCram lived.

The house was made from weaving branches together.

The roof was made of dry grass, held together with vines and covered with wide leaves.

It didn’t seem like a house from a fairy tale, but it looked like a thatched cottage.

Weed got down from where the Wyvern had landed and headed for the house.

“Is he still alive? If he’s already dead, then the helium would be mine……”

Hopes for meeting a Sculpture Master!

Since a large amount of time had flowed by on the Versailles Continent, DayCram could be dead.

Like the seven angels he made from mithril, could he not have made a sculpture and passed away.

‘Since there are a lot of monsters on this mountain, it would not be suspicious if he had died.’

Weed went to the house full of hope.

Near the white bearded man’s house, there were sculptures of deer antlers.

As if they were alive, they stood there patiently.

Just by looking at the carving of the elaborate horns, he could feel that they were made with great skills.

The moment he saw DayCram, he knew why he was called that. From the clothes he wore, he looked awfully poor.

‘If I sell the clothes I am wearing, it would certainly help. Even though he would not be able to wear them while was cooking.’

He was wearing such dirty clothes that it would have had an adverse effect on the cooking he did.

DayCram didn’t even look at Weed and started speaking.

“Are you the sculptor that has come to find me?”

Weed politely replied back.

“Even though I am insufficient in a lot of areas, I am a junior engraver walking down the path of a sculptor.

I saw some writings that were left by a senior in Jigolath, and made my way here.

Even though it was a long journey, to see you alive, I am thrilled.”

“I see, I was waiting in this mountain for an engraver to come and learn my skills.

What do you think engraving is all about?”

“Engraving is about……”

He could think of a lot of flattery words about engraving, but had to take his time to rearrange his thoughts.

“It is to show the natural beauty of something.

In fact, there is nothing as beautiful as natural beauty.”

DayCram nodded his head.

“Engraving is a skill to bring out the beauty in the earth, water and wind.

Nature sometimes becomes violent. Even when doing such violent things there is still beauty in it.”

“Of course, I even love those violent behaviors.”

Weed could empathize with those words, had he not been affected by snow storms, volcanic eruptions and earthquakes! If only he wasn’t affected by it, it would have been very beautiful.

“My skills would be able to show the ruthlessness of nature. Even so, do you still want to learn my techniques?”

“Of course, in order to become a better sculptor, I believe your techniques would be required.”

Now He can learn the catastrophic expectations of nature!

A massive attack skill.

But I have to use it first to know how much I can use it!

After leveling the skill a bit, the problem was whether it was to be used on a monster or landscape.

“However, you have yet to see the beauty of nature with your own eyes.”

“Am I still lacking in skill?”

“When you are enlightened of your true strength, only then will you be able to learn my techniques.”

“How am I able to get enlightenment? Please tell me the way.”

“You would have to make a lot of nature sculptures. Would you like to learn my teachings?”

Ttiring!

DayCram’s Teachings

Engraving Master DayCram wants you to build a sculpture of nature with him.

He will help to create a sculpture.

Difficulty: Unknown

Quest limit: Sculptor Only Quest

Compensation: None

Only an idiot would refuse this quest!

Of the four engraving skills passed on, the last one would have to be the best.

Furthermore, while learning shape-shifter sculpture, he learned many other things working next to a master.

“I want to accept the teachings of great master DayCram.”

-You have accepted the quest.

“Let’s start immediately.”

Creating a sculpture of nature was not a tremendously ambitious idea, anything could be used, falling leaves or petals in the wind, anything could be used.

Nature’s own byproducts could be used for the job!

Because nature sculptures can bring the overflowing vitality out, the petals do not dry or rot.

Bees and butterflies flew to the sculpture that Weed and DayCram made.

-Affinity with creating nature sculptures has increased by 2.

It was his first successful attempt.

Far away from the water and on dry land, birds collecting branches to make their nests

-Affinity with creating nature sculptures has increased by 4.

DayCram was really familiar with beasts, He lived together with nature and was very friendly with the wildlife, it was as if the deer came along to eat and play. Weed soon became friendly with the deer as well.

“That looks nice. I think I’ll start with the horns.”

‘It looks delicious. If I sell the horn, I’ll be able to get hundreds of gold!, If only DayCram wasn’t here, then I would have cut off its horns because it would be able to buy meat for the family! If you light a fire, cook it whole with a clear drop of oil and a bit of salt…’

DayCram didn’t eat meat, he lived off fruits that dropped from trees, grass, or tree bark.

“He likes people who don’t hurt nature.”

Even though he didn’t achieve high level cooking skills, like a rabbit, he lived eating grass, and by doing this when he sculptured he was able to be in more affinity with nature.

*

Winter was closing in, and the end of the semester of Korea University was coming to an end.

“Fleeting Tuition, … Like this I’m totally letting you go.”

The students had many reports that they had to turn in as the professors got more and more enthusiastic.

It’s more about the theories of virtual reality in first year, but they have the chance to experience with the virtual reality equipment after they start their second year

‘The more difficult the lectures get, the more time I have to spend in school’

Lee Hyun was unable to achieve his goal to collect money due to his studies interfering ..

“Haaahh…”

Lee Hyun sighed and stretched, Seoyoon who was seated beside him was in deep thought.

‘Winter vacation will start in about two weeks…’

She would not be able to meet Lee Hyun every weekday like now.

Even in Royal Road, they remained apart as Weed went to Great mountain Dekartel

Though Seoyoon had spent a lot of time without words, she wanted to spend more time with Lee Hyun.

She plucked up her courage, and wrote something on a piece of paper.

Would you like to go to the beach with me?

Seoyoon displayed real courage in suggesting that they travel

together considering her situation

If it was another man, they would have made done a happy little dance, and doubted whether it was a dream or not, but Lee Hyun was apathetic

He didn't understand going to the beach in the middle of summer, so there was no way he would understand going in winter

“It's cold so wouldn't staying in home be more comfortable than going to the beach? There’s no need to worry about catching a cold and there’s no need to worry about health insurance”

"....."

The attitude of a man who has no comprehension of romance!

“Traveling takes a lot of money, do you have any idea how harsh it is to go to an overpriced place”

Money. Money. Money. Money.

Traveling will cause him to spend more money

Going to the beach in the summer or not, it still costs money.

However, the idea of Seoyoon traveling by herself was not

allowed by her father.

Seoyoon wrote another message

“I’ll pay for the travel costs.”

Lee Hyun shook his head.

“Did you earn the money yourself?”

Seoyoon was a student, and as far as he knew she never had to work in her life.

-No.

"Money in this world is something terrifying. The costs of movie tickets for the theater rise every year, and public transportation is even scarier."

"....."

"If you have never earned money yourself, then you have no idea what it is worth. Do not carelessly offer money."

Lee Hyun had never voiced it, but he was jealous of them.

Rich college kids!

They were families which he envied.

Lee Hyun spent his childhood delivering newspapers, he worked hard at his part time jobs delivering milk, something rich kids would never experience.

-Mom, please give me some pocket money, last month you only gave me 50 million won.

-I'm putting together a trip to go overseas soon.

-Mom have you forgotten, I want to go to France. Tell your secretary to make it 100 million won. We don’t want to eat only packed dinners after all.

That’s how the conversations worked for the rich in Lee Hyun’s head.

Either the successor of a rich company or the inheritance from a rich family and they never knew the hard work that was involved.

Like that a heroes' personality was that of an ordinary scum, complicated relationships with women, and being poor as well.

Of course, they too were human and must have suffered once or twice.

With bad parental relationships or a couple of wishes that had not come true, different degrees of anguish occur.

But without that anguish, few people would survive in the world

Like a sudden twist in a good daytime drama, the show is then well received by the public.

Eventually the sons and daughters of rich families can never be hated

If you anger the public and swear at them, all you have to do is show them money, and their forgiveness will show.

Until the end of the lecture, Seoyoon was in deep thoughts.

‘Looks like I really don’t know about the value of money’

While Lee Hyun lived diligently, she never seriously thought about it.

Just as Lee Hyun imagined, she had lots of real estates, trust funds, funds, stocks, and many others, therefore she was never inhibited when it came to money.

Seoyoon wrote her thoughts on the piece of paper while reflecting on her actions.

-I will work and earn the money, will you travel together with me then?

Lee Hyun didn't expect this reaction.

'It's winter vacation soon'

Less than three weeks were left till the end of the semester.

"How much will you be able to earn?"

I never tried it so I still.... How much do you think I need to gather?

Seoyoon's eyes were sparkling as she was expecting him to answer.

She did not understand society and being unfamiliar with the world she would receive the bitter taste of the world

Lee Hyun, emphasized on an ordinary travel, and replied

"If we're talking about the sea it will definitely be in the South or Jeju island. In that case transportation will take at least ₩450000 while food should be about ₩800000. Are we gonna stay there?"

Even if they ate sashimi every meal, it was highly unlikely it

would cost ₩800000, regardless Seoyoon nodded. Since they couldn't just spend their time just traveling there and back. She wanted to spend the night talking while drinking wine.

"The hotel room would probably cost us ₩50000000, we'd have to grab two rooms. Also, if we were to eat Cider(Sprite) and eggs on the train as well as get some souvenirs, we would need at least ₩5000000 or ₩6000000.

Lee Hyun suggested an amount that was absolutely unmanageable.

'A part time job over the winter break will not be enough to collect that amount'

Even though the said amount was ridiculous, Seoyoon nodded anyways.

Lee Hyun had said, in order to make a promise. "You have to earn the money by yourself through hard labor, otherwise it doesn't count."

-Alright.

*

Weed spent the last 20 days making nature sculptures in the mountains of Dekarte.

“I’ve spent a long time just focused on sculpting.”

The quest didn’t let him hunt, he could only create sculptures, now he was running short on time.

Alone in this environment he could create many great sculptures, however he couldn’t create classic or masterpiece sculptures without taking his time and working at a relaxed pace.

“A sculpture made of Dew!”

Weed made sculptures early in the morning.

He collected the basic materials needed for the sculpture.

While squatting down he ripped up the grass to collect the dew off of them.

With his ever growing nature affinity, he could make a much wider selection of nature based sculptures.

Weed made a water elemental, this was his first masterpiece made from nature sculpting.

Masterpiece! A water elemental made with Dew

Creation and nature was a means to improve the level of sculptures, so he only collected clear dew.

In the trees and on the ground, mixed with the scent of flowers, he was actively playing with the different methods of creating the water elemental. It was a lively expression and deserved high praise.

Of the sculptures within the Versailles Continent, very few depict nature!

However, because he was an undead sculptor his work suffered and he was going crazy.

Artistic value: 898

Special options: People who see the water elemental made of dew will have their health and mana regeneration increased by 12% for one day.

-Reduces mana needed to summon water elementals.

-Will satisfy your thirst for a long time.

Does not overlap with other sculptures.

Number of Completed Masterpieces: 89

-Sculpting proficiency has increased

-Dexterity proficiency has increased.

-Nature Sculpting proficiency has increased

-Reputation has increased by 263.

-Stamina has increased by 1.

-Intelligence has increased by 1.

-Art has risen by 8.

-Creating a masterpiece has increased your nature affinity by 9. Increasing nature affinity will improve the scope of nature sculptures you can carve.

Due to creating a pure sculpture, the power of undead is purified and reduced by 6.

Weed was committed to working on his sculptures.

He gained proficiency with animals and plants, particularly with the plants.

While in his undead form, he worked hard. As a side effect of being an undead he could work without rest.

However, as good as that was, nature sculptures had purification properties.

“Divine power reduces the power of the undead.”

One good thing was that he didn’t have to give as much money to the Freya Religion’s Pope Candidate Alveron.

“Unfortunately, this sculpture is a masterpiece.”

He had collected Dew to make a water elemental sculpture.

Owing to the natural heat granted by the reflected sunlight, it would soon be ruined and disappear.

But it was too wasteful to leave the Sculpture in its place at Daesan in Tebkart.

There was no raw material cost, but it had been very difficult, collecting the dew had taken a lot of time

”Creating a natural masterpiece for the first time, I’m not able to leave the sculpture.”

Free sculpture!

Weed decided to write on the water elemental sculpture.

By releasing the water elemental, it could be summoned by writing, there will also be an increase in the degree of affinity with nature.

Elementals also help with growth, though currently useless, after a while, by managing a few, one or two could be formed on the ground as food to eat.

Weed uses his skill on the sculpture.

“Create Elemental!”

Ttiring!

New elemental created.

160 art stats are consumed.

-Sculpting proficiency has increased.

-Elemental creation is now at beginner level 6

Elemental creation sculpting will improve the abilities of new and existing elemental abilities.

-Nature affinity increases by 75.

-Reputation has increased by 440.

-Attractiveness has increased by 74

The cute looking water elemental growled loudly

“You are the sculptor who made me! How dare you make me look this weird, are you prepared to die?”

It was the most spoiled sculpture ever created by Weed.

He acted like a little kid, a jigging kindergarten.

“Identify!”

Name has not been given yet

Water Elemental.

He was born as a nature sculpture.

Created with a bad attitude. The water elemental has no patience.

Looking at him from top to bottom he didn't understand.

Can exert 71% of its power from the elemental plane.

It is possible for it to become a greater elemental.

Through the Elemental Shaman's summons and earthly life activities, summons more elementals as well as increase the force exerted.

Specialties: Water shield, providing purified water, has extraordinary intellect.

Creating the elemental itself was successful. He didn't feel that the personality was a big issue.

New born elementals have to learn a lot of things when they first

come to life, simply talking with it a little should win it over.

“I suppose we should talk a little”

The elemental was completely ignoring him!

Weed gently pulled out his Saint Staff.

Peobeobeobeobeobeok!

Painful, fast, and efficient.

Hitting and smacking it over and over again, he lacked any sympathy and continued hitting the same sore spot.

“You’re supposed to say thank you to the person who made you.”

Puck peok peok!

“Apologize for a minute ago……”

Puck peok peok!

“MY HONORABLE MASTER!”

There was a sudden change in the water elemental's attitude.

Weed put the Saint's Staff away in his backpack.

"I will become your teacher so you will have good education."

His personal thoughts were that he was a fine educator!

The water elemental was the unlucky student of Weed's Elementary School.

"Your name is Droplets."

He named the elemental Droplets because it was an elemental made of dew

"Thank you for my name, my honorable master."

A slim and cute water elemental was summoned and tempered by Weed like a blacksmith using a furnace

"I'll need to grant life once more to the Geumini."

He was not confident he would be able to grant him life.

Be that as it may, to keep putting it off was only delaying it. Someday he would have to try.

The sculptures were created at Tebkart in Daisan. In his current situation where his sense of sculpting remained high with water, he decided.

“Let’s go and try now.”

DayCram was going someplace to create nature sculptures.

Weed collected fallen branches to light a fire in the furnace for heat.

The Masterpiece Sculpture Geumini was created from melted gold.

“To make and form…”

The mold of Geumini’s body was simple as it was formed by putting together soil

Art found in the city of Rhodium were detailed memories that remained, but as for Geumini, it was a memory that would last for a long time.

Pouring the gold onto the mold, waiting until it was sufficiently cooled, Weed was impatient to make other sculptures!

Worries often emerged thinking about the operating design of Geumini.

“Geumini does not listen well to words and he is also not that pleasant. Having so much work, how am I going to manage…”

Waiting for gold to pour into the mold took a while.

“It’s done.”

Removing the mold by breaking it out from its place, Geumini’s appearance was formed once again.

Weed’s memory was extremely accurate. Comparing it to the original, he felt that it was a waste that the new Geumini was cracked and a little short, but otherwise it was still the same.

‘It’s fortunate Geumini was created using gold. Granting life to wood or stone, the physical materials would have to be gathered, the hold on the original body would also be very weak.’

Weed’s eyes, nose and mouth were meticulous after the repair skill was cast.

“Grant life to sculpture!”

Stats have been reduced, 2 levels have been lost, and 6 art points have been consumed.

-The Sculpture with life has obtained the use of its body. Due to

the water attributes possessed and found in life, new life will be gained.

Memories of Sculpture skill is invoked.

Sculptures will regain memories of their life, but will be confused.

Again, at that point in time, the increase in Art stat and sculpture effects did not apply. The Sculpture before, would have had a 5% level decrease.

Sculptures that are granted life slowly awaken, but unlike them, Geumini instantly opened its eyes.

When Weed was looking at him, Geumini shook his head and started talking.

Please give me my name.”

A dry and rigid tone!

“In the end you didn’t recover your memories.”

The friendship they had cultivated was over, this was Geumini’s eternal goodbye.

“Rover will grieve a lot. So will Seoyoon.”

Rover treated Geumini like family. Seoyoon would be sad and shed many tears.

Hwaryeong and his other friends will be saddened as well by Geumini’s death.

“Your name is Geumini”

“Yes, master.”

“Sleep comfortably”

“Yes.”

Once again Weed began making nature sculptures.

In the trees far above, Wah-il, Wah-thul and Wah-sam were sitting.

Geumini was diligently trying to shake hands with all of them. They all burst out laughing.

“Golgolgol!”

Weed inquired.

“You are Geumini right?”

Geumini shook hands and bowed respectfully.

“A little while ago I was given that name, master”

“That’s a bit weird.”

Weed was feeling awkward near Geumini.

Chapter 6: A Sculptor Who Wanders The Continent

- Everything's alright now... and Seo Yoon's speech problem is already gone as well...

Seo Yoon decided to get a part time job to save up money.

‘Getting a job isn’t easy...What kind of work can I do?’

Because of her school schedule, the easiest part time job she could get was probably going to be a cashier.

The only problem was that her lonely life made the idea of socializing very difficult.

‘I guess it’s true that people change and work harder because of money’

After the lecture, she wrote her resume and headed towards a restaurant that was hiring part timers.

It was paying 5,300 won with a bonus depending on how much they sold

Seo Yoon held out her resume for the manager.

Name: Seo Yoon Jung

Age: 21

Occupation: Korea University Sophomore

Skills: English, Chinese, Japanese, International Law, Accounting, Business Administration, Psychology.

Never had someone applied to a restaurant with such an impressive resume!

The store manager laughed while asking, “Have you ever worked in the restaurant industry before?”

“I have not. Does this mean I can not work here?”

The manager felt almost 50 years younger as he listened to Seo Yoon’s voice.

‘This world is really nice, isn’t it?’

A pretty female college student with a voice like an angel.

Just her voice could make anyone smile.

“How long do you plan to work here?”

He wanted her to work the entire winter break.

“I have a lot of things to do…but I would like to work evenings during the week?”

Because of the job’s focus on service, a lot of people applied to restaurants which made getting a job very difficult.

But every now and then there was an exception.

“Can you start work today?”

Immediate pass!

Starting immediately Seo Yoon’s job was to greet the guests at the entrance of the restaurant.

“Welcome.”

“Is there a long wait here? Heuk!”

Seo Yoon stepped out of her comfort zone and into a new world.

For a long time, she had closed herself to both curiosity and romance.

“Rib eye steak and sirloin steak please.”

“Would you like anything to drink?”

“Orange juice and soda please.”

The guests dining inside kept glancing at Seo Yoon..

They didn’t even notice the taste of their expensive food.

‘Pretty. Pretty. Pretty. Pretty. Pretty.’

‘Oh, if only she would look over here once…’

==========

"Blazing flames will instantly vanish but the afterglow of the flame will remain. Try making a sculpture of fire"

Following Daycram’s instruction, Weed made fire and smoke appear in the air

"Nature Sculpting!"

The flames danced as he moved his hand.

He was so close to the fire that he was sweating and everytime he got too close his health would fall sharply.

Sculpting the fire with his bare hands was both showy and difficult.

“Still, Nature Sculpting is very versatile.”

Each time he touched the fire, his Nature Sculpting skill rose considerably.

Trusting his Resilience and Perseverance, he made both a fire dragon and a flaming boar.

The effects of fire manipulation varied based on one’s level in Nature Affinity, so to raise the affinity even more, he made a Spirit of Wind as well.

Woosh Woosh!

The Spirit of Wind was cheap to make and had a bright and wandering personality.

Weed kept creating pieces in order to rebuild his lost ‘Art’ stats and raise his skill expertise.

Undead Power has dropped to 190!

“Quest Information Window!”

Barkan’s call

The Lord of the Undead, Barkan, calls.

All undead must follow his orders.

Time Left : 46 days

Difficulty : C

Reward : Will trigger the start of a chain quest

Although there wasn’t a lot of time left, Weed decided to continue focusing on making sculptures out of nature.

Just making a lot of sculptures out of nature wasn’t enough to make the skill ‘Nature Sculpture’ improve though.

Weed was at Debkart mountain which had a lot of trees, birds and blue skies.

In the distance there were also lakes and rivers.

If you go in towards the gray mountain range you can witness the magnitude of the mountain, it was heaven’s natural environment.

"Sculptures made from nature……"

Weed thought back on all the hardships he had endured during his adventure so far.

He had suffered from the cold in the north, ran free as an Orc in the Yurkina Mountains in the east, and had never stayed long in one place.

He didn’t hunt in one place for a long period of time.

Having experienced so many sides of nature helped in creating sculptures.

Water, wind, earth, clouds, ice, fire, grass and flowers.

Grasping at all those memories, he made them each into sculptures.

Plants growing up the side of a boulder could become a nature sculpture.

A strong flow of water through a ravine could also become a sculpture.

While he was mass producing sculptures using the power of nature in the Debkart mountains, Daycram gave a word of advice, “It is not enough to just sculpt the materials, you must carve nature as it is.”

The materials used are not the only thing that matters in a piece of art.

As he made more, he began to see more.

Sculpting was his way of thinking.

Gathering fallen leaves to make a tree, planting trees that were burnt by wildfires.

The more he sculpted nature, the faster his proficiency grew.

Then one day, Daycram motioned to speak with him.

“It seems I have taught you enough of the basics of Nature Sculpting. Sculpting is a way to get in touch with yourself, I can teach you nothing more.”

Ding!

You have completed ‘The Teachings of Daycram’.

Master Daycram has finished educating his junior sculptor.

He accepted an apprentice thinking that he was a exceptional sculptor and taught him everything he could, but he was disappointed.

“The continent’s sculpting is indeed dark. Many talents in sculpting are lost.”

-You have not properly accepted the teachings of Daycram, Fame decreases by 580.

Daycram said a few words during the early stages, but eventually he only watched from the sidelines and didn’t interfere at all.

Allowing students to use their imagination was an important part of teaching!

Weed was familiar enough with cramming education that he could be considered a mentor in the field.

While he was growing closer to nature now, it had never really been a part of his life before.

‘I may still be new to this, but in the future as the skill grows I’ll be able to control the forces of nature!’

Nature Sculpting is currently Intermediate level 2!

For once, Weed respectfully bowed his head.

“I’ve learned many things from my teacher”

Daycram spoke.

"Wherever you go, don't say you learned this from me. It would be shameful."

“I see. So, you'll teach me Disaster Sculpting now?”

"Have you realized nature's true power?"

"I don’t understand it yet. But given more time and I will be able to grasp it."

"This is for you then. Once you have learned nature's true appearance you will be able to learn my techniques."

-You have acquired Daycram's wooden carving.

Having Daycram's wooden carving allows the owner to naturally raise their skill level faster.

"You're a great teacher. I'll remember this forever."

‘I have to be careful with my words so I don’t promise to actually give a reward’

“Will you be traveling around the continent?”

"I must. Since I must walk the path of an artist and save those suffering from the wicked!”

Weed continued hunting and making money as he traveled the Versaille continent.

He thought to himself. Even if in the North, there are a lot of places I haven't been to. I must find dungeons and earn items.

He remembered his last conversation with Daycram.

“While you’re traveling to different places, always remember to advance your Sculpting skills.”

“Of course. I will continue to work hard on Sculpting for the rest of my life. ”

“As you should.”

While Daycram stared blankly at the sky, Weed activated his skill.

“Appraise!”

It’s always important to check even the items people give you in case they aren’t what they seem..

Wooden Sculpture : Durability 1/1

Daycram made this product to teach Disaster Sculpting, but in order to learn one must first know the true power of nature.

Requirement: Intermediate Nature Sculpting Level 6

‘The product contains the techniques of Disaster Sculpting.’

Just as Weed was putting the product away Daycram gave him another gift.

“You should also take this.”

Daycram took out a shining sky-blue mysterious substance.

“As you probably know, this item can only be found in Jigolaths. But, since you need a vast amount of heat and I’m against cutting down trees I’ve never been able to use it.”

Helium!

“How can you give me such a precious item? Daycram-nim could surely make an amazing sculpture with this.”

Weed’s actions contradicted to what he said though, as his hand shot out faster than it did during battle.

-Helium was acquired.

Mana source.

Even talking about Helium is expensive, and I was able to obtain it.

“Be sure to create a good sculpture.”

“I’ll do my best.”

“Then have a safe trip.”

==========

“Here's 340,000 Won. For your week of hard work’.”

While obtaining the normal wage, Seo Yoon was able to get a little more money.

Seo Yoon got a sizable bonus because while she was working during the evening the place was packed, but even though the manager hoped it would encourage her to stay for longer than one week she still quit.

“This is the first time I’ve earned my own money.”

Seo Yoon took out her money from the envelop, and counted each won one at a time.

While brightly welcoming customers, seating them to their table, and telling others to wait for their turn she had learned that you could make money by making people happy.

While working she had seen families, friends, and lovers having loving conversations which lightened her heart.

“Working can be really fun.”

She would even sneak food whenever the staff wasn’t watching.

At first, she had a hard time interacting with other people, but as she kept on working she felt herself change.

“With this money, I can buy all the ingredients.”

Hyun Lee had told her that it takes a long time to get any real money from a part time job so she had decided to try selling packed

lunches.

Seo Yoon woke up early in the morning and went to the market..

“Pretty lady, what can I get you?”

The Ahjussi vendors always gave her plenty of extra meat and vegetables when she bought from them. (T/N: Ahjussi is some older men)

Then she made rice and side dishes. She carefully stuffed the plastic lunchboxes with kong-na-mul guk(T/N: beansprout with dashi soup) inside a thermos.

“Now I have to go earn money.”

Seo Yoon carried the heavy bags with both hands, she traveled by bus and went to a street near many offices.

She was already tired from being up so early, but her thoughts were focused on selling the lunchboxes.

Seo Yoon set up next to a skyrise, she took out the lunchboxes from and stacked them neatly in a pile.

Office Workers drinking their coffee were rushing to work, but stopped once they saw her.

Pretty.

'Ah, such an angel. Why is such a beautiful lady here...'

‘Today’s a lucky day. Even if I get reprimanded by my team leader, I’m sure I can take it. ’

That was only possible reaction after seeing Seo Yoon!

Seo Yoon used to be shy and stiff, she avoided making eye contact.

Subconsciously, she started avoiding people, but her frozen expression had changed after she met Hyun Lee.

The inexplicable feeling that the men felt after seeing her pure facial expression was enough to drive them mad!

The office workers saw the lunchboxes and approached her.

“Are you selling this?”

“Yes.”

Seo Yoon’s short answer mesmerized the 30 year old office worker!

“How much is it?”

“It’s…”

She didn’t know what to say since she hadn’t thought about what price would be enough to make her money.

“I haven’t decided on the price yet.”

“Really? Then, how about 6,000 won?”

Said the man who opened the lunch box. Given how cheap the boxes were to make that price would yield a lot of profit.

“I, I am okay with that.”

“Here, we'll take three.”

The office worker paid 20,000 won and received his 2000 won change.

Other office workers formed a line and bought Seo Yoon's lunchboxes.

The taste of the food was not important. They would have bought them even if the lunchboxes only had soy sauce or red chili paste!

That said, the lunch boxes came with carefully designed side dishes and tasted good too, which made the office workers smile.

“Did you make this all by yourself?”

“Yes.”

“It must be hard making so many lunch boxes…”

Seo Yoon was every man’s dream girl.

Beautiful, kind, has a great cooking skill, and is able to manage her life.

There was nothing more that they could ask for in a woman.

All of them were in awe that they met her this morning.

“This is really tasty. Will you be here tomorrow?”

“Probably.”

The office workers stood around as they ate, even after they finished they didn’t leave.

They didn’t care if they would be late, they just wanted to see a little more of her, which is why they lingered so long.

“I’d like two more boxes please.”

Even office workers who were full from breakfast ordered two more lunch boxes.

‘I’ll eat this for lunch and dinner.’

Even if he didn’t eat his hunger faded after seeing Seo Yoon’s face.

‘I don’t care if I have to pay it for it, as long as I can see her beauty.’

They didn’t care what kind of reprimand they would get when they get to their offices.

They thought that if they had a girlfriend like Seo Yoon, they could handle any kind of harassment at work.

The office workers were reprimanded for an entire week and they still felt happy.

Except there was one small problem that she didn’t know about.

Because the place was a business area with a lot of offices, police officers would pass by too.

“There are a lot of people lining up, someone must be selling something. Come on, let’s drive them out.” (T/N: The police generally just drive out “swindlers” or people who block the flow, so they probably went to drive her out because she was blocking the flow.)

The officers rushed over, but left after eating one lunchbox each.

Another morning Seo Yoon had run out of coins to give as change.

The new customer was in a hurry and started yelling.

"Jeez, how can you be selling here and not have change? I have to eat fast and go back to the office! You aren’t prepared at all. If you really need money go work at a bar instead."

Seo Yoon was surprised by the angry outburst and froze, but the problem was fixed in less than 2 seconds.

In less than two seconds the situation was about to be resolved.

“What’s up with that guy?!”

“Get him out!”

“Can we kill him?”

Before the male customers could rush in, a voice called out.

“Lee Chun, Jin shi”

“Yes?”

The Director and General Manager of the company were both standing in the line.

==========

“Wah-il, let’s go!”

Weed left Debkart mountain on his Wyvern.

"Identify!"

Helium : Durability 3,000/3,000

A metal called the Tear of God.

A source of infinite Holy Power and Mana.

Can be refined into weapons and armor as well as sculptures.

Restrictions : A high level furnace is required to refine.

Requires Advance Sculpting Level 6.

In order to refine into weapons and armor, Advanced Blacksmith level 8 is required.

Because Helium is not a common object, it needs a furnace.

“I guess I’ll use the furnace back at Morata.” Weed said to himself, since it required both a large furnace and careful tempering. (PR/N: Tempering - is a process of heat treating, which is used to increase the toughness of iron-based alloys making it less brittle.)

It needed to be placed in a large furnace with constant high heat, but Helium has similar properties to gold and needs careful tempering.

“I’ll just have to hold onto this for a while.”

Although he had been aiming to get the Helium for a while, his current Sculpting skill was still at Advance level 7.

So he made fire sculptures continuously to raise his Sculpting proficiency.

Soon his Advance Sculpting skill would reach level 8.

Even if the improvement was slow he still decided to wait until he was able to make use of the rare material with his raised skill level.

“Hurry up sculpting skills, I need to learn Disaster Sculpting.”

Weed ignored hunting and exploring and only focused on sculpting.

Nature Sculpting required a long time to learn and it only got more difficult as the levels increased.

‘I can’t delay learning the 5th Sculpting skill any longer.’

“Let’s go to the depths of the Grey Mountains.”

‘Isn't there a saying that even a village dog can learn new tricks after 3 years?’(T/N: Another one of Weed’s sayings.)

This means how important it is to be in a conducive environment.

Weed entered the mountains near the valley to work on his sculpture.

He trained his skill using water and dirt to make sculptures. Nature Sculpting became Intermediate Level 3.

At night, he could hear the monsters' loud noises as they were fighting outside.

There was even harsh winds and it often rained.

When the mountain becomes silent that's when the monsters come out.

"I'm still making sculptures."

He had 43 days left until Barkan's Quest.

Yurin whispered to him while he was sculpting.

- Oppa, What are you doing?

Weed was making a mermaid out of rocks and water.

He had found that making sculptures of things with a high affinity to nature like elves, fairies and mermaids would result in a better sculpture.

Human, Dwarves, and Barbarians races didn't make good

subjects when making nature sculptures. Even if it was made, the end result was not desirable.

-I’m making sculptures. Where are you?

-I’m at Bardem’s mountain

-How did you get there?

-I heard the scenery was good so I came out to paint.

She had been using the Picture Teleportation skill to travel freely across the Versailles Continent.

An idea struck Weed’s head.

'There are plenty of large mountain and lakes in the Versailles Continent. If you could make art in those locations the experience would be way higher.'

Nature Sculpting greatly depended on the environment so it wouldn’t be a bad idea to wander around while sculpting.

Ma-Sen Kingdom's Bardem Mountain.

Overlooking the scenic capital city they could see Novice Castle and wide plains, it was a beautiful place.

With Yurin's help he was able to get there quickly. After Weed arrived he saw many users that came to play.

‘Its bourgeois'

The most active place were still mainly in Rosenheim Kingdom, when compared with Morata’s Players their higher levels were unparalleled.

A third of the players were over Level 200!

There were also many people wearing Level 300 equipment.

“The war never ends.”

“I think they’re trying to end it this time.”

“30,000 soldiers died, there were really that many casualties?”

"They got slaughtered while trapped inside their castle. Their spirit must have been broken. Still a lot of the army is left."

The news of the Central Continent’s war even reached the Bardem mountain.

"Get your portraits drawn. Couples should make fond memories."

Yurin was making money while sketching.

Like the fairy tales drawn in warm and cute colors, she was popular among the Players.

Weed sat down on the ground and made preparations to sculpt. He wore old clothes on purpose so he wouldn’t draw much attention from other users.

‘I’m going to try and make the Novice Castle.’

The mixed water and the dirt became dough in his hands.

He stacked the mud in the form of a mountain and used the dirt to make the large open field.

Novice Castle was made carefully with his hands.

It took four hours but the king's garden, road, market, carriage, and the people were captured with exquisitely accurate detail.

The users who were waiting to be drawn by Yurin and even the tourist started to take interest in Weed's sculpture.

The sculpture’s size was about the size of a queen mattress and it was an exact replica of the Novice Castle's surrounding.

Even the park where they were currently in was included. It even had replicas of Yurin drawing and Weed sculpting.

“Look at that. It’s incredibly well made.”

“I think he’s a Sculptor.”

Sometimes he would grab the shaped mud and use his knife to cut it.

The Players were impressed and surprised at the swift speed.

While watching the mud sculpture on the stone slab, Weed was slightly satisfied.

Unlike sculpting trees he didn't need skills to shave the corner, it was even easier than sculpting with water.

"I think its made pretty similarly. Nature Sculpturing!”

After lightly starting the skill the mountain he had made with stacked mud hardened and even grew small tiny trees on it.

In the plain region wheat fields began to spread.It’s gathering Nature’s power and magically transforming the sculpture!

- Choose a name for your sculpture.

“Bardem Mountains where my sister and I used to play.”

Is “Barden Mountains where my sister and I used to play” correct?

“Yes.”

Ding!

Fine Art! “Bardem Mountains where my sister and I used to play”.

Borrowing from the earth the Sculptor expresses his feelings through the land as a sculpture.

The power of nature is infused in this sculpture.

Artistic Value: 559

Special Options: Looking on “Barden Mountains where my sister and I used to play” grants 11% increased Health and Mana Regeneration.

The force of nature improves nearby elementals.

Plants grow 4% faster.

Increased grain harvest.

Only one sculpture effect can be active at a time.

Current number of Fine pieces completed: 95

Sculpting Skill has improved.

Handicraft has improved to Advanced Level 8. Skills using hand tools improve an additional 8%, this skill affects more skills.

Nature Sculpting has improved.

Fame: +197

Willpower: +3

Art: +7

By creating a Fine Piece Nature Affinity has increased by 8. Nature affinity impacts the impact and scope of nature skills.

Creating a pure sculpture has reduced Undead Power by 4.

Weed's Sculpting Skill was still 17% away from level 8, and his Undead power had dropped to 186.

"Waaaaa!!!"

“A Fine piece like that has never been heard of. What Sculptor can make such a work?”

“It causes plants to grow like magic! That's great!” Players around the area began saying in surprise.

Weed then made a magical backpack to carry around the larger sculptures he created.

“Come on, let's go to the next place.”

Yurin painted herself and Weed on the picture.

“Picture Teleportation!”

The skill made Weed and Yurin slowly disappear from the area like a mirage.

Snake Ravine of the Harpan Kingdom.

Peter Castle of Haven Kingdom.

Loin Plaza of Britten Kingdom.

The Street of Fully Blossomed Flowers of Aidern Kingdom.

Artian Fountain and the surrounding area of Bacuba Kingdom.

The Vanetta region and Spring Palace of the Ritten Kingdom.

The Pyramid of Rosenheim Kingdom.

The Mirror Lake of Brent Kingdom.

Weed put his all into the trip with Yurin and made sculptures everywhere that other players saw.

“What, what is that sculptor doing?”

“I think he just finished his work.”

But as people flocked to Weed and Yurin they would disappear using Picture teleportation.

So people searched on the forums instead.

Title: Today there have been a few appearances of a Sculptor.

I was hunting at the Snake's ravine when I saw one sculptor. He looked like he was playing around with dirt but he was making a sculpture.

Since he was wearing beginner's cloth and making a sculpture, I didn't see it as a big deal and ignored it. However the dirt that was piled up was made into a realistic representation the Snake's ravine.

I think these are really amazing.

But how the hell did he get the water to flow like that? It’s not like any of other fountains.

- Eh, thats nonsense.

- Think you were just dreaming. Wake up now. And go to sleep at night.

Title : I saw sculpting at Snake Ravine as well.

I’m not sure if it was magic, but water was flowing from a mud sculpture.

And the finished piece was a Fine sculpture.

I wanted to have a conversation with him, but he left really quickly……

- Did water really flow from the sculpture? Who is this Sculptor?

-Does Harpan Kingdoms have a player with intermediate level Sculpting?

-Is it the magic of a Sculptor?

- Is that a sculpture that can only be seen when it rains? There is no one who can replicate that, but...

It was a user that had a rare amount of experience that couldn't be found even if you searched the Harpen Kingdom.

Then the info started connecting!

Title : I saw a certain Sculptor at the Bardem mountains in Masen Kingdoms.

I saw him making a sculpture on the spot for the first time, and it was the best.

Trees were growing all over the place.

- If trees were growing, does that mean he used spiritual magic?

- I don’t really know. But the trees were growing so fast that you

could see them grow.

- It’s almost as unbelievable as that story of water flowing.

Title : Is there anyone that could describe the outer appearance of the Sculptor?

I am a player from Bacuba Kingdom.

Did the person that all of you saw have a rather normal face with clothes smeared with grime?

And the Painter that was with him had a large green hat and was really pretty.

- Thats true. I saw them at Snake ravine.

- The Sculptor that came to Masen Kingdom was the same.

- That makes no sense. Harpan Kingdom, Masen Kingdom, Bacuba Kingdom. The distance between all of them are immense.

- Even when using a magicians teleport or gate to it’s full potential, it would still be difficult.

The Sculptor that makes miracles!

Someone posted a video of Weed making a sculpture in the Masen Kingdom with that nickname.

The players from multiple Kingdoms in the Central Continent replied that they saw as well.

Title : The identity of that sculptor is Weed.

I’m a player currently active in the Rosenheim Kingdom.

Everyone should know that Weed came from our Kingdom. And yesterday I saw Weed making a sculpture on top of the pyramid.

I recognized him because I worked on the pyramid as well.

I was really lucky to have returned to Serabourg castle after partying up with dark elves and orcs in the Yurokina Mountains.

Since I’m not a Newbie anymore I am heading to Morata.

Towards the second home, Morata!

- So it was Weed.

- It’s self explanatory since it’s Weed.

- How high is his mastery in Sculpting right now?

- Did he master that skill?

- How could he master the skill when he was adventuring so busily? If he did get the Sculpting mastery he would be the first person to master a Profession Skill.

- Combat skills are difficult to raise, Sculpting would be even harder.

- If he did master the skill it would have been a huge issue and the villagers would have spread it. That really is a huge issue you know?

==========

The fact that he made a sculpture on top of Peter castle reached the Hermes guild too late.

“Weed must have a death wish. He dared to come to Peter Castle?”

Peter Castle was an old castle built on a mountaintop. It was a strategic stronghold, but it was also a beautiful place that was the pride of the Haven Kingdom.

“If we knew earlier, we would have wiped him out with our elite squads!”

The top leaders of the Hermes Guild were upset at this and grinding their teeth.

Their pride took a mighty blow when Drinpelt’s fleet was obliterated near the Jigolaths, and now it took another hit with this.

The Haven Kingdom had been completely conquered and Bard Ray with his considerable strength was promoted to king.

During this time when other users and guilds were on their knees and bowing their heads while all the high level players were getting in, Weed, the enemy of Hermes guild, had made a sculpture at Peter castle and left.

The players couldn't help but stick out their tongue at such a grand action.

Chapter 7: The Grand Cathedral Of Freya

Weed did not just make Nature Sculptures while traveling around the Central Continent.

"Sculptor Weed right? Your works are superb."

"It seems my reputation precedes me. Your Majesty, I've travelled across the High Seas to come meet you."

He energetically visited the residences of the nobles.

Weed was wearing Talrok's armor, his best equipment to raise his Charm and Dignity.

The King of Ritten sat on his throne and asked.

"Lord of the northern lands, famous adventurer, what is the reason for your visit?"

Weed spoke words of flattery respectably while in his best armor.

"As I was travelling around your kingdom, I was deeply impressed by your rule. Your majesty, I had to come visit you to pay my respects."

"Seeing you, I seem to remember all the things I've forgotten till

now."

“I’d like to listen to what’s going on?”

Weed's reputation and dignity stat were really high, making it very easy to meet nobles of a kingdom and even the king.

It was even high enough to be able to receive a King's Quest!

However, when meeting nobility or royalty, he still had to adhere to proper etiquette.

"When I was young, I had a really attractive appearance. Princesses and noble ladies from all around would line up for a chance to dance with me."

However, the reality was that the King of Ritten's looks would now only appeal to female Orcs.

But in the ways of the world, silence is sometimes better than the truth.

And Weed was a person who took pride in living realistically.

"Indeed. Your Majesty has probably stolen the hearts of many young maidens. Now, the noble young ladies of the Kingdom of Ritten must be very unhappy because of you.”

"Adventurer, what do you mean they are unhappy because of me?"

Currently, there was not even one young person of nobility. There were only knights with heavy lips as well as the King and Weed himself.

"Yearning for Your Majesty, they would not be able to sleep soundly at night."

"HAHA!"

The King of Ritten Kingdom laughed out loud. His cheeks jiggled around obscenely.

Weed did not miss a beat and said.

"As expected, your smiling face would charm the people's hearts!"

It was like praising a snake that it had beautiful skin, or telling a frog that it's legs were stunning.

He had the insight and skills to become a superb treacherous servant.

"I'd like you to erect a statue of me in my youth! I'll provide you with anything you need to create this statue."

Ding!

King's Statue

Erect a statue of the King of Ritten Kingdom in his youth, in the royal palace.

Create a statue that would satisfy the king.

Only one of the leading sculptors in the entire continent would be capable of creating a successful piece.

Necessary materials can be found in the royal palace.

Difficulty: Profession Quest

Reward: Emerald, Sapphire, a minimum of 10 or more

Quest Restrictions: Only available to Sculptors.

Thanks to flattery, a sculpture was commissioned.

Weed bowed at the waist at once.

"It would be my honor to carve the likeness of Your Majesty. I hope my work will be able to satisfy."

-Quest Accepted.

In the royal palace, top grade carving stone, snow white in color, was prepared!.

Weed took out Zahab's Sculpting Knife. It would make his work a lot easier.

"The sculpture shouldn't really portray the likeness of the king in his youth."

Looking at the portraits of when he was younger, the King of Ritten Kingdom definitely looked like a baby Orc.

"It is better if I make it handsome instead."

He increased the height slightly, and raised his nose.

To hide the defects he transformed the morbidly obese figure into a sturdy figure.

To harmonize the sculpture he had it wear only a piece of armour and carry a sword.

It had similar characteristics to the King of Ritten, but in truth it was a completely different person!

The difference in the sculpture was even more pronounced than pictures of celebrities. (I think its talking about touched up photos)

Although only 3-4 hours were invested into the sculpture, the result was very good.

Weed increased his sculpting skill and also his nature sculpting skill.

The gathered Nature energy clothed the sculpture. The shiny statue splendidly spun around as it was showered with the energy.

And to top it off, there was the flattery.

"My skill is insufficient, Your Majesty's glory and generous spirit I failed to fully capture. I deserve death!"

Finding defect where there was none, it captivated the heart of the King of Ritten.

"It's fine. In my mind, there is no need for self-reproach. It takes a lot of effort to make something so precious."

The sculpture was made in such haste that it was a waste of materials. In fact, the original form (of the king probably) wasn't good, so even with Weed's skills and extra time, it would have been difficult to have gotten a better result.

“Even Zahab or Daycram would have a hard time with this one.”

The artistic level of the result was not always proportional to the success of the quest.

"The road of an artist is really difficult."

So the quest was completed, but he did not come here simply for the commission.

He came to see the royal art collection on display in the castle.

Long story short, it was a house visit!

Looking at artwork was a fast way to recover Art stats.

Weed and Yurin toured around the castle shamelessly taking advantage of the art.

"Oh, what a wonderful sculpture! To think you have so many great works of art, Your Majesty. This truly symbolizes your power, strength and dignity. By the way, are there any leftovers?"

You have seen the work The Wolves at Dusk by Royal Sculptor Martino.

Art Stat increased by 2.

Sculpting skill increased by 0.1% from appreciating an excellent work of art.

You have seen the painting The Palace In Springtime, by the Royal Painter Perril.

Art stat increased by 3.

Appreciation of the exceptional painting has increased mastery of Painting skill by 3.1%.

While looking at the works he also had a meal and chatted with the knights and the aristocracy.

Users who can meet nobles or the King were few and far between.

It was thus impossible to find information about the king of a kingdom on the Royal Road Information Bulletin or the Dark Gamers' site.

They could learn a lot here about art trends(TN: maybe art styles).

The huge collection of artworks definitely displays the greatness and absolute power of a King.

Weed's reaction when seeing the vast collection of gorgeous and sensual works of art was jaw-dropping amazement.

“You have such a luxury with all this money.”

Intimacy had increased with the king.

The Kingdom had many dynamic and unpretentious Art that were all lined in a row.

“Wrong. It’s Poor!”

He travelled around many kingdoms while sponging off them and viewing their artworks. His art stat was restored to 2089.

If you visited the manors, palaces and religious churches in all the kingdoms on Versailles continent, then you would be able to raise the art stat massively.

However if your familiarity was low then the kings or lords would not let you see the more prominent pieces of artwork in their collection, even if your fame was high.

You might be able to glance at the artwork hanging on the corridors or placed in spacious gardens.

If those lords and nobles do not hold sculpting in high regard

then even high fame is useless.

Weed’s fame was raised primarily through sculpting and adventuring, if the nobles did not care for either, they refused his request for a meeting.

"I'm afraid I have never heard your name in fashionable society."

"You've made a lot of sculptures? I prefer the sword. If you are not a master swordsman then a meeting is impossible.”

"This free city was able to grow greatly thanks to trade. Your prowess as a merchant is sorely lacking."

Unless one was well-known among aristocracy, was a good trader, an expert in the sword, had magical prowess or possessed ability in various other fields, they would not meet the requirements to visit many kings and nobles.

Players were increasing their favors to the feudal lords who were natives to the Haven Kingdom. Of course, this did not matter if you had the same Fame as Weed.

The Castle dominated the Art supplies. Even if you went to visit a warehouse it would all be in vain because the would be sold out.

Only the Kings of Ritten Kingdom, Aidern Kingdom, Rosenheim Kingdom, and Britten Kingdom enjoyed Weed and took out their private art pieces without reserve.

Visiting the Orders of the Continent was even harder, only the Order of Freya, the Order of Lu and 3 other Orders that respected Weed's fight with the Embinyu Church allowed him to visit.

He traveled around the Versailles Continent and experienced scorn towards sculpting from the nobilities.

“Can you make a massive army of monsters retreat with sculpting? Sculpting is only for those who are carefree and bored.”

"You say that you can find beauty from sculptures? Ho ho, there's nothing more beautiful than magic that comes from those who have improved their knowledge and understanding of mana."

In the continent the status of a Sculptor was very low, given that there was no one as proficient, exceptional or famous as Weed. Thus, people’s awareness of sculpting was low and was often ignored.

With the exception of swordsmen and magicians, the recognition of professions changed with the actions of the players.

A baron arrogantly pointed towards a ship and spoke.

"A sculptor? That's nice but I prefer listening to stories of adventure. I have heard rumours that you have had a great adventure in the lands to the north called, Jigolaths! I would really like to listen to the story of what happened there. If you were a

fraud-like painter with paint all over your clothes I would have never met with you!"

Painters were treated as rivals, the only consolation was that both professions were in a similar situation.

"Even so, it's still bearable. Since both Painters and Sculptors are looked down upon equally!"

After creating Nature Sculptures and visiting castles, there were only 24 more hours until the start of Barkan's Quest.

But Weed was able to raise his skill mastery in Nature Sculpting to 89% of Intermediate Level 5.

A little more and he would be able to learn Disaster Sculpting!

Yurin asked.

"Oppa, where are we going now?"

"For now, lets go back to Morata."

Yurin started to paint the Tower of Light.

It was Morata at night time. After painting the tower, she added brilliantly radiating light and then put herself and Weed in the

scene.

"Picture Teleportation!"

Both of them disappeared from the surroundings.

==========

"I'm here to register as a worker."

"Can I just start today?"

Morata's construction site was crowded with people wanting to join in the construction.

500 people, 2,000 people, 7,000 people, 8,000 people, and then 20,000 people.

As time passed more people gathered with interest in the construction like ants gathering around a piece of cake.

"Those who will gather stones get in line!"

"Looking to recruit party members to mine iron ore! Mining skill is an absolute plus."

The building materials piled like a mountain as well.

They mobilized for the quest from the Lord!

To create great buildings Morata's users joined en masse.

Building materials were gathered from nearby mines, mountains and rivers, by fleets of users.

Users swarmed like ants around the Cathedral and Library, while piling up bricks on a pillar.

"At the center of the Cathedral make the chapel, as well as 12 towers."

"Add the building where the school will be."

"Don't forget the accommodation for the Church's Paladins and Priests."

“Shouldn't the chapel be at least 150m high? We also need to place a dome at the top."

"The height should be at least 230m. It makes sense that it's

bigger than the Statue of Freya."

The architects in charge of the design were at the construction site debating amongst themselves.

A staggeringly magnificent Cathedral was being planned to be built in Morata.

The line of people who had gathered building materials from nearby mines and rivers stretched further.

"Kkeungcha!"

“Heoeoeoeoeog!"

The beginners carried stone and lumber with wobbly legs!

So far all of the works Weed was involved in has succeeded. The Great Pyramid and Statue of Freya were visible evidence.

This was a golden opportunity to gain contribution points in Morata, as well as the Church of Freya, that could not be missed.

Raising contribution to a city by aiding in its development can be very useful. You can reduce your taxes, borrow soldiers for expeditions or get a house. You could also get equipment from the Lord's arsenal.

For those beginners who started in Morata, who would stay in the Northern region for a long time, this was an absolutely unmissable opportunity!

Mapan, Irene, and Pale were discussing this topic while watching the scenery of the mountains.

"Indeed it is as we thought."

"Users who started in Morata are going to grow really fast."

"I can't let my guard down."

Surprisingly, Weed did not have to do anything to get users to join. The users joined voluntarily to be exploited by Weed.

Holding on to grand dreams, there were a lot of beginners in Morata.

Even though it was difficult moving the building materials for the beginners, it was done without hesitation.

As society dictated doing well on your first job was of prime importance.

Weed did not force this Quest on them.

After working hard to create great buildings in Morata and helping evolve the city with their own hands, it will be harder to emigrate to other areas.

Weed 더욱 대단해 보일 뿐!

Given the great undertaking, Weed should expect to reap great monetary returns!

"In the whole world, is there as good a man as our lord?"

"Taxes are low, necessary buildings are available, there is good security, and road planning and urban development is going well."

Although no official facts have been released, exaggerated rumours hit the online boards.

"The money that has been invested in Morata exceeds 2 million gold? A substantial amount was from his own pocket, and not from public funds."

"Morata was a completely ruined village. He rescued the residents, and grew it to this degree. Even now he is building great architecture."

There was high praise for Weed among users and residents. He might be the most popular lord on the continent.

They were brainwashed to the degree of praising Weed, even if

Weed were to drag monsters and slaughter them.

"We've rested enough, time to go back."

"Come on, come on! Let's go."

Mapan and Pale, Irene pushed the wagon packed with decorative stone. The remaining colleagues were running up and down the stairs carrying stone to work on the library.

==========

Weed and Yurin arrived at the Tower of Light.

Observing from a high place, Weed realized that there were way more people than when he left for the Debkart mountains. With the news that there was a grand architecture being constructed, there was a massive influx of both Newbies and wanderers from the Central Continent.

"Hmm. Need a change of clothes."

When he sold his work, he deliberately wore the shabby clothes of Newbies.

It was not because there were no special options required to make a sculpture.

“Cause it looks cool!”

Art means hunger.

Some parties from the Central Continent wearing unwashed Newbie clothing had that meaning behind it.

Weed opened his guild chatting window as well as his 'whisper' after changing clothes.

He occasionally opened the chat window in order to obtain information so that he could create sculptures in Morata.

However, it seems that something was up if they did not hear at any gossip at all.

Members of the Wilderness Traveler Guild had socially rich oriented Professions and their Levels were high. The Guild often spoke worthwhile information. There was a lot of talk about the grounds of the Square.

That was also why many Merchants knew about it.

The Merchant Guild contained rumors, market information, and necessary goods needed for adventurers.

"Well, see you later."

Weed separated from Yurin and walked the streets of Morata.

Looking around the square there were players of various levels.

Many of them were looking for members to make hunting parties.

From this sight one could see the future was bright for Morata!

A satisfied smile was beginning to form on Weed's face.

"Get meals free of charge. Our Lord is providing the food. Those who are hungry, come and get it!"

There were hundreds of people standing in line for Morata's Soup Kitchen!

Free meals that people could eat without restriction. A teenage girl was talking to someone who was about to receive food.

"Our lord truly is the greatest."

"Indeed. No where else would anyone give out free meals."

"Also the beef soup being served is so tasty."

"How can there be such delicious food in a soup kitchen? The menu changes daily, even people with levels higher than 300 come to eat here."

Weed's tongue quivered in anger. (TN: I'm not sure how a tongue quivers in anger, I might have translated wrong, or it might be a Korean saying)

He held back a million curses from spewing out of his throat!

As a result of the free meals players would be able to work hard in hunting, which would increase taxes paid.

However, in Weed's mind all of it was at his own expense.

Female Players devour their Mana without regard for budget usage, thereby the hoped to increase their limit by having more side dishes.

"I would like three servings, please!"

"I have to go hunting, so two more bowls please."

“Is this enough?”

Five female users greedily devoured the food without restraint.

Their job was that of a warrior which was physically demanding! The combatant professions must move their body a lot and thus had to eat a lot as well.

Weed felt as if his own flesh being torn every time he saw food disappear into the women's mouth.

"This must be what it feels like when a girl orders steak, drinks and salad on a blind date?”

Just imagining that hell, he felt like suffocating!

The popularity of the soup kitchen was great and people constantly came to dine before heading elsewhere.

Newbie’s were brandishing flimsy swords, not decent against a fight, wore wide brimmed hat with no options, accounted for the vast majority.

When their levels rose, even though some would still return for the soup kitchen, but most of them would have more money and then search for better food.

“Shouldn’t be so stingy over food. How much food is being eaten by people? Soup Kitchen Information Window!"

Lord's Soup Kitchen.

Provides food for free to residents of Morata as well as migrants(players).

Prepares meals for a great number of people every day.

Chefs Employed: 603 people.

Number of Meals prepared daily: 191,800 servings.

Gold consumed in a week:

Chefs' salary - 1,809 gold

Ingredients - 18,794 gold

Effects:

Increases loyalty to the lord.

Instability is reduced.

Birth rate increased to double.

Lowers the price of food.

Improve skills of novice cooks.

In a single month an astronomical sum of more than 80,000 gold was being consumed due to the soup kitchen.

"Keoheuheuheuheug."

Weed could not help but to weep.

When he was still a kid and his parents were still alive, he remembered when the elder kids would bully him and take his candies!

His unusual behaviour attracted the attention from many players who passed by him on the street.

"He must be really moved by the soup kitchen."

"Did that guy come here from another region? When he sees other parts of Morata he will really be pleased. It's a fun and interesting city."

"Doesn't his face resemble the Lord of Morata?"

"It's not at all alike. There’s no way a poor looking man like that would look the same as the god of war Weed."

Weed was seriously considering closing down the soup kitchen.

To be honest, he would rather turned it into a restaurant instead.

However, thinking long term, although the soup kitchen costs a lot in maintenance the benefits are huge.

Morata was becoming a big city. Public security and birth rate will increase as well as promote economic development. The most important advantage is that Weed's reputation as lord will greatly increase.

"In order to reap large profits, now is the time to cultivate."

The residents and the players need to increase a lot.

The technology of the Orc village had no degree of development whatsoever, which was why they partnered with other villages and produced one thousand helpers.

In the shops, limitations to sell stuff were too difficult. Nevertheless, the money of the Orc mountains began to fluctuate. The amount of an object changed at a fearsome pace.

Orc Traders were mostly saying.

"We don't try to sell a 100 gold item. Since we can sell 1,000 1 gold items instead. We'll exchange the ones that were made wrongly, which we think will be about 300."

The Orcs showed no regret in quantity before quality!

Through Weed’s researched information and based on his experience when he changed to Orc Karichwi. In order to foster the economic power that the people could feel most effectively.

"No way would I eat a meal at a soup kitchen for an entire year, around festivals and attractions that you yourself don’t want to attend! "

Morata’s reputation in the Arts was very high, but listening to the Bard and Dancer performing for an entire year was a horrible thing to imagine.

Of course, it wasn’t unusual for some Players to get sick and tired of the act altogether.

Weed went to visit the theater. In order to learn more about Morata, he went to watch a play.

"Culture is valuable. Let's see how mature the level of the performance is."

Weed was interested in work related to instruments such as the harp.

At the place Weed went to watch there were 38 other people

watching; the bards played and dancers danced. It was a musical that combined song and dance!

It was a popular play in Morata called 'Oath of the Wizards'.

The audience filled the seats and watched.

Weed sat watching, focusing on the performance. But then his eyelids started to droop.

"Snore!"

The play ended after 20 minutes.

You have seen the play 'Oath of the Wizards'.

Strength is reduced by 3%.

Agility is reduced by 4%.

The recovery rate of stamina is lowered, maximum reduced.

11% increase in wisdom.

Knowledge will increase by 6%.

The recovery rate of mana is increased temporarily.

Duration of effect is 3 days after watching the play.

Does not overlap with other performances or dance.

The vast majority of the audience were Wizards, Summoners and Elementalists.

After the performance the actors came out onto the stage to greet the audience and were met with thunderous applause.

Then, each made their own way to the exit.

"Now, where are you going to hunt?"

"A dungeon next to the river. And you?"

"Its pretty far from Morata. Its called the Tomb of Mainz... Monsters level is quite high. Although it's difficult, the party is quite capable. Its a worthwhile hunt."

After watching the show, the people returned to their parties as they had predetermined beforehand.

Warriors and Knights also viewed plays associated with their professions.

'The boy who challenged the tower of Warriors.'

'The dragon's assault'.

The first attempt at creating a performance by a bard or dancer will not be perfect.

Countless performances were being attempted based on empty conjectures, creating many terrible works.

However, despite the challenges, gems were being unearthed in the process of creation.

Out of all the attempts 99% resulted in failure, and only 1% resulted in success.

Jjakjjakjjak! (TN: sound of clapping I think)

Weed also applauded.

"It was a really great show." (TN: LoL, even though he fell asleep)

He came out of the theater, and as he roamed around Morata he could see people performing.

Bards were playing musical instruments and onlookers paid

money in coins.

Although the sum of money was not large, their levels increased and they were happy to perform on the street, and so continued playing.

Everywhere in Morata this sight could be seen.

"What a great profession!"

Weed thought that the job had good points.

The only cost of materials was the instrument which was a rare expenditure, and there were no disputes caused by haggling with customers.

Above all, the greatest advantage was that the money received was classified as donations and thus were not taxable.

Now, even in the dungeons with the party members they continue to play and raised their skills proficiency, there was no better Professions for those who have a cheerful personality.

Hwaryeong’s role always created a lively atmosphere when it came to a hunting party.

Bathed with the Dancer’s Charm, the hunting Knights sometimes gains indomitable Strength when they exert their attacks. When

Weed was going on a hunt, his other party members were not directly combat-based Professions, such as women like Surka but Hwaryeong had experience.

Immersed in music or dance, but it was still in a dangerous situation. Surrounded by monsters, anything could occur. The Bard played songs that were pleasant and even made these moments of such annihilation enjoyable.

"There are many sculptures and paintings as well..."

You could see a lot of sculptures in every store.

If you can't afford a house in the suburbs, you worked to make decorations or gifts, Sculptors and Painters had increased their source of revenue. Morata’s cultural investment cost

was related to the amount being spent and increased their salary and levels brought about by the many side Quests created.

In fact, Art in the city of Rhodium had always been the representative of the Versailles Continent.

For people dreaming to become artists, Rhodium was the first place to go, and due to that it became completely filled with only artists. Eventually the ratio was ruined and the opportunity for jobs decreased.

However the amount of opportunities for artists in Morata were wider.

Artists of Morata preferred to grow their skills in Morata, before leaving to travel the Versailles continent to grow their skills further, as Weed did.

Even if it was dangerous, artists must travel in order to learn more about the world.

Weed had thought about this as well.

"One to two amazing works would be nice. Even when it is very steady progress a

Magnum Opus would be worthwhile, albeit made with continued support. "

There were many things about Royal Road that were not disclosed, part of that was the Culture stat. A place where the Lord was a Sculptor, Bard's with high Art were entertaining boldy increasing Morata’s Culture, making his investment worthwhile before he went to the High Seas.

He had thought it was just a waste of money, but in the last war residents and soldiers from other regions had forsaken their villages for Morata, so culture had a great impact on local politics.

It even helped in public security and economic development, either directly or indirectly.

If culture was not developed, burglaries would increase and risk

of rebellion would go up.

"Construction work is also steadily progressing well."

The Cathedral and the Great Library that were being built in the Tower of Light Square and Bingryong Square, had the basic framework laid down.

"Wowaaah!"

"Bring more bricks, as soon as possible."

The sounds of thousand of people diligently at work in construction could be heard.

The construction was done in accordance with the form of three-storey house built in the size of the model.

Merchants were leading ox-pulled carts filled with materials necessary for the construction.

Morata's sculptors and painters also mobilized.

Working on the cathedral meant honouring the prestigious gods, which can increase fame and faith.

Working on the cathedral was a great challenge for the artists.

"There are no decorations here."

"The walls? And the ceiling? What colour should go where?"

"The ceiling should have a painting, or a sculpture? A painting should be better, right? For the ceiling, at least 3 skilled painters should be assigned in order to create the best work.

In the construction of the cathedral more than 100 outstanding sculptors and painters were working on both the internal and external parts of the building.

From the columns to the floor, working everywhere, the task of decorating progressed really quickly.

For the construction of the cathedral the cost of materials and labour had already exceeded the already reasonable budget.

Clerics and Paladins paid money into the project and were doing further fund raising.

"If the cathedral is completed Morata is really going to be a great place to live. Nowhere in the central continent does the lord invest selflessly like this."

"Whenever someone gets a good quest, would they want to live by making offerings to the ruling guild? The lord lets us participate

in the development plan."

Cases where the loyalty to the lord was so high that they would actively cooperate in the development plan was really rare.

Broadcasters came to report on the development of the cathedral that was being built by users.

"The settlement started only 6 months ago in real time. At first there was a lack of a lot of buildings and things weren't easy. However now things are different, many of the necessary buildings are available. Also the ones that are not available are quickly being built."

"When I started playing Royal Road, I chose Morata. Then listening to the stories about how the other cities were thriving, I was envious. But now I do not regret it one bit."

"Morata's Players will improve more. In each hunting area in Central Continent there is a lot of competition, but here there's exploration and competitive Quests. Although, hunting is a lot more dangerous. The danger is real. But I prefer to live a risky life with my fellow residents. "

"Why stay here and not go somewhere else? Because Morata is a lot of fun."

Morata established itself at a fearsome pace as a center of trade within the northern continent.

Users attributed this accomplishment to the leadership of the lord.

Being the Ruler of Morata, Players had the upmost respect for Weed.

Weed did not use city funds for personal reasons or try to create a slush fund to accumulate wealth.

"Every profession can realize their potential; technology, commerce, and art and culture has blossomed because the people's taxes has been correctly invested."

Users were growing in full swing, buildings were being built, and economic power had increased, thus tax income was also going up. In conclusion, this was the dream of the vicious lord!

However, there were also other Players who pointed their fingers and cited out the leadership problems of the Lord.

The cathedral was the culmination of the efforts of the Architects, Sculptors and Painters.

The chapel’s ceilings and walls had huge windows. It was difficult to find the mysterious and solemn atmosphere with the dark coated glass, which was why they asked to install stained glass.

As Painter’s painted the stained glass turning into the downward the passage of light which symbolized the divine power, the Charm of the picture displayed the combination of Architecture and Art.

Inside, the stairs were decorated with absolutely wonderful carvings and artwork.

Although the ability of the Sculptors, Painters, and Architects involved were not the best, everyone was going to give their best effort.

Chapter 8: Rejecting Destiny

The Geomchi had no choice but to give up on the hunt. The Kraken swam the wide open sea so, lest for a designated time, it was difficult to find.

Only if you had excellent sailing skills you could pursue and catch marine organisms like the Kraken, but trying to catch a Kraken with a boat would take too much time. (T/N: Sea of Life - Name of their ship.)

"Let's just go to Morata."

The Geomchi, holding in their hunger, went to the harbour of Bellona Island, looking for a ship that was heading for Morata.

All of the sailors he met shook their heads.

"I will not go as far as Morata."

"I'll pay twice as much."

"During this time the sea is very dangerous. There are high waves and violent winds blowing around. The access route just north of the continent is blocked by storms as well."

There was also another route from the sea, but a lot of things

were depending on the season the boats route to Morata from the Central Continent would be blocked.

If you met a skilled captain even sailing through storms wouldn't be a problem.

The only problem was that, there weren't that many good captains, and the chance of them sticking around drinking alcohol and taking a break on an island was low.

A player who was a sailor said that if they wait about a week, a luxury cruiser from the Kingdoms would come.

He also told them that they could go to Morata by passing by 3 kingdoms on the cruise.

More than 400 of the Geomchi found themselves stuck on the harbour.

In order to depart they sold all the small boats that they had.

Waiting for the cruiser would be faster than buying another ship and sailing.

Then one day, Geomchi 405 spoke.

"Though the waves are strong...I think it would be fun to swim, Sahyung!"

Geomchi 405 spoke thoughtlessly due to wanting to play around and swim in the sea on a stormy day.

However, the eyes of the instructors had changed.

“Indeed, sounds like fun.”

“It sure does Sahyung. Instead of talking here, let’s go swim.”

“The reason we came here was to ea…. no, to challenge ourselves against everything, wasn’t it?”

All the while, when fighting monsters in Royal Road the Geomchi had also further improved their sword skills.

Tension, which was hard to experience in real life, Life and death struggles and in spars, reminding of actual battle.

Although it was different from reality, it was possible to find the parts where you were lacking.

The Geomchi, rather than solving Quests requiring to solve mysteries, prefered simple battle so they had been fighting constantly.

In order to strengthen willpower, extreme conditions that were challenging were necessary.

Examining the gathered practitioners, Geomchi spoke.

“Let’s swim to Morata!”

If there was a sailor there, they would have tried to stop them at any costs, even by giving them free sushi.

If anyone had even the slightest information about the sea, they would haven’t done such a reckless act.

Even haenyeo (T/N: Korean traditional divers; generally women, and they are known for being able to dive for extended periods of time as well as being extremely proficient at swimming in general) wouldn’t do such a thing.

“Since the weather’s hot as well, should we do that?”

“Master, that’s a brilliant plan.”

“Let’s hurry over to Morata and have some beer and a roast boar.”

The trainees enthusiastically agreed and joined in.

And then without any other preparations, they jumped into the sea, even when it was pouring.

The people in the harbor could not help but to be awed.

“To do something that crazy, that doesn’t make any sense.”

“Wow, are they really going?”

They saw something which they would never forget.

The first night of the swim towards Morata was easy enough.

It was all due to Geomch i3 and the Priests, as well as the monstrous vitality that the trainees had.

“It’s nice and cool.”

“We should have done this earlier.”

However, the next night, the Priests could no longer keep up with the Geomchi’s Vitality and could no longer send out their support.

At least they got used to and a lot of sailing and swimming in the water of the High Seas.

While swimming, do not go against the flow of the wave and match your breathing with it.

The leading Geomchi had a contest, Geomchi 3 and Geomchi 5 were like fishes

and went together.

When you swim for a long time, your strength and concentration easily deteriorate.

The slightest slip in this deep ocean could turn to a disastrous mistake and lead to drinking seawater and then drowning.

The Geomchis prevented themselves from dying by performing a group dog paddle.

Even the seagulls in the sky could not help but look over the Geomchis as Geomchi 2 ordered the 503 similarly named Humans doing a dog paddle!

‘Fresh fish? I gotta grab it and eat it, shouldn’t I?’

Monster birds hesitated attacking them time and again. Rain suddenly fell from the sky.

The Wind grew stronger and the birds became terrified of the huge waves.

-Vitality has decreased by 15%.

-Body movements are slower due to cold waters.

-You are under attacked by carnivorous fish.

-You are being swept away by waves.

The neverending stream of warnings were a given!

Even though they gained a lot of Vitality from passing extreme martial arts quests, crossing the sea was impossible.

The Geomchi were not exactly in decent condition when they were attacked, despite being tired and exhausted they had to deal with the attacks of the man-eating sharks.

From a distance, pointed shark fins were approaching atop the waves.

Ttudung.... ttudung... ttudung... ttudung.. ttudung. ttudung! (TN: jaws anyone)

It was a scene that could have been taken straight from a horror movie.

Geomchi 3 started to feel ecstatic watching the sharks approach.

“Hey guys, I’ve found something delicious!”

The best dishes could be made from shark fins.

They had heard of this through word of mouth, but never had a chance to taste it.

But were not the shark fins now coming to them?

“Attack!”

“Let’s pick them clean!”

The extraordinary act of humans attacking sharks for food started and 15 practitioners died in the process.

If they were attacked on land it would have been easy to hunt the sharks but because of the rolling waves it was difficult to control your body in the sea so they took damage.

"You rascals, you'll be eaten for sure."

"I agree, the punishment is death."

They landed on a nearby island and made shark barbecue, and continued moving forward when the dead practitioners revived and rejoined.

Hunger was satiated by catching fish, and they gathered fresh water when it rained on the sea to relieve thirst.

Indeed, it was swimming under extreme hardship.

Various sea creatures came at them, pushing them to the brink.

Most of the Geomchi exceeded Level 300. Four to five times they came close to death, but still welcomed the challenge!

So far they were not even half way to the northern continent where Morata was situated.

At this point, it would have been normal to hear someone say to go to the nearest continent or island to ask for help, but they weren't just anyone, they were the Geomchis.

With their strength, they would choose hard and dangerous quests to improve themselves.

"Isn't it fun?"

"It's fun!"

"This is how you should be risking your life."

"Let's go to our destination without stopping!"

While they were swimming along the vast open sea they came across something.

Far away, they could see a trading ship and approached it.

"Look! Its a shipwreck, let's go inside!"

The captain and his crew quickly threw a rope to save the victims.

Geomchi 317 yelled out loud.

“This place is... gurgle gurgle, don’t worry us go on ahead guys.”

“I think you are mistaken, we are not pirates. We will take you to land so get on board.”

The captain was actually a merchant. Trying to save what he thought were victims of the sea, the sea merchant acted out of the goodness of his heart!

“We are just... blub blub enjoying swimming”

“Just what are you saying. I don’t even see another boat around here.”

The place where the trade ship met the Geomchi was actually the heart of the ocean.

“Where is your destination that you are trying to swim to?”

“Mo… rata.”

Since Geomchi 417 was talking while continuously swimming, he ended up drinking quite a bit of sea water.

Though this was a mistake that he wouldn’t have made in the past, it caused his Vitality to drop to the point where he couldn’t swim well anymore, all he could do was flail his arms and leg around.

“What, Morata? Isn’t that the northern part of the continent?

The captain had an expression like an Orc had just hit his forehead with a glaive.

“Are theywe really going to Morata?”

“Where exactly did you start swimming from? There was even a wild storm two days ago.”

“Yo, there are no harbors nearby, let alone a place to have started swimming from… not to mention there’s not even any harbors until you get to Morata from here.”

The sword practitioners were rambling amongst themselves.

Difficult to believe that the captain of the merchant who is leading the boat for a few hours saw them.

But they really were endlessly swimming towards the direction of Morata.

He was surprised by their enormous vitality and again when he noticed some of the practitioners were unable to endure it any longer and sunk into the sea.

'If they have that much vitality then they should be very high leveled warriors....'

As a merchant, his insight on things were on another level.

Even though the Geomchii's were quite a high level, despite wearing light armor and leather, some of them were capable to wear lvl 340 Equipment.

For these high level players to attempt to swim across the continent!

Warriors gain fame and stats from hunting difficult monsters.

But those stats could be lost if they died needlessly, this was truly

a difficult adventure to take on.

It was common knowledge among the Royal Road Players, even if the person was uninterested they would still know that Stats and Skill proficiencies were important in the game.

The men in the High Seas were the same, even if the sea had large flesh eating monsters they still raised their proficiencies.

The captain was envious and breathed a heavy sigh.

“These are truly happy men.”

During the weekday, he would accumulate considerably large amount of stress when he was working the company.

But sailing in Royal Road and looking for fun and trading goods, and now seeing the Geomchis he felt himself humbled.

"I think I was too comfortable."

The Trader’s cabin which served as a warehouse had a lot of high priced glass and precious metals. Throughout the Versailles continent he was included in the top 300 merchants. Traders were more or less similar to the Warrior class but leveled up by Trading.

The logbook in the High Seas was an opportunity to look back at yourself in the future.

“After we finish this trade, let’s get a new boat and crew and depart to that place!”

He pulled out the ocean map he received before. The probability that they could swim out of the sea was paper-thin, but their determination was very high.

In addition they were headed towards the place where there were pirates, uninhabited islands, or other places that no one had ever returned from.

The Captain decided then that he would embark on his own heart-racing adventure.

If the Captain saw how the Geomchi would occasionally drown in the ocean or get eaten by sea monsters, he might have realized how extremely they were adventuring and how much they were risking to do so.

And if he only knew the truth that the Geomchi had started swimming from Bellona Island on the inner Neria Sea, passing the Ocean Gateway to get all the way here.

No, perhaps he didn’t even need to have heard their stories or realized how far they’ve come. If the Captain were only a little more manly and brave, he would have stripped on the spot and started swimming with the Geomchi.

==========

Weed took a corner in the Square of Light and was focused.

The sculptures of Nature drew a lot of attention to the female players. Clouds, wind, and dirt turned into a magnificent landscape.

“Just because it’s big doesn’t mean it’s a Nature Sculpture.”

It was no surprise that the whole Versailles Continent was talking about the Nature Sculptures that Weed had been creating on top of mountain peaks all over the continent. Broadcasters were getting reports from witnesses, and there was still much debate about what actually happened on the High Seas.

Now, the Trade classes were breaking new grounds. It wasn’t only the Blacksmiths who were doing well in the bracket, there were Tailors and most especially Sculptors.

What people thought of these classes was quickly changing.

Weed’s Nature Sculptures were made to show the leaves that fall in autumn and go through all the extreme seasons until it sprouts again in spring.

That made their appearance grand. Even if artificially, but for true beauty, the sky's the limit.

"I'm going to continue making these small little things. This is what I get for the sake of Fame, stats, and skill proficiency. Because small things are where big things come from. "

Weed sat down and rationalized with himself. Something was off about this mission.

He got stuck in the mood.

"A saying about money goes, that even bullies are abused by bad people when they have loads of money... I just want to make something, but not too perfect that it'll attract too much attention."

It was great working mainly on scenic places with his sister, whom he had not traveled with in a while. A younger sister was always a great company to her brother, he planned on giving Yurin some equipment that best fitted her.

"This is expensive. Give me more of a discount."

Weed used his high Fame to pressure the store owner.

"If I do that, I won't be able to make a profit..."

“Selling isn’t something you do for money. It’s for the people! And it is done to gain virtue.”

“Hmm, since these are words from a very famous adventurer, I will do as you say.”

Hunting and Adventuring were simple, unlike purchasing clothing or armor at the store, things were not as direct.

His sister painted brighter pictures as they traveled around, she had the appearance of a relieved and smiling child.

‘She grew up well, even if I have not been able to take care of her properly.’

Without parents, Weed had to take on their role.

Ever since she was younger she acted properly, but he was always suspicious of outsiders. Yurin had a good smile and had always been popular.

Weed recalled telling bedtime stories to Yurin.

Fairytales occupied a very important part in building emotional young children!

Today I will tell you the story of the “Three Little Pigs”.

The three little pigs who left their parents built houses for themselves.

The first pig built one out of straw, the second pig built one out of wood and the last pig built his house with sturdy bricks.

But then, a wolf invaded them.

The house made of straw was blown down by blowing through his nose, the wooden house was hit until it broke.

In the end, the three little pigs were able to chase the wolf away by living in the third pig's house made of bricks.

Do you know the lesson of this story?

In Weed's memories, his little sister said with bright eyes.

"That you have to make a sturdy house, brother?"

Weed firmly shook his head.

"This is just a children's story. There is no lesson. The real estate is all about the location!"

"Aha."

“Ohhh.”

“Tomorrow I will tell you about the story of “Hongbu and Nolbu”(Korean fairy tale). It’s a story about the hard-working Nolbu getting tricked by his brother, Hongbu.”

She was home schooled, thanks to Weed’s situation!

Weed was also concerned of all the people who were constantly watching Yurin and he couldn’t have any peace of mind.

"It’s time to make a Nature Sculpture in the city."

The original plan was to leave a masterpiece in the northern continent, outside of Morata.

There were many dangerous monsters haunting the untouched areas and no man dared to go beyond them.

While Weed explored areas like Debkart Mountain making Nature Sculptures, he tried to level up his Disaster Sculpting.

The worst natural disaster situation will emerge!

“To Do: Learn the skill quickly, sweep away the debris, cook a meal.”

“Gotta level up my skills quickly so I can blow everything up together.”

Forest fire, flood, lightning, earthquakes, tsunamis, volcanic eruptions, storms of ice and snow.

There were many choices for the Disaster Sculpting to increase its experience.

“A mixture of all to make the best sculpture.”

But looking back on Morata his mind changed a little.

“Do I really have to go to a place without people to make a Nature Sculpture?”

There were a lot of trees on the streets of Morata. Weed had planted fruit trees.

But aside from such trees, between the flowers and a squared-off Stone Road, grass

were growing.

“People pass by them without noticing, but every single blade of grass can be considered a Nature Sculpture.”

Weed secured about 20 meters of space in the corner of Square of Light.

Since Square of Light was a newly created place, as well as the fact that there were many people working on construction of the cathedral, there were many Players that would come through this area.

But there were a lot of who set up shop traders because of the large crowd that gathered around the fountain. There was a corner seat with wide enough free space.

In fact, Players have been gathered in the square. There were several reasons for this.

For one thing, because players reorganized their items here and setting up a shop was easy, it provided a big advantage

Not only that, but, since back in their Newbie days of hunting around the castle. Everyone had a habit of filling the water from the fountain in the square.

No wonder people rushed around the fountain, and thanks to that commercial establishments have been formed.

Weed was working in his corner draped in black clothing creating flowers and grass from dirt.

Weed's Undead Strength was slowly decreasing, when there was 3 days till the quest had to be fulfilled, the stat dropped below 140.

The sculptures Weed had been making till this point had gradually decreased his Undead stat neatly.

It was a refreshing feeling like going to the bathhouse on a holiday.

This was a feat he accomplished by making Nature Sculptures and sculptures related to nature for over 100 days.

“It is finally time to finish this sculpture.”

With only one day left for Balkan’s Quest, Weed put the finishing touches on the sculpture.

Even though Weed could’ve leisurely cancelled the quest, he was curious to see what kind of quest it would result in.

Since Weed was making every blade of grass and flower one by one, the sculpture wasn’t as large as other pieces he created.

If one were to come close and gander at the sculpture, they would be surprised by how realistic the sculpture looked, however he borrowed a carriage from Mapan and used it like a fence, preventing people from seeing.

It was thanks to the hustle and bustle from the construction and trading going on in the area that he was able to finish without being disturbed.

“With this, it is done.”

Weed made the last flower with dirt.

- Please set the Name of the made sculpture.

This sculpture was a compilation of all the flowers that Weed saw as he traveled all over Versailles Continent with his little sister.

Since it was a sculpture of wildly growing flowers and grass, it reminded him of when he was putting the eyes on the doll.

But since he had just completed a totally different sculpture, he didn’t want to leave any evidence of how much he had struggled to make it.

“A flower bed I made goofing around? No. For some reason, I feel like I’ll get flamed by people saying I named it poorly after having worked so hard on it. How about just, The Square’s Flower Bed? It doesn’t really stand out.”

After working so hard on it he gave it such a bad name, this was Weed’s specialty!

It was without a doubt that there would be tons of people looking at the sculpture since it was next to the cathedral being built in Light Square.

Though there was no way to know how the sculpture would turn out, Weed felt like it wouldn't be bad.

Among the wildflowers and grass were butterflies and bees, there were even carvings of birds as well.

Butterflies fluttering in the flowerbed, bees gathering honey, birds building nests in bushes.

Someday, he'll plant trees in the area and create and nice, peaceful forest.

"I'm definitely going to plant fruit trees but... anyways I'll name this Nature Sculpture 'A Simple Flowerbed'.

-Are you sure about A Simple Flowerbed?

"Yes"

Being Morata's Lord, he wanted to show off to his citizens that this degree of work wasn't even that hard.

Kind of like when a friend asks how much you make and you say 'Oh it's not much' and then tell him the amount before taxes and social security is taken out.

Ding!

Masterpiece! A Simple Flowerbed.

A garden where flowers are blooming.

This is a sculpture showing overgrown brush and wildflowers.

Even though it is disorderly, it is overflowing with life.

The books stated that there were little of this rare flowers left. It strengthen its population even if they are sculptures.

Each one expresses the beauty of flowers in full bloom at the hands of the Sculptor.

A work of flowers worthy of being recorded in history.

The strength of Nature Sculpting dwells in it.

Art Value: 3871

Option: Having viewed A Simple Flowerbed, Health and Mana regeneration increased by 23% for one day.

Maximum Health is increased by 37%

Having appreciated this sculpture, Herbalism skill gains proficiency faster.

Farmers and gardeners skill level effectiveness increase by 3%.

The growth also triggered Plant Monsters in the area. Plant Monsters are born.

Mainly forests grow from them, and it is pretty likely to have high agro tendencies to human beings.

This field will blossom with alpine tea.

Seasonal festivals may occur, in accordance with the tourism and agricultural harvests.

Other Sculpture effects do not stack.

So far, the number of completed Masterpiece: 15

-Sculpting Skill proficiency has improved.

-Handicraft Skill proficiency has improved.

- Skill Level of Understanding Sculptures has increased by 1.

-Fame has risen by 625.

-Art has increased by 12.

-Vitality has increased by 4.

-Health has increased by 380.

-Perseverance has increased by 3.

-Endurance has increased by 3.

-For making a Masterpiece sculpture Sculpting Mastery has increased by 1.

-Nature Sculpting has increased to Intermediate Level 6

-You have learned the skill Disaster Sculpting.

-Sculpting the Last of Divination with a radiant beauty, a related Quest has been created.

Sculpting the glory of the earth, the Quest will begin to keep a dialogue with the people there.

The chain Quest gets exceedingly difficult as you go higher. In order not to fail, It is recommended to increase your Sculpting skills.

Sculpted the Last of Divination!

Sculpting Blade, Sculpture Life Bestowal, Sculpture Form Shapeshifting, Elemental Creation Sculpting, Disaster Sculpting!

"One by one, until eventually I'll complete the whole set."

The Last Divination.

This felt similar to when he was younger and sold newspaper all through autumn, and saved up his money to have a full piggy bank!

Of course I'll get it in case you can not be free, and it will need a lot of preparation.

"Quest Received: but it will fail if not completed within a year..."

It was a similar situation when the shopping district received new shipments and he had to part with his piggy bank's content in Dongmeng(T/N: Korean shopping district).

"Huck keoheok heoheo!"

Weed's image was disturbing to watch.

In many ways his eccentric personality now was a reflection of his childhood days when only pure water was clear.

Back then it was difficult to eat Korean pork cutlet and even harder to find a peace of mind.

"Anyway, soon my skill will be Advance Sculpting Level 8."

Currently the skill was at Advance Sculpting Level 7 at 99.3% with only a 0.7%

short.

Completed the sculpture with sprouts, flowers and grass. There were animation facets on stone, soil and water.

Gently swayed by the wind, the leaves turned green and the rich aroma scattered everywhere.

The sculptures of butterflies and bees attracted the real butterflies, bees and other flying insects that take the nectar and pollinate.

Weed’s creation changed the scenery from the old days when compared with different species of flowers and grass.

But the countless flowers and roots between the soil near the fence, spread some more, as soon they grew stems.

Charming and pretty flower buds burst.

The number of colorful places in Morata covered with flowers expanded!

Petals flew from the Square of Light and drifted away into the deserted cities.

The Library, Mercenary Guild, Market were near the frames of the unfinished Cathedral. There, the gathered Merchants and other Players saw the petals drifting in the wind.

Ding!

Wildflower festival has started.

Wildflowers signaled that spring is here, for friend or foe.

The Fields and hills of the northern Versailles Continent are filled with blooming flowers, even near the river. Residents in love chose this place to confess.

During the festival, the residents' happiness is increased.

Increase of Vitality restoration.

Increase of Fame in the area of Morata.

Increase visitors to promote the development of the tourism industry.

Honey production increased by 800 %.

It is a time where either friend or foe happily spend time in one place with their peers.

“This is good. The flowers are beautiful and they smell amazing too…”

Their courage was increased by the flowers. Regardless of how high the Player’s level was, they remained newbies in their heart.

They even used Charm accessories that had precious stones!

Weed’s Wildflower Festival was unintentional.

“Flowers are really useless. I really don’t understand the people who buy them and then just give them out. Be it for graduation, entrance ceremony, or any occasion where flowers are present. Later, everything comes in vain when they’re placed in the garbage bag. Their value is gone.”

Weed’s mind was more parched than a dessert where even a cactus cannot survive.

The festival was unexpected, but he thought that one time would be alright. He remembered the time from long ago when Yurin watched a flower garden. This would be even better as the flowers spread throughout the land.

"Well, not bad, the group will not. It spreads out naturally, and there is no cost to maintain the flowers in Morata. Because if it's not this it also will be fine if the residents are happy. "

The place where the sculptures of butterflies and bees were became a drop off point.

He knew that it was only a matter of time before the Players made something like this.

Weed found an open spot near the butterfly and bees sculpture, so he could greet the incoming Players.

==========

The Quest of Balkan's Call was about to start.

Weed’s sculptures were left in Morata.

Exactly at midnight, pictures of the Immortal Legion and related

images began to appear in his eyes

The cold fog blocked the damp valleys with running water.

Old trees have been grown spontaneously and broke the dark and damp places.

There was sparse sunlight and they barely heard any sound.

Deolgeuleog Deolgeuleog. (T/N: Rattling/clattering noise)

There were Burning Skeleton troops that came up from the valley below.

They cared for nothing and rapidly encroached over the valley, the wide fields, and went through the forest.

A staggering number of Burning Skeletons formed ranks and marched.

Unbelievably, their destination was a crevice in a big rock!

As the Burning Skeletons struggled to enter the crevice, it arrived. The Doom Knight from the days of old.

"These smelly things, get off me, go away!"

A short legged Dwarf came and wielded an axe.

Burning Skeletons were smashed, then scattered every time he swung the ax.

Barbarians, Elves and Fairy tribes, also build their defenses and fought with them just like in past.

“The Undead are here, Shoot!”

Beautiful Elven maidens waited for the right moment. When the Doom Knights were in sight, they placed their arrows of light into their bowstring and attacked the monsters.

The Immortal Legion made an example out of the several tribes that stood against them, the screen changed again to Balkan

Sitting crookedly on a throne made out of dragon bones was Balkan!

His chest demonstrated his divine power, thick black smoke rose and Balkan’s purge aura suppressed them.

Balkan spoke, which rattled his jawbone.

“Arise my Immortal Legion… soon you will obliterate everything.”

Ding!

Dark Mage, Necromancer's call Balkan Demoph.

He led the Immortal Legion, and challenged the several Righteous Orders of the continent. His men teemed with strength.

This was the fight between the Living and the Dead!

In the past, the defeated Balkan had his Health and Mana sealed because of a sword lodged in his flesh.

In order to survive, Balkan absorbed the lives of the beasts and monsters. They prepared themselves. Teney, the Fairy Queen and her patron Dwarves.

He challenged the Dwarves and Teney, the Queen of Fairies!

Fairies honed their talents on fun, with their free-spirited nature being to blame. They failed to raise any significant military forces.

In the land of the Fairies, Humans and other creatures stood no chance before them, and their numbers were greatly reduced.

There were hundreds of wounded Dwarves. The Fairy Queen, Teney and the other fairies were treating them, with their fluttering wings all over the place.

When the old Lich Balkan absorbed Teney's life, he would be able to reclaim his old strength, with Teney serving as his new source of Mana.

Balkan continued on eating away the fairy Teney's strength. Her strength compensated for the damage from the sword stuck in him.

Balkan was in need of his disciple, the Lich Shire.

-Acquired Quest of Balkan Demoph

-With his Black Magic, Balkan created a portal for his disciple Lich Shire.

Weed stood in front of the opened gate, with the Dark Lord in the room in front of him.

"If Balkan regains his original strength, he'll be even more terrifying."

All of Versailles Continent's Holy Orders prepared themselves. Holy Knights and Priests, formed their armies against the Undead monsters!

Standing in front of the opened portal, Weed could feel Balkan's intimidation through his skin.

"If a portal appears here, then Balkan probably thinks that I’m his disciple. I guess that Teney and the Dwarves have been defeated. Even with these many tribes. "

In his legion, gaining the immortality spell will increase their forces.

With his Sculptural Shapeshift, he could only proceed with the Quest with the identity of Lich Shire.

"Balkan’s treasure, they're an awful lot put together."

Weed moved as he stepped into the portal.

The only thing in his head was ' money money money money money money, treasure treasure treasure '.

Suddenly, he stopped momentarily as he stepped in.

“But in the past, the treasure from the defeated side of the war is always looted.”

However the Undead have almost conquered the continent, as they only kept on trying.

In this case, it did not look completely hopeless!

Unicorn's public relations team members were gathered in the video room.

They watched scenes from certain Players to see their progress in Royal Road, in real time.

As a result, their Yoon Soo Jang's team and the other staffs of the Operations Department gathered for talks.

In the screen before them they could see, the appearance of Weed contemplating whether he should not go into the opened portal.

The Deputy asked how long it has been.

“What’s Weed’s decision?”

"I don't know yet. I can’t figure out what choices he’s thinking about. "

Yoon Soo Jang couldn’t predict his decision before as well.

If you based your analysis on Weed, his motivation was always largely about money, and compensation.

Even one copper was a sensitive subject.

On the outside, it was difficult to determine his decision because

this was his own Quest and no other player had this kind of adventure.

While watching Weed’s long awaited decision, the Unicorn’s staff sat on their chairs like statues. They had to endure their urges to go to the toilet.

There was little time difference between the real world and Royal Road.

There were also problems when Broadcasters went on live, but the people watching didn’t care.

The Video’s speed was increased four times, the volume was enhanced, and the unnecessary parts of video were deleted. Soon, they will hand over the video.

"Please hand this over to the next phase."

They returned to their seats after they handed over the video of Weed sculpting the flowers and they resumed watching his progress.

It's not quite just making the sculptures, centipedes and caterpillars were added to the sculpture. Perhaps to include in the flower bed, not something you would expect to be a mediocre work!

"I'll take a while."

"Balkan's Quest is very important for the Undead Necromancers, but still I can’t decide on this rashly."

At the moment, Weed was probably the only Dark Magician who was an Undead Necromancer among the Dark Magicians in the Versailles Continent.

Balkan called all of those Dark Magicians and Necromancers. If he went to the place, Weed was the only who would fit Lich Shire’s profile. The central axis of power could have unpredictable changes.

The Quest was of a massive scale. Balkan’s Quest was exclusive to those of the Necromancers in the Versailles Continent.

The Unicorn employees liked Weed.

Sculpting the Last Divination and acquired the five pieces, this was a Sculptor’s adventure of the century!

The number of players from Bard Ray’s guild was always fluctuating. Word of mouth of the Players made them transfer from other prestigious guilds.

"The decision making takes a long time. Let’s look at the other screens."

The staff have launched the video of somewhere else on the monitor.

Land of Shadows.

==========

For the first time in the Plains of Despair, there were on foot Adventurer parties from Rosenheim Kingdom.

In recent times, the iconic adventures of Weed had risen. Since then Players departed from Versailles Continent to search for Adventures of their own. With most of them gathering a large number of Adventurers and formed a party. For a while, people noticed that they have achieved a hidden Quest, and there were 13 steps as degrees of difficulty for this S-class Quest. Now, they were nearing the final part of the Quest.

"Hmm, be careful and not come up here to the ruin."

“Cough! Why is there so much dust?”

After they battled with the Ghoul, a Thief from the Silver Ring Mercenaries found something, as he rummaged through the antiques and stacks of paper.

It would make anyone run, If they could have any clue about any

Quests in Versailles Continent.

This strengthened their previous clues.

"I really didn't know that the level of difficulty would come up here to C-class Quest."

"Yeah, you said you progress in a year and now it’s been nearly two years."

On the other hand, receiving related accessories to chain Quests always helped solving the Quest.

This also meant that if the difficulty of the Quest increased then so did the goods involved.

In the profound history of the Versailles Continent they never met someone that wise.

Finding the end of the journey was what made an Adventure an Adventure.

They had to infiltrate the Embinyu Church's Aura, in order to regain an item that belonged to the Valhalla order. This was Shin Yejon’s Quest!

The Knights of the Embinyu Church which they currently fought were powerful enough to exceed the Levels of 420.

Of course, if you look over to the shadow party on the ground their levels were not inferior.

But the moment they were caught by the Embinyu Church, the Priest of the Order and the Magician, Mage, Dark Knight, they came flocking in large numbers.

As they searched for a path that couldn’t be bypassed, the Silver Ring Mercenaries faced the enemies. Shin Yejon was trapped. After he infiltrated inside and was searching for the item. He couldn’t handle the Priests and Knights that were coming closer. He hid into the archives as they came.

They remained faithful to their ancient God. The Knights and Priests were formidable enemies.

“Guys, I don’t know how soon you’ll arrive, but I hope you come as soon as possible.”

“Why is it only when it’s full of dust and ancient monsters that you come and ask me to do it?”

"I do not know, but find the enemies. We’re in deep trouble as far as I can see. There's a lot of dangerous enemies so be careful. "

The NPC’s intelligence felt funny and considered the situation to be bad. Also, their long-term explorations and excavations in the past gave him a hint that escape was not possible.

“We just have to make through Levels 2-3 and climb up. Our skills will considerably grow a lot.”

"By the way, was Shin Yejeon Quest's on finding Valhalla’s missing item a success?"

Full of antiques and Historic relics stacked haphazardly, the items crowded the floor and they

tumbled.

Silver Ring Mercenaries searched for the incomparable treasure, the precious relics and they got it.

Not knowing if this was all associated with the Quest, it still paid to investigate the place and increase their Archeological skills significantly.

Adventurers often found this skill necessary in Quest and history investigation. They quietly lit their magic lanterns.

As they searched for the clues of this quest, they placed the golden candlestick holder and other golden items into their backpacks.

The joy of moments like this made them an Adventurer’s rush!

"Identify!"

Beni took the torch that was housed in a steel box.

Torch of Justice:

Durability: 23/102.

Attack: 49 ~ 91.

Defeating the torch in the dark. Valhalla stood at the forefront of the anti-Warrior Embinyu Church Order's heard a projection was held by Daratesuga.

Restrictions: Honor & Leadership must be over 600

Options:

+25 all stats.

+2 level to Projection Skill.

Enhanced skill of Disruptive Accuracy improved.

Recovery rate from injuries is increased by 40%.

It is possible to use the blessings of Valhalla.

Suppresses monsters with dark alignment.

Black Magic Defense effectively increased by 83%

Enchanting and deceptive, it created a mental manipulation which followed the will of Valhalla.

Daratesuga was the best fighter the Valhalla Order had to offer!

According to the literature Beni found, he died later in the fight against the Embinyu Church and his items vanished.

Suddenly, sounds of commotion came up from the storage.

“There’s a total of 27 Mercenaries who appears to be in need of treatment.”

"I was told it they only were able defend... up to 10 minutes otherwise they won’t survive."

"The Mercenaries are right. We need to save the stationed guys. I already found the stuff come on!"

Beni pulled out a scroll he had been saving. Scroll of Return! However, he couldn’t use it before because the magic of the Embinyu Church disabled it.

Shin Yejeone will be dropped to a point near the 500 meters, there is a circumstance to flee from the light into place on the soles of the feet.

"Let's go!"

Beni tore the scroll. Simultaneously, the doors of the Archive Department were opened and incoming monsters squeezed in along with Embinyu’s servants and reinforcements. Then, the Knights kicked in anger, the three of them disappeared with the light.

"Don’t worry, I found it."

==========

Unicorn's staff are on hand to take the sweat and watched the scene. Shin Yejeon road block drilling a narrow gap, and put them in hiding to find the Secret passages mercenary holding workmanship was excellent enough to want to give a compliment.

Whilst proceeding to Step 13 of prestigious chain of Quests, the Quest's pace exceeded far beyond their expectations.

“How about we call it Quest party of the shadows of the earth, are you okay with that?”

Yoon Soo Jang was asked to Il Kang Son. In the operating room before the other team does not know, except omit information

about Quest, even though there was only invited guests.

"It is not over yet, but certainly difficult to be more careful in the future of a challenge by now I'm not sure I can go further into the future."

"What would result in the success of the Quest?"

"In the future, not only in the past disputes between the Player Embinyu Church emerged as a formal and will also be able to choose according to their own evil will."

“I must create a new ad.”

Unicorn launched an advertising company in the stations of the world in the past.

In fact, after Royal Road climbed to the top spot, they didn’t need any more publicity. So, the yield of capsule sales followed, and nothing else could be said about a corporate’s tactics to earn money.

So, they actually played the role that their ads are displayed to the Player of the changes taking place in the continent. Would that tell the game stations and a number of exchange of information alone is unknown continent of Versailles Player timely manner.

Of course, the number of new Player each time you send in a few months once advertising has grown enough to really ignore ignore.

The vast desert! While hyenas are hanging was after the prey.

A Hyena individually is weak, but for a group of armed attack, the need to collect half a dozen lions should be avoided rather than the tail. Are going to go back to the old laying erect tail, was a tribal village were built there away.

The Strength and home of the River Iron-Two ruling War-Four. The screen was lit environment to be crystal clear lake before.

The fearful fog covered most reflections on the water, but trees were still seen on the surface of the lake at dawn!

The scenery shifts to the next scene. Fairies and Elves riding the huge leaves around, and the soldiers appeared on the next scene. All dressed up in a sword and shield and armor.

This is the old neverending Central Continent! Was built on conquest and ruthless breakthroughs!

Under the leadership of the heroes, they yell at the soldiers in the fort and castle to use their arrows, magic, and they will surely emerge victorious just like from long ago.

The view was like in the war movies of hundreds and thousands of soldiers fighting like never before, and some where a figure of a Priests dressed in black robes increased in numbers.

They opened the crypt by beating the old monster. Here, Shin

Yejoeon hid inside the body of the monster. Then, the seventh Sheikh Saheurani of Embinyu Church declared something.

"Preparation is over. Foolish and feeble Humans, Elves, and Dwarves. We'll govern the law and spread destruction!"

Central Continent was in a dispute among the former Honorable classes, Embinyu Church will be exposed to view this formally. The face of evil forces has appeared once more! The frightening image was spread over the many destroyed areas.

On top of the Versailles Continent, there were many strategic hunting grounds or quiet peaceful areas. The mountains and the rivers and lakes, sea, castles, towns, were defended by fort Heulleugadeut.

If you also took a short walk to the northern parts of Morata, one could see black giant sculptures. There were also housing which showed less dirty shanty towns are far away, Player have been enough to recognize a magnificent view of the cathedral and asked to be built for the library.

"I'd also better to cancel."

Weed decided not to enter the black portal. The immortal Legion swallowed up too many land and created bad relationships. Having that sustainability will be hard.

Forget the bread after the seven-year-old live the moral

conscience or something is not just because of a sudden come up. And the largest city in the northern part of the Versailles Continent is thriving in Morata!

The production base case law does not take the brain leads the undead legions that have invaded Morata. "Balkan and is not better side end here. It gives up the Quest.

"We'll double check again. 'Do not want to accept the Call, ' Balkan's Quest?Immortal Legion and has only one of Lich Shire, Balkan Demoph and associated Quest. Warning! If you reject a Quest Balkan relations deteriorated due to the hostilities, and also because of an increase in beneficial, may occur. The dreaded message that should Weed did the shake.

“I will not.”

-You have refused the quest.

Faith increased by 50.

Dignity, Courage, Willpower has increased by 10.

Fame has reduced by 2,439.

"Nevertheless, he has to live with the good work."

If the penalty of this magnitude Is not much less than I thought Weed! Beyond the level that can not afford enough, it was rather glad about.

This video came on to the end of line knew Weed. kkwagwa gwangwang! tourgh!(T/N: Sound effects) The sky is covered in clouds all over, there was lightning striking down be stuck into the ground.

The old Trees in the field that withstood the time from a hundred years were torn apart. Even larger raindrops came. Balkan Demoph, the Undead monarch stood on top of a hill.

Each time the lightning hit, his sleazy bony skull was shone from under the robes he wore.

"Lich Shire, you dare run away from me? I will make you pay for your treachery. An Eon will be too short for your eternal suffering! "

The thunder sounded like a howling scream that slap to the ground shook as the Undead rose up.

The Quest was triggered by the Undead Monarch.

The Undead were given the opportunity to live their old sinful lives as Balkan had commanded them.

“Kill me, so I can be free from this eternal torment!”

They were headed to the land of the Undead. The night Balkan meant from a year ago.

The Undead from different graveyards threatened to go to Morata as punishment.

Weed had just learned of the bad news!

His relationship with Balkan as Lich Shire created a fiasco, again he read the message window.

The Roots of deeply burrowed of depravity were not easily removed.

Undead Strength the power that belonged to the Undead!

The main boundary between life and death.

When the sun had left it signified the death of human beings. The Undead's strength grew exponentially.

The night was for the Undead.

Necromancers were also Humans, with the Strength of the Undead. He himself by looking at it a lot and sometimes summon undead off my foot on Taking the field.

It was a curse stat that naturally grew on its own, but you can also develop other relevant skills.

Now, daylight was over!

His body went stale and dried rapidly.

-The Undead were forced by the Undead Strength.

Weed's sculptural transformation of Lich Shire and other high ranking Monsters

walked around. There were also Burning Skeletons carrying a rusty swords from the common graves.

Call of Darkness!

Balkan will summon the undead for a special Quest.

Undead can not deny the summons.

Weed was sucked into the black portal by the compulsory Strength of the Undead.

Book 23: *Canyon Of The Death Knight*

Chapter 1: Low Class Skeleton

“Tak! Where is this place?

Weed grabbed his rusty long sword and woke himself up.

In the waste land where even weeds couldn’t survive, there were skeletons wandering around.

“Chuckle.”

“Kooehhh.”

Skeletons just passed Weed without attacking him because his body was also turned into a skeleton. Balkan Demoph’s Summon brought him here as an Undead.

“So I finally ended up here.”

Weed was pretty used to Undead regardless of its figures.

As he looked around calmly, he caught voices of surprised skeletons.

“Whoa, what is this place?”

“How did we even get here? I was hunting with my golems…”

“Skeletons? Who can summon this many skeletons?”

Similar to Weed, these skeletons near the graveyard were having a conversation.

“I came from a graveyard near Vitum Castle, you?”

“I came here while hunting in Xerathium forest.”

“I got dragged suddenly from Bisbek dungeon.”

“Xerathium forest… Is your name perhaps Jeanne the Necromancers?”

“That is correct.”

The skeleton with a little bit of hair claimed her name to be Jeanne. Jeanne was the first one to choose an occupation after Weed enabled Necromancers occupation. She was a famous user as a corpse summoner in Xerathium forest.

Jeanne admired Necromancers. The power of raising up so many dead bodies and commanding them.

She fell in love with the Undead plays of Weed, that she recorded

the quest and watched them over and over. After changing class as a Necromancers, she turned small animals into Undead and swiped the hunting grounds. As an advanced Necromancers, summoning abundant Undeads and ruthlessly hunted.

"My name is Bohram the Necromancers."

"Wow, all celebrities. My name is Otem. Anyone perhaps know me?"

"Who wouldn't know about the golem of Otem? You are one of the best Necromancers as well."

"I'm Rashi, just turned Necromancers only one month ago. Nice to meet you all."

Skeletons having cheerful conversations often be seen in a coffee shop!

The short, narrow skeleton introduced herself.

"Hello, my name is Harien."

"Didn't expect to see you here."

Harian, was a female user, who had different bone structures from male players.

“Why do you think we are all gathered here?”

“We were summoned for some Undeads out of sudden... But I don’t know what’s really going on either.”

“Whoa, there is something wrong with status. Class changed, stats all different. Everyone check yours.”

As Otem finished his sentence, skeleton players brought up their status window.

Weed checked his as well

“Stat window.”

Character Name

Weed

Alignment

Undead

Level

390

Affiliation

Undead Legion

Class

Resurrected Skeleton

Health

87,389

Mana

41,821

Strength

1,453

Agility

1,293

Vitality

766

Wisdom

663

Intelligence

655

Fighting Spirit

541

Endurance

453

Perseverance

753

Physical Resistance

455

Charisma

414

Leadership

706

Power of Undead

165

+Death Aura is Active

When becoming Undead, Weed's Art, Faith, Charm has been converted to combat related stats.

'Class seems understandable...'

Gathered Necromancers must be surprised.

Because Weed is the only one with 'Power to Reject Death', a skill only higher Blood Necromancers can get. Weed have revived a lot

from death enough to not be surprised at having his class changed.

“Death Aura, huh.”

One of Balkan’s three skills.

The might of enhancing Undead is active in him.

A skill that shares a part of life, giving monstrous power!

“What’s with the class? It says Resurrected Skeleton.”

“Isn’t this some kind of a quest?”

Then a message popped out suddenly!

Undead Legion Outskirt Guard

In the Navir’s wastelands there are many monsters looking for food.

To protect the Undead Army, take care of the monsters.

Difficulty: D

Limitation: Undeads Only

- Quest cannot be refused.

You have accepted the Quest.

“Balkan?”

“Isn’t Undead Army the most powerful group among Undeads?”

“Oh, it’s the Undead Army from Weed’s adventure. Balkan is a man, no, a Lich known as the best among Necromancers.”

“Before I came here I saw a message saying that Balkan is calling... We must be summoned by Balkan.”

Necromancers finally realized why they were all gathered here. He couldn't blame them for being so slow. They were fine having fun and hunting, then out of sudden being dragged to this place as Undead because of Balkan’s summon. It would sounds absurd to anyone!

Instead of chatting with them, Weed scouted around on the hill of the wasteland.

‘There are so many monsters wandering around’

The place where the Undead Army resides is full of atrocious monsters. Monsters like sharp beasts, rhinos are moving around in a lane. Not far from the waste land is a river. Way past the river, there is Vargo Fortress where Undead Army stays.

Witches, Death Knights, Ghosts, army of Slayers born to battle. Order of Bentler, once a glorious order that came back from the grave after being abandoned by the king and annihilated. Because Undead Army was the best army among the Undead, they consisted of many legendary knights, sorcerers, and monsters from Versailles Continent.

In Vargo Fortress, the Bone Dragons from the Valley of Death were seen. 3 of them!

‘Anyways, what I should do right now is…’

Monsters as big as rhinos. Morghis and Nukalis were drinking from the river, and some were moving to the place where Undead Army fortress stood.

‘It must be to block them.’

Skeletons near the river found monsters. Raising up their rusty long swords, they ran towards Morghis and Nukalis.

“Kueeehhh!”

As they advanced roaring out loud, other skeletons ran toward the river as if something was swaying them.

“For the great Balkan!”

“Undead Army, kill them!”

Weed was able to see the scene from afar. Skeletons ran, getting rammed by Morghis and Nukalis, flying in the air. Morghis and Nukalis ware very vicious gigantic grey beasts! They stomped skeletons and lifted them with horns. But as long as their body isn’t completed crushed, they stood up again and ran in!

“What the, a battle?”

“The quest started already? I’m not even prepared…”

About 450 skeletons, all Necromancers players, reacted as well. It’s hard to see a single Necromancers in a castle and village but when all of them from the Versailles Continent are gathered, they are relatively many. They didn't even get to see each other. They only knew or heard some famous Necromancers. While they were busy talking about Undead and Necromancers, the skeletons already started a battle.

“Shouldn’t we fight as well, for the quest?”

“Let’s go!”

Necromancers joined the battle at the river.

“I’m unable to cast any magic…”

“It’s because we are skeletons now. What should we do?”

“Let’s slice them with swords.”

Necromancers were in the form of standard skeleton Undead, therefore they have to fight with basic swords. Necromancers had characteristics of normal magicians. But because they fight alone along with golems or skeletons under their orders, they learn basic swordsmanship. Because it’s hard to get the very first corpses and sometimes enemies break into the rank of Undead, Necromancers were also excellent in running away!

Necromancers was once a best occupation because they could quickly hunt but monsters were adverse to Necromancers. Because enemies swarm in with such a hostility with intent to kill, Necromancers required combat skills and responsiveness.

“Chaaaa!”

Players attacked but they got rammed in and flew for a moment due to the Morghis and Nukalis. Some succeeded giving damages with swords and the monsters were soon surrounded by players and skeletons.

“Block them!”

“If they get through, we all die!”

On the other side, unsurrounded Nukalis were going rampage. Out of chaos, skeletons were swinging long swords!

“They are fighting pretty well.”

Weed didn't join the Necromancers group rashly. It was more convenient to fight alone and it was advantageous in picking up items. He hated non-party people having to compete for drops with each other.

“If I accepted Lich Shire’s quest…”

It wouldn’t have turned out like this. He would have lead Undead Army’s overall strategy and tactics as Lich the commander not joining the battle as low rank skeletons of Undead Army.

Maybe he shouldn't step into a battle like this.

“Regardless, I should participate in this quest.”

Weed picked up the rusty long sword as if it was a treasure and stepped out

“Kieeehk!”

Following other skeletons, he moved toward the monsters. One thing he was different from others is that he didn't leave the other rusty long swords lying on the ground! Rusty longsword’s attack point varies by monsters and active poison or curses. But they valued at least 3~4 golds. If Weed uses his smith skills to melt it, cleanse with fire and forge a new sword, he can get 1000 golds.

- You obtained a Rusted Long Sword.

- You obtained a section of a Skeleton's rib.

- You obtained a Rusted Long Sword.

- You obtained a bone from a lower limb.

It was vital to pick up any items around. From his past experience as a skeleton, he knew that when you take damage, your life gets reduced along with losing bones. By filling in with other skeleton’s bone you can heal some portion of heath, and it can be used for a unique skill, Bone Throw. It’s nothing compared to arrows of

archers but in a short range, it’s very powerful!

Weed ran next to the monsters, butting them from sides and slashed with the Rusted Long Sword. Morghis and Nukali become more violent when they take many damages but they get narrow sighted at the same time. Watching how other Necromancers players and skeletons fight, figuring out monsters’ weakness, and attacking Morghis with their life barely gone was hunting 101 for Weed.

- You gained experiences.

- You obtained a Morghis' skin.

Weed didn’t stop, he continued moving. These monsters are fast and rammed a lot so it’s important not to face them from the front. This place was flat area near the river but because there were so many skeletons, it wasn’t so smooth for the enemies.

“Quadruped Run!”

Even if he ended up a skeleton, he was still able to use his movement-type skills. Circling around the outskirts instead of being at the centre, Weed assaulted the damaged monsters! He joined the battle a bit later but achieved the most. Not to mention 120 Rusted Long Swords and bunch of bones.

In a place only known being closed to the Undead Army. Skeletons succeeded in killing all Morghis and Nukalis.

“Kwaao!”

“For our father, Balkan!”

Skeletons picked up rusted swords, broken swords or pebbles and roared in triumph.

Weed followed the skeletons, and Necromancers did so as well.

Immortal Legion Outskirt Guard Successful

Monsters wandering around the wasteland has been eliminated.

Skeleton’s can get some rest now while standing guard.

-Fame risen by 71

-Power of Undead risen by 19

-You gained a bit of experience.

-Promotion of rank in the Undead Legion.

Your new rank: Rotting Skeleton

Depending on your rank it is now possible to get weapons, armours, and magic skills.

As Weed completed his quest with the other skeletons, a captain skeleton appeared.

“Well….Done… A new…. Battle….. will….begin….”

With his jaw clattering, the Captain Skeleton spoke annoyingly slow. He said that until next battle begins, they could rest.

Necromancers players sat down on the ground.

“Phew. We barely won.”

“I thought I was almost dead, although physically I’m dead since I’m Undead.”

Even though you get used to the battle, it's hard to adapt to the energy used during a fight where your bones got crushed in close range. Although it's was piece of cake for Weed.

"Based on position, I can get better items huh."

Weed was interested in the item itself rather than his new rank Rotting Skeleton. Of course he can create his own weapon, but who wouldn't like free weapons?

Even after the battle was over, Weed scouted the movements of other skeletons. Most of them were roaming in certain range but some entered a crater leading to a basement. Dragging his rusty longsword, Weed infiltrated in the group and walked toward the crater.

'Even if I put my head into lion's mouth…"

As long as you focus, you can get lion's skin. That's a famous quote among Dark Gamers.

--- Tombstone: Soldiers' Graveyard ---

It was a huge graveyard these skeletons were entering! Inside the grave, skeleton guards were standing as well as skeletons selling stuffs.

“Hurray for the great Balkan! You are skeletons with sands still sticking.”

If you are looking for something, come and look.”

Weed looked around.

Traditional Rusted Spear:

Durability: 13/23

Attack: 9~31

Sword that survived over 100 years.

The body is bent a little, the centre of gravity isn’t balanced.

Because of low durability, don’t be surprised when it breaking suddenly.

In the hand of an Undead user it will gain poison attributes.

Restriction: Undead

Option: 3% poison damage.

Dugged up Axe

Durability: 6/33

Attack: 6~11

This axe was discovered after it has been buried in the ground for a long time.

The blade is as old as it can get and no longer function as a weapon.

Perhaps you are better without this.

Option: When you have dual handed axe skill attack will increase by 230%

Power of Undead 4%

Rusty Shield of Misfortune

Durability: 17/29

Defence: 14

Still usable shield.

As long as you can watch out for the holes, you can still block arrows.

Though unknown there is a feeling of misfortune coming from the shield.

Restriction: None

Option: -15% Luck

Decrease resistance against magic

Weak Rusty Armour

Durability: 17/44

Defence: 19

Wrinkled and full of cracks

Can be equipped for battle but not safe.

Will become the laughing stock of all.

Restriction: 20 Strength

Option: Decrease reputation, charm and charisma.

Of all the shops he’s been through, he has never seen such useless items.

Despite all those garbage, there were some better-looking weapons with unexpectedly strong poison and curse attributes on them.

‘It really is for skeletons.”

As Weed went in without buying anything, a ghost handed him a breastplate.

-You must be the skeleton with most contribution. Take this.

The breastplate these ghosts gave was little bit better than what can possibly bought from these store.

Besides rusty parts, the steel shined a bit!

‘I guess I’ll be given better items if my position elevates more.”

For now he is a skeleton but if you can at least become Dullahan or Death Knight, you can get much valuable equipment sometimes.

Since Weed can melt, remove impurities and recycle, this can be a business beneficial in many ways.

“So this is the shops?”

“Let’s see if they hand out some materials.”

As Necromancers players came in, the shops became crowded.

Some players saw Weed wearing a breastplate and pointed out with fingers.

“He already has a breastplate. Is that skeleton a player as well?”

There were no reason to keep distance between them, so Weed tried to say hi to them.

Suddenly,

DING!

Continuous Battle at the Outskirt

- More enemies appeared at Navir's wasteland.

- Either kill the monsters looking for prey or drive them out.

- This is a tough mission for skeletons but if you kill many monster you will be acknowledge more in the Undead Army.

Difficulty: D

Restriction: Undead Only

- Quest cannot be refused.

- You have accepted the Quest.

Another battle!

With his breastplate, Weed swung his rusted long sword and fought among the skeletons.

At first, he only knew Death Aura but around this area, Balkan's Undead summon magic Dark Rule was widely spread.

Taking corpses as nourishment, more and more skeletons arose.

“Bone Throw!”

With waves of monsters coming, Weed gained substantial experience. Because this was not some hunting party in a safe dungeon with teammates, you need to look at the whole forest, not a single tree. To obtain a lot, one needs to figure out either the formation of skeletons or monster’s main attack paths.

While busy fighting and picking up items, Weed saw Necromancers players taking an active role with decent achievements. They took out monsters by forming a party among themselves, protecting each other, attacking together. Although their appearances looked all the same, these Necromancers players spent money on almost every rusty equipment in the shop!

When they succeeded driving these monsters out, Weed’s position got promoted. Not only was he able to obtain a bit bigger sword, he picked up a cape.

“It’s going to take a lot of sewing to fix this.”

He didn’t get any hopes up for skeleton equipment. It is impossible for lower rank skeleton to be wearing high class equipment.

But because monsters continuously came to Navir’s wasteland, it

was overflowing with monsters.

Monter's levels varied from late 200 to early 300 and it was well distributed.

Every time he succeeded the quests, he gained decent experience and rewards so it was becoming a better hunting ground for Weed.

Also he was able to get information about Undead Army that went to Morata, which he had vested interest.

"Enough strength to turn human city into a ruin right away."

"Undeads with about 4 armies' worth."

"Sufficient to make sure humans breaths doesn't touch the great Balkan's land."

Relatively well-shaped skeletons talked easily about what he knows.

Their pride as Undead and loyalty to Balkan was extraordinary.

"This is going to be a pain."

Thinking about all the Undead that went to Morata made him sigh.

According to the skeletons, about 4 armies worth. Then it was going to be approximately 120 thousands Undead. Even though most of them are going to be skeletons or zombies, it’s still huge. Too much army for trying to punish a single individual Weed.

“But Morata will be able to defend.”

They had Sculpture Lifeforms and an army guarding the area. Players will be safe and by the time the Undeads arrive, the Holy Knight from Freya order should be there too. As long as highest rank monsters like Hasilis isn’t coming, it’s fine.

Hasilis who is the same rank as a weakened Balkan, is currently leading battles against united army of dwarves, elves and fairies.

“Undeads are super strong when gathered together, but without a Necromancers to command them, they are bound to fall apart easily. With priest and holy knights at the centre, they will be able to defend.”

Weed was relieved. If Morata turns into ashes by Undeads, he wasn't the only one that would be doomed. Thousands of players will fall all together and the trade network in the northern continent would be destroyed.

Hermes Guild’s combat army stayed more than a day’s distance

from the Undead Army. Even for them, keeping a close distance between Undead Army is too risky. They sent a scout to see their movements from an unnoticeable distance.

“So Weed isn’t coming?”

“We haven’t heard from him yet. If he went past, someone would have noticed him.”

“The lord said he hasn’t come out for two days now.”

“Two days… it’s too short to be certain.”

Since he’s class is a sculptor, he could be stuck in a small room making a sculptor, or wandering around continent focusing on his pieces. Leaving straight after the order from the Hermes Guild’s executives, Polon was worried if he was wasting his time as afterwards he heard news about Weed travelling the continent, making sculptures.

After all Weed didn’t have to accept the quest from Undead Army.

Chapter 2: Sword Master Ash

Weed reached level 392 hunting in the wasteland.

“Have to admit. This is a pretty nice hunting ground.”

The place was now swarming with skeletons.

Since monsters came to wasteland often, all you had to do was to fight with all you got among all these skeletons.

When these poor skeleton fight and end up hurt, Weed took their places, kills the monster and monopolized the items not caring whether the other skeletons had their bones crushed.

“Now this is what I call a hunting ground.”

Even decent hunting dungeons wouldn't be this good.

“Stat window!”

Character Name

Weed

Alignment

Undead

Level

392

Affiliation

Undead Legion

Class

Battle Crazed Skeleton Warrior

Health

87,411

Mana

41,829

Strength

1,463

Agility

1,293

Vitality

766

Wisdom

663

Intelligence

665

Fighting Spirit

541

Endurance

453

Perseverance

753

Resilience

455

Charisma

414

Leadership

706

Courage

127

Power of Undead

264

+Death Aura is Active

With continuous battles, Weed's rank became a Skeleton Warrior.

'Regardless, skeleton is low class in Undead Army.'

Opportunity for class promotion was given again.

Weed chose skeleton warrior among the choice of skeleton soldier, skeleton mage, and skeleton archer.

Few more battles later, Necromancer players gained qualifications for promotion as well.

"Phew, it was really hard, but finally I can become a mage."

Jeanne, Otem, Bohram, Harien and players named Gruzed, Varenna who fought with such passion chose to be skeleton mages and could now summon Undeads along with most of players.

"I accept the power of intellect from the great Balkan.

With great loyalty to Undead Army, I shall fight for the great Balkan."

By taking an oath of loyalty, they were able to finish the

promotion process.

Because skeletons were able to change class freely, some chose to be an archer for a moment. Newbie Necromancers needed to fight with intellect and mana but in early stage, they weren't able to achieve a lot.

Therefore they just supported Undeads with bows and chose to be archers.

Skeleton mages also obtained spell books.

“We can use basic attack spells that skeleton mages use.”

“This is a curse spell I haven’t heard of... It would be nice to use on summoned Undeads.”

“Let’s try these in hunting.”

Players threw combined fire or ice balls and performed Undead summoning in a battle.

In a simple battlefield where only skeletons existed, there were flames, glaciers, with ghouls, zombies and basic skeleton being summoned.

Their physical appearances were of skeletons but their levels and skills remained same. Thanks to that, they were able to perform

their true power and achieved greatly in the skeleton army.

In the early to mid phase where battle is fought directly, Weed monopolized all the monsters but Necromancers showed their skills as if was a fierce competition.

“Gather hear, skeletons!”

As their ranks went up, players gained authority for giving commands to skeletons in Undead Army.

Necromancers players loved this as they can now control skeletons in a battle.

Jeanne, Bohram, Otem, Harien, Gruzed and Varenna excelled in battles.

When they first came, they revealed their whole body structure but as they obtained rewards and items, they wore grey robes.

Weed just watched their hunt and did his part.

‘Ordering Undeads is way too slow at the critical moment.’

As number of skeletons increased, the difficulty of quests raised to C.

Big boss-material monsters appeared often but when they were about to die, ordering ghouls and zombies to attack it slowed things down.

Weed used his entire body hunting for experience and drops.

Because he was dressed similar to normal skeletons, it was hard to realize that it was Weed wiping out monsters cunningly from far distance.

Weed's title became from 'Skeleton Knight with Painful Past Memories' to 'Purely Rotten Skeleton King' which was the highest rank for a skeleton.

It was when he finished the quest 'Skeleton Guardians of Navir"

- You have earn a qualificatioin for higher ranked Undead position.

He could now become a high rank Undead and not just a simple skeleton.

But Weed continued with his skeleton-related quests, waiting for other players to get the qualification.

Of course it wasn't some sympathy for those far behind from him.

‘You never know which could be better’

He assumed he can decide after seeing the other players make their choices.

Additionally, this is a satisfying place due to continuous large scale battles.

“It says I can be a higher ranked Undead.”

“Really? Congratulations!”

“How did you manage to get it so early? Give me some tips.”

“I don’t know, maybe because I controlled the Undeads so well?”

Necromancer player named Jeanne left after obtaining a qualification but Weed didn’t go with her.

‘I’m pretty sure it not to different from the skeleton quests.”

It was obvious since the ranks of Undeads are fixed.

Other players left one by one after getting qualifications.

From then on, he gained informations from conversations between the other playerse.

“Harien told me secretly. Jeanne and Otem became Banshees now.”

The roaring ghost Banshee.

Spreading malicious energy, with a bit of supernatural skills, they were able to cast magic.

“Where do they hunt?”

In a village where no one lives. There are haunted houses and a fortress but they haven’t looked in too in that much.

“How about the monsters?”

There were many players trying to get information about monsters besides Weed.

Since Necromancers handle corpses, they especially wanted many information about monsters.

“It’s awesome. Undead Army store their battle supplies in the fortress storage and so mass of monsters invade more than 30 times in one day.”

“Holy... They must be getting all the monsters they can ever want.”

Necromancers preferred place where many monsters appear.

Rather than waiting for few strong monsters, it was much better to gain experience and raise Undead summoning skill level from the swarming monsters.

“If that’s true, I guess it’s ok to change hunting grounds.”

Weed chose his class when 4 player chose their class.

Everyone chose Banshee but he chose to become a Ghost Skeleton Warrior.

Over 30 thousand players were assigned in building the cathedral and library in Morata.

Not all villagers and players were involved in the construction. Some contributed by bringing materials while hunting or proceeding their quests.

I have found a place rich in Eplyn stones in Navi forest.

-Adventurer Kashoo

Adventurer's announcement was placed at the wall of the lord's castle.

"It seems there are many stones in Navi forest."

"Let's dig them out."

Players gathered with pickax and dug up all the stones.

After they left, Navi forest was devastated!

"Stones"

"I brought wood."

Beginners brought materials they could at their level.

Thanks to swarm of architects and stonemasons, towers and walls of the Grand Cathedral and Grand Library was built. At the ceiling of cathedral, they put a huge dome, making it high enough to be seen anywhere in Morata.

"Did we really build this?"

"How in the world were we able to build these buildings by stacking up bricks and rocks?"

A grand structure even those participated in the work couldn't believe with their own eyes!

At the ceiling of the dome, they inserted stained glass so that light could enter inside the cathedral.

"It's not over yet. We still have a lot more to work to do."

Magicians helped sculptors and painters with their works.

With flying spell, it became much easier to paint and sculpt at the ceiling and higher part of pillars.

Since they were able to participate in a large-scale project with robust supports from all levels of society, Artists didn't save on their efforts.

Holy knights from Freya order were built as sculptures and paintings were drawing on the ceiling.

Goddess Freya who has endlessly wide grove and granaries!

Men were sitting on their knee and making confessions to the Goddess.

With top-class paints, not being thrifty about it and painting fully, with hundreds of colors, they expressed scenery of grains, Goddess Freya's dress and even men in a colorful, detailed manner.

Showing richness and beauty with confident.

Of course, Goddess Freya's appearance was based on the statue of Goddess Weed built.

Painters also paid attention to the exterior of cathedral.

"Let's paint the origin of Morata here."

The origin of Morata. Painters from the Central Continent or who started out their career in here have only heard about it.

How Weed saved this village by defeating vampires with Alveron, the pope candidate of Freya order.

Defeating the Northern cold, Weed officially became the lord.

Freya statue of Goddess was sculpted, the population increased, the village expanded.

The history up till the building of the Grand Cathedral and Grand Library was drawn as a mural.

The library lacked in artistic beauty but it was built with huge and sturdy stones to be able to store enormous resources in it.

For now, the only books available for display are common history books sold in a general store or books of folktales of northern Versailles Continent.

But when it officially opens, it will be filled with scrolls or pieces of map from hunting monsters and books of adventurers' stories.

If information of Northern part of the continent is gathered, more quests will be active and it will be much convenient to resolve requests. This made players in Morata to get thrilled for the completion of the library.

"I heard something weird thing from the flower lady before... Could it be a hint for a quest?"

"I gave up a quest due to lack of information. Maybe once the library is complete, I can try it again."

Everyone had few quests that was difficulty and made them quit.

Quests only occured with special triggers or sometimes meaningless requests lead to linked quests. Therefore they can't help getting excited for the completion of the library.

Players from the Central Continent liked it as well but players who started from Morata had their pride and self-esteem.

Morata lacked in many ways compared to other metropolises but the fun of achieving things one by one with their own hands

cannot be explained in words!

The attachement of living in a shack, and the energetic square and streets.

“This is truly the best city.”

“No other city is exceptionally beautiful or developing so fast.”

“I’m gonna make sure my friends start in Morata.”

“I’m bringing everyone to Morata.”

———————————————————————————————

Geomchis that decided to swim across to Morata!

“I think we just passed half point.”

“Whooaa, already!”

If they got in the ship, they would have arrived already but the fact that they are half-way from their destination made them so happy.

“It’s kinda exhausting swimming for such a long time.”

“It’s hard to swim exactly how I want to because of the strong waves, sahhyeong!”

These Geomchis must learn obvious things the hard way with their bodies.

If it’s rainy or windy, it was a harder fight for them!

But still, the distance they have come is fairly long.

Few days later, they could see a land.

“Did we arrived already?!”

“The tides in this area helped us a bit, eh?”

“Yep, it was much more convenient swimming for us.”

As they get close to north, they were able to swim faster thanks to tides even though the water got cold.

To say that they are near Morata, it seemed like they arrived way too early as the beach and trees were a bit unfamiliar.

“Sahyeong, let’s go get something to eat. Who cares if it’s not the continent? We can just swim again.”

They couldn’t worry when they were hungry.

Geomchis had a value of worrying only after filling their stomach.

They gathered around, ate some clams and fish on a bonfire.

“If Weed was here, he would have cooked us delicious foods.”

“Don’t forget alcohols.”

“One sip of Weed’s fruit liquor and you are done for!”

It was Malaska Island they were taking a brief rest on.

A swordsman staying in the island first smelled them and walked to the beach.

His name was Ash.

One of the nine sword masters in Versailles Continent.

Unlike the Sculpting Master, they were nine Sword Masters.

Three of them were very famous that their whereabouts were

well known.

Croma the head of the knight order, Evirathan the paladin of Lugh and Percia who left to search for the treasures of the kingdom as promised with the king.

To meet Croma, one needs to a great reputation, elegance, honor and loyalty.

Since it was easier to meet the requirements as a knight rather than as a swordsman, many met Croma and learned his swordsmanship.

His skills were an honorable promise. It enabled one to have triple the combat power briefly and contained unique horseback swordsmanship.

Evrirathan was easier to meet since he was one of the paladin of Lugh.

The only downside was that because his skills were based on holy power, paladins from different orders could not learn his swordsmanship.

Percia was searching Navier Lake for the lost treasure, so anyone could meet him there.

His skills were unknown to normal players but it was on the bulletin board of Dark Gamer Union.

· Another Sword

- Sword formed from mana fly around and defend the player.

- Cannot control it directly and the size, durability, defence varies by the skill level.

- Low mana consumption.

- Effectively blocks arrows or targeted magic.

Dark Gamers who didn't fear adventures and players of the highest-rank learned Percia's swordsmanship.

Other than these three, no one knows about the other six.

If by any chance one finds them, they kept it to themselves as they had no reason to tell others about it.

But right now, these Geomchis encountered Ash a new Sword Master right in the middle of the ocean.

"You came here to learn swordsmanship?"

Ash spoke with low-pitched tone.

Just as expected from a Sword Master, he released a fierce aura of a beast.

“If you want my swordsmanship, you must be qualified for it.”

Clang!

Ash drew his sword, posed for a combat.

But these Geomchis eating roasted fish didn’t reply.

Nothing is more annoying than someone showing up and talking while they are eating something.

Their personalities became violent when someone bothers them during a meal time!

“Those who look for extreme of swordsmanship, shall see what the strength of a sword is through me, Ash!”

He was the sword master Ash. Anyone who wanted to master the sword desired to meet him.

He couldn’t possibly be someone to be treated so coldly but Geomchis just kept ripping off their fish.

“What on earth is that guy talking about?”

“I don’t know, I think he is challenging us?”

“Geez, why is he bothering us when we are eating? Ask him if he has salts for the fish.”

To be honest, this was a chance of a lifetime for them.

Because they were martial artists, they were able to learn any skills related to any weapons.

Sword, spear, axe, bow, dagger, you name it.

Attack skills depending on a weapon types had things in commons so it wasn’t necessarily good to learn as many skills as you can. As by focusing on using a single weapon the attack skill level and proficiency increased.

Of course for Geomchis it was swords!

As their weaponry skills reached advance level 6, the destructive power of their swords increased scarily.

They are able to decide the amount of mana used on skills freely.

They can increase the power of skills up to five times and if mana is low, they can perform skills with low amount of mana.

Also, they can run faster, jump higher or even form mana barriers with their swords.

If they showed it to other players or take a video and upload it in internet, they could get pretty famous but for these Geomchis, it wasn't interesting.

Anyhow, it was truly a great event for them to encounter Sword Master Ash.

Geomchi17 spoke.

"Well, since it's a challenge, I'll accept it. Geomchis505, good luck."

"Yes, sir!"

Geomchi505 tooth dropped his fish stick and stood up.

"I request a match. My name is Geomchi505."

"Come, I will awaken you to the world of swords."

Geomchi505 bent his knees a bit and posed defensively.

'Guard first, then counter.'

Since it was a sword match, one needs to bring out one's full potential even when not knowing enemy's abilities.

While Geomchi505 was waiting for enemy's attack, Ash's body cloned one by one, ending up with thirty bodies.

As thirty Ashes lifted their swords and posed attack stances, Geomchi505's tension rose even more.

-WOO HEE HEE HEE HEE

-OOKIKIKIKIKI!

Creepy laughs were heard in a village where ghosts lived.

Weed got assigned to this village with ghosts in United Army and other players.

· Ghost of Kapua

- Ghosts are treated as a nuisance in the Undead Army.

- If you succeed protecting the war material in Kapua, you will gain a bit of trust.

Difficult: C

Restriction: Undead Only

- Quest cannot be refused.

- You have accepted the quest.

“Wheeeee, arrrrrrrr, issssss, thisssss, playyyy ceeeee?”

Players who became ghosts even sounded like one with echoes.

“Weeeeeee, arrrrrrr, atttttt, Kapooooo, ahhhhh, caaaaaaa, stleeeeeee.”

Players such as Jeanne, Otem, Goshu who arrived here first were relieved that the reinforcements came.

Weed moved his ghost body around.

If you consume mana, you can fly high and move faster.

‘Will this be possible to?’

He went to the wall and reached out with his hand. It didn’t stop at the wall. It went through.

‘So it’s possible.’

Weed moved forward and completely went past the wall.

- You have passed through the wall.

By moving through an obstacle, health and mana decreased by 200.

A Ghost's specialty.

Weed have summoned many ghosts among the Undeads so he knew.

"Whaaaat, theeeeee?"

Players paid attention to Weed's behaviour.

It was hard to distinguish who's who when they were all skeletons but now that he was the only Ghost Skeleton Warrior among the Banshees, he stood out.

It's not uncommon for a ghost to pass through obstacles since it's their specialty.

But Weed, he's adapted way too quickly.

Plus, ghosts' legs didn't touch the ground so they float around in the air.

Because it feels like they are walking in water, they feel physically unnatural.

Jeanne and Otem were still getting used to the feeling but Weed adapted to the changed body fast.

Weed's longswords and armors turned into ghosty appearance as well.

Legendary Rusted Sword

Durability: 34/51

Attack: 29~41

- Monster slaying sword.

- A sword bestowed by the Duke.

- Used for a long time without any maintenance by the Undead. But it still has sharpness.

- It will be difficult but if repaired there is a possibility to return to its former state.

Restriction: Undead

Option: Fame +34

Elegance +30

Notoriety: +170

Attack grades of Undead in the Undead Army increases.

He already had the best sword among the rusty swords.

It was same for armors but he repaired it to the minimum and equipped it.

But as it ghostified, his sword and armors' status have changed.

The attack got reduced to more than half but when it hit the critical points, the critical chance increases and did double damage.

Not being able to be destroyed anymore was an obvious change.

Suddenly sounds of ghosts wandering around in the castle and village disappeared.

Jeanne spoke.

"Gettttt, reaaaa, dyyyyy, theyyyy, areeeeee, commmmm, ingggg."

Grotesque green monsters appeared and advanced on Kapua

castle.

Banshees screamed in a hard-to-understand way and initiated the battle.

Necromancer players fighting with summoned Undeads!

Weed performed great achievements in a battle that took place in haunted houses in the village.

Only he moved freely even when Undeads, ghosts and monsters were in a dog fight.

“Assiiii, milateeeeee”

Weed’s body went through the wall as if to hide.

Using the ghost’s specialty, he hid and ambushed for a pre-emtive strikes against the monsters!

Using covertness as a main tactic, he took care of few monsters but the real event started when the battle became more intense.

Weed rushed through the building and walls.

- You have passed through the wall.

By moving through an obstacle, health and mana decreased by 200.

- You have passed through the wall.

By moving through an obstacle, health and mana decreased by 200.

His vision completely changed every time he went past walls.

Swinging sword on every monsters on sight, he kept moving.

-Critical strike!

Slashing at the very short moment, and he even took items!

Monsters came after him but obviously failed as Weed just went through the walls.

Not only was it very effective ambush, it turned the geographic features into his shield.

‘I knew it. It’s much better to play solo in a place where Undeads and monsters are rampaging.’

Injured monsters were everywhere. Therefore he was at the upper hand in drops and items when he was alone.

A fortress and a village, now this is a best battlefield for ghosts.

When he succeeded defending for the seventeens times, he obtained a horse.

Neighhh!

A ghost horse!

Weed's armor was grey resembling deep darkness and he also wore a helmet to conceal his face.

Among rampaging ghosts and Undeads, he rode his ghost horse, sweeping experiences and items.

In Kapua, not only monsters came more often, they were at higher standard compared to when he was a skeleton.

It was such a great hunting ground to make achievements without not being seen.

His title elevated greatly from Ghost Skeleton Warrior.

- Pale Rider

According to his title, he gained 500 fame and a skill that fiercely

intimidates enemies emotionally by releasing his mettle.

Unfortunately but obviously it could only be used when he was a ghost.

Chapter 3: Kapua's Ghost

Number of Necromancers players, turned ghost, protecting Kapua village increased.

"Looksssss, likeeeee, weeeee, didddd, allllll, theeeee, workkkkk."

Otem spoke with a hint of discontent but he didn't hate it so much because many players looked at them with envy and admiration.

Magicians respect high wisdom and intelligence.

It allowed abundant mana and magic spells that others couldn't use!

In case of Necromancers, it was directly related to the number and types of Undeads that could be summoned.

Summoning dozens of Dullahans or Death Knights in rank and file seemed much better and awesome compared to an unorderly line of skeletons and zombies.

Number of ghosts that swung skeleton sceptor along with companion golems increased in Kapua village.

Weed promoted again, becoming Untangible Slayer.

· Monster Assault of Kapua completed

- Furgol’s invasion was repulsed.

- Undead Army will revalue the existence of Ghosts.

Revaluation: Still noisy, annoying and useless but can be helpful sometimes.

- Fame +101

- Power of Undead +14

- Gained experience.

Obtain permission to enter Kapua Castle.

Since other players weren’t talking about entering the castle, it seems like Weed was the first one.

“Battle supplies are stacked in the castle…”

An expectation that it will be filled with full of Undead weapons and equipment!

But Weed couldn’t leave the village this easily.

Less than five players chose to become ghost knight so he stood out.

Not only did he battle atop his ghost horse, his mettle and charisma made monsters shiver in fear.

It wasn't that much when he was a human but now that he was a ghost that spread terror, weak monsters couldn't even fight back.

The scene of monsters trembling in fear of death when Weed was simply staring at them on top his ghost horse!

Other Necromancers couldn't help but get curious.

-HUEEEEEEEE

-EEEEEEEEEEEK!

Therefore Weed went to the castle by mixing in with monsters when the battle was about to be finished.

THUMP THUMP THUMP!

Monsters hammered on the castle gate with steel hammers.

Skeleton soldiers in the castle killed the monsters by shooting arrows and pouring boiling oil on them.

The battle wasn't easy even with the increased number of players and summoned Undeads.

As more supplies head to the castle, more monsters were attracted to it.

‘Oh you lovely experience and items.’

Monsters that managed to reach the castle were fairly high in level.

Green creatures with their heads bulging out like crocodiles, they were either Furgol’s mid-commander or assault captains.

Every time Weed swung his sword on his horse, these Furgols fell spraying green body fluids

“Iiiiii, Loveeeeee, youuuuuu, exxxxxxxx, periiiiiii, enceeeeeeee.”

Weed made a confession and killed them without any hesitation!

As a Warrior and not a Necromancer, his stamina didn’t drop at all.

On his horse, Weed rushed forward with 15 chain strikes.

It was extremely hard to hit with a continous pin point accuracy when riding on top of the ghost horse running full speed and passing by the monsters.

It required terrifying focus, momentary judgment, wide vision, and control of breaths.

‘Items, items, items, items, items.’

Weed slashed continuously in a rhythm.

15 chain strike cannot be stopped in the middle. Therefore you need to handle your horse precisely.

His ghost horse wasn’t a legendary horse but it gave absolute obedience to him as a high-rank ghosts and also enjoyed the slaughter.

So it followed Weed’s lead.

- Maximum charging speed reached.

Ø With speed the enemy cannot resist you have inflicted a critical hit.

Ø Attack increased by 245%

Because he was slashing monsters at while moving at a high speed, most of attacks lead to critical strike with additional increase in attack points.

Spear on the other hand could release a super strong destructive power with a penetrating force but it was not useful for a continuous attacks.

The sword slashed the monsters around in arcs was a truly beautiful sight to behold.

Increasing the mana consumption and energy he slayed any monsters near him, riding in synchronization with his horse.

“Runnnnnn!”

Weed and his horse, united as one, ran towards the steel gate.

He could get fatal damage due to the crash!

But Weed and his ghost horse turned into mists and passed through the steel gate.

- You have the right to enter Kapua Castle

Ø The castle defenders will not attack you.

Ø You have passed through the thick castle gate.

Ø By passing through an obstacle, health and mana decrease by 2000 each.

NEIGHHHH!

Beyond that castle gate, he could see ghosts of skeleton soldiers in a line.

It looked like they were in a defensive formation just in case the gate was penetrated.

Weed pulled the bridle with full force gradually slowing down the ghost horse to a stop.

NEIGH

After riding hard the horse breathed heavily, snorting and clopping the ground with his hooves. The skeleton ghost soldier approached and spoke, raising his broken rusty sword.

“Wellllll, comeeeee, toooooo, Kaaaaaa, puuuuu, ahhhh, caaaaaa, stleeeeee.”

Taking a look around Kapua Castle, Weed was able to see all kinds of ghosts.

From ghosts of noble and dukes to ghosts knights, soldiers, archers, and villagers.

Even a ghost of a maid was moping a hall.

“Ittttt, keepssss, getttt, ingggg, dirttttt, eeeeee. Mayyyyy, beeeee, Iiiiiii, donttttttt, haveeeeee, tooooo, mopppppp, ittttt?”

It was annoying to listen to them but Weed strive to converse with the maids and the villagers.

Soldiers kept complaining about monsters invading and the duke was getting all warmed up for battles at the king’s command.

In this context, the king was Balkan Demoph, the King of Undeads.

‘I thought they were all screwed but having ghosts defending the castle, the Undead Army is pretty an amazing force.’

Weed felt sorry for a bit as with several quests he may have been able to take all of this if he came here as Lich Shire.

It wasn’t an easy decision to give up a quest that was assigned to only one person, Weed.

But the possibility of Shire’s quest being tilted to the evil side was most likely.

Even though he was fighting for the Undead Army he could still stop and quit any time.

The body of Undead could be fixed by benediction at the Freya order.

Regardless, hunting grounds here, flood with monsters, were excellent and Undeads were constantly enhanced due to Balkan's Death Aura.

For Weed, he was able to wield much stronger power and that was reason he was still continuing with this quests and hunts.

'It's definitely not because of the money I have to pay to the Freya order.'

Weed went up the tower.

Seemed like monsters were invading as there was an ongoing battle.

If monsters got through the village, their next objectives would become this castle.

If the castle collapsed completely, the chain quest would failed, and who knows what would happen next?

'Anyways, I should get back to the village after a quick look.'

There were more opportunities of fighting monsters in the village than inside Kapua castle.

You couldn’t let your guard down just because more players were showing up.

As battle supplies were piling up in the castle, more and more monsters swarmed toward the village.

_____

In the village, players hunting the monsters were having a conversation in their party chat room.

Bohram : I haven’t seen the ghost skeleton guy since a while ago.

Harien : He chased the monsters going towards the castle but I guess he hasn’t come back.

Varenna : I don’t know what that guy is thinking not choosing a class with Undead summoning skills when he is a Necromancers. But he seemed pretty strong.

Bohram : Still, that’s a wrong decision. It looked like he hasn’t been able to hunt that many monsters.

To be honest, these players didn’t really have a chance to spectate Weed’s hunt.

First of all, they had to make sure that their summoned Undeads

don’t act as they please and obstacles blocked their view of Weed.

Also there were many ghosts in the village so they couldn’t keep their eyes specifically on Weed.

If there was a cleric who is supposed to grasps the party members or battle situations, they would have noticed Weed’s sneaky movements but Necromancers just had too many things to do.

Harien : By the way, Jeanne is truly amazing. She is performing more than two of us combined.

Bohram : I just saw her summoning seven additional Death Knights, meaning that her Necromancers skill has reached intermediate level 4.

Gruzed : the golem-related skill level looked high as well.

Since these Necromancers had same occupations, they were more a competitors rather than co-operators. So they were busy spectating the best Necromancer, Jeanne.

Bohram : Is it just me did the experiences increased a bit?

Harien : I had the same feeling. Even the items, they are more useful items drops now.

Lee Hyun wanted to yell out in joy.

‘Finally it’s over.’

With the last exam taken care of, it was the start of the winter breaks.

The campus was covered with romantic white snow but he was just happy that he didn’t have to come back here until spring.

Other students were chatting in the hallway.

“How was it?”

“Introduction to virtual-society was way too hard. I totally messed it up.”

It was all irrelevant to Lee Hyun.

‘As long as I don’t fail.’

He was pretty optimistic about his grades.

Lee Hyun saw Seo Yoon sitting on a bench as he was trying to head home in a hurry.

Even in her winter outfit, her beautiful looks drew the male students toward her.

Incomparable lineage, outstanding looks, attractively tall and guaranteed future lying ahead.

Lee Hyun didn't feel at ease hanging around with Seo Yoon.

"Some freshman named Lee Hyun in faculty of Virtual Reality is having a meal with her?"

"He is a freshman but I heard he's a little too old to be a freshman."

"Why in the world is she hanging out with guy like him?"

There were so many rumors floating around the campus.

Even the seniors in the faculty of Virtual Reality looked at Lee Hyun with discomfort.

But Lee Hyun wasn't someone who gave in to these kinds of views about him.

He just hoped this dream of her wouldn't last so long.

'She doesn't deserve a guy like me.'

Someday, an awesome guy that would be perfect for her will appear.

All he had to do was making sure she talks and protect her until she did not fear human interaction anymore.

Seo Yoon spotted Lee Hyun and stood up.

She walked toward him with rosy cheek perhaps caused by cold weather.

“Were you waiting for me?”

Seo Yoon nodded at his question and then spoke.

“Because of the winter trip.”

Her words were becoming more natural.

Lee Hyun didn’t mind it so much but to her he was the very person who grabbed her hand and pulled open her heart to the world.

Every time Seo Yoon spoke to him, she embraced the expectation and romance.

“Yeah, trip, huh.”

Lee Hyun clearly remembered what he said before.

Seo Yoon said she want to go on a trip with him.

It was a simple trip heading to seashore but he told her it would cost a million Won, which was complete nonsensical excuse to avoid the trip.

“Well, promises exist to be kept.”

Seo Yoon nodded in agreement.

“Yes, that’s right.”

“I wanted to take a trip anyway. Plus I’m on a break now with plenty of time.”

She smiled in a happy, yet awkward way.

Of course Lee Hyun was planning to devote all of his time in Royal Road.

The hunting speed in Kapua Village was super fast compared to any other hunting grounds.

With plenty of quests, it was the best place to raise experience.

Lee Hyun continued softly.

“A promise is a promise. I’m just as sad as you are but I guess I’m going have to give you a rain check.”

Lee Hyun was trying to delay this trip indefinitely.

Suddenly, Seo Yoon opened her bag and grabbed out money.

“I earned expenses for the trip.”

It was at least 600 million Won.

To think that she earned this much in just little bit more than one month!

“Did you sell your items?”

He didn’t think of it when he made his promises but if Seo Yoon sold her equipment in Royal Road, it would be a piece of cake to earn that much.

“I earned by selling packed lunches.”

Seo Yoon earned this money purely with labour.

On her hand where she was showing the money, he could see blisters.

And some scars from getting cut and burning herself while cooking.

A woman who never had a hard time got hurt and exhausted for money.

“Will you go with me?”

With mixed feelings Lee Hyun couldn’t possibly reject her.

———————————————————————————————

Lee Hyun decided to go on the trip after 4 days.

Now that he was really going, there were so many things to pack.

“A frying pan, a pot, a burner… It would be nice to make Kimbap and boiled eggs in advance. And sikhye in a plastic bottle just in case we become thirsty.”

If he was on a trip alone, he could just bilk a restaurant. He didn’t want a way-too-luxury trip.

She earned the money in a hard way. He couldn’t possibly have the luxury of wasting it.

Sesame oil, kimchi, seaweed, fresh vegetables and a fishing rod should be enough.

If he catches some fish on the spot, then meal was ready.

“I should prepare some more just in case I think of something.”

Even in a deserted island, it was more than enough to survive!

Leaving your house was suffering, it also costs money.

He couldn’t possibly understand why she would want to take a trip but to save as much as he can, 4 days later was just ok.

“Monday should be less expensive avoiding the weekend peak prices.”

After he arranged everything, he went into the capsule.

It was time for Royal Road.

———————————————————————————————

Weed spotted scibbles while wandering in Kapua castle.

.I saw something shiny.

.Why are there… so many things that humans enjoy, dumped?

.There is a path next to the bookshelf…

It was an enigmatic scibble about hidden treasures in the castle.

If you can solved the mystery then you could find the treasures!

‘I guess it’s worth coming here first.’

Before other players came, Weed scouted the castle.

Collecting information from maids and servants, finding treasures in chimneys, sewer, and stable.

These relics were as old as it can possibly get so you can call it antiques if you wanted to!

Treasures worth hundreds, thousands of gold gave great satisfaction to Weed.

‘Ghost’s body is just perfect for a scavenger hunt.’

As long as you knew the exact location, it was easy to find it since he could just go through any obstacles.

He found items in between bricks and behind a staircase using ghost's specialty.

.The girl I saw at dawn, what did she lose that she cried so sadly?.

With this quote in mind, he met a female ghost child running down the hallway fast.

And by finding her lost doll, he got an enchanted necklace in return.

· Necklace of the Undead

Durability: 29/43

- Necklace that contains strength of Undead's growth

Restrictioin: Necromancers Only

Option: Necromancers skill level +1

Effect of Summoned Undead +8%

Items that benefits Necromancers were very rare.

That was why Necromancers often equip magician's equipment

but Weed just obtained an item that increase Undead summoning skill.

After sunrise, Weed turned into human and came back to Morata with Yurin's help.

After making sure Kapua castle was safe, he used Picture Teleportation in a small room to move about.

But as he gained more Power of Undead, he stayed as Undead longer even after sunrise.

"Power of Undead increase a lot with the quests and battles."

Weed didn't consider Power of Undead to be a burden except when he was making sculpture it was a minor discomfort.

But in fact, it was truly dangerous stat that made the Necromancers special.

He learned exactly what the Power of Undead did in a conversation between Necromancer players.

"My Power of Undead increased again."

"Already at maximum? At first I thought it was an awesome stat..."

“The dizziness made me fail Undead summoning spells.”

Not only does Power of Undead enhance Undeads, it strengthens the power of black magic.

Black magic was much stronger and complicated compared to normal magic.

That is why Black Mages are treated with more respect among magicians.

In case of Weed, it enhanced his strength and agility when he was hunting as Undead.

Superior stat that grows on its own with quests and battles!

Necromancers had Powe of Undead and Black Mages living in their own world had authority of darkness. That made them much stronger than normal magicians.

But both Power of Undead and Authority of Darkness causes serious curses and illness if it exceed one’s faith and willpower.

In worst scenario, one became wicked, raised up Undeads without being able to control their own spells and body and hurt those around them.

In case of Dark Mages, devils could steal their bodies!

When one reaches that point of ruin, not only did they loses substantial amount of mana, they suffer from all kinds of curses that were hard to cure.

That was why you need to raises stats such as health, strength, willpower for overall balance.

If you didn’t raise enough faith and willpower thinking it was a waste of points, it would seem fine at first but as time goes, side effects will be critical.

Necromancers and black mage become stronger quicker than normal occupations but they are moving back and forth on a dangerous border.

Weed felt it was a waste to invest stats into faith or willpower so he collected floral and grass leaves and built a sculpture.

Petals weren’t a fit material for a sculpture.

It was too tender and it withers fast. But if Nature Sculpting was used, materials’ freshness stays unchanged for a very long time and it challenge Weed with a new kind of work.

“Looking at just the materials, this sculpture is harder than any of my previous works.”

During night, he hunted and in the morning he sculpted.

The completed work created with such an effort was a real-sized chariot led by eight horses.

Even horses and horseman were decorated with pretty petals. It expressed a beauty that only existed in a fairytale.

Inside the chariot, he sculpted his little sister when she was a little lady.

The finished sculpture was truly romantic and beautiful.

- Set a name for the sculpture you just made.

“Birthday present for my little sister.”

He created this piece of art as a birthday present for Yurin.

It will be unforgettable birthday present when she rides this chariot in Morata.

Of course production cost of this sculpture made of petals and leaves was zero!

- ‘Birthday Present for my Little Sister’, correct?

“Correct”

· Magnum Opus!

You completed a ‘Birthday Present for my Little Sister’.

Ø Sculpture made from the petals of wild flower spread around Morata!

Ø Created by connecting leaves with excellence patiences, it was a sculptor who knows how to use the power of nature.

Ø Creativity is outstanding but due to the characteristics of the materials, it will be hard to maintain for a long time.

Artistic Value: 9, 814

Effect:

Anyone who see this piece will have 30% regen of health and mana for a day

All stat increase by +15

Elegance and charm +45

Once a day, an extraoridanary luck will occur.

Movement speed in flat area increase by +25%

Increase propagation of wildflowers used in this sculpture.

Talking to someone about this sculpture you intimacy will increase.

Maximum life of sculpture: 3 months

After expiration, this piece will be recorded in the history of sculptures

Number of Magnum Opus created: 7

- Advance Sculpture Mastery reached level 8

Your sculptures will now become amazingly delicated and detailed.

Your insight for arts broadened, wisdom and intelligence increase by 37 each.

Charm increase by +62

Using Nature Sculpting, affinity with nature increase by +31.

- Handicraft skill improved
- Fame increase by +1,841
- Art stat increase by +13
- Endurance increase by +9
- Fortitude increase by +21
- Charm increase by +7

Weed's sculpting skill level finally reached advanced level 8.

"That was really hard."

With every skill level the requirement for the next level of proficiency increased exponentially, the master piece he created now only increased his proficiency by 3.7%. Even then there was still 2 level left until Sculpture Mastery.

"Once I sculpt Helium, I won't be too far!"

If your reputation hits high by sculpting, you can easily receive sculpting quests from nobles and kings.

By gettint these quest they gave best materials to work with and will be easy to increase his workmanship.

"Also, I will be able to increase with Disaster Sculpting or

Elemental Creation.”

He will soon be mastering sculpting skill, hardest skill to increase among arts-related skills.

“I couldn’t have done it if I tried to get this far if it was all for arts.”

To make the pieces, he collected complicated materials through many adventures and quests.

He devoted a long time on sculpting his work, suffering for creativity.

It was all thanks to money that he got this far.

———————————————————————————

“Finally… our hard works will come into fruition.”

“This moment will be broadcasted on gaming media for at least one month.”

“Thousands, no millions will see this.”

Villagers and players of Morata stopped working and came out to streets, square and roofs.

They were holding hats and flower petals.

Players with wood and stone plates on their back came from outside the city.

With sweats pouring down, they moved step by step.

Last materials need for the Grand Cathedral and Library. Just a few steps away from the finish line.

“Cheer up.”

“Just a little bit more.”

Cheering each other, they head to the Square of Light and Bingryong Square.

Construction materials were stacked up and where villagers and players have been working together, there was the sight of the Grand Cathedral and the Great Library.

The Grand Cathedral was magnificent, with colorful beauty and the Great Library had solemnity and grandness.

These great architectures in huge scale had been built by the village’s own people and players.

They placed decorative trees on empty spots in the garden and placed refined block of stones.

At last, with last materials finding its own places, the Great library and Grand Cathedral have been completed.

The completion date has been deliberately managed to finish the buildings jointly to make it a commemorative day.

Not only Morata players have been waiting for this moment, but many tourists as well who came from northern and other area.

* Grand Building, Freya church's northern continent Grand Cathedral has been completed.

Total construction period: 5 month and 11days.

Cost of construction: 1 million 678 thousand 291 gold and 25 silver.

Number of participated worker: 299 thousand 362 people.

* Building Value: 189, 614

- From the Cathedral the religious denomination will spread in the Northern Continent.

- The gaze of Goddess Freya is focused here, chance of a golden harvest increased, natural disasters will be prevented.

- The priest and paladins of Freya in the Northen Continent will receive a greater divine force.

- Priest's can now be placed in the 2nd tier, Cardinals can now be elected.

- Paladins will now live in the Cathedral, suppressing monsters in the vicinity.

- Morata residence are now qualified to participate in Freya churches business.

* Grand Building, Morata's Grand Library has been completed.

Total construction time: 5 month and 11days.

Cost of construction: 1 million 074 thousand 412 gold and 78 silver.

Number of participated worker: 218 thousand 302 people.

* Building Value: 127, 939

- Can collect adventure related text. Can help with the recovery of lost magic through the excavation of dungeons.

- Magic and academics will develop faster.

- If you display or publish found items, maps, historic facts, monster records, you can receive fame and compensation.

· For the need for library archives a quest has activated.

- Archeologic quest is now possible to find rare records.

- As the archives grow, the residence knowledge will increase.

“Hooray!”

“It’s finally finished!”

“From now on let’s party all night!”

There was no need to mention the greater convenience thanks to the completion of Northern Cathedral and the Great Library.

A message popped up for players who participated.

- For participating in the construction of the Northern Cathedral you have received an achievement and experiences points.

- Proficiency in building skill increased.

- You gained knowledge of special building, stats will increase.

- For the achievement of leaving behind a painting in the Grand Cathedral

- Fame increased.

- Proficiency in related skill increased.

Due to the religious experience, however marginal you can now paint Freya churches holy figures.

- For the achievement of leaving behind a sculpture in the Grand Cathedral

- Fame increased.

- Proficiency in related skill increased.

You can now sculpt Freya churches holy figures. But you have to use the wood blessed by Goddess Freya.

* Morata's Freya church influence has risen

- The intimacy with Morata's residence increased.

- The people who participated in the construction are now religious.

The 2 Grand building will now represent Morata.

By telling stories about the Northern Cathedral and the Grand

Library in faraway cities and castles you can receive fame.

They were rewarded fairly for participating in the construction of great buildings.

And a message popped up only visible to the lord.

- Morata's regional political influence increased.

- Morata's regional fame increased.

- If the conditions are met, three special product of Morata will spread fast through word of mouth.

- Villagers looking at Freya Cathedral can find peace in their heart.

- Public order is increased.

- Plague is suppressed.

- Morata's culture is being spread throughout the continent. This helps the art created in the city to gain additional fame and influence.

- Tourism industry is developing, wealthy tourist will come to the city.

- Due to the Northern Cathedral the number of art orders increased.

- The contribution to the Freya church increased by 1,639.

Ø You can now receive the title, 'The Call of the Goddess'. If you receive the award you can now represent the Freya churches paladin.

Ø Elegance, charm, faith, charisma will increase.

Weed felt mentally exhaustion while working on the construction.

“I never imagined it would cost this much…”

It was impossible to build the Grand Cathedral and the Great Library as planned with the assigned budget.

Weed assigned a very wide area for it to be built on and suggested high quality materials. So it was impossible not to have gone over budget even with astronomical budget of 900,000 gold and 700,000 golds for the respective buildings.

“It would have been ok to take out some steel frames and unnoticeable pillars…”

Weed desperately wanted poor constructions.

However, Morata’s architects tried to build sturdy buildings that could last hundreds of years.

Because so many people were participated, workers made frequent mistakes.

Rain leaking through the roofs was nothing.

Often, pillars would tilt and stone plates would collapse.

Every time this happened, construction cost increased and even if they did fund raising in the city, the projecct always lacked money.

Morata's three months worth of taxes had to be put into the construction budget.

"It's ok. It's at least completed now."

Weed looked at the buildings and let go of any lingering attachment.

It was a grand building built by a decent architect Parvo along with noob sculptors and painters and a lot of novice players' efforts.

Because of the leakage in the roof, the artwork on the ceiling was partially blurry and engraved corner parts on the walls were shattered.

There would be hundreds of things to find fault with but the Great Library and Grand Cathedral looked awesome and majestic overall.

"Not bad. In fact, it will be a building with history and tradition after a long time."

Weed grinned with delight.

It’s because these great buildings will bring a lot of money in.

His Power of Undead grew and his title became much higher in the Undead Army.

Death Knight!

It was a high rank in combat ranks it would be similar to a commander.

“Hehe, I guess I’ll be getting more tax income.”

Weed, the Death Knight, cackled evilly in his castle while looking at the Grand Cathedral.

———————————————————————————————

“Let’s begin the recital.”

“Light the bonfire!”

A bonfire was lit in the square and bards performed on their instruments as celebration of completion of Grand Cathedral and the Great Library began.

As it got darker, the lights and music made the city Morata even more beautiful!

· Morata's residence started a commemorative festival

- The residence are praising their hero Weed.
- All credit are given to the lord for the religious race, solid public peace and food production in the Northern Continent.
- They do not doubt about the bright future of Morata.
- The Villages crime will drop by half.
- The children's academics increased.
- The productivity of the Village residence will increase by 330% for one month.
- The residence are happy, they can now get better jobs.
- You can participate in the festival.

There were several festivals in Morata.

But players from Central Continent considered a festival in a city to be weird.

There isn't a single place in the continent where villagers' loyalty and moral toward the lords are so highly maintained.

In the Square of Light and Bingryong Square where the Grand Cathedral and the Great Library stood, people continuously

gathered.

“Here comes the wild boar and deer.”

They roasted them on bonfire, seasoning them with salt, and shared it with the onlookers.

“Those who participated in the transportation of wood, please come here.”

“Grass porridge! Grass porridge!

“We Grass porridge religion is leaving for a group hunt in two hours. No level or class restrictions. Those who want to join, come to the east gate after two hours.”

While players were having fun, merchants were devastated.

“I should have bought it early…”

“If I built a building this side, it would have been a jack-pot.”

“This area will continuously increase in population.”

As more players and villagers increased in Morata, there is no doubt it will lead to greater commercial supremacy in the region.

It was nice for merchants but the only lingering attachment they had was on the lands near the cathedral and the library.

Priests and paladins would visit the Grand Cathedral often and people preparing for adventures and quests will visit the Great Library frequently.

It was obvious that people will come to the Great Library for information about quests, maps and monsters.

“They said these lands are already owned by someone. Who in the world has the ownership of these lands?”

“The land is just way too good…”

While merchants were dispirited, buildings popped up suddenly from the empty lands next to Grand Cathedral.

Rapid construction in Domestic Affairs Mode was something only the lord could perform!

The Original Northern Cathedral Priests Shop

Original Paladin Store

Cathedral Souvenir Shop

Also, buildings popped up next to the Great Library

Pre-adventurers Closest General Store

Dungeon Exploration Shop

The landowner was Weed who was waiting for the right moment for to strike.

Chapter 4: Uncollapsible Sand Castle

“Geez, what’s taking her so long?”

Lee Hyun was waiting for Seo Yoon at the train station.

Having just turned into a Death Knight, he was extremely busy hunting.

He was able to wear iron plated armors, use dark energy and enhance his swordsmanship.

The strength of the knight class was tremendous!

Many players choose this class as it was well balanced with many advantages.

With his outstanding horse-riding, his movement speed was pretty fast.

Maintaining his horse was inconvenient but being very helpful in battles it was worth taking care of.

The only disadvantage would have been that the stamina droped too quickly compared to a different class such as swordsman but it didn’t matter as Death Knight was an Undead.

“It was perfect timing for levelling up as well…”

Lee Hyun decided to keep his promise and left his house a little bit early.

Seo Yoon arrived ten minutes before the 8 am meeting time.

She brought two travelling bags with her.

Even wearing a simple white T-shirts and jeans she was gorgeous.

People at the station couldn’t get their eyes off of her.

Glimpsing at her face briefly, he was left with impressions of clear beauty.

He couldn’t help look at her face again, staring at her piece by piece.

The phrase, ‘the eyes are the window to the soul’ was absolutely right.

Her eyes were deep, pure and dazzling.

It was like her eyes were the world’s most clear jewels.

Her eyebrows were straight, nothing to find fault with.

He couldn’t find any flaws in her nose, lips, cheek, forehead, ear lobes or anywhere on her body.

When looking at her, it felt like everything was in its place.

Her body expresses an unbelievable beauty.

“Were you waiting for me?”

“No, I just came. Let’s get the tickets firsts.”

After arriving in train by the big city in the north by the seashore, they planned to rent a car.

Seo Yoon said she had a driver’s license.

“When did you get your license?”

“I received it just yesterday after passing the test.”

“....."

_____

On the train heading to the seashore, they had kimbap and soda

which he brought from home.

Lee Hyun fell asleep while staring out at the window.

Travelling relaxed his tension and stress.

“I…….”

Lee Hyun was muttering in a low-pitched tone. Seo Yoon brought her ear close to listen.

“…tem….”

Lee Hyun was sleep talking!

Seo Yoon didn’t get enough sleep because she was busy preparing early in the morning.

She leaned her head on Lee Hyun’s shoulder and fell asleep as well.

Every time the train stopped, passengers saw that scene while getting on the train.

‘That guy doesn’t deserve her.’

‘Why is she with a lame guy like him…’

‘This is so unfair! What is this!’

When the train arrived at their destination, they picked up their bags and got off.

The car rental place was found near the train station.

After renting their reserved car, Seo Yoon sat on the driver seat and Lee Hyun on the passenger seat.

“Shall we go?”

“After starting the car.”

Seo Yoon started the car and then spoke.

“Let’s go now.”

Lee Hyun was nervous but Seo Yoon seemed strong in real life as well.

Now that she started the car, she drove very smoothly.

But then suddenly the wiper activated!

“Where is the signal lamp for turning?”

“On the other side.”

Lee Hyun regretted not getting a driver’s license before hand.

After leaving downtown, North Sea of Korea became visible along the national highway.

East or west seas had their own charming points but North Sea had a lot more to take in with its warm climate. Also it wasn’t as expensive.

By driving along the seashore, they were able to go around the big islands.

There were flowers growing on the crooked roads right beside the sea.

When they arrived, Seo Yoon took out her camera.

“Can we take a picture here?”

“Of course we can.”

Taking pictures was a must-do while travelling.

“I’ll take a picture of you.”

Seo Yoon took picture of him with the sea as the background.

In the photo he seemed like an awkward tourist stuck on a beautiful scenery.

“Ok, now it’s your turn.”

Lee Hyun received Seo Yoon’s camera and pressed the shutter.

Every time her picture was taken, it was a like a photo shoot.

She just stood still like Lee Hyun but it was a whole different kind of images.

He felt like the sands were shining and a gentle breeze coalescing around her.

She didn’t smile or held many poses but she looked great with the winter sea as the background.

There were also many tourists at the seashore.

Lee Hyun asked the tourists for a favor.

“Excuse me… Do you mind taking a picture for us?”

It looked like they were on a graduation trip.

“Sure, I don’t mind.”

These men took a picture of Lee Hyun and Seo Yoon standing together.

SNAP!

They put their focus right on Seo Yoon, blurring out Lee Hyun!

‘What an unmatched couple.’

‘That guy must have saved the universe in his past life.’

Going to several places while riding in their car, they went to popular tourist spots and took photos.

They spent plenty of time together in Royal Road but this was different, no hunting, no quest, it was like two of them were dating.

Soon, it became dark.

The temperature dropped fast after sunset so they began looking for a place to stay.

“I’ve found a place… Was it this way?”

After roaming around in their car, they arrived at the camping site.

With minimum price, they were able to use this place freely.

There were groups of families having set up their tents already.

“We are late. We better hurry.”

Lee Hyun took out the camping equipment from his large bag.

He borrow it from Ma Sungbum from the dojo,

After setting up the tent, he took out the burner to boil water, which he was able to obtain in the camping site, and prepare dinner.

While Seo Yoon was washing the raw rice for cooking, Lee Hyun grabbed a fishing rod and head to the coast.

“I’m going to catch some fish for dinner alright?”

There were middle age men concentrating on fishing while their wives and daughters watched on.

“Geez, not a single fish.”

They wanted to show off in front of their families but unless you were some natural-born fisherman, it wasn’t easy.

Lee Hyun opened a small container.

These energetic worms were caught directly from his yard this morning.

Every time he threw his fishing rod with the baits on, he was able to catch the fish quickly.

63cm flatfish!

“What a waste of worm.”

49cm rockfish!

“I needed something for fish stew. This will do nicely.”

The rockfish were known delicacy of this area.

“Aren’t you guys tired? Stop taking my baits.”

Fish were crowded in the bucket Lee Hyun brought.

Middle age men comforted themselves thinking about their wives and daughters.

‘As long as I have a happy family…’

‘Even if my wife nags often, the joy of going on a trip with her is…”

Lee Hyun murmured holding his fishing rod.

“I should be getting back for dinner… It would be nice if a black porgy took my bait. What are they doing, geez.”

The men thought in their heads.

‘Hey kid, black porgy isn’t some kind of carps that you can just catch easily.’

‘I’ve been here for twelfth time now and even I haven’t seen it.’

At that moment, Lee Hyun’s float sank a little bit.

Picking the right spot was the heart of fishing, shaking your fishing rod slightly and make it look like the worm was wriggling was advanced skill!

And with that, another fish took the bait.

Unfortunately, it wasn't a black porgy. It was a sea eel.

"This will be nice when roasted."

When Lee Hyun was about to return, Seo Yoon came out from the tent.

"Did you catch a lot?"

"Not enough in my life time. I caught just enough to be full."

After Lee Hyun and Seo Yoon went back to their tent, the men's eyes were moist with tears.

"Daddy, there are so many mosquitoes biting. I don't like it here. I wanted to watch TV at home."

"Honey, can't you do this hobby of yours alone?"

They could barely get to talk with their daughters after school and their wives left their home frequently to take a trip with their friends.

These men reminisced their golden age when they were in high

school or university.

‘Sigh… If only I could go back.”

_____

With his nimble hands, Lee Hyun made charcoal fire and placed a grill on top of it.

Until the fire was stable, he made doenjang soup and when the fire was hot enough, he roasted, not pork of beef, but variety of fish!

“Do you want to trade for a rockfish?”

Roaming the other tents, he traded for clams, crabs, sausages and even some cheap wine.

Flipping the fish, he also boiled fish stew.

With gentle crashing of waves in the background, they saw stars shining from the clear sky.

“Let’s eat.”

Eating fish outside was excellent.

After the filling dinner, Lee Hyun even cleaned the dishes.

“You want some coffee?”

“Sure.”

They sat on the beach, savouring a cup of coffee.

When it was completely dark, they could hear chirps of crickets.

All other tents had turned their lights off.

“We should go to sleep as well.”

It was a tent for four so there was sufficient place for two people to sleep in.

Despite that fact, it still felt cramped.

Once in their sleeping bag, they could hear each other’s breath coming from the other side of the tent.

Seo Yoon’s nervous heart was beating fast.

Even in the tent, in a separate sleeping bag, it felt like they were sleeping in the same room.

Seo Yoon was worried that her heartbeat might be heard along with the crash of waves and chirps of crickets.

However, she could soon hear snoring from Lee Hyun.

_____

Lee Hyun woke at dawn to the sound of bird chirping.

Even in an unfamiliar place, he didn't toss and turn. Rather, he slept soundly.

Lee Hyun turned and found Seo Yoon was still asleep facing in his direction.

Getting out of his sleeping bag, he went outside quietly.

'Should I make some crab stew for breakfast?'

Lee Hyun preped the ingredients and waited for Seo Yoon to wake up.

Thinking Seo Yoon was still exhausted from the travel, she didn't wake up even after sunrise.

But the truth was, Seo Yoon slept late staring at Lee Hyun's

sleeping face.

Her first impressions of him, the thoughts she had every time seeing him in Royal Road, the appreciation of going on a trip together.

She opened her heart out and speak about it, but Lee Hyun had no clue as he was busy snoring in his sleep.

“Maybe I should take a walk.”

Lee Hyun walked alonged the sandy beach breathing in the fresh morning breeze.

‘The weather is really nice.’

Birds were chirping as they looked for foods.

And there were a gathering of childrens on the beach, building a sand castle.

‘I want to give it a try.’

Anyone who went to the beach did it at least one time or another.

Lee Hyun never did have a chance to do it but it would be nice way to kill some time.

Ten minutes later the other kids were gathering around and looking at Lee Hyun.

The sand castle he was building was becoming life size reaching about 1.5 meters.

Adults came as well as they watched the ramparts and towers getting built.

This was all thanks to the skill he had mastered in construction sites and sculptures in Royal Road.

An hour later, the sand castle was complete.

People around him complemented him for the perfectness, but their words didn't reach him.

'Not like I can trade this in a real estate... or get money from it.'

A complete utilitarian!

Once the tides came, it would collapse and get wiped out.

It was just a sand castle that would fall even against a little bit of strong wind.

With the sand castle finished, people left one by one, leaving for breakfast or going home.

Lee Hyun watched the coming tides and the sand castle in vain.

“We’ve gone on a trip together now... But someday, she’s going drift apart to the point where I can’t even get close.”

Lee Hyun was willing to let her go for her own sake.

All the time spent with her will remain as memories later.

That was why he wrote something under the castle.

Lee Hyun and Seo Yoon’s house.

_____

When he came back to the tent, Seo Yoon was cooking with the prepared ingredients.

After a filling breakfast they planned to take a look around North Sea a little bit more, before take a train going back home in afternoon.

Lee Hyun packed his stuff and spoke to Seo Yoon as he was tidying up the space.

“I’ll take care of this. Why don’t you get some rest?”

Seo Yoon walked toward the sandy beach.

Once she got back to the city, she would most likely will not be able to see it anymore.

As she barely went outside she decided to pick up some kind of small souvenir, such as conches or pebbles.

“After today, I’ll be going back to my normal life.”

Walking on the sand, she noticed a particularly giant sand castle.

She had no idea who built this but it was a very well-made and sturdy sand castle.

Seo Yoon headed toward it.

Four armies from the Undead Legion advanced toward Morata.

But only two army’s worth made it to the one week distance away from Morata.

Due to some of them having no legs and walking uncomfortably, majority of them were coming late.

Not to mention some of the Undead going off the main route, falling into a well, or circling around a forest.

Because Undead armies disperse a lot when they are on the move, more self inflicted casualties arose.

And with the many ordinary monsters in the north, they disappeared as monsters like goblins, trolls or ogres protect their territories.

“An Undead army is coming this way.”

Players on adventures and hunting ground spotted the Undead army and raised the alarm in Morata.

It was a huge event for the novices and merchants.

The church knight from Freya order was dispatched right after they were assigned to Morata.

“Looks like the church knight is moving out to hunt Undeads.”

“Lu’s order and Freya’s order jointly commissioned an Undead-hunting quests.”

Parties hunting in Morata joined priests and the paladins on the quest.

In the lord's castle, a punitive force was organized to eliminate the Undeads.

There were weak skeletons among the enemies so anyone over level 30 could participate.

"Let's go have some fun."

"Let's beat those Undeads!"

For novices, this was a good event and they could get a lot of experiences for participating in a large-scale suppression.

450 units of the paladins from Freya's order gathered.

These holy knights were unbelievably strong compared to Morata's knights.

Because they do not belong to a city or a village, not even the lord can give them orders.

They only fought for the church when there was a religious crisis or a threat from monsters.

Additional 840 men joined from Lu's priests and Freya's priests respectively, to fight the Undead army.

The manpower was somewhat excellent but there were over 3,000 priests in the punitive force comprised solely of ordinary players.

People with priest class in Morata participated in this quest as it could increases their faith.

Those who were busy or on some quests rushed toward the battlefield.

"Yay, Undeads!"

"God, I love the Undead."

Priests were filled with joys when they saw all the Undeads.

Priests came fast, almost at the same time as paladins, riding on horse to engage the Undead first. There were many other priests in the punitive force who would come later.

Because of the fairly high reputation compared to other cities because of the Goddess statue and the Grand Cathedral, tens of thousands of players chose to become Freya's priests.

It became the reverse with them advancing on the Undead

Legion!

Paladins were mobilized, along with players with class like mercenary, warrior, magician, summoner and bard to joined the punitive force and defend against the invasion from the Undead armies.

Compared to the high-level players across the central continent, their overall average level wasn't very high.

This was due to the high number of novices starting out in Morata every day.

Due to such advantage, Morata became one of the greatest city next to other metropolises.

Early players of Morata had memories of their village being silent and secluded but now, even in the middle of night, merchants were camping out in every square.

Anyone could feel that the village was changing day by day.

Fifty thousand men in the punitive force came early!

It lacked the manpower compared to the two Undead armies, which was approximately over sixty thousand.

But being camped on the hill they had geographic advantage over

the battle.

Their morals were striking high with area-of-effect blessings from the priests.

Zaffran, who was assigned as the captain of the punitive force for this quest shouted loudly.

“Let’s defeat theses Undeads invading our new home, our land!”

“Attack!!!”

Paladins, the punitive force, and the Undeads charged each other.

More players in the punitive force were arriving continuously and the Undead Legion were flowing with Undeads.

The war between two armies, had finally begun.

_____

Polon obtained information from the Hermes Guild.

-Necromancers were summoned by an unknown force and are now fighting for the Undead Legion as Undeads.

Even Necromancers from their guilds were aligned with the Undead Legion.

They had great talent filling in several occupations in the guild but unfortunately, the Necromancer was a recently created position.

The Necromancers who were part of their guild didn't even have high levels and their hunting speeds was slow. They were currently still stuck at the rank of High Level Skeleton.

Zabrin : Seems like every Necromancers in Versailles Continent have been gathered there.

Zabrin reported all the information through the guild's long distance communication channe.

Polon, knights, magicians and rangers in the army including the executives of the Hermes Guild could listen to the report.

Zabrin : I'm seeing every famous Necromancers such as Jeanne or Bohram.

Polon : What is their current quest?

Zabrin : I'm not so sure but they are continuously on battles related quest for the Undead Legion.

Zabrin felt good reporting in.

In Hermes guild, they were given full support if they thought it was necessary.

Not to mention the guild providing good equipment and hunting grounds, they even provided troops for quest and other needs.

If he achieve something this time, he just might be able to participate in a hunting party that was above his current rank!

Since he reported that with his current rank he could not join the other Necromancer who advance further then him on the quest, any help from the guild would be huge help for Zabrin who wasn't even level 300 yet.

The only reason Zabrin joined the Hermes Guild was the greed of receiving support to easily level up.

Zabrin : If you need any kind of information, I'll look into it. I've made many Necromancer friends so I should be able to get any information you want.

Polon : It would be nice if you can create some influence among the Necromancers.

Zabrin : Ok, I'll try. But the most famous and strong Necromancers got promoted to higher rank and is fighting some place close by. Unfortunately my level is low and I cannot follow

them right now.

Polon : Can you wear equipment for magicians?

Zabrin : Yes I can. It’s much better if it’s a cursed item.

Skeletons and ghost could were able to wear equipment without any race limitation.

For example, a cursed item that reduces life and increase mana, could increased both for the Undead.

For Zabrin the cursed items were much better off.

Polon : Whatever you need, you will get it. But you must provide daily reports and inform me immediately if you hear anything important. Any information on Weed takes priority.

Zabrin : You can trust me. As a member of Hermes guild, I will not let you down.

After coming back from the trip, Weed reconnected and was at the canyon where the Undead Legion was situated.

With successful promotion to Death Knight, he was placed in the

canyon for battle.

· Garrison of Kilizar

Ø The Undead Legion have great faith in your abilities.

Ø Having succeeded every mission so far, the Undead Legion expect you to annihilate the enemy in Kilizar canyon.

Difficulty: B

Restriction: Undead Only

The difficulty went up drastically.

Luckily 33 other Necromancers including Jeanne, Otem, Bohram, Harien, Gruzed, Varenna and Goshu came before him.

As they were magicians or summoners before becoming Necromancers their level was already high.

Jeanne would have leveled up many times after becoming a Necromancer and her current level was presumed to be about level 408.

Because each individual had different stat and skills, it was difficult to assume one's level just from the number of Undeads one could summons.

Also taking into considering the possibility that they were hiding their true power, it's was much more complicated.

Varenna revealed her level to be 390 and considering her enormous mana consumption when summoning and casting black magic, Jeanne had to be at least level 408 in comparison.

'No wonder they are considered as one of the best Necromancers.'

Weed acknowledged the Necromancers standing before him.

Not only were they excellent in controlling their Undeads, they didn't hesitate using their perfect skills in battles.

Weed chose a class with direct combat skills while in comparison their class specialized in summoning Undeads.

Death Wizards and Death Witches!

The other players chose class as wizards and witches.

To control the Undeads, corpses need to be raised up and enhanced before battle began.

Also all kinds of curses need to be cast on the enemy, weakening, slowing and confusing them.

Necromancer was a very busy occupation, exploding corpses or summoning guards to defend them.

Compared to other magicians and clerics who could depend on their party members to protect them in battle while steadily setting up magic, Necromancers had a lot to do all the while observe the battlefield.

As a one-man army, they had to support the Undeads, with variety of stats and skills also needing to be increased.

Necromancers' strength differs a lot depending on their own sharp observation, quick reaction time and abilities to grasp the situations but their overall capabilities were beyond expectations.

'Not bad, not bad at all.'

Weed was very satisfied with him being Death Knight.

'It's nice to have great allies.'

When these Necromancers brought the Undeads into the fight, all he had to do was killing off the monsters and obtaining experience and drops.

With thousands of Undeads and monsters tangled up in the fight, there were so many enemies to kill.

‘They are coming endlessly.’

This place is what people would have call a paradise of strong monsters.

There was a reason the humans couldn’t come here to hunt.

The monsters reproduced fast and had the intelligence to move in groups.

Undead Legion were extremely strong but these monsters were of high standards as well.

These Undead wore the weapons and armour plundered long ago after the fall of Niflheim Empire.

Monsters considered the Undead Legion as a serious threat and continuously attacked them. And it was not like Balkan could come and rain endless spells on the monsters.

This was how the chaotic and fierce battlefield for Undeads and monsters was prepared.

Weed hunting deep inside the monsters side, levelled up to 394.

Less than ten minutes later, groups of monsters were coming again.

He saw the rising sand dusts and felt a warmth of life approaching far from here.

“Enemies are coming soon. Use enhancing spells on Undeads.”

As Jeanne spoke, they woke up from their mana-charging meditations and quickly got ready for the next battle.

Necromancers acknowledged Jeanne as their captain.

Because Undead armies needed to cooperate every time they battle, they were specifically given their duties.

“Fight! Do not retreat!”

“Kill them all!”

Undeads summoned by Otem, Bohram, Harien and Gruzed picked up their weapons and shields.

“Bone Strike!”

“Ice Field!”

“Poison Cloud!”

“Unholy Weapon!”

On the canyon, Jeanne, Varenna, Goshu and other players continued to casted offensive spells.

All kinds of curses and spells from high-level Necromancers struck the army of monsters heading toward the canyon.

Skeleton mages and archers rained their respective ammunition.

Another battle starting deep into the night!

Undeads had their geographical advantages but these monsters were impressive as well.

They were breaking through, slicing Undeads with axes.

“Sumon Ghost Horse!”

Weed got on his horse.

- Horse’s morale is at its maximum

Fighting spirit, charisma and agility increase by 10%.

As his ghost horse appeared, it increased his stat as Death Knight.

“Go!”

NEIGHHH!

On his horse, Weed ran down the cliff.

His horse-riding skills weren’t that great at first but it continue to improve when he was a Skelton Knight and Death Knight.

Even so, the courage to run down a cliff on a horse!

“Here I come my experience and items!”

He charged into monsters trying to climb the cliff riddled with arrows and spells.

Chapter 5: Canyon Of The Death Knight

Weed hunted over 45 Barit monsters.

Running down the slopes of the canyon on his ghost horse, every slashed dealt a precise killing blow on these Barits!

“Who is that Death Knight?”

“I don’t know. Choosing to be a combatant rather than an Undead summoner and still coming this far. Does anyone know that guy?”

“I think I’ve seen him in Kapua. There was a ghost knight that made monsters shiver just by looking at him. Could it be him?”

“Oh! That ghost knight.”

The Necromancers stared down at Weed’s action from the end of the canyon, admiring his movements.

Sword rotated freely in his hand as he slashed every Barits in his way.

On a horse, the knight’s charge was one of the most useful skill available.

The skill increased the attack multiple times thanks to the additional speed and weight.

However, attacking with a sword or skill while riding on horseback at full speed was extremely hard.

And this was not a flat plain, but a canyon with uneven surface.

One needed a perfect balance between the riding the reckless horse and measuring the attack distance to the enemy.

This was difficult even for players who chose to be knights and spend thousands of hours practicing horseback riding.

“How can he fight so well?”

“It’s like he has eyes at the back of his head. That’s absurd.”

“His combinations of skills and dynamics, word can't describe it. I am really curious about who that person is.”

Horses weren’t always helpful.

Even if your charge attack was successful, it created a backlash.

If the backlash couldn’t be withstood, there is a chance of falling off from the horse.

If heavy armour were worn when thrown off the horse, the impact caused confusion or paralysis status so it could become highly dangerous.

To fighting like that on a horse... The Necromancers were amazed.

It looked as if they were watching a beast.

Barit was a tough monster.

They were big as a bear, these aggressive monsters lived in a herd and their level even exceeded 350.

With their excellent instinct their sense of combat was outstanding making them difficult to hunt.

Most hunting parties avoided facing groups of Barits exactly for this reason.

But Weed, he charged the Barits with no fear or hesistation.

In the battlefield littered with Undeads and Barits, he fought with most optimal movement.

Of course these Barits were dangerous and often inflicted serious damages but Balkan was someplace close from here.

Due to this the effect of Death Aura was more powerful allowing him to fight continuously as it constantly regenerated his health.

After defending the canyon for the third time, Necromancers were finally able to catch a break with the coming of the dawn as the number of monsters appearing dropped.

As Weed was coming up the canyon riding on his horse, Otem spoke to him.

“Hey, excuse me.”

“Yes?”

Weed answered with his face still covered by his helmet, this was out of courtesy since his face was just a skull.

It was not only him, most Necromancer players concealed their body with robes. It made for a pretty weird scenery.

“Not many people chose combat related class... you are very nimble. Do you like fighting in such manner?”

“……”

Weed was not used to complements.

‘Is he saying that I fought well? I shouldn’t have stood out so much, it’s going to affect how much items I can pick up.’

In his conscience, he only picked up items from monsters he defeated himself.

But to be honest, he did kill plenty of near dead monsters.

Under the canyon it was a cluster of mess and craziness that attacking Barit one-by-one with full health was an impossibility.

So fighting the Barits that were distracted by the other Undead, the curses and Corpse Explosion spells flying about helped immensely.

He didn’t know exactly which Necromancers decided to help him but calculating the mana use, there were about two.

While he was charging in between the Barits, they frequently summoned Bone Shields or Bone Walls to block the incoming attacks.

Truthfully many of the Barits he defeated were already near death.

In return there were many other Barits that were left stuned in his wake that he couldn’t finish off.

Regardless he was on the constant look out for the boss Barits to kill.

Since he was fighting down the canyon, it was different from Kapua village where it was impossible not to stand out.

“I observed the whole thing.”

“.....”

“You seem pretty strong. Wouldn’t it be convenient to join forces in this canyon?”

Otem suggests to team up and fight together.

One of few female player Harien also chimed in.

“That’s right. You should join us there won’t be any harm in it. We could use some help and it looks like you need some summons there too.”

It seemed that as Weed was a combat class rather than a summoner they did not think he was part of the competition, with their expression lacking any jealousy or anger.

In this canyon co-operating with others was key to successfully completing the quest, also the Necromancers need to be on the

constant look out for corpses to raise up a first rate Undead.

Usually Necromancers tried their best to recruit any level of mercenaries, even low-level ones at a high price. Even so as Necromancers had bad reputations in general it was hard to recruit mercenaries.

They did this as if someone could fight for them in the front line it was a tremendous help to them.

It was same for Weed, with monsters swarming all over the canyon it was hard to block everywhere.

Though it was called a canyon, in terms of size it was only wide enough to allow seven chariots to pass at one time. And if he was to fight alone even after 24 hours of non-stop fighting, it would not be enough.

With the monsters also flinging arrows and stone at him, it was too much to handle alone.

“In the best interest of defending this canyon, I think it would be best to help each other. You never know what is going to happen next, so why not team up?”

Even Jeanne was saying her piece, so Weed could not refuse the offer.

“Alright.”

Deploying the Undead equally it was agree that Weed would fight freely just as before.

Necromancers weren't fit for a party in the first place and this method allowed the best tactic considering the geographic features of the canyon.

"Uuhihihihih."

Zabrin arrived at Kapua village equipped with items from the Hermes Guild.

"They sure have a lot of items."

In Hermes Guild's safe there were piles of rare and cursed items.

Zabrin was in a state where cursed items were useful so he picked the most effective ones.

A ring that reduces luck by 140 but protects the user against specters, armor that spreads rotten mephitis in a body, necklace that creates mana and strength by sacrificing health and a denture for skeletons!

It was too bad that he couldn't take everything he wanted but

these items for Undeads were truly excellent.

Zabrin managed to double his weak magic power.

Even the rod he was holding was an item specifically for Necromancers!

It made the summoned Undeads rough and fast while shortening their lifespan but in here where corpses were plentiful, it wan't a problem.

'Now it will be a bit easier.'

Joining the Hermes Guild was truly an excellent choice.

Siding with a guild of terrifying strength, power and authority came naturally.

Even after he was promoted to a ghost, Zabrin did not stop participating in quest using Undeads.

There were so many items he could get if he could just be qualified for it.

"Arrg!

Geomchi287 fell down on the ground.

“I lost again.”

The match that started with Geomchi505 continued on with higher ranking trainees participating but they continued to lose.

Sword Master Ash’s Sword-cloning skill!

Once it was activated, the player’s body multiplied up to 40 times.

It was hard to distinguish the real from the fake bodies, as the clones had mana and about 15% of the original’s strength.

It was a fantastic skill proving the reason for player’s eagerness to get a hold of the Sword Master’s skill.

Every time Ash won, he spoke.

“To master my skills, you need supreme swordsmanship. You have met the qualification. I shall teach you my Sword-cloning skill.”

It was an unbelievable offer.

Though they could not defeat Ash, they lasted a long time against him. With their combat response, instinct and weapon skill they met the qualification to learn the Sword-cloning skill.

Geomchis also respected the strong.

“If you will teach me I will learn it.”

No reason to refuse someone who was willing to teach a strong skill!

- You learned the Sword-cloning skill.

They didn’t have to fight seriously but the Geomchis wanted a fair fight.

Fighting with all their strength and skill a lot of time had passed.

Geomchi5 fought Ash evenly.

After a while of attacking the clones who had low life, he struck a direct hit on Ash.

Though he succeed slashing Ash with his sword, Ash’s unbelievable defense and life made barely a scratch.

However, Geomchi5 wasn't an idiot that only touted his strength.

Before he became an instructor he spent all his teenage year fighting.

When he reached his twenties the fight became life or death battle so he knew how to fight well.

'Damage the real one to weaken the clones.'

CLAAAAANG!

Geomchi5's sword clashed with Ash's blade and continued to slide down.

The moment the swords clashed and joined, he twisted his wrist in a split second and crushed Ash's blade.

Not even a legendary sword's durability would survive when a thick sword pressed passed it.

In reality, it would be fine as long as it was not completely broken but this was Royal Road.

- You reduced Ash's sword durability by -4%

Ash's attack is reduced by -11%

And then he pressed the attack!

- You have inflicted a critical strike.

- You have slashed Ash’s chest.

- You have slashed Ash’s knee through his armour.

With Ash’s sword becoming dull, the clones weakened as well.

Geomchi5 proved that the Sword-cloning skill was not an almighty skill.

“You are truly an amazing swordsman. I would like to remember your name.”

“I am known as Geomchi5.”

- You have shown excellence in your duel against the Sword Master Ash.

Ø With an outstanding duel that would be enough to be recorded in the history of swordsmen, all combat related stats increase by 6.

Ø Fame increase by +5,800

Ø Proficiency in weapon skills have increased.

- Having fought Ash with lower rated weapons and armour, all stats will increase additionally by +3.

- Through the match you learned the swordsman skill, Sword cloning.

Geomchi4 inflicted critical strikes six times in a row.

Geomchi3 left a hole in Ash's armor.

They chose different methods of reducing Ash's life so they could take care of clones faster.

They all acknowledged Ash after their fight.

"That guy is really strong. No matter how many times I hit him, there is no mark."

"Yes hyeognim. His stamina is endless."

"Even without his skill, it would be hard to win against him one on one. Unless you level up 200 more times."

Ash always managed to adjust his strength and fight them on an even level.

If he didn't do so, they wouldn't even be able to clash their

swords with Ash.

“But I don’t think it will be impossible to beat him.”

Geomchi487 spoke after fighting Ash.

His sword and armor have become like rags.

It reached a point where the swordsman had to fight with his bare fists.

If all the Geomchi’s jump on Ash at the same time, no one could promise if Sword Master Ash could survive.

When hunting a high-level monster with a guild or party, it was obvious double up on the enemy.

All kinds of blessings and rear supports from clerics were compulsory.

But these Geomchis fought one by one fairly and were satisfied with it because their opponent was a swordsman.

“Well, we had a good time. Anyways, I think had enough rest. Let’s get back to swimming.”

Geomchis jumped into the sea to start swimming across to the

Northern continent.

They received an ardent farewell.

They became really close enough to catch and eat fishes together.

“Farewell. Please you my skills to good use.”

“We won’t use our swords on those weaker than us.”

But they didn’t reveal what was going on their minds.

‘I need to beat this guy someday... But I don’t know where this is.’

‘Next time I am definetly going to kill you with my sword.’

———————————————————————————————

Co-operating with the other Necromancers, Weed was able to defend the canyon successfully for the eleventh time.

The contents of the quests kept changing bit by bit but the main objectives always remained the same, to defend the canyon.

‘The central station of Undead Legion is located behind here.’

By getting information from the quests, Weed was able to assume its whereabouts.

As reinforcements came sometimes from their central station of the Undead Legion.

Weed raised himself as a front line fighter ever since he was a skeleton.

That was why he didn't have a high expectation for the Undeads.

But as battles continued, he was given underlings.

"Please give your command, lord!"

Every time he made received an achievements, nearby Death Knights, Dullahans and Skeletons were swearing their obedience to Weed.

With every successful quests, either his rank got promoted or he obtained a Death Knight.

"Hmm!"

Weed had zero attachment to his Undead underlings.

No matter how much you raise them, it's over once they die.

"It's a dog eat dog world."

Thus, Weed's true colours came out.

"Fight in the front line. Do not step back. Fight until you crush them. Kill them all!"

"Yes, lord!"

"We will follow the lord's command."

"We will carry out the orders of the commander of the dark army."

With Undead underlings in front of him, Weed killed monsters left and right.

"Attack, attack, attack!"

The tactics he would often employ was no where to be seen here.

He just encouraged the battle onward.

The fiercer these monsters and Undeads fight, there were more chance of rich hunting opportunities.

These Undeads could be revived by Necromancers players anyways and there was the Undead Legion nearby so there was absolutely no need to value them.

All he did was ordering them to fight fiercely but something suddenly happened that even Weed didn't expect.

- As a Death Knight by ordering an aggressive assault on the enemy, Knight's leadership is activated.

Ø The item you are storing, Emperor of the continent's seal is activated.

Ø By the emperor's authority, maximum loyalty and morale of the Undead increase by +25%.

Ø By supplementing the Undead's morale their attack increase by +17%.

Ø Your command to assault is sent to the Undead Legion.

With the Emperor of the continent's seal, which was the royal seal of the emperor of Arpen, Undeads were fighting the monsters with amazing attack capabilities.

Compared to when Weed was a sculptor, these commanding skills didn't activate fully.

But now that he was a Death Knight a type of a knight class, his commanding ability increased by 100% with the activation of its effects.

"Lord, I offer you my loyalty."

“Everyone, attack on the order of our commander!”

More and more Dullahans and Death knights swore their loyaty to Weed.

With that the Undead army, on Weed’s orders, managed to take down monsters with monstrous strength.

The Undead could only show their full potential while attacking.

Leadership increased by +1.

Infrequently, Weed’s leadership related stats increased as he fought alongside his underlings.

There was no doubt that the summoned Undeads from the Necromancers and the reinforcements from the Undead Legion made the bulk of the army.

But under Weed’s presence, the entire Undead army became a whole new force.

They were so loyal to Weed that they carried out his orders immediately.

“Death Knights, fall back.”

“Falling back my lord!”

Weed instructed a withdrawal.

As soon as the Death Knights withdrew, the heavily wounded Barit leader swung around its whip insanely.

“You are mine!”

Weed satisfied his selfish interest and desires!

Just like other stats, a sculptor had uniquely high charisma, leadership and fighting spirit.

Though the Emperor of the continent’s seal was active he did not bother to stack up the effect by taking out the Demon Sword of Kolderim or the Horn of Treserk.

So far, Weed collected almost every good item drops possible in this hunts and quests.

He could just imagine what could happen if he put all these high value items on auction!

But for now, he decided to wait.

‘I’m not wasting these on the Undeads!’

Power increased proportionally to the equipment. Weed didn’t even need to use the Lion’s Roar skill, these Undead who lacked intelligence followed his command loyally.

They did whatever Weed told them to do and gave their loyalty even after the monsters vanish.

Before Weed came to the canyon, not every quest was successfully accomplished.

When these monsters broke through the defence line and entered the Undead Legion’s central station, the quest failed and fame and reputation decreased.

When they were begging in their minds for strong allies, Death Knight Weed arrived.

They had no expectations of him so they were amazed at Weed’s fighting skills.

When they had free time to gather mana by meditating once they were done with their duties of summoning more Undeads, strengthening the defensive line with bones or using Death Plant spells, they all watched Weed’s actions.

Every time Weed gave a command, the Undeads responded as fast as possible.

He desperately resisted against these monsters with his Undead underlings!

He was truly a king of Undeads! Or could it be said knights of knights?

The horse riding knight! Whose class was characterized by strong defence, attack, loyalty and honour.

It was amazing to see him lead such battles even though Undead had very low intelligence.

“GULP!”

“Wow, amazing.”

“How can he be that strong? Was he originally a Death Knight?”

“If he commanded humans rather than the Undeads... There is a no doubt that he would be able to control tens of thousands soldiers. If someone like him initiate a siege warfare, it would be a sight to see.”

Undeads listened to Necromancers fairly well.

Even if their leadership or charisma were low, the summoned Undeads had to listen to them.

But still, they didn’t understand complicated instructions such as battle formations.

In contrast, Weed fought even while considering the dullness of the Undeads.

A combined force of Death Knights, skeleton archers and a skeleton mages.

Using them to their individual strength and taking them deep into the enemy line, he would use them remorsely as a sacrificial goat to shoot spells and arrows at full power.

Chasing after the retreating Barits and instilling fear into them.

The focus in attack, baiting of enemies and demolishing anything in their advance… The whole thing proceeded very fast.

Having experienced many large scale battles, his usual tactics melted into his attacks.

“His really amazing.”

“With a person like that how far along the quest could he go?”

Necromancers were half jealous and half curious at the same time.

No one knew when the Undead Legion's quests end.

The only thing that was known was that by succeeding more quests, the rank in the Undead became higher.

Looking back, they were gradually given more important quests. How far would it go on for?

There were so many Undead summons and Undead related skills that these Necromancers players haven't been able to master yet.

Necromancers were considered a sin and with whole schools of guilds were called to bring them down, the only magic that could be learned was the ones recorded in books long time ago.

But being in the Undead Legion, depending on the achievement they received gifts from Balkan which sometimes contained Undead related spells.

It was after all Balkan Demoph who mastered every Undead related spells.

Players wanted to meet the legendary Lich.

Therefore while there was a great competition between the Necromancers, it was Weed the Death Knight that was making the greatest achievements.

“I am beginning to slowly hate this guy…”

Gruzed casted spell near where Weed was fighting down in the canyon.

“Corpse Explosion!”

Corpse Explosion at close range could inflict damage several times the value of the health of the corpses.

Casting the spell on purpose and seeing how strong Weed was, he was confident the spell wouldn’t kill him.

‘Have a taste of this.’

A spell casted purposely on Weed to inflict a huge damage on him.

But it was as if Weed knew that already, he hid between the Barits and avoided all the damage from the explosion.

The awesomeness of Weed hunting bravely even with corpses exploding!

Weed was aware of the hunting methods among the Necromancer players.

To supplement the reducing manpower, Undead needed to be summoned endlessly to replace the number from the increasing number of corpses.

But with corpses piling around him and not being raise up as Undead again, he was on a caution and when the spell was activated, he hid between monsters right away.

It was an obvious event for Weed, who hasn't been welcomed for a quite a while due to his superiority.

While continuously defending Killizar canyon, Weed's quest changed with it.

Rise of the Death Knight's Leadership

Through battle you need to raise up:

30 Elite Skeleton Archers

5 Big Dullahans

15 Royal Death Knight bodyguards.

By completing this mission you will gain a deeper trust with the Undead Legion.

Reward: Undead's loyalty.

Qualification for the next rank in the Undead Legion's hierarchy.

Restriction: Death Knight Only

“The babysitting never ends!”

Because it didn’t have a deadline, Weed didn’t care about the Undeads.

“Fight, no charge, charge!”

After giving a command, he actively attacked the Barits with a squadron of Death Knights and Dullahans.

Undeads around him collapsed but he didn’t feel anything for them.

‘They can always be revived anyway.’

Once Necromancers players re-summoned the collapsed Undeads, they could be revived.

If that happens, they were no longer Weed’s subordinates but he didn’t feel a smidgen of sympathy for them.

Who gave a mind when this place was already filled with Undeads?

“I want to follow orders from you commander.”

“I heard about your reputation and came from the Undead Army. I, the Death Knight Tedra, want to fight with you.”

He accepted every incoming Undeads.

- A Skeleton Archer has been promoted as an elite.

Additional skills, ‘piercing arrow’, ‘poison arrow’, ‘high-flying arrow’ has been added.

Skeleton’s agility has been increased by 15%.

With each battle, Weed’s Undead underlings promoted to an elite and he completed the quest.

“Now I understand the commander’s orders.”

“I lost myself in the rage while fighting but I will prioritize commander’s orders from now.”

Death Knight’s wisdom and intelligence increased by +2%

Dullahan’s field of vision expanded.

Their overall combat abilities increased.

Weed’s army comprised of 142 Skeleton Archers, 57 Elite Skeleton Archers, 11 Dullahans, 29 Big Dullahans, 9 Death Knights and 24 Elite Death Knight bodyguards.

Considering the enhancement caused by Balkan’s Undead blessing spells and Death Aura, it was a significant force to be reckoned with.

It was similar for in the canyons, as the time passed more and more players appeared and the number of Undead that was summoned increased.

Barits were tough but as number of one-man army Necromancers increased, their hunting rate became extremely fast.

Except for the players that just turned into Necromancers in Versailles Continent, every other long time Necromancers was gathered here.

· Undead's Furgol Expedition

Ø Witches in the Undead Army are getting annoyed by the invasions of Furgol.

Ø Advance toward the Furgol habitat, this quest will only end once they have all been killed and turned into Undead.

Ø However, according to the information these witches obtained, the Furgol warriors noticed the suspicious behaviour of the Undead and will only arrive a week later.

Difficulty: A

Reward: Either a magic spell from the witches or promotion to the next rank.

Restriction: Undead Only.

A party quest for players in the canyon!

Weed and the other players wondered how far these chained quests from Undead Legion would go.

‘Wouldn’t it lead to unbelievable rewards?’

‘Maybe I can learn forbidden Undead summon spells or black magic from Balkan himself…’

‘It would be nice if I could get a unique Undead from the Undead Legion!”

Necromancers wanted high-level Undead summon spells or a unique Undead that could be summoned anytime like Van Hawk.

“As the quest difficult is so high, I suggest everyone need to team up now.”

The gathered Necromancers voted Jeanne as their leader and captain for the expedition.

“Having given me the responsibility for this difficult quest I will do my best.”

“With Jeanne-nim in charge, I’m feeling relieved.”

“First of all, I believe we should all decide on the time.”

They decided to start the quest nine days later, when most Necromancers were able to connect.

They also talked to remaining players in Kapua, helping them out so many players could join them 9 days later.

They didn’t waste any time waiting till the agreed for the quest. Jeanne, Otem, Harien, Goshu along with some players went on ahead to scout out the Furgol’s habitat.

Their plan was to target the spam the Furgol’s habitat with as many people and Undead as possible!

It seemed simple but nothing more could be done.

Weed heard about this later but he could not find fault with the plan.

‘High level players sure know how to take care of themselves.’

Until then, all he has to do is keep himself busy with hunting.

‘With so many gone scouting my share just become bigger!’

Kaaaa-ak!

Kerururararara!

In the mountains and forests pretty far away from Morata, it was filled with monsters.

Some players from Morata came to hunt in a party but no one dared to go deeper. High level adventurers gave it a pass as they were only interested in dungeon explorations which brought in treasures, fame and experience.

As monsters in the mountains or forests reproduce, they came down to the village, sacking and degenerate public order.

But one day the monsters have been hit by a bolt out of the blue.

Several living sculptures such as a Bingryong, Wyvern and a Phoenix started their hunt.

“They are yummy.”

The monster devouring savagery.

“They give a lot of money as well.”

No one could resist the allure of money.

“We must survive.”

They cared about their safety especially.

When Arpen Empire still existed in the past, there were many Sculpture Lifeforms around the continent.

As time passed, they lost their origin, became monsters or settled down as a new race with new culture.

Some didn’t prosper and disappeared all together.

With such history behind them, these Sculpture Lifeforms put everything into their growth to save themselves.

“Gol Gol Gol Gol, I’m here!”

Riding on Yellowy, Gold Man appeared to the place where Bingryong, Phoenix and Wyvern were.

“Gold Man!”

Wy-3 came first and welcomed it rubbing against its face.

Wy-3 assumed it lost his memory after being reborn but Gold

Man embraced the Wyverns with joy.

“It’s nice to see you Wyverns again, Gol gol gol.”

In fact it was all an act to fool Weed that he lost his memories.

While these Sculpture Lifeforms were having a touching reunion, Wyvern sharp eyes noticed the change in Gold Man’s appearance.

“Gold Man’s eyes have changed.”

It was bigger than before. It even had double eyelid.

It was a special reward from Weed for throwing his body out to save him.

Necromancers scouting the Furgol’s habitat came back.

“This will not be an easy quest. It’s not a habitat. It’s a kingdom.”

They said it was a fortress protected by warriors, guards, magicians, shamans and the great Furgol king as well.

“It was built on a cliff. Climbing all the way up will be impossible for the Undeads.

One thing good about the Undeads was that as long as there were corpses, their numbers could be infinite.

However, not only was it hard to revive completely shattered Undeads that fell from the cliff, they would have to climb back from the start.

It was a quest where Necromancers had to initiate a siege warfare and take the fortress!

“For now, it’s impossible we should find another method.”

Jeanne and Necromancers were in a serious discussion.

At a time like this, Weed just watched as usual.

‘Do just enough, just follow what others are doing!’

If he shows great abilities, he would be assigned to a tiresome role.

“I was just lucky.”

“I have some power to control Undeads. But all these Undeads lack intelligence so anyone can do this much.”

“Me? Fighting in the front line? Not at all. I was just supporting standing beside so many Undeads. Even if my horse-riding skill and attack looks strong, it wouldn’t be a match against the might of a united Undead.”

Even though they saw it with their own eyes, by keep repeating disparaging remarks and his weakness it was hard to acknowledge him seriously.

To be honest, these Necromancers thought Weed was a great Death knight but they thought he could only achieve this thanks to their summoned Undead.

Weed cleverly used modesty to avoid any tough duties!

Their debates continued.

“Can’t we collapse the fortress completely with a spell?”

“I only developed Undead summoning spells, Corpse Explosion and curse spells…”

“Anyone here with high level attack spell or black magic?”

“I don’t have a strong enough spell that could collapse a fortress or destroy walls…”

Necromancers were able to learn black magic.

But the moment they learned it, it came with many penalties.

Among them was high notoriety and faith reached zero.

Reputation and morality went into the negative, and it was also possible to partially lose wisdom and intelligence.

The process of mastering black magic was unique compared to other magic.

As proficiency in black magic increase by using live animals as offerings, notoriety increased while other stats decreased as black magic level advanced.

Necromancers already had several side effects just by Undead summons. It was rare to find a Necromancer players with black magic.

“I did learn black magic up to level 2...”

“That wouldn’t be of any help in a large scale battle. Is there no one with more powerful black magic?”

Out of 43 Necromancers, only 12 knew black magic.

A simple black magic was good enough for enhancing their Undead summons so they learned it.

But there were only two players among them that could use it directly in battle and inflict some damages.

“I guess we have no choice but to bring all our Undeads and fight.”

“If someone reaches there and bait them, maybe these Furgols will open the gate and come out.”

“That would make things much easier… First, let’s set up a time and when most Necromancers are gathered then we will all go.”

With no one assigning any role, Weed just stood and watched.

He could raise blacksmith skill by creating siege weapons but it wouldn’t be very useful at this point.

He could gather all the necessary material around here to build it but on one could operate the siege weapon.

There were too few Necromancers and it was not like they could make their Undead handle the siege weapon.

Skeletons had low intelligence and they only move on their instincts. They were completely useless outside battles.

Dullahans didn’t have their heads in the right place. They move

around with their heads in their hands so it was impossible to aim for them.

Death Knights with their, relatively speaking, high intelligence would be useful but they were busy enough leading the other Undeads into battle.

On top of that, once the siege weapons were built, there was a problem with logistics.

Necromancer's critical weakness was that they lacked any decent shielding magic, so these siege weapons were vulnerable to enemy spell fires.

Siege weapons were completely useless if there is no one to operate it or protect it.

In general, a siege warfare was a battle where the attacking side was at a disadvantage by three fold.

Chapter 6: Furgol Fortress

Otem was leading the way with the other Necromancers following him while dragging along their Undeads.

Looking from far away, the sight of large contingent of the Undead following them could be seen.

Weed and his Undead underlings also followed from the rear line.

Skeletons, Dullahans and Death knights marched with Weed, who was riding boldly on his ghost horse.

It could not be said that they had a large number but they were elite soldiers forged through difficult battles.

Elite Skeletons and Elite Death Knight bodyguards!

“Keuuu, the Lord has ordered us gather up and follow him.”

“Everyone move faster.”

Undeads were afraid of Weed.

It was not only due to his charisma and leadership but the strong will he demonstrated in battles!

It was also because they witnessed his reckless behavior in taking down enemy forces even if it means putting the Undeads in danger.

- Fear felt by the Undead contingent: 87%

Exerting just enough fear helped motivate them in battle and made them follow Weed loyally.

In large battles when one point collapsed, it could cause a chain reaction and collapsed the entire formation. Though this didn't happen often, fear helped prevent such situation from occurring.

"Cough, the distance is quite far."

Just hearing Weed cough caused the Skeletons to shiver like trees in winter.

Skeletons walked dragging their swords on the ground, while the Dullahans and Death Knights protected the sides and rear.

It wasn't necessary but looking at it he judged that it would be better to move in format so he ordered them to do so.

Other variety of Undeads were scattered about or gathered around, lagging behind the others and generally doing as they

please.

It was uncommon for Necromancers to drag their Undead with them.

They had set hunting grounds and did not move around far from it.

Necromancers had to focus several times in controlling Undeads.

Weed told them to gather up follow him but there were still few breakaways.

“Hurry up, get moving.”

“The lord has spoken. Do not get out of your position!”

Death Knights and Dullahans repeated Weed’s orders and commanding them.

While on the move, they spotted Furgol search party but the Necromancers poured their magic to clear them out.

“We have to save mana so please fight moderately.”

As they encountered more scout parties, Necromancers reduced their use of attack spells to save mana.

As a result few Furgols survived and ran away.

“Alert the castle about the Undead invasion!”

“They are coming!”

There were some distance between Furgols so they had to attack with them with magic.

Weed frowned while looking at the surviving scout fleeing back.

“Nothing good will come of this.”

The Necromancer’s tried to calm their worries.

“Don’t worry about the search party. No matter what we do, there is no way they wouldn’t know we were coming.”

Otem was in charge of the march.

Other high level Necromancers were riding on wagons dragged by the Undeads and refilled their mana with meditations.

Beside the quick mana regeneration, meditations also doubled the player’s maximum mana temporarily.

It could be said it was a must-have skill for using a high rank spell or preparing for a huge battle.

“When the scouts are close, send out a unit of Undead to hunt them. For now, let us save mana while on the move.”

Following Otem’s instruction, Necromancers focused on advancing with their Undeads and left the Furgols alone.

Some search party came too close and got hunted down but most of the time, they kept their distance and just watched the Undeads move.

‘We shouldn’t have let the Furgols aware of our approach.’

Weed had a bad feeling about this.

The Undead army moving right now was humongous in number.

Their advance were slow and they did not know the terrain well enough to camouflage their movement.

Even so if they prepared well it would have been possible for the Furgol Kingdom to be aware of their advance much later.

They were not humans who would light a signal fire on top of a mountain when they noticed the enemy’s advance. By hunting the scouts as fast as possible so they won’t be any survivors left, the

Furgol Kingdom might not have noticed.

Letting the survivors go was something that would have never happened under Weed's watch.

Even if the search parties weren't that strong, once the war began they would be facing them again in the fortress.

There was no need to increase the number of enemies.

Hunting them when you can and wiping out everything, that was Weed's method.

'Whatever, they can manage by themselves.'

Weed just kept on following them silently.

Necromancers were competing among themselves to be the best, so the rivalry and jealousy was beyond normal.

It wasn't a favourable time to join in and the majority of the force here were Undeads led by the Necromancers.

'Compared to overall composition of the Undead, I am on the weak side.'

Being constantly observed by Furgol search parties, they arrived

at the location of the fortress.

The Fortress wall were stacked with bricks made by baked mud, and it was situated on a steep slope making it very difficult for the Undead to climb up.

Furgol soldiers were already preparing for battle on top of the walls.

When the battle began it became clear which side was stronger.

Jeanne stopped her meditation and opened her eyes.

“Undead armies, attack!”

Following the command of the Necromancers the Undeads ran forward.

Skeletons, ghouls, zombies, Dullahans and Death Knights!

Weed’s army followed after the Undeads but never went up to the front.

It was because Weed ordered them to not fight and wait.

It’s was easy to revive Undeads but when they were revived, all the abilities developed till then would disappear.

He had to prevent losing his forces in a reconnoitring skirmish!

The arrows shot by Furgols rained down on the Undeads.

A small portion of Undeads with low life such as the Skeletons died but the rest arrived at a narrow corner leading up to the fortress.

“Kiyauu!”

“Advance!”

Undeads ran uphill.

The Furgol’s arrows were focused on the narrow path and boulders rolled down, crushing the Undead in its way.

While trying to avoid them some of the Undead fell down the cliff.

They only suffered huge casualties with none of them being able to reach the fortress.

“Forget the path, climb up the cliff!”

Jeanne screamed.

With her current leadership ability, it impossible to command the Undead army as a whole.

But other Necromancers gave the same orders and the Undeads started climbing up the cliff with their two arms and two legs.

The Undeads had excellent physical abilities and they still had a semblance of instincts remaining so it wasn't impossible for them to climb up.

Jeanne and other Necromancers thought of attacking the fortress through the path where the enemy's attacks was concentrated was impossible.

Even if they reached the end of the path, it would be difficult to get pass the gate without suffering huge casualties. So they ordered the assault by climbing the cliff to divide the enemy's attack.

"Let's buy some time so the Undeads can climb up."

Necromancer's casted attack spells toward the fortress.

Fireballs struck the fortress and dark smokes of black magic arose getting bigger every time it touched a Furgol, draining their essences.

The attack spells were on the weak side and it didn't have the

power to destroy the walls.

It was only strong enough to make archers in the fortress dodge for a moment and after a while continue shooting arrows again.

The black magic state was also low, stopping and disappearing after a short while later.

During this time many Undeads were able to climb up the cliff but as their hands slip or they lose their footing, they fell off the cliff crashing to the ground below.

When they fell down, they bumped into other Undeads. As they were blitzing the enemy many of the Undead were crowed below.

The defensless Undead received damages every time they are hit by arrows, when one fell down, tens of them bumped into each other, all falling down and getting crushed.

Climbing walls clearly wasn’t a bad tactic and it was worth trying agin but they just lacked the preparations.

It would have been nice if Undeads wore helmets, armours or at least a wooden shield but for Undead it was the same without it.

With all the adversity, the Undeads tried to climb up to the fortress but it was impossible for Skeletons, Dullahans and Death knights to use their bare hands to climb this tightly stacked brick walls without ladders.

They slipped a lot and when they were tried not to fall, they were hit by arrows and died.

“It’s not possible. Retreat!”

Jeanne at the end gave up and recalled the Undeads with other Necromancers.

Coming down the cliff wasn’t easy as well as the Furgol did not just stay still.

Counting the number of Undeads that came back safely, about third of the army was damaged.

Of course Weed’s unit barely had any casualties and had to take glares from many others but they were not in a situation to quibble about it.

———————————————————————————————

“Are we going to give up the Undead Legion’s quest like this? At this rate the Furgol warriors will be coming back and it will become much harder.”

“Well, we should definitely try few more assaults. But without any good plans right now don’t have any big expectations on the outcome.”

“It looks like the quest will be cleared if we have more Necromancers. Was it not enough with us?”

“Maybe this is our end.”

It was just too much to let Balkan’s Undead Legion quest to end like this.

Because it was a quest that were given to all the Necromancers, it was not a simple quest with the difficulty being that much higher.

If Necromancers grew up fast and number of Necromancers increased, it would be a lot easier than now. However, the situation wasn’t like that at all.

While these Necromancers lost their will and were discussing what’s going to happen next, Weed sewing up a fallen button like usual.

“Really getting a free ride is not possible.”

It would be really good if he could just observe and the quest ended like that but the situation was not that favourable.

Necromancers were very clumsy in cooperation and group battles.

It was suffocating to see them judge that by summoning as many Undead as possible to fight was enough.

“What naïve people they chose to be Necromancers and yet haven’t even invaded, sacked or carried out an arson…”

If Weed was a Necromancers from the beginning instead of a sculptor, it was possible that he would have gathered Undeads and devoured few industrial cities already.

These naïve and conscientious Necromancers didn’t know a basic thing about invasion, it was clear to see with their clumsy actions.

When the Furgol’s fortress gate opened the first thing he planned to do was count the treasures, starting from a spoon. But he had to worry about how to conquer the fortress first.

“There are many possible options.”

Thanks to his experiences from many battles, he came up with tactics exploiting the weakness of the fortress right away.

Weed murmured one of his tactics near Harien.

“… have to do that.”

“Pardon?”

“Even if the main objective is to conquer the fortress… There no need to hurry until their supports arrive…”

Weed was not starting a conversation, he was murmuring, pretending to talk to himself.

_____

“Move faster! I heard news that our kingdom is being attacked by the Undead.”

Furgol’s reinforcements!

The Furgol warriors that dispersed to hunt were running back to their kingdom.

Their number was over 9,000!

If all the Furgols gather, their forces would be able to surround the Necromancers and eliminate them.

“Attack!”

But instead of losing their forces on the siege warfare, the Necromancers ambushed the Furgol warriors on their way back.

They used the best places to hide the Undead and ambush the

Furgols, wiping every single one of them.

When the Furgols died they were revived as Undead inflating Necromancers' forces.

The best part was the number of reinforcement heading back decreased.

"Knowing that the reinforcements were coming, rather than falling in danger trying to conquer the fortress as fast as possible, just hunting the reinforcements first was right!"

On flat lands, it could be said that the Undeads strength were extraordinary.

It was possible to overwhelm the enemies with the number of Skeletons and every time Furgols died, they could inflict more damage using Corpse Explosions or turning them into Undeads.

Necromancers lead their armies from every direction and eliminated the Furgol warriors.

Not just for the purpose of the quest, they gave fairly good experience and items.

"Catch them all. There are many other places to go so hurry up."

Weed led his forces, hunting down Furgol warriors while getting

experience.

The strategy he told Harien indirectly was not a genius strategy or anything like that.

“Hunting the monsters fast or slow, there is no difference. Leave nothing behind!”

Not caring about the front and rear he only saw them as experience and items!

Necromancers were able to hunt down about 80 percent of the Furgol warriors.

They complete recovered the force they lost and added more on top.

They reorganized them as light yet tough Skeleton warriors, mages and archers suitable for siege warfare.

With no reinforcements coming the Furgol’s trapped in their fortress could not hold out forever against the Necromancer’s siege.

They spread contagious diseases inside the fortress and by repeated battle the walls collapsed little by little.

When the Furgol soldiers came out to repair they continued to

attack, causing casualties and finally they managed to conquer the fortress.

Quest completed!

The bigger the battle the difference in tactics was like heaven and earth.

“Thank you. With your advice we were able to win the battle comfortably.”

Harien came and gave her gratitude but Weed was watching dried logs and fruits piled up in Furgol’s treasury with despair.

He turned around chewing on the dried skins of the fruits ruefully.

Weed ranked up as one of the leading commanders in the Undead Legion.

It was a position allowing him to lead a unit of Undead in the Undead Legion!

“I’ve heard about your great achievements in the battle and came here. I give you my loyalty.”

More Undeads came to become one of Weed's underlings.

It was annoying for the Skeletons to walked up to him with the joints rattling.

"You guys figure it out yourselves and line up."

Even about Dullahan level were becoming slightly tiresome.

"Do you know how to draw a sword? If you can fight well enough its okay."

Weed didn't even blink when even Death Knight came to work under him.

"Oh, you came."

Just so-so!

No matter how much effort was put into raising them, he wasn't a Necromancers and the Undeads couldn't be made into his real underlings.

Weed was someone who washed disposable chop-sticks to reuse, but once the quest ended it was not known if they would turn back into enemy Undead.

Actually, the first army sent by the Undead Legion to conquer Morata were annihilated.

It was a huge armies of 120 thousand Undead but the number that wondered off were staggering, with the rest of them stopped by the church's paladin and Morata's players.

Players were happy as they could raise their faiths and obtaining long-time-buried antique armours, swords and items.

But according to the rumours from the Undead Legion, a larger force of 190 thousand Undeads were mobilized and dispatched.

The war between Morata and Undead Legion was ongoing.

If Balkan ever get back his full power, Morata would turn into ashes and the city conquered by the Undeads.

The public order of Morata was dropping at a fast rate, feeling the unease the inflow of beginners and residents decreased.

If it weren't for the Grand Cathedral, they would have be in a much worse situation.

Anyway, Weed's Undead army wasn't so bad either.

Although there were a discrepancy in ranks or classes, the number of Skeleton reached slightly over 600, Dullahans 123 and

Death Knights 89.

From then on the quest Weed received was about leading his forces into battle.

Orders were given to him, such as to suppress monsters on hills or in caves and securing a path for the Undead army.

As Weed's charisma was high the Undeads obeyed him well, there was no problem solving C ranked quest.

"One way or another this is doable. Not much good about the reward compared to straight out hunting."

While Weed was solving the quests, a Necromancers player dragging his Undead contingent came up to him.

"Greetings."

Seeing that the other side greeted first, Weed nodded back.

"Hello."

Usual Necromancers cover themselves up with robes up till their heads and carried around staff with skull on top.

Weed was wearing a full armour with a sword clasped on the

side, and a person dragging around their Undead greeting normally was a bizarre sight with no comparison.

but it was very awkward to say fresh hello to each other

‘Did he say Marey?’

Compared to the other players in the canyon, Weed was a new arrival so he only knew their name.

Necromancers did sometimes cooperate but most of the time they were in competitions, hunting and questing endlessly. They did not have any party and so knew very little about each other.

Marey, in a quiet voice, introduced himself first.

“My name is Marey. I am sure you have seen me many times passing by, when we were Skeletons and Ghosts and now once again in this canyon.”

“Yes, I know that.”

“I see. But my original occupation was a bard.”

“Yes?”

Weed was of a personality that didn’t get surprised easily but this

time, he was greatly surprised.

Marey Stanbard, if his original class was a bard than it was no mistaking it. The Ranker who had a position with the Halsburg Kingdom, known as the very best among the bard class, he was a very famous player.

“How are you here....”

“I guess you are curious? Explaining it complicatedly there would be no end to the story, but should we say that I arrived here riding a breeze and now am composing a hymn for the Undead?”

“.....”

Bards often took enigmatic adventures.

Unlike the adventurers who dug deep into legends or dungeons, bards wandered around aimlessly.

It was a class that knew all kinds of stories and rumours, while playing instruments!

Even if they had low fame, they could draw out sympathetic feelings towards them and make villagers’ tell their stories.

When the quite a quest halfway through even their penalties were few.

Many chose this class for its charm and even in Morata, the bard was really a popular class.

Marey in wonder asked him curiously.

“But are you by any chance Weed the God of War?

If Weed uses a Sculpture Transformation skill to conceal his identity, his appearances completely changes. Even if the other had keen eyes it was difficult to notice.

Right now he’s not using the skill but even when he was turned into a Death Knight, Marey noticed him.

“How did you know?”

“One thing good about bards is that they have very good ears. Even through the sounds animals make and vibration of grounds we can hear stories. We can eavesdrop information this way. Right now, you are making the greatest achievements incommensurable with other Necromancers.”

The competition between the players were on an incredibly fierce side, intending that the one advancing ahead the most was Weed.

Necromancers were busy focusing on their battles and dragging their Undeads that they weren’t able to pay much interest to

others.

But because Marey had a lot of experience in adventure, just by listening to the background stories about a person with the most distinguished exploit he realized that it was Weed.

“The naive Necromancers can’t show movements like that in battle. The only person who could advance so far without summoning Undead is Weed. I’ve been watching you for a long time and was completely sure it was you.”

Even among Necromancer players, there was rumour that Weed was working on the quest was spread widely.

By continuously completing the chain quest they were curious if they would meet Weed as well next to Balkan!

But really, they weren’t aware that Weed started from the bottom as a Skeleton with them.

“Your deduction is most impressive.”

Weed’s hand slowly reached for his sword.

Truthfully he had built up grudges almost everywhere, anywhere vacant that wasn’t a village or a city he could not be so absentminded.

Even if the other person was the best bard, he himself was one of the most brilliant sculptor among players.

A bard was more agile and could equipped more armours or swords, so it was closer to a combat related class. But that much disadvantage was easily blown away.

Also he was a Death Knight right now and had many Undead following him.

‘Should I take him out?’

In the wide continent of Versailles, with so many people in it, Marey approached Weed in friendly manner.

But in Weed’s mind, the temptation was getting closer.

‘If I kill him, he will probably drop some good items. At least one unique item that can be used by level 380 will drop?’

Weed already made an estimate!

In fact, Marey was on the side of good reputation among rankers in Royal Road.

While travelling liberally he occasionally had accidents, but he was very friendly to novices and has an outstanding abilities with instruments.

‘Must be all groundless rumours. How can I believe all that?’

It was a deep swamp of mistrust that was hard to swim out of.

‘Yes, even if it’s not unique there will be decent item drops. With the money I make selling it, I can buy rice and cook it, then I will be happy while eating it…’

In his mind he already disposed of Marey and was deciding on the duration of the internet auction for the items.

But murdering other high level players was ultimately not Weed’s way of earning money.

It was much better to earn a steady income while hunting and raising levels.

But in front of him an incredibly delicious prey appeared.

Marey’s life was being threatened every second he came closer.

But Marey stretched out his hand first.

“Will you not hunt in a party with me?”

“What?”

“To be honest, compared to Weed-nim and the others here I have a different aim. Do you know about bards very well?”

Of course Weed knew about bards as well as other people.

The class characteristics, the instruments they used, the price of equipment, even to the point about the income of their performance based on the singing and instrument skills.

“My aim is to make a hymn about Undeads. And if possible, I can make an epic poem if I stay beside a person on a big quest. So, I will give up any rights regarding items obtained from hunts and quests.”

If their hymns or poems became famous, it will spread all around the continents.

Bards can earn fame and money and if their songs becomes popular, stats such as charisma and charm also increased.

It was bard’s romance to roam around the continent and experience quests and battle, they were able to receive quests beyond their abilities and limitations.

Marey held his ragged cape with his right hand to cover his upper body and bent his body down a little bit.

“Wandering around continents and writing a songs, it could be said that it’s the destiny of all troubadours. I don’t know what you request you want to accomplish but I won’t be of any distraction. Will you form a party and hunt with me?”

Bards could gain rewards just by watching others’ adventures with their own eyes.

It was an offer that wasn’t disadvantageous to Weed at all.

But Marey approaching to Weed first was like getting an instalment fund from a bank robber!

“Alright, let’s go together.”

Just by looking at their class, it was the birth of a very awkward combination of a bard and a sculptor.

Zabrin raised his accomplishment abundantly in Kapua village.

As he got promoted to a ghost, Hermes Guild delivered any item he told them were needed.

“Itemmmmm, arrreeee, theeeeee, bestttt.”

Although his level was low, he was able to get great effects from items.

Two black magicians arrived from Hermes Guild and casted a blessing spell on him, Zabrin was able to hunt monsters in bulk.

He actively made use of the ring of lightning and ring of destruction only usable by Ghost or Undead.

About half of all Necromancers in Kapua Village gathered.

“Iiiiiiii, willlll, shareeeeeee, itemsssssss, yyoooouuuu, nnnneeeeeddd.”

Through the generosity of the items, Zabrin was able gather the players to him.

It was true that Polon, knights and mage troops came to catch Weed.

But different to their intention, the Necromancers became their interest.

It was not an ideal class for party hunting or adventures.

There were times they couldn’t enter villages and the villagers abhorred them, complaining about the smell.

Necromancers had great powers but had comparable experience in discriminations.

But in a battle, they were the most useful.

In the Central Continent there were endless battles still ongoing, large and small.

Hermes Guild, after conquering the kingdom of Haven, was taking a break supplementing their forces but it was known widely it would not be a long wait.

Even if Hermes Guild didn't act first, the guilds from nearby kingdoms would form a union and strike first.

If they could bring in the Necromancers into Hermes Guild in a situation like this, they would become great assets in battles.

In the meeting of the chief executives of Hermes Guild, they instructed Zabrin to give out items to recruit as many players as he could.

"Could we obtain... the Undead Legion?"

Of course the Hermes Guild desired Balkan's Undead Legion as well.

Armies of Undeads already completed!

The endless number of soldiers that didn’t even need to food.

According to Zabrin’s reports, after they arrived here there were endless number of quests.

They didn’t know what will be at the end of the quest but they had their hopes up.

Becoming the best Necromancers and heir to Balkan.

And then inheriting his Undead Legion.

“If that happens, there won’t be any problem hunting down Weed.”

There is a high possibility that Weed was somewhere in this area but it didn’t matter if he wasn’t.

They could bring the Undeads and turn Morata into ashes, inflict heavy damages to those opposing the Hermes Guild.

It was a reckoning that could give wings to Hermes Guild, supplying the items to Zabrin was worth every bit.

Polon talked frequently to chief executives from the guild.

-How do you want to handle the advance Necromancers in the canyon?

-Such as Jeanne and Harien?

-Yes, that's correct.

-If it is possible recruiting is most ideal. They will be closer to the authority controlling the Undead Legion than Zabrin.

-I will try to recruiting them then.

Most Necromancers players, including Jeanne, were already in guilds.

But you never know what would happen when Hermes Guild gave out a recommendation to join them.

-If they refuse to join the Hermes Guild...

-Then I will handle it appropriately.

-Also there will be Necromancers that are not completely checked out. The possibility is high that one of them could be Weed?

-Yes, it's possible. Necromancers are active while intentionally conceal their names.

-Look into it and kill anyone who’s unidentified. It will make a good example to those who won’t follow us.

Hermes Guild hated passing things over vaguely.

If they couldn’t have it, they destroyed it.

It was one of the reason why their evil reputation was inflated but in the kingdom of Haven nothing existed that could go against them.

Even if there was dissatisfaction, there was not one case of anyone daring to come near Hermes Guild and take revenge on them.

Chapter 7: Song Of The Death Knight

Marey was a cheerful, incessant prattler.

“Having to mingle with the Undead and hunt... ah, it reeks! But if I tell this experience in a bar later I could become really popular. Have you ever been to Vannosa castle?”

Though Weed didn't reply back, he chattered on well by himself.

“In Vannosa castle, there are many restaurants with delicious foods. If Weed-nim check it out you will be enamored by it. Anyway, it was not an important point, but I met a lady named Cedrian there and we became close... She told me many useful information. Unfortunately my bar tab increased so I can’t go back there now.”

Marey did not stop telling stories about the places he wandered to on the continent.

Weed thinking it was important information tried to remember them but it was impossible when his words came out of his mouth like a flood.

“Because of the war right now the Central Continent is chaotic. Even among bards the competition is fierce, they spectate these wars and try to make songs out of it. But I am different, rather than these tiresome wars it’s a necessary adventure for me. To be part of this passionate adventure in the North, how joyous is

that?”

Seeing he couldn't can’t just let Marey keep talking on his own, he replied out of politeness.

“Yes.”

“I am sure that there will be many jealous people if I tell stories later on of how I went on an adventure with Weed-nim. Also the ongoing quest related to the Undead Legion is already very famous.”

“Yes.”

Necromancer players reported to broadcasting networks and uploaded videos on internet so it was becoming a big topic.

In fact, if the news that Marey and Weed was hunting in a party together was revealed it would become another big situation.

Not everyone playing Royal Road knew Marey, but he was one of the names that appeared often.

The songs composed by Marey, the collection of his performance and the adventures he went through were put together into a video that was extremely popular.

Freely wandering bard Marey already had the qualification to

upload his videos to the Royal Road's Hall of Fame and was a figure that had news broadcaster hired often.

"Oh, what kind of woman do you like?"

"Yes."

"What's the specialty of a Death knight?"

"Yes."

"The Embinyu Church are making frequent appearance on the continent and is causing havoc. Did you know that?"

"Yes."

"The joy of hunting a King Hydra must be extreme, right?"

"Yes."

Retorting back was getting tiresome after ten times.

Even if Weed did not pay attention when he replied, Marey just laughed as if it was funny and kept talking.

The naïve, enthusiastic and positive person Marey Standbard.

Listening to Marey talk, Weed led his Undead unit toward the monsters.

They did hunt in the canyons but it was the first time coordinating the battle together with Marey.

Weed reluctantly watched the videos of players with combat related classes but he never saw any scenes of Marey fighting.

Weed asked first.

“How are you going to fight?”

“It feels like you have much more experience in leading Undeads than me. Also as Death Knight have outstanding leadership abilities so I will hand over my right of command of the Undead to you.”

“Then what about Marey-nim?”

“I will play a recital like a bard.”

- You have received the right to command Marey’s Undead units.

There weren’t many high rank Undeads in Marey’s army.

Nor were there elites or bodyguard Undead, but there were at least 200 Undeads in number.

Compared to the other Necromancers who entered the canyon, this was on the very low side.

“Let’s go!”

While Weed, radiating dark miasma, advanced with his Skeletons, Death Knights and Dullahans, music started playing from behind.

It was a heavy and majestic sound of a viol.

- A requiem is being listened to.

Ø While listening to the music all regeneration abilities increase by +43%

Ø Physical abilities increase by +21%

Ø Surviving a battle by the skin of your teeth, you gain additional 7% experience and fame.

Ø The morale of the Undead unit is rising.

Ø Your leadership abilities increased.

Ø If the music stops, the morale will decrease sharply and all the effect being received will disappear.

- With your deep interest in art, while appreciating the music you will receive additional 25% benefit.

While Marey was playing a violin like instrument a bright golden light appeared, like when a noble, holy spell was casted.

Marey was playing the viol frantically.

The brilliant movement of the bow and passionate music that instilled burning passion in the heart!

Marey's performance far passed preeminence, wonder and admiration was about to be poured out.

He was proving that his reputation as the best bard was not just public opinion as a famous player.

It was just misfortunate that the person listening was Weed.

Marey's performance anywhere was transcendent and people have enormous interest and appreciation for it, though sadly Weed wasn't an average person.

'It's noisy.'

It was a bad preconception that listening to a good performance would make one sleepy and nod off their head in drowsiness.

“Kyao!”

“Kill that noisy sound first!”

Weed wasn’t the only one that thought like that, the monsters came running in response to the sound.

Every monsters in the vicinity came targeting for Marey.

Besides the performance giving huge effects to allied unit, it seemed to seriously offend the monsters.

Weed opened his eyes wide.

“Skeletons, prepare for long range attack, Death knights and Dullahans, spread wide in two lines. Do not step back!”

The Death Knights and Dullahans in straight line, collided with monsters.

“Attack! Do not retreat, advance!”

Weed treated the Undeads as expendables so he pushed them to fight without retreating a single step back.

“No matter how many monsters come, do not retreat. Fight where you are and move forward!”

Weed fought at the very front line.

He wasn't just leading the battle in a reckless way that withstood the enemy's attack and advancing forward.

From behind the Dullahans and Death Knights, the Skeleton archers threw bones and arrows, damaging the monsters.

A destructive force pulverizing the swarming monsters!

There was no need to chase after them, by fighting in close range the Skeletons with limited abilities did not need to worry about accuracy.

- Through a bone breaking battle, the Death Knight's level increased.

As Undead survived more and more vicious battles, they only became stronger.

"Let's go in deeper."

Weed together with Marey, entered the heart of a mountain seething with monsters.

In the dead of the night as Marey's music spread loudly, many monsters leaped out from between trees or jumped attack on top of boulders.

Barely winning, only about half the Undead they fought with were left.

But after successfully winning the battle, the news of their bravery was spread by word of mouth in the Undead Legion.

He could preside over more Undead subordinates.

Experience, items and merciless attack!

This was Weed method of leading the Undeads.

It seemed the partnership with a bard wasn't so bad.

'Even so having a bard in a hunting party doesn't feel so efficient.'

In an average exploration of a dungeon, the party consisted of 5~6 people each with their assigned roles.

This was the reason why it was hard for a sculptor, a bard or a

dancer to join, as only needed classes were filled in to create a party for high efficiency.

But as battles got larger, a bard's presence was absolutely necessary.

Performing battles and requests perfectly, Weed was given an authority to officially command over 2,000 Undeads.

Death Knight Commanding Officer

He could ask for a dispatch from the Undead Legion for lower ranked Undeads like Skeleton for him to use.

If rumors about his fame or battle skills spread further, he could even call in higher ranked Undeads.

Compared to Necromancer players who were given more important roles as they polish their magic skills, combatants just had to fight to the letter and win.

"To the place with more enemies."

Weed supported by the Undead, did not hesitate in the slightest and went into monster's den that he wouldn't have dared before.

"Fight!"

None of his business whether Undeads died or not!

Only by engaging in a large-scale battle he could obtain more experience and items, that's why there was no reason to dawdle with indecisiveness about battles or requests.

'I can just run away if we are about to lose.'

He did not find the penalties, demotion or reduced fame that important.

What was more important for Weed was to initiate large battles without dawdling to raise his levels and obtain more items.

With endless battles, Weed's level became 396 and he gained enough experiences points need to level up again.

Indeed he jumped into risky battles, enduring it with the Undead while surviving and leading them onward.

· New Title! You obtained the title, 'Glorious Undead Commander'.

The person who lead many impossible battles to victory!

You can bring out fierce horror and obedience from the Undead and continue the battle.

Ø Leadership increased by +5.

Ø Luck increased by +5.

Ø Limited to Undead, your commanding ability increased by +21%.

While performing, Marey occasionally check out Weed's activities.

'Just like the rumor, he fights really well.'

It was his assessment after the first battle.

When monsters made him into a target, he could evaluate Weed highly as he didn't run about in confusion or hesitate to deal with the situation.

But his assessment kept changing after observing each battle.

'The rumour was true that he is a God of War. He fights battles really well.'

.....

'My experiences is keep on rising? What short method does he use to speed up his experiences? No, when did he kill that many monsters?'

.....

‘Is it even possible to make the Undead obey like meek sheep?’

Ever since he was a beginner, Weed’s stat was far high than others at his level.

Maintaining high skill proficiency and stacking up his stats, the disparity manifested.

The hunting speed especially surprised Marey constantly.

If many monsters were gathered, he commanded tactics to the Undead reminiscent of those found in military text books.

He made Death Knights ride ghost horses.

Weed led the Death knights directly, splitting enemies by penetrating their formation and then deploy the Undead units!

Skeleton unit’s concentrated firing, using the spell attributes to fire a circular magic attack.

He didn’t focus on one idea about battles but had all kinds of knowledge and experiences, using it naturally in battle.

Usually, one would only fight when they have tactical advantages but Weed would try many things to figure out must-win strategy and then fight fiercely.

There were battles that even Marey didn't want to fight.

'There is no way he can win this one.'

However Weed dragged his Undead units, showed excellent tactics and won. It was a superb battle that made congratulations come out automatically.

After supplementing his Undead units, he initiated fights with group of much bigger monsters.

'This is really impossible.'

They lost many Undeads and Weed suffered seriously, but they won.

Fight and survive, finally winning and getting stronger.

It was a battle that naturally broke Marey's common sense and his fixed ideas.

'Okay, this much is now suicide.'

Group of much bigger monsters!

It was not like Marey did not have heart to stop Weed, but he also

wanted to see how Weed would fight so he continued to follow along.

After a battle that took over a day, Weed suffered unbelievable hardship but grasped his victory.

Marey also helped, but it was an intense battle without compare that only 8 Death Knight survived, but they won.

After that battle, it felt to Marey that Weed was so awesome that he did not look human anymore.

Marey saw a lot of battles as a bard but no one ever fought to the brink, pushing everything aside.

Marey had to give his all to survive mobilizing all his abilities to endure, thereby they managed to win.

Not only did they obtain tons of drops, they were able to raise corpses into Undeads.

Weed recruited from Undead Legion and went back to the hunting ground with Death Knights that survived till the end.

Marey now knew the reason why Weed was so strong and received high praises from people.

‘This is why his so strong.’

With a force of 10, it was sensible thinking to fight an enemy with a force of 7.

But when Weed had 10, he fought 11, 12 or sometimes even 15.

With maximum focus, leadership and judgment that dragged Marey's gazed to the point of making him forget his performance, Weed showed nimble movements and won.

The reason he was able to win 15 with 10, of course it could be because of his excellent decisions, but it was due to him fighting radically.

It was because they were fighting against bigger enemy that they could win.

'Following Weed was truly the best judgement I made.'

Marey started to feel relief and a sympathy.

He felt sorry for Necromancers. He was convinced that if they were to compete with Weed in a quest, they would never be able to win.

- As a reward for this quest, you received the authority to command up to 8,000 Undeads.

Current position – Death Knight Commander

Weed's rank rose many times, his equipment and rides changed as well.

An armour with demon attached, branded iron of a wanted man, boots of a desolator.

He obtained reward items that Death Knights could equip.

"Van Hawk would like this if I give him this later."

He couldn't summon Van Hawk or Torido.

They once were affiliated to Undead Legion and he could not estimate what could happen if he summoning them here.

"Come here."

Kyaaaaak!

A horrible shriek was heard from the sky and gargoyles descended, sitting down on the ground.

Weed and Death Knights evolved their ghost horse and were now able to ride gargoyles made of bones.

Undeads were commanded to fight on the ground while the Death Knight scrambled in the air!

Even the Skeletons were elites, with at least 3~4 sword cuts on their skull.

“Hunting sure is fun.”

Marey was barely able to follow.

Composing and performing weren’t the only things bard did.

They adventured, enter dungeons and fought a fair amount of battles.

But following Weed he had eager thoughts for small breaks.

“This place is cleaned up. Let’s go.”

“Can’t we sit down for a short break before we go? We’ve been fighting for almost two days now.”

“I rested plenty just now.”

“When?!”

“I yawned twice.”

If this was a break than did this mean that the nap that workers took briefly during lunchtime was a vacation?!

“There could be monsters remaining in other places, we have no time to delay.”

Because Undeads have infinite stamina and didn’t need to eat, Weed lead them into endless amount of battles.

Fighting battles like this the Undeads developed and Marey felt that Weed’s unit were becoming stronger.

The Death Knights became extremely strong by fighting by the skin of their teeth and winning.

Level was a level, but surviving battles beyond their ability their combat capabilities increased exponentially.

With help of Death Knights the overall skills of Undead units were extraordinary and even if they were in a dangerous situation surrounded by monsters, they could withstand for a long time and their defence became extraordinary.

It was the Undead’s best units.

Suddenly, crows came to not only Weed but Marey and other players hunting on and over the canyons, and gave a small piece of paper they were biting on.

Another quest occurred.

· Monsters of Natalia plains

There are barely any groups of monsters large enough to challenge the Undead Legion in the vicinity.

The last remaining monsters joined forces and are heading toward the Natalia plains.

If you drive them back in four days, you will officially enter the Undead Legion’s encampment and will be able to meet the Balkan Demoph, the king of Undeads.

Also Death Knight can go one step further and qualify for the last promotion.

After four days the main force of the Undead Legion will mobilize and depart. After that day the quest cannot be cleared.

Difficulty: A

Reward: Promotion, Undead summon spells.

Quest Restriction: Undead Only

Limited Time.

Quest will not occur again.

A quest requiring a cooperation between Necromancers players.

It was the final request that need to be done before entering Undead Legion.

“Let’s head there right away.”

Weed and Marey led their Undeads and head straight toward the canyon.

The connection rate of Necromancers players were very high side.

“Hegigigig”

“My, my head, I don’t know if I was holding it with my left or right arm.”

“Undeads, line up, for the great Balkan-nim!”

As they were getting close to the canyon, they were able to see unbelievable amount of Undeads.

Among Necromancers, some preferred summoning small number of high rank Undeads to fight but the opposite was true most of the time.

It was safer to fight by throwing out curses and summoning Skeletons and Ghouls generously.

Each Necromancers players could lead from the smallest amount of hundreds, up to 2,000 of Undeads.

They summoned them directly or gathered roaming Undeads split from the Undead Legion.

To Marey it was a really hard scene to experience as there were every kind of Undead around them.

“At the least it must be about hundred thousand in number.”

Weed spotted skeletons laid down neatly like piled up bricks.

As the space was few they were using this method to save space like that.

“It looks like it’s more than that.”

Necromancers did not leave their summoned Undeads far from them so around the canyon was a world of Undeads.

But as Weed's units came closer these Undeads, as one, step back far away from them.

The Death Knight, who surpassed life or death situations more than ten times, flared their miasma and the Skeletons, as if instilled by fear, were busy trying to hide.

Kyayaaaa!

Some portion of Death Knight that were part of Weed's unit followed riding on their gargoyles as they flew in circles.

The sight of all Necromancer in the canyon was toward Weed as he made a majestic entrance as a Death Knight.

"What is that? Are that many Undead units led by those two men?"

Including Weed's and Marey's Undead there were about 9,600 Undeads.

Weed was able to have more than the quantity allowed by his rank because of his high leadership and charisma but for efficient control, he limited his capacity strictly.

But in the sight of the Necromancers that number felt extremely large to them.

“It’s really a lot.”

“There are plenty of Death Knights… and all variety of Dullahans and Skeletons prepared. It would not be wrong to call it a real Undead army.”

“If only we could command such an army… Should we have tried to promoted to a warrior-type class?”

Looking at Weed, many players regretted their past decisions.

They, not able to take their eyes off in jealousy, approached Weed and Marey.

“Hello.”

Harien noticed them first and greeted lightly.

Weed looked around and noticed that Harien, Jeanne, Otem, Gruzed equipment was largely changed and some held crystal orbs in their hand.

He couldn’t identify many of the variety of equipment.

‘They must have tried hard as well.’

The current quest from the Undead Legion wasn’t given to Weed only.

Each and everyone did their best on the quest and grew.

There were 58 Necromancers gathered in the canyon.

“7 more are coming. It’s getting late… Once they arrive we will be heading to Natalia plain.”

Harien explained the situation to them briefly.

The number of players that came here from Kapua village was 65 people.

‘A cooperative quest with 65 Necromancers…’

Those participating in the quest were high in levels.

Taking the Undeads each Necromancers possess into account, it could be seen as a relatively large armies.

Zabrin made it to the canyon few days before and started hunting there.

While wearing better equipment and levelling up, he gave small gifts to fellow Necromancers he was hunting with.

“This is some items that was left over. Please have it.”

“But still it’s too much….”

In this world there were other people than Weed.

No matter how useful the item, Necromancer players found it difficult to receive something for free from someone they were not close with so they refused it.

“It’s ok. The guild I am part of hands out items like this often. They give special preference to Necromancers… I have plenty of other to use here already.”

Winning other players over with items was easy work.

Unlike other classes, there are many occasions of Necromancers not joining any guilds.

Zabrin didn’t hurry and sorted them one by one while making them his allies.

‘This person identify is clear.’

Releasing their name while hunting in a party or adding them to their friend list, completely proved their identity.

Decent Necromancers were well known in Versailles Continent as well.

Average players were shocked when they encountered Necromancers by chance who were hunting in a mountain or in a forest with Undeads.

Finding the Necromancer a novelty, they recorded these kind of scene often and uploaded to forum boards.

By comparing with it, he cleared out anyone with solid identifications.

But it was hard to recognize people hunting by themselves who did not reveal their identities.

‘I only have to look for 7 more as they come.’

He investigated Jeanne, Otem, Boghram, Harien, Gruzed, Varenna and Goshu to recruit them into Hermes Guild and found that they all exceed at least level 380.

He judged that Jeanne, Harien and Otem to be over level 400.

These were figures that were excellent magicians even before they became Necromancers.

When class was changed, the original magic abilities weakened drastically.

It was not learning similar magic once more but learning conflicting black magic and Undead summon magic so existing magic abilities retrograded.

It was not an easy decision for the Necromancers to start over, but they were steadily increasing their proficiency in curses and Undead summon.

'If I can bring them to Hermes guild, it will be acknowledged as a great achievements.'

Zabrin was spying patiently for a solid opportunity.

If they became members of Hermes guild, they will recognize Zabrin's meritorious deed.

By becoming part of the same guild, he could receive variety of help and follow them around in this canyon.

By joining in the Undead Legion's quest and working together it was a chance for him to gain level, fame and Undead summon

spells together.

After winning over those around him, he gathered information while hunting and at that moment cooperative quest to eliminate the monsters in Natalia plain occurred.

And then a bit later, Weed together with Marey arrived with their Undead army.

Other players had Undeads as well but the Undeads Weed and Marey's brought were conspicuous.

With the flushing of miasma from the Death Knights, even decent Undeads tried to get as far away as they can.

The Death Knights riding on their gargoyles, standing guard while flying around them looked strong beyond ordinary.

'Maybe Weed is among them.'

Weed and Marey were unidentified players!

There are other five that were suspicious but their Undeads were lacking and few in numbers.

'Anyway I should report it.'

Zabrin reported to Hermes Guild Polon and the Mage troops about heading out to Natalia plains, about a suspicious person who could be Weed, about how Jeanne and Otem did not belonging to any guild.

Chapter 8: Nature Sculpting - Great Disaster

It required a lot of time for Undeads to walk to Natalia plain.

Skeletons were really good at marching as long as they had perfectly fine legs.

It was because they walked as they were ordered to, while dragging swords on the ground.

But with Zombies and Ghouls they staggered and they kept going in the wrong direction.

“Get back in the line!”

Necromancers were busy managing Undeads.

Over 110,000 Undeads!

Skeletons had high attack power so they were useful in battles.

They could be revived and if necessary, curse spells could be activate through the corpses so their departure was delayed as Necromancers tried to bring as many Undeads as they can.

“No matter how many monsters are in Natalia plain, we should be able to win easily.”

“With our forces, we can even kill any boss-material monsters.”

Necromancers were relieved looking at their Undeads force reassuringly, but Weed waited for battle anxiously.

‘I have to hunt more, I have to take more items. With this many Undeads there could be less monsters for me.’

A source of endless greed!

Any expectations of clearing the quest with impractical ease shattered right after they arrived at Natalia plain.

[El Vance Monastery]

It was a place of monastery established by the Imperial family of the Niflheim Empire.

Ø This is a placed embedded with sacred power.

Ø Weakens Undeads body and cleanses any curse spells.

Ø Necromancer’s magic abilities decrease by -24%.

Ø Destroyed Undeads cannot be revived.

Faint wisp of holiness was rising from rapidly from the ground.

As holy power touched his body, warm feeling spread and strength fell from his sword bearing arm.

Ø Strength decrease by -3.

Ø Health decrease by -240.

With the effect of Balkan's Death Aura, his health was supplemented again but on Natalia plain an enormous aura of divine energy was rising up.

In the dark night the streams of holy energies rising up looked very beautiful but to the Necromancers it was a serious horror.

"Ku... At this rate how are we supposed to attack with the Undeads?"

"Magic?"

"Curses or Black magic will get weak as it tries to penetrate the holy power and it won't even be in range."

"Let's try it first."

Jeanne and Otem combined their power and activated their Black magic, calling up a cloud of poison.

Monsters immediately went hiding inside the wall of El Vance monastery.

Even if it was a monastery its wall were really high and its structure wide, so it could be possible that tens of thousands monsters could have gathered there.

These monsters' reproduction rates were beyond imagination.

"Go! Pour down vicious poison rain!"

The poisonous cloud headed toward the direction of monastery but the rode up the rising holy energy and disappeared.

"This is really headache inducing."

Weed's expression soured as he also looking at the monastery.

'This is not just a quest given out in vain to meet Balkan.'

They had to penetrate through the most horrifying thing for Undeads, holy energy.

The holy power outside of Natalia plain wasn't as strong but

inside the monastery lights were shining bright.

Far away from the plain was scene of gloomily gathered Undeads, their expression souring at the light.

When they were human holy power felt slightly bright, now they stung the eye with its brightness.

‘Undeads seem to feel holy power more sensitively.’

Necromancers couldn’t come up with any definite solution and just stood behind where the holy power couldn’t reach them.

Weed considered time as money so he gave an order.

“Youngest skeleton.”

“Yes, lord”

“Run straight forward.”

The shortest skeleton from Weed’s unit run limpidly along his way to the monastery.

Even though they were Undeads, they still had their instinct about death so they feared the holy power.

But the great, peerless Weed perfectly controlled the skeleton with his charisma and leadership.

Tadadadada, tuktuk, boom!

The Skeleton ran forward hard while getting hit by the holy power here and there.

About halfway to the wall of the monastery, it looked like he was burning from the holy power.

With reduced health, it collapsed while walking down without even swinging its sword once.

Before long it purified the Skeleton with even leaving a corpse, leaving the Necromancers with their tongues hanging out.

This time, Weed lifted his finger and pointed at a Skeleton warrior.

“Advance.”

“Yes, lord”

The Skeleton warrior was able to withstand a few more steps but he still couldn’t make it to the wall.

“Skeletons can’t seem to go.”

Necromancers were disappointed bitterly by the fact that the majority of their Undead armies were completely useless as it was composed of Skeletons.

Only thinking vaguely about the fear of holy power, they now could feel keenly after seeing the sight of melting Skeletons.

“Dullahan, go forth as well.”

“Yes, I will follow your order.”

Dullahans were very fierce warriors.

With their standards they were able to make great achievements in battles but Weed carried out his experiment freely.

The Dullahan reached the wall that looked like it was about to collapse, but died under monster attack as it was about to go over it.

Looking at Weed Death knights were pierced with horror.

As next time, it was their turn.

Undeads were shivering in great fear as underlings of Weed as he

was a remorseless liege.

‘Hmm.”

But Weed didn’t deploy any more Undeads after sending out the Dullahan.

‘If about a Dullahan, then Death Knights should be able to fight, at least for a short amount of time…’

Even if he gather every Death Knights from other players, it would be hard to gather over 2,000.

If they send that much to fight the monsters, they will be able to achieve something but they would melt completely like ice creams in hot summer.

‘Quest will fail after that.’

A quest with four day limitation!

They spent seven hours trying to get here because Undeads weren’t nimble.

If all their Undeads got eliminated, they wouldn’t have enough time to gather the current quality and number of Undeads.

‘There is only one chance.’

Weed was locked into a deep thought as he looked behind the enemy lines.

They needed varieties of meticulous strategies.

“Don’t you think this quest difficult is way too high?”

“Did the quest really say to destroy them? This is completely impossible.”

“There are no solutions with the Undeads. Maybe it’s a quest that can only be succeed at high level? To be stopped like this here…”

“Maybe we should have hunted monsters in advance so they wouldn’t gather here. Even in the canyon I let some monsters run away, they must have all ended up here eventually.”

The Necromancers could not get the point right now.

It was when Necromancers were in panic.

Harien came to where Weed and Marie were.

Last time she heard a great method from Weed so she came here for advice.

Weed was murmuring intently on his own.

“Japtem… Leathers not so good… If there are treasures left in the monastery…”

He look like he was struggling hard, locked in deep agony!

“Perhaps are you thinking about solution to clear this quest?”

“Guessing monsters tendencies… the possibilities of gold, silver and treasure… but definitely the treasures…”

Jeanne and Otem came along while Harien was waiting for her reply.

While observing Weed, they did considered Weed as a great player as well.

It was hard not to acknowledge his abilities, with him coming all the way here not with a magic class that could summon Undead but a combat class.

It’s hard not to acknowledge him.

As a single power Weed’s Undead was quite strong.

About ten minutes elapsed, Weed was writing words and

numbers on a ground with his finger.

~Leather, very rough and defective so 1,750.

~Japtem, variety of items. Less relevant to the quest, dispose as lump-sum to Mapan-nim.

~Monastery, information about Niflheim empire history's past holy weapons, not enough.

- Decision postponed.

It was difficult for Jeanne, Otem and Marie to understand how the cipher like phrase related to the monsters at all.

Harien waited, waited and finally asked.

"Is there really no way to clear this quest?"

Weed while looking at the phrases piercingly, lifted his chin.

"Yes?"

"Weren't you trying to come up with solutions for this quest?"

"No I was calculating something else."

"Ah...."

Realizing that she was waiting and expecting for something great out of Weed's irrelevant actions, she backtracked quickly.

Harien was dispirited to think that she was expecting something from Weed's weird behavior.

"Huu, some hope he would rekindle... I shouldn't have waste my time."

Jeanne and Otem were about go back to other Necromancers.

Even if they go to them it was a hard problem they were trying to solve but if they agonize it together they might find a slightly better method.

They were in a position where they needed to find a solution fast.

But Weed talked as if there wasn't any problem.

"We just have to beat the monsters in the monastery."

"Yes but how?"

"There are many ways."

Weed had no need to waste any effort in thinking about monsters.

He made decisions immediately and was now estimating for after the hunt.

He took number of monsters inside and their approximate levels, item drops and rough schematics on the monastery and even the whereabouts of potentially hidden treasures into consideration!

‘Since it’s filled with holy power there must be something there. The probability of it being in the basement is high.’

As that treasure might high extremely high value he was in serious thought about it.

Necromancers pass over their authorities for their Undeads units to Weed.

“Please just go.”

“Just walk a little bit, hmm?”

It was because the Undeads wouldn’t listen to the Necromancers.

“Forward.”

“Yes, lord.”

“Death Knight shall follow the commander-nim’s orders.”

Undeads didn’t resist against Weed command.

Part of it was because he was a Death knight but his absurdly high leadership ability and items influenced a lot.

There were many occasions where he suffered many damages from large-scale battles but in the end, Weed achieved victories and obtained a title of glorious Undead Commander.

When he was a Lich he killed Kubicha in Jigolaths and obtained the title of Immortal Warrior.

Because of that Undeads believed and followed Weed even if it leads to their deaths.

They were Undeads maintained by Necromancers’ mana but they moved according to Weed’s order.

“Full attack, run forward!”

Weed shouted out in a loud voice.

Skeletons and Dullahans ran towards the monastery as one.

A major offensive of 11 thousand Undeads!

Once all these Undeads disappear, there will not be enough time to collect Undeads again.

“Kuaak!”

“Too hot, too hot!”

Through the holy power the Skeleton’s started caught fire and started burning, but even so the other skeletons continued running, stepping over their fallen allies.

In the middle of night the burning skeletons were running down the plain.

It was like the Undead were making a flaming path, even the Necromancers were awed at the sight.

“Let’s open paths for them, Bone Wall!”

“Dark Crow”

Necromancers supported the Undeads move forward by summoning walls of bones and growing plants that grew by feeding on darkness.

Skeletons and Dullahans were able to move forward a bit more by stepping on the bones and plants.

Of course it didn't last long and burned because of the holy power rising from the ground but Undeads used it as stepping-stone.

Under unbelievable suffering, Undeads move steadfast while taking damage. Weed's plan was to move in with every Undead and fight a final battle with monsters.

A position of Undead armies' Chief Commander with heavy responsibilities.

Usually it was difficult task if it was shared, but there was no better method than this.

If the Undead closed the distances with the monsters, Necromancers can fight with Corpse Explosions and curses.

Streams of holy power rising randomly from the ground dealt a lot of damage to Undeads but mobilizing every Undead at the same time so they can step over each other was the plan.

"This is impossible."

In a situation in when their joined strength was lacking, there were Necromancers complaining rather than casting supporting

spells that could increase movement speed or defense of the Undead.

They disagreed with Weed's plan in the first place but as Jeanne, Otem, Harien agreed, other Necromancers followed with them.

But now as the Undeads were crossing the plain and incurring massive casualties, these Necromancers started to protest.

"It's still not too late. Let's stop here and find another way."

"I've been telling you it's a reckless plan from the beginning. If it proceeds like this and even if they get to the monastery, they will all die before they can even fight. We know about monsters' strength very well. We must cancel this idiotic plan now."

Players who agreed with Weed's plan started to doubt themselves.

It was understandable because all they could see were Undeads burning and getting purified by the holy power.

It's true that their chance of success were looking smaller.

But if they stopped or retreat the Undead now, the quest would end in complete failure.

They should have spoken before Undeads moved out, right now

it was seriously late.

They already invested over half Undeads!

After the Necromancers started protesting, the Undeads agreed as well.

“If we go forward we will be annihilated.”

“I don’t want burn to death like this!”

As bulk of the Undeads disappeared by holy power, a situation arose where the remaining Undead tried to disobey Weed’s order.

They had to keep pushing additional Undeads forward.

If the deployment of Undeads stop like this, the forces currently running forward in the plain will all burn or melt down.

Riding on his gargoyle Weed raised up his rusty legendary sword.

And then opened his jaw.

A smell… There is a smell

I am singing but I still there is a smell

Even if I stop, the smell won't stop.

".....?"

With no tune and no rhythm, definitely a song that was sung as the lyrics just popped up.

Sound of Death Knight with slightly hoarse voice spread widely across the whole plain.

Jeanne, who was using magic near the vicinity of Natalia plain, turned her head around.

"The person who sings this kind of song..."

Harien, Otem, Bohram, Gruzed, Varenna and other high-rank Necromancers also stopped what they were doing and shifted their gazes to where Weed was.

It was a song they never heard before.

There is no way a reckless song like this would ever be composed.

But they knew a person who would sing a song like this in a battle.

Today is a dark night, very dark night

I am a Death Knight

I am a Death Knight who doesn't wash his face

I don't have to wash my feet as well

"God of War..."

"It's Weed!"

They had some suspicions as he chose a combat related class and was far ahead than any other.

But that person, singing a senseless song that no one could absolutely mimic, singing a ridiculous song.

Even senior granny players in Versailles continent knew him, watching palpitating videos of him through the night.

It explained everything now.

"That Weed was with us..."

"Use magic. Invade the monastery and kill every monster!"

The loud mouth Necromancers sprouting it was impossible started to do their tasks.

Marie was just waiting for Weed to sing.

He took out a harp made by dwarves and matched Weed's song, improvising a performance.

'It's harder than composing a new song.'

A best bard was matching Weed song.

Keuheu, keuheu

Price for melon rose

Strawberries are really expensive

Mandarins are too precious to eat

Don't eat anything at night

Sleeping early is fine

Undeads gathered here, start singing

My dear Undeads who knows no hunger, or exhaustion.

You shall go forward

As soon as Weed finished his song, he took out a horn.

A horn announcing victory in Treserk.

A unique item that can bring out incredible abilities in soldiers.

It was a treasure that could make someone famous just by having in his possession.

Weed put the horn to his mouth and blew it with all might.

TOOOOOOOOOOT!!!

Ø Undeads' morale is rising.
Ø Undeads are craving for victory.
Ø Temporarily boost physical potential by +120%.
Ø Bad things will happen often to the enemies.

"Advance!"

Weed suddenly gave Lion's Roar.

Then the rebellious Undeads started rushing toward the monastery in unison.

Even the Undeads suffering under the holy power sped up and ran forward.

They were weakened by holy power but they were acting beyond their potential capabilities.

The loss of skeletons was at an unspeakable level but they got close to the monastery.

Fierce and strong skeletons stepped over their allies' heads and shoulders to jump out to the front.

"Time to deploy the Death Knights."

Weed flew high on his gargoyle.

The underling Death Knights also got on their gargoyles and flew up beside Weed.

"Phantom steed summon!"

Death Knights commanded by other Necromancers got on the

phantom steeds summoned by their owners.

Holy power from Natalia plain to rose up till the sky but the Undeads were fully covering the ground.

The Undeads became shields.

Either piercing through the Undead, or avoiding the stream of holy power rising up, it was possible to approach from the sky while flying.

“Let’s go!”

Weed flew with his Death Knight units toward the monastery.

About that time Undeads arrived as well, taking down the walls in three different places and were fighting with defending monster.

As the Undead’s health was almost gone they collapsed to the counter attacks.

‘But they are very weak.’

As he expected, monsters weren’t normal as well.

It was not as much as the Undeads but the monsters were also

overwhelmed by holy power.

Multiple of Undeads ran into monsters and about 3~4 Undeads clung to one monster.

“Let’s go down to the ground.”

Weed went inside the monastery riding on his gargoyle.

He was able to see bright lights gathered in a bunch on the ground.

The gathered light pierced the ground and a thick stem of holy power rose up threateningly.

Some Death Knights fell from their gargoyles but most of them avoided with sharp turns and landed safely inside the monastery.

- You have arrived at El Vance Monastery.

Ø Due to the abundant holy power physical abilities reduce by -45%.

Ø Health decrease by -300 every second.

It’s difficult for Undeads to be active in a church or a shrine.

It was not a place that Death Knights could withstand for a long time.

Monsters came unceasingly toward Weed.

“It’s the Undeads. Kill and eliminate them.”

“It’s the Death Knights commanding the Undeads!”

Monsters had capacity for rational thought so they targeted Weed first.

If they took Weed down, he would not die alone but shake up every Undead underling for losing their commander.

Its influence would be lower for humans or elves but losing a commander was a hopeless situation for Undeads!

Of course for orcs it didn’t matter if their commander died or not.

Whoever held the glaive and shouted first become an orc captain.

“Heriam Fencing!”

Weed while performed attack skill, slashed monsters.

His level for Heriam Fencing went up, enabling him to strike 13 times consecutively.

And every time the strike succeed strength, agility and destructive power increased.

Because he wasn't far from mastering the skill the swordsmanship skill proficiency rose steadily.

Weed's Death Knight underlings fought together while guarding him.

"Wow.... He really is amazing. Even if he's Weed and trying to clear the quest, how could he just jump into a place swarming with monsters?"

"I doubted him until he got on his gargoyle but he really went in. Does he not find his life valuable?"

Necromancers were deeply impressed by Weed's brave action.

A commander jumping into an enemy base full of dangers just to win!

'Just like the rumor.'

'There is chance of really victory in this battle.'

Weed rekindled hope and bravery to the Necromancers.

Necromancers recovered health to the Undeads that weren't completely destroyed and strengthened them with supporting spells.

"This front is relatively safe now let's advance as well."

The land was polluted by the corpses of the collapsed Undead.

The holy power couldn't rise up and just burned up the wreckages of the Undeads.

Necromancers got on the ghouls' backs and headed toward the monastery, close enough to throw spells.

"Attack!"

While Weed was provoking monster and putting more effort into hunting more, he glanced sideways.

He was attacking the inner area of the monastery with his fearless Death Knights, preventing any chance for the monsters to become more active.

Rather than being heroic by being in the forefront, he was making the Undeads fight and waiting behind for the perfect chance!

“I’m sure there are great treasures somewhere in the monastery.”

His craving for items led him to the inner side of monastery.

If he comes with other Necromancers after the battle ends, he would have to share the treasure.

But there was no need to share treasures he picked up secretly!

Now was the only chance to search the monastery.

Pushung!

In front of his eye the holy power gathered and erupted skywards, far away the ground was hit with magic casted by Necromancers and Skeleton mages.

After deploying the Undead and judging the place to be slightly, the Necromancers advanced toward Natalia plains.

‘There must be a treasure somewhere. I need to look for a collapsed structure or stairways to downstairs.’

Even for Weed it was difficult to find clues about the unknown treasure with the monsters and the wreckages.

Because monsters were heading to Weed he was also busy fighting with his Death Knights.

“Cut them all!”

He gave an order to raise the Death Knights’ morale.

“I follow commander’s order.”

“Kill the monsters!”

Weed’s class was a combat related Death Knight.

Even if he had underlings with same class, there was nothing like being outnumbered by monsters.

As Undead who found it hard to withstand the monastery, the Death Knights could not win over the holy power and began the collapse.

Weed’s health was decreasing scarily fast.

To others’ views, it was either fearless bravery or completely

craziness.

‘There is no reason why this old and desolate monastery has so much holy power left.’

If Weed didn’t get the feeling that there was enormous treasures here, he wouldn’t have started such a reckless battle.

“I guess I have no choice.”

Weed took out a sculpture from his sides.

It was not a Fine, Masterpiece or Magnum Opus sculpture.

Made out of woods, it was a sculpture based on a storm he encountered coming back from Jigolaths on a ship.

· Dark Clouds and Thunders

Sculpture made from dismantling woods from the mast and wine barrel on the ghost ship.

With the two wide wooden board representing earth and sky, in between lightning and whirlwind is blowing.

Due to the limitation of the material, it lacks many artistic

expression. An inerasable scent of wine still permeates.

Artistic Value: 49.

It was worthless to sell it as a sculpture anywhere.

But Weed stored it preciously, waiting for someday to use this sculpture.

‘The day has is today.’

Weed decided to use a secrete Sculpture skill and acted immediately.

“Nature Sculpting - Great Disaster!”

- Nature Sculpting - Great Disaster has been used.

Ø Art stat disappeared by -20 permanently.

Ø 20,000 health and mana has been consumed.

Ø All stats reduce by -15% for four days.

Ø Affinity to Nature dropped.

Ø Nature Sculpting - Great Disastercan only be used once per day.

Ø When dangerous disasters are called upon, depending on the damage fame or notoriety can increase.

Ø You can die in the middle of the disaster so be careful.

Even though there were many monsters left, Weed disarmed his sword and laid down on the ground.

“Death Knights get rid of your sword and lay down!”

Death knights couldn’t follow the sudden change of command while battling.

Weed ordered again.

“Throw away your swords and defend with wooden shields.”

Death knights threw away their rusty swords and raised their basic wooden shields.

It was broken and rotten so no one knew whether it could function as a shield but it was better than nothing.

Taking one-sided attacks from monsters for about ten seconds, Weed raised his head up slightly.

“Did the skill fail?”

Nature Sculpting - Great Disaster differs in its strength based on Affinity to Nature but didn’t have to raise it separately through

skill proficiency.

While Weed was all confused, the wooden sculpture that was used in the skill dismantled like soft sands and spread out everywhere.

“Kaoh! Kill the Death knights!”

Monsters were fighting Death Knights with axes.

CRAAAAAK!

Lightning struck monsters!

The aftermath was incredible, the 6 monsters in the vicinity was burned charcoal black.

A great disappointment descended on him as Weed was expecting something incredible force.

“So should I have used a Masterpiece or a Magnus Opus as the basis for this skill?”

Even though it was a secrete Sculpting skill, it was disaster that felt empty.

It was the same power as a simple lightning bolt used by

magicians.

Even though it was not something that completely changed the battle situation, there was no need for Weed to suffer so much in learning this skill if it was at such standard.

Suddenly, although no one noticed it because it was early morning, stars in the sky gradually hid themselves.

Soon, dark clouds completely covered the sky and unusually loud sounds occurred.

ZZZZAAAAAAPPP

Instinctively it gave him the chill.

“It just comes late.”

Weed hurriedly hid his body in a pit.

Chapter 9: Hermes Guild's Assault

From the sky lightning struck towards the ground.

ROOOAARRRR

BOOM, ZAP! ZAP! ZAP! ZAAAAP!

In the direction of the dark clouds' movement, it looked like lightnings was scraping the ground with its sharp claws. With a force to scorch the earth it demolished buildings, ripped trees apart and incinerated monsters.

KUWAK!

KUYAO!

Necromancers' saw pitch black clouds over the monastery, blasting the ground with incredible lightning strikes. Every time lightning struck the ground the area lit up so brightly it blinded the eyes. Hearing the sound coming from the monastery, they could guess its incredible power.

"Incredible. Was that Weed's attack spells?"

"Its power surpass any large-scale magic... there must be an unbelievable number of monsters dying."

Just as the Necromancers' thought, there was tremendous amounts of casualties for the monsters in the monastery. The swords they were holding acted as a great target for lightning to conduct through. Monsters hit directly by the lightning turned immediately into grey light and disappeared. But the lightning with surplus power spread to its vicinity, electrocuting many other monsters and doing additional damage to their health.

Usually it was only after the Great Magic spread out that the Magician's were satisfied spectating the effect that their magic displayed. But Weed did not have the luxury of doing such a thing.

'I have to survive.'

CRAAACCCCK!

As soon as he heard lightning strike, he used his both hands to dig deeper to make sure he wouldn't get hit. The endless instinct for survival. He was digging faster than a dog trying to dig out snacks he hid few a days ago!

He never knew the lightning would be this serious. It was as though the lightning was trying to prove the 'great disaster' part of Natural Sculpting.

The screams of monsters as they died!

The structure was being viciously torn apart, filling the

surroundings with the sounds of explosions. The monastery was already reducing the life of all the Undead, the day that Weed was struck by lightning was the day his life was not guaranteed.

Art of Nature Sculpting - Great Disaster, it was an extensive display of attack in battle, it exceeded his expectation by several times. The only problem with the skill was that Weed had to go through it as well.

“Weed is fighting in a place like that.”

“Not everyone can become the God of War.”

“How could he think of jumping into a fatal situation and starting a battle? ”

Necromancers gave several thumbs up in the direction of the monastery. They imagined Death Knight Weed, slaughtering monsters with his cape flapping in a place they can call a hell of lightning.

“It's a scene several times more incredible than a movie.”

“Let us also fight harder!”

Necromancers drew closer to the monastery and cast support magic on the Undead. Fortunately, the lightning stopped within three minutes, but for those who were experiencing it directly, the time dragged on indefinitely.

Most of the monsters had to withstand the thunderstorm with their bare bodies. It inflicted damage to life and stats and what could be said the most important for battle, morale decreased sharply.

“Ku… Is it finally over?”

Weed popped out only his head from the pit after the sound stopped. Without fail he looked like a good impression of a mole, but surviving was the foremost priority.

Zzaap….

Sok!

As soon as he heard a sign of lightning he covered his head with his cape and hid back in the pit. Some streams of lightning still struck intermittently. Breathing in deeply couple of time, Weed checked the situation was calm and only then did he come out from the pit.

“A lot died!”

Corpses of monsters were strewn about. About a quarter of the Death Knight were gone. Unluckily, some were struck by lightning and the others kept fighting monsters while Weed was hiding.

But far off a great whirlwind was blowing. The Art of Nature Sculpting - Great Disaster was not completely finished. The whirlwind devoured the monsters and Undead in Natalia Plains and then flung them everywhere. Weed tried to avoid on his gargoyle but, swept up the whirlwind, it changed its direction, passed through some place way far from the monastery and soon disappeared.

- Art of Nature Sculpture - Great Disaster has expired.

By creating a disaster against monsters, you have gained 3,459 fame.

For destroying a currently unused monastery, your faith has decreased by -25.

A title ‘A Disaster-Steering Sculptor’ has been given.

Luck decreased by 10.

Just by using Nature Sculpting - Great Disaster, he could become way more renowned than now.

Of course, in a bad way though!

“For now, get on your gargoyles and retreat!”

Weed was able to withstand more by himself but the condition of the Death knights wasn’t good so they left the monastery. The Death knights had hunted many high-rank monsters but the aftermath of Nature Sculpting - Great Disaster was way beyond their class so it was hard to say that the Death Knights achieved something.

With help from the Necromancers with restoration and curse spells, they attacked the monastery again. At that time, the main forces of the Undead leapt over the wall and were already fighting. Monsters and Undead were in fierce engagement and some perished due to the holy power. Glancing far and wide the battle could be seen everywhere. There was complete pandemonium as the monsters and Undead battled.

- A Skeleton Warrior has destroyed the altar of El Vance Monastery.

The Skeleton Warrior that axed the altar vanished in a burst of blue light but the holy power was reduced.

“Destroy everything!”

The Death knights yelled and motivated the Undead. The ruins of the monastery were completely shattered by Undead. Weed's faith dropped following the destruction but he had to risk it.

- Holy power protecting the monastery has weakened.

The reduction of Health has been reduced.

Undead can use abilities now.

Magical abilities are returning to the Necromancers.

"Sweep away all the monsters!"

Weed was in the forefront hunting monsters and Necromancers came after him, raising corpses into Undead. As the holy power protecting the monastery weakened, Undead forces reinforcements increased scarily. The Death Knights also regained their combat strength and the monsters decided to run away instead of fighting anymore. They judged that the monastery was no longer safe from the Undead.

"Chase them!"

The greatest achievement could be made when hunting down escaping monsters. Weed chased the monsters fleeing from the monastery with Death Knights and hunted them down. He was able to gain a significant amount of experience.

DING!

- Monsters in Natalia Plains cleared.

All monsters disturbing The Undead Legion have disappeared.

El Vance Monastery is a thorn to the Undeads' side, thus the Death Knight who brought down this place cleanly deserves to receive a great reward.

You can go to Balkan Demoph and claim your final promotion.

- Fame has increased by +2,937.

You will be renown as a new Undead leader in The Undead Legion.

- Power of Death has increased by +64.

- Leadership has increased by 25.

- Fighting spirit and charisma have increased by 12.

In fact, over 110 thousand Undead were deployed in the battle and only 14 thousand monsters were fighting against them. Against such a huge obstacle of holy power, the Undead were grievously wounded but were able to claim a victory.

“I can finally meet Balkan.”

Weed took a deep breath.

His preliminary objective of meeting Balkan, King of The Undead, was complete now. While Morata became a target of The Undead Legion, its public order, industry, agriculture and birthrate was heavily damaged.

Balkan was a threat to the Northern Continent because he may regain his strength at any point in the future. The reason Weed was clearing quests from The Undead Legion and raising his rank with such sincerity was to make Balkan rest in peace forever.

All his works has been a preparation for rebellion!

He eavesdropped Necromancers who approached the monastery on ghouls.

“I can finally learn a higher tier curse spell.”

“I learned the Undead Summoning spell... What’s your reward, Orbo?”

“I decided to get a Robe of Corpse.”

Seemed like their quests and rewards differed based on their achievements. No one was talking about being able to meet Balkan like Weed.

Marey and Harien entered inside the monastery.

“Let’s get out and have a celebratory party.”

The monastery was still piled up with holy power so it still was a bad place for Undead. The Death Knights mounted their gargoyles

and waited for the order to withdraw.

'I need to find treasures...'

With some lingering feeling of regret, Weed left the monastery with the Undead. He led the Undead into a huge victory and was returning back to the Necromancers.

"Hurray the God of War!"

"Thanks to Weed-nim, we were able to clear the quest easily. Thank you."

Players one upped each other trying to thank him. It seemed easy now that the battle was over, but everyone knew that without Weed's capabilities of command they wouldn't have been guaranteed to win.

It wouldn't have been easy to deploy their undead forcefully and if the the monsters in the monastery were persistent, then they all would have been wiped out by the holy power.

However, Weed infiltrated the monastery with Death Knights and dispersed the enemies' attention, shortening the time. If the monsters held on for at least an hour, then surely the Undead would have died.

In the end the Undead won the battle against time.

The Necromancers felt that it was very close and were thankful to Weed for his reckless decisiveness, which barely managed to clear the quest. Weed didn't appreciate lip thanks.

"What I did wasn't much."

On a birthday or a graduation, you get presents. It was frustrating, all they did was say thank you for clearing the quest for them. A disappointment that they did not know amity cultures such as bribery or reception.

'Well, I couldn't have done it by myself.'

After all, Weed was only able to clear the quest with full supports and co-operation from the Necromancers. Beside Marey who had been hunting with Weed recently, Harien listened to Weed's opinion and actively persuaded the others.

He was able to clear the quest because Jeanne and Otem fully understood the possibility and participated in his plan so he couldn't possibly ask for something from them. Weed made the greatest contributions, but it was only accomplished with the help of the other Necromancers.

"A truly amazing amount of Undead."

Polon brought along Knights, Mages, Spellcasters and rangers on standby to a place far away from Natalia Plains. It wasn't easy to arrive because the Undead from The Undead Legion were wandering around but, thanks to Zabrin's detailed guiding, they arrived safely.

"Can the Necromancers win?"

He waited for the battle with interest.

Bringing the assault armies of the Hermes guild here was a covert operation so they haven't been revealing themselves. But a few moments after the battle began, Zabrin talked in a whisper.

- Weed the God of War appeared!

Polon was trying to get the Undead Legion into his hands and recruit Necromancers one by one but his original target was Weed. A man known as the rival of Bard Ray from Hermes guild. From that point, Polon used the Hermes guild's communication network so that rangers and spellcaster players could hear as well.

Polon : Is he really Weed?

Zabrin : He sang a song. The Necromancers all said it was Weed. He was among the unidentified players.

Polon : Are you certain about this?

Zabrin : He blew a horn. The Horn of Treserk!

It was an item known to be in Weed's possession. If it was that, then it was enough evidence to believe it was the real Weed.

'A battle with Weed.'

Polon's hand shook in excitement. He was a high-level ranker and a Grand Master. He experienced tons of battles but he had never killed a big shot like the God of War. The Hermes guild's communication network got busy. The players, who were instantly recognizable by their names, showed interest and asked for the situation.

Zabrin : Just now, Weed got on a gargoyle and went inside the monastery.

Polon : Didn't you say it's a place where Undead can't go in?

Zabrin : Well... it's an extremely dangerous place but he went in.

Polon : If that's the case, then get the Spellcasters, rangers, knights and mages ready for advance. If Weed survives and comes out, we will attack him right away.

Polon was on standby listening to what Zabrin was saying.

Zabrin : The Undead can’t break through the monsters easily. This place is by far the worst place to fight.

Zabrin reported to Polon everything that was going on in the battle through the Hermes guild’s communication network. It was a moment where famous rankers were paying attention to Zabrin. He was busy chatting with no time to cast a spell.

ZAAAAAP!

When the thunder hit the monastery, even Polon’s place got bright continuously. Polon could imagine how tense the battle was from Zabrin’s reports and the sound of thunder.

‘To enter a place like that, leading his Death Knights.’

Even if he was Weed, surely he isn’t immortal. But he hoped Weed wouldn’t die in the monastery.

‘I’m the one that has to take away his life. That’s the only way to achieve my mission of coming here.’

He waited and waited until he heard from Zabrin that the Undead had besieged the monastery. Zabrin said it was an extremely difficult quest but Weed succeeded yet again.

Zabrin : You can come now. He went out.

It was convenient to have someone giving you information.

“We are moving out.”

Polon led the knights, rangers, spellcasters and moved out.

“Raise the flag”

One of the Knights raised a flag with the symbol of Hermes guild on it. The emblem of the Hermes guild containing a crown and a castle!

Raising this flag had the effect of raising morale and fighting spirit. Primarily though, it overwhelmed the enemies emotionally with the fact that it was the flag of the strongest guild in the Versailles Continent. Unless it’s an outside enemy guild’s influence, it was a flag that made enemies step back.

“We entered in range of the Undead.”

There was some distance between the place they and where Weed and other Necromancers were but they were easily within the Spellcasters’ range.

“Do not give them time to recover. Attack right now.”

The Mages among the spellcasters swung their hands and cast spells.

“Fire Circle!”

Huge fireballs were created and flew straight into the Undead armies. A spell heading into Undead with bright light and dark smoke!

“An attack!”

“Magicians are here!”

Necromancers shouted in surprise but fire circles had already blasted the Undead. The flames spread as though they were alive and devoured Undead.

Rangers with high mobility advanced and got in position.

“Shoot at once!”

Whoosh!

The arrows the rangers shot poured down on where the Undead gathered like rain.

“Kyaoh!”

The Undead suffered exceptional damage. A large ghoul with

high health vanished with two hits of arrows from afar. Their arrows were made out of holy silver blessed by priests, not to mention dipped in holy water. They took reference from Weed's previous battle with Shire, they came here fully armed to fight against the Undead.

The Undead didn't even have time to respond and were struck by spells and silver arrows.

"Wha... What is this. They are players. There were other players besides Necromancers?"

"What quest did they receive to come here? Why are they attacking us?"

"The flag they are holding is Hermes guild. How did they come here..."

"A ranker. Grand master of Crema, Polon. He's attacking us."

Necromancers had no clue an assault team from Hermes guild would come for them and didn't know what to do.

"Get in lines. Pick up your wooden shields and defend!"

The Undead took up a defensive formation with their shields at

Weed's order, but taking a surprise attack their damage was unbelievable because they were already weakened by holy power.

It was difficult for skeletons to block silver arrows from the rangers and the area-of-effect spells took out thousands of Undead laughably. It was better to step back rather than block.

But their retreat path was blocked by the Natalia Plains, which were still filled with holy power.

Even though the Undead were reforming their positions at Weed's command, the magic attacks devastated them. Because it was an ambush, they had no choice but to receive a lot of damage.

"Death knights, get on gargoyles. Detour in the air and make it look like you are trying attack them."

Weed used an emergency measure in a hurry to contain the magicians. They were elite Death Knights that were beaten to a pulp in the battle of the monastery, but they had to be expended to protect the other Undead.

Polon looking at the scene and raised his sword high.

As a knight, his fighting style was to injure enemies with arrows and spells and then a frontal charge with the knights. He was in a bit of a hurry as he wanted to confront Weed face to face.

"Advance!"

DU DU DU DU!

200 men of the Crema Knights galloped. Their steeds were legendary horses, they who were small as a speck of grain were getting awfully close.

“As a defense formation against the knights, ghouls take the front line and skeletons gather and resist. Do not split apart.”

Weed prepared rapidly as soon as enemies appeared in his sight. Usually, the skeletons would follow orders even if it meant getting their spines crushed but the Crema Knights’ charge had an effect inducing panic. Because it lowers morale and fighting spirit, it took some time for Undead to get in their assigned formation.

Necromancers snapped out.

“They keep attacking us.”

“Shouldn’t we fight back instead of just watching?”

Necromancers cast curse spells towards the Knights and created walls of bone. But due to the knights’ magic resisting armors, the curse spell wasn’t so effective. They also crushed the walls instantly and continued charging. The Necromancers were able to summon thorn vines to make a swamp area and disturb the Knight's charge.

Polon shouted in a loud voice.

“I have no grudges against the Necromancers. We only want Weed so get out of our way!

If anyone tries to help Weed, you will also be compelled to die by Hermes guild.”

An order of death by Hermes guild!

It’s impossible to step a foot in Haven kingdom, and you can’t enter territories of it affiliated guilds as well. There was not a single safe place in the central continent.

Hermes guild has been operating assassination units to take care of whoever’s on the order of death list.They were so very well-known for their infamous actions that the Necromancers couldn’t help but hesitate.

But Weed just smiled.

“Yeah, life is alway meant to be lived alone.”

He predicted that Hermes guild would target and fight him again. With all the wars of the Haven kingdom and establishment of the kingdom, he assumed the Northern continent was safe. But if they arrived with full preparation against Undead, it meant that they responded very quickly.

Usually, there were living-sculptures or trustworthy allies beside him. There was no way he would have reinforcements on par with Hermes guild around him because if something happened he was willing to forfeit the Undead Legion quest itself.

If there are at least ten magicians over level 350, it would be difficult for Weed unless he could close in the range with them. Mobilizing strong forces like rangers and magicians in an army unit just to hunt down Weed!

In contrast, Weed was by himself.

When you are fighting against gigantic mighty guilds, you have to expect to be in an unfair situation.

“Way better than the increase in gas price in winter or ice cream with decreasing size and inflating price in summer.”

Criticizing dirty society, he took out his sword. Focused his strength in his fingers and grabbed the sword tightly. The Knights were approaching like the wind.

‘My body is at its worst condition.’

Even though as Undead his stamina did not decrease, only one third of his health was left. Even though he got out of the monastery and Natalia Plains, his reduced combat capabilities from the holy power hadn’t fully recovered yet. They were still

reduced by approximately 15%. He considered getting on a gargoyle and escaping but then all arrows and spells would be targeting him.

There was not enough time to call the Death Knights again and if many were gathered, they would surely be attacked by attack spells.

Weed exploded with Roar of the Lion.

“All Undead, listen!”

Weed didn’t speak quickly while the Crema Knights were rushing towards him. Instead, he was taking a breath.

500 meters, 400 meters, 300 meters.

With no interference from the Necromancers, the Crema knights closed the gap instantly.

“Dismantle defensive formation, get in offensive formation!”

To stop enemies’ rush, the defense of ghouls, skeletons or zombies was way too weak. Even Weed’s affiliated elite Undead would be no match for them.

Then if defence did not work, choosing offence was Weed’s method!

If the Undead blend in with knights, they won’t be targeted by arrows or spells.

“All attack!”

Undead from every side except the rear clustered against the knights. They were all injured and limping but the number was tremendous.

Polon shouted with disappointment.

“Oh, Weed. What a disgrace to your name. If you think you can hold our feet with this shallow numbers it's really laughable!”

Only warriors and soldiers with proper armor can stop the Crema Knight's charge.

Undead with weak defense would just be easily penetrated.

“Charge!”

The clash between Undead and knights!

Skeletons were demolished and their bones flew off and ghouls turned into grey light. Every time knights stabbed with spear and slashed with swords using their speed, Undead died. Even their spears and swords were covered by silver so they could not hold

out.

They were smart enough to use holy power, holy water and silver against the Undead. The Veteran Undead that Weed and the Necromancers worked to difficulty assault the El Vance Monastery with were being slaughtered mercilessly.

While the knights were taking care of Undead, Weed moved.

‘Of course I knew Undead wouldn’t be of any great help.’

It was impossible to stop the enemies’ rush with half-dead Undead. Even so, he had to try using the large number of Undead.

Weed blended in with the Undead.

About 130 Death Knights, who could not ride gargoyles, that were summoned by other Necromancers were still alive. When the Dullahans and Death knights rushed at the knights trying to break through the bunch of Undead, Weed blended in with them and attacked.

“Dark Energy!”

Approaching with a skill of a Death Knight that consumes mana for increased attack.

“Heriam Fencing!’

When a knight was busy stabbing a dullahan beside Weed with a spear, Weed aimed at his horse.

- 1st stage of consecutive attack succeeded.

Agility increased by +20%.

NEIGHHH!

As the horse collapsed, the knight fell to the earth with it.

Danger followed a knight’s charge!

Not only does their health drops down sharply, they fall into confusion when they fall from their steeds. Because the other knights might attack Weed to try and save their ally, Weed couldn’t finish off the fallen knight.

His next target was the knight trying to stop his horse so he wouldn’t trample over the fallen ally in front of him.

While the knight was using his spear hand to grab the bridle with all his might, Weed jumped and struck him twice.

A consecutive strike that continues like a shadow!

“Two, three.”

- 2nd stage of consecutive attack succeeded.

Strength increased by +40%.

- 3rd stage of consecutive attack succeeded.

Agility increased by +40%.

Right after the knight fell down from his horse due to the attack, Weed flipped twice in air and stole the knight’s horse.

“Four, five, six!”

- 4th stage of consecutive attack succeeded.

Strength increased by +40%.

- 5th stage of consecutive attack succeeded.

You instantly killed a horse.

- 6th stage of consecutive strike succeeded.

You struck the enemy's helmet.

Enemy fell into confusion.

You have disabled mana-consuming skills for 25 seconds.

Riding his horse in the same direction Crema Knights were moving, he attacked the knights.

A Death Knight chasing knights of Hermes guild from behind!

"He's coming from behind."

"Turn your horses around!"

"He keeps chasing!"

Weed was like a leech as he followed closely behind and attacked the knights. The speed of horse was much faster for a Death Knight with light armors. Every time Weed swung his sword, knights either fell down from their horses or died.

The overwhelming prowess of a Death Knight!

Weed hoped that his Death Knights would hop on the riderless horses and follow him quickly but unfortunately they were busy finishing off fallen knights. Because he was by himself, he didn't have time to open his mouth and command Undead.

"I waited for this day. I, Infore, shall claim the glory of killing you!"

Crema's knights turned their upper bodies around and swung their swords and spears.

If they don't put their full weight on it, their attacks won't be fully activated. It was incomparable to Weed who can just ride his horse forward and slash with full power, but they couldn't resist their greed.

Infore's greed and pressure caused his shoulders to tighten and his motions weren't smooth. Making sure their spears didn't pierce him, Weed twisted his body around and then slashed the knights. It wasn't hard avoiding their strikes because they were stabbing backwards but he would be grievously wounded if he gets stabbed even a little by those holy spears coated with silver.

Infore dropped a relatively decent shield and died.

It was Weed raising his earnings quite highly.

Polon : He should be exhausted but he’s resisting annoyingly. Stopping the horses will let them get smashed in a row and he might run away to the other side.

Number 4 to 6, keep running forward.

Number 1 to 3, follow me.

Under Polon’s command, the knights being chased split in two ways.

One drew Weed in with continuous attack and defense, the other with Polon in turned around drawing a circle. Undead littered the ground but they moved as if there were no obstructions. The intersection of two units of knights was getting closer.

Polon and his knights, and even the Necromancers opened their eyes wide to not miss a single action of Weed. Weed was inflicting heavy damages in a split second by himself using Undead exposed to holy power.

Is he trying to ditch the chasing knights and trying to blend into the Undead?!

Weed’s eyes went up to the sky. Death Knights on gargoyles were flying around but with the concentrated fire from arrows and spells, they burned and crashed into the ground.

It’s was impossible to cause some damage by penetrating through guards of rangers and magicians.

‘This is hard. With what’s left of the Undead… I won’t even be able to take down all the Knights.’

Weed kept chasing knights and slashed them.

“Heriam Fencing!”

He dropped knights to the ground where Undead wandered or killed them on horseback. While he was showing off his tremendous ability with Heriam Fencing, the other units of knights behind Weed arrived.

“Time to die, Weed!”

Polon went past Weed, stabbing a spear from the side.

But Weed was able to barely twist his body so his spear only grazed Weed’s shoulder.

- You have been hit by a fierce charge of a knight

Due to heavy damage, your armor’s durability was reduced.

Defense reduced by -7%.

The active Heriam Fencing skill has been cancelled.

As the skill was interrupted, you lose sense of balance for 1.3 seconds.

You have been attacked by a weapon coated with holy silver.

Loss of health increase by 2x.

Power of Death decreased.

Temporary paralysis status can come, but it’s not active now.

Chapter 10: Great King Avannah

Crema’s knights arrived as well.

Weed drew his sword and blocked but he wasn’t able to defend against multiple attacks at the same time.

- You received a critical hit.

With tough resilience, you receive reduced damage.

- You received a critical hit.

With tough resilience, you prevented the effect of confusion from extreme pain.

- Your sword's durability has reached its limit and broke.

Weed’s sword completely shattered.

Though it was a ‘Legendary Rusted Sword’, he’s been using it well by repairing it but after the battle at the monastery and defending from the knights’ fierce charge, its durability fell sharply and got broken.

- You received a critically hit.

After five consecutive critical strikes of holy silver weapons, his resilience reached its limit and caused a paralysis on his whole body. And after three more strikes, his health was almost gone and he tumbled down his horse. Falling from a galloping horse caused heavy damage even for a death knight with relatively light armors.

- Your life is dangerously low.

Getting helps from life-sharing partner.

- Seo Yoon shares your agony.

Maximum life 114,290.

You can use Berserker's Skills up to 70% of partner's mastery.

- You can use a Skill 'Dance of Insane Warrior' at Intermediate Level 8.

You can use 'Berserker's Swordsmanship' at Intermediate Level 4.

You can use 'Death Executor's Swordsmanship' at Intermediate Level 6.

Defensive Skill 'Endurance of Battle' is activated at Intermediate Level 7.

During battles, prevents sharp drop of life and inhibits injuries.

With some of Seo Yoon's health passed onto Weed, he was barely able to stand up.

"'Dance of Insane Warrio'r and 'Berserker's swordsmanship'..."

He didn't have time to check how many Skills were in each swordsmanship branch and what effects they might have. He could only try using it. He's been hunting with Seo Yoon for a long time but the skill she usually used were not that many.

"Live or Die."

- You are armed with the sword of a vengeful ghost knight.

He armed the sword in hurry and activated a Skill.

"Dance of Insane Warrior!"

Weed activated his Skill towards the oncoming knights. Every time he blocked their swords he flew back a few meters, leaving trails of mana that was red like blood.

"Die!"

Every time Weed defended against their attacks, he stumbled and lost life.

'I've seen this Skill before.'

It was a Skill Seo Yoon used against Kubicha, the Great Warrior of Chaos. It happened in a split second but it tied up Kubicha and even put Weed in danger. When these red, blood-like mana trails spread around, they formed a special symbol, turned into strong energy and exploded outwards.

- 'The Dance of Insane Warrior' begins.

A large explosion that turned the ground inside out occurred.

A Death Knight increase his attack with dark energy during a battle. It was a skill heavily depended on fighting spirit and even Heriam Fencing didn't consume much mana. But the 'Dance of Insane Warrior' was an unbelievable attack that consumes more than 70% of Weed's unused mana.

- 6 knights of Crema died.

Fame increased by 469

- Obtained small amount of experience.

It was an attack of sharp energy so they couldn't fully guard

against it with their armors. Weed lost his sense of balance from the repelling power of the Skill but he immediately kicked off the ground and ran away. There were enemies everywhere so he needed every chance he could get.

'First Skill in the Swordsmanship of Aggressor, The Seal of Prisoner.'

Running through the dust, he spotted a knight fell from his horse due to the 'Dance of Insane Warrior'. Weed targeted his vital point and swung his sword at his neck.

- The Seal of the Prisoner hit on target.

Until the target dies or gets healed by a cleric, the seal won't disappear.

Continuously bleed out and health decrease by 160 per second.

Weed used the 'Seal of the Prisoner' on eight knights. He was able to strike four points on one knight alone.

'Second Skill... Sword of Fighting Spirit.'

The 'Sword of Fighting Spirit' was a skill that increase Weed's attack in proportion to the damage the he received. Attacking another knights, he activated the third Skill, 'Sword of Slaughter'. It was a skill that could only be used when the player's life was very low.

But it was a desperate swordsmanship that either the player or enemy must die.

By giving up all defense to kill the target, it increased the destructive power exponentially.

As Weed was active beyond extraordinary against the knights, Polon and the Crema Knights were very puzzled. With those harsh injuries, he should have already died but he kept resisting till the end.

‘How much health does he have?’

‘His Skills and movements changed a bit.’

The fact that his resilience and attack grew larger than when he started the battle was a reality that could not believe.

Polon had a planned to ask him for a duel. Drive him into a dead end, then fight one on one and claim a perfect victory. To be honest, killing Weed was could be claimed as the greatest glory so he really wanted to have a duel.

‘But killing Weed is top priority. I can’t afford to give him time to heal.’

His overall evaluation of Weed improved. Not only was he at a high level and fully aware of his Skills, he knows how to fight and dominate a battle with lesser force. Even high-rank officials in the communication network of the Hermes guild instructed him to kill Weed no matter what it took.

'I can't give Weed an opportunity to escape and I can't afford to take casualties anymore.'

Polon trained the knights of Crema Knights directly. As the battle dragged on, they were suffering and getting killed by the gradually recovering Undead.

Polon : I authorize magicians and rangers to attack Weed directly.

After giving an instruction to the Spellcasters and Rangers, he withdrew with his knights.

Morning was coming.

Weed noticed something suspicious was going on and clung to Crema knights to prevent any chance of attack.

Polon : Just do it. Even if there are casualties, it's better to kill Weed fast and end the battle.

A spell was casted with some knights in the range of the spell.

Just when spells were casted and arrows were shot towards the place where Weed and knights were entangled.

‘Now.’

Weed quickly stole away on a horse and rode with all his power.

He was observing the facial expressions and behavior of players in the Crema Knights. Then he turned around to the direction where magicians were and ran away without even looking back.

An animalistic survival instinct.

CLANG!

Behind the direction Weed was riding in, Crema knights died from spells and arrows.

“Keep attacking. Kill him!”

In range of Polon’s loud cry, Weed had to make a decision. There was no place to run in Natalia Plains full of knights and Undead. To escape this place completely, he had to keep avoiding attacks from rangers and magicians but that was truthfully impossible.

There is no way he can dodge sky-filling arrows or fire balls, icicles and covering of dirt.

‘About 32% health left.’

Based on his estimation, he will die instantly if he gets struck by the consecutive spells.

The rush of knights were hard to handle as well. He can use the characteristic of Berserker to resist them escaping was another problem. With the dispersed knights chasing him in many directions and support from the magicians and rangers, he would die before getting anywhere.

‘If so, the only place I can run to is….’

Weed drove his steed towards El Vance Monastery.

“Let’s go!”

It was the only place without blockades and opposite of where rangers and magicians were standing. El Vance Monastery was a fatal place for Undead and going back there was an unimaginable or idiotic choice.

“Chase him. Do not let him get away!”

Crema knights began their chase but because of their comrades

who died in the long-range attack, they hesitated and the gap was getting wider. However, they soon started closing the gap.

As Weed got closer to the monastery, he was affected by holy power and his strength and health kept decreasing. Even though he had the occupational characteristics of Berserker, his weak points as an Undead remained.

It was a bad combination for running away!

“Trying to make a living is not easy.”

Looking around the vicinity, there were corpses of Undead and monsters everywhere. It would be useful if he could use Necromancers Skills but all he could do was efficiently controlling Undead armies.

He could only continue forward.

He was in such hurry that he didn’t get a chance to give other commands to Undead. About ten seconds later, the other knights will arrive, so he had no time to hesitate. There were many signs of natural disasters and the destructions wrought by the Undead.

Weed found a dark crack under the altar. Normally it wouldn’t stick out but as an Undead, he was sensitive to holy power. There was enormous holy power coming out from the crack.

Weed started drooling.

“Truly I really have no choice.”

Even in a situation where his life is at stake, Weed just followed his instincts regarding items. Weed dug through the altar and entered.

“He’s not here.”

“He just entered here. He might be hiding so keep looking!”

“If he prepared an ambushes, it might be dangerous.”

“He’s an Undead. He wouldn’t be able to endure holy power for a long time. We need to find him quickly.”

A few seconds after Weed disappeared he Crema Knights arrived.

While the holy power was a disadvantage to Weed, the holy power gave them a blessing effect with regeneration of vitality and health. Compare to their usual they were able to perform with double their original abilities, it was a only a matter of time before they found Weed and killed him.

You have become the discoverer of a dungeon, the underworld of El Vance Monastery

Privileges: Fame increased by 900

Double experience and item dropping rate for one week.

Very first monster you hunt will drop a best item it can possibly drop.

Coming here after escaping from the enemy, Weed was unhappy as he looked at the dungeon privileges.This place is categorized as a dangerous place for Undead so he can't even log out.

When he logged out during battle or when health was decreasing, the body remains and ends up dead eventually.

"I guess I have to keep continuing."

Weed raised his sword and started running forward. Berserkers are good in a battle but when you stop and begin resting, he become much weaker than usual.

"Let's find where this dungeon ends!"

It was only a matter of time before the knights found the entrance to the dungeon.

Few seconds if fast and few minutes if late. Weed ran down the path of the dungeon. Even without the Undead's vision, the inside was brighter than daylight. It was because every wall and corner, and even the embedded crystals were shining.

He did not look at the mystical sight and kept running.

"Intruder. After a long time, there finally is a intruder."

A monster that looked like a moth that has been grown to two meters jumped out.

The name was Avannah.

As a monster feeding off holy power, its average level was about 300. There is always a scramble for dungeons with Avannah because they had low life and they become much easier if its wings were targeted first. It was not an exaggeration to say that it was an exclusive hunting ground for top guilds. It was icing on the cake that there were large amount of holy power in the environment where Avannahh dwelled.

However, Weed didn't have time to face him so he just kept running forward.

"Quadruped Run!"

Weed increased his speed. He leaped streamlets flowing in the dungeon and when there were pits, he stabbed his sword on the wall as a run-up.

It was motions wild beasts would show.

It seemed like Avannah had certain area assigned as it stopped attacking and chasing and went back as soon as he leaped a streamlet. Even so, it was only it managed to take out 11% of Weed's life.

"At this rate, I won't even be able to fight."

Only 8% of his health was remaining. Because he's in a place with holy power spread around, his combat capabilities were weakened and his strength and mana started escaping.

"If only there is a teleportation gate leading to somewhere safe....."

He had his hopes up but the possibility of finding it was less than one in ten. In a very rare occasion when the dungeon was fully cleared, was there a teleportation portal leading to the next area. But right now, he was just hoping and he didn't even know the geographic features of the dungeon.

"But holy power is getting stronger this way."

Weed followed the Undead weakening holy power. He could die

in a multitude of ways, death was always nearby so he just wanted to confirm with his own eyes what lied at the end of the dungeon. And at the end of the path, he found it first.

Great king Avannah Lordriam!

Unlike normal Avannah, not only is it rare, it uses powerful holy spells and has high attack. Usually, one would form a party composed of players with alot of experience when a Great King Avannah appears. Because it is a monster over level 450 and if it appeared accidentally the hunt usually failed.

Considering its Skills such as blinding ray, binding and self-recovery, it's extremely hard to hunt. The great king Avannah Lordriam in front of Weed was holding a small jewel in his fingers. Holy power was released from the jewel.

A Diamond of the Blessed Sanctum.

When held by priests and holy knights, it increases their faith sharply as well as the effects and range of holy spells.

Weed gains courage in front of items.

Jewels were easy to bargain with.

As though he was in a 100 meter race, he ran on four feet and jumped high onto Lordriam.

‘The only way to fight and win easily is to cut off its antennae.’

Lordriam has atrophied eyes so it read small signs with its antennae. The antennae could be said to be its only weakness.

‘The Dance of Insane Warrior.’

With Weed’s attack capabilities weakened, the only Skill that could inflict a damage to Lordriam was this one. Squeezing out his mana, he swung his sword at Lordriam’s eight antennae and then stepped on the ground. The energy of blood-like mana moved around and hit Lordriam’s antennae.

- You have inflicted a critical strike.

His concentration grew stronger the more danger he was in!

With moves he wouldn’t normally be able to perform in air, he cut Lordriam’s antennas.

SHRIEEEK!

Lordriam started struggling. Even though the antennas were cut it wasn’t over yet. It can heal itself with holy spells. Weed had to put out as much damage as he could while it was writhing at the pain of getting its antennae cut.

“The Seal of Prisoner. Sword of Fighting Spirit!”

Using his Berserker Skills, he attacked Lordriam. Usually, he would prepare his heart or come up with plans in his head when he encountered boss class monsters.

But Weed jumped up on his four feet, hitting it as much as possible as soon as he spotted Lordriam. As if he was trying to prove that no monster can stand in front of a beating, he circled around it and swung his sword.

Lordriam activated a holy spell.

Purification of Silence.

A holy spell that turns an evil creature to nothing. The Diamond of Blessed Sanctum magnified the effect. As Weed’s bones broke, it only left him with 2% health remaining.

‘I need to kill it no matter what…’

He tried to keep slashing Lordriam but another holy spell was used.

Turn Undead.

A spell incompatible with Undead!

Normally, an Undead higher than a Death Knight won’t collapse right away from Turn Undead. But Weed’s life was way too low so he couldn’t withstand the holy spells of Lordriam.

- Health has depleted. You have died.

Skill level for ‘Power to reject death’ is low. Due to holy power permeated to the body, the Skill hasn't activated.

You are unable to log in for 24 hours. Because of your death, your level and Skill mastery declines.

_____

Not only three minutes after Weed died, Crema’s knights arrived.

After they came into the dungeon they encountered the Avannah and hunted it as fast as they could and came here.

“It’s the great king Avannah.”

“Its antennae are cut.”

Lordriam was already injured with many scars.

The Crema knights hunted Lordriam whose antennae were not fully recovered. They weren’t inflicted as much as the Undead by

holy spells so it wasn't that hard. Polon finished off Lordriam and picked up The Diamond of the Sanctum which Weed was craving.

"This rare item..."

After the battle, they were able to find many things besides items dropped by Lordriam.

"This must be the item Weed dropped as he died."

A nearby knight picked up the item first.

- You obtained 3 old barley breads.

- You obtained rusty broken helmet.

- You obtained a wriggling worm.

- You obtained a molar of a skeleton.

"I can't even remember the last time I picked up such poor items. Why was he even holding these?!"

The knight couldn't resist his irritation and threw the japtems. As an Undead, their tendency was bound to lean towards misfortune and evil side. If you have a bad reputation, the possibility of dropping good items among the items in your

possession multiplied several fold. But Weed died dropping bunch of useless items.

This was thanks to Weed's thorough preparation

"There are many Necromancers. First of all, these Necromancers who like Undead aren't normal."

Ever since he received the quest from The Undead Legion and seeing there were many people, he didn't trust them. The original sword, armor and expensive item he usually equipped were stored in the lord's castle in Morata. He only had necessary items that increase leadership such as the horn or the royal seal and as soon as Hermes guild showed up, he hid them.

"I'm gonna lose the items anyway if I die...."

He entreated Marey and left it to him.

"You must give them back to me later."

"I will do so."

"If you look at the bottom of the items it written in small, 'Weed's item.'"

"....."

By preparing for his death in advance, he was able to not lose important items.

Of course, from Weed's point of view, it was a matter of great regret that he couldn't hide even japtems.

After confirming that Weed got killed by a monster, Polon and the knights came back to Natalia Plains.

"Necromancers, decide whether you will join Hermes guild or not."

The Spellcaster and Ranger armies posed in preparation for attack. It was a little coercive but Polon clearly showed to Necromancers that if they don't join Hermes guild, they would be killed right here.

"Wa... What should I do?"

"I like staying alone. But if I do join Hermes guild, there may be advantages."

While the Necromancers were agitated, Jeanne straightened her shoulder and stepped forward.

"I will not join Hermes guild."

“You must be Jeanne.”

Polon heard about the Necromancers through Zabrin.

“And the reason for not joining the guild is?”

“It could be said that the reason we could become Necromancers is thanks to Weed.”

“That’s it? If you reject Hermes guild, there will be a lot of dangers coming to you. Even now, I’m sure you have a lot to lose if you die here. I will give you another chance to change your decision.”

“My position stays unchanged. From the moment I became a Necromancers to these quests, every Necromancers owed Weed a great favor. I will not be a part of Hermes guild.”

Polon laughed with ridicule.

“You really think the other Necromancers think the same way as you do? Let me make it clear. If you stay there, you will die. Come to this side if you are willing to join Hermes guild.

Zabrin and the Necromancers that planned to join Hermes guild walked to where Polon was.

But more than ten Necromancers stood still.

Jeanne, Otem, Harien, Gruzed, Varenna and other players that fought together in the canyon. Some were already in guilds but they voluntarily rejected Hermes guild. Marie stood on Hermes guild's side because he had to protect Weed's items.

"The story will not end like this... Looks like a song with good story will come up."

From KMC Media, adventures of Necromancers was being broadcasted live. Mainly because Weed was in the adventure, they started broadcasting live from the moment he revealed himself. Other broadcasting networks were broadcasting a program about Necromancers and The Undead Legion so there weren't any changes to ratings.

This was due to CTS raising their ratings high with prodigious amount of funds from the parent company; LK gamers that broadcasted professionally with their established digital media system that was available 24 hours.

Beside them, new broadcasting stations and online broadcasting stations were established within a month.

As tons of people became interest int Royal Road and derived their joy from it, specialty channels also appeared.

Royal Road fishing channel.

Royal Road golf channel.

Dungeon chef.

Child of Versailles Continent.

Bard’s old boots.

As the influences of online game broadcasts grew larger, the competition got fiercer. KMC Media was a channel that secured a lot of fixed viewers based on support from a variety of players.

“Weed and The Undead have finally occupied the monastery.”

When Weed’s adventure went on air, general viewers visited the message board and responded. Besides game broadcasting channels, it was so popular that popular that it was republished on portal news sites. It was not only because Weed was a living legend of Continent of Magic, but he also kept having exciting adventures in Royal Road.

“Hermes guild suddenly appeared and started attacking. Ah, its an incredible force. There’s Polon, Crema Knights, ranger armies and Spellcasters.” When they were about to cut the broadcast with the scene of Weed clearing his last quest, hosts explained the

sudden change of situation and even floated a subtitle.

▷Appearance of Hermes guild.

▷Attacking The Undead led by Weed.

They decided to prolong the broadcast until the dispute between Weed and Hermes guild ended.

-The second round of Weed and Hermes guild.

-Hermes guild sent out an assault team to a place where The Undead Legion stood in force just to kill Weed.

-A battle!

Ratings went up dramatically.

However, Weed's condition was too poor to make any meaningful variable. They announced that Weed performed remarkably but then went in the monastery and was eventually killed.

Although he wasn't killed directly by Hermes guild, it still broke the record of undefeated God of War.

Soon, the viewers' message board was filled with comments

regarding Weed’s death.

- Those cheap dirty bastards. They lost at Jigolaths and chased him all the way to there.

- These heartless cowards are all the same.

- They brought that much forces and ambushed only after the quest was cleared and he was exhuasted.

- Those guys were always way too far from fair and square.

- I don’t like a single action that Hermes guild makes.

The board was filled with comments criticizing Hermes guild harshly.

There was a beach east of Morata.

When the Northern Region was barely known to people, no one came to this place. But now, there are always players because there were many monsters worth hunting. On a rainy day, players with mud on their faces were working.

“How many did you dug up?”

“About 1,430. 400 more clams and then I can buy a longsword.”

These were players digging up clams and cockles to earn money. As Morata became a metropolis, the resident population inflated dramatically.

Food could be obtained by harvesting wheat and barley but novice players earned money by doing quests supplying the seafood market with fresh ingredients. When they were taking a rest stretching their backs, people came along with tide from the sea.

The Geomchis had finally arrived at the northern Versailles Continent.

- You have discovered a new sea route adjacent to Morata, the Northern Region.

By pioneering a sea route, your fame has increased by 420

By succeeding in your adventure, each stat has increased by 3.

Courage increased by 7.

Mastery of Sailing Skill increased.

- You have become the first person to cross the ocean by

swimming.

You have successfully led a near impossibly reckless challenge.

Perseverance increased by 24.

Endurance increased by 31.

Vitality increased by 15.

Every stats increased by 9.

- Fame increased by 2,980

Every time you tell your story about crossing the ocean in a tavern, you gain extra 40 fame

If you talk to sailors or people with a special attachment to the ocean, you will be able to form very close intimacy.

- Ability to understand water increased.

Water-related magic resistance increased and affinity to spirits of water has been created.

- You’ve obtained a title ‘Legendary Iron Man of the Ocean’

After experiencing the rough ocean with their bare bodies they left a legend in the ocean no one can dare to follow.

Combat capabilities on the ocean increased.

You bring out unconditional supports from sailors.

Level of Sailing Skill increased by 3.

Among qualifications of admiral, an ability to read flow of currents increased.

Chance of assault from sea monsters reduced.

The Geomchi obtained achievements and titles that players with the ocean as their base only dreamed of.

“It was a good thing we swam?”

“Yes, well, let’s swim again if we ever get to go back someday.”

“I’m hungry. Let’s go get some food.”

The Geomchi headed in the direction of Morata.

They achieved a great feat in the ocean but ironically they couldn't make any promise on when they are going to return to ocean.

KMC Media progressed with 'Story of Versailles Continent' after Weed died as was originally planned. It was a popular show hosted by Shin Hye Min and Oh Joo Wan.

"A lot of things happened today. First of all, there was the celebration of the establishment of a new country in Haven kingdom."

"That's right. Many viewers were looking forward to this event. The celebration of establishment of Hermes guild was held today."

"Looked like a lot of people participated"

"Would it be an exaggeration to say that participants completely filled the capital, Aren castle? Besides players from Haven kingdom, ambassadors from each guild and other kingdoms visited as well."

On the screen, the celebration of Haven kingdom newly reformed by the Hermes guild was seen. The fancy palace, interior castles and exterior castles were crowded with people. Bardray put a crown on his head, wore clothes representing the king and placed a sword around his waist.

“I appoint you as the count to rule Doria region.”

“I will devote myself loyally.”

“I appoint you as the viscount of Borask.”

“It’s an honor.”

He officially appointed high-rank players from Hermes guild as nobles.

Haven kingdom was going to be re-established under centralism but by being appointinted as nobles, various stats could be earned. In case of Bardray, he gained the most fame in the kingdom and a considerable amount of nobility, leadership, dignity and honor.

The king had a separate governance power.

The higher it is, the more loyalty they received from the nation and the morale of knights and soldiers increased. Governance power wasn’t not a stat that could be increased normally. It was depended on governed territories, population of residents, knights, magicians, business, and the development of technologies.

It could go up or down even from winning or losing a war, accomplishing a large-scale trade, or suffered a flood or drought. If he governed excellently, many positive events would occur and he

could even get the blessings of gods.

Bardray became the player with most level in Versailles Continent and the highest authority.

“It is a truly a spectacular scene. There were many spectacles of knights’ duels at the end of the celebration. We will bring it to you shortly.”

“I think many of the viewers are wondering about Embinyu Church. We have news ready today about the Embinyu Church, isn’t that right Oh Joo Wan?”

“Of course its prepared. There seems to be inquisitors wandering around the regions held by the Embinyu Church.”

The Embinyu Church that appeared like a storm and brought the Versailles Continent to chaos. The Embinyu Church was an evil influence that occupied several castles and possessed huge armies in the central continent where each guild was vying seriously for territories. They were an influence that represented malice but players were able to chose whether to join Embinyu Church of not.

With players’ joining their forces, the Embinyu Church spread around like wildfire. In the lands owned by Embinyu Church crops withered and rivers dried up. While the Versailles Continent was suffering with measles, only Thor, the kingdom of dwarves and the Northern Region have remained fine without the Embinyu Church’s activities.

What exactly happened in Thor kingdom was unknown but the Niflheim Empire in the Northern Region collapsed because of the Embinyu Church. Weed drove the Embinyu Church out and began re-establishing the Northern Region and Morata. It was only an assumption that if they dispelled the power of Embinyu Church in advance, there wouldn't have been damages from sudden rage.

"If you get caught by the inquisitors of the Embinyu Church, they will attack you in the name of judging heresy."

"I heard if you are a paladin or priest the harassment will be harsher?"

"That's right. If you get captured by them, you lose fair amount of faith so please be careful."

"Fix your channel as a guest will talk about the Embinyu Church in our second part! Do not forget about this. Let's continue with other stories."

"Yes, next on the news...."

Lee Hyun went out of the capsule and went to the market.

There was no rest for a Dark Gamer. Versailles Continent was always open so to stay ahead of everyone else, they can't afford to take a break. The only opportunity was when they lost their lives

and could not connect for the next 24 hours.

"Let's make some Kimchi."

It was a day for him to make kimchi for the winter period. Lee Hyun stacked delivered chinese cabbage and ingredients in his yard and started making kimchi.

Every time he ripped cabbage off, he whispered.

"Polon"

RIIPPP.

"Hermes guild..."

RIIIIPPPP.

"How dare you touch me."

BUUUWWONG.

"My japtems."

PUK!

“Experience….”

RIP!

“To upend my rice bowl.”

More grudges stacked up as he soaked about 200 chinese cabbages!

The impact was too severe. His valuable items could be taken too.

He turned on his television and watched KMC Media as he was making kimchi for winter. Even though he was fairly aware of many things happening in Royal Road through the board, he had little interest in the accidents happening in irrelevant lands. But as broadcast program usually selected important incidents it was watched in detail.

“Expansion of Embinyu Church…”

They were a force that even Alveron, the pope candidate for Church of Freya, kept strict vigilance. The strength of Daymond from the guild ‘Predators of the Land’ that put the Versailles Continent in danger was actually from the Embinyu Church. Lee Hyun was able to know about this by getting close to Daymond through the chat room of Dark Gamers Union.

When members of Predators of the Land’ die, their bodies are offered to the god Embinyu forever as sacrifice. It meant the

complete deletion of a character so they had to start over as beginners and they chose to start in Morata.

It was said that Daymond and his people seem to take quests covertly. Someday he will die too but until then, he has been living his life as a Dark Gamer faithfully to get as many items he can.

“Well, Embinyu Church is not what I should focus on right now.”

Morata was being invaded by the Undead Legion and the Hermes guild sent out an assault team to bother him.

“This won’t be resolved peacefully.”

Lee Hyun killed every guild that was in his sight in the Continent of Magic so he was well aware of how useless it was to discuss a cause or justification.

Power!

It was a world decided by the rule of power.

His sister came back from library, helped him make kimchi and ate boiled pork with him at dinner.

“Eat up, brother.”

As she became a university student, his sister was more grown-up lady feeding him some pork and peeling fruits.

‘I never knew a day like this would come…’

Just five years ago, Lee Hyun had some extreme thoughts.

But what always made him change his mind right before the final moment…

‘This current situation… I can’t even die.’

He didn’t have any relatives to collect condolence money and to build a coffin and holding a funeral cost money, so he couldn’t afford to die.

It was a moment when he desperately craved for a free fish cake soup from a cart bar. But now, he was able to cook things from purchased ingredients and he has his own house in his name. Lee Hyun was living his life feeling small happiness every day.

“I should sleep early today.”

Early next day, he went grocery shopping and didn’t forget to train his body at the dojo.

‘Hermes guild….’

Lee Hyun swung his sword gnashing his teeth carefully in anger, there was no industry like the dental industry that charge the most feese.

It was a murderous sword filled with his grudge.

After finishing his agenda for today, he came back home, cleaned, and watched some television to pass the time.

And then time for Royal Road had finally come.

Lee Hyun entered the capsule without any hesitation.

The Geomchis visited eight restaurants in Morata.

“This place is delicious too.”

“There was a reason why this place is doing good business, Sahyung.”

It wasn’t that they had expensive taste that they sampled food and came out right away. They ate generously from the eight restaurant that they cleared out the ingredients.

Overeating and gluttony!

In Royal Road if a player ate a lot they could get fat, but that was something very far from these Geomchi that often fought and moved around. While wandering around, eating to their heart's content they heard something from a passerby.

The second advance of the Undead Legion!

It seemed that the combatant-class players were deployed to protect Morata and the arts-class players were cheering them on voluntarily. Not only did they draw symbols on armor, bards and dancers followed them in the battlefield and performed.

Most requests from the lord's castle, Church of Freya, Church of Lugh, and mercenary guilds were about hunting down Undead. Due to the emergency situation, Morata was operated on the war basis.

In front of the castle gate, there were many novice players that just started and the square was still filled with players selling things. Visits from tourists weren't affected but anyone in Morata felt a sense of crisis due to the advance of Undead Legion.

"It's outrageous that the Undead are advancing to the land of our youngest."

"Looks like we were too careless."

"Shouldn't we return the favor for all the free food?"

“Let’s get warmed up.”

With their hands full of food, they headed to the battlefield where The Undead Legion was approaching.

The Undead soldiers brought chariots with blades on their sides and middle-sized Undead made out of corpses of Morghis and Nukalis were on a rampage. The Armies of Morata, the Priests of the Church of Freya, Paladins, and players placed in a long line fought Undead while maintaining their defense formation.

There were tremendous amount of players holding flags of Grass Porridge religion and high-level players from across the central continent.

It was not an exaggeration to say this place was a true battlefield.

“I like this place. Disciples, let’s go!”

“Yes, Sahyung!”

The Geomchi walked towards Undead. The Undead jumped in fiercely without knowing anything and the Geomchi simply slashed them and walked across the battlefield.

‘Everyone bring it on.’

‘Stronger, the better.’

Combat chariots, Morghis, Nukalis, Dullahan, Death Knights.

There was no need to differentiate them. Whatever comes into the Geomchi’s range, they would just beat into a pulp. As they entered the area swarming with Undead, they split from each other and all they could see was Undead everywhere but that was okay.

The Geomchi slashed every Undead they could see.

A complete trance!

In reality, they were many frustrating situations for them. Even if they master swords and train their bodies to a high level, they barely got to use it in real life. When someone messed with them, they had to pretend and tolerate like nothing happened and just pass on by.

They trained themselves taking patience and self-control as a virtue. Their hot blood pumped hotter than anyone else but there was no place to blast it.

Royal Road was a small outlet for them.

Only thinking about strength, they looked for stronger men and fought. They don’t have to hide the wild nature hiding deep within their masculine instincts.

“Bring it on, Undead! Bring someone stronger than you!”

The Geomchi were extremely excited.

They swam across ocean and trained but nothing was better than using their bodies to fight like now. The irresistible pleasure coming out when you forget about everything and purely focus on each ongoing battle!

“Not enough, I want more!”

The Geomchi slaughtered undead at random.

They hop on rhinos and fought, they killed every undead they saw. They mainly used swords but they picked up any kind weapons like blades, iron maces, axes and chains and used them. Because the Geomchi mastered Weaponry skill, they can use any kind of weapon they wanted.

There was a difference in the center of gravity and striking point for each weapon, but the power of rotating the waist while heading the weapon to slash enemies in half remained the same.

Melting into the fight with techniques forged in wild battles!

- Undead Legion is retreating.

The battle ended with a victory for Morata's defense force.

While the Geomchi were taking care of the main force, Paladins were able to kill the witch named Bianca that controlled the Undead Legion armies and claim victory.

Book 24: Calling The Storm

Chapter 1: Doom Knight Rebellion Plan

Weed logged back on and appeared in the Undead Legion's stronghold. Until the quest was complete then he would continue to be revived in the area. High class level 300 to 400 undead were casually walking around this dangerous place! Two dragons were standing on the towers of the wall while one was flying in the air.

"The Elven army is putting up a strong resistance."

"As long as we have Bar Khan then I could quickly wipe them out...but it will be difficult to handle a counterattack from the Fairies.

"I'm afraid of the Dwarves."

The Fairy Queen Tania entering into the battle was a topic of interest among the undead. In the garden of the deserted fort was thousands of elite undead and a few of them were having conversations.

Weed sat near a tree.

"First, I need to check the military forces."

Since he was going to fighting as an undead, he took the time to see how much harm they could do. He had been level 398 but he dropped a level and was now 397.

“What did I lose…”

Weed remembered the japtem he had lost the other day the most. He wasn’t unfamiliar with the exact name and worth of each item. That was because it was the most fundamental skill in the business.

“Wheat bread and green onions, a helmet, a ring, and skeleton molars.”

Weed felt cheated since the items that could have been used in various ways were now gone.

He wouldn’t be able to make up for the lost items unless he killed a lot of people in this place. After having regretted losing the items for a moment, he checked his skills.

Advanced Level 8 Sculpting was back at 0% while the other skills had dropped 4-13%.

Since he was undead, the cost of the death penalty was unjustly higher than others.

“To cause this degree of damage, I will never forget even after I’m seventy years old.”

He would never forget his grudge against his long time enemy,

the Hermes Guild! Stationed in the large fortress were some famous undead knights.

‘A lot of these are named undead that have shown up in the history of the Continent of Versailles.’

The Undead Legion was packed with the best undead. Weed was a Death Knight, but since he was high level he could do a quest to get promoted to a higher rank undead.

Weed went from place to place, snooping around.

Then a ghost servant came to him.

“Bar Khan is expecting you.”

He was now meeting Bar Khan in order to get his undead upgrade. So now, Weed went with the ghost servant. The Undead Legion had heavily expanded their territory. Weed was an undead now, but he would not be able to approach the place if he was alive.

‘This is going to be quite difficult.’

The ghost servant led Weed into the basement. The basement of the fortress had many unopened oak containers of sealed alcohol stored within.

‘The finest wines and brandy.’

Just from the smell Weed could imagine how expensive the price of all of it would be. Well made liquor could be easily sold and was worth its weight in gold.

‘Since its placed here, he must not know the taste of alcohol.’

Certain measures had to be taken in order to maintain high grade alcohol for long periods of time. The old fortress used to be famous for its alcohol, but now it has become the property of the mana spirit lich Bar Khan.

Alcohol was very sensitive to its environment so drinking it when its complete gave a tremendous impact. If you were an undead then there would be no use for alcohol, and even the ghost pirates at the ocean had only pretended to drink alcohol but none of the quantity had actually decreased. Furthermore, since Bar Khan was staying here then no normal undead would come here to drink.

‘That’s a lot of money.’

Weed kept a greedy eye on the stocked wine cellar as he was led through two large open doors to where Bar Khan was staying. Cold air surged throughout the room. Water had flowed underground and were being channeled through blackened rocks as it played a role in the altar. Bar Khan sat like a king in a very colorful chair. It was made of the highest quality materials but it had acquired a lot of dust on it, there was also a jeweled crown on his head and an

eagle mounted on his staff. The place where he had been stabbed by the holy sword still pulsed with divine power.

“Death Knight, come closer.”

Bar Khan’s voice echoed throughout the room!

“My lord…”

Weed walked forwards politely and knelt down before Bar Khan. The Undead Legion had attacked Morata’s army with a bombardment undead that made him want to swear at him. However that would have to wait until another day.

As Bar Khan got up and started walking around, Weed looked at the various things around the room. There were history books on the Continent of Versailles that describe a bit about the fortress. It had existed in the Northern Province and was historically on the map. However it was now in a state where it was heavily damaged and almost collapsing, but the undead were not very much interested in that which is why they occupied it.

However, looking at the rooms and halls as well as how they connected to the stairs could be used as a reference to identify its structure. Thanks to his work and knowledge in sculpting, he could now perceive the building’s structure.

“I thank you Lord, for the honor of seeing you directly when all I did was do as you had ordered.”

Since Weed was considered an inferior Death Knight, he did not hesitate to suck up to him.

“I heard you took care of those annoying monsters.”

“What else would I have done? All is for the Lord.”

“The Undead Legion need more undead of you ability and talent but your body of a Death Knight is lacking so I will give you a new body.”

Bar Khan recited a spell. Weed could feel the sin bearing down on his chest and restricting his lungs but he remained still.

“You have returned to the world of the living. This dark, black, and corrupted world. The laws are such that darkness will never disappear so let us carve it into everyone. Undead Rise!”

Black smoke came out of Weed’s body and after awhile his physical features changed and became more muscular. His legs got longer and his arms thickened. He grew another 40 centimeters and had the large physique of a Barbarian.

+————————————————————————

-Bar Khan has now used his undead summoning spell to change you into a Doom Knight.

The Summon Undead Spell has increased all combat related spells by 15%.

You can now wear bone armor with excellent defense.

All Advanced Combat skills has increased by at least two levels.

Enemies attacked by a caster's black magic will suffer eternal torment and will not stop screaming.

State has been changed to that of Doom Knight.

Now under Bar Khan's direct command.

You now have direct command over many undead.

————————————————————————+

The ultimate combat undead was the Doom Knight. The only undead that was stronger was the Abyss Knights, born of despair. They were capable of hunting the absolute monsters known as dragons. That at least, was according to the legends of Bar Khan. However, Abyss Knights were not undead that could be summoned by a Necromancer but they had to be born from certain conditions being met. They had yet to exist and were only a legend on the Continent of Versailles.

“Defend the fortress. Fight against the Elven counterattack.”

+————————————————————————

The Elven Killer Blades Army

The Wood Elves and the Fairy Queen had launched a surprise attack on the Undead Legion. The arrows infused with spirit energy can completely destroy the undead. Prevent the Elven infiltration and show them the fear of the undead. Because of the status report, Bar Khan has provided twice as many undead than usual.

Difficulty: A

Quest limit: Limited to the Undead.

————————————————————————+

Bar Khan had given him a quest!

Now he had direct command, so he had a larger amount of undead and the quality had increased as well. He was now capable of bringing and commanding the troops of the Undead Legion to participate in the war. This was not familiarity with skeleton soldiers and ghosts alone, but as a Death Knight he had shown great performance and that helped to gain him more ground.

‘I have to take care of the military here.’

Weed thought about killing Bar Khan instead of taking the Fairy Queen’s life. The slaughter of elves and dwarves would not help to fight Bar Khan. Rather he thought about rebelling against the Undead Legion. Weed decided to hunt down Bar Khan and his army.

“I don’t stand a chance outside.”

Whether or not Bar Khan has regained his strength, it did not change the fact that he was going to attack Morata. The question was how to get rid of Bar Khan now that he was in a position of power to receive help from the Undead Legion! It would be too difficult to defeat the Undead Legion outside of the fortress. But it would be impossible to hunt Bar Khan unless he took care of the undead. Weed would need to become an Abyss Knight if he wanted to take on Bar Khan, so he needed to get rid of Bar Khan’s hostile undead.

“Morata can’t dispatch any troops…”

Bar Khan was the lord of the undead forces and could always increase their numbers. Bar Khan would only rejoice if the fragile human army came to attack. That was also why he didn’t bring any sculptures of life.

“It would be as if I presented him with a full corse of food in a fancy restaurant, with season meat, beef, crab, abalone, salad, and soup!”

The risk of having all of his forces controlled by Bar Khan and assimilated into the undead army was too great. This would be even more dangerous for the sculptures of life to fight against Bar Khan's undead forces.

"Then to hunt Bar Khan..."

Weed came outside after he had changed to a higher tier undead. He walked around the fortress to meet the other undead.

"Gelgelgel. We look forward to the Doom Knight that was created by Bar Khan."

"There is nothing that can stop us now. Not even the elves."

"Keulkeul. It has been a long time since humans have shown up."

Watchmen and guards had been placed to determine if any troops were coming. 24 hours a day, the undead stood watch. He could take advantage of the fortress being very old. If it wasn't a human watchman, then Weed could find a loophole.

"It's possible to use a silent break in then a surprise attack."

It would not be too hard to sneak in whenever they were changing the guards. There would be an opportunity to attack from the dungeon when Bar Khan was busy with the elves,

barbarians, dwarves, and fairies.

Bar Khan had entrested him with the mission of leading the Undead Legion so he could now leave the fortress to hunt secretly. The fortress was swarming with undead and to defeat the Undead Legiion he needed to eliminate Bar Khan.

“There would need at least 100 more high levels to take him down.”

It would not be possible for Weed’s plan.

Then he heard the chat from the Wilderness Travelers Guild.

Sabrina: One more floor and then its time for the boss.

Edwin: This hidden dungeon is really tough. Anyways, its almost the end.

Pin: I want to finish resting.

Hermann: I hope I can find some good metal here...

Weed had joined the guild of the uncommon Wilderness Travelers that enjoyed hunting monsters. The Travelers Guild was small itself and eccentric but they all had high levels. They were a large combination of various jobs that hunted monsters together.

‘Boss Monster hunting…’

They were in a very influential party on a large scale hunt. He would not be able to get their help since they were hunting. Weed sent a whisper to Pale first.

Pale nim, do you want to hunt?

Of course, where are you?

The answer came back pretty quickly. They were worried about Weed since the Hermes Guild had killed him. Weed thought on the large scale of revenge so he had to be calm and paid attention to his friends.

I’m at the place where the Undead Legion is.

We’re going that way. Which monster do you want to hunt?

Bar Khan…

What? Then that monster…you mean the Lich Bar Khan?

Pale had heard about the Undead Legion that was being led by the immortal Bar Khan. Morata had fought against the first and second wave of invading undead.

Legendary Monster!

They were on a whole another level compared to the dungeon bosses that they usually fought.

Is Bar Khan even a monster than humans can catch?

That's what we're going to try now.

What a minute. Geomchi nim is here as well.

After a short time, a whisper came from Geomchi3.

Weed ya, I heard that you're going after Bar Khan yea?

Yes. I'm going to catch him.

It's funny that you didn't contact us earlier.

Geomchi3 was confused as to why he had not asked him first.

Are we going now?

It's too dangerous right now.

The danger can't be that bad. Are there lots of monsters?

There are a lot of strong monsters. There's also three dragons.

A dragon? I can't miss that.

What about the other sahyungs?

Wait, let me ask.

Geomchi3 asked Geomchi5 to tell the other 500 Geomchis if they agreed.

"I'm not going to miss out on catching Bar Khan."

"..."

"Normally its dangerous. If something goes wrong then you die. Then there would be nothing left of you but bones. Do you want to die and become an undead? There's also 3 dragons there."

"..."

"You know the Undead Legion? There are a lot of strong undead that you are going to fight against."

Geomchi's body was itching to fight.

So how are we going?

I'll be unable to take you myself. I'll tell you the location through Pale nim.

Okay.

Pale had good eyesight so he could show them the way. It was not as much as an adventurer that could look to the starts for navigation but he was experience with reading maps and could easily find where the Undead Legion was.

'Sahyungs are coming here.'

The Geomchis could definitely break into the fortress just to fight with the undead.

Although the Undead Legion was strong, if the battle occurred on a narrow region instead of on a great plain then he could benefit greatly. The Sahyungs would come running anywhere to fight with Weed!

"I want priests and paladins…"

Having only Irene as the priest was not enough. Unfortunately the Wilderness Travelers Guild was currently monster hunting and he didn't want to bring in anyone outside of Morata. Weed sent Mapan a whisper.

I am going to try and hunt Bar Khan, are there any priests or paladins that can help?

He was asking Mapan since he was in Morata Square and was well acquainted with many people in his line of business.

How many people and priests do you need?

The more the better.

I'll contact you once I find out.

#

Mapan was in the square and asked the priests that he was familiar with if they wanted to go hunt Bar Khan with Weed.

"Yes of course."

"Where and when are you going?"

Users from the central continent had come because of Weed and wanted to go on quests and hunt.

'Hunt Bar Khan you say? He must have some sort of plan.'

‘Bar Khan will kill you.’

‘That’s only because you’re thinking of Weed. We’re only going to be responsible for healing.’

Weed’s plan to hunt Bark Khan began to become more known.

“Since you’re a senior priest of Freya can I come too?”

“Nuna that’s not my choice to make.”

“So it’s 6 in the morning at the vineyards near the large tree.”

“Just go then.”

Mapan contacted the user priests that he was close to.

Hyung, Weed nim is going to hunt Bar Khan…

Then I want to go unconditionally. Morata’s Weed is the God of War. How can I not take this chance?

If you decide to go then gather in the vineyard by morning. 6 is when we will leave.

I’ll wait an hour for you to arrive.

The priests he called saw this as a very unique opportunity and he only chose the best people.

Did you know that Weed nim is going to hunt Bar Khan?

Really?

We're trying to recruit priests and paladins.

My job is a Paladin. Even if its dangerous, can I come?

Yes. Come with me.

Paladins began to spread the news around.

Weed nim is going to go hunt the Undead and Bar Khan.

I'm going to get ready.

He called only the people he knew, but in under an hour more than 200 people knew. News spread to the Grass Porridge Cult. The second largest group that reigned in Morata! There were over 800 thousand users in it now.

Although the majority of them are beginners, there were also high level users included that hunted and adventured in the north.

“Weed is going to hunt and he’s recruiting priests and paladins.”

“Perhaps people of our skill level may be helpful?”

The next day in Morata, in front of the vineyard was Pale’s party and the Geomchis, along with a large crowd of 330 priests and 223 paladins. Since Weed was so influential so the word of Bar Khan’s hunt spread quickly.

“Mapan nim, what do we do about this many people?”

“I do not know. I only called 14 of them…”

Senior priests and paladins from Morata had gathered to hunt Bar Khan. They frantically wanted to go hunt with Weed. Pale could only sigh.

“It would take too long to kick all these people out and it would look bad. We don’t want to be like the Hermes Guild.”

“Let’s go!”

The Geomchis, paladins, and the priests from Morata rode on cattle as they left. Their destination was the fortress of the Undead Legion.

#

Weed went around the fortress looking around.

“There’s a lot of repairs going on!”

In places with a lot of monsters, the fortress had high thick walls. However there were places that were missing stones where people could hide in. Countless undead flocked to repair the walls.

“The Elves are going to attack…”

The undead were weaker during the day. The elves would show up and attack like the wind. The army of the Undead Legion was mobilized but they could not catch up to the elve’s mobility. If you continue to chase the elves then the dwarves and barbarians would ambush and wipe out the undead!

However, with Bar Khan’s dark magic they would only be revived and return to battle.

“I would hate to fight the elves.”

Weed thought of the elves as formidable opponents. Even if they were not high level, it would be hard to chase after an elf on horseback. They shoot arrows from their bows like a ghost and they were hard to hunt as they jump from branch to branch. The undead were much funner to fight even if they were difficult.

Elves and Fairies were highly aligned with nature so it was difficult to attack them.

“There is a better target to fight than daring to fight the elves.”

In his view, there was another target location that was closer and with better loot and experience.

“Wizards, Rangers, Knights, and Paladins was it? It’s time for some revenge.”

Still uncertain but now slightly more clarified than before.

Jyangwa, Otem, Helen, Golujda, and 30 other were complaining since they had decided to not join Hermes Guild.

“Go away from this canyon. Hunting is prohibited!”

They couldn’t do anything but watch as the wizards and rangers prepare to strike. Then the attack started and killed them all. They did not want to join the Hermes Guild and now they had felt the pain with their own bodies.

They had tried to recruit the necromancers but it was hardly ideal for them.

There were a total of 34 necromancers that were killed by the Hermes Guild. Before they had arrived, the necromancers had

fought and raised their level and skills in the canyon.

"Damn it. Those filthy bastards."

Otem spit out a complaint. The other necromancers felt the same.

"How can they do this to us?"

They had originally received a quest for the Undead Legion and they thought it was a good chance to increase their skills. The Hermes Guild had tried to get them to join after Weed had revealed who he was.

"There's no point of joining the Hermes Guild since they wouldn't even treat us as real members."

Even if they joined the guild the situation would not change. Even if they were in a certain area, they would prevent them from hunting. The entire center of the continent could be considered the Hermes Guild. Those that were Necromancers were afraid at this time. Helen was fed up and said.

"I would have prefer that we died while fighting."

They didn't even get to kill anything and they were upset by the fact that they dropped items on death. They looked around the users in the valley.

“But what do you say? You want to go fight them?”

“Fight?”

“I want show them something that would make them shake in fear.”

They wanted to show that the Necromancer power was superior but they could not. It was like trying to break a rock with an egg, where they were the egg and the Hermes Guild was the rock. They were be ready to fight against the undead and there was no reason why they would not watch for their movements. The major disadvantage of the Necromancers is that it took time to summon undead. They needed a large number of corpses and they need to hunt a lot. Even if they attacked the Hermes Guild, it wouldn’t be noticeable and their death would be insignificant. Instead of causing any significant damage, they would likely not even care about it.

Marein just laughed and said.

“Just wait and we’ll be fine.”

They asked hopefully since he was relatively famous.

“Do you have a mission?”

“I’ll keep watching for good news.”

Many users suffered a number of different kinds of situations. There would be no one that would beat Weed in deception. An unmatched intolerant mind!

He had obviously not learned such things like reconciliation, forgiveness or tolerance from grade school. Weed was someone that never forgets no matter how long he had to wait and alway return his aggression back several fold.

Chapter 2: The Clash With The Hermes Guild

Weed organized the troops of the Undead Legion. The skeletons that were gathered on the ground below have heard about his reputation! With the glorious title of the Warrior Commander of the Undead Legion, gathering soldiers was an easy task. Weed went around the fortress speaking to the undead.

“Come with me.”

“Yes sir.”

+Death Knights have joined.

“Let us go fight.”

“I have heard that Bar Khan has great confidence in you so I would like to play an active part in the fight.”

+Doom Knights have joined.

“Stop playing around and let’s go fight.”

“I have been waiting.”

+The Balkan Undead Knights have joined.

Since he had the status as Bar Khan's direct subordinate, he could easily recruit the knights. He gathered as many Death Knights and Doom knights that he could. It was a very powerful force.

"I need to gather as much power from this place that I can. That way the chances of success are higher."

Under his command, Weed expanded the number of undead troops he had available. The Necromancers and Doom Knights regularly summoned more undead. He was thinking of annoying the Hermes Guild with the undead. He was supposed to command the undead to fight against the Elven and Barbarian Alliance. Since he was acting contrary to his orders, his reputation with the Undead Legion would drop and their trust in him would be reduced.

"I need to hunt down Bar Khan anyways…"

He was thinking of betraying them later on. Weed organized a group of over 700 elite undead knights.

Aside from the main force, there were an assortment of low rank spectres and other undeads.

"I don't think they have an unlimited number of arrows."

Spectres were best to use once all the the wizards' mana and the

rangers' arrows were depleted. Aside from magic, in order to deal damage against them they needed to buy a lot of silver, which was a limited resource. Weed had Intermediate Blacksmithing but it was not easy to find enough users in the Continent of Versailles with the skills to work with the material.

"They will never see the real purpose to the Blacksmithing skill."

For people that had easy access to weapons there was no need to bother raising the Blacksmithing skill!

*

"Come!"

Weed took the undead troops and went to fight against the Knights, Wizards, and Rangers. Marein had expected that Weed would come back for revenge and it was true. Last time it had been a small battle skirmish, but now it was a full fledged war. Since leadership was encouraged in the Hermes Guild to some degree, Palon and his men had readied a defense on a favorable hillside.

"He's charging this way to us with the undead."

"There are Death Knights, Doom Knights, and others. There is a formidable amount of power in his forces."

"There is a significant number of knights than I can count. I have never seen so many knights before in a army."

The Hermes Guild had a much different outlook on the situation. Weed had come rushing back, impatient and angry, which meant that they could kill him once more...

Looking at it as nothing more than a game, the users of the Hermes Guild thought themselves to be in a fortunate position.

“Even if the undead knights come, then we will just break their forces with arrows and magic.”

“They have come into our attack range!”

The users wet their dry mouths in anticipation of the undead advance. They would show their might by covering the sky in arrows and magic attacks. Magic had a great power and a large enough attack would mean the difference between victory and defeat in combat. Weed knew about how troublesome it was since a lot of the high ranking Doom Knights were nervous.

“Fire!”

Once in range, the rangers drew their bows. The wizards hurled magic accordingly. Silver arrows and fireballs came flying through the sky towards the group of undead. Weed had commanded his minions to charge through the barrage of attacks.

“Fall back.”

Weed then quickly backed out with the undead. Since most of the group was made of knights and spectres, their mobility was strong. The area was blown apart by magic and the ground became littered with silver arrows but most of the undead did not die since they were out of range. Weed stopped the undead outside of the strong attack and waited. Then he spread out his undead troops and began to march on them again.

“Get ready to attack again. Fire!”

The Rangers and Wizards had to distribute their attack over a larger area now.

“Rangers target the center, Mages should focus on attacking the left and right sides.”

The armed troops’ concentrated power was very strong but now the damage had to be spread out evenly.

Their firepower was terrifying so Weed would back out with the undead whenever the time was right. Since the damage had spread out evenly and with the undead regeneration speed, only about 90 undead were injured.

“Uwaaa!”

“Do not let the undead come close!”

The morale of the wizards and the rangers increased. If the

enemy came closer then they would cause significantly more damage. Even with the fast mobility of the undead knights, once they entered attack range they were focused upon and struck down with several attacks. This way, a similar situation repeated itself four times. Weed was using the Undead attacks to consume all of the Rangers' silver. The Undead Legion was not budging even though they were being attacked with a modest amount of silver. Thanks to Bar Khan's Death Aura skill, the undead had high resistance to magical attacks and faster health regen.

"We got a lot. Be sure to collect all of it."

Weed had the spectres go around and bring in the silver into a stack so he could sell it. He was going to supplement the loot that he had lost with the silver.

"Lullulu."

He was humming a happy tune because of the silver.

"If the fight continues in this way, then I think I'll be able to collect tens of thousands of gold."

It didn't matter to him if the undead died.

*

The next day Weed came back after he recruited more undead. There was little difference in the futile battle and the undead lost a

lot of their units. Unfortunately the moral of the undead dropped frequently. By luck the enemy would always have slightly greater attack power. Weed found this to be inevitable. The amount of time that was spent looking around the citadel for good knights increased.

"It's that fledgling Doom Knight. Without us the undead cannot hope to get any great achievements."

The dragons saw him as ridiculous. They felt their lives were more valuable than the rest. Pollon and the Hermes Guild had been staying on that hill for the last day. It was a very defensive location where they had good mobility. Their objective was to murder Weed. If that was not possible, then their goal was to interfere as much as possible with Weed's success rate with his quest.

"Today he came back with more undead."

Since they had spent most of their silver arrows on the first day, the attitude of Pollon and the Hermes Guild users had changed.

"Use arrows. Hit them with magic and wipe out those knights!"

Today they decided to change their tactic to use their mana for magic while using enchanted arrows to stop the charging knights. Divine magic was the natural enemy of the undead knights. Blessings, Protection, Magic, Recovery. The four groups of divine magic began to hunt down the undead knights. They had confidence in their power to kill Weed and win.

“Attack!”

“Trample them all!”

This was the proof of the bravery of the the Kingdom of Haven’s Knights! The Knights refused to stop their advance even after being hit 10 times. The power of the magical groups that backed the knights could not be ignored. They were known as the 10 best knights that they had. Their level exceeded 380 and they were fully equipped with the best items. While mounted, the knights had twice as much power. The Knights were known to have amazing speed and destructive force to destroy their enemy.

“Weed is only one person and compared to the rest of the undead he is slow. Charge and wipe them out!”

“Uwaaa!”

The Knights’ charge was very intimidating for Weed. However, he was not going to let them chase him on horseback

“I have to win this fight.”

Weed ordered the Doom knights to assault the Knight Templars.The power of the undead that he had brought with him from the fortress was significant. The Knights of the Central Continent were known to shrug off magic and arrows to some degree and have won every fight. However, there were over 9800 undead among them were many Death Knights. When a fight

broke out, they had more than enough power to inflict damages.

“The Knights are to focus on attacking and killing only one person. The goal is at the far end away from their knights. Do not care about the other foes and only head towards the goal.”

“Yes, as you command.”

Weed fell back. He used his ability to manage the undead as well as he could. Weed did not stay behind to let them rain magic down on him and busied himself with commanding the undead that were rapidly collapsing. There had been 27 Knights that were killed in that battle. This was thanks to Weed who had commanded the knights strictly through the arrows and magic. Due to the characteristics of the Knight class, it was difficult for them to help their allies that have fallen during the charge. During the fight, he had minimized the damage taken and the magical explosions did little to the undead as it fell, since the Death Knights continued to advance.

“The profits are alright.”

He had a lot of weapons and armors that the knights were equipped with. It was like in an elementary school where the teacher scolded the child and not the snitch!

“The human have us at our physical limits. I cannot help but think what the honorable Bar Khan will say when he finds out. Do not let the humans leave this fight. Go to battle.”

At that moment, he used Yell to command all the undead that he had gathered from the fortress.

“This, these humans must be eliminated.”

“I fight for Bar Khan.”

The Death Knights and the Doom Knights continued to rise to fight.

Pollon’s unit wiped them out again. However Weed did suffer some losses. From the consecutive defeats, his reputation with the Undead Legion’s had deteriorated considerably.

“I heard that the undead unit had to return again.”

“I hear that there’s an incompetent Doom Knight. He’s not reliable enough to take care of some humans. He must have no pride.”

Weed was not handling the undead forces delicately. He simply came back and collected more undead. The original task of hunting down the elves and dwarves would have been nice if Bar Khan or the dragons had come along. The excitement of being known as a dragon knight. There never had been such an entity on the Continent of Versailles. Leading the undead army, with a dragon to burn down human villages would have been exciting and aggressive!

“It would have been nice if we weren’t so close to Morata…”

Unfortunately the closest large city was Morata. However, all of it would become useless once he betrayed Bar Khan. He properly utilized the undead for this purpose. Once they had scrambled the Knights, they had no longer bothered to fire silver or magic.

“Thankfully there’s a lot of silver. The skeletons I summoned were beaten! Such a waste of mana. They couldn’t manage to killed one or two knights before they died.”

For trying to fail his quest, Weed was paying back their cowardice back a hundredfold!

One Silver Arrow, two Silver Arrows, he was collecting them to make silver bullions. Weed laughed as the silver continued to pile up.

“Keulkeulkeul. This is the best hunting ground.”

Pollon and the Hermes Guild could not manage to kill Weed.

“We can’t make any mistakes when it comes to catching him…he ran away the very moment I saw him.”

“We need to take advantage of the rangers’ and mages’ attack range. To take him down we need to move into another formation.”

Weed only watched the undead battle from the back and then returned to the Undead Legion camp. Weed's only goal was to get more knights. Pollon led the vanguard but he could not stop the undead from leaving. Every time they were left with less knights and Weed only came back with more undead. It was having a cheaper lunch than your friends in preschool!

"Keulkeulkeulkeul."

Weed provoked them by having a wagon filled with the silver dragged along by skeletons. They deliberately slowed the pace of the undead to gather silver. Sometimes they would be dancing or walking backwards. Compared to a villain that showed up on TV and movies, Weed was the worst. Still they continued to watch Weed on the TV and supported him.

"This is a bad situation."

As the battle continued, Pollon's forces began to accumulate damages. The knights were all high level and very experienced players but there were still damages. Since there were more NPCs than user, their size had reduced considerably. Even a lot of Pollon's valued knights were gone.

"Our job is to hunt him so a surprise attack would be better."

Pollon: It does not make sense to stay here. Weed will not allow us to kill him in this situation and will retreat if we try.

Pollon opened the communication channel with the Hermes Guild leaders. He was calling for immediate aid from the magical division. Without commands they were not allowed to make a move.

Rafael: Controlling your area is important. They had already recruited the necromancers and there are many people watching the battle on TV. How are you incapable of killing Weed? Do not move your unit until you succeed.

Pollon: We are in plain sight. Even with magic and arrows we only have so much range. There is no benefit to this order. We do not have a large enough force for that.

Rafael: I command you to stay. Continue to interfere with Weed's quest.

The Hermes Guild no longer cared about stopping with Weed's quest. It was enough for the guild leaders to hold Weed in place.

*

"It's strange that they're not avoiding battles."

Weed continued to attack Pollon's Hermes Guild unit with the undead relentlessly. Meanwhile Pale's party and the Geomchis had arrived from Morata to hunt Bar Khan. When they heard news of the endless battle they came riding their bulls.

“Keoheom, so we’re here now.”

Geomchi3 descended from his bull and looked at Pollon’s unit of archers.

“It’s still not over yet?”

“Sahyung, that must be our share that’s left behind.”

Pollon had suffered a lot of damage since he was only focusing on defense. They had used magic and arrows to attack the undead as they came closer but they suffered a lot of damage from the undead as the fight went on. Their total of 200 knights had now decreased to 127.

Out of the one thousand mage and archers, they only and 130 left intact. Comparably, Weed’s Undead Legion was not badly injured while 73 of Pallon’s units were in bad condition. The very same Knight units from the Kingdom of Haven that could occupy a castle were now in such a state. Geomchi got off of his bull and took out the food ingredients.

“Weed, I’m starving. I want to eat some grilled meat.”

Delicious, quick to eat grilled meat. The Geomchis had brought food over from Morata in order to eat. It did not matter if they wanted to eat rice in the middle of the fight with the Hermes Guild! Weed made some marinade for the meat as the Geomchis

handed over their weapons and armor.

“It’s a bit worn out.”

“I just came back from the ocean. Can you fix it?”

The Geomchis took off their black armor that had less than 20 durability points left.

“It will not be that difficult since its not completely broken.”

Weed repaired the equipment to maximum durability and set a whetstone on the floor.

“Hello. You look good as a Doom Knight.”

“Long time no see, I’m Belotte.”

Pale cautiously made his way around Pollon’s camp to scout and returned.

“Euheum, the rangers of the Hermes Guild…they’re not going to be that challenging. By the way, Maylon is on today.”

“At such a time?”

“Let me see if its time yet”

Maylon was busy everyday so she decided to take a vacation for this major battle to go hunt Bar Khan. The priest and paladins from Morata watched as Weed, that they looked up to and admired, carried on in ordinary conversation with his friends.

“At such a time…! In front of such a large battle, how can they be so relaxed.’

‘Are they not scared of the Hermes Guild?’

Weed worked the whetstone as the paladins and priests came by to say their hellos.

“Hello.”

“Nice to meet you Weed.”

High level priests and paladins! They could not read the expression on Doom Knight’s Weed’s face. Weed began to contemplate his possibilities with the priests and paladins.

“Do you have everything you need?”

“Yes?”

“Would you like to have a bargain?”

Inside his backpack were all sorts of japtem and rusty weapons such as maces for priests to use. For priests, it had many divine stats that would help them in the fight against the undead. Weed had used the undead to keep fighting against Pollon's Hermes Guild unit regularly.

"Who are they?"

"Weed's colleagues?"

"I don't know why they came here. Surely they're not here to help Weed attack us?"

From the report that they had on Weed, he mostly moved alone and only had a few friends. However there were more than 1000 priests and paladins with the Geomchis that have arrived. Weed was not the type to ask for help in a personal fight. There was no way that Pollon had thought that he had called them from Morata to hunt down Bar Khan.

"I'm in trouble."

Pollon and the users of the Hermes Guild could not believe it.

*

Every board associated with Royal Road had topics about Weed

and the Hermes Guild Battle.

-The shining star known as Weed has descended.

-Isn't the Hermes Guild the strongest guild on the Continent of Versailles?"

Time after time, Weed appeared before Pollon's unit. Public opinion began to change.

-Weed's true ability.

-Hermes Guild finally meets their match.

-Pollon's prided magic, ranged, and knights group are going to fall to the undead.

-Is there really a limit to Weed's leadership skills?

In more ways than one it was an urgent concern. The number of users that cheered for Weed was overwhelming. Broadcasters were forced to side with Weed in every battle. Just by doing that their ratings would increase 2-3 times more than usual! The broadcasters had smiles hanging from their faces.

"They just keep fighting all day."

“Quickly finish the advertising…people want to get back to the broadcast.”

More people began to hope that the undead defeat Pollon’s unit. Every time a Hermes Guild unit died, then the audience had a heated reaction.

Weed’s reinforcements had arrived. They had a large amount of priests and paladins for healing combined with blessing and other abilities that were crucial to a prolonged war. The hosts of the stations covered this pivotal point live.

“Even if the Hermes Guild is high level, we can not ignore the fact that the priest and paladins are wearing the professional equipment.”

“Their equipment looks a bit worn out. Will this make a difference to the battle?”

“Undead and divine power will conflict with each other so it will be difficult for Weed. Could it be that the Hermes Guild holds the advantage?”

“The result will be seen from the fighting. Out of the two sides, the Hermes Guild is expected to win.”

“The undead are comprised of non user units so Weed will not retreat anymore.”

Each station had a different perspective. Most of them thought that Pollon's unit was higher level and thus had the advantage.

*

The priests and paladins from Morata had a meeting.

"Are we going to fight?"

"I thought we were only going to hunt Bar Khan..."

The prestige of the Hermes Guild was more horrible than a legendary monster. It would result in immediate retaliation and then they would get in trouble with the Hermes Guild. It would be difficult for them to fight a guild of a large kingdom.

"But I like Weed's adventures. We came here to hunt Bar Khan anyways."

"Yea, we should fight anyways. I never like them anyways."

Most paladins started out in the central continent so they knew better than anyone about the power of the Hermes Guild. Of course when they decided to follow Weed they never thought they would fight the Hermes Guild. The Hermes Guild was known for its cruelty.

"We're already here so the Hermes Guild won't leave us alone."

“It would be better for us to participate in battle than for us to be alone. We should fight together.”

The priests and paladins made their decision to Weed.

“We will fight here.”

The users had made their resolution to Weed. In the inspiring atmosphere like that of a movie, Weed shook his head.

“It will be difficult.”

“It’s fine. We understand what it is like to be the ones at a disadvantage, especially if its from the Hermes Guild…”

“They’re mine.”

“What?”

“I will not concede their executions. You came late so you are not eligible.”

Weed left the priests and paladins and headed back. He shamelessly was not going to share with them. It was the same as not sending a wedding invitation to a friend that you have lost contact with for over 5 years. The Geomchis were blessed by Irene and headed over from the priests and paladins. The volunteers that

came to help Weed went to an emergency meeting.

Taleukin: The armor that they're wearing is quite expensive. It's at least level 200.

They were analyzing the Hermes Guild as they were watching the video. KMC Media as well as other broadcasting station began live coverage the instant they found the out the information from the weapon merchants and blacksmiths of the Hermes Guild.

Pollon: Ignore it then. Their level is around 200 so their magic resistance is weak and we can just sweep them with magic.

Taleukin: That's not what I mean. You need to understand...they are definitely wearing lower level gear. However it is significantly worn out.

Compared to the nice armor of the knights, the Geomchis looked incomparable to it. Several parts were considerably worn down or broken. It went to question how long they had been using that armor.

Pollon: Level 320 then?

Taleukin: It looks like it has high strength and agility restrictions for level 320 but their sword looks even more. At least level 350.

Weed had raised his stats through sculpting while the Geomchis had raised their through intrepid hunting and physical training.

Except for special cases, that stats of most of the Geomchis were comparable to at least level 350.

Pollon: Level 350, to think they could get this kind of force.

They were only judging the Geomchis by their looks. They could easily been seen as high levels. It looked as if Weed would get more reinforcements. Even going against the ranger and mage unit had not been easy but now the power balance was tipped.

Pollon: It will be very difficult to continue to be stationed here. Please give new command from the guild.

Pollon's orders had been to interfere with Weed's quest by attacking him. However they had not known that their safety would be jeopardized.

Rafael: Okay. Are you thinking of moving?

Pollon: That's what I'm thinking. Since they have poor mobility I was thinking of using magic to defeat them.

Rafael: Do you think you can win? We can not send more troops since that would mean that the Hermes Guild was having a difficult battle.

Pollon: That's what the fight seems like. But that will be to our advantage...

Pollon believed that the priests and paladins would not help Weed so it would be an easy battle.

Pollon: Attempt to get the Necromancers' cooperation with the Hermes Guild. If they help then we will have a significant power. They can help without having priests to waste mana on them.

Rafael:Magic and Ranged Unit with Undead...Not bad. It is allowed.

Pollon thought that if he beat Weed then the Necromancers would join the Hermes Guild to avoid hostilities. Since that was Pollon's intention, Rafael accepted. The fight was going live on every station! They hurriedly contacted the Necromancers to come. The battle had slowed down quite a bit but that was because the Geomchis were grilling ribs to eat. Many viewers and users waited for the battle to start.

Chapter 3: An Estimate More Terrifying Than Life

“Time to see if it’s done.”

The Geomchis began to fight over eating the roasted meat and soup. They were happy spending every day waking up, eating, sleeping, and fighting. Pollon took this time to ask the Hermes Guild to recruit the Necromancers reinforcements. Weed refused the help of the priests and paladins because the Geomchis and the Undead Army would be enough to go up against Pollon.

“Just the sahyungs will be enough.”

The Geomchis could fight anywhere on the continent of Versailles. The Geomchis were people who would jump into a dragon breath attack out of their own free will. So he took care of the grilling for them.

“Can you win? You’re not going against a dragon but the Hermes Guild…”

“It would be better to run away and fight against the undead. Even with the undead, what are you going to do if they get help from the Necromancers?”

The paladins were anxiously waiting. They had come to hunt Bar Khan. They believed in Weed but ever since they saw the Geomchis

accompanying them, all that they seen them do was eat and sleep.

That was because they were all proud high level users with good skill levels and equipment. Only after the battle would they know the true value of the Geomchis. Weed stood by his plan.

“The undead…there is more than enough of them left.”

Until now he had only fought and retreated, but now it was time to conduct battle.

Weed began to prepare for the battle once more.

“Back in that temple, my levels, skill proficiency, and my japtem…”

Deeply rooted resentment for the Hermes Guild! Murray was secretly returning along the trail with the items.

“Let’s start the fight.”

Ttagak. Ttagak. Ttagak.

As Weed gave his command, the Death Knight and Doom Knight horses began to move accordingly. Thanks to his items, he had regained the authority to command and control the undead. Geomchi5 asked.

“How are we going to fight?”

Weed said that anyway was fine.

“Sahyungs can fight anywhere you want. You still need to be careful of magic and arrows though.”

“Then there is no need to worry. We’ve recently learned a new skill that lets us change the trajectory of arrows.”

Weed got onto horseback as the undead began to approach Pollon’s camp area. Pollon’s unit of knights, mages, and rangers were mainly composed of users so they looked at Weed, Geomchis, and the undead lightly.

“Looks like the paladins and priests are not going to move.”

“If they’re not joining the fight then this will be easy.”

The power of a priests was in high demand for victory. The Hermes Guild wanted to use their battle to show their capabilities against Necromancers. They decided to change their tactics against Weed’s undead since the Geomchis were there now. This time the fight was starting for real. One of Pollon’s knights came forward alone on horseback.

“I am one of the Knights of the Crescent. Is there anyone that would fight me!”

+The Crescent Knight has requested a duel. Would you like to accept the duel?

+The winner of the duel will receive fame and boost morale.

+If the duel is rejected then morale will decrease.

Instead of full-scale combat the knights wanted one on one fights. The Crescent Knights had noticed that there were not many users on Weed's side. This was their chance to kill Weed again. It would be a great honor for the knight users to cross swords with Weed.

"I'm coming out!"

Geomchi350 went to the sword match riding his bull.

+Both sides of the duel had been established.

+After the duel you can move into full-scale war.

+The opponent must be killed in battle. Otherwise the loser will be branded a coward and the loyalty of soldiers will be reduced greatly.

Weed and the Geomchis decided to relax and enjoy the show. In Royal Road, Geomchi350 had a high level and skill proficiency.

There was only one thing they needed to worry about.

"One month of cleaning the toilet."

"Five thousand practice strikes a day."

Cruel punishment was awaiting them!

The match was between the knight and his horse against Geomchi350 and his significantly bigger bull. He was trying to grasp the opponent's movements! He watched the enemy's breath in and out roughly. Then almost simultaneously, they rushed forwards with their bull and horse.

"Come on!"

Puhihihing!

"Let's go."

Eummeoeoeoeoeo!

They charged at each other and Geomchi350 lightly raised his sword from its scabbard. Knight jousting duels were very dangerous. Defense did not matter since the attack that was coming had a lot of weight on it. Since they were running in the one direction, they could only rush towards each other so usually a duel on horseback was decided instantly. Right as they passed each

other, the knight fell onto the ground and died.

+Ally has won the duel.

+Fame, morale, and loyalty has increased.

"..."

Pollon's camp was dead quiet. There was no shouts of victory from Weed's side either.

"Guess he's not going to clean the toilets."

"I was going to have him wash the dishes..."

They had no signs of surprise from the victory. In Royal Road, Geomchi350's talent for the sword had blossomed. It was better to hunt monsters and raise their sword skill level than it was to just simply train.

The Geomchi had just defeated a level 380 Crescent Knight as if it was completely natural. From their breathing and slight movements of the eyes and shoulders they could tell where the enemy was going to attack and precisely respond to it.

"I'll fight until your cowardly leader comes forth."

Geomchi350 shouted to Pollon to come forwards into the match. He had gotten stronger motivation since it was going to be broadcasted.

‘My little brothers will see me.’

His little brothers were also big fans of Royal Road.

He wanted his family to think of him in a better light.

“My name is Balmer! I will take you down a notch.”

“Necker is my name. You will have the glory of me killing you!”

Geomchi350 took on four more challenges in a row and won all of them. It ended with either the death of the users or his horse. Three people had died and two others were dying and the Crescent Knights could still not come out the winner.

Pollon had not said anything about the duels instead of a full-scale battle since he did not think they would beat his knights. Now they had lost a considerable amount of power and the Crescent Knights were dead while the others were not going to fight in the duels.

+The other side has given up on the duel.

+All allies have maximum morale at the start of the battle.

Geomchi350 received charisma, fighting spirit, strength, agility, and other various stats as well as increase in his sword mastery and a lot of fame. Pollon exclaimed anxiously.

“Now is the time to fight! March against the undead!”

It was not a good start but now the real battle had finally taken place. They were trying to fight against the undead using only rangers and wizards.

He deployed the mages and rangers in the back with him against the undead.

Weed used his yell.

“All undead listen!”

Pollon and the rest of the users from the Hermes Guild guessed that Weed was going to use all of the undead from the Immortal Legion to fight. But then he struck a blow to them.

“The Necromancers are not on our side.Should you fall in combat only answer to my call.”

The Geomchis were very high level but they were all melee classes. If any of their bodies fell into the hands of the Hermes Guild necromancers then the situation would become more

favorable for them.

“As an undead of Bar Khan, you must honor the name of the father that summoned you!”

Weed’s Lion Roar swept across the entire camp.

At this point, the Hermes Guild began to fell a little uneasy. They did not want the situation to turn into its worst.

“To fight against me would be to deny your existence as undead and as well as Bar Khan. Darkness rules the laws of the legion. You have made me your enemy. Fight for Bar Khan. Kill them!”

+Yell has been used.

+Yell has increased the morale of all friendly units within range by 200%.

+All confusion has been removed.

+For 5 minutes, leadership will be applied at 285%.

Weed was using his status as an undead directly under Bar Khan! It was a status that was well above any necromancer. In the range of Bar Khan’s Death Aura, any undead will be affected by his power and influence. Weed used his leadership to abuse that power and loyalty. The Death Knights were first.

“Bar Khan’s commands are to be followed.”

“We can not go against our respectable lord Bar Khan that grants us eternal life.”

The Necromancers tried to summon Undead troops, but at Weed’s words they began to attack the rangers and wizards.

“What is this? It looks like the undead are crazy!”

“Weren’t these summoned by the Necromancers!”

Rangers had to use bows so at close range it was difficult for them to fight since they had weak defense. Various explosions came out to prevent the undead attack. However they weren’t doing much better. Wizards had high attack power with their magic but it took a long time and they had low health and defense. By raising their wisdom, they had the side effect of having low strength and power. These classes received the undead attacks and died instantly.

Pollon could not tell what was happening amidst the explosions from magical attacks and the death of the mages..

“The summoned undead are not listening.”

“This is crazy! How could his words change the summons?”

“This is Bar Khan’s area and his power keeps the undead on his side.”

In order to stop the undead, the Crescent Knights rushed in.

A wizard’s magic was very valuable and even a single person was a big loss.

“Undead forces, advance forwards!”

Weed showed the force of the Death Knights and Doom Knights. It was a race against time. They planned to submerge the enemy in chaos and attack before they could reorganize.

“You need to eat it as soon as it is ripe. Take this chance to strike a blow.”

He realized that it was difficult to pass this up. There was nothing as wasteful as finding food in the refrigerator that had long passed its expiration date. The undead knights charged at the enemy with full speed. Pollon’s side had very little fighting experience and could not respond quickly to Weed’s actions.

As the fight continued, they quickly chose to abandon their defensive formation. The troops were caught in a bad position and could were not working at maximum efficiency. Pollon ordered his troops.

“Knights, defend the mages from the undead. Rangers use your

arrows to shoot down the undead troops. Follow the commands that I have given."

Weed had fought many enemy that were stronger than himself and was able to use this experience to accomplish his goals. All the units were given clear duties and he used them to produce results. He had learned about how Pollon fought and was managing his troops accordingly.

"About this much."

Weed watched and made estimations as the undead picked off the Pollon's rangers and mages. The Sahyungs were suited to this kind of work in Royal Road! When the Crescent Knights were not being mobilized for war, they were usually being used to commit atrocious raids on merchants. They were various high level, notorious murderers that maintained their marks.

Even when they joined the Kingdom of Haven, the murderer mark still had side effects so they would drop a lot of items on death. They may even drop their expensive full plate armor.

"I might be able to get Yurin and Grandma winter coats...its also good to start depositing into a bank."

Weed was going to establish a savings account.

#

KMC Media as well as other game stations kept receiving higher viewership.

+Game broadcast audience has reached over 80%!

+More than half the stations were broadcasting the battle.

+It was hard to find a user on Royal Road that did not know about the fight!

It was the hot topic for the day. Many viewers had expected a battle between Weed and the Hermes Guild, so they had been waiting. The advertisers had made reservations for satisfactory advertising. The undead under Weed's command broke down the formation and inflicted damages.

Before the battles did not take very long but now Pollon and his units seemed to be bewildered. They failed to stop the Geomchis overwhelming assault with their forces. It was one of the best scenes.

"Let's kill them fast so we can get our bowl of soup."

"Shall we use the new skill that we learned? Bungeomsul!"

"Those that live get to eat and those that die don't. Do your best."

The Crescent Knights fought with valor but were relentlessly

crushed when they were caught by the Geomchis. The knights were completely overwhelmed by the Geomchis frontal attack.

The situation was chaotic and their combat capability came as a big shock to the Crescent Knight.

“Why are these guys so weak.”

“The King Squid we killed before was harder.”

“Compared to when we were fighting in the sea, this is like fighting a camel.”

The viewers were surprised to see the Crescent Knights fall to the sword masters. Within minutes, the Geomchis had killed two of four of them each. They were very experience in fighting large crowds without skills since their wisdom and knowledge were very low. Nevertheless, the knights could not get into formation with the rate that they were falling.

They were lucky that the knights were collapsing quickly because they had low skill proficiencies. The average level of the Geomchis were not that far behind that Crescent Knights and they also had much higher sword skills, fighting spirit, and combat experience. They were people who roamed the most hellish of places looking for strong monsters and fighters! Weed played an integral part as well.

“That piece of armor!”

Without hesitation, he picked out the high level knights from the group.

“Heraim Fencing!”

He was not fighting all alone. Thanks to the Geomchis, he didn’t need to pay so much attention to defense since he was not alone.

“You’re making me wait to eat!”

As if they were born to fight, they cut their way through the Crescent Knights. Due to Bar Khan’s magic, Weed and his horse were very quick and ferocious. It would not be joking to say that he looked like a monster. He looked as if he was a strong warrior that was accustomed to the battlefield. The appearance of the unstoppable Doom Knight wa engraved into the eyes of the audience. He overwhelmingly dominated over the knights. Weed took his time while checking on the undead army. After finishing off the Crescent Knights, the Geomchis went to attack the rangers which would soon end the battle. Historically, wizards and rangers had great strength when used together but they were eliminated instantly before they could do anything. It was a one-sided slaughter and Weed made it look easy! Pollon thought the sanctuary would be useful against the undead, but the Geomchis were human. They could not hope to think that such an opponent as the Geomchis as they headed towards the wizards, rangers, and necromancers. Pollon’s units tried to fight the Geomchis, but they were only killed by the Geomchis. They were a lot of people who were used to killing and fighting, so they were not scared to die. However, the Geomchis were not opponents they could fight

against even if they flocked together. No matter how high level Pollon could get, it would not be enough to last in a duel or a battle against the Geomchis.

"This is the cost of cleaning and washing the dishes."

"There's also a lot of laundry that's piled up, sahyung."

Weed charged the Geomchis after the battle as he began to roast the horse meat. The broadcasters and viewers of Royal Road began to post comments on the board.

+That was pretty amazing.

+This is one of the coolest things I've seen this week.

+Ever since my boss screwed me over and forced me to quit, I've been depressed. However, now I'm excited for once.

+I've been getting shivers every time I remember what happened on TV.

Several people were saying all sorts of things as they watched on the stations. There were countless requests to the stations to rerun the edited version of the battle several times throughout the day. Since the atrocities of the Hermes Guild and other prestigious guilds were well-known, more viewers began to side with Weed.

#

The President Jeong regularly receives reports on his daughter Seoyoon's health.

"She still isn't talking much but luckily she's adapting quickly and it won't be long."

It pleased him to hear that Seoyoon was recovering and having a social life.

"But she's getting a little close to the young Hyun man..."

President Jeong heard from the guards that they even travel home together. Since he was trying to be a good parent, he didn't want Seoyoon's heart to be broken again. Aside from being a good father to his only daughter, to his business and community he was a cold-blooded man.

"I would have prefered if it was a man with a good status, but isn't he only an ordinary person?

Doctor Cha Eun Hee looked through and put down some papers that were about Seoyoon on the desk.

"As you know, Seoyoon has recently stabilized her psychological state but if you force anything then it would be difficult to tell what will happen."

“I am aware that it’s the top priority to not hurt my little baby’s heart.”

However, President Jeong could not just sit around and do nothing.

“I am aware that you are concerned. How about you introduce a good man to her?”

“Is that so?”

“President, you can tell him to go to a place where he could run into Seoyoon.”

“So a place that she goes to often. Good!”

So it was about trying to force a meeting and getting Seoyoon to talk.

‘The eldest son of the H group has been doing well lately.’

President Jeong and the H Group had a close business relationship and the males were known to have a meticulous nature to take good care of woman.

‘A guy that’s good enough for Seoyoon.”

Cha Eun Hee could only smile and laugh.

“It’s not going to be so easy to change Seoyoon’s mind…”

She didn’t know the secret as to why Hyun was good enough, but Seoyoon would smile brightly and laugh when she was with him. Seoyoon was able to laugh. It was an appearance that Seoyoon rarely showed, and only to Lee Hyun.

“But right now their relationship is too awkward.”

Quite a lot of time had passed since they had first met. Normally, they would be holding hands or even walking arm in arm by now.

“Both of them must be unfamiliar with love but with a slight stimulation it should progress further right?”

#

Pollon’s unit of knights and rangers were completely defeated and only about 25 people barely managed to escape. Their group of wizards and necromancers did not live and were completely defeated and annihilated. With the Geomchis and Pale’s party they achieved an overwhelming victory that would have usually been impossible.

“Well, now its time to hunt Bar Khan.”

The only thing left to do now was to hunt the undead lord Bar Khan. Even after being weakened by being stabbed in the chest with the holy blade, he was still a legendary monster. Now that he had finished his revenge, it was now time for him to use the paladins and priests from Morata to stage a large-scale hunt. Weed was going to encourage the priests and paladins when he heard a noise.

"Oh, that was a really cool fight."

"Did you see how they ran? I wish I could change directions while running during a fight."

"They're so strong."

Thanks to his sword fighting as a Doom Knight, he received praise and admiration. He wanted them to continue with their praise! He could flick his hair aside if he had any but unfortunately he had a bald skull.

'Keuheum. Heraim Fencing performs consecutive hits and it also looks elegant when used. It doesn't hurt to have a few deserving moments of praise.'

They did not know how to describe how the fight had gone and how powerful it was.

"Wasn't oppa really handsome back there?"

“It was really cool fight. Each of the remaining units were killed in a single hit, one after another…”

Right then, Weed was getting more attention from the female priests then Zephyr. Zephyr stretched out with a yawn since he was finally alone.

“That’s a really cool jaw isn’t it?”

“Yea it is…I think so as well.”

“Should we go register friends?”

It was a little embarrassing for Weed to hear praise from the women for quite some time.

‘What men…to fight like they did.’

That was the focus that was held by the male paladins.

“Geomchi nims…to fight like that so freely. I want to fight like that.”

“Also there was a very beautiful dancer wasn’t there?

“A dance during an iron battle, so amazing that I can’t take my

eyes off of it. The knights fell one after one during that dance."

"There was also a very pretty girl. Her voice was very sweet."

The Geomchis, Hwaryung, and Bellotte received a lot of attention from the paladins. They had heard a lot of stories about Weed but they were surprised to see his friends. Weed laughed in relief as he watched.

From the battle he had gotten four magic robes for wizards, a full plate armor, rings, bracelets, boots, necklaces, ranger armor, and other equipment. There were also an assortment of japtem and gold, silver, and copper. The Geomchis got a bunch of high level equipment, swords, armor, and money.

"I don't need to worry about heating costs this winter."

This was the reason behind his peace of mind.

#

Weed began his work to prepare to hunt Bar Khan.

"Sahyungs, give me the swords and armor that you got from the fight. Those that came to fight the undead please entrust me with your equipment briefly."

The Geomchis got powerful weapons by dissolving the undead

equipment. The thick armor of the knights were not suitable for swords but with a small amount of mithril mixed into it they could create a composite sword. However, after they fought the undead they would need to dissolve it again and it would decrease the sword's power. Weed used his blacksmith skills to create a generic sword to solve the problem.

"Are you going to make the sword better?"

"I'm not going to do anything bad."

They were hesitant to leave their weapons since they were doubtful. The paladins considered their equipment to be valuable no matter how incredible Weed's reputation was.

"Oh this is better than before! The damage went up and there's now an option to deal more damage to undead, but its now a little more difficult to repair durability so it'll be more expensive."

After he made enough weapons for the Geomchis, the paladins decided to trust him. Weed's blacksmith skills were high enough to get the respect of anyone in the land.

'I wish I could check it...'

He drooled whenever he saw a good sword but he did not know if it was better than his. Weed converted the equipment while he waited for Mapan.

“It’s about time…”

Mapan had come from Morata with the priests and paladins, along with a bunch of different materials. He dissolved the Helium into the large furnace. With his spare time after the battle, he dissolved the helium and formed a mold. It was God’s tears. Using the large fireplace, he dissolve the mana source of the divine power of helium into the completed sculpture as he got ready to fight Bar Khan.

Chapter 4: Helium Sculpture

KMC Media, CTS Media, On Station, Digital Media, and LK gaming.

These were the stations that obtained footage for Royal Road.

+Weed is going to hunt Bar Khan, the King of the Undead.

+Priests and Paladins have crossed over from Morata to fight the Hermes Guild.

+No one cares about the Hermes Guild.

+Because of the Undead Legion quest and the fast growing ranks of the undead, Weed is going to hunt Bar Khan.

Weed's plan had already spread to the users in Morata. Though it was true that the priests and paladins had been gathered for a long time now, Pollon's troops did not bother to keep it a secret and were talking about it already. Each of the stations focused on the facts that had been revealed so far.

"Everyone, I have amazing news. God of War Weed is going to hunt Bar Khan."

"A few days ago a lot of people say Weed wipe out the Hermes

Guild's force. However, it looks like in the future he's going to hunt the Lich Bar Khan."

"Bar Khan! The Leader of the Undead Legion and Weed who was famous for having completed the Lich quest. A monster that Weed has a history with…it's going to be a very challenging hunt."

It was the breaking news on several stations. Groups that would go and hunt boss monsters was a common occurrence but this time the ratings would go up a notch if it was a legendary monster. Weed had shown his fighting ability in the battle against Pollon's unit.

The battle had not happened yet, but the fact remained that there were going to be countless amazing scenes. It was enough to say that the fact that Weed was going to fight the Lich Bar Khan would amaze the audience. Entire families were waiting in anticipation!

+Oh my god. Weed is finally getting into a real fight. Hunting down monsters likes its nothing and raising his level…I am so glad to be able to see it."

+I don't know who Weed is, it's like I'm listening to a bunch of rumors.

+You're here a bit late. I'm at the Hall of Fame and I'm a complete fan of the Orc movie.

+Guess what I have? I was lucky. I started out in the Kingdom of Rosenheim when I was a beginner and I bought one of Weed's early fox sculptures. When I bought it, my friends thought that five silvers was overpriced but now it's my greatest treasure. My girlfriend and I are so proud that we met him.

+So now the items must be worth....sell me that fox sculpture for 10 gold.

+A few minutes ago it was worth nothing. Now it's worth over 100 gold!

The board was filled with various tales of Weed's bravery. Aside from being a famous adventurer to the users in Royal Road, he was also had high popularity amongst the public.

#

Shin Hye-Min and Oh Juwan were holding an ongoing series called 'Story of the Continent of Versailles, and was holding a telephone interview with Lee Hyun. Since they were paying Lee Hyun salary, he was willing to do it.

"Today we bring you a story about the Continent of Versailles that many people have been wanting to hear about, and with us on the phone is the God of War Weed. Weed?"

Yes.

A short and annoyed answer came back!

“You’ve had a lot of adventures. What was the most challenging adventure?”

Adventuring is tough.

“Modest words that you’re saying. But people want to know what was the most memorable one that you suffered through, can you tell us?”

Lee Hyun thought for a moment before he replied.

When I became a sculptor…

“…”

Shin Hye-Min had to sympathize with him. Aside from when he was cooking and hunting in Royal Road, she did not see his hands stop from making sculptures. You could not just close your eyes and create a sculpture; it was very difficult to raise the level of sculpture beyond level 8 without good art skills. Sewing, fishing, cooking, repairing, bandaging, sailing, herbalism, and many other crafts were the true legend behind his hard work.

It was as if Lee Hyun had lived a lifetime of making toothpicks and wooden chopsticks. Oh Juwan thought it was a joke and asked the next question.

“Weed, it seems that you do not know about the message boards. Viewers admire you for a lot of things…people can not climb to high places as you have and instead climb steadily because of the growing fear of failure. What is your trick to not get tired of facing challenges?”

Complete the challenge.

It meant exactly as he had said. In his life he had been caught up in all sorts of adventures. He did not go into the details of his visit to the City of Heaven since saying more wouldn’t benefit him.

“Seeing as others do not get special quests that are really hard there must be a secret. Do you have any advice for those that are wandering for adventure on the Continent of Versailles?”

Be very thorough. Do not accept a quest carelessly.

Those were meaningful words that came from his own experience.

After Lee Hyun came out, they began to interview other completely different people.

‘Story of the Continent of Versailles’ appears to be a popular show, and it looks like a lot of people decide to watch it.’

Instead of boasting about pride, Lee Hyun had only spoken briefly.

‘It’s not like I receive any additional payment for a longer interview.’

Letting others know more about him would only make his mouth sore.

“Finally its time to think about how to hunt down the Lich Bar Khan. It seems like a difficult question to answer isn’t it?”

Lee Hyun thought back to his past fight against Bar Khan. It was going to be difficult since he didn’t have enough combat power and the odds were against him. Each of the stations were debating about how to increase the success rate of hunting down Bar Khan.

Bar Khan had a huge damage potential as well as being a Necromancer. With enough dead bodies the battle will be endless with tens of thousands of monsters along with one legendary one. The undead army was a disposable resource. The Undead Legion was only part of Bar Khan’s power and it wasn’t a big loss to him if he lost it. The hunt had too big a risk. Lee Hyun calmly replied.

If it’s too much I’ll immediately have a plan to escape.

Aside from the item drops, the experience and skill proficiency lost when he died was a lot of damage. He did not care about being courageous but instead sought to see this fight to the end! Lee

Hyun had a very realistic idea for his battle.

#

The Pollon's Hermes Guild unit of rangers, knights, and mages accessed Royal Road. They appeared at the place where Weed had attacked them before.

"What about the surviving Knights and Rangers?"

"They escaped in the direction of the central continent. The number of people that escaped safely are less than 20."

"Too many had died."

All but two of Pollon's Crescent Knights had died. The Hermes Guild users could connect again after some time, but the knights were all dead.

It took a lot of training, time, and money to raise the quality of the knights. Due to the fierce competition within the Hermes Guild, you had to suffer until you had recovered your losses.

"It would be preferable to return to the central continent instead of taking more risks."

Because Weed's forces of Geomchis had turned the battle around they were in no position to fight back and could only flee or else

they would die.

Many of the users from the Hermes Guild force had lost a lot of items and equipment. They had lost and they would not fight a battle they could not win.

“To think that we lost on a blessed sanctuary.”

“Wasn’t it fun to fight against Weed though?”

“Yes, he was much stronger than our famous Crescent Knights.”

Pollon did not have any regrets. It was a difficult experience but he had the opportunity to battle against Weed.

“The Hermes Guild will have its revenge. The real power of the Hermes Guild is many times stronger than this.

Pollon roughly knew how much power the Hermes Guild had at its disposal. He had joined the Hermes Guild and gradually obtained a higher position only to find out the true reality of the guild’s power. The full strength that had been released towards the Kallamore Kingdom. They then caused a great war and began the occupation of the central continent. The Hermes Guild would surely seek to battle again with Weed and saw it as nothing more than entertainment. Of course with their aloof pride broken, they would become angry.

“Weed, you have managed to smoothly travel through the

Continent of Versailles up to now, but in the future there won't be anywhere you can be safe."

Pollon ordered his troops to withdraw.

"Wizards make a teleport gate. We're going to return."

#

Ttungttangttungttang!

Weed handed the warrior equipment that he made with the blacksmith skills to the Geomchis when he was finished. It was similar to it was before but it had taken a significant amount of labor to dissolve the materials and recreate it using the blacksmith skills. Weed was Intermediate Level 5 in blacksmithing and could use the raw materials to their best.

"A person can not stand idly by. If there's a heat wave and a drought, then I would make a pool."

That was way of life for Weed!

"Weed, long time no see."

"I appreciate all the trouble you went through."

Mapan had brought over two large furnaces to liquefy the helium for him.

“For the cost of transportation, would japtem be fine…”

“Weed nim, japtem is the best.”

“There is a lot of japtem that I need to take care of so could you also take care of its price? I’m sorry that you had to come all the way out here to take care of this for me.”

“It’s always a pleasure to be doing business with Weed nim.”

Weed had placed Mapan in charge of disposing of the high quality loot japtem from the Necromancers. The Necromancers had levels that exceed 300 and some even past 400. He had made the undead hunt a lot and had now piled up a colossal amount of japtem. Weed gave the japtem to Mapan so that he could directly sell it to the store for an additional 15% of its value. Then he calculated 5% to be taken as profit. When trading in town, merchants that bought japtem usually got a small margin and 10% was usually the default amount .

“Isn’t he a really good merchant?”

“I know. I’ve dealt with traders a few times in the past but I’ve never seen a good a deal as 5%. Is it because he’s a professional?”

They wanted to sell of their items they got from the

Necromancers. They were very nervous to walk around with the burden of carrying japtem. Weed took a guess and then went over to introduce Mapan.

"Say hello here. This is Mapan, a merchant I'm close to from the past. If you want to get rid of your japtem then I could ask him to take care of it for the same price he got for me."

"Can I really? I don't have the time to go to the shop to find a merchant since I want to go with Weed nim."

'5 percent isn't much compared to all the trouble I went through to come here…'

It would have been bad if Mapan had met with the Necromancers. Transportation costs were high given how high the risks were.

"This is fine. Mapan is a very good merchant. He used to trade a lot in the past with japtem but now he rarely has the chance since he needs to manage his trade store."

Mapan then went to say.

"I like adventures so I came here to watch Weed. I would also like to take care of the japtem as an extra. It's a sacrifice I'm willing to take."

They came with Necromancer japtem. They could sell it for 2 or

3% in Morata but this was the best price that had seen yet.

‘How much is all of this.’

Mapan could earn a lot of money from the trade of japtem if it was in bulk.

They were offering their Necromancer japtem!

There were accessories as well as rusty, broken weapons and armor. Weed had deliberately let Mapan deal with classifying the japtem since he could repair it for more profit.

Weed could dissolve and rework it into respectable equipment with his blacksmith skill. Mapan earned a lot more through the 5% profit margin and had an excellent opportunity to get a lot of customers.

After finishing the japtem deal, Weed and Mapan walked back to the carriage quietly. They had been partners the entire time! They only talked to each other secretly with whispers.

Here’s the referral fee...

Thank you. Please allow the identifying of the materials to be handed to me. I’ll dissolve the equipment there.

You’re welcome. If you have another opportunity like this be

sure to call me.

However, do you have a lot of people to sell necromancer stuff to?

Warlocks. The Necromancer items will easily sell in Morata.

Not only did he plan to sell the Necromancer items, he had planned to use them.

#

He stoked the fires of the large furnaces that were set up temporarily.

“I have to be careful…failure is not allowed.”

Weed was nervous because he was using the precious metal helium.

“It would be nicer to have higher blacksmith skills.”

If he was a master blacksmith then he could make the best items from the helium! With the holy materials he could make a piece of armor that could represent a kingdom. However Weed decided to make the helium into a sculpture.

“A sculpture has no level limit. Later I can melt it down and make it into a sword.”

Weed thought of sculptings with a practical sense rather than an artistic one.

“Once the mold is ready.”

He had created countless molds in advance when he had been hunting with the Death Knights as a Doom Knight. Since Weed was working with the large furnace, Pale’s party along with the paladins, priests, and Geomchis went to hunt in the nearby area. They were wondering what he was doing with such a large furnace. Weed made the fire have an even higher temperature. He stocked the large furnace full of firewood to gradually increase the heat. To increase his chance of success he used more firewood to increase the firepower as much as he could.

“Still not enough. Needs more firewood.”

Weed had given money to Mapan to transport a significant amount of wood in his wagon. Because he was working on helium he could not conserve on the amount of trees used.

He used the strongest, finest burning trees for it. The firewood that cost over 300 gold in total was used up in 10 minutes.

“Still not enough.”

Weed focused entirely on the fire.

“I wonder if he’s making a mithril sword?”

“I suppose that would be a good weapon to hunt down Bar Khan.”

The priests and paladins were waiting for Weed in order to hunt down Bar Khan. They were currently in high tension while wondering what he was doing with the large furnace. The majority of them had went on hunting parties to fight against necromancers.

Noel: Weed is trying to make something in the hearth’s fire. Since he brought a large furnace from town, it must be something important.

The Grass Porridge Cult was able to watch in real time because the videos were on the internet.

This was the reason why Weed did not go with other users to hunt frequently and that was because he didn’t want to divide up the spoils but also because he valued his privacy. The advantage of fighting by himself was that he could hide his production skills and sculpture secrets instead of putting it out in the open for others to see.

“Now the temperature of the fire is suitable.”

Weed pulled out the massive helium. The metal known as the Tears of the Sky God. He put the prestigious helium into the furnace. The furnace was large enough to melt many metals at once but he concentrated solely on the helium.

He watched over the fire!

Weed was muttering to himself.

“I had to give up being greedy to get better results. If only they had given me Herrera’s Cup or the Crown of Fargo…”

Weed had recovered two of the three treasures of Freya. Using either one of the holy items would have been good. Unfortunately Weed was making the helium into a sculpture instead of a piece of equipment with that in mind.

“Fargo’s Crown, when worn is good for hunting. Herrera’s Cup has holy water that can flow out of it like a river.”

He put aside his endless greed and waited for the Helium to heat up and melt. Weed waited five times longer than normal before pulling the helium out. In the middle of the stone was filled with a sky blue liquid. The helium had melted safely.

“Now for the real part.”

He had used a large furnace to make sure that the skill was less likely to fail. From now on it was time to sculpt.

Weed poured the light blue liquid into a mold and waited for it to cool.

“I can not make a single mistake…”

It was frustrating to wait. He was familiar with making a sculpture with blacksmithing since it had been the same with Geumini. He could not help but be nervous though. He did not have the faintest idea of what the completed work would be like. The helium could be melted back indefinitely but if he failed to create a decent work then it would be a significant loss of materials. In the worst case then the magic in the metal would be lost.

If repeatedly refined then the divine power of mana in the helium would gradually weaken.

“Now.”

Weed took it out of the earthen mold faster than usual. It was time to work on the helium. Torches that illuminate the darkness! He was going to form the clear azure helium into a torch.

“Still…its a bit lacking.”

His blacksmith skills were too low to properly handle helium so he needed to work on the details. Weed had to make the sculpture more carefully and with greater detail to ensure that it does not

fail. Weed took his Zahab Carving Knife.

He used the Zahad Carving Knife to work on the Helium since it was going to be a precious item for Morata's castle that Yurin was staying in. Talrock Armor, Bahalan Bracelet, Kolderim's Demon Sword, as well as Weed's personally crafted equipment that he made for himself and Yurin often.

"Time to sculpt."

Seugseug.

Weed scraped the surface of the helium with the sculpting knife. He boldly cut away the protruding parts.

+You are in contact with Divine Power.

+Strength has been reduced by 35.

+Health has dropped by 950.

+Undead power has decreased by 4.

Since he was a Doom Knight, the helium made him suffer enormous damage every time he touched it.

'I don't have much time, must make it immediately.'

He needed to finish the piece before he died. Helium had huge durability and took a lot of time to cool before it could become a sculpture.

+Hot metal has been used.

+Vitality has been reduced by 318.

Divine Power!

There were two types of pain that Weed had on him as he held his sculpting knife. The thing that set a professional sculptor apart from other art professions was that he had to shoulder all the physical suffering.

“Better works come from suffering…”

Weed said these words as if he were dying. He did not have the time to make the sculpture leisurely.

’This is nothing to me.’

Weed began to trim and create the entire mold with his sculpting knife. He had to watch the torch through the whole creation process with all of his experience is the sculpture was made of dissolved metal. As the helium became more cold and solid, it began to emit more mana and divine power.

“What, maximum mana is increasing?”

“I’ve gotten skills that make holy magic stronger. But never to such an extent.”

“My mana regen is going crazy at a 50% higher rate.”

As the sculpture began to near completion, the priests and paladins began to feel a change in their bodies. Weed was making a helium torch. The divine powers of the priests and paladins were being enhanced.

+The body is vulnerable to divine power.

+Defense has disappeared.

+Resistance has been reduced.

The divine power gradually wrapped around Weed’s body and weakened him. Strength began to rapidly fade from his bones.

“Just a little more…”

He had to remain calm and hold the helium with his hand, even if his health was gradually being put at risk.

“It’s complete.”

He stuck a rod under the torch to complete it! The bar was made out of Mithril and Adamantium. When he had hunted the Undead Legion, he had collected a lot of old weaponry.

+Please set the name of the sculpture.

Weed had to name it quickly. This was because he only had 20% health left.

“Torch Left by a Sculptor.”

+The Torch Left by a Sculptor right?

“Yes.”

Many sculptors had lost their lives without any help like in Las Gigolos. This was the legacy of Sculptor Weed’s works. It was a very good work that he used blacksmith, handicrafting, and sculpting to make so that he would not regret it.

————————————————————————+

Masterpiece! You have completed the Torch Left by a Sculptor sculpture!

A sculpture made out of helium! This sculpture is a work that will be recorded in the history of the continent. It would not be an overstatement to say this was the greatest and most famous piece created by the sculptor Weed. This piece, created by God's noble metal, will bring glory and radiant light.

Artistic value: 18619

Special Options: 8

+Those that see the Torch Left by a Sculptor will have their health and mana regen increased by 52% for a day.

+Additionally, the owner of the sculpture will receive an additional 30% mana regen.

+All stats are increased by 29.

+The mana consumption of all skills have been reduced by 75%.

+Magic power has increased by 33%.

+Mana based combat skills have increase in strength by 14%.

+Will keep enemies away.

+Mana Barrier(Advanced Level 4) will prevent ranged attacks

within a certain range.

+Has the ability to drive away darkness.

+Prevents abnormal status.

+Increases the morale of troops.

+Strong magic resistance to curses and black magic.

+When viewing the sculpture Faith, Wisdom, and Intelligence will increase by 10 permanently.

Can not be used with other sculptures.

So far the number of completed masterpieces: 8

+————————————————————————

+Sculpting Skills have improved.

+Handicrafting has improved

+Smithing has increased to Intermediate Level 6. You are now better at smelting unique metals.

+Smithing has increased to Intermediate Level 7. You can now create light armor with high durability.

+Fame has increased by 4924

+Art has increased by 51.

+Wisdom has increased by 7.

+Endurance has increased by 3.

+Stamina has increased by 4.

+Charisma has increased by 13.

+Charm has increased by 25.

+For creating a masterpiece, all stats have increased by an additional 3 points.

+This sacred sculpture has the ability to reduce the powers of the dead.

Weed's eight masterpiece sculpture!

Since it was a sculpture that could be carried, it as going to be a great help in the fight.

“Nevertheless I was able to make another named sculpture…this much is good.”

Instead of sword or armor, it was a great sculpture that increased stats and lowered mana consumption.

It was some of the best options for a cleric or wizard. Thanks to the process helium, his blacksmith skills increased another two levels. There was not much left until it was level six and the reason it raised so much was because he was a human that was dealing with the highest grade metal.

“It’s so reassuring to create such a good sculpture…”

Weed moved his jawbone.

+A sculpture made out of the legendary material helium has been created.

+You can go to the Sculptor’s Guild to receive additional rewards.

Very nice things kept happening but as a Doom Knight the options were very negative things since the power in his body kept dropping. If he held onto the sculpture too long then he would die there holding it. Weed wrapped the sculpture in a white cloth and added it to his bag.

+You are no longer in contact with the Torch Left by a Sculptor.

+The aura of Divine Power is leaving the body.

+Once the energy completely disappears then it is possible to regain original combat capability.

The scenes of Weed creating the Helium Sculpture was broadcasted live on the internet and seen by many. However this was hardly anything to hide. The people of the Continent of Versailles had spread news by mouth. Whenever a A class or S class quest succeeded the effects were great.

The Relics of Freya were also made of the same Helium material.

“Such an amazing sculpture was made in the world. It is a sculpture that is very artistic but also imbued with magical powers.”

“The number of treasures created by human hands on the Continent of Versailles has increased by one, but this one is very powerful because of the effort that was put into it.”

“His Majesty, the King is very anxious to meet this sculptor. Keep the palace doors open and tell the guard to see if they can contact the sculptor…”

Chapter 5: Turn Undead

Weed's battle preparation ended when everyone had a full stomach from his cooking.

"We must..."

Having prepared already, the paladins and priests waited for Weed's speech.

"He will make the speech really long. I would if it was me."

"Yeah, and it will also get re-broadcasted. After all, Weed is enormously famous."

Many broadcasting stations including KMC Media were broadcasting it live. Today, not only in Versailles continent, many people would watch Balkan being hunted through many broadcasting stations.

It would be a lie to say they were not tense and thrilled at the opportunity. The paladins felt great shivers to be under Weed's command and fight against the Undead Legion's Balkan. Before the battle it was mandatory to remind themselves of the justification and worth of what they were trying to do by listening to their commander's great speech.

Weed cleared his throat and continued.

“We must hunt Balkan down and take every treasure he has.”

“.....”

“.....”

A precise target with clear consciences!

And with simplicity that did not mindlessly clutter the audience attention.

“Well then let’s all do our best.”

“.....”

For Weed time was too precious to waste on speech.

‘We just have to kill all of them.’

As plans were already set up the only thing to do was fight cooly. So an enormous assault team including paladins, priests and Geomchis was deployed immediately after. Pale’s companions and the Necromancers including Marey moved with them.

Marey, as a bard, came along to compose and sing an awesome song while he spectated Weed’s battle against Balkan. The

Necromancers also decided to fight with Weed. There was no small amount of spells and items they could receive under Balkan's command but their notoriety and Power of Undead would increase.

Balkan was the Necromancers' blessing and curse at the same time. And with their alignment toward the Undead Legion, it was difficult to enter any villages or castles so they decided to fight for their freedom.

Paladins' morale was unmeasurably high. Their attack and defense capabilities were at their maximum when they were against the Undead.

'With Weed-nim I will be able to fight a heart pounding battle.'

'Even if I die, I won't regret a tiny bit.'

Because they were on a live broadcast, their wills were on fire for the battle.

Heading toward the Undead Legions' troop headquarters in Vargo fortress!

Shaking and their hearts surged with thrill, they marched under the dark sky with heavy rains.

“You need to enter this sewer.”

But the place Weed led to was a dirty narrow sewer!

SPLASH SPLASH!

Paladins, priests and Geomchis walked down the sewer in the direction Weed told them earlier. Pale’s group and Mapan the merchant was with them too. They went past the complicated paths of the sewer and came up above ground, Weed the Doom knight was waiting for them. As Weed was aligned toward the Undead Legion he simply walked past the gate opened and manned by Undead. They could not be jealous of his slightly wet cape and armour.

“This is the kitchen located in the exterior fortress of Vargo fortress. This is a safe place because Undead don’t eat.”

As priests entered the fortress, it felt like their bodies were shivering due to the tension.

Pale asked, “The place Balkan is residing, is it nearby?”

“From the inner fortress we need to go underground.”

They infiltrated the exterior of the fortress easily but the path still left would be tough. It would be just impossible to reach

Balkan without getting noticed by so many Undead.

"I'll enter first. Please follow after some time."

Weed led in the front, searching the Undead's movements. It was best when there were no Undead nearby and he frequently reported information on his reconnaissance.

"Seven of them. There are no other Undead in the vicinity. We need to assault them quickly and move on."

"Holy Might!"

"Recovery!"

When they had to hunt, they cleared the enemy using holy spells from the priests.

Priests' healing magic, blessing spells and Turn Undead were very critical against the Undead.

"There is no time to take a break for mana regeneration. The Undead move around Vargo fortress freely so we need to keep moving to where Balkan is."

Weed kept moving without any delay. Because he grasped the exact path leading to Balkan, they were able to move fast even if they had to stop to kill Undead. They moved in fear that once they

were revealed by Undead, the tremendous force of Undead would come after them.

Weed promised them an opportunity to fight all they desired, they also wanted to fight Balkan so they followed after him quietly. There were many monsters in the exterior of the fortress but Weed used his position in the Undead Legion to at least reduce the guards.

He took the loitering Undead in their path as his underlings and threw them out of the fortress. But most of theUndead squatting in the corner with their bodies crouched were over level 300 and three Bone Dragons were flying around in the air. Vandal knights on their ghost horses roamed between interior and the exterior of the fortress so even Weed, who knew the current Undead circumstances, couldn't be completely at ease.

"Keeak, humans!"

Priests and paladins channeled their holy spells and used it immediately but sometimes the Undead died screaming. Every time that happened, nearby Undead came in and they had to quickly repeat their subjugation and escape.

"Humans! Humans are invading."

"Ring the bell and alert everyone."

"There is a fight going on somewhere."

“I smell blood. Living creatures are challenging us.”

RING! RING! RING!

Somewhere from the towers of Vargo Fortress, a loud chime rang.

“We have to assume we are revealed now. From now on, there will be no more scouting instead run straight to the interior of the fortress.”

Following after Weed, the paladins and Geomchis ran after him. Even the physically weak priests held their staffs and the scriptures in their hands and started running.

“We kill every Undead blocking our way and break through.”

It was a battle against time now. If they were surrounded by Undead crowding in from the whole Vargo Fortress, they would only face a miserable death.

“Sahyungs need to go forward now. We need to break through as quick as we can. It may be dangerous but please.”

“Don’t worry. That much is easy.”

Geomchis destroyed every defending Undead soldiers they

encountered.

Dedicated attack and breakthrough using their bodies unsparingly!

If it was not the cleansing spells of priests, then the Undead return as corpses through normal sword or physical attacks. But due to Balkan's Dark Rule magic, they would rise again as Undead as time goes but they were not in the circumstance of taking measures.

Weed took the front and ran through the hallway. Because he was a Doom Knight, he didn't get attacked by Undead.

"Intruders!"

Weed screamed and drew the Undead attentions.

"Humans approaching from the right hallway."

Every Undead ran to the direction Weed told.

Weed performed his duty of confusing Undead besides scouting and guiding the paths. Running straight through, everyone besides straggling priests behind them arrived at the gate leading to the interior of the fortress.

"We need to get across here. There are way too many Undead on

the other paths.”

The path Weed picked was connected with the inner fortress through bridges over the moat. Under the bridge, crocodile Undead licked their chops at the sight of humans.

“Let’s go.”

Priests and paladins ran across the bridge.

Behind the exterior of the fortress they ran from, Undead soldiers were gathering.

“Attack! Kill them all!”

“They are rebelling against Balkan-nims goal. Let’s make them into Death’s companions.”

Undead ran what they could and chased after them. There were so many varieties of Undead and gargoyles assaulted from the air.

“Divine Shield!”

Priests spread out their protective magic and blocked the attack.

“Hurry to the interior of the fortress.”

“Quickly, quickly.”

Ever since they entered Vargo fortress, they kept facing battles without time to gather their senses. Not only they had to take care of Undead quickly, they had to move swiftly. Players had questions about how Weed would lead the battle but now they knew.

Weeding them out, falling behind or disobedience was deaths. Because the difficulty of battles were beyond their imaginations, they had to put a lot of efforts trying to keep up with Weed.

Weed looked up in the sky. Presently he couldn’t see three the Bone Dragons.

“Really, I chose a good day.”

Since few days ago, elves and barbarians didn’t attack Vargo fortress. There were sightings of rare high elves in the forest near Vargo fortress, there were indication of another large attack rather than a withdrawal.

“We must fight a big battle with elves.”

“If we raise great achievements, the Balkan-nim will be happy.”

“If we kill many barbarians, do you think we can get accepted into the Vandal knights?”

“Seeing tonight is calm, they must be coming to attack tomorrow. The Undead Legion is planning to counter-strike after defending from Vargo Fortress. This time, we will follow elves into the forest, its a chance to gain great accomplishments.”

Through the Undead conversation he predicted the day of the possible assault. If Vargo fortress was seen from afar, on one side there was humans brought by Weed that were fighting through the path leading to the interior. And near the walls, there was a united army of elves, barbarians and dwarves fighting the Undead.

Pale and Maylon shot arrows without any interval. They entered the inner fortress shooting gargoyles foreheads with their silver arrows. They stood by the entrance and protected the priests by continuously shooting their arrows. It was because unlike Geomchi and paladins who had a decent level of defense, priests could die easily.

Priests usually support the battle from the safe and comfortable rear. They were in charge of healing and blessing which was a core part in party quests so they did not move around a lot.

“Huk. Huk!”

Breeman, a celebrated priest from Morata, immediately sat down on the ground as he came inside the inner fortress and was breathing heavily. He was priest Breeman that would receive adulation wherever he went, but joining a raid under Weed he had

to run as hard as he could voluntarily. He thought that he would die by the Undead chasing them if he flapped and walked slowly because of his fat stomach.

Breeman finally felt relieved after he entered the inner fortress.

“Weed-nim, is this place safe?”

Weed just pointed toward hallway in front of him without any words. The inner fortress was filled with much stronger monsters than monsters in the outer fortress!

Three Vandal knights on their ghost horses charged against humans.

“Be careful!”

“An assault.”

Priests alerted one after the other.

Geomchi were already getting ready for it.

Instincts as martial artists. Although they couldn’t sense variety of dangers like adventurers or thieves, a chilling aura flowed and warned them when a strong enemy appeared.

“It’s been a long time since facing someone worth fighting.”

“Be careful. If you let your guard down, you will die right away.”

Vandal knights were presumed to be over level 430. Each of them were high rank Undead, who were given individual names, and they were further enhanced by Balkan’s Death Aura.

“Sword Cloning!”

Geomchis used their secret sword skill. Because Vandal knights seemed strong, they decided to give it all they got from the beginning. Each individual Geomchi19, Geomchi56, Geomchi101 and Geomchi147 cloned their bodies 10 times.

“The Balkan-nim wants living offerings.”

“You can only be used as sacrifices.”

Vandal knights, in a split second, rushed the Geomchis’ clones and slashed them. Each slashes made the clones disappear. But Geomchis didn’t prefer taking away enemy’s life slowly by using their clones.

It was only a method used to create an opening in their enemy so they could attack.

“Taa!”

Geomchis attacked Vandal knights' weak spots that were exposed while they were attacking.

"Kyaaah!"

Due to their armour and Death Aura's defensive capabilities the Vandal knights did not receive heavy damages from Geomchis' attack. Despite the fact their joints such as backs and knees were struck, they only took normal damage.

"Healing Hand."

"Warrior Healing."

"Sun God Blessings!"

Priests and paladins' holy spells struck Vandal knights a little later. It was healing and blessing magic that inflict horrifying damages to the Undead.

"Endless Brilliance."

"Vitality Regeneration."

While Vandal knights were weak, Geomchis attacked them indiscriminately.

Hwaryeong danced in front of two newly approaching Vandal knights.

Her own booby booby dance!

Vandal knights had an ingrained hatred of humans and attacked right away. But the closer the range of the dance the more influence became powerful so she continued to dance while barely dodging their strikes. It was difficult even for Hwaryeong but she managed to succeed.

“This is pretty nice.”

“They are worth beating.”

Those who were directly participating in the battle were beyond expectation as the knights had high defense. It was a nice opportunity to raise attack-related skill mastery and stats!

When Vandal knights died, Weed went to the corner.

“It seems I cannot stay as Undead from now onward.”

Vargo fortress was a place even a Doom knight can’t wander around freely. Not only was it impossible to give commands to Undead like in the outer fortress, he would also be under Balkan’s command. If Balkan tells Weed to attack, he could lose control of

his body and fight the Geomchis.

“Time to change my body again.”

Weed took out a sculpture from his backpack.

“I need to get back to my original appearance.”

Combining the already sculpted head, legs, arms and body, it looked similar to Weed’s original face but slightly different. The sculpture had a high nose, squared chin, dark eyebrows and a nice symmetry. Not only was it handsome, it was about 12 cm taller.

Technically speaking, it could only be classified as the same human otherwise it was a completely different person altogether. The plastic surgeon would admire his well define fixes, and if he would go to the alumni reunion no one would recognize him.

“It feels comfortable like I’m looking at a mirror after a long time. Sculpture Transformation!”

Weed came back from an Undead body to a human. There were some physical differences but the height was similar so he had no problem adapting. He equipped items he used to wear as a human and Kolderim’s daemon sword and finally held the ‘Torchlight left behind by Sculptors’.

“Bit more comfortable now.”

Even though his body wasn't enhanced in combats like when he was a Doom Knight, he was able to equip much better equipment. Also he was able to receive healing and blessings from priests so there was no negative side to it.

When Weed stood again in front of other people, Pale's group and Necromancers were already in the inner fortress.

"Huh?"

"The effect of a sculpture..."

Due to the torch Weed held, users' capabilities went up dramatically and their faith, intelligence and wisdom increased by 10 permanently.

"It's the sculpture he made last time."

"The sculpture from Weed-nim can do this much? A sculptor is a really awesome profession!"

While getting respects from the players, Weed spoke his plan.

"We will continue moving to the place where Balkan is. The monsters in the inner fortress will continue gathering... You must use holy spells unsparingly here."

With just Geomchis fighting, the casualties from the Vandal knights would be huge. In Vargo fortress filled with Undead, they needed to do their best to break through.

“Undead will be coming from every side. What should we do?”, one of the paladins asked.

Right now, they were inside a perfect sealed barrier created by consuming all the mana from eight advanced priests. They were taking a brief break in an alley leading to the inner fortress, though this barrier could only last 3~4 minutes. Monsters entering from the outer fortress were a problem, but the strong monsters attacking inside the fortress were also troublesome.

“If we keep going, there is a stairway going to the basement. Balkan is beneath it. After holding off the stairway, we will form a defensive parameter.”

On the only stairway going to the underground, they would fight the Undead on the narrow path. The paladins and priest could take breaks there, afterwards they would leave behind some defending forces and gamble their lives fighting Balkan.

It was a very simple and basic plan, but it all depended on arriving to their final destination with minimum damage. Knowing the interior of Vargo fortress very well, Weed did not struggle finding his way and could act as a guide faithfully.

“Whew…”

Players were taking deep breaths out of anxiety. They were about to confront the legendary monster Balkan. If they won it was a relief, but if they could not and retreated, they would be completed annihilated without even getting out of the inner fortress.

Priests nodded.

“Let’s go.”

“We came this far so might as well see the end.”

After taking a break to recover their vitality, they kept moving on. Undead endless jumped at them but holy spells from paladins and priests blasted them. Evil spirits came at them from the ceiling, walls and floors, and sometimes Vandal knights appeared.

Weed advanced onwards with the torch and Geomchis, Pale’s group, priests, paladins and Necromancers followed closely behind.

“The Undead keep coming, do you think we can succeed?”

“I don’t know. But it’s Weed who’s leading us so I’m pretty sure we can succeed.”

“But first to be defeated maybe us….”

They could only follow filled with pessimism and irritation.

Monsters even came out from old paintings, Vargo Fortress dangerous dungeon was of impossible standards.

“The wall!”

“Ghosts coming out from the wall. Avoid them.”

“Look out for the monsters on the ceiling!”'

Despite the fact that there were a lot of paladins and priests gathered, victims due to the Undeads’ ambushes increased. If there is some health left, they could be saved by using a lot of healing spells but Undead with unbelievable levels killed about six Geomchis and paladins in a split second.

As a top priority, Priests were protected from every dangers but even so, there were many casualties among them. There were dangerous situation where they were attacked simultaneously back to front, but finally they were able to arrive at the wine cellar which was their destination!

If they just opened the door Balkan was waiting.

———————————————————————————

“Ah! Now the fight against Balkan is waiting before them. It is the moment we’ve all been waiting so long for.”

“It is a battle with tremendous stakes for Weed.”

The scene of Weed bringing players to invade Vargo Fortress was broadcasted live across many stations. Having advance warning before hand, the regular programs were cancelled and they made it into a special program.

On top of that many of the players were writing in the Royal Road message boards, that it became a large festivity. To express it in one sentence it was, ‘an event that was crazed with joy.’

Viewers’ response were beyond the expectation various broadcasting stations had. It was possible to say that the reason was because it’s Weed’s adventure which was never disappointing.

But there was another reason beyond why the viewers like it.

- It’s totally reckless.

- His guts swollen. How could he order 1 portion of sausage and ask just for the meat?

- Person above that is a tasteless joke. Weed-nim is known to eat a 5-man portion.

- Vargo Fortress! How can he go hunting in such a place?

Weed was unpredictable.

Weed did dangerous things that other users would never do without hesitation.

The feeling of tension and stress that was released at these moments!

Many stations broadcasted at the same time but depending on the disposition of the host, they all said different things.

“Ho Gung, according to the analysis there is high chance that the hunt will fail?”

“That’s right. We’ve completely analyzed their known military strength and as for me, I don’t see any chances of winning.”

“Even though there are priests and paladins, natural enemy of Undead?”

“You can’t just take Balkan’s spells out of your consideration. What is the reason why Necromancers are the most feared? They continuously create allies from corpses. But if that many men go in, it will only end up as a great disadvantage. In the worst situation, everyone will become Undead.”

“So how can they defeat Balkan?”

“I say take a small, very high level group. Currently there are no players at a level to hunt Balkan so you must see it as an impossible monster to hunt. And to be honest, I am very worried what kind of battle will proceed.”

Viewers turned away from such negatively-broadcasting station. Their viewer message boards were empty enough to cause snores.

“Considering Weed’s battles, I’m sure he has come up with a lot of strategies and therefore will fight well. Watching and learning tactics Weed brings out one by one will be something many of you can enjoy. Of course all those tactics might not work.”

“Weed is in the situation where he can’t afford not to hunt Balkan because Undead Legion is attacking Morata right now. If he fails, Morata’s existence will be in danger.”

Objective and neutral broadcasts had low ratings as well.

“Last time I checked, they just entered the inner fortress and now they are already one step away from Balkan. Aren’t they absurdly fast?”

“Normally, a legendary monster like this has many titles. Moving siege weapon or emperor of Undead and so on. But right now its not matched well with its opponent. As Weed is the God of War after all.”

“So the reason why Weed has been called the God of War ever

since the magical continent is being explained now?”

“I do not need to speak many words about it. I think you can just look at the screen. Who other than Weed could possibly fight so efficiently and systematically with perfect strangers?”

The stations that complimented and cheered Weed, their ratings exploded!

Because it was being broadcasted by many stations, the ratings were much more sensitive. The broadcast official while speaking celebratory words could not avoid being critical.

Ever since they started programs about Royal Road, broadcasting staffs haven’t seen a single player with such popularity regardless of gender and age. Most players were just well known because of their authority, strength or higher level than others but none of them were a match for Weed in popularity itself.

In an objective way, Bardray and even the heads of any guilds had much more influence and authority than Weed. Despite all that, people were cheering for Weed because he made sculptures, showed many kinds of skills and went on thrilling adventure.

An adventure that everyone dreams of, rather than formation of corrupt force.

An adventure that they themselves couldn’t go on.

No one could hate a sculptor playing in the wide Versailles continent as his stage.

“If people love it this much…”

“I guess we should consider creating a program featuring Weed?”

“I think it would be okay to orientate information about the sculptures Weed made or his prefered hunting ground.”

“He’s been on TV several times and he always drew high ratings.”

Broadcast officials only saw how to use Weed’s popularity. But watching the recent broadcast, more and more among them were siding with Weed.

They were all players as well that travelled Versailles continent.

———————————————————————————————

“I’ll open the door. Get ready for battle and charge immediately.”

As soon as Weed opened the door, they were able to see Balkan Demorph sitting in a huge chair.

- You are falling into a state of fear.

Your body is temporarily stunned.

Maximum health and mana is reduced by 20%.

Strength reduced by 45%.

Agility reduced by 23%.

Wisdom reduced by 40%.

Vitality reduced by 28%.

You are becoming unlucky.

- You have a mental breakdown, falling into hallucinatory state.

You feel dizziness.

The chance of skill or spell failure increased.

You are seeing visions.

Vitality is declining fast.

To be honest, he predicted the situation somewhat and was resolute in his heart.

But just looking at Balkan caused this many effects!

Weed's fighting spirit, willpower and faith were evenly high but the effect was still tremendous. When he came as a Doom Knight, he was on the same side so it was okay but now that he's completely an enemy, he had to confront the great power of Balkan face to face.

"Arrgh!"

"Don't do this. Don't come near me!"

Priest even had great physical damage and were threatened by vision. It was a legendary monster that threw humans into chaos in a split second.

Geomchis were only slight harmed.

Through many reckless challenges, their willpower and fighting spirit were extremely high and as their class was martial artists, they fought strong enemies by scraping all their strength from the bottom.

TARARARA!

Marey took out his instrument and performed on it. Music was a useful method to win over the fear.

‘Let me show you why I am the best bard in the continent.’

They were being broadcasted live on many stations so this was an opportunity he was waiting for. To the bards, the moment where Weed sang before the start of battle was incredibly awesome enough to cause jealousy.

A palace hall was nothing compared to the stage that was Balkan hunting.

Place where the God of War treads on.

The Frozen lands, legions…

He sang in a quiet voice the composed song he was pleased with.

Starting off in a calm, soothing melody.

And then about halfway, Marey singing was known to change in an explosive manner.

However!

Too strong. The tough looking Undead!

Weed for his own song, cried out a Lion's Roar.

Trying not to be pushed aside, Marey tried to match the song while playing on his instrument.

Steps making history.....

Looking strong enough for me to tremble

But you shall die today

What priced item are you wearing

JJJJAAAAP,TTTEEEMMM

Following the blowing wind.

Robe is expensive

How much is the crown on your head?

Even Your skeleton scepter is mine

JJJJAAAAP,TTTEEEMMM

It was much crueler than someone just taking away the mike when he had prepared his best song in a karaoke!

Marey's epic and grand song was buried deep by Weed's off-the-beat and out-of-tune yelling.

Simple yet addictive song that was easy to follow!

- By listening to a music, effects of fear and hallucination reduced by 58%.

Marey, in despair, desperately played his instrument at least to protect his dignity as a bard. He brought out Weed's random singing by exquisitely following with his instrument.

'When will he end? How will he compose the ending?'

Because they didn't have any consultation in advance, Marey followed along his instrument anxiously. However, Weed's song suddenly ended without even a proper closing.

"Attack!"

As Weed's orders fell, paladins ran toward Balkan as they planned. Above them, the Vandal knights including the Undead Legion continuously tried to come downstairs. Whether they fail hunting Balkan or prolonging the Undead Legion from coming down, it was a situation where they face annihilation.

Balkan stood up from his chair.

“You scums. You did well coming here to end your lives early. I don’t need your worthless heads. I’ll make all of you into headless Undead and make you obey me forever.”

- Necromancer’s Declaration has been used.

Paladins charged in but they all headed in different directions.

They thought they were running toward the right direction but they were trapped in Balkan’s vision.

“Frost Wave!”

As Balkan snapped his finger, freezing surge swept in.

Even though paladins were coated with bright holy power, the effect of freezing slowed them and made their body rigid.

“Kill the humans.”

From the ground, fifty Doom knights rose as one. They were Balkans protective guards.

“There are Undead here as well.”

“We need to take care of them fast. We must not give time for Balkan to cast another spell!”

To get closer, paladins had to fight Doom knights first. If the battle proceeds like this, as soon as there is a corpse, the balance of the battle will immediately be on Balkan’s side and give him the advantages. But the paladins weren’t surprised.

‘Weed told us this kind of battle had a high chance of probability.’

He said that once paladins rush, Balkan will focus his attacks on them. As a Lich, his physical capabilities weren’t all bad but as a magician if the paladins closed the distance, Balkan would be in an extremely difficult position.

As a typical Necromancer, Balkan will cast several critical curses and create Undead using paladins as sacrifices.

But the paladins were baits.

Due to their unique defense capabilities and body protection, they will get relatively less damage from Balkan’s magic attacks. If they were to fight defensively, they could even withstand attacks of Doom knights for a very long time.

The real attack was prepared by the priests.

“Turn Undead!”

Priests casted Undead cleansing spells in unison.

Many visions of Balkan disappeared and huge impacts cause the dark auras to undulate.

“Kuaak!”

Even if he is Balkan the legendary monster, it was impossible not to get damaged from an attack that was completely incompatible with him.

Balkan’s body and his surroundings shone brightly with holy power.

Romuna used a spell quickly.

“Sprouting life, show me everything of it. View Life Force!

DING!

Lich Balkan Demoph

Sorcerer of darkness. A black magician that exceeded the limitation of human being.

Raising Undead, he tried to conquer the continent.

Has a body of a Lich. Due to the sacred sword stabbed in his chest, his physical activities and magical strengths are restricted.

As a legendary monster he is the public enemy of all kingdoms and churches.

Health: 87%

Mana: 99%

Chapter 6: Three Bone Dragons

Though the priests attack's were successful, Balkan's life was far away from death. A Lich was an existence that could survive infinitely long as it could create an army if there were corpses and living creatures.

"Awaken, my servants...!"

As Balkan shouted, a 5-meter high Stone Golem stood up from the ground. It was so high that it could almost scrape the ceiling with its thick looking pairs of arms and legs! Higher-rank Necromancers usually had at least one Golem type guardian and in case of Balkan, it was a stone golem.

Dudududu!

As the Stone Golem swung its arm, paladins were thrown back. Every time the Golem ran, the ground shook and small rubble fell from the ceiling. It had vitality, defence and attack like a steel wall. And as it is a guardian created by magic, it didn't take damages from holy spells.

"Be careful. It's not certain but it must be mid to late level 400."

"We have to breakthrough the golem first to get to Balkan."

"Let's take down the golem."

They thought the battle to be simple because they were against Balkan but the battle became chaotic instantly.

Usually, when magicians are hit by one or two small attacks, their spells got cancelled and they experienced fluctuation in mana. But Balkan was fine even with continuous hits from Light Sphere and Turn Undead. With the Lich's high magic resistance, the spell casting didn't get cancelled.

"Chasing Arrow!"

Pale and Maylon concentrated their mana in arrows and shot it toward Balkan. As a magician, Balkan could not take drastic evasive movements while chanting a spell so the arrows hit without missing all the time. But it felt like he did not mind the minor attacks at all.

A Lich's nature was to drain health and mana from living creatures so Balkan was not in a desperate situation.

"Silent Atmosphere."

More than 200 paladins in Balkan's curse range were surrounded by dark and blue energies.

A very strong curse that disturbs the targets breathing!

“Bone Destruction.”

CRACK!

This time, about 30 paladins’ bones in their bodies were crushed. Even though they were wearing armor, they couldn’t overcome the curse because of low resistance.

“Fire Hydra Summon.”

Balkan even summoned a Fire Hydra. Sprouting from the ground head first, it breathed fire from each of its head. Balkan casted three spells consecutively with ease.

After a very short break, Balkan began casting attack magic on the paladins.

“Frost Ring!”

Rings of freezing air were created and covered the paladins.

The priests’ healing spells were focused on Balkan and paladins. Because of that they were able to prevent mass slaughters from the continuous spells. Also it was due to the nature of paladins’ magic defence and resistance being comparably higher than the warrior class.

Weed observed the situation cooly.

‘Balkan’s curse magic, Necromancers’ magic are on top standards. Looking at his unbelievably strong Undead, I’m pretty sure he can create a bunch of Bone Dragons if he has the required corpses. He can use summon magic quite well but his attack magic is fairly weak.’

Up to a certain point, Balkan’s magic was relatively weak compared to other magicians. Balkan could cast attack spells faster than advanced magicians over level 400. If one considered not only the magic strength but the casting speed as important in battle, it could be said to be a considerable forte.

On top of that, paladins were extremely overwhelmed just by looking at Balkan. The summoned Doom Knights and Stone golem were in even more rampageous and Balkan interchanged between lightning and ice spells and some of the paladins fell victims to the attacks.

According to Romuna’s check, Balkan’s health dropped to 73% after the continuous attack by the priests using Turn Undead, but it was not hopeful news. There were already 19 newly dead corpses. Assuming Balkan would create higher-rank Undead with his Undead summoning spell, it’s only right to say that the current hunt will fail.

Currently, though it was not aggregated, about a million people were estimated to be paying attention to the live broadcast. The quest of Weed with his companions, not only was it watched by the players but the viewers as well who were watching with variety of different emotions.

‘Just fail.’

‘Perish.’

‘Get killed violently.’

‘Weed is finished now.’

High-level rankers and players in top guilds wished for Weed’s failure as one.

But humans still had a moving force, the Geomchis.

Even though the battle had started, Geomchis had to endure the urge to fight because Weed told them to wait for Balkan’s response against the paladins.

“Wooah!”

“Yes!”

Geomchis pulled strength in their bodies and yelled out a war cry. Based on their resilience, willpower and courage, they fully overcame Balkan’s fear effect. Now Geomchis could fight like usual, without any restrictions. That was already enough of an advantage when fighting Balkan.

“Let’s go!”

“Kill these bastards.”

Geomchis jumped out and swung their swords at the Golem and Doom Knights. The standards of Balkan’s handmade Undead were different. Doom Knights with Death Aura effect were almost as strong as semi-boss monsters but using their skill, the Geomchis were able fight evenly. And because they were under the blessings from priests, they were able to fight even more rough and recklessly than usual.

“Destroy them completely!”

“Do not let your guard down until priests cleanse the monster you defeated with their holy power.”

Balkan was kept in check by the paladins. Using this moment as an opportunity, Geomchis destroyed Doom knights and purified them.

While everyone was fighting with all their might, suddenly a soothing melody was heard!

Bellot was playing her instrument on the battlefield. She sang a sacred song raising priests’ faith and paladins’ strength.

Romuna occasionally flung spells and Surka fought the Doom Knights with Geomchis. Zephyr and Hwaryeong took care of the Undead coming down the stairway with other players. Because of Zephyr's wide range attacks and Hwaryeong's monster sleep skill, they didn't join the hunting of Balkan themselves.

"You uncivilized humans, what a foolish resistance. This land is ruled by my commandments of darkness. Experience the power of the eternal Undead Legion. Dark Rule!"

One of Balkan's three great magics, a spell that turns every corpse in the vicinity into Undead was cast. Balkan Demoph was a high-rank Necromancer and as a magician, he could use three special magics.

Dark Rule, Death Aura, Absolute Magic defence!

Absolute Magic defence blocks the sources of any attack spells that endanger him. Unless it was the standard of a great magician, they could not even touch the tip of Balkan's bones. Of course Romuna's capabilities were far lower than Balkan but she was already useful just by casting spells on Undead.

By the Dark Rule, the basement and the whole Vargo fortress turned dark red. If Balkan creates Undead based on corpses of paladins and Geomchis, his war potential will become a lot bigger. With Death Aura, he could automatically drain health and mana these Undead gain by fighting.

But Necromancers waited for this moment and moved faster than

Balkan. They came bare handed because it was obvious any Undead they brought here will be under Balkan's command, but they did not come here to play around.

"Arise. Souls who have yet to close their eyes, who have yet to slumber. The living here and the ones that killed you, take revenge! Dead Rise."

Paladins' corpses turned into low skeletons and arose.

"Kiririk?"

"Humans... They are attacking Balkan-nim."

Skeletons looked around and then immediately started fighting for Balkan.

"What's this, these gnats."

As Geomchi487 pushed them by, their bodies broke futilely!

These low rank Undead created by Necromancers and not by Balkan's Dark Rule were annihilated by the priests' purification magic in no time at all. The Necromancers made a great achievement blocking Undead summoning, Balkan's strongest point.

Mapan took off the white cover off his carriage he forcefully

dragged here.

The 'Advent of the Seven Angels' sculpture. He brought Daycram's magnum opus from the Art Center.

Abusing the authority as the owner of the Art Center and the Sculpture!

He actively used the delivered sculpture that magnified the effects of holy power and increased mana regeneration speed. Of course if they lost, the Seven Angels sculpture made out of mithril will be Balkan's so it was a huge gamble for Weed.

"We need to go this way."

Weed, together with 150 top order Geomchis and 30 priests broke through the basement and headed toward the inner fortress of Vargo Fortress. At first the Undead chased after them, but soon after as if they realized they needed to protect Balkan in the basement they stopped following.

'We need to destroy the Life Vessel that is sealing the Lich's health.'

Balkan is a legendary monster that even using holy power was difficult to kill. His magical strength was severely restricted by the sacred sword in his chest but it's impossible to estimate his level.

To completely destroy Balkan that didn't even die with a sacred sword embedded in him, Weed needed to take out the Life Vessel first.

If Balkan with low health got reverse summoned near the Life Vessel, he will be able to control the Undead Legion again and kill every players that came inside the fortress.

'It might possibly be there.'

There was a place that Weed was suspicious of the Life Vessel being when he was taking a look around the inner fortress as a Doom Knight.

"As there is not much time let's run."

"Alright, let's go faster!"

Weed and Geomchis ran down the hallway fast. They had no time to hesitate as many people keeping Balkan in check would continue to die.

Priests have never suffered physically so much in their lives.

They had been raising their stats for wisdom or faith so they got exhausted easily just by walking for a long time. Just trying to keep pace with Weed and Geomchis was enough to make their legs tremble.

“Hop on me”

Geomchis crouched and stuck out their robust backs.

“But that would be discourtesy….”

“The reason why a man’s back is so wide is because of these situation. We’ve never got to use it so far but it’s ok.”

Priests hopped precariously on the masculine Geomchis. Weed who only brought along female priests for Geomchis!

“Undead!”

Monsters guarding the hallway frequently showed up but Weed and Geomchis broke through with their extraordinary actions.

“Hey, over here. Heriam Fencing!”

When Weed stuck out the Sculptor’s Torch, the Undead were exposed to holy power, wrapping their skulls and suffered. Using these moments, he decisively slashed with his sword and kept going.

As they were heading on the upper part of the inner fortress, Weed who could see far

saw that there were fierce fights going on everywhere outside the fortress. Flames and smoke were rising, skeletons running around the fortress wall, ghosts flew around in the air.

“For the glory of Balkan-nim!”

“Kill the elves. Welcome these elves who came to become one of us.”

“Head toward the basement and help the Balkan-nim.”

In the passages Undead gathered in groups and moved about. Every time they approached, Weed, Geomchis and priests hid in empty rooms or behind the path and waited for them to pass.

“Sahyung, let’s continue.”

The destination Weed chose was on the third floor of the inner fortress. Through the steel gate guarded by 20 Vandal Knights, he speculated there will be Balkan’s Life Vessel behind the gate.

‘It’s probably the right place.’

Liches conceal their Life Vessels very thoroughly. Weed wasn’t able to enter but the possibility was high with severe protections.

“Intruders.”

“Humans rebelling against Balkan-nim.”

As soon as they arrived at the steel gate, the Vandal Knights confronted them in battle. While priests were casting blessing and healing spells and Geomchis were fighting them, Weed confronted one Vandal knight.

“I am the knight Elliot.”

“I am Weed. To meet like this is an honor.”

By instinct, Weed tried to raise his intimacy with him. The habit of flattery on higher-rank Undead still remained in Weed’s body.

“By coming here you must die. Farhead Fencing.”

The Vandal Knight stepped forward. When Weed was an Undead, he wanted to try fighting a Vandal Knight. The equipment they used looked unordinary and with Weed’s current level, killing a Vandal Knight would give him tons of experience.

Weed who learned the blacksmith skill, just by looking briefly he was able to figure out estimates of price or specs of equipment. Vandal Knights covered their bodies with heavy armor so their defence was very high but in return, they had less flexibility.

“Leave the land of Balkan-nim!”

Every time Vandal knights swung their swords, dark energies got released and swept everything within a 5-meter radius. Just a scratch took away a lot of Weed's health.

"Moonlight Sculpting Blade!"

Weed swung his profound, shining sword against Vandal Knights and started his attack. He preferred close-range combat but it was difficult to hit them directly so he used Moonlight Sculpting Blade.

"Wow, amazing!"

"It's really pretty!"

Even in this desperate situation, priests managed to get impressed by Weed.

It was the most beautiful skill that they had ever seen!

Compared to the simple flushing of white, black or reddish lights according to a swordsman's speciality, his was profound and full of splendor. But the damage itself was weak compared to its effects. It had a great benefit of ignoring the enemy's defence but it wasn't like it could push the enemy with a strong force and the range was not so wide. Even so, it cost triple the mana consumption compared to the Sculpting Blade skill.

After he mastered Heriam Fencing, he used it barely and even then, it was for a short while but now he could use it as much as he wanted. He was holding the torch sculpted out of helium that supplied mana. It felt like receiving his first salary from a company and going out to eat with his co-workers!

“Right, let’s beat them evenly.”

Weed started to beat the Vandal Knights into a pulp. The Undead Vandal Knights that were much higher in rank than a Doom Knight!

Both sides neglected their defence and a slugfest erupted where they only focused on beating up each other. Weed took some damage as well but besides the healing he received from the priests, his resilience, endurance and defense from his equipment were quite high.

With priests behind him, he was able to fully focus on hunting quickly without caring about things.

- You obtained Elliot’s boots.

- You obtained Elliot’s cape.

- You picked up 81 gold, 34 silver and 58 copper.

Acquiring unique items!

When he finished off the Vandal Knight, the Geomchis finished their battles as well. Geomchi's who fought in a group with a large number ended up with all kinds of injuries.

"Huk... That was a really hard battle."

"But everyone fought well."

They fought with everything they've got to show off in front of female priests and intentionally received injuries to feel the healing hands just once more.

"Now, if we open the door...."

Geomchis and priests weren't fully recovered but Weed went straight to the steel gate. There were still Undead wandering around Vargo Fortress so he couldn't afford to take a rest. Geomchi15 took out a key from among his drops from the Vandal Knights, he inserted it in the lock and turned.

CLINK!

The lock was released.

'We can now kill Balkan completely. The final moment of Lich Balkan Demoph the legendary monster has come.'

Weed with all his strength opened the steel gate with both hands.

And then he was touched.

“Ohhhh, what a wonderful place!”

He predicted the Life Vessel would be standing by itself in a room but the room was filled with mountains of antique swords, armors and all kinds of treasures.

The place Weed and Geomchis went in was the treasure room of Vargo fortress.

———————————————————————————————

“How much is all this.”

Weed’s smile stretched out till it felt like it could be torn. Golds in pots and chests looked like it was worth more than hundreds of thousands gold. But if only market value were taken into consideration the swords and armors were much more valuable.

“There are some of Balkan’s magic items.”

Due to their specs and rarity, magic items made by Balkan himself would bring in a lot of money.

A scepter that magnifies spells of certain attributes. Boots that allowed you to fly in the sky and walk over water.

“A jackpot!”

Overjoyed Weed’s first negative thought!

‘I should have came here alone….’

Geomchis, priests and Marey who followed along so he could compose a new song, because of them he had to share. As Weed was the one who led the quest, he had the ownership of 30% of all treasures that were found, the rest were divided based on the number of participants.

In a world where it’s heart-breaking to share even a small pea, how can you share mountains of gold, silver, treasures and items!

The second thought that came up in Weed’s head was that the sharing of treasures wasn’t even a problem. They could only take the gold, silver and treasure if they won the battle.

Weed’s face hardened.

‘Balkan’s Life Vessel isn’t here.’

Based on the fact that this place was in the center of the inner fortress with very heavy guards, he was certain this was the right

place.

However…….

Weed sent a whisper to Mapan in haste.

What is the situation with Balkan?

A reply came back without delay.

Balkan’s withstanding by continuing summoning Undead.

His health?

Priests are almost out of mana, he drained health and mana from Geomchis and paladins so he’s still fine.

As long as he couldn’t destroy the Life Vessel, they couldn’t kill Balkan and will fail the battle as well. It became possible that all of the humans that entered Vargo fortress might be buried in here.

‘We must find the Life Vessel. It's definitely inside Vargo Fortress. There can’t be any other places. This place was the most safe and heavily fortified by the Undead.’

In critical situations, Weed’s brain only worked faster! In the room Balkan was, there was no apparent place to hide. Even so, the

Life Vessel would not be hidden in a wine bottle in the basement.

'It has to be a place where Balkan feels much safer and secured than this place where it is guarded by the Vandal Knights.'

Looking back through his memories calmly, he came up with a possible place where the Life Vessel was. There was a place several times safer than the outer or inner fortress. It was the top of the central tower in Vargo Fortress where Three Bone Dragons were flying around!

Everyone was exhausted from infiltrating the inner fortress of Vargo Fortress and breaking through the Undead. But now, they were in a situation where they had to fight against the Bone Dragons.

United army of elves, barbarians and dwarves could not collapse the outer part of Vargo Fortress and continued to fight. If every warriors of each races came, they would have conquered the outer fortress already but their main forces didn't get deployed as they had to protect the fairy queen.

Fortunately for the united army, the Undead force was divided as well. In the inner fortress, there was a limitation to number of soldiers that can fight due to the narrow hallway.

"Kill them all."

“For glory!”

From the ground in the hills nearby, the Undead arose and headed toward the outer fortress like a tide.

“Drive out the Undead, gain courage knowing that you are reclaiming freedom for our land””

Elves, dwarves and barbarians fought fiercely. From the chaos occurring in the outer fortress, Weed felt a serious chilling.

‘Three Bone Dragons…”

Normal Bone Dragons were already scary enough, but these Bone Dragon were masterpieces made by Balkan himself.

‘I guess we have no choice.’

Indomitable will that burned when he was driven into poverty and stepped on!

“Sahyung, we need to fight the Bone Dragons at the central tower to kill Balkan. What do you think we should do?”

He asked the Geomchis for their opinions just in case they had a good idea.

“We beat them down.”

“And leave perfectly good swords lying around?”

Instant agreement!

Truthfully, Weed also felt something was missing when he considered not going after the Bone Dragons.

“This way.”

There were more Undead reinforcements in the hallway as they moved toward the central tower. If they keep taking care of the approaching Undead on their way to the central tower, it will take a lot of time and they may be annihilated.

“We have to take a shortcut. I’ll go first. Please keep some distance and follow me.”

Weed broke a window and went out to the outer wall. Outside where the cool wind blew, gargoyles were flying around.

“A human.”

“Kill it!”

Skeleton archers standing guard on the fortress wall or lookout towers started shooting arrows towards Weed. Weed grabbed protruding parts and climbed along the wall.

“Quadruped run!”

SHASHASHAK.

He moved like a spider between the raining arrows, jumped on a destroyed part of the fortress wall or the portruding stones and hung on to it.

“Shoot the human first.”

“He seems like the worst guy. We must kill him first for Balkan-nim.”

Skeleton archers focused their attack on Weed.

KEEEEAK!

Even gargoyles approached and pecked Weed with their beaks.

“Moonlight Sculpting Blade!”

In a disadvantageous situation, hanging on the castle wall, Weed used his handicapped left hand to swing the sword. He drew the

focus of the enemy so Geomchis, Marey and the priests could reach the top safely.

“Kill the man hanging on wall completely.”

“Let’s show the greatness of Undead.”

On the ground, skeleton mages gathered magic on their hands and shot also. Messages indicating he’s been hit kept popping up.

- Remaining health 36,789.

‘I am gonna die at this rate.’

Weed reached the roof of Vargo Fortress through climbing the wall. The roof of the inner fortress is was skewed and tilted. He was able to see many other large towers standing taller than the roof.

Following after Weed, gargoyles and bats attacked him with spells and arrows continuing after him. Only about 15% of his health was left. He had to buy enough time for Geomchis and priests to reach the top of the central tower from the other direction.

“With the situation as it is, I guess I have no choice..”

Weed took out a sculpture. A fine sculpture made of bronze

called, ‘Japtem Embracing Merchant’.

“I didn’t want to use this again… but I’m not in the position to be picky when I have to fight the Bone Dragons. Sculptural Destruction! Let everything turn into agility.”

He crushed the sculpture with his own hand.

At that moment.

Weed’s body shone with light.

- You used the Sculpture Destruction.

Sorrow! Agony at the destruction of a fine sculpture.

5 art stat disappeared permanently. Fame decreased by 100.

Art stat transformed to agility with 1:4 ratio for 24 hours.

Because your art stat is too high and agility stat is low, the conversion will not happen instantly.

850 agility is converted into advance level 8 skill, ‘Wind Sprinting’. By consuming your mana, you can ride on the wind and run.

650 agility is converted to advanced level 8 skill, ‘Avoiding Art’. You can dodge enemies’ attacks completely. It draws more capabilities out of leather armor.

410 agility is converted to advanced level 4 skill, ‘Lucky Intervention’. Coincidental lucks occur frequently and you can use three-times stronger attribute attacks.

520 agility is converted to advance level 6 skill, ‘Accurate Attack’. Chance of critical hit has risen and attack increased.

- Proficiency in sculpting increased.

Weed’s body literally felt light as a feather.

“It good enough to run a 100-meter race.”

In Royal Road, changes in stats also result in physical changes. At beginner level, it takes nearly 30 seconds to sprint 100-meter. If you are wearing armor, it may take more than a minute.

But by raising strength and agility, speed would gradually increase and later it was possible to get 10 seconds like the actual athletes, and as the level increase the running speed would become even faster than that.

His endurance changed as well. He was able to complete a marathon as long as his vitality keeps up with him.

- An arrow passed by causing a scratch.

Health decreased by 130.

The flying arrow from skeleton didn’t hit Weed precisely and fell. It was the effect of agility where he naturally evaded without moving much.

“Then should I counterattack now?”

Weed took out a bow of high-elf Yurika. The price for arrows was regretful but now was the time to use it! If wood and steel was available, using his blacksmithing skill he could produce arrows so he premade 300 of them.

Weed ran on top of the tower and roof. He was too fast for bats and gargoyles to chase after him. He placed arrows in the string and shoot them towards skeletons. They seemed to be flying in completely wrong direction but they slowly changed their direction and precisely hit the enemies!

- Spirits of water inflicted additional damages.

A whirlpool of water appeared and swept the skeletons.

“Hit him!”

“Kill that human first.”

Weed slashed approaching gargoyles and shot arrows toward the skeleton archers while he was running around the roof. Arrows from skeleton archers all focused on him and gargoyles sitting on the fortress walls and towers flew in unison for a battle.

A thrilling pleasure coming from reckless speed!

Weed ran around the incomparably dangerous Vargo Fortress freely. As Weed pulled out his hand, an arrow shot from a skeleton archer was unbelievably caught.

- You obtained a steel arrow.

He shot the arrow immediately and returned it.

———————————————————————————————

Pale looked at Balkan with his eyes filled with fear.

“This monster, really its too much!”

Even though there were Necromancers, they weren’t able to summon every corpse as Undead before Balkan. The Undead summoned by Balkan were at least at the level of a Doom Knight.

Elite Doom Knight.

Captain Doom Knight.

Slaughterer Doom Knight

Plague bringing Doom Knight

They were all at the level of named monsters.

Even five Vandal Knights were summoned. Rather than attacking Balkan, paladins and Geomchis had to keep fighting Balkan's royalguards while suffering from all kinds of curses.

Balkan was even withstanding Turn Undead spells from the priests. Due to Death Aura, he drained health and mana through Undead to survive. The paladins could not help but feel daunted.

"I think the number of Undead are continuously increasing."

"Is Balkan going to die soon?"

"Can we even kill him? I think we are the one who will be annihilated!"

Romuna was deeply touched.

“If it’s not too late, should I change my profession to a Necromancer? Even if it’s difficult, if I become a Lich…”

The strength of a Lich that can control a kingdom even when being restricted by a sacred sword was revealed beyond doubt.

At the same time the broadcasting stations were engulfed in pleasant worries. The battle in the basement where Balkan was, Undead versus paladins, contesting priest, it was enough to call it a battle of good and evil.

Geomchis were making great plays but Balkan’s Necromancer spells were so terrifyingly powerful that when there were casualties, his Undead force slowly increased. Another problem was that they had to block the Undead Legion coming from upstairs so their forces were divided.

On the other hand, Weed was running around rooftops of Vargo Fortress and fighting.Shooting arrows while sliding down the roof, leaping without any fear and slashing gargoyles with colorful Moonlight Sculpting Blade. A heart pumping battle scene with Vargo Fortress as a background.

It would be enough to reach the top place in the Hall of Fame. With them showing the best moments the viewers could not keep their eyes off.

“Which side do we have to broadcast?!”

Overall they felt the battle against Balkan was clearly important so they broadcasted that side but due to opinions of viewers curious about Weed, they changed the scene again.

What is happening with battle against Balkan?

Show us Weed moving around the roof.

How can he fight in a monster filled place as if he’s in an open area? Is it because he is Weed? I’m getting bored of dungeons, if I become a high level player, will I be able to fight like Weed? But still, I think fighting against the swarming monsters in a place like Vargo fortress is suicide.

They can only win the battle if they kill Balkan... Show us Balkan.

What are you doing, I was watching it! Turn back to Weed!

With fiery requests from viewers, broadcasting stations were bound to be sweared at with whatever they did.

Chapter 7: Calling The Storm

Weed gave himself to the blowing wind, shooting arrows as he slid 5, 10 meters.

“This must be why archer class are so popular.”

Weed mumbled while shooting arrows.

100% on target!

Not only were the shots unbelievably precise, being a high elf bow it inflicted additional spiritual damage.

SCHWAAFF!

Consecutively fired arrows pierced the skeletons manning the castle wall one by one. Fire spirit caused fiery explosions and water spirits created hails. Spirit of earth covered its surrounding in muds and wind spirit push the skeletons to fall toward the ground.

A scorched earth tactic!

He thought he understand the fun the players had by choosing as an archer or ranger. But he did not know that the ranger or archer players who were watching through an actual television had their mouths gaping at the sheer absurdity.

“But still, an archery class doesn’t suit me.”

Hitting a monster at a far range with an arrow had a great pleasant feeling. Some Undead vanished without even knowing why they were dead. But he realized as he was shooting the Undead far away, it only consumed arrows and he couldn’t even pick up any drops.

He had great regrets at the items he could not get even by stretching out his hands. Unless he was hunting independently in a secure place, he considered an archer to be the wrong class in a battlefield like this.

“Really, you need to use a sword.”

Killing enemies directly insured certainty in picking up items. Weed was learning the importance of collecting his money.

Meanwhile, Geomchis, Marey and the priest also went up to the roof. Skeletons standing on top the Vargo Fortress towers and roofs shot arrows towards them. The felt themselves trapped like on an isolated islands, with monsters surrounding them on the ground and skies!

“Alright, let’s get started.”

Geomchi3 swung his sword and slashed a nearby gargoyle. The counter attack finally began on the gargoyles that covered the area

like a dark cloud.

"Kill them all."

"Clear these guys first and then let's get the Bone Dragons!"

Geomchis caused countless number of reckless accidents, but the goal they were pursuing was to get stronger and nothing else. The method of their venerated strength was to break through their own limitations.

"Just start beating and they will die!"

"Destroy them all!"

Geomchis ran around slashing the gargoyles with their swords. With the enormous ruckus caused on the rooftops of Vargo Fortress, the Bone Dragons descended toward the ground from their flight.

"Humans are here."

A single Bone Dragon, with its height that dwarfed the tower, approached them flapping its flesh-less wings. From the head of the Bone Dragon, a black miasma streamed out.

- You were falling into a state of fear, but you overcome it.

Agility reduced by 4%.

Wisdom decreased by 25%.

Bone Dragon could also infect them with its fear but its power was less than half compared to Balkan's so they could withstand it.

The Bone Dragon opened its mouth wide and took in a deep breath. A pose for its infallible breath attack!The distance was really close and there wasn't any good place for humans to hide.

Weed cried out a Lion's Roar.

"Fight me first! My purpose for coming here is to kill Balkan. If you can't kill me on than its impossible to take on anyone else."

A macho display that even surprised the Geomchis!

If by any chance Weed dies, it will cause a huge problem. He could revive as an Undead by the 'Power to Reject Death', unable to disobey Balkan's command. He might end up on Bone Dragons' side and be coerced into fighting Geomchis but he still yelled in a loud voice.

"Without a doubt, I knew you were the most evil human here."

Weed, some distance away from the Geomchis, ran on top the roof with all his might. The scenes passes by frighteningly fast

with every step he took!

“Even if you flee, its useless.”

Choosing Weed as its precise target, the Bone Dragon opened its jaws wide. And then blew out its specialty, Acid Breath.

SCHWAAH!

Acid Breath that pushed onward from the sky. Weed ran on the roof with amazing speed but it seemed impossible to run away from the breath.

“Sprinting Wind.”

- You used a skill ‘Sprinting Wind.’

Health and mana consumption rate tripled.

Weed’s body accelerated as if his body was being flinged out. It was unbelievable speed fast enough to pass a horse with full speed in a split second. Soon, he disappeared as if he casted a teleportation spell.

He dropped into a hole on the roof he’s been keeping his eyes on ever since the Bone Dragon appeared. The Acid Breath swept the spot Weed was on and melted the outer wall of Vargo Fortress as well. As parts of the building got destroyed and melted, its shape

became disfigured enough to see old carpets, furniture and painting inside the building.

“Teehee. There is a cool breeze coming inside,” a young skeleton stuck its head with joy.

When Weed came back up to the roof the Bone Dragon was flying low, stomping the place where the Geomchis were gathered.

“I ask you of your sins of invading Balkan-nim’s land.”

The fortress shook as if was under an earthquake, destroying the fortress walls. Because Geomchis were bunched up, some couldn’t avoid it and got stomped by the Bone Dragon.

When the Bone Dragon were in the air, it was extremely difficult to catch it. If it shot it’s breath and used magic high in the air, the Goemchis had no chance at all. If the Geomchis tamed gryphons or wyverns, they could have been able to fight in the air but that wasn’t in the option either.

Due to the structure of towers and buildings in Vargo Fortress there were no place to cover but because of its wide area, Bone Dragon’s area of effect spells were less effective. But the Bone Dragon sat on the rooftop purposefully to prevent Geomchis from advancing forward.

The other two dragons didn’t leave the central tower.

That means only one thing!

“It’s certain now. Balkan’s Life Vessel is in the central tower.”

Every time the Bone Dragon moved, the fortress cracked and its surrounding were being destroyed. The ferocious Bone Dragon without compare, did not care about such happenings.

“Disperse.”

“Beat it to death!”

Geomchis hiding behind cover suddenly jumped out, surrounded the Bone Dragon and attacked.

“Attack its wings first.”

“Break its ankle!”

Geomchis clung to the Bone Dragon, stabbed, slashed and hit it.

“Its bone is really tough. The attacks are not hitting properly!”

“It’s health is barely getting reduced.”

Getting hit by its front legs, health would go down perilously and if stomped on the chances of dying was high. There were chances

of surviving through sheer luck, but it was just the result of the building collapsing first and blocking the attack.

Weed used ‘Sprinting Wind’ and swiftly ran behind Bone Dragon’s back. He stepped up its tail bones as if it was a stairway and stood on its neck.

“Heriam Fencing!”

He used a an attack skill, targeting a single point that was small as a sesame seed. Geomchis, fighting against the Bone Dragon were also using single point attacks. But beacuse the Bone Dragon was moving violently, their attacks weren’t effective.

“Let’s hit it together.”

“Attacking from here should be comfortable.”

Geomchis hopped on the dragon’s body just like Weed.

“Humans, kneel before the magnificence of Balkan-nim!”

KUUNG!

As the dragon shook its body fiercely to get the humans off, Vargo fortress was severely destroyed. Some caused chain reactions and destroyed second and third floors as well.

The Bone Dragon's body, fore leg, snouts and tail attacks were a problem but the collapsing buildings were causing the Geomchis greater damager.

The dragon howled wildly after devouring one Geomchi.

"ROOOOOAAAR!"

Dragon Fear!

The Geomchis followed Weed's example and scurried about the Bone Dragon's back, wings and neck like ants, bringing down their swords without rest. Hitting the incomparable Bone Dragon's body, the swords durability reduced rapidly.

- The sword struck the bones of the Bone Dragon, durability of your sword decreased.

Attack reduced by 3.

Gathering all their strength to strike the Bone Dragon harder, the durability of their sword decreased. It would be much better to use a heavy weapons like an axe or a mace to reduce the Bone Dragon's health.

When durability of the weapon drops following suit the maximum attack drops as well but they did not have time to be hesitant about it. In no time Health of the Bone Dragon was less than 50%. The Geomchis on the rooftops evaded when they were

about to be stomped on or eaten, and attacked from the sides.

“Sahyung, do not let your guard down. Bone Dragon has absurd health regeneration rate!”

“We will keep hitting it until it’s completely shattered.”

Weed with one target in mind kept hitting the spot.

“Moonlight Sculpting Blade. Heriam Fencing!”

- Mastery of sword skills increased.

Bone Dragon was an ideal target for raising sword skills.

Skeleton archers and mages crawled up to the roof of the fortress. Fire arrows and ice magic fell on the Geomchis and Bone Dragon without distinction.

- An arrow was dodged.

- Acid arrow passed by causing a scratch.

Due to the effect of Weed’s high agility, the attacks could not hit him properly. Geomchis withstood the attack with resistance and perseverance. They were able to endure a little bit more due to their increased perseverance from swimming across ocean and

continuous swings of their swords.

“With this much, it does not disrupt us from swinging our sword. Me dying first, or you dying first, let see who does!”

Geomchis fought with no fear of death!

They were attacked, shaken off from the Bone Dragon and trampled upon. Some could escape the situation if they were lucky enough to be healed by the priests, but those who died were revived as Undead and attack their comrades.

As Weed was situation on the neck he could see the variety of situations.

Every time the Bone Dragon pulled up its head and roared, it felt like he was on the top of a high mountain and widen his field of view. Riding on the Bone Dragon on the rooftop of Vargo Fortress allowed him an unfettered view of the whole surrounding. He could even see the battle outside the fortress if he wanted to.

‘Sahyungs took too many casualties.’

Based on active Geomchis, it looked like at least 30 of them died. With so many of them injured and the fortress collapsing, many more could die instantly.

The dead Geomchis were revived as Undead by Dark Rule. With Undead like Doom Knights and Vandal Knights coming up to the

rooftops and the tower, situation was spreading worse unchecked. Their primary objective was to protect Balkan but as they came closer to the central tower where the Life Vessel is, more Undead were deployed.

‘The problem is time.’

Not much of the health remained on the Bone DragonWeed was hitting. After a short while he could continue the hunting. But it had to be done faster with no casualties on the Geomchis.

“It’s regretful but I have no choice. Sahyung, please take my place.”

Weed got off from the Bone Dragon’s neck which was the most ideal place to attack it. And in his place Geomchi4 came.

Weed started running towards the central tower and cried out a Lion’s Roar.

“I am going to the central tower to destroy Balkan’s Life Vessel!”

It was a loud, resonating voice that even Undead at the outer castle could hear.

“GRRRRRR.”

The Bone Dragon attacking Geomchis reacted immediately and

turned around to kill Weed. The Bone Dragon ran fiercely after Weed, destroying the building in its way. The other skeleton archers, mages and witches changed their target to Weed.

A countless number of arrows and magic attack!

Weed dodged arrows and spells one by one. When he had no time to dodge, he let it just scratch him. Weed's health recovered back to 87% thanks to the helps from the priests.

- An arrow scratched passed your right shoulder.

- A fire spell was dodged.

- A Glacier Spike was dodged perfectly.

Arrows and spells could not attack with their full power because of Weed's high agility and dodging skills. Even if his health reaches 0 by any chance, by receiving significant help from Seo Yoon, he could withstand for a little longer.

"Dodge. I can dodge it."

Weed looked straight forward and threw his body in a thread like space. While throwing his body he evaded the snout and the foreleg of the Bone Dragon, and barely dodged the unmeasurable number of magic attacks and arrows.

His incredulous movement looked as if was practise over a hundred time to pull it off.

His graceful movements were framed by an explosions in the background caused by the collision of fire and ice magic, Weed was moving as if he was dancing!

“He really dodges well.”

“When did our disciple’s capabilities reach that high….”

Even Geomchis were momentarily in awe.

Recognizing one’s surroundings with his sense and dodging consecutive arrows and spells flying toward him, that kind of evasion skill was one step beyond the limits of what humans were capable of.

Of course most of it was Weed’s own abiliites but advanced level 8 ‘Avoiding Art’ skill helped. With certain low level attacks, moving in a flow he could avoid many of them naturally. Weed’s own actions and the skill mixed together.

In between so many attacks his movement was so elegant, no one could forget it in their life time. From the observer’s point of view they could just gape in amazement, just one twist would end in life or death.

“Well, let’s try everything while I can.”

Weed activated a skill with his remaining mana.

“Moonlight Sculpting!”

His whole body was covered with a dim light. The lights reacted on threatening magic, where it stretched out and intercepted the spell. These kind of skill consumed mana exponentially but to a person who did not know if he would die today did not need to worry about the cost of the card!

Weed shouted while running backwards in the direction of the central tower.

“Bring it on! I’m not going to lose to some skinny, dried bony corpse of a lizard!”

A taunt!

From the nose of Bone Dragon, a smoke came out.

“I’ll kill you with complete certainty.”

It wasn’t a breath attack. The Bone Dragon smashed with his frontal legs and tried to stomp with hind legs. Weed swiftly rolled his body and dodged the feet.

Because the size of Bone Dragon was too large, Weed had to focus

solely on dodging. At the same time, he had to dodge attacks from Undead without missing a beat.

CRRAAK.

The snout of the Bone Dragon got stuck in the place Weed threw himself into to dodge. One part of the stone wall collapsed in its mouth. In the vicinity where Weed was, arrows hit in clusters and magic passed by destroying the place.

“ROOOAAAR!”

The Bone Dragon hit by the stone wall, arrows and spells cried out in pain. But instead of trying to protect its own health, it attacked even more wildly to kill Weed.

But Weed only focused on dodging its attacks. It looked like he could die any moment if he tried to sloppily counter attack, so he was committed to dodge the attack and survive.

“Power of the holy spirit, grant salvation unto the one in suffering. Healing Hand!”

The priests supplemented Weed’s health with healing spells. This was why combat related class always appreciate and were flustered by the priests in these situations.

While Weed was getting back dodging and defending, he got ready to move his body in a split second. This is a real battle. It was

not a fight that was fought by being higher level and preparing better equipment than the monsters. It was a fight where he used all his abilities and where split second decision could result in life or death.

The Bone Dragon took a deep breath.

Breath!

It was preparing for a final strike that Weed, who could dodge disgustingly well, could not manage. But before that, the bones in its bodies were separating and collapsing. The Bone Dragon's health has finally reached its end.

It was a fight to shoot a breath attack before it died!

"If its like that then I won't dodge."

Weed stepped on the foreleg of the Bone Dragon and jumped up high enough to reach its face.

"Heriam Fencing!"

Weed stepped on the Bone Dragon's nose, aimed its forehead and slashed his sword. Whether or not the durability of the sword dropped, he struck consecutively using his high agility.

A crack appeared on the Bone Dragon's head. Every time Weed's

attacks struck, the gap got bigger. The breath gathering inside its mouth was getting bigger as well.

"Enchant Holy Weapon!"

One of the priests casted a spell that embeds holy power into a weapon. Weed continued to strike the Bone Dragon with the sword blessed by holy power. The crack was spreading over its whole head!

CRAAAACK!

The bones where Geomchis beated were starting to break down as well. When Weed's sword fell again, the power that sustain the Bone Dragon's body suddenly disappeared. And starting from the head, the bones in its bodies fragmented and fell toward the ground.

At the same time, a message window popped up on Weed.

- Your level increased.

- Your level increased.

- Your level increased.

- The Bone Dragon Dyark in Vargo Fortress has return to its eternal rest.

- Through this great achievement, your fame rose by 915.

- Charisma increased by 1.

- Fighting Spirit increased by 4.

- By playing an important role in hunting down the Bone Dragon affiliated with the Undead Legions, every stats increased by 2

The death of the Bone Dragon!

- You have reached level 400.

Weed finally became level 400

- You obtained a Glyph of Destroyer.

- You obtained a secret of Necromancer, method of Bone Dragon creation.

- You obtained bulks of rotten dragon bones.

- You obtained an old book, an ancient history book of Versailles continent #19.

- You obtained an ancient cloak.

It was very unfortunate that, unlike the drops from regular Undead, the drops Bone Dragon were shared equally based on the participation in the battle. As the body of the Bone Dragon got destroyed, Weed and Geomchis leap off from the roof.

“Kill the humans!”

“We must protect the Balkan-nim from the humans.”

Undead were in full swing to climb up to the roof. In terms of terrain, Weed and Geomchis had a small advantage but Undead were climbing up all sides.

“Now everyone advance to the central tower. Priests, please do your best to follow, if you think you are going to die please, as a last act use all your holy power on the Bone Dragon.

It was unreasonable requests for the priests but Weed had no choice.

“We understand. Let’s go!”

Seeing the bloody battle that Weed and Geomchis fought, the priests agreed and followed.

“Let’s go.”

Running on the rooftops, Weed and Geomchis took care of any Undead blocking their path. From behind, priests' holy power healed their health and vitality continuously.

"Our destination is right ahead of us."

Running on the rooftops, in no time there was only 60 meters to the tower that stood loftly in the center.

The two Bone Dragons were staring at the invaders.

And then Breath as if they were waiting for the moment!

Two streams of Breaths fired with some intervals between them pierced through them powerfully. It melted parts of the castle wall and buildings and even eliminated Undead.

Weed and Geomchis dispersed everywhere and hid inside the fortress. Without even knowing how many died, they gathered again and ran toward the central tower. Several spells cast from the Bone Dragons flew and exploded.

"Use the buildings as our cover and keep moving."

Weed and Geomchis could only move forward.

Spreading its wings, the Bone Dragon flew up into the sky. It was

obvious to see that one was using magic and the other was using the ground to fight.

“Humans. Kill the humans.”

“They are heading to a dangerous place where they are not allowed.”

“Fight to protect the Balkan-nim!”

Taking the Undead on the rooftop into consideration, if they delayed to block the Bone Dragon they would be surrounded in a moment and annihilated

Weed took out another sculpture.

“In the end, I have to use this as well. I really did not want to use it…”

It was a sculpture made from Weed’s several different traumas.

Cold Storm: Durability 20/20

An extreme natural phenomenon that struck northern Versailles continent.

It expresses the glacial storm that brought ice and snow.

A Fine sculpture with vivid expressions based on the event that the sculptor experienced.

It expresses a beautiful yet adverse attributes of nature.

With increased population in the north, the chance of another glacial storm is very low.

The sculpture’s historic value will rise as time goes.

Artistic value: 854.

Option: Improves the effects of glacier spells by 3%.

Life +200.

Charm +13.

“Nature Sculpting - Great Disaster!”

Nature Sculpting - Great Disaster has been used.

Art stat disappeared by 20 permanently.

20,000 health and mana has been consumed.

Every stat reduced by 15% for four days.

Affinity to Nature decreased.

Nature Sculpting - Great Disaster can only be used once per day.

When a dangerous disaster are called upon, depending on the damage fame or notoriety can increase.

You can die in the middle of the disaster so be careful.

Chapter 8: Master Of Vargo Fortress

A glacial storm retaining strong reminiscence! Atmospheric temperature dropped sharply. The Undead did not realize this as they could not feel the cold, but Weed and Geomchis could feel the freezing wind seeping into their skin.

One or two snowflakes started drifting but soon thick shards of ice struck the ground heavily. Tens of thousands shards of ices that covered the whole of Vargo Fortress! Some ice shards big as icebergs could be seen. Whirlwinds and fierce winds blew, sweeping the fortress and heralding the start of the natural disaster.

Among the Undead, the Skeletons with the weak resistances were the first to frost and began to stiffen. The Bone Dragon winging in the air was completely swept away by the glacial storm. Struck by the ice pieces in the glacial storm, it could not control its huge body and spun around madly.

“Kyaaaooo!”

Thick layers of ice covered the Bone Dragon, seemingly trying to soar higher it suddenly crash into the fortress. It caused an incredible impact that felt like an earthquake! Some structures of the fortress that has been stressed, weakened and barely withstood till now collapsed.

“Re, really freaking cold.”

Weed, seeing how fast Vargo Fortress was turned into a land of ice, he had a new mind about the destructive power of the natural disaster.

“It must feel extremely futile to freeze to death in a middle of a battle.”

Right after he activated the skill, Weed wore a coat over his armor. Geomchis and priests also wore thick cloth and evaded the ice shards by entering a building. They reacted quickly as Weed told them he might call a glacial storm.

Escaping the storm and looking out into the scene, the Undead, with feeble clothes and equipment that were lost while embroiled in the glacial storm, looked naked.

“Everyone keep hiding. You must not go outside right now.”

“If anyone’s health dropped suddenly and you are about to die, let me know. I have some extra blankets.”

Even in the middle of this ruckus, the Geomchis took care of priests. The duration of Art of Nature - Great Disaster was pretty long. With the glacial storm still billowing, Weed got out of his hiding place on the roof.

“Th... this situation. Re, really...” Tak! “It can’t end like this. Huk, or I will suffer.. for the rest... of my life. ”

The word did not even come out properly due to the cold.

Weed, avoiding the furious storm of ice shards, ran toward the central tower.

An ice shard slanted pass your forehead.

A spiked shaped ice tried to pierce your shoulder, but Avoiding Art has been applied.

An ice shard has embedded on your back.

A lump of ice grazed your knee. Movement speed decreased.

Even though with his high agility and Avoiding Art, it was impossible to completely avoid the rain of ice shards. For Weed running hard as possible while avoid getting flung by the wind was priority.

Then a Whisper from Geomchi3 was transmitted.

You have any plan to eliminate the Bone Dragon?

Lowering his head and evading the storm, Weed answered. Just as he feared his body was hit by the cold winds and ice fragments, stiffening his body.

There is one way. But at this rate, I think I will fail.

Even if the glacial storm ended, it will be difficult to fight as his body became frozen. If this happened, he would not be able to go further and will have to hide again.

You are trying get to the tower right?

Yes. That was the original plan but it’s difficult now.

Let’s go.

Geomchis came out from their hiding place. Raising their wooden shield, they ran toward the central tower.

Weed could not move fast as he surveyed the situation and advanced as he felt that if he ran with all his might, he would be hit by the ice shards. But the Geomchis held their shield and ran with maximum speed. Even if they were wounded by fragments of ice and lumps they kept on running! They caught up to Weed and covered him with their shields.

“Lets, go, fa, faster!”

Geomchis held their shields and enclosed the surrounding from the glacial storm, through the coverage Weed received less damage. With this situation they ran toward the central tower.

The Geomchis's health was dropping; some had their bodies frozen and were left behind where they died but they held their cheap shield to the end.

It was like the allegory of four brothers piercing through a never to be seen glacial storm! Thanks to them, Weed was able to ride through the fortress wall and jump in successfully into the central tower.

Waiting for them in the central tower was the last Bone Dragon. The dragon was struggling against the glacial storm, hanging on the opposite side that it did not see Weed entering the tower.

Suddenly at that moment a message window popped up!

You became frozen.

Even with the Geomchis' protection, Weed's armor and body was layered thick with ice and the injuries he acquired was also severe. Though his health was supplemented by the priests' holy magic, if the injuries were not completely healed it would still remain and affect him for a long time. It was due to Weed's perseverance and resilience that he could survive for so long

Outside the fierce winds were winding down and the glacial storm's influence was waning and disappearing. Soon the Undead would move again and the Bone Dragon buried in ice would rise up. Some of the Geomchis that perished would also become Undead and attack their comrades.

Marey, who came along priests while playing his instruments, saw all this and began thinking.

“This time, the legend will end in failure.”

The sight of Weed and Geomchis advancing toward the central tower choked up his feelings. And they, battling after entering the Vargo Fortress was an amazing scene. Unlessit was Weed and his comrades, no one else could have fought the Undead Legion and Balkan like this.

But Royal Road was a world where only the result mattered.

“This is really unfortunate. If they killed Balkan, it would have been something spectacular.”

———————————————————————————————

“Ah.....”

The team in KMC media broadcasting who were broadcasting live were bemoaning the state.

“Will it end like this here?”

At different broadcasters, after the glacial storm appeared the anchors were tight lipped. No one could imagine they would fight so lamentably.

A lot of time has passed since humans have entered Vargo Fortress, but they were not aware of how much time has flown by. But Weed's situation wasn't as deplorable as they thought.

-In the left hand holding the 'Torchlight left behind by Sculptors' is transferring a warm aura.

Frozen status has been alleviated.

Mana is being recovered.

As the glacial storm was winding down, Weed received strength from the sculpture. And with the Geomchis effort in protecting him, he recovered enought that he could move after a short while.

"ROOOAAAR!"

The roar of a Bone Dragon!

Dragon Fear could be heard from outside the central tower. The Geomchis must be throwing their lives in their fight against the Bone Dragon.

From Pale, he received the battle situation with Balkan.

It getting harder as we speak. I don't believe Balkan's mana is dropping at all. Even if we lower his health, a lot of it is recovered

very soon... But we can still hold on.

The side fighting Balkan was not in a good situation as well.

Even after piercing through the glacial storm, he did not have time to recover his health but he still dragged his non-moving leg up the stairs of the central tower.

“How could humans come here...”

“I’ll take your life.”

Even here the Undead guards were defending the place. Usually Vandal Knights would be guarding the gateway but as they were all deployed into battle, the Doom Knights were standing guard!

Weed, swinging his sword, nimbly passed them by.

You have inflicted an accurate strike.

You have inflicted a critical strike.

You have successfully pulled off a chain attack.

With incredible swinging speed of his sword that the Doom Knight could not defend against, he passed by them and entered the top.

The top floor of the central tower was a very wide area. Through the window, broken by the glacial storm, he could see the Bone Dragon attacking the Geomchis. Every time the Bone Dragon moved, the tower vibrated.

And in the corner of his eye, Weed could see a amethyst pot! It was the Life Vessel holding Lich Balkan's health.

"I have finally manage to come here."

It took only a moment, Weed entering the central tower and the Doom Knights crying out as they collapsed. And the Bone Dragon, fighting outside, pushed his front feet and flew toward the central tower in a hurry.

"You thought I was going to die in a place like this?"

Weed swung his sword at the pot.

It was the moment that would be recorded in the history of Versailles continent, a moment that uncountable number of viewers were watching with astonishment.

Even his insignificant quotes would become engraved into legend.

"I can never die so long as I have to protect my rice bowl!"

His sword, heavy with his responsibility as leader, destroyed the pot. Then a dark aura came out wavering and disappeared into the surroundings.

Suddenly, Undead' were sapped of their energy and their strength was weakened.

"I, I can't disappear like this...."

"Arrrrrrrg!"

Ghosts disappeared under the sunlight, Undead like skeletons and ghouls collapsed to the ground and disappeared in a flash of grey light. About half the Undead in Vargo Fortress returned to the ground and of the Undead Legion that was occupying the region, over 80% of them disappeared.

The aftermath of Balkan's Life Vessel destruction was spreading all over.

"The corpses are not turning into Undead!"

"I think the Undead became weaker. They die immediately under holy magic."

Of Balkan's Three Great Magic, the influence of Dark Rule and Death Aura disappeared. The extremely strong Undead turned back into average status. That in itself was formidable, but their capacity to resist holy power has plummeted.

"Where... Where should we go?"

"I feel life energy over there."

"Let, let's try going...."

Majority of the Undead that left to conquer Morata collapsed, the remaining few all but scattered. But the greatest changes was seen on Balkan and the Bone Dragons. Curse spells casted by Balkan dissolved automatically. And on top of that, when Romuna looked Balkan's health suddenly decreased greatly.

"Balkan became weak!"

"Let's focus our holy power and attack."

Player's hope were once again burning high.

Balkan's overflowing mana was dropping low. As a Lich he could drain health and mana but because his near limitless mana pool were becoming exhausted, Balkan was suffering.

Even the weakening of the Bone Dragon could be seen with the

eyes. It's wings and body movement were becoming slow and was having difficulty controlling itself.

"Let's bury them!"

"I will slice every one of your bones."

Geomchis jumped on the Bone Dragon. And threw spears towards the other Bone Dragon stuck in the central tower. Their ability to use any kinds of weapons due to their Weaponry skills was a huge advantage in this situation.

"Kyaaa..."

The Bone Dragon roared but it's Fear effect was too feeble. Because these dragons were created by Balkan long time ago, they consumed a lot of strength and mana to maintain their shape.

"Kill it!"

"Destroy it!"

The Geomchis barely had any health left but they jumped in for the last attack.

Priests' holy spells exploded off the Bone Dragon's body as well. Now that they knew Balkan's Life Vessel was destroyed, they used whatever mana they gathered and cast holy magic unsparingly.

There were still Undead left on the roof but their numbers decreased greatly and were weakened.

Weed exited the central tower and returned to the path he took. He was targeting for the Bone Dragon that was swept by the glacial storm and became buried in ice.

“This guy is stubborn.”

“Just how large is his health.”

Already 20 Geomchis were there, hitting it with their swords. The Bone Dragon tried to break through the layers of ice but without the Death Aura and mana supply from Balkan, but it was impossible.

“Just die like that!”

Weed along side the Geomchis attacked the Bone Dragon. Every time it squirmed, the building and towers of Vargo Fortress got destroyed and the buildings collapsed with a thundering sound.

Some Undead could be spotted such as the Vandal Knights that lost considerable amount of power, but in Weed’s sight there was only the Bone Dragon.

“Let’s make some sizable profit.”

And then finally, the Bone Dragon turned into a grey light and disappeared.

The Bone Dragon Voturia in Vargo Fortress has returned to its eternal rest.

By playing a small role in hunting down the Bone Dragon affiliated with the Undead Legion, every stats increased by 1.

Weed didn't get much experience and fame because most of the damages were done by Geomchis. Even so, he appreciated the stat increase. By winning in a difficult, large scale raid, the participants could receive great rewards.

"We got the Bone Dragon here!"

"We won. We took out all Bone Dragons."

A shout came from the direction of the central tower.

More Geomchis went over there but they hunted a bit slower because the Bone Dragon moved to the base of the central tower.

"The Undead in Vargo Fortress are good as finished now."

Many Undead were lying on the ground, unable to stand up and Bone Dragons have all been hunted. And even Weed did not know

how many Vandal Knights were left...

“However, if the battle continued with the United Army under the elves the Undead would not be able to withstand anyway.”

It was safe to say that the Undead Legion gathered in Vargo Fortress has been taken care of now.

Weed ignored the limping Undead that were sapped of their strength and ran straight toward the basement. Thanks to his agility Weed was running at an incredible speed. Not knowing what he could acquire from Balkan, he ran as fast as he could.

Having lost their strength, tons of Undead clogged the basement entrance!

Few Undead spotted Weed. He just took their attacks with his body and continued to hurry as fast as he could toward the basement.

“Welcome!”

An exhausted Hwaryeong greeted Weed.

“Balkan?”

“Not yet, but he’s nearly dead!”

With his efforts it seemed like he wasn't late after all. Weed entered the place where the battle against Balkan was taking place.

"Get him!"

"Let's attack all at once again."

"Priests, cleanse the Undead first! Leaving Balkan for last would make the hunting much faster!"

The hunt for Balkan was ongoing as Weed came. There were quite a few Undead Balkan summoned with the corpses of Geomchis and paladins so there was a never ending battle clearing them out.

"Return to your rest, Turn Undead!"

Priests' holy spells struck the Undead bodies.

The Advent of Seven Angel Weed had Mapan bring, nearby the sculpture the effect of holy spells increased and incredible brilliance could be seen. It boosted the humans' strength and recovered their vitality while damaging the Undead.

"It cannot end like this. Humans needs to be trampled and this continent needs to be brought to ruin."

Eerie voice of Balkan echoed in the basement.

“Blink!”

Teleporting in short ranges the paladins, priests and Geomchis health and mana was drained. But from the sacred sword pierced in Balkan’s body a black smoke poured out.

The basement’s mana density increased.

Mana regeneration rate has increased.

As his sealed life force was broken, Balkan’s health and mana poured out uncontrollably.

Balkan chanted a spell.

“I… I will be back. Gate Open!”

It was a spell that allowed one to teleport to another place.

They could not let Balkan escape from this place. As he was now a mortal enemy of Weed, Morata will be in danger if he escapes now. The priests focused on their holy magic and the teleportation spell failed.

The enemy’s teleportation spell was cancelled.

“Sprinting Wind!”

Weed advanced toward Balkan and closed the distance between them in an instant.

“Kaiser Sword!”

It was a skill he was saving. Weed used his sword to pierce Balkan’s body with all his might. The faster his speed, the damage would increase with it.

Geomchis and paladins arrived as well, slashing and stabbing Balkan. Already the Undead that Balkan summoned lost all their strength and were lost, he was the last remaining enemy.

It was an all out attack that could not be left out in a raid.

With loss of his health and mana and with no capability to chant a spell, Balkan started losing his strength. Weed, Geomchis, paladins and priests forgot about everything and only focused on their attacks.

And finally.

Ruler of the Undead Legion, Sorcerer of Darkness, the Necromancer Lich Balkan Demoph has returned to his eternal rest.

———————————————————————————————

Weed and the survivors went up to the central tower, the highest tower in Vargo Fortress. They welcomed the breeze as it fluttered their capes. They were sharing in the complete sense of isolation and freedom.

It was a place where they could vividly see the trace of damage on the fortress during their unmatchable battle.

The places that were completely destroyed by the Bone Dragon's struggle. The fire still burning in the buildings and towers. The Undead defending the outer fortress were being annihilated by the United Army of elves, dwarves and barbarians.

"Hm."

"Huh."

"This... It's this kind of feeling."

This feeling right now, it was not joy or gratification but something that could not be expressed by words.

'I'm still shivering to death.'

'I can't believe the battle is really over.'

'Will there ever be a battle like this?'

‘If I didn’t start Roya Road, I would have regretted for the rest of my life.’

‘I am going to boast it to my friends, my parents, my colleagues at work.’

‘I made it. I survived.’

Standing on the central tower, everyone enjoyed the best feeling they ever had. They shared the joy of surviving till the end of a large scale battle. The sight of Geomchis, paladins and priests adding each other to their friend list could be seen.

Weed was pleased about the victory as well.

‘I made a lot of profit.’

Usually in a raid with many participants, just by winning the battle the reward was enormous. After they defeated Balkan, depending on their contribution their overall stats increased at maximum 5 and a minimum of 2. Weed’s overall stats increased by 3 because he didn’t fight Balkan from the beginning.

As a matter of fact, it was Geomchi121 that took the last attack on Balkan. His level increased by 12 because of it. Just by participating at the last moment, Weed’s experience increased by 24%. That itself was considered a huge profit.

But to the participants who personally prepared all the works could have some regrets, so he decided to show generous magnanimity.

“This is all thanks to everyone here.”

After finishing the difficult battle, he worried about others first.

“Sahyung, are you hurt a lot? Let me put some bandages on.”

He took care of Sahyungs and approached to other players unreservedly.

“Our comrade's sacrifices were huge... Fortunately we obtained treasures in the inner fortress so we will share it all together. I know this won’t make it up but... I’ll split some of my share as well.”

Players were happy just by achieving a victory.

“How could we? All this success, it was all thank to Weed-nim.”

“You can just give us our fixed shares. I noticed that if you hadn't destroyed the Life Vessel, we would have not been able to win.”

These players had a sense of shame!

Fame, stats and battle experiences. With their victory, their mastery of skills increased quite high. And now they would also received their rewards and Weed was willing to put up his share, their admiration for this commendable person came naturally.

'I don't usually trust others but... Weed-nim is truly an angel.'

'There is no difference to a saint that came out of an ethics book.'

'Exactly who was spreading bad rumors about Weed-nim being stingy and shallow? Really, the only way to know a person is by experience. There is going to be trouble to anyone who is spreading these groundless rumors. '

A hypocrisy that completely deceived the players!

Regarding treasures, Weed did not regret yielding small portion of his share if he could give a favorable impression.

The items from Balkan had to be sold and distributed equally to the participants and Weed's share, similar to the treasures, was 30%. In case of the sacred sword of Lugh's church, they were able to receive rewards depending on their contributions if they return the sword.

And there was one other satisfying reward for Weed.

-You have conquered Vargo Fortress occupied by the Undead.

Morata’s domain has expanded.

The area around Vargo Fortress has been incorporated into your territory.

Your influence and fame as lord increased.

Lands could not betray. The area is barren and full of monsters but there would be many relics buried under it. Many adventurers and hunting parties could flock toward it.

Vargo Fortress could be repaired and opened up, residents could come to farm and harvest food. With gradual development, beginners could start in Vargo Fortress.

In the near future, over the hill behind the place the Bone Dragon rampaged, a vivid scene of a shanty town was drawn right in front of him.

———————————————————————————————

Message boards on the broadcast stations and internet exploded!

It was no different to a foreseen situation. Because they were up against Undead, anchor explained it from a human’s point of view and cheered him on.

It was not an easy hunt. Players were killed by Balkan, by the Bone Dragon and the casualty from the Undead were enormous. Anchor's lips became dry and tensions rose as they explained the scene of the Undead coming in waves into Vargo Fortress,

Grasping beyond their ability, this unbelievable victory!

"We saw this clearly. When do you think we could see such battle again?"

"Rather than speaking a hundred words, I think just being content is enough. It's really regretful I could not be there right now."

"They are feeling the breeze in the place of the fierce battle. This will be a great gift for the Christmas tomorrow."

Receiving passionate response from the viewers, the anchor continued their broadcast.

Watching the broadcast of Vargo Fortress battle, in no time at all, it was early morning in reality.

And it was Christmas Eve!

And on the next day it was Christmas, with white snow falling outside the window.

Chapter 9: Snowfall On Christmas Night

Snow heaped up on Lee Hyun's yard during last night. He woke up early in the morning and mumbled while looking at the scene out of his window.

"The roads are messy. More traffic accidents, more people slipping on the ground. Doctors must be getting a lot of money now. A doctor is the best profession in Korea..."

After sweeping snow in his yard, he began to cover the cages with blankets so his chickens, ducks, rabbits and dog could spend winter comfortably. He freed the animals while working to cover the cages and they became excited as they began to play on the snowfield.

"It's not good to let food wander around by itself... but I will make today an exception."

Lee Hyun granted them a large amount of generosity!

Even though it was Christmas, Lee Hyun had been spending his time playing Royal Road. But today was special, he decided to go into town to buy clothes for his grandmother and sister.

"My sister is a female... It will be difficult to have her spend winter with only two coats to wear."

She was no longer a high school student and was old enough to style herself but he rarely bought clothes for her. When he gave her money to buy her own clothes, she would save it instead so Lee Hyun decided to buy it as a present for her.

“I will buy something expensive for her. ”

Lee Hyun hurried his preparation to go out. He succeeded in his hunt for Balkan and there was a lot of money to be received from various broadcasting stations. This was the reason why he was determined to buy a good, expensive coat for Lee Hye Yeon.

“I hope winter clothes are on sale right now!”

_____

“Rather than a street market, I should go to an outlet with popular designs…”

Lee Hyun took the subway and headed downtown. The street was bustling with couples linking their arms.

“I just can’t understand why they link their arms when they aren’t even criminals. It’s as if they are going to run away if they let go of their arms.”

Meandering like that Lee Hyun went and carefully observed woman’s clothes.

Women were very sensitive to trends and styles. Even in Royal Road, no matter how good the defense options of the clothes were, if they did not like some part about the design or if it did not fit the owner, they did not not wear it much.

“I should buy her something that is popular right now.”

He was determined to buy her a whole set rather than just a coat now. Birthday or Christmas, he wanted to see his sister smiling after receiving his present for her.

“I just can’t understand women!”

Even in the middle of winter, even when it was snowing, he could see many ladies wearing mini skirts.

“Can women even feel the cold?”

Generally, more women seem to wear pretty clothes rather than something warm. It seems they were willing to endure a lot of discomfort and cold for their fashion.

After a long time of looking around, Lee Hyun realized it was difficult to pick something by himself. In Lee Hyun’s point of view, the best choice would be a hiking jumper and heated underwear. But choosing clothes for his sister, it was completely beyond him.

‘A woman would know more about woman clothes…’

Lee Hyun’s social circle of girls was not large, so he did not have many people who he could ask for advice.

“Well, I should try contacting someone at least.”

The very person that came to his mind that might know a lot about clothes was Jung Hyo Rin, so he sent a text message to her. As Hwaryeong in Royal Road, she wore a variety of clothes and in reality she went to many fashion shows so she could be called a professional.

His phone was an old model that could not even do video chat but there was no difficulty in sending text messages.

‘I am trying to buy clothes for my sister, if you have the time could you come check them with me?’’

Besides his basic fees, Lee Hyun paid less than 2000 Won per month. When he had to call his sister, the phone was enough to get a few simple words across.

“Where are you?”

“Are you coming late?”

“Let’s go home together.”

“Did you eat already?”

10 second call was plenty enough using 300 minute free rates. Those who chose the 400 minute rates were people who could not end their calls and fell asleep on the phone, it was an unthinkable call pattern!

After sending his text, a reply came back not even a minute later.

‘My schedule is full today. It’s a concert so what can I do?’

Lee Hyun sent a reply saying it’s ok and tried to come up with someone else. Kim In Young. Who played as Irene, was the same age as his sister and could be helpful picking out clothes for her.

‘I’m sorry! I’m watching a movie with my friends today.’

The day before Christmas, everyone already had plans. His female friends in university either rejected saying that they were meeting their boyfriends or didn’t even reply.

“There is no one to send a text message to…”

Lee Hyun worried for a bit, before sending a text message to Seo Yoon. It wasn’t that he did not remember her, he just did not want to ask for such a favor.

‘If you have the time, would you like to help buy clothes for my sister and my grandmother?’

_____

It was Seo Yoon’s first winter after getting out of the hospital and moving to a house. She was lying near the automatic furnace, warming herself up.

“Weed claimed another success with his adventures, I heard praises from the people are never ending?”

“Yes, that is right. This time, it wasn’t by himself. He took along many allies with him and played an amazing role in the subsequent battle, claiming a victory. The admiration for Weed is amazing.”

“Apparently there were some famous priests and warriors that participated in the battle. Do you know who?”

“It’s the female player playing as a dancer and muscular warrior types, they…”

Seo Yoon was watching the TV. Watching the scene of Lee Hyun on television, her heart was shaken and caused her enormous worry. At that moment, a text came from Lee Hyun.

‘If you have the time, would you like to help buy clothes for my sister and my grandmother?’

Today, she was planning to just rest at home but she prepared to leave immediately. As Seo Yoon was leaving the house, the university student next door was playing basketball with his friends.

Park Jin Suk.

He moved in one week later than her and she first met him when he was handing out rice-cakes. She met the first son of H Group coincidently!

She regularly saw him jogging, passing by her house early in the morning or seeing him playing tennis or basketball with his friends.

Though they still have not shared any conversations, whenever she came out of her house they went past each other often.

Lee Hyun stood in front of the department store. Couples went to the rooftop while the entrance of the department store was filled with guys or girls waiting for someone.

“The department store isn’t that bad.”

Since it was for Christmas, he went to a department store rather

than an outlet store. The price difference wasn't that different when you buy brand products and Kim In Young informed him with a text that there is a special sale going on in that department store.

"You need information in shopping as well."

While Lee Hyun waited, Seo Yoon approached at a quick pace and stood in front of him. As it was snowing with cold winds, she was wearing a long coat with a scarf.

"Did you wait long?"

"No, it's cold so let's go inside."

Lee Hyun and Seo Yoon entered the first floor of the department store.

"By the way, where did you get those clothes? They looks really nice."

Seo Yoon's clothes, while not eye catching, the color was really beautiful and the texture seemed superb. Normally he would not ask, but because he had to buy clothes for his sister he asked anyway.

"I think I bought it from a different department store."

“Really? How much was it?”

“I don’t remember clearly. I think it was about 400 thousand Won?”

“……..”

It was words that thickened his fear about department stores. The department store was more ghastly than the Bone Dragon.

The first floor of the department store was filled with miscellaneous brands, bags, luxury goods, jewelry and cosmetics. Lee Hyun’s worries were abated as the price was not outrageous as long as it wasn’t a premium brand.

“This price is something I could never forget in my lifetime… It’s enough to buy 80kg of rice and still have change, it’s enough to give nightmares.”

It was a world where even a small headband costs several tens of thousands of Won!

“Whoever invented the yellow elastic band should win the Nobel prize.”

The astonishing price of the female accessories confirmed his fears.

They looked around the second and third floor to check out female apparels.

“I think my sister’s size is the same as yours… could you try it out so I can choose?”

“It’s alright.”

Lee Hyun made SeoYoon try out clothes he thought were pretty, especially those on the mannequins. First, he was trying to buy jumper or a coat so just simply hanging it on her shoulder he could decide.

“Customer, this thick jumper really suits you. This is my last stock. Since I started my business, you are the prettiest lady I have seen.”

“These days, products with slimline sell well. Even in winter it discreetly reveals the figure… However you look so pretty.”

“It’s a style that is comfortable and you will never get tired of it. Its texture is really premium with a nice feeling. By the way, are you a celebrity?”

Seo Yoon looked pretty in whatever she wore. Blouses, skirts, t-shirts, caps and even hiking jackets made her beautiful. If the designers of these clothes came and saw, they would never believe that their clothes would look this appealing.

“What is the price?”

“It’s not much. It’s 540 thousand Won and the item is on 20% sale.”

Lee Hyun was wearing a thick jumper and jean that he randomly bought from a market. Even the watch on his wrists was worth 20 thousand Won.

‘I’ve seen a lot of rich people but the real affluent people do not have such tell tale signs.’

‘He must have been out of the country a long time. It must have been ingrained in him to live frugally while studying abroad.’

‘Really, how much money does he have to have for a girlfriend like this?’

If it was personal clothes he would wear, he would never dare to get it but because it was a present for his sister, Lee Hyun was resolute in his decision and purchased it. One set of coat, three blouses, a skirt, pants, boots and even a headband! He picked clothes that would suit lively twenty year olds.

“You, you think she needs a handbag as well? Probably, right?”

After a moment of hesitation, he bought a handbag on sale from some less well known brand. The clothes for his grandmother also cost him much more than he anticipated from the department

store.

'But it's something you need.'

Through Royal Road, he was making an enormous amount of money so with a big heart he decided to spend. Of course, he was worried that he would fall into a shopping addiction if this kept on.

"And this is a gift from me."

Lee Hyun gave a present to Seo Yoon. Thinking it would be meaningless to buy something for her from the department store, he gave Seo Yoon something he crafted by himself.

Lee Hyun carved many wood pieces to become proficient in sculpting even in real life. He started watching sculpting related documentaries and read books about it as well.

And then he started to put effort and devotion into his sculptures.

The day he met Seo Yoon for the first time, the day he left on an adventure with her, the tears he saw falling from her eyes as he passed by riding on his Wyvern, the time they struggled together as they explored the northern continent, the time they met in university and recently the scene he saw when they took a trip together to the sea.

There were 15 sculptures about her. Every moment had different

attire and hair styles. After he sculpted them, he put them in his storage with other items. But he put them into a cardboard box and gave it to her.

"Sorry it's not expensive. It's something I made when I was bored."

"... I will keep it safe."

Seo Yoon received the sculptures. To her it was the best Christmas gift she received.

Two of them went outside the department store and walked on the street. They did not have any place in mind. It was a day were music was flowing and couples were playfully pushing each other!

Because he circled around the whole department store to purchase the most beautiful yet inexpensive clothes, he was getting hungry.

'It's getting dark now.'

The mood felt like he had to buy Seo Yoon dinner before they part.

'Restaurants rip off during Christmas season...'

There weren't many places to go to on a day like this. Anywhere

they go it will be expensive and crowded with people that it will be uncomfortable. Lee Hyun thought it would be better to take her to his house.

"You want to go to my house? My sister is watching a movie with her friends so she's coming late."

"……."

It was words that could be easily misunderstood. But Seo Yoon nodded and followed him. It was because she fully trusted Lee Hyun.

Right after they arrived at his home, Lee Hyun prepared dinner.

'Sister will be coming late so I guess I only need to buy ingredients for two.'

Outside, a small amount of snow was still falling. It was weather that made him want to eat pork rib or pork backbone stew.

"I don't have ingredients."

He was trying to cook a simple miso soup tonight but he didn't buy any meat.

'Then what else could I cook…'

Lee Hyun thoroughly searched through the refrigerator. And then he found ingredients sent from a broadcasting station. Salmon, caviar and champagne!

“There is stuff sent by KMC Media.”

It was ingredients sent from KMC Media as a year-end gift. It would have been a better meal if they sent him a set of Korean cattle ribs and a box of sprite but he did not know why they sent such things.

“Whatever. It could make the flavor weird if I put it in the fish soup so let’s finish if off!”

Lee Hyun handled the salmon and caviar and brought it with champagne. And he also brought some leftover cookies he baked for his sister this morning.

“There isn’t much but please enjoy.”

He set up a magnificent supper with salmon salad, caviar, cookies and champagne, then turned on the TV.

The program on TV was, ‘Alone on a Deserted Island’, purported to be a must watch on Christmas. It was about two kids trapped on a deserted island on Christmas!

It was a story about being chased by dinosaurs, defeating the evil villain, finding the treasure and through greed beginning to fight

each other. When the two were about have their last match, they receive contact and their mothers come to the deserted island to save them. They get scolded about making trouble and go back home to study again.

The movie was such a huge hit they were in the filming process of the next sequel, ‘Alone in a Dungeon.’

After finishing their meal, they saw that a huge amount of snow had piled up outside their window. He ate a meal for two with Seo Yoon while watching the movie on the television.

Cha Eun Hee met with President Jeong Deuk Soo on Christmas Eve. It was because he received reports saying that Lee Hyun and Seo Yoon were on a date, had dinner and were spending their time together.

On president Jeong Deuk Soo’s brow was a heavy frown.

“At every chance there was I made sure there was an encounter but apparently there is no progress yet.”

The first son of the H Group. He was manly, audacious and had a lot of experience in dating. He wanted for them to naturally encounter each other and gradually attract Seo Yoon, but there was no reaction from her.

“I am utterly lost. Exactly what kind of man do I need to introduce to detach her from this Lee Hyun?”

Cha Eun Hee thought this was the time to solve President Jeong Deuk Soo’s puzzlement.

“We need someone warm.”

“Warm?”

“It was warmth that melted Seo Yoon’s frozen heart. We need someone with a warmer heart than Lee Hyun… If you are going to introduce someone, we need that kind of person. It will not be easy to find someone like that.”

———————————————————————————

Lee Hyun, Seo Yoon and Lee Hye Yeon laid out a board in the living room. They ate dinner and also watched a movie. Now they were playing Go Stop, something that could let 3 people pass the time.

‘There are two pairs of misfortune and I already got two of them… One person can use the max point card. Then I need to get Three! ’

Lee Hyun made someone shiver. He thought about a variety of situations, even when he grabbed the misfortune card, he already prepared for the next turn.

“It’s Three Go”

Lee Hyun yelled it out without revealing anything.

“Without getting a card, getting Go now is fun right? Go!”

At the end, Lee Hyun swept everything. As they were playing for actual money, his concentration could not be compared even to Royal Road.

Lee Hyun was extremely happy whenever he could earn money.

The power of Bardray and the Hermes guild rose sharply after they dominated Haven Kingdom. Absorbing the other guilds and accepting players in the Haven Kingdom, their development was great.

“If you are not a member of Hermes guild, leave this hunting ground now!”

“Those who are not part of the guild, there will be an extra 35% trade tax.”

“No hunting party of more than five allowed in the dungeon.”

They squeezed the ordinary players dry by creating a variety of regulations. If Weed saw this, he would feel admiration and ask to learn one or two things!

Criticisms about Hermes guild were rising high but they didn't care. They held the position of lords and nobles so even if the players caused dissent they could quickly suppress it. There was no place in Haven Kingdom that was not being influenced by Hermes guild.

"If it's unfair, leave Haven Kingdom. But vagabonds will not be welcomed by any kingdoms."

"As we are the strongest guild on Versailles continent we need this much concession. We are managing Haven Kingdom we cannot run it as a charity."

They applied high tax rate to villagers of Haven Kingdom. Wealth was stacking up in Hermes guild!

From the forge they made weapons of war and multiplied their army several fold with conscription. It was at a rate that it was difficult to predict Hermes guild's current force. While the central continent was in panic because of Embinyu church, Hermes guild was preparing a war to establish an empire.

But currently Polon, the knights, spellcasters and rangers all got defeated! The chief executives opened a council.

“We need to make a genuine counterattack against Weed. Let’s make Morata into a field of ashes.”

“Not even a single ant should be spared, every villager should be annihilated. The sculptures? We can break them and make them into powder. If there are any that are useful we can bring them here.”

"Give the order and kill everyone.”

In the chief executive council the resentment from the rankers flooded out as if a dam burst. No matter how great Weed’s personal fame was, Hermes guild never raised him on the same pedestal as Bardray.

In the central continent, where the strong were in fierce competition, it was disgraceful to compare Bardray who was called the god of weapons to someone like Weed. And to defeat Hermes guild, it was a sin beyond what was tolerable!

When Bardray did not give the direct order, it was an issue handled by the guild master Raphey.

———————————————————————————————

Hermes guild Homepage.

There was a new announcement on their webpage with an enormous number of visitors checking it every day.

Title: Death Order #296

Hermes guild has assigned Sculptor Weed as a top priority target for death.

Whoever cooperates with Weed will become a target of Hermes guild.

Whoever reports Weed location in Haven Kingdom or anywhere near the Central continent will receive 130 thousand gold.

And also, whoever kills Weed will receive 400 thousand gold as bounty.

The power of this special announcement from Hermes guild was truly amazing. They went beyond hindering Weed's adventure and made an actual declaration. The only time a death order got cancelled was when the target is no longer worth killing or the target surrendered to Hermes guild.

So will there be a full-scale war between Hermes guild and Weed?

In terms of forces they cannot even be compared, how can a full-scale war erupt? It's a war between a single city in the north against the whole Haven Kingdom.

Weed has a spell that he can use whenever he is in a difficult situation.

If they were going to dispatch their army, they wouldn't have issued a death order. It's just proof that Weed is an opposition they can recognize.

But will Weed be safe from the assassination squads?

Hermes guild operated an assassination squad just for targets on their death orders. Whenever a person on a death order appeared, the nearby assassination squad was deployed to kill the target. Nowhere in the central continent was guaranteed to be safe if they got on the Hermes guild's death order list.

Assassins could approach their targets stealthily without being revealed. Even decent players from an above average enemy guild could not avoid getting killed if 3~4 assassins set their traps and made an assault.

Chapter 10: The Old Handmaiden's Request

Scientists from the Systems Department in Unicorn Corporation were checking up on Royal Road's status.

"Hermes guild's strength is really massive."

The hidden armies of Hermes guild that could be seen on the monitor were far superior to Kallamore Kingdom's forces.

"I never knew human development would be this fast."

Scientists were looking at the large central screen. The map of Versailles continent could be seen as a video. Each individual castle and village was marked and it could be zoomed in to see the herd movement of monsters. It was a system that could check the whole continent in real time.

They could even use the Artificial Intelligence System to see any quest that occurred or find the player with the highest achievements. Of course, the scientists could only watch without interfering.

To become the Emperor of Royal Road that would unite the world! There were secrete battles to become the absolute ruler of every races in this virtual reality. By taking control of castles and cities, enormous wealth could be gained. But by becoming the

Emperor, astronomical authority and wealth could be acquired.

For this, many players increased their levels and formed their own forces. There were those who excelled and those who experienced innumerable setbacks. Even watching the humans who were spread out in the world of Royal Road was fascinating.

But the crimson dots blinking on the large screen expanded a lot more than last month.

“Don’t you think the Embinyu Church is getting way too big?”

Regardless of central, northern, eastern, western, southern continent, the crimson dots representing Embinyu Church were expanding. They did not know about the players, but the scientists knew they were converting the villagers, nobles, kings and were growing in strength. And especially in the Central Continent the Embinyu church spread faster as it was swept up in chaos by the guild wars.

“It can’t be helped. The players are playing hopscotch with sieges instead of fighting the Embinyu Church.”

“But if they don’t get stopped, it will become really difficult…”

Embinyu Church was historically an evil force that sunk the whole continent into peril. The leader of guilds were picking easy targets nearby like castles and cities rather than fighting the Embinyu Church.

The usual alliance made up of coalitions were becoming increasingly competitive in trying to increase their influence and were rather indifferent to the whole situation.

Thanks to the current situation, the Embinyu Church was spreading like a wildfire and their evil spirits were secretly nurtured. To the scientists, it looked like the whole continent would be covered by the Embinyu Church at this rate.

“We can’t do anything about it. It’s the choice of the players.”

“Even if one of the continents is ruled by the Embinyu Church, it’s Royal Road’s policy to give the player’s free will to do so.”

A Continent of Darkness!

If it was another game, they would have tried to actively stop the Embinyu Church and sound the alarm for the players but Unicorn Corporation had no intentions of doing so. The players had to acquire the information and decide what to do themselves.

Once it became a Continent of Darkness, it will be much more difficult to live but fighting to be free of Embinyu Church’s oppression might become a part of Royal Road as well.

The creator of Versailles Continent, Yoo Byung Jun, was shifting through Royal Road with the Artificial Intelligence System.

“Ultimately, everything will come to an end through the Embinyu Church.”

But the humans still had their chances.

While they were blinded by their own greed and looking the other way, the Embinyu Church grew in strength. As they became bigger, their appearance on the world stage would cause greater havoc.

“There’s nothing to do even if it ends like this.”

There were some players that Yoo Byung Jun kept a special watch on. Adventurer, discoverer, warrior, knight, magician, paladin, priest and a sculptor! They all played separately, but once they developed to a certain point their greed was always the same, pursuing more money and power.

To be honest, Yoo Byung Jun often watched the activity of a character name Weed.

“This guy is different.”

From beginning till the end, it was all about the money. He was a person who valued money as his number one priority and it never changed! He gained the people’s popularity and praise through his

exciting and enviable adventures.

“Maybe it’s better this way.”

When Yoo Byung Jun first met Lee Hyun, he had gotten a bad first impression of him because of the fact that he was given 200 Won. In the end, he was short 100 Won so could not get his coco.

“Continue with your quest, let the jealous people hinder you… Because at this rate you will not be able to accomplish anything.”

But he couldn’t help but admire Weed’s capabilities. Using the Artificial Intelligence System, he watched Weed since his beginning, he was always making a sculpture or hunting. With such perseverance he was able to sculpt Fine, Masterpiece and Magnum Opus pieces.

To say the least, wandering the continent and collecting all 5 secret sculpting legacies was truly impressive.

“Yet, not going to meet the Sculpting Master Zahab or trying to learn the final sculpting skill… Kukuku. Live in the delusion of people’s praises.”

———————————————————————————————

Weed logged on to Royal Road again. Vargo Fortress was shrouded in darkness! Sitting on the leaning tower, he reminded himself of his solitude.

“A death order from Hermes guild..... so they finally decided to kill me once and for all?”

It was impossible for Weed, who was sensitive to information, not to know about this. The death order was Hermes guild’s pride, once on the list, they used any means and methods to kill. They could not even trade with merchants regularly or share quests with other players.

Being active in Haven Kingdom would be impossible and very difficult in the Central continent. The people who wanted to gain Hermes guild’s favor were spread far and wide, on top of that, there was a bounty on his head.

Until now Weed was not specially recognized as people passed him by, but now every rumor about him would be reported to the Hermes guild and the bounty hunters.

“Doing quests will now become difficult.”

If the information about Weed’s location or his quests became widespread, the assassins and bounty hunters would come to him in droves.

“Well, all quests have their good and bad points.”

He went through many hardships by taking difficult quests.

There were people who just focused on hunting to try and reach a higher level faster. But unlike them, Weed solved quests and was able to obtain items and treasures others couldn't have. He could also make money through broadcast stations. He could even say that he earned fame and the territory of Morata through the quests.

When he went to the City of Heaven, the quest of finding the sacred artifacts for the Church of Freya, participation in the siege of Fort Odin, building a pyramid and his activity as Orc Karichwi on the Plains of Despair. The memories of his many adventures suddenly popped up in his head.

Weed murmured to himself in a low voice that only he could hear.

"I won't be able to do quests or hunt properly if I get attacked by others... I am going to get left behind by others. If I can't earn money as a Dark Gamer, I will have to look for another job."

Everyone knew about the current, serious unemployment crisis.

"I will find work in a factory with ridiculous income. Becoming exhausted from working 17 hours a day... Be exposed to some toxic chemicals in the factory and get sick. Getting treatment and doing everything possible not to get fired, I will also have to deliver milk and newspapers in the morning. And if I suddenly collapse..."

Weed was already drawing a depressingly grey future!

“But I am still healthy, no matter how painful it is I need to get up again. But because of the illness, I will continue to lose my money. Getting fired suddenly after working 15 years in the company, with a severance package as small as a rat’s tail. Looking for temporary work everyday, then suddenly I would become an old man without even getting married. Our country’s pension fund by then would be in bankruptcy, my whole body would be aching, riddled with sickness. If I die like that, will there be anyone to even prepare a meager funeral for me?”

A future filled to the brim with despair, drawn out from the Hermes guild’s death order!

But Weed still tried to find hope by himself.

“In the worst case scenario, I can collect wastepaper and scrap iron will be nice too. If I don’t have any family to support, I will be able to receive a minimum living cost. And in a truly desperate situations I could sell of one of my kidneys…”

Anyways, from now on, it would become really dangerous to do normal quests or hunt in the northern area, especially outside Morata or Vargo Fortress. Even in Jigolaths, where it was across the sea, he experienced significant interference and even died in the Undead Legion quest. This proved how large the Hermes guild’s influence truly was.

Even if he was accompanied by a large number of Geomchis and companions, if a large army suddenly appeared, it would be difficult to contend with.

“I will have to be really cautious from now on. I won’t be able to do all the quests that might reveal me to others.”

The known quests, like what happened previously and now, as they took a long time to do it was now too dangerous to do them.

‘Depending on hunts and large quests isn’t the proper way to raise a sculptor but....”

Even though he was a miscellaneous character, his main profession was a sculptor.

Then, suddenly, a memory popped up in Weed’s head. It was a memory that was in the back of his mind for a long time.

“Quest Info Window!”

Continue Zahab’s Legacy

Zahab did not die that day. To test his sculpting skills he went to a faraway continent. After advancing your sculpting skills, search for Zahab, learn his song and sing it to the old handmaiden. Zahab has last been rumored to have left for the Grapass region.

Difficulty: A

Quest Restriction: Must be cleared before the old handmaiden

dies. Quest cannot be cancelled.

It was a quest to search for Zahab! The quest came from the handmaiden from Rosenheim Kingdom, but at that time his level was low and he thought it would take too long to accomplish so he did not start on it. Also one of the main reasons was that he was in a phase where he was very disappointed by the sculpting skill.

Later on, he asked to check if the old handmaiden died by posting on the Rosenheim Kingdom Serabourg Castle information board and kept on postponing the quest.

'The quest I received from the old handmaiden a long time ago. If I meet Zahab, learn his song and progress onto the quests related to the final legacies of sculpting skills...'

His sculpting skill remained at Advanced level 8. Mastery was not far off.

"A Sculpting Master and the final sculpting skill!"

As long as Hermes guild exists, he would be chased by them for the rest of his life.

'Then this quest should be done now....'

The road to mastering the sculpting skills!

In fact, one of the biggest reasons for fighting the Undead Legion was to protect Morata.

Weed fell into deep thought.

“If Hermes guild is as powerful as they say, and they try to interfere with me till the end…”

He was wondering whether he should bow and beg or get on his knees first.

_____

Weed resumed his fight against the Undeads in Vargo Fortress. After Barkhan died, Undead in the Undead Legion were seriously weakened. And by joining forces of the United Army of elves, barbarians, dwarves with the humans, they were able to drive them out.

When the last Undead in Vargo Fortress was killed, a video played in front of Weed’s and the players’ eyes.

Hashilis, who had green skin like a frog, led the Undead toward his ghost battleship.

“As Barkhan Demoph-nim disappeared, so I shall return to the sea also.”

Pushing past the mists, the ghost ship disappeared ominously. Balkan's subordinate Hashilis returned to the sea with the Undead, going back to becoming the ghost admiral of the sea. The unlucky would probably be able to meet Hashilis and trigger quests related to the legends of the ocean.

In the video it gave hints saying that Hashilis left to look for a sunken kingdom in the sea, but Weed just didn't care about it.

"Now I can get a feeling for things just by looking at them briefly."

Getting swept up by the quest and suffering through deathly toil, it felt like the quest would lead to storms and reefs.

"Those truly unfortunate would probably take that quest."

With that, Weed rid himself of his interest in Hashilis. As right now, the United Army of elves, dwarves and barbarians were sojourning in Vargo Fortress. The paladins, priests and necromancers were conversing with them in a blink of an eye.

Only Weed's companions who were worrying about the Hermes guild's death order and Geomchi who were too shy to talk to the elves kept their place.

"Be gone. You necromancers who summons the obscene Undead dare to talk to us?"

“I cannot smell any scent of earth or the sound of nature from you. I cannot converse with you.”

“You human who are more worthless than their armor.”

The barbarians, elves and dwarves’ response changed depending on the person talking to them. While they were united when they fought the Undead, but now it was difficult to befriend them since the tribes all had different conditions.

Fame, class, level, skill, equipment, past quest accomplishment, many different variables influenced it. While humans were always favorable to the priests, the dwarves, barbarians and elves who believed in other gods saw them as a burden.

“Huk, the elves are really pretty.”

Geomchi199 got close to Weed and said loud enough for him to hear.

Unlike the short and dark skinned dark elves, the wood elves had golden hair with slim bodies and were considerably beautiful. With a single bow on each of their shoulders, they wore light outfits without armor.

Their response changed depending on who talked to them but to their allies, they shared quests and had favorable impression toward them. So Geomchi199 was hoping for Weed to talk to them first.

Weed approached the closest elf to him.

“The blessings of nature are with you. You are the human that returned nature’s growth in the North.”

Fame increased by 34.

Affinity to Nature increased by 25.

Amity with the Woodland Elves rose to 17.

Even elves living in the woodlands were able to recognize Weed’s fame. Through hunting Balkan, not only did the NPCs like the elves, dwarves and barbarians, but many players admiring Weed appeared. The influence of each broadcasting station competitively trying to create a hero and calling him the God of War was large.

“I am a human, but I am also an adventurer that respects the life and richness that is nature. I only did a small task that I thought was necessary without any hesitation.”

“With your help, many elves in the North are really grateful. And with the cooperation from the humans, we were able to return the Undead back to the earth.”

Amity with the Woodland Elves rose to 25.

Weed had a honeyed tongue and the elves were a naive race that believed people readily.

“It was truly by chance that I heard the news about the Queen of Fairies being threatened by Balkan while I was on an adventure. As an adventurer that takes the responsibility of protecting the justice in Versailles continent, how could I have not come and fought?”

“You are an admirable human adventurer. If only all humans were like Weed-nim, then we would be in peace.”

He also met with the barbarians and dwarves, hearing stories and getting information from them.

“Hunting grounds? I think you are already famous as a warrior but you still want to get stronger? There are many places near here that one needs to go through to become a strong warrior. But still, don’t go behind Ogot hill. It’s a dungeon you cannot just enter casually.”

“It makes me want to fight more. If the monsters are strong, then I can just get rid of them.”

“You have a very good mindset. But your vigilance against the monsters must not waiver. Monsters will invade this place often so you should first rebuild the castle walls.”

Fame increased by 21.

Intimacy with the Barbarians of the wasteland increased.

“Fruits in the forest? They are very sweet and delicious. Elves do not eat a lot of them so if you want them, we could trade for the items we need.”

“If you can tell me the items the elves need I will look into it. Making alcohol with the fruits from the elven forest... I mean, I want to allow the little children to eat some of it.”

He also obtained information about trades. Because Weed was not a professional merchant, he did not wander around to trade but knowing it would allow him to profit from it someday so he permanently memorized it.

“This fortress was very much favored by the dwarves, but now it’s occupied by the humans. Why were the dwarves envious about the place the Undead lived? Keep it to yourself. You must not tell anyone I told you this. A long time ago this place was flourishing with high quality iron and silver mines.”

“Iron and silver mines, digging up resources would bring in money! The property price for Vargo Fortress would rise exponentially... I mean, if there are ores the dwarves need then it should be mined.”

Intimacy with the Dwarven tribe of Hardened Earth increased.

Weed gained favorable impression by the dwarves after he told

them he was mastering his blacksmith skill above the intermediate level and they clamoured him to make something together. If he accept their proposition, it would be a valuable opportunity to cooperate with the dwarves in making swords and armor. It would also help increase his mastery in blacksmith skill.

Weed believed that pretense and hypocrisy were essential to survive in society! He believed that if all primary and high schools taught this in their ethics class, the country's competitiveness will dominate the other developed nations.

The specific elves, dwarves and barbarians Weed talked with, the Geomchis and other companions were able to easily approach them and start a conversation afterwards. They saw the people coming with Weed favorably and thanks to that they could share conversations more comfortably. This was why adventurers, who compared to warriors lacked combat strength, received such special treatment.

Then Weed went onto meet the leader of the elves, Lonserk. To other players, he only gave a cordial greetings without any special response, but he started a conversation with Weed.

"You are the human that played an important role in defeating Balkan."

"It was what I had to do. It brings me great joy to know that this brought peace to Versailles continent "

"The Queen of Fairies, Teneidon would like to meet the human

that helped her. Could you come with me?”

Lonserk gave him an offer. The Queen of Fairies was a high position that commanded the race.

Weed glanced around quickly and saw that Geomchis, Pale, Irene, those who have known him for a long time, along with the priests and the paladins, had their eyes wide in excitement as they eavesdropped. That one race, and to meet the queen of the race that was difficult to meet had even Weed excited by the prospect.

Truthfully, the only reason that Weed could even meet the Queen of Fairies once was due to hunting Balkan.

“Am I the only one going?”

“The Queen of Fairies, Teneidon has invited everyone.”

Shouts popped out from players!

“Wah!”

“Are we really going to see the Fairy Queen? It’s unbelievable.”

“It’s good thing that we fought Balkan.”

“Weed-nim asked if we could come along.”

Besides treasures that they obtained after hunting Balkan, they could receive a reward from the Fairy Queen as well. Weed decided to accept the invitation from the Fairy Queen.

“When can we go?”

“You can go right now.”

“I would like to see my reward... I mean, I would like to see with my own eyes if the Queen of the Fairies is safe, so let’s go now.”

———————————————————————

Weed, Geomchis and other players were guided by the elves and the dwarves.

“Please follow us.”

Following on the forest path, they could see female elves staring at them from behind the trees and bushes.

“I never knew a place like this even existed.”

“I should have came here to meet the elves a long time ago.”

Geomchis whispered to themselves, trying not to betray their

masculine pride. But the elves had sharp ears which could even hear the slight rustling of the winds.

“Those humans seem to be interested in us.”

“They are not our types”

“They look idiotic.”

To receive an elf’s love, they need to be of a similar nature such as a ranger or a mage rather than a warrior. As their race did not see the humans favorably, there was a limitation on how much intimacy the humans could stack. Even the elves’ village, which was close by, had a limited access that only allowed the merchants to enter.

They passed the forest and climbed up a mountain. From this point on it was the dwarves’ territory. It was a place where small houses and braziers were seen and hammering sounds were heard.

Each dwarf village had a different technology or specialty so Weed was curious about their skill, but for now he entered the dungeon nearby.

Dungeon, you are the first discoverer of, ‘The Resting Place of Teneidon’.

Privileges: Fame increase by 890.

Double experience and item drop rate for one week.

Very first monster type you hunt will drop a best item it can possibly drop.

Even though it was called a dungeon, there were only little fairies flying around. As they couldn't hunt the fairies, the effect of double experience was useless.

"Be careful. There are many traps in here. If you go in the wrong direction, you will wander endlessly or end up someplace else on the continent."

With the warning from elves, the players suppressed their curiosity and kept following. The fairies had abilities that allow them to ignore the landmass and leap through space. Because of that, through the slightest of slips, the person could end up in the middle of the desert or in a den of hungry monsters.

They followed the elves resignedly and finally arrived at the queen's resting place. It was by the root of a large tree. The small body of Fairy Queen Teneidon was perched on the root, resting.

— Welcome, humans.

The Fairy Queen Teneidon's voice was tiny so they had to strain their ears to hear. The queen was badly injured with one of her wing torn. By receiving the life force from the tree, she was

recovering little by little but it was barely enough to keep the injury from deteriorating.

“I am known as Weed.”

Weed showed proper decorum as he knelt on one knee. He had enough qualification as lord of Morata and being a noble to hold a conversation with her. With his fame right now, he could meet anyone he wants.

— You are the human that helped me. I’ve heard about your achievements through my fairies.

You are conversing with the Queen of Fairies, Teneidon.

Due to the feeling of reverence, some stats has risen.

Elegance, dignity, honor and art.

There was small tremor on her torn wing as Teneidon spoke. She looked like she was in agony. An unexpected thought suddenly past by Weed in his head.

‘Her injuries seem severe, could the priests heal it?’

As long as it was not an Undead, the power of healing magic could be applied to any race or to those who believed in different god. And because fairies were very kind natured, Weed never

heard of any adverse effect of holy power on the fairies. Also in the history of Versailles continent, the stories of heroic figure travelling with fairies were mentioned.

“Your injuries seem severe…. My companion is a priest so I think she can cure you. What do you think Queen Teneidon?”

As Weed asked courteously Teneidon and the fairies that suddenly appeared, were very happy.

— Thank you. Thank you.

— With the human’s help, our queen will be able to heal faster.

— Human healing spells. They cure injuries quickly and feel warm.

Playfully glowing like fireflies, the fairies covered Weed’s whole body. Some shifted through his hair, some sat on his shoulder and one of them even clung on to his nose. Fairies liked to play tricks on people they developed intimacy with. Because he defeated Balkan, the Undead Legion and offered to cure their queen, he obtained the maximum intimacy with the fairies.

— If you can help me, I will be really thankful.

Teneidon gave her permission.

“Irene, please come over here.”

Irene, who was observing from behind the crowded players pushing to see what was happening, slowly walked forward to avoid colliding into any playful fairies.

“Could you try healing the queen.”

“Huh? Can I do that? Isn’t it dangerous?”

“Fairies gave their permission so there won’t be any problem. Try casting simple healing spells first.”

Irene took a moment to breath deeply, performed the signum crucis and then casted a holy spell.

“Power of the holy spirit, grant salvation unto the one in suffering. Healing Hand!”

It was a simple holy spell but it refilled health quickly.

Fairy Queen Teneidon’s health has recovered by 735.

The injuries have soothed a bit.

Irene’s holy spell was successful. By healing the Queen of Fairies, her experience and skill mastery increased. Although Teneidon

was not in any shape to fly, she was an amazing figure that even appeared in history books. By helping her, Irene's fame increased as well.

"Wow, the healing spell works. And I even earned experience points!"

Irene was deeply gratified by the fact that she could heal Teneidon.

"Please keep healing her."

From Weed's direction, Irene used all the mana she had to heal Teneidon. Irene was a priest that dedicated herself to learning only healing type magic.

Through this sacred act, your faith increased. You have become righteous.

By healing the Queen of Fairies, you have experienced a special event related to the cleric class.

Your relationship with fairies has become friendly.

To them, you are remembered as a human who has provided a great assistance.

There was no greater and more precious time as a priest than

healing Teneidon right this moment.

“Weed-nim, my mana ran out.”

The extent of Teneidon’s injury was unknown but she was still severely injured even if Irene used her healing spell until her mana ran out. Since the beginning her injury looked serious, though her body was small her health was enormous.

“The other priests, please try healing as well.”

As soon as Weed finished speaking, the priests immediately chanted their healing spells. They were quite envious of the Irene who was healing Teneidon before them.

“Healing Hands”

“Heal!”

“Recovery.”

“Round Heal!”

“Complete Recovery”

It was literally a great festival of healing. From low-class holy spells to advanced healing spells that can be only used three times

per day, were used on Teneidon. Because even paladins were also able to chant healing spells, they helped as well.

Teneidon's health is at 43%.

A concentrated healing is progressing.

It could only be described as solemn but sublime light of healing that was focused on Teneidon. The priests without ceasing, cast holy spells as soon as their mana was refilled. They received special experience, faith, skill mastery and contribution to the fairies.

"More experience points are getting stacked than when I was fighting."

"Look at that contribution and skill mastery going up."

"Faith is going up slowly but surely. So far, I have gained more than when I was promoted one step higher as a priest."

Weed was getting cramps in his belly. It was because the interlinked web of connection between the Undead Legion, the priests and Teneidon.

'Churches in Versailles continent would have desperately tried to stop the Undead Legion from becoming active again..'

It was the same for Weed. As Balkan looked to regain his strength

and showed signs of invading Morata, he tried to hurriedly put out the fire by fighting. But if he did not fight, the news of the United Army of elves, dwarves and barbarians fighting to keep Balkan and the Undead Legion from draining Teneidon's life would have spread widely.

If so, it was certain that a quest to defeat Balkan would have been created.

With each church and kingdom putting this as their central focus, they would have promised a great reward to come fight in Vargo Fortress instead of just hunting like Weed. If the situation devolved till then, hunting Balkan would have been much more difficult, but they might have had a chance as each kingdom might have sent their royal knights to fight together.

After defeating Balkan and his Undead Legion, receiving a great reward and being able to meet Teneidon. It could have been a story about priests helping Teneidon recuperate while playing an influential role and gaining huge profits!

'It's totally possible.'

But what happened was Weed mainly fighting the battle, but the 'might have been' quest to kill Balkan might have needed paladins and priests to form the core. Even now, Weed's stomach was aching as he looked on at the scene of priests and paladins healing Teneidon and receiving many rewards.

It was harder to endure than suffering from acute appendicitis,

the pain that poked his sides!

Weed took out a bandage. He wanted to use his Bandaging skill but he had to refrain himself from doing that. The bandage was big enough to suffocate the Fairy Queen.

Even with the full concentration of holy spells from the priests, Teneidon was not able to restore her full form. Her bodily injuries were healed but the torn wing did not restore itself.

— Thank you, humans.

Teneidon's voice was clear now so everybody could hear. The fairies clung to the priests and even tickled their nose. They were playful as they were happy to see their queen in better condition. The priests and paladins who participated in healing were now friends of the fairies and could press for special privileges.

Weed approached Teneidon and spoke.

"I am relieved to see human healing worked, your highness."

Weed tried to discretely share in the achievements of the priests and paladins.

— I will not forget the kindness the humans have shown.

Contribution to Teneidon and the Fairy race increased by 164.

As an evil grin almost appeared on Weed, he heard the other priests talking.

“My contribution increased by more than 600.”

“Mine is over 800.”

Weed’s expression became stiff again. His stomach twisting and turning with pain! It was more comfortable to be criticized by others than this.

“You think we can get items with the contribution?”

“Can’t the fairies give spirit weapons or something similar?”

“Well, I do need a necklace…”

“With this much contribution, I can make a fairy friend. I heard having a fairy around in a hunt helps a lot.”

These comments stabbed Weed’s aching heart with a sharp drill!

The pain he experienced in battle when his health was lower than 100 to increase his resilience felt way less painful. However, Weed continued to speak to Teneidon as the representative of the humans.

“But your highness, your wing didn’t seem to have recovered.”

— That is because I am cursed. To repair my wing, I need to go to the Red Reed Forest and bring a certain object.

As he heard Teneidon’s words, the smell of quest waffed thickly in the air.

Weed thought to himself.

‘Even if it kills me, I must never do this quest.’

With the continuation from Balkan, Teneidon’s position, Weed’s level and fame it was most likely he could receive this quest. No matter what hardship it would be, the chance of it being another impossible quest was high.

By struggling through near death hardship, there would only be some benefits if it was successful. But expending the effort only to die was sheer mockery!

— Humans, I have a great debt to you and already I dare to ask another difficult favor. I do not know if you could help me a little further.

Due to Fairy Queen Teneidon’s curiosity, she entered the dragon territory. And while playing to her heart’s content on the dragon

Latuas' territory, one of her wing was cursed without her knowing.

The curse of the dragon.

Latuas appeared before the Fairy Queen that insulted his dignity and spoke.

"A queen who likes to play tricks... I do not like intruders. If you want to free yourself from my curse, bring me the keepsake of the dragon that disappeared in anguish."

Just as Weed predicted, it was a death quest related to dragons.

DING!

Curse of the Dragon

To heal the Fairy Queen Teneidon's wing, you need to appease Latuas's fury. Fairies ran about gathering clues and found the first step in the Red Reed Forest.

Difficulty: C

Quest Restriction:

Only those who are trustworthy.

Only those who helped the fairies.

‘Difficulty of C. But this will lead to unbelievable chain quests and it will be difficult to cope with later on. Even this scene will be known through broadcasts on the internet and TV.’

Weed finished his internal calculations.

Usually if he thought he could not manage a quest, he did not accept it in the first place. But there was the adverse effect of souring his relationship with the fairies by rejecting the quest.

In the battle against Balkan, he didn’t bring any Sculpture Lifeforms because of Undead Summon. It could be said it was because of his affection for them. He did not want to see his Sculpture Lifeforms reviving as Undead and fighting against him.

In the worst case scenario of accepting this quest, he could find himself and all his Sculpture Lifeforms being slaughtered. It was common sense to never accept such a quest and he did not have any heart to.

“Will he accept the quest?”

“It’s Weed-nim the God of War.”

“This will leave another record of Weed-nim amazing quests.”

The sound of envy could be heard from other players.

‘But on the other hand, those numerous people who are after me will know about me taking this quest. If I take the quest for now, I won’t be interrupted and will be able to take care of other things.’

Weed nodded his head.

“I will definitely cure the Fairy Queen’s wing.”

You have accepted the quest.

“Wow, he really accepted the quest!”

“Weed decided to carry out the request from the Fairy Queen!”

“My word! I can see the message boards going crazy already.”

It was obvious these players were surprised. They had no idea what Weed’s true intention was.

‘There is no time limit to the quest anyways so maybe I should try it next year? No, it will still be dangerous then. I might just roll myself off the cliff. Maybe the year after? Or maybe after my sister has graduated from university…”

Chapter 11: Weed's Call

Weed and the players were invited to a feast by the fairies. Versailles continent, the Spirit World and their own settlements, the fairies come and go bringing specialties from different regions.

—Eat up.

—Thank you for healing our queen.

The Geomchis exchanged glances and left the dungeon first. While the flavor was good, the portion size was way too small for them so they thought it would ruin their appetite. They went outside to roast some meat and eat more comfortably.

But Weed stayed till the end, eating the fairies' cooking.

You tasted a new sensation.

Mastery has increased because your cooking skill is over Intermediate.

These rare foods from the Spiritual and the Fairy world increased cooking skill.

"Hmm, this is edible."

When the food he tasted was based on ingredients he used a lot before, he was able to grasp the recipe. It was really difficult to create new recipes with unique spices and herbs that humans didn't even use. This was a rare opportunity that he had to take advantage of.

Because if he wanted to be satiated with the fairies' food, he would need to eat at least 250 of their dishes.

'If I advertise spirits' food, I will be able to rip off customers.'

Hwaryeong and Bellot ate the different dishes in a refined manner. They changed to appropriate attire for the feast and even ate and drank the less than pleasant food with elegance.

Through the Fairies' feast, your dignity and manner increased.

After the end of the feast, they returned to Vargo Fortress.

Weed laughed dismally.

"Ahahahaha."

He calculated the amount of treasures and items dropped after hunting Balkan and his share was only about 680 thousand gold. The treasures would take time to sell, so they decided that when

merchants come to Vargo Fortress they would sell as much as the merchants would buy and split the gold.

"The bonus is quite good at least."

Vargo Fortress was now his territory. Right now, only the piles of stones, destroyed towers and wreckages of buildings were left. The damage was relative to the huge battle that had taken place.

"I wonder what kind of place this is? Region Information Window!"

Vargo Fortress

Once a fortress occupied by the Undead.

It's only recently that humans have reclaimed it.

In the past, it was a fortress occupied by the Niflheim Empire where it serves as an important gateway.

Vast swaths of forests and jagged mountains are part of the territory.

Currently there are no residents.

Through war, the fortress is heavily damaged and needs

extensive repairs.

The river is contaminated and it's hard to obtain drinking water.

Due to monsters the region is not safe.

Specialty: None

It was much worse than early Morata which was filled with houses that looked like they could collapse at any moment. The quiet downriver or the peaceful hills would be much better than the fortress, whose public order was under threat by the monsters.

Like Weed, it was common for people to become lords by gaining the trust of the king, nobles or villagers through their own adventures. But occasionally there were people that became lords by raising their own village.

As Versailles continent was quite large, anyone could build a house nearby a mountain or a river and start farming and raise livestocks. After a while by accepting nomads and expanding the village, they suddenly found themselves as lord of the village.

"But the fact that there is this huge fortress here means in the past it must have been quite active. This must have been considered an important stronghold."

Vargo Fortress was large enough for the whole Undead Legion to stay in. An expansive fortress that even allowed Bone Dragons to

rampage on its rooftops. Because of that, the destruction was even greater.

“The grounds filled with buried Undead... If the priests cleanse it, it should be enough to plant some grains. But still with the contaminations there won’t be much harvest, this place will be useless for at least 2 years. ”

Even the river was wide and its flow was majestic. It was proof that there was no signs of draughts and it was quite bountiful. The nature scenery, with its mountains and river was on par with Morata.

For Weed, he gained new lands so he might as well develop this place as well. As he already raised Morata, the experience from it should be a tremendous help.

“Morata Region Information Window!”

Region of Morata

A region that once was part of the Niflheim Empire.

Currently, by the strength of lord Weed’s excellent choices, the development is continuing.

Morata has become the representative city that showcases the best in the North, becoming the center for arts, trades and adventures.

Two great structures, the Freya Cathedral and the North's Great Library have been completed.

Military Force: 259 Economic power: 2,969

Culture: 3,129 Technology: 843

Religious Influence: 87

Regional Politics: 69 Influence on Nearby Areas: 74%

Influence from the past Niflheim Empire: 16.5%

(Influence is deeply rooted to the military, economics, culture, technology, religion, population, quests etc.)

City Development Rate: 269

Hygiene: 39 Public Order: 88%

Recently the Undead Legion has been repulsed without any severe damages.

Influx of population is continuing but as roads and enough residency has been prepared in advance, the residents do not feel any discomfort.

With the active trades and commerce, a high income bracket is being created.

With the increase of Morata's regional fame, three specialties have been added: silverware, palm wine, luxury textiles.

The Cathedral and the Great Library are the resident's pride.

Morata heavily influences the nearby region in terms of politics, economics and culture.

This year is expected to yield a bountiful harvest.

Thoughts of rebellion cannot be imagined.

Enough military forces have been retained to fight the monsters.

Through the increase in military spending, the soldiers and knights have greater loyalty.

The magnificent sculptures are bringing happiness to the residents.

The standards of paintings are rising.

The artist's endless trust and financial support has become the

dynamic for cultural development.

Morata's Art Center has become the cornerstone for new artists in the whole of the Northern continent, storing many of their created pieces.

Due to the Great Library, education, magic and adventure is robust.

Through education and high culture, many children who are smart and wise are born. If you teach them 10 things, they will only forget about 5 at the end of the month!

The tailoring industry's skill is being inherited. The tailors can use leather, fabric and lavish products to make clothes.

Blacksmith's iron wielding skills are at a level that they can heat up iron and hit it with their hammer. Master craftsmen have appeared and are leading the skill development.

Regional religion: most residents believe in Freya.

The wastelands have been cultivated into a fertile granary zone.

This year is a bountiful year for crops.

With strong faith and steady public order, crime rate has reduced greatly.

Specialties: Arts, leather and fabric, tomatoes, grapes, rice, cow, milk, cheese, wine, silverware, palm wine, luxury textiles.

Total Population: 1, 175, 704

Monthly Tax Income: 953, 290 gold

Village Operating Expenses: Military 5%, Economic development 36%, Cultural investment 14%, Quests and Monster Hunts 16%, Village Repairs 25%, Offering to the Church of Freya 4%.

You have received a title from Morata's resident, 'The Greatest Ruler in the North'.

It prevents the residents' loyalty from dropping.

Increases population influx.

Morata was a great city that he could boast about anywhere. Without him doing anything, it expanded and developed day by day.

When the adventurers in the north excavated an item and discovered it was an artwork, they exhibited it at the Art Center. They offered religious items to the Cathedral and displayed other items in the Great Library. Through items brought by adventurers, the north was in the grip of adventure fever.

The influence of the great constructions was huge, as well as the word of mouth from the players that started in Morata, more and more people gathered there everyday. With the inflow of players and residents, Morata's technology developed daily with greater competition in business leading to a stronger financial position for the city.

Looking from high above, the buildings were widely spread out, there was the statue of the goddess, the tower of light and the great constructions making a scene of grandeur. It was an unimaginable change compared to the early Morata, filled with shabby buildings under the dark stars and the tower of light.

Merchants who were doing business in Morata came to Vargo Fortress in droves.

"This is my spot."

"What nonsense are you spouting? I already drew a line and sat down before you!"

Weed and the players obtained a tremendous amount of drops and japtems through their battles with the Undead Legion. The drops from the Bone Dragons and the Vandal Knights were not something that could be acquired easily.

Merchants from Morata came here in droves to trade for those items.

“I am Dapala, I professionalize in selling general merchandise. Please add Dapala to your friend list any time and browse my wares comfortably.”

“Weapons trader Cormac is here. From simple repairs to appraisal and trades. Please come, I will give you a good deal.”

“Ingredient specialist, Hapote. I picked these fresh from a neighbor's house, I sell these ingredients at the smallest possible margin. Please cook yourself delicious meals!”

About 100 merchants came to Vargo Fortress and prepared their shops for business.

“Did they pull their wagons to get here?”

“At best, there are only about a 1000 of us here... there are just too many merchants.”

Although it was convenient to use their services, the players felt sorry for troubling someone who seemed worse off than themselves. Trying to do business in a place with few customers, the competition must be really harsh. They were even able to meet merchants who were famous in Morata.

But on the afternoon of the same day. Other players crowded into

Vargo Fortress!

"We arrived!"

"There are no paved roads so it's really difficult to come here. But still, they say there are so many hunting grounds here."

"I heard you can meet the elves. Let's hurry and go talk with them."

"Wow, it's completely in ruins! I am going to build a new house and live here."

As soon as players who leveled up in Morata received the information about Weed obtaining a new territory, they all pushed toward Vargo Fortress. Because Weed was the lord, they assumed Vargo Fortress will be the next to experience an unbelievably fast development.

By coming early and preoccupying their spot, their privilege later on will be greater. Just by building a brick houses near Vargo Fortress to live in they could boast about it to their friends. It was a place with a lot of land to pioneer and many unknown hunting grounds that were spread out.

"I'm going to take a look at the land first."

Farmers searched around the river to look for fertile flood plains. Adventurers chatted with the elves and barbarians, looking for any

decent dungeons in the vicinity. There were many priests and paladins going to dungeons and the Geomchis enjoyed their new found popularity. They fought well and were trustworthy as they tried to protect the priests completely, everyone wanted to have them in their party.

The fortress built from stones was covered with wreckages but many people were already crowding it. The merchants sensed this and ran here in a hurry. Before the sun set, a second and even a third wave of settler groups arrived.

Because there were no magical lamps in Vargo Fortress like Morata, they used bonfires and torches.

And as there were no inns or restaurants, they laid on the stone rubble near the fire to take a brief nap. It was the romance of roasting meat while staring at the stars!

“Hm! Beer that wafts a nice aroma!”

Dwarves were drawn by the smell of beer.

“Please sit down. Do you want a pint?”

“Sure.”

Sharing their drinks with the dwarves they became closer. And as queen Teneidon was healed, the fairies became more active.

In Morata and other places they could catch an occasional glimpse once in a blue moon, but here in Vargo Fortress there were many fairies flying around in the vicinity, fluttering with their mysterious silver wings.

In between the business and drinking their beer, if they paused for a bit, they could even hear the fairies talk.

— It's meat, meat.

— The aroma is so good.

— Eat. Eat. Nom Nom Nom.

The fairies were eating the ribs the people were holding.

Geomchi27 became friendly with a female priest, they walked on the cobble road while they dated.

"This place has a nice atmosphere, don't you think?"

"It's scary. The collapsed brick wall... It feels like a monster is going to jump out at any moment."

"Then I will protect you no matter what."

Geomchi27 showed off his trustworthy masculine charm.

There were fairies following them as well. They followed behind them like seagulls following in the sea. When the female priest gave them something to eat from her backpack, they even performed aerial stunts!

After spending the night like that, in the morning there were even more people in Vargo Fortress.

Sometimes fairies brought whole orchards or farmlands from the other region, saying they were repaying their debts.

“Two paladins, three priests wanted for a party. We are aiming for a dungeon.”

“Looking for a party member for a nearby dungeon hunt! Level 310 or more, it’s still dangerous so I am gathering as many players as possible before going.”

“Anyone fish? Let’s trade information about fishing and catch some real fish.”

Resident population in Vargo Fortress has exceed over 2,000.

This was the population that came from Morata in just one day.

Due to the active commerce, there is now tax income.

All taxes will be used to repair the fortress.

If the lord’s office is prepared, the tax distribution can be adjusted.

With the immigration of residents, the major repair of Vargo Fortress started. As the fortress was quite large, there were many places that needed repairs. With the collapsed towers and buildings, it looked like they had to be completely rebuilt.

But as immigrants continued to come and with players looking for new adventures, the fortress was filled with new life.

Human merchants weren’t the only ones selling their wares in Vargo Fortress.

“Selling tree fruits, medicinal herbs and seeds.”

Female elves came to trade as well. They sold goods brought from the forests and purchased what they needed. Dwarves came as well, sold quality war materials and went back with wagons full of beers. Barbarians had lots of items they needed as well. They brought in leather and japtem.

This was proof that Vargo Fortress, as an important gateway of the Northern continent, was regaining its previous form.

Weed was hoping for it.

“Make alcohols with fruits from elves, rip off barbarians with hunting goods and shove around dwarves as laborers to make weapons, armors and houses....”

This was the utopian city he dreamt of!

“ROOOOOAAAR”

Bingryong was hunting on the mountain near Morata! Every time he roared, monsters hurriedly flatten themselves to hide from him. When he flew around the vicinity of the mountain, his large form struck fear into the monsters.

“This guy is mine!”

Wyverns divided the forests and were hard at work hunting. If a monster stronger than them appeared, the Wyverns could bunch up on it together.

“We should go further in.”

“Further than here?”

“I want to kill something big.”

The large flaming Phoenix flew over the sea and hunted a variety of large monsters. Compared to them, Golden Bird, Silver Bird, Gold Man and Yellowy moved quietly.

“This way. The birds told me.”

They hunted in the hunting ground the birds told them about and hunted together. It was a friendly, happy time!

Sculpture Lifeforms from Jigolaths also hunted in their own territories. Unfortunately there were some who died due to monster attacks but most of them adapted well and were growing up.

Suddenly a Whisper was sent to all of them.

Are you guys doing well?

It was their creator who gave them life!

Bingryong responded too quickly.

I was really hap… I mean, I am doing well

Wyverns also greeted their owner.

My back is warm and my stomach is full.

Ate a delicious animal today.

Wy-Three ate more.

Wyverns had a difficult time not tattling everything.

Golden Bird, Silver Bird and Gold Man responded haughtily that they are fine

Yollowy answered in a friendly manner.

I missed you master.

Weed also had favorable opinions of the docile yet brave Yellowy.

I was the same.

I am relieved now that I can at least hear your voices.

We can all be together again. You guys all come here.

It was now time to see some action together with the Sculpture Lifeforms.

Book 25: Diary Of Queen Evane

Chapter 1: Bardray's Ascension

Treasures were piled up like a mountain in front of Weed, the Geomchis, priests and paladins.

After the decisive defeat of Balkan and the Undead Legion, they acquired vast sums of gold, silver, treasure, antiques and equipment.

"Wow, are you really dividing the spoils?"

"Must be tens of thousands of gold. Including all the armour, it will be over one hundred thousand gold."

The players were extremely happy hearing the news.

"Getting some of this is awesome. I could build a Villa in Morata."

"It's all thanks to Weed-nim that we enjoyed such success. We must never forget this generosity."

"Please add me next time as well. If it is Weed-nim I will come whenever you call."

Weed's anger boiled inside as he heard the thanks from the paladin and priest players.

‘This is the reason why kind people do not live long!’

To share the riches evenly, their hearts must be filled with unfairness and misery of it all, shorten their lifespan.

“Everyone please take your share.”

Mapan with several famous paladin players began weighing the mountain of treasure, gold and silver and distributing it to the other players. They could not do anything about the item drops the individuals collected during battle but the treasures in the Undead Legion’s fortress were shared fairly based on the contribution each person made.

“We won’t need to grind for money now. Let’s eat and drink a lot today.”

“I can buy a bunch of magic arrows for hunting. Hurray!”

Overjoyed by the gold and silver they received, the players expressed their gratitude to Weed.

‘This is a nightmare. If I close and open my eyes they will all disappear.’

Weed’s insides were burning pitch black at the sight. Closing his eyes tightly and opening them, there were still players with happy

smiles on their faces as they receive their gold, silver and treasure.

Sharing the spoils killed a person faster than drinking, smoking or doing drugs.

Weed could feel his blood drying out every time the pile of loot became smaller. Regardless, a 3rd of the treasure looted from the Undead Legion was his share which was still an astronomical amount.

And everyone congratulated each other on winning the difficult battle.

*****

Lee Hyun turned on the television to watch while he ate his dinner. For a long time the channel he watched was KMC media. Not only were there many media appearances of him, the schedule was neat and the shows told a lot of useful information.

“Look at the pile of treasure over there. It has been decreasing since morning. The players who fought together with War God Weed are receiving their shares from it.”

“So Weed really kept his promise.”

“Yes. No matter how many times you look, this is a heart-warming scene. The War God sent Balkan to his eternal rest and completely routed the Undead Legion! You can’t say this isn’t

amazing.”

Lee Hyun lost his appetite right at that moment.

*****

The distribution of the Undead Legion’s treasure became the biggest topic on the Versailles continent. They originally agreed to do it, but to actually share it was another story.

Lies, scams! Such honesty did not exist in the world that fanned distrust. So this was an inspirational story that people could be proud of in the Versailles continent.

Weed’s true desire to keep everything for himself burned fiercely like a furnace in winter.

His only relief was that he received the rights to Vargo Fortress and temporarily gained the Church of Lugh’s holy sword.

“Identify!”

Sword of Lugh: Durability 140/140, Attack 165~317.

Sword sent from the god for the humans.

The sword has been impaled inside the Lich Balkan for a long

time, suppressing his dark magic.

If the sword restores its Sun Power, the Church of Lugh will be able to recover a weapon of god.

Restriction: Church of Lugh's Paladin.

Faith: 1,350.

Can only be used with the permission from the Church.

Option: Suppresses dark mana.

During a crusade it can create a miracle.

Cannot be destroyed.

Dominates monsters lower than intermediate level.

*Remaining options impossible to check.

This was an item that had to be returned to the Church of Lugh.

"There is a Church of Lugh in Morata, I can return it there."

Weed received it from Geomchi121 who landed the last attack on

Balkan and was keeping it for a short while.

"If there is an item to grab and run, this is it..."

Greed churned vigorously in Weed again; but this type of weapon could only be used by a paladin or with the approval of the church. Stealing and using this would instantly turn him into the Lugh Church's public enemy, the sword could even become cursed because of it.

"Anyway, I need to return it!"

Inscribing this magnanimous act into his heart, he decided to return Lugh's sword! Weed decided that he would go to the Church of Lugh in Morata personally to return it. Once he returned the sword, even the players who participated in the battle would receive contribution points.

"For the time being I don't think there is any pressing work in Morata."

The drops from Balkan's death were mostly Necromancer exclusive items. Balkan's skull, boots, cloak, robe, ring and necklace that formed a complete set of Balkan's items! These truly were items that had an unfathomable price.

These were things that Geomchi121 did not need. Combining with the magic book Weed had, it completed Balkan's full set.

A complete set of Balkan's items have been gathered in one place.

If you are a Necromancer, a special skill, Lich's Power can be used.

These were items that allowed one to succeed Lich Balkan's legacy. By becoming a Lich in Vargo Fortress and using Balkan's skull it was possible to use his 3 Great Magics. They were frightful items that had no equal!

But due to the items having adverse side effects, it would be difficult to change back into human form after he used them. Of course only by agreeing to provide Geomchi121 a lifetime supply of free meat, weapons,armour and 2000 oak barrels of alcohol, did he receive them from him.

But wearing the Necromancer exclusive gear constantly permeated bad feelings so he could not use it. Weed decided to just keep it for now.

"There are more than one kind of people in the world. There is definitely someone out there who wants to be like Balkan. The Necromancers will not always be peaceful, when that moment comes I can sell it off."

When a person dreaming of becoming an evil Lich appears, Weed would be the first in line to bargain off the items rather than restricting them from it. However Balkan's equipment was restricted to high level and skill so there would be no chance to sell it to someone for some time.

Those who did not have the blacksmith skill like Weed had to be at the minimum level of 460 to use Balkan's items. The boots at least were on the low side of the level restriction, however with the robe, ring and necklace they had to be over level 520.

Since these was equipment that Necromancers desired, they would have to curry favor with Weed. They were firmly trapped by their own desires.

*****

The goods brought by the merchants to Vargo Fortress were all sold out. It was thanks to the share of the gold, silver and treasure that the players received and they were spending freely. Vargo Fortress became more active as the elves, barbarians, dwarves, and fairies came causing more people and players to gather there.

With a swift decision Mapan set up an exchange station, exchanging ancient gold coins and charging commission.

"Ah, I have so much money how can I spend it all?"

"Should we change swords?"

"Could hunting become easier then? In the morning I am going to try changing most of my gear to dwarf equipment."

Vargo Fortress was bustling with players wanting to spend money. The vicinity was filled with hunting grounds no one found yet. Mountains, hills, forests and valleys, the local area had many hunting areas. The reason for many different tribes of barbarians living near Vargo Fortress was for the battles and hunting.

Weed conversed with the elders and the chieftains with his high fame and intimacy, acquiring information about the nearby dungeons.

“According to the dwarven tribe of the Hardened Earth there is a dungeon nearby…”

“Go a bit further. It’s what the dwarves said so it’s certainly there.”

Weed with Pale, Irene, Romuna, Hwaryeong and Surka searched for the dungeons in the vicinity.

“They were not drinking beer that time so I am certain the information is right.”

In between the boulders they found the entrance to the dungeon.

Dungeon, you are the first discoverer of, ‘The Hidden Pit’.

Privileges: Fame increases by 415.

Double experience and item drop rate for one week.

Very first monster type you hunt will drop the best possible item.

The search for the dungeon near Vargo Fortress! If the hunting ground was doable with their levels, they swept through it. Recklessly exploring an unknown dungeon was truly dangerous. Traps were installed, with some areas that had an abnormal standard or quantity of monsters.

Of course during those occasions Hwaryeong with her dance could put them to sleep, and with Balkan dead, Weed could summon Death Knight and Vampire Lord without any trouble.

“Van Hawk, Torido, to the front!”

Their long holiday was finished.

“Thank you for calling me after a long time, master.”

“I was longing for hot blood.”

It was time for Van Hawk and Torido to do their part.

“Wipe them out completely.”

Those two were teammates who have been synchronizing their

fights for so long that their hunting speed was very fast.

Weed also alternated his hunting party and went with the Geomchis, levelling up with them.

Barbarians or dwarves, they wanted to talk to Weed so it was easy to find hunting grounds.

“I want to fight monsters.”

“For a long time these guys were bothering us. Their tracks are somewhere in the north... Our warriors followed the tracks but they disappeared by the tree in the groves. If you can find it please help us.”

“Don’t we need beer?”

“If it is for beer I will do it anytime”

“There is no difference between us brothers and the dwarves who fought against the Undead. I want to know more about what’s troubling you.”

“Hmm, recently good iron ores are hard to find. If you have good iron ore at this time the price would not be a problem. In the old days when the fortress was normal the mountain behind it had a mine that we extracted a lot of iron ores from... If the humans could help us dwarves we would like to mine those iron ores.”

“Of course we’ll cooperate. With a lot of iron ores you dwarves can make weapons and armor and market them at Vargo Fortress while paying heavy taxes... I mean, it would be good if you took back lots of beer.”

At Vargo Fortress there was much work to do as well.

“Excuse me, I know you are busy but I brought materials. Is it possible you could make a sculpture for me?”

“This is gold with many impurities. If it isn’t pure gold the sculpture is not easy to make... Well, I will do it specially for you.”

“Thank you very much for considering my order. When will the sculpture be done?”

“There is a backlog of orders... please wait a while.”

The precious jewels of Vargo Fortress were Weed’s share. Selling sculptures he made, the leftover materials went into his pack! It was a method of bringing 3 rabbits into a restaurant and getting 3 rabbit soups but with another big pot left over!

“It’s definitely faster to become rich by embezzling materials than by making money by selling sculptures!”

Weed’s fame as a sculptor was so great that they gave him

expensive materials to make sculptures without hesitation. Usually he made sculptures out of wood in between hunting, now they brought the best gold or silver, sometimes mythril to sculpt as well.

He had to make a sculpture that fit the person's taste so he could not attempt any daring pieces. But doing this still increased a small amount of mastery in the sculpting skill. Once or twice a masterpiece with high artistic value did come out. But as his sculpting skill was at advance level 8 the mastery rose slowly.

"It's fine. There are only two more levels left. I don't need to rush."

They even celebrated the New Year during their hunting. Hwaryeong, Bellot and Maylon had work so they missed it, the people that left prepared a small cosy amount of food as they watched the sun come up making their wishes.

'I wish to earn a scholarship so I can travel with Maylon.'

'My hands became better at hitting monsters. I am going to hit them many, many times. '

'Should I change to a Necromancer? But I also want to see the final flame magic...'

'This year I am going to wish for no one to die from a botched surgery.'

‘Please help me date Yurin in this New Year.’

‘To rake in money following Weed-nim…’

They all had a variety of wishes, but compared to them Weed had a simple wish.

‘Let’s stay healthy. Or else there will be hospital bills. ’

Being healthy is best.

*****

The Sculpture Lifeforms arrived at Vargo Fortress after being called from Morata.

Mooooo.

Yellowy dragged his feet as he forced himself to come closer. It was plain to see he did not want to come!

“I am pleased to see you as well. If you really missed me, let's never part ways again.”

Moooooooo!

Bingryong and Phoenix had large bodies so they could not hunt in dungeons. But Gold Man, Golden Bird and Silver Bird fought together through the dangerous dungeons and nimbly broke through them. Level 440 dungeons had particular themes or put out an ominous odour in their vicinity.

Nest on Kildeke Mountain!

The whole area was a hunting ground. The large area had a scenery filled with mountain peaks and flying monsters.

Compared to his other party members, his connection time was longer. During the time Pale and his friends did not come he hunted with the Geomchis or partook in aerial battles at the Kildeke Mountain ranges with Phoenix, Wyverns and Bingryong,

KUNNNNG!

There was a sound of lightning far away with the sky flashing brightly for a moment. Even when the rain was about to pour from the sky, Weed was flying on Wy-Three.

“Master, at this rate aren’t we going to get hit by lightning?”

“It’s going to be okay.”

“But getting hit still hurts…”

“If we want to make a living we can’t afford to take a break even when the weather is bad.”

Weed and the Wyverns were not the only ones flying in the sky, it was also filled with monsters protecting their domain on the Kildeke Moutain. While Weed could not see properly, he still brandished his sword about.

“Moonlight Sculpting Blade!”

Coordinating with Wy-Three the monster’s wings were sliced off. Slightly higher up was Phoenix and lower down was Bingryong, who was fighting carefully without risking himself.

Van Hawk was also summoned, riding around on his phantom steed. Vampire Lord Torido was there fighting with a swarm of bats.

“They are all fighting well.”

Weed collected many Sculpture Lifeforms as underlings in Jigolaths, but he felt greater sentiment towards the sculptures he carved as they had been doing things together for a long time.

“Give treats to the bastard and order the docile ones to hunt a hundred more times.”

So forgetting about everything and focusing solely on hunting, his level went up 3 times. Weed’s current level was 403. Players

with level 400 were overall few in number and were recognized by everyone for their strength.

It was an accomplishment that got delayed by giving life to the sculptures, but with manufacturing skills and making even more sculptures, he reached the level with an enormous stat boost.

*****

1 month passed in real time and during that period Vargo Fortress saw a tremendous amount of development. The population reached 30 thousand and the collapsed walls were gradually built up. But the Fortress did not earn enough money to maintain its walls or operate, so Weed's recent windfall went into the fortress without leaving him with any spare change.

Along the twisted roads where the walls were repaired, houses were built. Following the cleanup of the Fortress it was found that the knight's drill hall, basic training centre and warrior guilds could be rebuilt where they originally were.

Although only half the place where the Bone Dragon rampaged was cleaned up, more players came and now there were tens of thousands of them.

"It's night already?"

The players in the central square looked up at the sky. In no time at all the sun settled down and became dark and the moon and the

stars appeared.

“It’s about time, they are starting to come.”

The person resting and checking on his weapons stood up. The soldiers eating something in the restaurant came outside in full armour. Knights and soldier’s equipment were quite heavy so when there was no battle they hardly wore it.

People changed their tune when they searched for people to party with.

“Looking for people to protect the west wall together.”

“Fighting monsters climbing over the north gate. Specially looking for someone with intermediate level 6 Shield Bash.”

“The collapsed wall south east from here needs a priest. Priests please come with me.”

At the Square combatants were recruited in large numbers. Magicians’ lit lamps, where the lines of torches were erected.

Swarms of monsters are approaching to plunder the provisions.

Monsters advanced every night! Monsters that the Necromancers fought before in the Undead Legion quest were now invading Vargo Fortress.

Although now, with the wall as defensive support it was easier to hunt. The players joined forces, the residents shot arrows and stones against the enemy.

Battle erupted every night in Vargo Fortress. No where else in the continent did the monsters so frequently swarm together to siege a fortress. Because Vargo Fortress was quite far from Morata and with the mountain ranges in the west and north that provided breeding grounds, the monsters attacked in quite large numbers.

When the Undead Legion existed Balkan turned them all into Undead. Now that the Undead Legion was gone the players had to defend the fortress. And if the monsters broke through Vargo Fortress, they would pass this area and spread all over the north.

To defend the fortress and prevent mass breeding of the monsters Weed had to continually invest the taxes into repairing the fortress and its walls as the destruction from the monster's attacks were endless.

It was the lord's duty to provide help to the players by repairing the walls. It was only due to Weed's fame and his position as lord of Morata that the players were flocking to Vargo Fortress.

If he left the crumbling fortress because of the monster attacks it would leave the players exposed to danger that would grow exponentially. The whole Northern continent would be affected if people left Vargo Fortress as the monsters would spread out unchecked and create turmoil.

Weed cried blood while standing on top of the central tower in Vargo Fortress.

“Residents increase and hunting happens but no tax is left.”

Income tax disappeared scarily fast. Holding on to the taxes for even a moment was difficult as the fortress’ extensive network of walls was being repaired without stop. His precious money was being scattered to the wind and all of it went into military spendings.

Vargo Fortress Military Power

Novice Knights: 58

Average Level: 196

Soldiers without battle experience: 4,312

Average Level: 52

Loyalty: 91%

Training: 46%

An army has been created with immigrants from Morata.

Army’s recruitment was focused on hunters or sturdy young men.

The knights are becoming stronger in order to survive.

Soldiers respect their lord and are honest in their service. But they are worried as they are thrown into battle without proper training. But as they are fighting defensively behind the fortress wall, they have some confidence.

They do not provide public order, but the situation is dire without them.

The fortress wall has to be fixed as fast as the frequency of the monster invasions. Putting one eye on another work could turn the whole Vargo Fortress into a monster village.

An army had to be created as the Church of Freya did not provide protection as it did with Morata. Weed’s method of growing the armed forces was, if they live they become stronger!

All soldiers were archers and to make them learn how to use the bow they were all deployed on top of the fortress wall.

In the future as detachments of archers were settled in, there was a plan for a large scale enlistment of infantry for an expedition to the monster’s habitat. If the army could subjugate the monster’s den they could earn treasure and also the frequency of dangerous

monsters coming near the fortress would be reduced.

While shops and guilds were necessary, public order was also an important factor for beginners to start at Vargo Fortress.

“If they come we can exploit them to our heart's content.”

There was much work to be done in Vargo Fortress and it required a lot of manual labour forces. He was eager to start the exploitation so his main priority was increasing public order.

There were fights that erupted in between the fortress wall and occasionally the situation was almost perilous. As many players left for dungeons or for adventures, there were many occasions where the defending forces were too few in numbers. But the players fought hard and resiliently.

Fortresses in the central continent were well prepared against monsters with strong walls, they even had moats dug up in case of sieges. The mere thought of monsters invading a village was not even considered.

There was never a dull moment in Vargo Fortress as small to big swarms of monsters came to attack it constantly. In the worst case, it could be said that Vargo Fortress itself was a hunting ground.

“Where do I hunt here?”

“One good bow, also pack many arrows and go up the fortress

wall.”

For swordsmen and knights different advice was given.

“If you want to fight as much as you want go outside the fortress wall and wait for a while. Death or fame, at the end it will be one of the two!”

That many monsters came flocking toward the fortress.

If seen this way, the Undead Legion could not be mocked. They had no stockpile of provisions to steal from and just by coming close would turn the monsters into Undead. Just the news of human occupation of the fortress spreading to the monsters energized them into attacking, as they could steal the mass provisions that were being transported to the fortress.

Weed could bring Morata’s army here, or otherwise as lord withdrawing massive funds to invest into Vargo Fortress.

“I don’t know if this might just become a bottomless hole... Still its too early to decide.”

Morata was the more impressive city and it lacked for nothing. So the residents and players crossed over to the fortress and helped with the development. There were even skilled personnel that came from Morata and helped accelerate the development of commerce on an incomparable scale. If only the development rate was compared, excluding Morata, Vargo Fortress was the next best

place in the whole of the Northern continent.

The daily battle in Vargo Fortress was at such a degree that it popped up on the message boards.

Title: For the best place to level up, don’t hesitate and hurry over here.

Increase your level and also take advantage of this chance to increase skill mastery.

Come and see! It’s everywhere. It’s even stacked up.

Make friends and hunt together.

Title: Today was really dangerous

Hello. This is Liz once again uploading the daily battle against the monster invasion in Vargo Fortress.

The video uploaded today was 2 hours of dizziness. During today's battle, the east wall that was built several days ago collapsed.

The speed in which the walls are constructed has sped up these days, could it be the foundation that was weak? Or the lord using cheap construction methods? However I was suspicious about the possibility of the wall collapsing for a long time so I was able to

avoid it without any danger to my life.

But monsters entered through the breach and the battle erupted inside the fortress... It was frantic.

I am sure you are asking, why should we struggle so much? Why not just go to a dungeon or a hunting ground?

Well, when the morning comes and the monsters are repelled, people are hugging and are filled with so much joy. It's happiness that only people who were in the battle can know.

Videos related to Vargo Fortress pull in a lot of interest as it was the Undead Legion's previous base and presently Weed was the lord.

At first, even if it was Weed, the people thought that he would give up on the region because of its dangers. But as they watched on, they could not help but feel admiration from the constant videos of the players and residents coming together and defending the fortress.

There were no safe days, they had to continuously fight and defend the fortress. It was a region where their survival was a daily battle. It was a fortress and a hunting ground.

Regardless of Vargo Fortress's development it was a place that drew in popularity. It was the forefront where warriors from the Northern continent gathered to fight perilous battles with the

monsters.

*****

Baran village was located south of Rosenheim Kingdom. It was a famous city where a player could gain a seed for doing the elder Ghandilva's request and use it to ascend to the City of Heaven Lavias. There was also the statue of goddess Freya that Weed made in his earlier days with immature workmanship, but the piece he sculpted in Seo Yoon's image made the village widely known!

"Really, it's a well-made sculpture."

"If this woman really existed, it would be great. Just seeing her face I could live happily forever."

"Perish the thought. This kind of woman does not exist in this world. It's Weed's sculpting skill that is unbelievably advanced."

The visitors' went to sightsee the sculpture once before leaving to hunt or they conversed with the residents. Meeting the residents allowed them to hear stories about quests, hunting grounds or talks of new dungeons.

There were pre-established dungeons but monsters could, later on, gather together and create a new one. The residents or the hunters could spot such signs beforehand and if the players built up intimacy with them, they could hear about such stories.

However one day the village people started becoming slightly strange.

“I will serve wholeheartedly.”

“Yes?”

“Listen to the teachings of the great god that will protect this worthless continent.”

“……”

Some residents were looking at the sky blankly. When the players got closer and engaged them in a conversation, they told a story.

“I have to offer my money to the church. To create a bigger army! Half of my income is no great loss.”

“What…”

“That army is going to save us.”

“Which army is going to save you?”

“Ack! I cannot tell you anymore. If you don’t have a holy heart then leave the village now. Only Embinyu god can clean this sinful

world…”

The players coming to Baran village seeking its quest were amazed by the unfamiliar response from the residents. Wasn’t the Church of Embinyu the ones plunging the Central continent into disarray?

And one day the village elder Ghandilva no longer gave quests.

“The people who believe in the Church of Embinyu will receive the seeds for free.”

It was a difficult choice for the players to make. But there was an undercurrent that suggested many changes were coming.

And one day, the sculpture of goddess Freya that Weed carved was destroyed.

*****

Bardray prepared for battle.

“It’s been a long time since I went out to the battlefield.”

After establishing their foundation, Hermes guild no longer needed to fight obstinately.

Hunting monsters, or receiving recognition from the Tower of Warriors, they were ahead of the pack. They did not lack any military subjects in Royal Road.

But the reason for them to start this war, this fight would define Hermes guild.

“We have to show our strength to everyone. We must achieve victory.”

In the fort by the border, Bardray prepared his weapon and went outside. The infantry and knights, mages with siege instrument prepared to march. Their target was Kallamore Kingdom!

With the Haven Kingdom secured, Hermes guild gathered their military forces to occupy the Kallamore Kingdom, initiating a war to conquer them.

The shape of the Black Knight Bardray appeared. The players and the soldiers welcomed him with silence.

He was the one that represented Hermes guild’s absolute and ruthless power. The showed their respect to the person who climbed to the Versailles continents strongest position. Without saying anything to them Bardray climbed the horse that was prepared for him.

“Advance.”

Following their commander's words the fort gate opened and Haven Kingdom’s army advanced toward the Kallamore Kingdom.

“Haven Kingdom’s army is approaching.”

“Ring the emergency alarm!”

The Kallamore Kingdom’s border garrison responded immediately. To repel the enemy invasion, the fortress gate opened and the defense force came out.

“Attack! Attack!.”

Bardray on his horse, ran ahead.

“Bardray is participating in the battle!”

The soldiers and players affiliated with the Hermes guild were focused on Bardray who was at the forefront. The mere fact that he was participating in the war was enough to boost morale to the friendly forces.

“The Black Knight Bardray is at the Haven Kingdom’s side, fighting against us?”

“How can we fight? Should we just surrender?”

At the Kallamore Kingdom's castle, the mere fact that Bardray was approaching Kallamore Kingdom was enough to instill fear. Bardray's valor in battle, his achievement of becoming the top player was so great that it struck fear into the soldier's hearts.

"Unblockable Assault!"

Bardray and his Black Knight guards rode together.

A Knight skill that could only be learned together! Currently in Versailles continent, it was known as the best assault skill. Not only did it increase the horse's speed, it was an assault that pierced in a straight line, smashing through any enemy obstructing their path.

Bardray and the Black Knight guards pierced through the crumbling enemy defense line and established a breach. Like people possessed, the Haven Kingdom soldiers gave a loud war cry.

"Everyone attack!"

"Occupy Vatten Castle! Let's push on toward the Kallamore Kingdom's capital and trash it!"

The players and soldiers of the Hermes guild raised their swords and shields and charged. As the siege weaponry broke down the castle wall and gate, Bardray was the first to go in.

"Kill Bardray."

“To protect Kallamore Kingdom Bardray must be killed. Attack!”

Enemies lunging at Bardray were felled by 10, 20 people every time Bardray swung his sword. This was strength that no broadcast or video ever showed!

Bardray displayed a force of arm in a different dimension compared to the other rankers on the Versailles continent, conquering Vatten Castle on the Kallamore Kingdom's border.

Afterwards the Hermes guild followed their set battle plan, leaving behind a supply train and repair corps and advanced onward.

Chapter 2: Grapass

“The feeling of isolation while travelling alone… roaming freely and clearing out monsters, it’s the best feeling!”

Wyverns, Bingryong, Phoenix, Gold Man and Yellowy followed after Weed.

“There, don’t drop it! Pick up the japtem properly!”

Wyverns had to use their claws and beaks to pick up japtem. Every time there was a battle, it created new and pointless agony for them.

‘Isolation?’

‘To be exploiting us like this…’

While they were by themselves they hunted lazily, but as they followed after Weed the amount of work they had to do increased. Hunting, picking up japtem, doing chores, helping with cooking and being a flying transport.

“KIIIINNG!”

The Silver Bird sitting on top of Yellowy made a groaning sound, flapped its wings and suddenly collapsed. This did not work on

Weed.

“You can’t die of exhaustion after this much. Get up quickly.”

Weed had experienced cold fatigue through overwork so many times that he was tired of it, pretending to be ill would never fool him.

Near Vargo Fortress there were plenty of dungeons around that no one dared to enter. There were also many monster dens, villages and hideouts.

On occasions other parties were the first to come and hunt but as the area around Vargo Fortress was in an establishing phase, it was more common for Weed with his companions or with the Sculpture Lifeforms to be the ones to take the first step.

What was good about having fixed party members or hunting with the Sculpture Lifeforms was that he did not need to waste time looking for trustworthy people or spend time trying to coordinate in a new party.

Usually conflict occurred when hunting with new party members due to different opinions and methods to use, but Weed never experienced such occasions.

“Everyone sleep.”

Until Weed spoke to finish up the hunting in the dungeon,

Yellowy was in such a constant state of alert that he was unable to lower his tail. As each of them had their roles to play out in the dungeons filled with strong monsters, there was no time to be careless.

Even when a number of weak monsters appeared, they increased their speed so that they could hunt just one more in an hour.

“Today’s weather is cloudy and rain could come, so let’s spend the whole day hunting inside a dungeon.”

Only Weed had the power to make the absolute decisions regarding hunting or taking breaks.

“The sunlight is really warm. In this weather let’s pack some lunch and go hunting in a dungeon!”

He was a complete tyrant of hunts.

*****

“Found a new dungeon two days ago and looking for people to party up with. People who can dedicate the whole day, people who are already prepared and can leave now.”

“Hunting for treasure, looking for someone with a combat class. I am an adventurer. I have the first clue about the treasure but it’s not so trustworthy. Even then I would like to find people who can share the hardship with me.”

“Any explorers looking to go west? A party of 6 with an average level of 330. Looking for someone to draw a map while exploring.”

Not only was the repair work done in earnest at Vargo Fortress, the current situation attracted many players who wanted to hunt and have adventures near the frontier. As the monster attacks were so frequent, the standards of the players were also high.

“If you are not busy can we go hunt together?”

“Cough, I am not really that busy…”

The Geomchis were constantly popular. Seeing their brilliance in battle, the knights and swordsmen learned something from them. They, the Geomchis, fought fiercely so that the efficiency of the hunting was maximized. Always being at the forefront on the dangerous dungeon paths.

Thanks to them the adventurers were having fun.

“Together with them we can go anywhere.”

“Even if bad things happen they don’t despair.”

During adventures death occurred frequently. The Geomchis lost their lives to monsters or by falling into traps, but their disappointment lied in the fact that they could not protect their

party members to the end. They were true men!

Mapan thought of how to level up fast as a merchant.

“Hyeong-nim, I brought wine and meat.”

“Oh!”

“If you are bored can we go hunting? I improved my cooking skill, and I brought two carriages worth of alcohol and I don’t plan on returning till all my stock is finished!”

“Let’s go!”

For merchants they had a rule, to use any methods possible. As Mapan partied up with the Geomchis his level rose up easily.

“That fruit, it’s a herb!”

“We refine steel and strengthen blades. Anyone who needs it, please come!”

The residents and players had confidence in Weed, who after conquering the fortress had become its lord, and migrated to the fortress. Repair work was constantly underway inside the fortress as businesses were restored, the elves and dwarves nearby came daily to trade their goods.

Looking from afar the fortress was constructed using eerie, black, contaminated rocks that made the place feel like an Undead would pop out any second. But the vitality and life within the fortress was coming back.

Once the crumbling fortress was fully repaired, construction of new buildings would take place.

Starting with Parvo, other architects who polished their skill in Morata now flocked towards Vargo Fortress.

“I think residential buildings can be built later.”

“Yes, I think so as well.”

The residential buildings were not a problem as many shacks could be built on the hills leading up to Vargo Fortress. Of course, later on more luxurious homes would be necessary but right now the priority was on repairing the fortress.

The builders who lacked skill were stuck being safety officers on the work related to repairing the wall. The 1st class builders who were involved in building Parvo’s Art Center and Morata’s business districts were the ones responsible for repairing the buildings inside the fortress.

“Let’s restore this building to its original image.”

“A lot of black stone will be needed.”

“The lord invested such enormous funds into repairing the fortress that it generated quests to gather building materials here. The residents and the amateur merchants are constantly bringing the materials so we have enough to use right now.”

Weed had invested an immense amount of funds into the repairs of Vargo Fortress. In Morata when immense funds were invested it resulted in a festival, here the corruption among soldiers rose and any random residents came to do repair work.

“The place the Bone Dragon rampaged is really problematic... upto how much could we renovate it?”

“As much as we can. We should try our best. The area was melted by the Breath attack and a lot of the support columns are broken, so half of the whole area has to be rebuilt.”

“Hmm, if the scale is that big then this will become a real construction project.”

For the builders, the work of restoring Vargo Fortress was a large project that would leave a mark. Their excitement was growing as funds from the lord and taxes were appropriated for the repair works.

“The tower that the Bone Dragons were in, looking at it, it’s tilted a lot.”

The central tower that was the main attraction of Vargo Fortress! Looking at it from afar or even close up, it was so tilted that it created a strange feeling nearby. It was amazing that it did not collapse or fall yet.

The builders explored the ground and found that due to the firm ground with well-constructed foundations, there was no danger of the tower collapsing.

“Weed-nim instructed us to leave the tower as it is for now.”

For Weed, restoring Vargo Fortress completely to how it was before would cost too much money.

“Doing the interior or any construction, once the money starts going in, unimaginable things will happen that will leave me penniless.”

Not only did the central tower pull people’s gazes, it was a historic place that protected Lich Balkan’s Life Vessel. The tall and enormous construct was too precious to demolish and rebuild.

“Let’s just leave it.”

The best method to preserve the historic building was to leave it without spending any money!

Like the leaning tower of Pisa, the slanted central tower could become Vargo Fortress’ new attraction.

The magicians with high levels and those who became affluent, built their own towers. But compared to those, the height and slant of the central tower was incomparable.

“The feeling of imminent collapse like that of the central tower cannot be found in Versailles continent!”

Presently, most of Vargo Fortress was destroyed and it looked void. The monster invasions, while facilitating easy hunting, were hampering the development of the area.

If there was a method to soothe the depressing atmosphere, it was a sculpture!

Weed made his Wyverns carefully transport boulders to the top of the slanted central tower.

“If I make a sculpture here, then everyone in the fortress will be able to see it.”

It was without a doubt, the best place to exhibit a sculpture. As it was a place that a sculpture would have to withstand rain and wind, a fragile and delicate piece would not suit it very well.

“I have to make a piece that suits the feeling of Vargo Fortress.”

As always, Weed did not think long on the piece he wanted to

make.

“There is a piece that has to be made in this place.”

He started to carve the firm boulder into a sculpture. The residents and players who were coming back from their work or hunting were able to see Weed making a new piece.

“He’s also making a sculpture here. I am really curious to see what it will turn out as.”

Whenever Weed started making a new sculpture, there was always a great interest from the people. If he created a good sculpture like in Morata it would help in many ways so they counted the days on their hands for the completion of the sculpture.

But as Weed came and went from hunting in dungeons, the progress on the sculpture was slow.

“It must be because the sculpture is made with blood, sweat and toil that it’s taking such a long time. ”

“A work of art is not something that you can just make easily.”

The players waited happily!

Weed made a 6 meter high sculpture that could be seen from

anywhere. As the time Weed invested into the sculpture increased, the sculpture was becoming more and more distinct with completion in sight.

And finally a clear figure of the Lich turned Weed, wearing Balkan's items as ornaments took shape.

In the past he played as a Lich in Jigolaths, but he wondered if he could also have become Balkan's heir, inheriting and leading the Undead Legion. With his greed, he would have earnestly followed Balkan's command and in the blink of an eye, betray him and take the Undead Legion for himself.

It was an unknown future that could have happened! If he did not walk the path of a sculptor for such a long time, it was an almost certain future for him.

"I don't know what effect this sculpture will have, but it will definitely come out as a Historic."

Sometimes sculpting created great events. As he completed the Lich sculpture, the negative thoughts of a failed sculpture or even the Undead in the vicinity rising up again were in his mind.

The Lich on the slanted tower was telling of Weed's sculpting skills as it lacked nothing in its details. Looking at the central tower from afar, it was difficult to tell if the Lich was real or not.

"Still, it's missing something."

Seeing that he already made the sculpture, Weed decided to continue it and try to grow the work a bit more.

“A Lich cannot be without a single bodyguard.”

Having made the big Lich sculpture, he sculpted additional 2 meter tall Doom Knights and Death Knights. Even then the Lich was lacking in splendour. Comparing the sculpture to Balkan’s Undead Legion, the Lich was too isolated and lonely.

“It needs something more special.”

Weed pulled out usable sculpting material from his backpack.

The rotten dragon bones!

If it was real dragon bone it would be more precious than gold or mythril, but as it turned into an Undead if it was used as a smithing material it’s ability and durability as an item fell dramatically. And as the Bone Dragon of the Undead Legion was resurrected long ago, the bone’s durability was so low that it was no longer usable for anything.

The item drops from the Bone Dragon were shared among the players, but the bones did not look like they could be made into anything good so they were not popular.

The Geomchis in the past used equipment made from a Bone Dragon crafted by Weed, but the paladins and priests could not equip anything made from bones of the Undead. That's why Weed could claim two sets of dragon bones that the players avoided.

"I have to use these precious materials."

Weed used the same method as melting steel to connected the dragon bones. There were three sets of head parts, but some players wanting souvenirs kept small bones from the body. By melting brass and supplementing those parts, only 3 Bone Dragons could be completed on the central tower.

"Now it looks like something."

Like ramen with kimchi, soondae with tteokbooki, and jajangmyeon with tangsuyuk, it was a fantastic chemistry.

DING!

Please set a name for your sculpture.

"Well, Serious, Cool, Handsome, Rich, Tall, Lich Weed with many Undead underlings!"

Is 'Serious, Cool, Handsome, Rich, Tall, Lich Weed with many Undead underlings' correct?

“Wait, it’s too long so calling it out will be difficult…”

The sculpture was more than a Lich, as Doom Knights, Death Knights, ghosts and other Undead from the Undead Legion were sculpted and placed with the Lich. As Weed was personally part of the Undead Legion’s chain quests he could reproduce the Undead’s image with amazing skill

“No. The sculpture’s name will be ‘The Lich who commands the Undead.’”

Is ‘The Lich who Commands the Undead’ correct?

“Yes.”

Magnum Opus! Sculpture, ‘The Lich who Commands the Undead’ has been complete.

The resting place of the Undead Legion, the Lich sculpture created on the eternal resting place of the legendary monster Balkan!

Balkan was the one that committed many atrocities in the Versailles continent. But without a doubt, he has influenced the flow of history.

Amidst the barren wilderness of the Necromantic skills, he is recognized for the great magical achievement of developing said magic.

Highly respected for his towering artistry and fame there is no one who can criticise Weed, who brought eternal rest to Balkan, for the sculpture he created.

Artistic Value: 8,980.

Special Options: Anyone who sees the sculpture of, ‘The Lich who Commands the Undead’ will regenerate health and mana 32% faster.

All stats increase by 16.

Intelligence and Wisdom increase by 3 permanently.

In the neighbouring area, Necromancers enjoy a +2 increase in their skill level.

Undead gain a bit more intellect.

Prevents attacks from stray Undead.

Reduces mana consumption by 6%.

Power of dark magic becomes 2% stronger.

When health is lower than 50%, the feeling of being indomitable

will rise and attack power increases by 14%.

Effect does not stack with other sculptures.

Number of Magnum Opus created till now: 9.

Mastery of Sculpting skill increased.

Mastery of Handicraft skill increased.

Sculptural Comprehension skill increased by 1 level.

Fame increased by 875.

Art stat increased by 33.

Charisma increased by 3.

Wisdom increased by 2.

For the completion of a Magnum Opus, all stats increased by 3.

Weed's advance level 8 sculpting skill mastery increased and it inched up slowly from 6% to 14.6%.

The players watching below, as they waited from the beginning

till now, as the sculpture began to take form yelled out shouts of joy.

"It's a Magnum Opus!"

The Necromancers who usually pressed for better privileges were the happiest amongst the players. Necromancer's were destined never to stray far from Vargo Fortress.

*****

The battle against Balkan Demoph, had a record 24.3% rating on its reruns. Weed's fame could pierce the sky, he was Versailles continent's number 1 most popular player.

Weed, the wise lord of the Northern continent.

Game broadcasts continuously showed special programs on Weed. They had a stable rating and the viewer's response was good.

There was news coverage of the daily change in Vargo Fortress as well. The players of the Northern continent had massive interest at the sight of the fortress, once occupied by the Undead Legions, changing into a human dwelling,

Compared to the many regions in the continent, the amount of players in the North was still small. But compared to the beginning, its expansion was nothing to sneeze at, with the players

from the Central and Eastern continent having great interest in the north as well.

Also, as it was the region that War God Weed ruled, even if nothing happened it still remained in the spotlight. It was because of the self cultivation and development of the barren castle and villages that pulled endless inspiration for adventure.

And so the number of players visiting from the Central continent increased daily.

“People going to Leserite Mountain, please come quickly. We’re leaving right now.”

“Organizing for Tanroa mine hunting. Estimating about 200 people to come. It’s a request from the dwarves to clear out the monsters in the mine.”

It was a much better environment than what was expected so the people coming for the first time to Morata found it hard to adapt and were often left bewildered. They came knowing about the Great Cathedral and the Library and similar historic buildings. They heard many stories about the Statue of Goddess Freya and the Tower of Light. Looking at them for themselves, the sculptures and artworks were exactly as they had heard, with so much artwork lying about.

Compared to other regions, art and culture was given preferential treatment in Morata and plays happened frequently. There were sights to see with the paths filled with entertainment.

As the region was under the blessing of abundance from the Church of Freya, there was an endless amount to eat.

Festivals erupted regularly and when the merry and playful atmosphere struck, the players flocked to the squares early in the morning for hunting quests. Merchants who did not even know the proper price for japtems were selling their wares on the streets and the beginners were playing gleefully among themselves.

It was loud, bustling, and filled with a pleasant atmosphere. It made for a splendid city.

When an expedition called for a hunting quest, 100 people gathered in no time. The players had joyful expressions as they headed out to hunt.

“I understand why people say Morata is like heaven. There is so much hunting occurring.”

“The prices are so low compared to other places. There are so many places to visit and with business booming, you will lack for nothing here. I should have come to Morata earlier.”

No matter where one went on the continent, the other regions were filled with the slight feeling of oppression and exclusivity. In the square they had to be conscientious of the ruling guilds, always minding what they did as not to go against them.

In comparison, Morata was free spirited and actively encouraged

adventure. Weed not only focused on artists but also provided equal treatment for the adventurers.

Development related to adventure and compensation for commissions took 16% of the fiscus. Searching the other regions inside out, this was incomparable and overwhelmingly the best figure. Other villages were at a level where their best was only at about 2%, 3%. There were cases in some cities where other players ruled that did not even provide compensation.

The regretful thing was that the lords did not feel the need for adventurers and spent their funds stingily. But Weed thought otherwise.

By bringing back the buried equipment, treasures, discoveries, artifacts, and books of the Northern continent the city would develop faster. Developing the city allowed for more taxes in the future so this path was seen as a shortcut. Even after Morata had become big, money was spent without spare for the adventurers.

Quests in Morata appeared as if a dam had burst, many people received quests and left.

“There is no need to dissuade people who are willing to take the risk of death and suffering.”

It was a development oriented taxation!

Weed, Morata, and Vargo Fortress were changing in the blink of

an eye even under monster invasions and the game broadcasters reported a lot of news about it. But recently there was an event that engulfed the Versailles continent in a greater shock.

Hermes guild's blitz of Kallamore Kingdom!

Local wars happened frequently, but they conquered forts and castles and absorbed them into their territory.

"Hermes Guild is charging again."

"The current situation is amazing. Hermes Guild's army overwhelmingly crushed the Kallamore Kingdoms border defense garrison."

"Bardray can be seen with the vanguard. He is participating personally in the war."

"The Black Knights forces, their inestimable strength! Watch Bardray's action yourselves."

"Around 100 thousand Hermes Guild players are part of the charge. The magician's spells are spreading and pouring on the enemy's position!"

Hermes Guild's giant strength was being broadcasted. Due to the Haven Kingdom's hostility towards the Kallamore Kingdom, they tried to fold the whole region into their territory. By getting the vast breadbasket and technology from the Kallamore Kingdom,

Haven Kingdom would become the strongest nation on the Central continent.

Hermes guild started a war to recreate themselves as a nation that no one could stand up against. Imagining the future strength of their armies, no player could hide their astonishment.

*****

Weed heard the news of Hermes guild's conquest and triumph over the Kallamore Kingdom in Vargo Fortress.

"Here, it's complete. 34 gold."

"Thank you. I will use it with utmost care."

For Weed, it was business as usual as he made use of his blacksmith and sewing skills. If he did not practice the blacksmith or sewing skill for a long time, it could reduce his skill level.

While making a sculpture, he heard the voices of the chattering merchants from nearby.

"Hermes guild really has a massive army, their fire power leaves your jaw gaping and they are taking over all of Kallamore Kingdom!"

Weed, right at this moment, was using a special wood to sculpt

an eagle. He was trying to capture the feeling of life in the eagle, requiring delicate carving to express its exclusivity of the sky and its freedom. While he focused his ears on the conversation of the merchants, his hand was completely tense.

"How long can the Kallamore Kingdom hold out?"

"They can't. I really didn't know Hermes guild was hiding such massive strength. Presently the Kallamore Kingdom's border garrison was completely wiped out. Among 60 thousand people, not many survived."

Creek!

Weed made a mistake with the carving knife making a long scratch on the side of the sculpture.

"The level 400 powerhouses of Hermes guild went forward, they destroyed and occupied Hosran fort in less than 2 hours. Even the media did not know that Hermes guild's army was this strong."

"Do you think they are really that strong?"

"It won't be an exaggeration to say they have the strongest infantry, even the number that participated in the war... sigh, words just won't come out. Just hearing the names of the participants you will recognize the rankers, they are lined with strong players."

“But against Weed-nim?”

“Well... even Weed-nim would have to fold at least once against Hermes guild.”

“Weed-nim is the War God, he already defeated Hermes guild twice.”

Weed just made his sculpture in silence. The sculpture that was created during this confused moment was a downcast bald eagle!

As a famous sculptor, a disappoint piece was created.

Fame decreased by 15.

It was a relief that he was making the sculpture in a corner away from the prying eyes of the merchants.

Vargo Fortress still did not have a tavern so the video of the broadcast could not be seen. But the grand appearance of the Hermes guild could be felt.

The finances necessary to fund the troops to occupy just a castle or a city was enormous. Even for Weed, the monthly income tax was tremendous only after the huge development of Morata. And Haven Kingdom is said to be the yolk of the Central continent and just conquering it whole spoke volumes about their strength.

As Hermes guild became bigger, Weed's influence could only become smaller. It was a situation where he could no longer roam around the Central continent freely, but to just imagine if Hermes Guild completely conquers the Central continent!

'It will only be a matter of time till the underdeveloped north, east, west and south will be seized.'

Then Weed would only be able to hunt in isolation. Even now an assassin could come at any moment for him. As Vargo Fortress was filled with players who would side with Weed, the assassin's activity was limited. But in other regions, they would smell his bounty and cause an uproar.

'The only thing left for me is the Sculpture Mastery quest and the final secret sculpting legacy! If Hermes guild or other famous guilds become bigger than now, peace will be impossible. Then the only thing I could do is roam the continent, hiding my identity through Sculpture Transformation and changing my appearance often.'

So Weed prepared to leave for a trip. To master the sculpting skill he still needed a bit more time. Retrieving the final secret legacy would be good, but mastering sculpting was becoming a priority so he planned to meet the master sculptor Zahab.

*****

The Red Reed Forest.

At the quest area the queen of fairies Teneidon spoke about, the assassins waited and prepared for an ambush.

As a rule they did not talk aloud but only in whispers.

When do you think Weed will come here?

If you wait he will come.

The assassins deployed themselves in the grass and above the trees. They were used to the boring waits. High level assassins preferred killing stronger people rather than doing normal hunts as it gave them more experience and mastery in skill went up a lot more.

To kill Weed they went ahead to the quest starting area and waited for him.

“They said Weed would come here, right?”

“If we just catch him we can definitely receive a reward from Hermes guild. I am going to change all my equipment and also ask for a skill book.”

“It’s the War God Weed. When he appears we must attack him together.”

“There is no need for honour. When we kill him we will share the

reward equally.”

Even bounty hunters, trying to make a fortune through the bounty, were roaming around the Red Reed Forest.

Truthfully there were not many righteous people among the bounty hunters. They usually laughed as they betrayed or deceived their partners without feeling a smidgen of guilt. They knew the cynical nature of the job but for now they decided to join their strength.

“If he just comes…”

“He’s already dead!”

“Kuhuhu, let's receive our bounty and sign up with Hermes guild.”

“Will they accept us?”

“They say Hermes guild accepts anyone if you have the strength.”

“Then we have to get in. Just by signing up we can live in a grand style.”

*****

Lee Hyun logged into the Dark Gamer information board. He was trying to gather information on Grapass, one of the 10 forbidden regions of the continent, which was the place Zahab went.

“Will there be any good information here?”

It had been a long time since he received the quest from the old handmaiden. He expected that more people would have explored the region and more information had built up since then.

But in reality, many players actually challenged the forbidden regions in the early days. As they were level 100 and 200s, he nimbly skipped their stories. Just from skimming them, there were many stories about being completely wiped out by the strong monsters and that they would try again later.

I regret coming here. The morning hunt is okay but at night, it’s really scary.

Adventurer level 351. Came with a party of 7 with similar levels.

There are big larvae in the wasteland.

When you try get close, large worms pop up and try to eat you, so do not go near it.

Adventurer level 369.

The Grapass region is not well known, so we planned a party to level up where we would not be crowded with others. We were 7 Dark Gamer veterans.

The plain where stone piles are, the hunt is doable. At night the evil hands swarm about, so to hunt here you need exceptional senses. If you win, they drop magic seals and jewels.

Adventurer level 382. 7 party members.

It looks like there was still occasional hunting in the Grapass region.

There comes a point in time, after rising to a certain level, where it became crucial to find a new hunting ground. This was especially true for Dark Gamers, where both their personal growth and monster drops were important. So there seemed to be many tries at adventuring in the Grapass region

In the early days the level 100 or 200 players entered the region fearlessly and were cleanly wiped out. Presently, a level 300 could handle the region with some difficulty.

Among the Dark Gamers there were many players who were above level 400, but they did not post information on these boards. At their level, the information on hunting methods or hunting grounds was too important so they did not share much. As it wasn’t difficult to maintain their Dark Gamer Union’s ranking by providing simple quest or dungeon information, it wasn’t a problem for them.

“At level 400… seems it’s manageable at that point.”

In the Grapass region, the magic seals and jewels that could be acquired through monster drops were as expensive as mythril. It was said there were several specialized hunting parties that searched Grapass for these jewels that granted magic.

Saying these specialized hunting parties were the best Dark Gamers and warriors was not an exaggeration. The opportunity to meet them was rare as they only stayed near the area where the monsters frequently appeared.

“There still seems to be no information about the master sculptor Zahab…”

Someone who met Zahab, or even knowing the address of the house he’s living in would be conclusive information! He could then finish the quest easily, but even without such luck it did not feel like finding Zahab would be all that difficult.

“A human staying among monsters in the Grapass region would be quite noticeable. I could ride on a Wyvern’s back and scout out the region… or if the sky is filled with monsters I could change into a crow and search like that.”

Lee Hyun praised himself. Since he accomplished impossible quests from the beginning, he was no longer hesitant or fearful about going to Grapass, one of the 10 forbidden regions.

“It’s closer and much better than sailing to Jigolaths.”

In the face of any adversity, whether the sky fell or the ground collapsed, he had the amazing self-confidence he could survive!

*****

Weed called the Sculpture Lifeforms. Due to the recent hunting Bingryong, the Wyverns, Phoenix, Gold Man, Yellowy, Golden Bird and Silver Bird were all exhausted. Bingryong’s level was 470, excluding the Wyverns, the other Lifeforms were all around mid to late 400’s through their continuous effort.

“I want to tell you some good news.”

Weed wanted to raise the morale of the tired Sculpture Lifeforms.

“For the time being let’s rest from hunting.”

“Gol Gol!”

Gold Man, although extremely happy with the news, could not show it. If he showed any signs of happiness, it could be seen as some fault or another that would cause more agony in the future.

“Moooo. If this is master’s order then I have to obey.”

Disciplined by a foul natured master, they had learnt basic pretence and treachery. Yellowy pretended to be disinterested as he ate some grass nearby, but his ears were flapped up to listen for any lies.

“Don’t worry. This is not a joke or an empty promise.”

Up to now Weed scammed, embezzled and exploited them hard but he was not one to lie.

“Rather, let’s go on a trip.”

A trip!

Leaving the road and meeting new people, the joy of leaving the daily routine. Phoenix spouted fire from its beak in joy.

“Kurarara. Are we really going?”

Having not travelled much with the master and other Lifeforms, Bingryong was also happy.

“It would be good if the place had fresh grass.”

For Yellowy if his back was warm and belly was full, anywhere was heaven. It did not seem like a bad idea. Travelling around and eating delicious food while resting.

Golden Bird and Silver Bird, as they had the nature of birds were also happy that they could roam around freely.

Weed continued to speak.

“Where we are going, it’s Grapass... one of the 10 forbidden regions on the continent. So let’s all go together!”

It was not a trip, the phrase ‘leaving home is suffering’ was proven right. The Sculpture Lifeforms suddenly lost all desire to go.

“I will become strong by diligently hunting here. So master, why not go alone?”

Bingryong spoke while he blinked his eyes innocently. But to Weed it was useless.

“We have to go together. You can’t possibly skip this fun trip.”

“There are many monsters here. I think I have to protect the new land the master earned. I, Bingryong will thoroughly defend this land against the monsters.”

“You don’t need to do that. The monsters also need to eat and live. They are doing this to survive, so don’t look down on them.”

Sudden benevolence towards monsters appeared.

“Morata is well protected by the Black Imugi and the King Hydra, so I am going to call other Sculpture Lifeforms to this place.”

The Black Imugi and King Hydra were sculpted in the past to fight against the Northern coalition.

After that they cleared the monsters near Morata and silently contributed to the public order.

They quietly raised their levels by a lot and also became rich.

The Black Imugi had a side of cunning and shrewdness. Silver Bird tattled everything about how the Black Imugi was using his status as a rare monster, he took over a cave and started to pile up his own treasure.

“It’s a pure, evil black snake with wings. If it was small I would swallow it whole like a worm. Cheep cheep! I thought I would gain weight so I stopped myself. When I ask him to give me some of his premium meat, he doesn’t. When I try to build a nest in his lair, he doesn’t let me in. I think he's hiding something.”

“Right, right. Golden Bird how is it?”

“I don’t really pay attention but! He treats me very well. I think he hunts monsters. Also I think Yellowy’s gotten lazy.”

“Keep me posted on your friend’s activity.”

To prevent the public order from becoming worse, it would be good to have the Sculpture Lifeforms defending Vargo Fortress. And there was no need to make new ones as he could leave it to the Sculpture Lifeforms brought from Jigolaths.

It could be permissible for them to join the residents defending on the fortress wall, rather than having them hide in isolated forests or search and destroy monster habitats.

Weed glanced at Vargo Fortress.

The fortress walls were slowly becoming firmer and thicker, with more military facilities built to protect it from siege. The soldiers were being trained to protect the fortress and drive out the monsters. Rather than developing the economy, safety was the priority right now.

The players also received hunting quests so the monsters flocking nearby would be reduced slightly. They would level up and start stacking up the drops from their adventures. And as the army readied their strength, the wastelands and mines could be conquered and developed.

At that moment Wy-Three grumbled in a defiant way. It was purposefully done so Weed could hear.

“We have a desire to live freely. For how long must we follow master?”

Wy-Three spoke of his hope of wanting complete independence.

“Let’s all live happily together. Hunting and even going on a trip like this... It will be lifelong happiness. And don’t you think we should go to one of the 10 forbidden regions at least once?”

“...”

Weed was daring the Sculpture Lifeform to decline his scam.

*****

“I heard Weed-nim was staying here these days.”

“I need to ask him to make me a sword... Other blacksmiths in Morata can do it, but if Weed-nim makes it, it will come out better.”

Players deliberately came from Morata to Vargo Fortress to improve their equipment. The equipment Weed made had a subtle sense of aesthetic decoration. Using sculpting skills the swords, armour, and boots Weed made were carved with special patterns.

Of course the labour fee was more expensive than other blacksmiths. But with advance level 8 handicraft skill, there were

no flaws and the durability was high. They could also flaunt that their equipment was made by Weed so they spared no effort to come here.

When the smiths or tailors had basic skill and became famous they did not need to worry about getting additional work afterwards. But as this was tedious labour the chance of being fed up with it was high.

“What? Weed-nim left?”

“We came all the way from Morata... Did he leave for the quest in Red Reed Forest already?”

Weed had disappeared from Vargo Fortress.

But according to the builders the repair work was still continuing and the paladins, priests, Geomchis and new players were all busy doing quests or hunting together.

For the residents who came over from Morata, their simple needs were met by the merchants. But with elves, barbarians, dwarves, and fairies visiting Vargo Fortress often, there was a variety of quests that were created. And as adventurers completed many battles, the merchants started to cater a general store, weapon store, armoury, herbalist and a jeweller.

“It’s Weed-nim’s land, we have to spread faith to the migrating residents of Morata.”

The Church of Freya began construction of their new shrine.

Players did not have exact information on Weed so they could only speculate.

“I think he went for the Red Reed Forest quest.”

“He has no fear of Hermes guild.”

“Weed-nim really is different.”

This rumour spread and the bounty hunters waited in greater suspense. Hermes guild, who prepared for all situations, sent an attack force to the Red Reed Forest as well, thinking a third defeat was impossible.

*****

Seo Yoon was hunting and wandering deep in the north. She felt her strength was lacking when she was following Weed in Jigolaths.

‘I have to become stronger.’

She experienced the difficulty of hunting alone while exploring dungeons. As a Berserker she was alone most of the time so it was nothing special. Falling into traps, raided by monsters, and

intoxicated by poison. The Berserker class had to surpass the fear of death, fighting stronger monsters to grow.

Seo Yoon went into places full of monsters, battling them and coming out alive.

‘I must return.’

With these feelings Seo Yoon increased her level while also perfecting her attack skills. It was all to protect Weed when something dangerous happened. She was also thinking of following him on the quest from the Fairy Queen Teneidon.

Sometimes she sent off whispers to Weed.

I found a new dungeon. There are many monsters. Their levels are high so it is a really good place to hunt.

When Weed was not busy, he responded quickly.

Congratulations.

And at that night’s dinner.

While hunting monsters I found a short sword. It is much better than what I used previously.

Glad to hear it.

And at next morning's breakfast.

I hunted a boss monster,

Sa, safely?

It was difficult, after taking care of the rear guard monsters I succeeded.

Facing indescribable hardship, Seo Yoon attracted monsters and risked dangers until her body was covered in bandages to achieve victory. If she did not have thoughts about Weed, then it would have been impossible for her to giver her all in the hunting.

Items?

Sharp Shooter Helmet... I got something I don't need. I am going to throw it away when I arrive in Morata.

Sharp Shooter Helmet! It was an item that all archers searched for with passion. It increased accuracy, range, and penetration, there was no better item for an archer than this. It was said the high level players who were over level 400 would even sell their own bows to buy this.

There was no need to say twice how expensive it was. If it was

sold in Morata all the merchants would jump at it.

Ri, right.

Besides this daily routine, whenever something good happened Seo Yoon told Weed.

My level rose.

Already?

I picked up an item a short while ago.

Again?

My ‘Dance of the Insane Warrior’ skill level increased.

This fast?

Congratulate me. I just completed a quest.

.....

Seo Yoon enjoyed conversing with Weed so she went on even more hunts. The dungeons she visited were one or two tiers higher than what Weed could handle. It was not an exaggeration to say Weed’s hunting speed was the highest in the Versailles continent.

But Seo Yoon was not far behind.

Starting from the entrance of the dungeon, skills were used to rampage till the end and break through the dungeon. There was no class that was as tenacious as a Berserker.

But fighting arduous battle alone, the chance of dying was high. The only way to maintain attack power was to fill up on health and fight without rest. Words could not describe how difficult this was. Finishing a dungeon sapped all the strength from the body and it took time to recover.

During this recovery time, Seo Yoon searched for other dungeons or did simple quests.

What is the jewel of Jukbora? It’s constantly dropping here.

W, well you picked up another one? It’s a jewel you can sell to the enchanter.

Weed knew almost everything and when they talked, it was a great help to Seo Yoon.

After finishing up a dungeon Seo Yoon leaned on a tree for a rest and asked.

Are you going to stay in Vargo Fortress?

No, I finished my sculpture so it's time to leave.

To the Red Reed Forest?

If he said he was going to the forest, Seo Yoon would have went ahead and wiped out all the bounty hunters and assassins. The chance of success in the huge battle that would occur was not in the equation for her.

I already left for Grapass, one of the 10 forbidden regions. I have a quest there that I need to finish.

As soon as she heard the destination Seo Yoon took out a map from her backpack and headed for Grapass. As Weed was heading there, she had to go as well.

The Undead Legion chain quests were done by the Undead and at the same time, she was too busy levelling up and trying to earn money for their trip so she could not join him then. But now, Seo Yoon headed towards the Grapass region to meet Weed.

I am heading to the Grapass region. Let's hunt together later on. I will prepare delicious hot shark soup then.

Through whispers Weed also told Pale and his party.

Hwaryeong changed her high heels to boots.

“I have to go to the Grapass region as well.”

“Unni, really? That place is really dangerous…”

Bellot tried to persuade her otherwise, but Hwaryeong was tenacious.

“Eating with Weed-nim after hard labour… We need that kind of moment.”

Her plan of getting Weed infatuated with her, using a seductive dance every night was complete. She also wanted to show him first the dance she created with her choreographer during the preparation for her new album.

For this, Hwaryeong hoarded the most beautiful dresses and accessories across the Central continent through the merchant channels.

“Then we should go as well.”

Pale thought to go with her for her safety, but Hwaryeong shook her head.

“You must never come!”

“What?”

“It will become a nuisance to our quality time.”

“….”

Even after saying it’s one of the 10 forbidden regions, in front of Hwaryeong‘s passion it was little more than a dating area.

Riding a horse Hwaryeong left for Grapass.

*****

Geomchi’s path was one of loneliness. He was currently wasting his time by going back and forth between Rosenheim Kingdom and the Plains of Despair.

“Currently there is nothing to do.”

He built up a lot of sentiment with the family of the female player he was friendly with.

But not long ago she left to study abroad for 3 month, so they could not hunt together.

“Second is also busy…”

Geomchi2 was with orc Seechwi up in the north playing to his heart’s content.

Orc Lord!

Accompanying Seechwi with her quest, mingling with the Orcs, he was frolicking at the Plains of Despair and Yurokina Mountains.

If 3 Orcs were fed and grown up, after 1 month it became 20. After another month it expanded to almost a hundred. But with Seechwi's low leadership, there were many orcs who wanted freedom and left.

But most who stayed in the North fought together and their territory grew. These orcs hunted together with Geomchi2 and Seechwi, and sometimes they did get killed. But those who survived got stronger and became Orc fighters and Orc warriors.

There was no race that grew as quickly and as large as the Orcs.

"I am kind of jealous that they are having fun."

In the Northern continent of Versailles, his disciples participated in famous battles and appeared on television. Geomchi felt a bit bitter. It was a mistake to think that old people wanted to spend their time silently and alone!

"Moving your body and using your strength to break things is the best."

- Discipline of the heart was important.

- Rule over the strength stored in the blade.

It was something he taught to the disciples constantly. But acquiring the strength and not using it was the true path.

“I should take advantage of the free time I have right now.”

Geomchi went to the capital of Rosenheim Kingdom to prepare for his trip. Many people gather there to go to hunting grounds, dungeons, or even to travel to nearby kingdoms.

And in one corner someone was crying out.

“Anyone looking for adventure in the North, let’s go together! Let’s settle together in the North under the leadership of Weed, the War God. First we go to Morata, then people willing to go will head to Vargo Fortress”

The merchant was trying to win over the players. It was a route consisting of travelling to Rosenheim Kingdom by carriage, then riding a boat to the North. They could earn extra travel fees and be protected from monsters if they brought along players interested in Morata while shipping goods to the North.

During the travel it was possible to talk with them or even convert them into loyal customers, so they searched proactively for travellers heading for the North.

“Should I go have some fun?”

In addition, Geomchi could also go meet his disciples so he agreed to go with the merchant.

Chapter 3: Zahab's Artwork

"Kuuaaak!"

The flock of Wyverns flew on their stretched wings. Bingryong, Phoenix, Golden Bird, and Silver Bird followed behind them. While their flights looked free and lighthearted, their level was anything but.

Flying above the white clouds, they often passed by large birds. Weed rode on Wy-Three, with Yellowy and Goldman on Wy-One and Wy-Two respectively.

"Can't we stop to eat for a bit?"

"It looks delicious!"

Wy-Five, Wy-Six, and Wy-Seven who were flying without any burden could chase and snack on these birds before coming back.

"Yum yum, it's really good."

"These don't have any fishy smell."

Wy-Three's accumulated grievance was beyond its threshold.

"Master."

“Yes?”

“There are other Wyverns but why do you always ride on my back?”

“Do you hate it that much?”

“It’s not that, having a person ride is heavy and takes a lot of effort. It also feels unfair…”

Weed was speaking while lying on the Wyvern’s flat back.

“When I was making you it was annoying so I just made the back flat.”

“Keeaak.”

“It is as comfortable as lying on a mat so it’s impossible to ride the other Wyverns. You are the best.”

Learning the secret of it’s creation, Wy-Three became more miserable.

Grapass was located within Aidern Kingdom on the Central continent. It was an area swarming with monsters. Due to the large distance away from Vargo Fortress, Weed decided to fly on the Sculpture Lifeforms and was able to arrive in a short amount of

time.

“Thinking about it... 20 days should be enough to find him.”

Reflecting on his miserable time at Jigolaths, one of the other 10 forbidden regions, Grapass was not as large. He had not heard any rumors of the stifling maze like underground dungeons found in Jigolaths, so Weed thought that it would not be difficult to meet Zahab.

Weed pulled out the mission item he received long ago. The old handmaiden said the mission item would guide him to Zahab’s haven. And on the mission item was a drawing of a water spirit.

“I should start my search near a body of water. But this area is extremely dangerous with these monsters around, so Zahab might not even be alive!”

The original residents, who were not players of Royal Road could die. While the players revived after suffering a penalty, NPC deaths were permanent! If Zahab was already dead, the quest would have to be abandoned early.

When certain masters of the class died or went missing, the quest and its related skills disappeared. Of course other skilled people could become masters, create new secret skills, and depending on the situation, new quests could be created. But this was not a certainty.

Truthfully, it was dangerous for Weed to have prolonged the old handmaiden's quest for so long.

*****

"Let's get started. You all had a nice, long rest right?"

At Weed's words Yellowy's stomach trembled.

"Mooo, everyday hunting and adventuring... what have you done for us till now!"

The Sculpture Lifeform's reasonable protest. Was it right to endow life just for the child to labour through a hard life? Yellowy, who toiled endlessly since he was given life had the right to protest.

Weed began to think on it seriously.

Till now, he had not done anything special for Yellowy. Dragging him to the dangerous Jigolaths, forcing him to participate in battle, always making him carry burdens, he must have felt neglected.

"When you are young it's normal to experience hardship. Eating and playing are not the things you should strive for. Regardless, I'll start planning for your retirement now. As you become older you need to live more comfortably right? Is it fine if I can prepare for you a palace with fresh grass for you and your family to eat?"

Yellowy was persuaded immediately due to his high loyalty.

“I was not expecting that much… but I am satisfied.”

“From now on pay 200 gold every day. I will take that and add the remainder with my own money so later on you will have a large retirement fund to draw on. Oh, right! I also have to add the marriage expenses with the heifer you like so much.”

“Thank you master. I will work and fight harder.”

Yellowy liked the idea of living comfortably when old and Weed was immensely satisfied with the 200 gold windfall.

“Phoenix, Bingryong. You attract too much attention, wait someplace where you can come to our aid immediately.”

“I understand, master.”

Bingryong and Phoenix were large lifeforms, if they came close to the ground they provoked the monsters nearby. That’s why the search had to be done by Weed, Wyverns, Yellowy, and Gold Man.

“Golden Bird, Silver Bird.”

“Yes.”

“Father, talk to us.”

“Are you safe here?”

Golden Bird and Silver bird nodded their small heads. The birds were not affected by the monsters in the forest. No matter how famished the monsters were, the birds did not even constitute as a nibble.

Even if they were attacked, they could immediately fly between the trees and escape. Or they could turn into Avian Humanoids and the situation would reverse, where the hunter became the hunted.

“Finding Zahab is the priority. You two move independently, search inside the forest.”

“If it is a request.”

“I will do as father ordered me to. I might return a bit late, eating all the delicious bugs in the forest.”

Golden Bird and Silver Bird flew into the forest. The mission item signified water, but as Zahab’s trail could be anywhere, those two were deployed separately to find that trail.

“Then shall we be off?”

Weed with Torido, Van Hawk, Yellowy, Gold Man and the Wyverns planned to start from downstream.

In case of emergency, Phoenix and Bingryong could be called to fight against the monsters in Grapass. But, while the river and its vicinity had a variety of monsters, not many of them were a threat for Weed and the Sculpture Lifeforms.

The monster Kellkog flocked to the river for water.

“Yuga. Yuga!”

Kellkog were reptilian in nature and their habitat was close to the water. They walked like humans using spear like weapons while submerged or on the ground. They had the ability to jump frighteningly high, had sharp movements and usually moved in a herd. With their average level of 400, it was no laughing matter!

To hunt steadily in the Grapass region, it was absolutely necessary be above level 400. Of course, maximizing the party’s strong points could also overcome the disadvantage in strength.

“Wyverns circle around us and fight. When the Kellkog appears, hold it down.”

“I understand.”

The Wyverns who had to totter on the ground could finally take to the skies.

“Summon Death Knight Van Hawk, Summon Vampire Lord Torido!”

“Did you call, master?”

The frequent battles trained Van Hawk and Torido to be aware of their surroundings immediately as they were called.

“Go and fight!”

“Yes.”

“The smell is pungent. I don’t think the blood will taste very well.”

As Torido was nobility, he was slightly reluctant to feed on the reptiles.

“You can’t always eat tasty food. I will cook some sunjihejang soup for you later.”

“If so then I will fight.”

The charge of Death Knight and Vampire Lord! Van Hawk attacked riding on his Phantom Horse and Torido flew with his cloak spread out.

“Kiyaho!”

Noticing Van Hawk and Torido, a group of over 20 Kellkog prepared to fight. They waddled like chickens while holding their spears, the best possible posture for a throw!

‘It could be dangerous.’

Van Hawk and Torido could receive critical hits from those spears.

“Summon Dirtman! Build a wall out of mud.”

The moment the Kellkog threw their spears, the Earth elemental Dirtman was summoned. Opening his bleary eyes, Dirtman thrust his hand forward and from the ground a wall rose up.

A large wall to protect Van Hawk and Torido.

The spears momentum was reduced as it pierced the earth wall. But it continued to fly, emitting silver light. Van Hawk and Torido were fortunate enough to dodge it quickly, but the spears continued to fly and pierce through the trees and exploded when they struck the ground.

“Getting hit would hurt.”

These packed a punch! If not for the high defense of their armor, the attacks could kill them in a moment! Feeling the high level threat of the enemy, Van Hawk and Torido attacked more furiously.

Weed followed after them, jumping into the Kellkog's line.

"Heriam Fencing!"

With a tube that stored 12 spears on their backs, a Kellkog could attack multiple times. By fighting up close, Weed could prevent the Kellkog from maximizing their throw. Weed brandished his sword, weaving through the Kellkog line crazily without stopping.

"Kakaho!"

But Kellkogs were good at slashing and piercing with their spears.

A spear has grazed your shoulder.

The injury has reduce your strength.

Your high endurance has cancelled the reduction in attack points.

Health reduced by 2,980.

Over 7 Kellkogs aimed for Weed, Van Hawk and Torido! As Van Hawk was attacking on top of his Phantom Horse, most of the spears flew towards him.

“Gol gol gol. It’s our turn!”

Gold Man riding on Yellowy attacked like the wind. Sculpture Lifeforms were too valuable to lose so only after the frontal assault did they join in!

Circling above in the air, the Wyverns disrupted the Kellkogs attacks.

“Dark Energy.”

“Tornado Blade!”

Van Hawk and Torido used their special attacks unsparingly!

After some time they managed to win the battle, but barely. Weed’s whole body was covered in wounds with three short spears sticking out of his back.

“It’s more doable than I thought.”

After the battle Weed had over 19,000 health left. But the Wyverns injuries were extensive and Yellowy was limping on his forelegs.

“It could be more dangerous from now on.”

It was not dangerous like the natural disasters in Jigolaths but the monster standards were definitely higher.

“If it becomes difficult I can stop Golden Bird and Silver Birds search and call in Bingryong and Phoenix as well. There is no need to stop here.”

Fortunately, right now when Yellowy and Gold Man were in danger they could escape the battle field on the Wyverns. But if they entered a dungeon in Grapass, even that option would be barred from them.

“Right now let’s just continue. Bandaging!”

With no priests to support the Lifeforms, Weed wrapped bandages on the Wyverns, Yellowy and on himself.

Acquired 2 blue gems.

Acquired 3 black gems.

Weed picked up the gems that granted magic. Hard battles equalled rewarding items! He could sell the gems to the enchanter but if he made a sculpture out of these gems, the sculpture would emanate a brilliant lustre depending on the magic held within.

*****

Watchful of any monster movements, Weed was heedful in his exploration of Grapass. Though Kellkogs were dangerous, the fight was manageable. But if even 1 escaped it would come back with a flock of over 200, 300.

To prevent such situations, he rode on the Wyverns and hunted them down till the last member. Poisonous insects and savage beasts also lunged at them in single numbers, and they could only win through combining all their strength.

“Every time, if you adapt then everything will be alright.”

Weed’s skill and level was enough to explore Grapass. Of course the Sculpture Lifeforms took most of the burdens, but they could level up as much in return. By fighting in Grapass, Weed was able to raise his proficiency in sword mastery, perseverance and resilience stats. His bandaging skill was already mastered making Weed frustrated that he could not raise it up higher.

“Keeping this course I am sure something will pop up.”

Following the course of the river, Weed searched the vicinity as he went further upstream. Golden Bird and Silver Bird were tasked with exploring deep within the dangerous forest.

At the point where the forest and the marsh blended together,

was where all the top predators of Grapass were located. Compared to these monsters, Kellkogs were scavengers trying to survive near the river bed.

"Bingryong, go left and stir things up a bit."

"Yes, master."

Bingryong and Phoenix supported the battle in between. When too many Kellkogs bunched up Bingryong's breath or Phoenix's flames spewed out before they fought.

"There is a house further up, master."

Wyvern reported his aerial surveillance.

There were three rivers flowing through Grapass. There was no definite rule that Zahab was still living in Grapass, so he had to go and check personally.

Advancing carefully ahead with his Sculpture Lifeforms, a wide lake appeared at the upper reach of the river. The lake was beautiful, with clear water reflecting the trees and the evening sun. And near the lake was a picturesque log cabin.

"Somehow, it feels like Zahab might just be there..."

Weed looked at the quality of the logs and their cuts. It was

beyond normal workmanship.

“Now the standard present before visiting…”

Weed took out the gift plate prepared for him by Mapan from his backpack. Even if it was someone other than Zahab, the item could still raise intimacy! Any residents of Grapass would be beyond ordinary, so it was necessary to build favour beforehand.

Time to time, when out adventuring it was possible to meet the original inhabitants. Certain tribes could be hostile. The elves, dwarves, and barbarians were usually on the friendly side while the humans were aggressive. At that time by showing shiny marbles or a set of plates as gifts, it was enough to placate them.

“Is there anyone here?”

Weed called out loudly in front of the house and after a moment the door opened. Without a doubt, 100%, the person coming out was elderly.

“It’s the first time anyone visited my house. Yes, what is the purpose of your visit?”

Weed thinking it might be Zahab, continued.

“I came here to find a person.”

“I have been living here for some time now and I have never met any other humans. The forest over there has 1 hunter, and two sinners that ran from the law… but who did you came looking for? ”

The whiff of poverty could be felt from the eyes and below.

“I came here looking for Zahab of Rosenheim Kingdom.”

The old man stroked his beard while nodding his head.

“My name is Zahab. You found him correctly.”

Even with Golden Bird and Silver Bird, Weed felt that he would waste around 20 days searching for him. But fortunately he was able to find Zahab early.

‘This quest is not as difficult as I thought.’

His level was considerably higher since the time he received the quest from the old handmaiden and with the Sculpture Lifeforms, Zahab was conveniently found.

If Weed was alone it would have been unfathomable hardship and defeating a Kellkog would not even be possible.

‘But at least I found him now.’

Weed's heart became restless as he finally met a Master Sculpture. With the title of a Moonlight Sculptor and distinguished as one of the central figures in early history, it was a historic meeting.

A boy and a girl.

A sculptor who kept his promise to the girl who became queen, to show her the most beautiful sculpture on earth.

Weed only needed to learn the song he sang back then.

"I came here with a request from a fellow sculptor. But coming this far, I am quite famished. Could I trouble you for some food?

*****

"Oh, I finally reached civilization!"

Petrov walked around the market in Cotten village. He waited for a long time to see Yurin again at St. George Castle. However he came to a painful realization that she was not coming back.

Petrov is an idiot. A mongrel.

The graffiti was just painful.

“I will definitely meet her again if I roam around the continent. I will go anywhere where there are signs of her.”

Petrov’s world was filled with weird ambition.

“If I make everyone in the continent know my name, then won’t Yurin come to see me?”

Drawing could make you instantly famous. Having basic painting skills allowed one to receive commissions from the painting guild. Painting nobles and kings, making new brushing techniques was an easy way to get fame.

But Petrov decided on a more proactive method.

“Morata is known as a famous art city.”

Weed, through his sculptures, developed Morata to an amazing height. The artists there were happy with it as if it was their own works and stood proud of it.

“Then I could do the same with my paintings.”

Petrov watched the broadcast of his fated enemy, Weed, acquiring the territory of Vargo Fortress.

“I have to start there.”

Vargo Fortress was a region that lacked sculptures made by Weed. If he showed his paintings there, could he not surpass the Lord's influence in the region?

"Through my paintings, I will take Vargo Fortress from Weed. There won't be greater fame than this."

It was also a good opportunity to show that painters were superior to sculptors. There was no organization in the North that could take Weed's territory. But this was a declaration of winning the territory through art!

"I must go to Vargo Fortress."

Petrov packed his painting supplies and walked briskly toward an area bereft of human presence. It was to use Picture Teleportation to go to Vargo Fortress in an instant.

*****

Gulp, gulp.

"The baked potatoes are really tasty."

Weed ate some of the potatoes Zahab placed in a basket. His intermediate level 9 cooking skill allowed him to taste many luxurious foods but the most tastiest was free food.

“Mooooo. Eating only grass since yesterday has left me hungry.”

“Me too, give me some too. Gol gol!”

Zahab shared some potatoes with Yellowy and Gold Man.

Wyverns were fighting among themselves outside.

“I am the tallest.”

“My beak looks the best.”

“Whose wing is the widest?”

“My back is flat.”

A display of childish quarrel!

Zahab stroked the Wyvern’s angled shoulders.

“Eat plenty. The sculpting knife and the wooden statue I left behind with the maid has been passed on to you.”

“Yes, it is as you say.”

“However I have never heard of lifeforms like these... Their

forms are not well defined but their proportion are relatively right. Could they possibly be lifeforms made out of sculptures?”

It was the first time that anyone could figure out they were lifeforms made out of sculpture at a glance. Weed threw another potato in his mouth as he answered.

“Yes you are right.”

“The legendary skill of Emperor Geihar has appeared once again in this world. What an amazing occurrence. To see the sculpting skill passing through generations without disappearing, this is truly a fortunate event.”

“It has been hard. However, as I take care of the Sculpture Lifeforms and cherish them, there is a feeling of satisfaction that swells from my heart. I think Emperor Geihar’s sculpting skill is really amazing. Of course your Moonlight Sculpting Blade is one of the most beautiful sculpting skills in the world.”

This is what you call indiscriminating flattery!

“To have learnt Emperor Geihar’s and my sculpting skill, your talent is outstanding.”

“I have a great love for sculpting. Through my adventures I have also learnt other sculpting skills.”

Weed was a person who had already learnt the five secret

sculpting skills. Zahab showed admiration as he listened to the various stories of how Weed acquired his skills.

“Having inherited my sculpting skills and learning Daron’s sculpture transformation, creating spirits and even able to call disasters, amazing!”

By telling recollections of sculpting skills, fame increased by 469.

“To collect all 5 sculpting legacies that were created after the existence of the first sculpture, it’s truly a miracle.”

Weed ate the potatoes till he was full and packed the rest into his backpack.

“But more importantly, the handmaiden in Rosenheim Kingdom wants to listen to the song you sang when you sculpted the moonlight before she departs.”

The most important business that called him to Grapass! To learn the song from Zahab and singing it to the old handmaiden in Serabourg Citadel.

“Did such a thing occur? I was making sculptures here and never did go back to Rosenheim Kingdom... Well, since we are talking about sculptures, do you want to see mine?”

“Absolutely. I absolutely want to see them.”

Weed as a sculptor obviously wanted to see Zahab's masterpieces.

Perhaps there would be greater rewards here than the reward that the old handmaiden would give for completing the quest.

*****

Zahab led him to a cave behind the lake.

"This is my workshop. Go in and take your time."

Inside the cave, the trees, boulders and walls had sculptures on them. Flowers and moss grew, widely disfiguring some of them. Weed observed the biggest and the most stylish sculptures first.

You have observed, 'Mankind's Last Moment'

A piece made by the Master Sculptor Zahab.

A scene of humans making a last stand as they fight against the monsters was sculpted.

A sculpture that is extremely elaborate and minute in details, without high comprehension of sword skill it's impossible to fully understand the piece.

Regenerate health and mana 35% faster for one day.

Stats related to battle increase by 12.

Warrior related skills improve by 2 levels.

Fighting Spirit increased by 2 permanently.

For 1 month, health increased by 450.

Art stat increased by 4.

By observing the sculpture with great discerning eyes, mastery of sculpting skill increased slightly.

Masterpiece sculpted near the entrance wall! The scene of 10 soldiers crumbling while fighting against the monsters in Grapass was vividly sculpted.

'A Masterpiece... and that one is a fine piece.'

Weed walked swiftly. Every time he observed a piece, his art stat and mastery in sculpting skill increased.

The workshop had over 70 different works ranging from Fine pieces, Masterpieces and Magnum Opus.

You have observed, ‘The Moon, the Stars and the Wild Flowers.’

A piece made by Master Sculptor Zahab.

This piece has been engraved on the ceiling and the floor of the cave.

Animation of nature has been realistically portrayed.

After completion, not much care has been given.

Art stat increased by 1.

By observing the sculpture with great discerning eyes, Affinity to Nature increased by 5.

There were nature sculptures as well.

“Seeing that you can’t take your eyes off that piece you must really like nature.”

“Yes. I really love nature.”

Weed was grinning evilly as he saw that the majority of the sculptures in the workshop were works that expressed nature. By increasing Affinity to Nature, the power of natural disaster sculpting became much stronger.

As Weed's standards were high, even if these were sculpted by Zahab, his mastery in sculpting skill barely rose by 4.9%. Currently his skill was at advance level 8, 19.8%. Art stat increased by 137, with a variety of others skill also increasing by a bit.

The completed Masterpieces, Magnum Opus in the workshop of a master was much better than the ones found in Morata's Art Center.

Sublime sculptures, delicate sculptures, graceful and elegant sculptures, and sculptures made from light that were shining brightly to great heights!

Zahab created things freely without a set theme or form.

"How is my sculpting testimony?"

"It's admirable. It feels like all the outstanding sculptures of Versailles continent have gathered here."

The sculptures would all get a hundred points. It was not like the mass produced rabbits or foxes that Weed used to make to polish his skills. Every single one of these art works was created with heart and soul.

*****

“Ahem, wandering around like this is really great.”

Geomchi stood on the fore of the ship. It was a fast boat that was currently heading toward the Northern continent.

The wind pushed against the wide open sails. As the ship was orientated for passengers, it did not have heavy cargo, so sailing speed was very fast.

“Getting fresh air from a different place is nice.”

Sitting behind Geomchi were 5 early 20 year olds that were getting along with each other.

“The wind is really refreshing.”

“This is the benefit of coming out to the sea.”

“I heard that the number of passenger, freighter and adventure ships increased after Weed’s adventure. Looks like it was true.”

While on the voyage, many other sailing ships could be seen. Even a romanticist was sailing with a sail full of holes!

The newcomers to the sea might not know, but the experienced seaman could feel the increased interest in the sea on their fingertips.

The harbour was crowded with noob captains and sailors. The sea was filled with the sight of sinking dinghies as they struck the reef. Weed gave them a simple taste of sailing, but it became a chance for the seasoned sailors to spread the charm of the sea to many.

Even if they weren't fishermen or sailors, Royal Road allowed them to come to the sea whenever they wanted!

"Did you hear what happened to the 3 Mad Sharks of Becky Ninh that sailed with Weed? That Heint, Fractal and Bodomir?"

"What happened?"

"I heard Becky Ninh returned and is now operating a large pirate force. They are accepting every pirate and plundering every trade line without care..."

"They are truly evil."

"Yes. They are unspeakably evil people."

They applied Weed's teachings imparted on them in their partings and became remorselessly evil.

But, pirating was a very poor profession. They could not step onto any harbour if their notoriety with that nation was high. When sighted by naval forces, they had to escape till their tails fell off, and on top of that, they only earned the ire of all the players.

They could not sell their loot at market price and more often than not were disposed of. They had to be aware all the time so it was hard and fatiguing work.

But the sea was wide and free. There was joy in adventures that only pirates could do.

*****

“Because of the war a lot of people are dying these days.”

“Save yourself. Don’t join carelessly, the situation is about to explode.”

“Just shut yourself quietly to a hunting ground. Levelling up is more beneficial right now.”

The tavern Dark Gamers gathered at! They were resting with cider or beer in hand. As once they entered a hunting ground, they did not come out for a month and ten days. So taking the chance to enjoy themselves in the city was important.

Cooking skill was a necessity for Dark Gamers, but unlike Weed they did not learn it properly. They could only do simple grilling or boil meat. So for them, if they had access to beer and appetizers it was enough for them to unwind.

“When I entered the second dungeon…”

“The secret entrance is to the left of the fireplace and leads outside…”

They also shared high-end information.

The tavern’s location was the Brent Kingdoms capital Nehalles. The most active Dark Gamers gathered there so it was always crowded.

Clunk!

The tavern door opened and a player wearing a dazzling purple dress entered.

“When I was hunting then…”

“Next time I am thinking of crossing the Rozend route…”

The player’s conversation suddenly died down. The player that just entered was a dancer.

The dancer class that always needed dazzling clothes and accessories. Dancer was a hard class for Dark Gamers to choose as there was always a greater demand for battle optimized classes such as swordsman, warriors, mercenaries or magicians.

‘Must be a requestor.’

She was beautiful, and looking at her equipment, she was high level as well. If so, the number of Dark Gamers that could receive a contract from her were few.

The dancer moved around each table and spoke softly in a voice that other players could not hear.

“My request…”

Before the content is known, the level, reliability of mercenary, the time required to complete the request was thoroughly checked.

And as the dancer was leaving, Bade, Pason, Yumero, April, Volk and Daerin followed after her. The best and the most active Dark Gamers of Bretten Kingdom went with her. As they left, the Dark Gamers resumed their conversation. Seeing as it was none of their business, no one really cared.

Chapter 4: The Sculptures Zahab Wants To Leave Behind

Weed was in Zahab's storage, observing for a long time.

"If only I could secretly hoard them all somewhere..."

And store them at Morata's Art Center. Then he could charge way more for the entrance fee.

'If I create a special Zahab sculpture gallery, I could charge 10 times more and everyone would still pay to come.'

Weed's eyes burned with passion as he looked at the sculptures.

"You must really love sculptures."

"Of course. Selling these amazing sculptures... I mean, they are precious treasures whose value cannot be estimated."

Weed glanced at Zahab.

'If only a monster would appear...'

As a sculptor, Zahab could not be weak. According to the rumours from the old handmaiden, he defeated the assassins while

he was sculpting moonlight.

The Moonlight Sculpting Blade!

It was still Weed's first choice as an attack skill in battle. Seeing how Zahab built a house and was living in the middle of the Grapass region, his strength was not impossible to imagine. At the minimum, his strength must be superior to the knights who guard the king.

'A freeform sculpture. It has to be made through imagination, so the usual sculpting method's impossible. But nothing is impossible to make with the sculpting skill."

Weed was an old hand in sculpting sculptures based on symmetry and precision. As he travelled around Versailles continent, he sculpted anything that caught his fancy so he was proficient in both observational and sculpting skills.

But Zahab's sculptures excelled even at expressing common emotions.

A shy youth, stammering his confession to a woman. The sculpture body was well proportioned, hands and feet were ordinary. But the fretful and happy emotions were captured thoroughly by the expression and the posture of the sculpture alone.

A fawn looking around a field of flowers, expecting someone. The

image of the small and cute fawn waiting, anticipating, for its mother could be imagined naturally just by looking at the expression on the sculpture.

With passion, the sculptor could express the subtle emotion to the finest point!

“These are really expensive… I mean, excellent sculptures.”

“For you think like that, then I am really grateful. If you are not busy then could you help me with some of my own sculptures?”

“What kind of sculptures are you still making?”

“There are two pieces of work I wanted to do for a long time. I must make them before I die… I just cannot leave this place until I can complete them. With your skill, it will be a big help. So do you want to work together with me?”

Zahab’s Assistant

There are sculptures that Zahab was longing to make for some time.

Help him complete those sculptures!

There is no greater honor as a sculptor than this.

Difficulty: Class Quest

Quest Restriction: Limited to sculptors. Must be in the process of mastering advanced sculpting technique. Until this quest is complete, Zahab cannot leave Grapass.

If you refuse this quest, you cannot receive it again.

There was no reason for Weed to refuse this quest. It wasn't his sculpture so he wouldn't even care if he ruined it!

"Yes, I will do it."

You have accepted the quest.

"But where is this sculpture you want to make?"

Zahab pulled the sheet off covering something inside his workshop.

A white marble sculpture with a basic outline of woman!

"I am sure it's the same for every other sculptor, but I lived under the captivation of beauty found only in sculptures. One of these days, I want to make a sculpture that expresses flesh and life, with the best proportions and ratio. It's my dream to express a woman who has divine beauty."

In art, women were the dominant theme for the majority of works.

“But staying in Grapass for so long I seem to have completely forgot about womanly beauty. Presently, this sculpture is the most difficult work I have undertaken so I was hoping you could help me with it.

“What about the other one?”

“I have chosen a topic for it, but did not start on it yet. We should do one at a time, so after completing the first one, I will tell you about it.”

Zahab prepared his tools and material from his workshop for Weed’s use. All of it was premium material, when used sparingly, you could produce 16 to 17 sculptures from it.

Though it was Zahab who originally asked for help, in reality, Zahab was the one assisting Weed who was sculpting the outline and the subject matter. Even then, this was a great opportunity as Zahab was aiding in the creation of a sculpture designed by Weed.

‘What can I make that will satisfy Zahab?’

Creating an average sculpture would only create trouble. Zahab’s standard of beauty would be high, as his first love, was Queen Evane. While Weed was deep in thought, Zahab grabbed the sword hanging on the wall of his workshop.

Weed had seen the sword while he was observing the sculptures. There was nothing special about it, the sword was just ordinary with average attack.

“I will be out for a short while.”

“Where are you going?”

“Going out to get some air, acquire some sculpting materials and catch some monsters.”

Weed could almost scream in delight!

‘Now if he could just get himself killed…’

Weed couldn’t wait around forever. But on the other hand, he was curious to see how Zahab fought.

“Could I come with you?”

“There is nothing urgent to be done, so you can come.”

Weed hurried after him, filled with the expectation of seeing how Zahab fought. As it could be dangerous, Gold Man, Yellowy and other sculpture lifeforms were left behind to rest in the cabin.

‘If possible, the more dangerous the better. It would be nice for the boss monsters in Grapass to appear regularly…’

*****

Zahab passed through the forest and entered a hidden cavity.

It was an entrance to a dungeon! A dungeon in Grapass that Weed would have never dared to enter.

“You will have to follow after me carefully.”

Dungeon, you have entered the Karajak’s habitat.

“Kueh!”

Weed screamed like Orc Karichwi. Karajaks were monsters that had long, thin legs like an ostrich. It was a monster that could kill someone before they had the chance to laugh at its comical appearance!

It’s amazing attack strength was compounded by its high hostility against humans, it had lightning fast speed and the ability to change directions in split seconds. Karajaks travelled in herds so no guilds as of yet hunted these monsters as their primary quarry.

There was occasional success hunting 1~2 that were isolated, but even then the casualties were too high. And no one could find the

dungeon where Karajak appeared so it all blew over.

‘Of all things it had to be a Karajak’s habitat, there won’t be 3~4. No, there will be an awful lot more than that.

Looking at the dungeon name, it was obvious that a lot of Karajak’s lived there.

Baby Karajak, grown up Karajak, mother Karajak, father Karajak, uncle Karajak, grandpa Karajak, the Karajaks next door and all other sorts of Karajak! Two humans were just delivered as food to a family of Karajaks!

Weed did not know if he should be happy or upset, there was too much ambiguity with the situation.

Then far away, some Karajaks appeared and ran toward them in an instant.

“Sculpting Blade!”

But as Zahab brandished his sword they collapsed easily. It felt like the Karajaks passed them by, but somehow they just disappeared in a flash of grey light.

SCREECH!

As the Karajaks discovered the scene, they cried louder and more

of the herd gathered. Zahab slashed his sword that was covered in a sheen of light and they collapsed like scarecrows.

Zahab was effortlessly slaying the lightning fast Karajaks.

‘Are these monsters weaker than I thought? Then again I never did fight against Karajak before. After all, not all the information on the message boards is correct anyways.’

Weed was curious and walked a few steps away from Zahab.

BATABATABA!

He was kicked by Karajaks all over. They came running and hit his head as well.

You received a critical hit.

Dyspnoeic condition emerged.

Not even a few seconds later his health dropped 20%. If he stayed like this, with his laughable defense, he could die any moment. After a sufficient beating, he returned to Zahab’s side.

Zahab’s sword was slaying Karajaks without mercy.

‘His swordsmanship is as impressive as his sculpting skill.’

The incident with the assassins was not a coincidence.

‘To be this strong…’

Weed was waiting to scrap for any chance, but Zahab’s hunting speed was so fast that it was impossible to squeeze in. As Zahab defeated the Karajaks he picked up rare leather, meat and jewels.

Following the hunt like this, Weed made a decision.

‘I need to be more friendly with him from now on.’

*****

After coming back from the observational hunting, Weed picked up his sculpting knife.

“The shape of a woman possessing divine beauty…”

It was a theme artists, in ancient and modern times, sweated efforts and debated fiercely about without any results.

Even if it was one person, the judgment of womanly beauty changed as the person got older. To say one woman possessed every aspect of beauty was an impossibility. There were infinite varieties of preference by a host of different people. How could he shape a woman who possessed divine beauty?

But there was an evil grin on Weed's face.

'There is Seo Yoon.'

In outward appearance, there is no one perfect like her. There was even a time he used her representation to improve his sculpting skills. The harmony created by Seo Yoon's eyes, nose, lips and skin, it was enough to make his heart beat faster when sculpting her!

Even if it was a sculpture of her, it was so beautiful he kept wanting to see it. Other people who actually saw Seo Yoon, couldn't believe if what they saw was real or a dream and couldn't keep their eyes off her.

He could never fail a sculpture of Seo Yoon and she would be the perfect subject matter.

"Right, this will do."

Overflowing confidence as a sculptor!

'Considering Zahab's standards, the theme and pose of the sculpture will be really important.'

If he took a real life object as the background subject matter, there wouldn't be any problem.

“For now, let’s get my hands warmed up…”

Using Zahab’s sculpting material, he made sculptures.

Karajak, Kellkog.

They were sculptures of monsters he met in Grapass.

In this, he was making use of Zahab’s method. Rather than sculpting a singular piece, he created many.

He first sculpted a small boy then surrounded him with Kellkogs and Karajaks. The menacing scene was expressed like a fairy tale. In the scene, the boy did not give into his fears as he stretched out his hands to touch the monsters.

He created a Fine piece named, ‘Tiny morsel for the Karajaks and Kellkogs.’

This was merely practice.

After that Weed decided to start on Zahab’s request.

“Wouldn’t it be better to loosen your hands a bit more? I will also give you sufficient time to imagine a theme. I think you can start after 1~2 month of thinking.”

“It’s okay, I can start now.”

He began to make a sculpture in collaboration with Zahab.

“The forearm must be smooth like this… the jaw line is difficult so I will do it.”

While Weed was proposing the precise shape of the overall sculpture, he was also leading Zahab expertly.

The beauty of the woman was not only on the outward appearance, the personal appeal was more precious and could achieve far more. Weed stealthily revealed the hidden charm found in Seo Yoon, even he couldn’t help but think it was beautiful.

These days, he was with Seo Yoon often so there were times when he thought she was just pretty. But as he meandered while shaping the sculpture, she was significantly more beautiful than before.

‘She’s getting prettier.’

He felt he could understand why Master Daron continued to sculpt only one woman. Now as he sculpted Seo Yoon, a variety of emotions surfaced within and he wanted to capture Seo Yoon’s precious expressions.

He thought he found the joy of being able to sculpt a person.

'But for now, let's finish the quest…'

While regretful, his meeting with Zahab could not be broadcast to the media. Hermes guild could give him trouble by watching it and coming after him, but more importantly, sculpting was Weed's money maker. He needed to protect this secret.

Of course he also had no desire to broadcast a sculpture of Seo Yoon.

Every life was precious!

"Oh, this beautiful woman… this truly is a divine beauty!"

Sculpting the piece, Zahab was falling enamored with the unimaginable beauty.

The sculpture of Seo Yoon was portrayed in a stately dress. It was an attire that reflected Weed's impression of her.

'Seo Yoon looks really good in a dress.'

If she wore different cloth, her personal beauty could not be hidden even if she wore dirty armour. But if Seo Yoon wore an exquisite dress that not just anyone could wear, it would flaunt her beauty completely.

Using his background skills in sewing, Weed idealized the shape of a smart dress and with Zahab's near transcendent sculpting skills, the fluttering of the fabric was perfectly sculpted!

She was stepping on a high pedestal, her gaze somewhere far away. The light in her eyes, longing for warmth!

It was a sculpture that made the observer spin endless imaginations. But Weed knew the secret behind it.

'It's the expression of befuddlement she made at breakfast while travelling together. '

It was a meaning only the creator would know.

"Let's name it, 'Sculpture that Expresses Beauty.'"

Zahab and Weed combined their thoughts and named the sculpture.

Magnum Opus! 'Sculpture that Expresses Beauty' has been completed.

A collaboration between the great sculptor Weed and Zahab, who is sitting at the summit of sculpting skill.

They managed to express a woman's beauty.

Comparative to their fame, the completion of this supreme piece is enough to be considered as one of the top aesthetic works in Versailles continent.

Artistic Value: 16,290.

Special Option: Anyone who sees the, ‘Sculpture that Expresses Beauty’ will regenerate health and mana 40% faster for one day.

All stats increase by 35.

Magic resistance increase by 37%.

Maximum health increase by 14%.

Intelligence, Wisdom and Charm increase by 15.

Increases the morale of soldiers.

Grants additional mastery to adventurer’s Appreciation of Artwork skill.

Sculptors, painters, dancers and scholars Charm increases by 14 permanently.

Birth rate of the city near the sculpture will increase by 80%.

The sculpture has been blessed by goddess Freya for portraying aspects of beauty.

Effect does not stack with other sculptures.

Number of Magnum Opus created till now: 10.

Mastery of sculpting skill increased.

Mastery of handicraft skill increased.

Sculpture Comprehension skill increased by 1 level.

Fame increased by 968.

Art stat increased by 48.

Intelligence increased by 12.

Wisdom increased by 6.

Charm increased by 25.

Goddess Freya has granted a blessing upon the sculpture for portraying aspects of beauty. Paladins and priests from the Freya

denomination will receive special strength and courage when they see the sculpture.

By making a sculpture recognized by goddess Freya, faith increased by 19.

For the completion of a Magnum Opus, all stats increased by 3.

Weed's achievement was great, but this sculpture would have been impossible to make without Zahab. Discounting his 'Torch Left by Sculptors', his 8th Magnum Opus sculpted using helium, this would count as his greatest work yet.

While a variety of stats increased generously, none of them were directly related to combat stats. Strength and agility hardly increased, while intelligence and wisdom rose rather highly. Weed was similar to the Geomchis that he did not distribute his stats on intelligence and wisdom, but increased them purely by making sculptures.

Regardless, the quest of being Zahab's assistant was halfway complete.

"You have exemplary skill. I did not expect that you would be able to do this well... The one other sculpture I want to make is something that represents myself."

The sculpture Zahab wanted to leave behind was of himself.

“Some day, after a very long time has passed, this county and even the Versailles continent would be forgotten. But I want to leave behind a vestige of myself within a sculpture. Your skills are great enough to create a sculpture of myself.”

Now Weed had to sculpt personally with Zahab as the subject matter.

‘Even this won’t be that hard.’

By creating the sculpture of Seo Yoon, he raised Zahab’s satisfaction level to the highest. And having experienced and observed Zahab live, it was just a matter of making the sculpture! It was like taking candy from a child, and their gum, and their lunch money, and drinking their milk on top of it.

Zahab wanted him to make seven different sculptures of him.

“My life cannot be defined by one sculpture. There are poses of sculptures I already thought of.”

Zahab directed the pose for the sculpture. While he had to make several sculptures, Weed had nothing to complain about as he could just sculpt as directed.

The first pose was Zahab working on a sculpture! It was pretty obvious that a sculptor would want to leave behind a scene of his main profession.

“I should make it as good as possible for the reward I can get after I complete the quest.”

As the model was an old man, his hands were very wrinkly.

Sak Sak.

There was no need to have decal like details on a sculpture.

‘This is not a work of art, rather, the person needs to love it on first sight.’

Color control was done on Zahab’s face to make it look like it had a touch of make up. The numerous wrinkles were adjusted, the disheveled hair style was fixed to give a natural feeling.

“Your skills are really not so bad.”

“I just needed to represent the good model in front of me.”

“Then I shall anticipate your best for the other sculptures as well.”

Next, he had to sculpt Zahab strolling through a forest. There was nothing especially difficult about it, but as he took care of the minute details he needed a minimum of two-three days.

Zahab in the evenings, usually hunted within the dungeons in the vicinity.

“Later, one of the sculptures you will need to make is about me battling. So I hope you observe me carefully.”

“I understand.”

As it was impossible to make Zahab hold a stance during battle, Weed had to follow him around and observe. Much could be learned by watching a battle. Weed could fully comprehend the unreachable strength Zahab had with his sword.

“Moonlight Sculpting Blade!”

Weed, using his tact, hunted only when the monsters were being meek. Putting faith in that Zahab will dispose of all the monsters swarming them, he explored the dungeons with him.

*****

‘It might be this way.’

Seo Yoon was searching for Weed in Grapass. She wandered alone, killing any monsters that attacked her.

‘I will finally be able to meet him here.’

Even within one of the 10 forbidden regions, Seo Yoon had very little problem as she normally fought high level monsters. She only hid from large groups of monsters, but most of the time she kept moving in order to find Weed.

She entered the main forest in Grapass and fought her way through. Her hopes of meeting Weed allowed her to forget all hardship and forge ahead!

Under the moonlit night, the roar of a large flying monster could be hear from far away.

“ROOOAAR.”

Dragon Fear!

The large silhouette shining under the moonlight was Bingryong! He was hunting with the other flight capable Sculpture Lifeforms.

“Bingryong…”

Seo Yoon called out but as Bingryong was flying high above, he passed her by. The tree tops hid her from Bingryong.

A wasted opportunity!

She picked up a stone and threw it.

“Kek! Who dares!”

As soon as the stone left Seo Yoon’s hand, it flew at top speed and hit Bingryong’s head. Reacting to the hostile action, Bingryong returned and scouted the ground. And then he found Seo Yoon.

“It’s Master’s friend…”

He remembered the time he travelled with Seo Yoon.

“Did you come here to meet master?”

Seo Yoon nodded her head.

“Then hop on. I will bring you to Master.”

Bingryong started his landing. With his large body, he crushed and felled many trees on his descent. As he lowered his head and took utmost care for her to hop on, Seo Yoon spoke in a quiet voice.

“Could you please call Wy-Three?”

*****

“Caw Caak!”

Riding on the rebellious Wy-Three, Seo Yoon arrived at Zahab's cabin.

"What brings you here?"

To meet her like this in Grapass, Weed was really surprised.

Seo Yoon's face reddened as she could not bring herself to say she wanted to see him, or be next to him. For the first time since she was able to speak, she did not talk and avoided all eye contact.

Weed only nodded.

"Well, it's good that you came. It's nice to see you like this."

Greeting confidently but hiding his suspicion!

'To come all the way here, what treasure did she think I was mining in Grapass? At least she has some sense of shame, with her red face and all.'

Seo Yoon came when he was having good time with Zahab, but her presence was not much of a disturbance.

"A woman possessing a similar appearance to the goddess of beauty."

Zahab already had the best, first impression of her. Sculptors, painters, fundamentally all artist as one favored beautiful woman, so Seo Yoon received high intimacy with Zahab easily.

“Before I die, please allow me to sculpt your image. Will you let me?”

Zahab asked Seo Yoon to become the model for his sculpture.

A Quest!

The reward was unknown, but as it was a request from a Master Sculptor, it had to be something good. But Seo Yoon shook her head and showed clear rejection.

“I can’t do it.”

“I will give you any jewels or sculptures you ask for.”

“I don’t want to do it.”

Seo Yoon rejected the quest till the end. For her it was a thorny issue as Weed sculpted her often.

“Truthfully, I made a sculpture of you here…”

Weed confessed that he made a sculpture based on her. The

sculpture of her was stored in Zahab's workshop, so later if she found out about it, it was much easier to tell the truth now rather than making a scene later.

"Thank you."

"Huh?"

"For sculpting me."

"..."

Weed thought women were existences that could never be understood. His grandma said she did not want to eat cutlets or sweet and sour pork as they were oily food. Later, when he earned a lot of money and brought her to her favorite diner, she complained about not ordering cutlets and showed disappointment!

His little sister, when she was feeling immense dissatisfaction with how her hairdresser styled her hair. He tried to console her by pointing out how bad they were at styling her hair. Afterwards she shut herself in her room and did not come out even for dinner.

"One must never trust or believe a woman's words."

Zahab's hunting trip now included Seo Yoon as well. After coming back from Jigolaths, Weed leveled up and became strong. He experienced a lot of battles, but Seo Yoon was way stronger

than she was at Jigolaths. It still could not be compared to Zahab, but the Karajaks Weed was having such difficulties with, Seo Yoon could hunt them easily.

*****

The second sculptures of Zahab , of him strolling through the forest was completed.

“There are times I enjoy exploration. Going to uncharted territories, have you ever went to a place where no one had set foot yet?”

He sculpted Zahab exploring a dungeon.

“When you are enjoying a solitary lifestyle, you become enamored to create something endlessly.”

A sculpture of Zahab deep in thought was completed.

“Battle against monsters, it has been a part of my life.”

Zahab was a white haired senior, but he was overflowing with energy and his battle skill was outstanding.

Weed sculpted Zahab fighting against monsters. He already sculpted 5 pieces and only two were left.

“One… I want at least one sculpture from that moment long ago. Even for you, it will not be easy to make… It must have been fate that you,who knows about the incident back then, came to find me.”

The sculpture Zahab wanted was the scene of him repelling the assassins that tried to kill Queen Evane. For Zahab, it must have been an unforgettable memory when Queen Evane was moved by his promise of making the most beautiful sculpture on earth for her.

“I will try.”

Weed had the opportunity to enter Rosenheim Kingdom’s castle. So he first sculpted a scaled down castle. It was not a job that required meticulous handwork but he put his best effort into the piece. A quest given by Zahab was not something that he could do halfheartedly,

“Make the assassins look villainous… I can probably choose some Sahyungs for this, the expressions Sahyungs make when they see a guy holding hands with their pretty girlfriend.”

Sak Sak.

“The viciousness of the assassins were really well expressed. This is the exact expression of evil villains.”

The knights in the castle weren’t important so he sculpted them

lying about.

Weed had seen Queen Evane in a video that showed a recollection about the past. But he also took the time to observe the portrait of her in the Rosenheim Kingdom's castle. Walking in the passage, it was just another portrait he could have ignored. But as it was related to Zahab, he took note of it and it was becoming a great help now.

‘Elegant and noble… but with a charming side. Not sure if it is befitting for a queen but it gave off a good impression.’

Then, it was time to sculpt Zahab.

“Moonlight Sculpting!”

Using the moonlight sculpting technique, Weed sculpted young Zahab. Wearing cloth that wouldn’t impress any royalty, Zahab defeated the assassins and sculpted moonlight using his blade.

Without a doubt, one of the best settings!

‘Kind of romantic as well.’

Weed looked furtively at Seo Yoon. While not family, if she was threatened by assassins…

‘I won’t waste any time killing them all!’

When the sculpture was almost finished, Zahab who was observing him began to sing.

I am here

But wherever I go

My heart will always remain with you

I will make you a beautiful sculpture as I promised in my youth

But how can I?

When you are more beautiful than any sculpture I can make

I cannot forget the time I spent with you

I want to leave my heart here, like my sculpture

So I will put my heart into this moonlight, and sculpt

As the song that could give goosebumps resounded, the sculptures began to move.

The sculpture of Zahab, Queen Evane, the royal knights, and

assassins moved and fought as if they were alive. As young Zahab slashed, his sword moonlight descended, broke apart, and gathered in a resplendent dance.

A Fine sculpture was completed.

Level increased for Moonlight Sculpting skill. Skill is intermediate level 3. Sculptures made of light will have greater effects.

Moonlight Sculpting Blade skill increased by 1 level.

Moonlight Sculpting Blade skill increased by 1 level.

Sword Mastery increased.

You have gained the required information for the quest, ‘Continue Zahab’s Legacy.’

Zahab’s song while touching was also cheesy. But finally, the chain quest accompanying him from the beginning was about to pay off.

‘Just need to go to the handmaiden and sing the song.’

And make the last sculpture Zahab wanted.

Zahab was silent as if he was reminiscing about the past. Weed did not know if it was about Queen Evane or if he was missing his bygone youth.

"Then the final sculpture that's left..."

Weed estimated that the final sculpture would not be something simple.

'Regardless, I can make any sculpture.'

He just needed to make the sculpture as Zahab described.

"The things I am good at are sculpting and the sword."

As a sculptor, Zahab was peculiar as he was also good with the sword.

"After leaving Evane and settling here, I needed to use my sword as much as my sculpting skills. The sword became as important as sculpting to me."

Zahab must have needed to battle a lot to protect his life from the monsters.

"Your sword still does not look strong."

“Many aspects are still lacking.”

Weed’s Swordsmanship was currently on intermediate level 9.

Attack skills did not allow sword mastery to increase much. As attack skill wasted a lot of mana, when Weed was out hunting alone he tried to minimize the skill usage. But even than, his mastery increased slower than a swordsman or knights.

A Swordsman’s 1st and second class change, they could awaken the potential within the sword. Their sword attack strength doubled so they could increase their skill mastery comfortably.

Through the enormous amount of stats he stacked up, he complemented his attack strength. But compared to the classes that used the blade professionally, the skill mastery did not increase as fast.

He was constantly polishing his sword skill, but the reality was that the skill was stuck at intermediate level 9.

“If you sculpt my stances, you might just realize something.”

Chapter 5: Secret Sword Skill

Weed was making sculptures of Zahab's swordsmanship. The final theme was to sculpt several individual sculptures to create an image of the consecutive movements of a specific swordplay sequence.

Sword Mastery increased.

Sculptures showing swordplay. They were also based on Zahab's swordsmanship so while making the sculpture, his mastery of the sword skill increased easily. As Weed could possible receive a one of a kind sword skill from Zahab, he sculpted day and night without stopping.

"Sculpting requires physical labor compared to all the other art forms. But Zahab also dedicated himself to the sword, so maybe among painters someone might have similarly dedicated himself to magic."

He pondered on this baseless speculations.

Sculptors had endurance and fitness, painters had high wisdom and intelligence. There was nothing that prevented the Art class from such happenstance.

*****

“Sigh. Just when I was finally getting to live life.”

The chilly and windy month of March!

Lee Hyun saddled his bag like a turtle and slowly waddled to the bus taking him to university.

“To go back to university, can there be anything more terrible than this?”

There was no tingle of excitement and the cold weather only added to the misery of going to university.

“I heard they only gathered prodigies for this years freshmen.”

“Especially the virtual reality department, they said the competition for entrance was insane.”

“Well, it is the most famous industry right now.”

Gossip about the freshmen floated around the bus. Lee Hyun believed that it was good manners for a university student to be absent for the first week, when all entrance ceremonies were occurring.

With the new students, a gentle spring breeze blew through the campus.

‘This has absolutely nothing to do with me.’

Even though the fresh juniors with their awkward makeup and mini skirts entered, Lee Hyun gave them no mind and continued on his way.

“Ah, hyung you came?”

Coming into the lecture hall Choi Sang Jun pretended to be friendly.

“Hello, Sunbae-nim!”

“It’s a pleasure to meet you for the first time.”

Beside him there were two well mannered female students sitting together. With their sophisticated looks and charm these two who could be picked as the most popular freshmen were currently talking with Choi Sang Jun.

“This guy is my peer, but he's a hyung who’s a bit older.”

To the freshmen, Lee Hyun did not look easy to approach.

‘They pretty themselves up like that and pretend they did not eat anything and beg the Sunbae to treat them. First they would be satisfied by the university’s cafeteria, then at the end they would ask for a shot of alcohol and drag you off to a spicy stir fried

chicken restaurant. They are not some malnourished college women… therefore I must never buy food for the freshmen.'

"Ah, yeah that's right."

Lee Hyun just nodded and sat in the empty seat nearby . But their chattering could be heard clearly.

"Sunbae-nim, I watched the scene of Black Lion's guild capturing Bison."

"Yeah, I was very active in that war. Did you see the knight that destroyed the castle gate with his spear?"

"Yes. It was so cool. The knight was riding on his horse and the spear just destroyed it. Oh, could it possibly be Sunbae-nim?"

"No, he's my hyung, one of the founding members of the Black Lion's guild. My horse died recently, so I had to climb the siege ladder."

Choi Sang Jun had a lot of pride when he was talking about the achievements of the Black Lion's guild. In Versailles continent, if one had the symbol of the Black Lion's guild on their armor, they received preferential treatment. Even murderers who were part of a great guild were overlooked.

That's why a lot of merchants joined famous guilds, paying portion of their income willingly for the benefits they receive.

Guilds operated castles, villages, mines and through the activities of the merchants earned income to grow their strength and influence.

In truth, Royal Road had every different kind of method to survive and there were many players that enjoyed playing it casually. They could level up through hunting and become known for their bravery, or just wander through the tourist spots and make enough money to live by.

Royal Road was full of things to enjoy and many players did not try to stray far from the city. Hunting in a dungeon for several days was difficult and did not fit the aptitude of many players. After struggling with their studies in reality, they connect to Royal Road and stayed in a vacation spot with many alluring women, what more could they hope for?

But there was something about fighting monsters and increasing territory in Versailles continent that made the heart beat faster.

“Hyung, you are here?”

Park Soon Jo came into the lecture hall and rested his head tiredly on his table on Lee Hyun’s left side. As there was some time left before the lecture started, Lee Hyun also laid his head on the table.

“Ah. These days it’s really, really hard.”

It was not easy as he needed to pick an exact stance from the swordplay sequence for Zahab's requested sculptures. He also needed to pick and sculpt the moment the stance changed and the transitional phase of the sword swing. If he had never learnt swordsmanship, trying to emulate Zahab would have been extremely hard.

Park Soon Jo grumbled with him.

"Hyung, it's also hard for me."

"What are you doing these days?"

"Since winter, I am struggling with explorations and quests…"

"It's not working out?"

"It's a chain quest so I have to meet lots of people and have to gather tons of materials. But slowly, it's progressing."

Park Soon Jo's character was a thief with quite a high level. His current chain quest would even keep Lee Hyun interested. But Lee Hyun's fame was already at a level that he could do any king's quest in Royal Road.

"Yeah, keep trying hard. If nothing works out, just leave it alone for some time and do it later."

“I think I am almost there. I want finish it to the end.”

“Have faith. If it doesn’t work, give it up early before it’s too late.”

“Yes hyung.”

The two sharing a quiet conversation could hear Choi Sang Jun’s loud voice from the back.

“The Black Lion guild will hunt the Elemental Lavastorm this weekend. The IBC network will broadcast it so please watch it live.”

“Really?”

“Will Sunbae-nim also be there this time?”

Choi Sang Jun stuttered hesitantly.

“My qualification is still not…”

“…”

*****

Morata’s development rate could amaze anyone.

PABABABAT!

Residential houses were built several months ago. Shacks and mud houses were sprouting up fast, symbolizing overdevelopment!

“I came here to join the Grass Porridge cult.”

“We finish up the registration process on the same day, your application number is 18639.”

“Is there that many new applications today?”

“It’s Monday so the number is on the low side.”

Through Morata’s main gates, the beginners slung their bags and went to hunt in the nearby dungeons. They gathered by themselves and chummed up with each other before they left for hunting.

“Maybe we should start considering moving on to Vargo Fortress?.”

“I heard that that place is well established so there is plenty of information about the hunting grounds.”

“If we go together, there shouldn’t be any problems.”

“Let’s go before it’s too late. I want to spend my time in the regions lord Weed reigns rather than any other villages in the North.”

Many people moved to Vargo Fortress, but the effect of players migrating away from Morata could not be felt. After a day or two, new players appeared. The number of merchants doing business continued to increase.

In addition to the large, central business district in Morata, people gathered in pioneering villages to explore and hunt. Morata’s influence continued to grow and merchants from all over the North came to trade. With Morata’s influence, Vargo Fortress’s transitional development phase was shortened.

In no time, the non-existent population was expanded through the influx of residents and players, allowing for more commodities to be created. Warriors gathered for hunts and adventures, bringing item drops. Many merchants traded with the elves, dwarves, and barbarians, while they lacked technology and production capacity, the volume of goods that were traded wasn’t so insignificant.

The merchants who manage to trade successfully with these tribes could bring in lots of profit. The merchants became more ambitious and brought in goods these tribes needed to trade with them. With Mapan and the other big merchants in the North, after their initial success in their trades they established stores in Vargo Fortress.

“One month. After one month there will be fully developed commerce here.”

There was the danger that monsters could completely destroy everything, but they pinned their hopes and dreams and invested in Vargo Fortress. Weed had invested an enormous amount but even if he hadn’t the people believed in the potential for growth and began to settle in Vargo Fortress.

It was a place for strong warriors to display their strength. When monsters came, they could rely on the sturdy wall and fight together. After claiming their victory, the warriors could have a beer fest.

The indispensable components were built fast and were taking their places.

“This is the place. It’s huge size is making me doubt if I came to the right place.”

Geomchi crossed the sea and arrived in Morata. He had seen it in the past, on the way to the Vampire Kingdom of Todeum, where he had come to help with it’s subjugation. At that time it was a rural village that adventurers avoided, but now it could be said to be the capital of the entire Northern continent.

“This is really amazing.”

While Geomchi was standing in front of the entrance, merchants

were busily dragging their carts this way and that.

“Excuse me, it looks like your level is a bit high. Would you like to hunt with us?”

Geomchi spun his head, a party of 6 adventurers were calling for him.

“Me?”

“Yes. Our party needs one more swordsman. Trying to find someone in the Square is inconvenient... So perhaps if you don’t have a party let’s hunt together.”

The rumours of Geomchi couldn’t have spread here.

The great warrior of Yurokina Mountains. Although he only partied with few people, he cleared out the most diabolical and dangerous monsters in dungeons. The people who saw Geomchi’s achievements were few, but the Orcs and Dark Elves spread the rumour in secrete.

“A hulking man. Orc, queek! He's not an orc. Human! Too strong. Checheek!”

“As a human he’s proficient in multiple weapons. The day he appeared, the monsters couldn’t even leave their nest.”

“He is the best warrior in the Yurokina Mountain range. We acknowledge Orc Karichwi’s leadership, but no one can match his valour.”

Geomchi fought in the Yurokina Mountains because he was bored, but he became a legend and myth amongst the Dark Elves and Orcs.

*****

“It would be nice to have various artworks here like Morata…”

“We can see the Advent of Seven Angel sculpture but it’s only here temporarily. They are moving it back to the Art Center. It would be awesome to have something like the Tower of Light or the statue of goddess Freya.”

The players in Vargo Fortress had access to the necessities but they were feeling the inconvenience when culture was sterile.

Morata was fresh and new everyday. People could take a break with their friends or lover while observing the artworks. The happy and joyful atmosphere could be felt from the highest attraction point where all of Morata could be seen.

In life, money, fame, and power were important. But on the other hand satisfaction could be found through poetry, novels, or songs! Culture and art made one conscience of life. It was a necessity that made people happy and quenched spiritual thirst.

“Nothing much we can do. This place is still dangerous. The artists will probably move here when it becomes safer and richer.”

“I need a sculpture that increases magic. Isn’t there any other Magnum Opus?”

“Also a sculpture that can boosts a warrior’s defense skill. I wonder when he will make it.”

Players were hoping for Weed to come back and make more sculptures. In Morata’s Art Center, Weed’s works were the best but there were many other good sculptures and the players were hoping for some of them to be moved to Vargo Fortress. Then another Art Center could be constructed In Vargo Fortress as well.

“I need to work harder and make more money. I am going to hunt here for a long time and I don’t believe my tax money will go to waste.”

“I heard bards will come tomorrow for a performance. Let’s go watch.”

There were many players in Vargo Fortress feeling the loss of culture. But at the entrance of the fortress a man wearing a green hat appeared.

“Who is that guy.”

“Check out his crazy cloth.”

Players were jeering at him. As he was wearing a green hat and yellow travel wear, it was easy to think he was a complete nutcase.

“My legend shall start from here.”

The person coming to Vargo Fortress with the painting equipment was none other than Petrov. Taking out his brush and paint, he began to draw on the wall. Without any sketches, he started the coloring immediately. He drew over the broken and discolored castle wall.

“I never saw something like that before.”

“The painting looks so real.”

“There are varieties of sprites playing with the fairies.”

On the castle wall, Petrov completed his specialty ‘of Sprites’ artwork! Petrov was talented when it came to painting fairies, sprites, elves and monsters. He was also close to the races in his artwork so the value of the pieces were even higher.

‘Huhu, be amazed. This is only the beginning.’

It was only the first step in filling up Vargo Fortress with his painting. Next, Petrov drew pictures of food on the wall. Basing it

on a most scrumptious feast, he drew vivid pictures of whole roast barbecue that monsters liked.

‘When the monsters come, even they will know the greatness of my paintings…’

A picture of temptation!

Battles could erupt anytime in Vargo Fortress. But now they could attack the instinct driven monsters as they tried to eat the food. And so everyone in Vargo Fortress began to know Petrov as the amazing painter

“I want to eat. The color of the painting looks much better than the real thing.”

“But his attire is barmy.”

“Yeah, can’t argue with that.”

Even when the monsters were trying to come over the wall, Petrov stayed to paint till the last second. He quickly became one of the most famous persons in Vargo Fortress.

*****

Sword Mastery increased.

Everytime he made a new sculpture, his mastery in the swordsmanship skill increased. He was on the later half of the sword play that Zahab showed him when

Intermediate Swordsmanship reached level 10 and changed to Advanced Swordsmanship.

Attack power using a sword increased by 25%.

Each time Advance Swordsmanship skill increases by 1 level, attack power increases by 9%.

Destructive power of mana consuming attacks improved by 45%.

All stats have been given an additional 7 points.

Weed's swordsmanship finally reached the advanced level. The difference between intermediate and advance was like heaven and earth.

"Looks like Zahab's sword mastery is on a quite a high level."

While Weed was making the sculptures he was in a trance, mulling over vague memories. Zahab was a considerably powerful person, he remembered Zahab's continuous movements or swatting of the monsters. And so he completed the sculpture Zahab wanted.

Please set a name for your sculpture.

Weed set a simple name. It was not a sculpture made with a theme, it was only a representation of Zahab's swordsmanship.

"Zahab wielding his sword."

Is 'Zahab Wielding his Sword' correct?

"Yes."

Masterpiece! The sculpture, 'Zahab Wielding his Sword' has been completed.

Sculptures of Master Sculptor Zahab made from white marble.

A special sword skill is hidden within, those with potential can realize its secret.

Artistic Value: 2,472.

Special Option: Anyone who sees the sculpture of, 'Zahab Wielding his Sword' will regenerate health and man 26% faster for a day.

All stats increase by 11.

Swordsmanship power increases by 15%.

By observing the sculpture, mastery of swordsmanship increases slightly.

A sword skill is hidden within the sculpture.

Effect does not stack with other sculptures.

Number of Masterpieces created till now: 16.

Mastery of Sculpting skill increased.

Mastery of Handicraft skill increased.

Strength increased by 1.

Agility increased by 2.

Charisma increased by 2.

For the completion of a Masterpiece, all stats increased by 1.

With this final masterpiece, he completed Zahab's request successfully.

Zahab’s Assistant Quest Completed

You have completed the sculptures Master Sculptor Zahab wanted to make.

You have actualized Zahab’s long cherished desires.

As a quest reward, your friendship with Zahab is now 81.

‘Zahab’s sword skill within the Masterpiece.’

Weed was in the process of mastering the sword, but through the use of normal sword skill, sculpting blade and heriam fencing the skill level did not increase much. But learning one more wouldn’t hurt.

After the completion of the sculptures, Zahab spoke as if some burden had lifted.

“These are nice works. Now I can finally leave Grapass.”

“Are you going to some other regions?”

Weed asked so he could gain any more information about the Master Sculptor Zahab.

“I should do so. I want to wander the continent with the little life

I have left.”

“What are you going to do about the sculptures in your workshop?”

“I am going to sell them to fund my travels. Or if some of my friends are still alive, I will give it to them as gifts.”

The sculptures of Master Sculptor Zahab would now be spread out throughout the continent. This change in fate occurred only because Weed came and completed Zahab’s quest.

“Can I ask how far you have mastered your sword?”

Usually he would not ask such a question, but Weed had to asked as he felt something was off when he was sculpting. No matter how much he thought about it, this could not have been an ordinary sword skill so he asked the question.

“One late night, I saw the finality of sword mastery.”

“Yes, if you saw the final then…”

Weed was dumbfounded. That meant Zahab mastered not only sculpting but swordsmanship as well. If one observed any traces left by Master Sculptors, they were not ordinary people.

“I reached a state where I can no longer become any stronger

with the blade.”

Zahab confirmed it clearly that he was a Sword Master. This was shocking news that could cause a raucous all over Royal Road!

‘What is this…’

Weed’s brain spurned quickly like the times he tried to get a free meal.

‘That means that the hidden sword skill within the sculptures is one of the secrets sword skills?’

Zahab’s swordsmanship was displayed by the sculptures so it did feel like something was hidden within. Weed shook his head excitedly and began to flatter him.

“That is amazing. Seeing that you have mastered the sculpting skill, something like mastering the sword can’t have been difficult.”

His voice became more coquettish than usual. Speaking in a charming, flattering manner while hiding his greed.

“You possess many talents and skills so if you had the opportunity I believe you can reach it. The sculptures of me, please cherish them.”

“Of course. These expensive admission fee... I mean, I will cherish them and keep them safe.”

“Then if our fates cross, we might meet again.”

After Zahab finished speaking, he prepared to leave. But Weed did not want to part in such a hollow manner.

“Please wait a moment.”

“Do you have something left to say?”

After completing the quest he received friendship points. If he were to leave now, there was no guarantee he would meet him ever again in Versaille continent.

“I was wondering if you could help me more with my hunting.”

There was no such thing as free sculpture. If he could receive something from a Master Sculptor, then he would get it.

“I know you went through hardships to complete the sculptures. I, as a sculptor understand your efforts and struggle, so that much I can at least do.”

Zahab joined as a free mercenary.

Weed could now wander around Grapass with a Master Sculptor and Sword Master Zahab.

*****

“Are you sure this is the right path?”

“I think it might have been the one we passed by…”

“Pay close attention to the monsters, remember we lost our way yesterday when we were running away.”

“I am keeping a close eye on them this time.”

Hwaryeong with Bade, Pason, Yumero, April, Volk and Daerin entered Grapass together. Hwaryeong wanted to surprise Weed by appearing suddenly, so she hired Dark Gamers to come here.

After the Dark Gamers received a request, they kept strict confidentiality. The Dark Gamers Hwaryeong picked were so good that even a country boasted about them, there was no chance that they would divulge the content of the contract.

But they were lost in Grapass without even being told that the reason for coming here was to meet Weed.

“If he sees me unexpectedly I am sure he would be happy.”

Just to surprise Weed, Hwaryeong was going through unnecessary torment. Pason had the tracking skill so they followed after the tracks Weed left behind.

“There is a deep depression of a cow’s footprint. Seeing the markings it looks like it was moving energetically, I don’t think it suffered any injury but the footprints are quite deeply pressed in. It seems like it was carrying a heavy burden.”

“This is definitely the cow of the person I am trying to meet!”

Grapass was dangerous, but tracking was easy. The Dark Gamers avoided the strong monsters through the shared information on Grapass and took maximum care as they progressed forward. They finally reached the lake where they discovered Weed, Yellowy, Wyverns and Gold Man.

“Weed-nim!”

Hwaryeong yelled energetically, running toward him while fluttering her dress. And just for this moment, she had a sense to wear a long straight wig.

“Ah!”

“It’s that sculptor.”

Volk and Daerin recognized Weed. He was the one to sculpt the bouquet for Volk and Daerin’s marriage proposal, and there was

also the time they hunted together during the Northern continent expedition.

“That Weed-nim… It’s that War God Weed!”

Many in Versailles continent were anticipating the clash between Weed and the Hermes guild. But to meet Weed in the Grapass region was a surprising and welcome event.

“Hello.”

“A pleasure. I am Yumero.”

They exchanged simple greetings. When Seo Yoon guessed there were people around she immediately wore her mask again.

“This side, he’s Gold Man. And here is Yellowy.”

Dark Gamers looked in amazement when the Wyverns were introduced, when Gold Man and Yellowy were presented they were filled with deep seated interest.

“This guys weight…”

“I think it’s pure gold.”

“Ribs are expensive these days.”

But their pure astonishment came later when Weed introduced Zahab nonchalantly.

“This person can be called my Sunbae in sculpting, but he is also the one who reached the final stages of swordsmanship.”

A Sword Master!

This was a secret among secrets, but Weed acknowledge the abilities of the Dark Gamers. For Dark Gamers to come here, they had to have curiosity and inquisitiveness beyond ordinary people. It would not take them long to figure out Zahab was a Sword Master. And these people had good reputations.

“A person who reached the final stages of swordsmanship…”

They were drooling already.

Chapter 6: Radiant Sword Left Behind The Sculptures

“Let’s hurry.”

Weed did not feel that there was a need to give special treatment to the Sword Master. Friendship declined whenever he ordered Zahab around and points fell slowly the more they were together anyway. It was only right to use up the friendship points he raised and exploit Zahab as much as possible.

Clearing the Penfils Dungeon.

Hunting the great monsters in the Dark Wood Forest.

Completely annihilating the monsters in Geithner Dungeon.

Completing their search for treasure in the Carmel Lair.

These were the accomplishments Weed achieved with Zahab. Of course, Yellowy and Gold Man were always next to him and the Wyverns followed him to the hunting grounds.

“There is the enemy. Fight.”

When Zahab was wielding his sword, Weed could relax and

attack as much as he wanted. Grapass boasted a ghastly level of difficulty. When he judged it was dangerous due to the monster's high levels or attack power, he hid far away and shot with his high elf bow. When he thought he would get by, he fought next to Zahab.

'He fights really well.'

There was no better method than fighting with a Sword Master. Even though he was Zahab, he was not invincible and suffered injuries.

"Oh dear! There are so many wounds. Let me wrap some bandages around them. I will apply plenty of herbs as well."

The Master Bandaging skill!

Weed tried his best to slow down the declining friendship through cooking and treatment. The Dark Gamers continued to watch on in astonishment.

'That stingy bastard…'

'This is typical conditioning, giving medicine after exploitation.'

'If I get ensnared, he's going to bleed me dry.'

Weed chased for the most optimal efficiency. He searched around

for boss monsters and led Zahab into dungeons overflowing with monsters.

Zahab could only miss the days of living in Grapass, devoid of human contact. Seo Yoon and Hwaryeong knew Weed's tendencies and were more accepting.

'Weed-nim must not get hurt.'

Seo Yoon was not inferior to Zahab and fought the monsters directly. Her Berserker battle potential was active so the monster lairs that Weed was leading them to were the ideal hunting grounds. Hwaryeong danced captivatingly, luring the monsters and causing disarray. But the dance had a lower effect on monsters with minimal human contacts.

The Dark Gamers also got involved and did their part to increase the efficiency of the hunt. The tasks they undertook suited their class and they earned acceptable gains.

'I can't help but be envious. Leaving no stone unturned in Grapass with a Sword Master… '

'This is such an awesome hunt, my level is going to go up easily here. It's fortunate he's allowing us to join in.'

'Monopolizing all the items and treasures in the dungeon. Ah, there is a reason why Weed is known as the War God.'

The Dark Gamers had to pay a daily hunting tribute to Weed.

“We did a lot of hunting yesterday, I plan to do the same today. I also want to enter a new dungeon today.”

Dowry, cost for food, bandages, herbs, Yellowy’s birthday, repairing weapons and armour, they had to pay it all. Weed was sucking up everything like a flea! And so, together with Zahab, they wandered the whole of Grapass aimlessly hunting and exploring.

Friendship with Zahab has fallen to 25.

Zahab sheathed his sword.

“I will leave to roam the continent now. I will not forget the time we have spent together.”

Zahab’s contract as a free mercenary has been terminated.

Zahab said his farewell. Friendship was low so Weed could not hold Zahab for much longer.

“It’s sad that you have to leave like this. It would be nice if we could learn more about each other .”

He tried to offer food and simple gifts again but Zahab did not accept them.

“I am exhausted and want to rest for now so let’s keep our farewell short.”

Weed had no choice but to send him off and asked some last minute questions.

“I think it’s tragic that we might not be able to meet again on the continent. Where will you go from here?”

“For now, I shall depart for the Bryce Highlands. I do not know how long I shall stay there for, but if you need to find me search for me there.”

“Yes, I shall do so. Then please take care.”

Zahab was limping on his left leg due to an injury and departed using his sword as a cane. Weed truly regretted this separation.

‘It would be nice to use him again. I am sure we will meet again.’

His level increased twice while hunting with Zahab and his sword mastery reached advanced level 2. This was all thanks to hunting together with a Sword Master. Moonlight sculpting blade also reached intermediate level 9.

Hwaryeong asked Weed.

“Where will you go now?”

She wanted more time to spend comfortably with just the two of them.

“I have to return to Zahab’s house right now.”

He had to report to the old handmaiden in the Rosenheim Kingdom. Grapass was a difficult region to return to so he was going to make sure he saw all Zahab’s sculptures before leaving. Zahab used a special magic bag to store about 80% of all his sculptures but there were still some left.

*****

The contract that the Dark Gamers and Hwaryeong agreed on was to help and protect her while she looked for Weed in the Grapass region. After concluding the contract Hwaryeong told them they could go but no one tried to leave.

“There was no other work and it was a boring period…”

“The world is a dangerous place where anything can happen, we will keep protecting you.”

“I am going to make sure you’re safe till the end. How can I, in good conscience, leave a beautiful lady alone?”

The Dark Gamers made excuses and tried to stay longer. Hunting in Grapass was not bad and they felt that if they stuck around Weed they might gain something.

“Oho, a Sword Master’s storehouse looks like this. There are a lot of sculptures.”

“The quality of the sculptures is extremely high.”

“Huk! Look at how many stats it gives. My Art stat just got created.”

The Dark Gamers received a once in a lifetime opportunity in Zahab’s workshop. Weed carefully observed the sculptures Zahab made with all his being.

“Identify!”

Hunter Aiming his Bow.

Retired Master Sculptor Zahab’s piece.

The bow is aimed at a snake preying on a deer.

Artistic Value: 871.

Special Option: Increased population growth of deer.

He could read the memories held within the sculpture.

“This is a good piece.”

Weed observed other sculpture.

Spring, Summer, Autumn, Winter.

He could feel the seasons changing during the construction of the sculpture.

There was a video embedded into a special mud sculpture.

A village created from baked mud.

A village established on a highland, people were coming and going restlessly.

A scene never seen in this day and age.

You have acquired the first clue to the lost traveler.

While the quest is active, clues obtained earlier cannot be used.

“Which quest video is this?”

The chance that it could be a sculpting related quest was high. Still, there were still a lot of sculpting quests, he did not know if he should do it or not. Even after that, several sculptures showed videos of Zahab's hidden sculptures around Grapass.

"It will take way too long to find all of these and the monsters are troublesome."

The sculptures could have been engraved onto a dungeon wall or kept as treasures by monsters.

"More importantly, the sculptures I made are the problem."

Weed took out the sculptures he made and observed them. The sculpture of 'Zahab Wielding his Sword'. It was almost a certainty that there was a Sword Master's secret sword skill hidden within them. If Weed's guess was right, this sculpture would become a treasure to all swordsman.

But no matter how much he examined it , it was only a well sculpted piece. As he sculpted it personally, he knew the piece extremely well, even reading the tangled memories of the sculptures did not reveal anything special.

"I have to solve the sculpture's secret."

While other people would be left bewildered unable to do anything, Weed tried to tackle the serious problem.

“Hm.”

Weed searched every nook and cranny of the sculpture.

“Could it be that I failed to reproduce Zahab’s sword skill perfectly?”

He matched each body size, ratio, and even the angle of the sword’s motions perfectly. It was difficult to portray each complicated motion on the sculpture but, with his many experiences and observational skills, Weed managed it.

He could make sculptures while imagining the product, to fail while actually seeing the subject matter was an impossibility. It would be utterly deplorable if there was a small mistake preventing him from learning Zahab’s sword skill.

“Should I just smash it?”

He was even contemplating extreme methods like using Sculpture Destruction. But he stayed his hand as it was too valuable.

“Solution, there must be a solution somewhere.”

If Zahab showed him the secret sword skill during battle, it would help identifying the skill. But such a thing did not happen

and he could only rely on the sculpture to gain enlightenment.

Weed stopped all of his hunting and focused on the sculpture. He thought he might need more sculpting skill so he started making sculptures of the monsters in Grapass and of Hwaryeong to increase his Sculpting Mastery.

He wasted 3 hours with no clear solution in sight. The Dark Gamers and the Sculpture Lifeforms were hunting in separate groups nearby, Hwaryeong was offline as it was night. It was only Weed and Seo Yoon.

“Sword skill. I need to understand the sword skill... I am close to mastering the sculpting skill so I can continue as is. But if I can’t learn it because my sword mastery is low, then I might lose my chance to learn this sword skill.”

While Weed was puzzling his head over it, he heard a noise that sent shivers up his spine.

SHEEK.

The sound of a sword coming out of it’s sheath.

Weed turned around to look and saw it was Seo Yoon holding the sword with a cold expression.

“Wh, what’s up with the sword?”

With no Sculpture Lifeforms around, could it be that Seo Yoon was getting ready to attack?! It was an old misconception but there were times when Seo Yoon was really scary. Her voice, due to lack of speaking for so long, was devoid of intonation and she acted without explaining herself most of the time.

Like right now!

Seo Yoon twirled her sword. She was aiming at the sky rather than Weed. Before they knew it, it was the middle of the night with the moon out already.

Seo Yoon's sword lit up under the moonlight and scattered. She began to move lightly, swirling her sword in movements that were familiar to Weed.

"The movements from the sculpture!"

CHARARARA.

Seo Yoon softly enacted the sword skill. She followed the sculptures' motions like a dance. Weed analyzed the sculptures' movement deeply and emulated them as well, but the flow was halted in between.

But Seo Yoon did not follow the order of the sculptures, she followed the motion of the sculpture lit by the moonlight.

HUWOOONG!

Seo Yoon’s blade scattered an intense light. It was like holding a light sword!

You have grasped the secret sword skill, Radiant Sword.

Seo Yoon learned the secret sword skill first. Her body was wrapped in light as if she was under a special blessing. Weed questioned her as soon as it stopped.

“Did you perhaps learned the secret sword skill?”

Nod, nod.

Weed smile exuberantly as he saw Seo Yoon’s head move up and down.

“Great.”

But the pain that was slowly creeping within!

“Hmhm, well, it’s manners for ladies to go first. It’s my turn to learn it now.”

After seeing Seo Yoon’s actions, Weed followed the same movements of the sculptures. With his sword mastery he was able

to follow the movements much better. Following the intention of each individual motion, sometimes he put all his weight behind a swing or softly like a gentle wind. Weed felt this was a true sword skill as he emulated the movements.

'Rather than a specific skill, the sword skill is more like a set of fixed, consecutive movements.'

He was puzzled by how this sword skill would be used in actual battle. Battle situations were completely different when fighting against monsters, flying creatures, shamans, summoners or magicians.

You have grasped the secret sword skill, Radiant Sword.

Radiant Sword: A sword skill created by the sculptor and swordsman Zahab.

A sword skill that is used by gathering light.

Depending on the skill level, it forms light sculptures in the form of animals or monsters.

Monsters captured by the light, fall under an illusion and cannot move.

If the sword skill is halted, the effect disappears.

Moonlight sculpting skill increases the power of the skill.

Class and other skill traits will have more power at night than in the morning.

It’s effective against monsters of a dark nature.

Sword Mastery increased.

“Let’s try hunting.”

Weed, with Seo Yoon, went to the place where the Kellkogs appeared.

“Radiant Sword!”

This was not a sword skill that was instantly activated by consuming mana so the exact movements had to be followed.

“Keeeek?”

The Kellkogs threw their spears but the bright light blinded their eyes and their accuracy fell by a large margin .

A short distance away, Weed finished performing the sword skill. He felt ridiculous moving alone rather than fighting the monsters up front, but looking from the outside it was anything but. Weed

swung his sword twice, jumped to gather power and performed a downward strike.

As he struck, sparrows made of light appeared. The sparrows circled Weed, then, beating their wings, they flew toward the monsters and exploded.

KABOOOM!

Threads of light split heaven and earth!

Every time Weed flourished his sword, birds of light flew toward the monsters. The Kellkogs became confused under the illusions and spun around trying to catch the birds. As the sword skill fully unfolded, only item drops remained where the monsters were.

Mastery of Radiant Sword increased.

It drained over 8,000 of Weed's mana, but equipping various mana recovery items supplemented some of the drain.

"There was this kind of sword skill."

Weed's lips trembled. Till now, it was difficult to contend with monsters that shot arrows at long range. It was very frustrating for him to deal with monsters that attacked from long range and escaped quickly. Even if he took out his high elf bow to attack, it was not enough to attack with just one bow.

“I am going to kill all the monsters!”

*****

Kolderim, the knight of the Kallamore Kingdom!

Hermes guild prepared several contingencies to deal with him. One time, Kolderim led his army and pushed on toward the Sistar Fortress in Haven Kingdom. Of course, it was a battle that the Hermes guild was not part of. Rather, it made it easier for the Hermes guild to utterly crush and seize the regional kingdom.

“Even then the knights Kolderim commands are fearsome. We will continue to invest in military power and annihilate them completely.”

The Hermes guild destroyed the Kallamore Kingdom's border force and seized 6 castles, 2 fortresses, and 14 villages. After they heard that Kallamore Kingdom’s Kolderim became the supreme commander of the war, Hermes guild split their main force in two.

“A detachment will turn around and occupy the Yorun Fortress, the main force will meet Kolderim’s army here.”

The army Kolderim was leading was composed of the elite forces of the Kallamore Kingdom. It included 7 contingents of knight orders and over 10 thousand cavalrymen. On the Hermes guild’s side, their main forces dug in and laid traps to make it difficult for

the horses to move. They brought in massive numbers of magicians, archers and even catapults to disrupt the knights' charges.

On the day battle erupted between Kolderim of Kallamore Kingdom and the Hermes guild, all of the stations did a live broadcast and all of the players' interest was focused there. Depending on the outcome of the battle, the territory between Kallamore Kingdom and Haven Kingdom would shift on the Central continent.

With the various traps that the Hermes guild planted on the plain, the confrontation between the two armies was monotonous. In between, the detachment of the Hermes guild's army penetrated deeply into the interior of the Kallamore Kingdom. Made up of a large number of cavalrymen, a contingent of gryphons, rangers, and magicians, the force was great enough to easily occupy any moderate castle.

Kolderim had to make a difficult choice. He could not leave the main force of Hermes guild alone and chase after the detachment. To do so allowed the enemy to seize Kallamore Kingdom's third biggest city.

"We are attacking the Haven Kingdom."

Kallamore Kingdoms great charge! the Hermes guild responded with their magicians and catapults, starting the large scale battle. The fate of the two Kingdoms was hanging in the balance.

*****

Geomchi joined Pale's party late.

"I hope this won't needlessly indebt yourself to me."

"That's not true. We needed someone to take care of close combat."

Pale spoke courteously. He briefly stopped in Morata to peruse the stores and receive quests and met Geomchi.

"Did you try hunting in this area?"

"Some people did take me to several places called dungeons."

Geomchi gave a yawn as if it was nothing but a trifle.

"There was nothing that could give me a good fight."

"Well, it should be like that. The dungeons near Morata has been wiped clean by paladin order of Freya church, and many players are hunting there as well."

As a dungeon became well known, many people flocked to it. Even after the experience and good item drop rates declined, the players still went. This caused some difficulty in hunting for

decent monsters.

“It’s as you said.”

Surka spoke as she pulled on steel tipped gloves.

“We will provide as much help as we can.”

“Right. Then let’s go.”

Geomchi joined the group and Pale’s party left through Morata’s gate. As they left, the merchants doing business in the Square began to whisper.

“Was that the guy that completely cleaned out the exhausted dungeon?”

“Apparently he attached himself to a party and hunted all the monsters by himself. ”

*****

They arrived at the dungeon and Geomchi lightly stepped forward.

“Ey… the old should die.”

All the monsters that were struck by Geomchi's sword disappeared in a grey light. Critical hits happened as if they were a regular occurrence and he slashed the weak points that appeared when the monsters attacked like it was a joke.

"With my age, I can't seem to move as easily as I did when I was younger."

PAK! WACHANG!

PABABABAK!

Geomchi's weapon skill was Advanced level 7. It was a state that was impossible to reach by facing only monsters. After Advanced level 5 of a martial artist's weapon skill, one had to overcome the barrier to their own limits.

Every time Geomchi advanced one level of his weapon skill, he realized the subtle changes to his mastery and chose the most optimal path for his development. This was the reason why his skill developed faster while hunting less than the others.

Pale and his party had to hurry before Geomchi killed off all the monsters.

I have a new opinion of how strong Geomchi-nim really is.

That strength and weight all focused on the tip of the sword for the keen attacks. He makes it look so easy but I don't know how he

attacks so accurately.

And there were over 500 of them.

.....

Surka could pummel a level 350 monster into paste. Zephyr whirled his fishing pole and threw himself in the thickest part of the battle.

But looking at Geomchi, they could only stand in awe.

“It’s annoying to use the sword.”

He picked up the spears and axes the monsters dropped and attacked. Weapon skill allowed any weapon to be used proficiently and maximized the damage. Whatever weapon he handled, there was no hindrance in killing monsters.

Sometimes he looked like a warrior and other times, a soldier from a savage tribe. Seeing Geomchi changing weapons frequently Pale asked a question.

“Are you okay with the difference in handling different weapons?”

Pale asked as he was amazed by what he was seeing. Even with the weapon skill, every weapon had different centers of gravity

and their application in battle was vastly different

“Whatever the weapon, battles are fought by personal taste .”

The personal preference of pummeling monsters! Such as the Orcs, the blight of the Yurokina Mountain range, when equipped with glaives they immediately started breaking things for fun, even their armor.

Zephyr asked in disbelief.

“Isn’t the sword suited toward your taste?”

Geomchi lived practicing the sword. He might have practiced other weapons, but he did not reach the state with his sword by catering to other people’s approval. Surely he would admire the way of the sword.

“My greatest preference is not the sword…”

Geomchi stealthily observed the others. It was a story that could negatively affect the emotions of minors and young school children.

“It’s rare for weapons to measure up to the steel pipes and poles I used when I was young.”

“…”

“The sword is a method for one to temper the heart. A great swordsman has a heart that is polished like a mirror and as still as water, whatever may come he will not fear or tremble.”

At the moment, a swarm of monsters flocked towards them from the dungeon passage.

“Humans have invaded.”

“Kill the tall, bulky, and ugly human first.”

“Captain, what do you mean. Is it the old looking guy?”

“Yes.”

“Kekekekel!”

Before the other members of the party could react, Geomchi was running towards the monsters.

“Your death will not be merciful. Hahahaha!”

Chapter 7: Old Handmaiden Of Rosenheim Kingdom

Hwaryeong came online and the Dark Gamers joined in as Weed gathered the Sculpture Lifeforms to continue hunting.

“This is the dungeon I frequented with Zahab-nim.”

The Dark Gamers hesitated in front of the Geithner Dungeon entrance. Zahab, alone, had brought enormous firepower, using his sword he blocked the enemy’s assault and attacked with significant force. With him gone, the whole group’s fighting potential had substantially declined.

“It’s okay to enter.”

After Weed and Seo Yoon entered first, Hwaryeong followed after them.

“Weed-nim must have some idea of what to do.”

The Dark Gamers briefly discussed it amongst themselves.

“Will it be alright to enter the dungeon? Considering his character until now, he does not seem to be a deceitful person.”

“I think so too. The War God Weed wouldn’t die so carelessly while hunting.”

“Even without Zahab I don’t think this place will be so dangerous that we will get annihilated. Shall we go?”

For Dark Gamers, their bodies were their income so they took great care of them.

“It’s meaningless to abandon them and return to the city like this. I have never once left a hunt so treacherously.”

“I am going to enter.”

Volk and Daerin entered the dungeon first and the rest of the Dark Gamers followed.

Weed used his sword skill against the flying monster Pekoils.

“Radiant Sword!”

A sword skill that made light gush out from Weed’s body! The light birds with a rapturous beauty flew toward the Pekoils. Seo Yoon also used the secret sword skill and attacked with light swords.

“Where did they get this skill… I’ve never heard of such a technique.”

The Dark Gamers' eyes popped out. They had experienced all sorts of battles but this was the first time they had seen such technique.

"Radiant Sword!"

Whenever Weed used his skill, the Dark Gamers observed it closely, even in the middle of their battle.

'Hm, it's strong.'

'The lights split into several strands and slaughtered the monsters. It was really cool.'

The difficult hunt they expected against the Pekoils was made possible with Weed and Seo Yoon using their sword skill.

It was a secret sword skill that used an unbelievable amount of mana and stamina but the monsters here were exceptionally strong so they had no choice but to use it. They could earn plenty of drops and a lot of experience points by beating these monsters. It was life or death difficulty hunting, but, with the mystical light shining inside the dungeon, it was also beautiful.

Weed and Seo Yoon used their Radiant Sword to reduce the monsters health and then finished them off at close range.

*****

Real time: 4 o'clock early in the morning.

Weed had connected earlier compared to his usual routine because there was no need to go to the market and he planned for a simple fried rice for breakfast. But it would be awkward to hunt with just the Sculpture Lifeforms so he planned to rest while making sculptures.

“It’s master.”

Yellowy, who was slumped and sleeping gave off a yawn. Unlike Van Hawk and Torido, the Sculpture Lifeforms needed sufficient sleep.

“It’s alright. Here, eat all you want.”

Weed gave some boiled fodder and sat.

He was in deep thought, wondering what kind of sculptures he had to make to become a Master Sculptor.

‘Sculpting takes a whole room... Should I scrape together all my money and try making a proper, expensive, and fancy sculpture?’

With his authority as the Lord of Morata and Vargo Fortress, he could withdraw the taxes and make a gigantic sculpture made out

of precious metal. Of course there was no guarantee a good sculpture would be created by throwing money at it, but using good materials did produce results.

Hwaryeong logged in while Weed was taking out materials for sculpting. She wanted quality time for just the two of them so she planned to connect early in the morning and wait. Fortunately for her, Weed was already here. Hwaryeong laughed softly that her dimples could be seen.

'Nothing can withstand fate.'

AWOOOOO!

From far away, the howling of a wolf could be heard.

"Ah, why is today so scary? "

Hwaryeong jumped closed to Weed. She, who could hunt over 5,000 wolves simultaneously pretended to be weak and took the chance to move closer so she could get a clearer look at Weed's sculpting.

Weed's eye quickly glanced over her body. Hwaryeong, who had experienced countless gazes from men, did not miss it.

'Weed-nim is still a man.'

She became happy after seeing Weed's pupils becoming large.

'She's wearing a different dress again today.'

The price of the jewel dress was no less than seventy thousand gold! Not only that, she matched it with boots, necklace, and bracelets. Looking at the items Hwaryeong was wearing, Weed was extremely envious.

'She really has a lot of expensive clothes.'

'He's infatuated with my body.'

Hwaryeong felt that something was amiss.

'I haven't put a lot of effort into my make up today... should I have worn a less appealing and more revealing dress? No, Weed-nim would prefer a more pure look.'

As a Dancer, rather than a tight dress with a lot of options, if it felt good it was alright. She still had the dress from back when she was a novice and had separate bags for clothes and accessories.

"Um, I want to try a new dress I bought. Can you check it out for me?"

Weed had no reason to refuse Hwaryeong for saying she was going to wear her own clothing.

“Yes.”

After 30 minutes Hwaryeong felt the complete, pure glamour had returned. She gave off a pure look with her long hair and white, one piece dress.

“How is this?”

“It’s pretty, it draws attention naturally.”

After a short while, she changed into a different dress. Showing off a lively female traveler!

“What about this outfit?”

“It looks comfortable and beautiful.”

Hwaryeong continued to change her dress and showed off to Weed.

“The bag is quite fashionable. It looks like it used premium leather.”

Weed also made sculptures of her. Spending quality time together, Hwaryeong asked.

“Do you like the mountains?”

“Mountains? Well, I don’t dislike them.”

It wasn’t like Weed lived in the mountain town for a day or two, there was nothing to like or hate.

“My birthday is in spring, when the weather is good do you want to go hiking together?”

Hwaryeong bravely asked for a date. If they met up in reality, it would be difficult to avoid a scandal. But she wanted to be with Weed in reality as well. It would be especially great if they could go to the mountain where she felt freedom and comfort.

“If it’s your birthday, then okay.”

In a party, Hwaryeong put Weed first and always tried to be of help to him.

“Yes. Well, let’s buy some pajeon and makgeolli and go have some fun.”

*****

Hunting with Seo Yoon, Dark Gamers and Sculpture Lifeforms was productive, but every night a loud cry could be heard from someplace. Every time this happened, a flock of birds flew off from

the forest and the tribes living in Grapass moved their habitats.

"Master, this place looks dangerous."

Bingryong sensed something was off.

'That might be the boss monster of Grapass.'

In Jigolaths he suffered all kinds of toil and wrapped it up killing Kubicha, the Great Warrior of Chaos, by playing both sides. Weed set himself a rule to avoid such a situation and so when he reached level 406, he decided to leave the Grapass region. While it was regretful that he could not continue to hunt ceaselessly, meeting Zahab and surviving the forbidden region was still a great success.

"For now I need to send off the items to Morata."

Weed instructed the Wyverns to carry the sculptures to the lord's manor in Morata.

"Wy-One."

"Keewk. Kaawak."

"Don't try to fly off to eat something, this needs to go immediately to the lord's manor."

“Kakakaw. As master commands, I won’t eat any fish and go straight away.”

“If I see any bones between your teeth, you're dead.”

“I will go straight to Morata.”

He appointed Bingryong and Phoenix to support the Wyverns while they were moving. With this many Sculpture Lifeforms, they should not encounter any trouble on their way to Morata. And it was a given that they had to handle the cargo preciously as it was the sculptures containing the secret sword skill.

The Dark Gamers and Hwaryeong agreed to meet in Morata later on.

“Then let’s meet again later. Please contact me when you come back!”

“Yes. Hwaryeong-nim please go safely.”

They decided to ride on the Wyverns who were bereft of any load. While it was obvious Hwaryeong would return to Morata where the rest of her party was, it came as a great surprise that the Dark Gamers would abandon Brent Kingdom, their original gathering point.

‘That sword skill, it looks formidable.’

‘It’s truly magnificent. It would be a great help when fighting against monsters and our opponent will be confounded when they see it for the first time.’

Whenever Weed and Seo Yoon used the Radiant Sword, the Dark Gamers’ eyes became covetous. Of all the sword skill they knew, it was a technique that was not known at all!

‘They said Zahab was a Sword Master so they must have learnt it from him.’

‘There is a high chance it’s one of the secret sword skills.’

The Dark Gamers became overly friendly.

“I am out of bandages.”

“Weed-nim, here use these bandages.”

“This is a bandage set I have never used before, please have it.”

“I also don’t have any arrows left.”

“Here, please take my quiver. It’s an enchanted quiver so it can store up to five hundred arrows. Please don’t feel any obligations and use it as you will. You don’t have to return it. ”

When Weed spoke of his needs, they offered it to him immediately. It was because they had hope that maybe, Weed would teach them the secret sword skill. Of course, due to Weed's greed he wanted to keep Zahab's secret sword skill to himself.

The sculptures he made, that allowed the secret sword skill to be grasped, were a treasure that he was only going to allow the Geomchis to know of. No matter who else asked, he could not expose the secret sword skill to anyone. But the possibility of someone else appearing, knowing the Radiant Sword was high as Zahab was out in the world. When that time came, he could bargain a good deal with the Dark Gamers.

In the case of Seo Yoon, she said she had something to do in Rosenheim Kingdom and decided to go with Weed. It was time for Wy-Three to lift his heavy buttocks to fly, so he was tottering unsteadily as he got into position.

"Wy-Three."

"Gyaruk?"

"I am going to go with you."

"Gagagak!"

Wy-Three prostrated while crying. And so Weed, Seo Yoon and Wy-Three flew toward Rosenheim Kingdom.

“Wy-Three, should I make you a set of clothes?“

The third Wyvern, Wy-Three’s beak stretched to the breaking point as he nodded his head.

‘The master puts me under a lot of hardship but I am the one he takes care of the most.’

“I will make it out of thick fabric as the weather is cold.”

“Master, I am grateful that you even considered making me cloth.”

“I found your back cold and hard while riding on it for a long time. At least it should have a cosy blanket on top. Ah, I should make pillows as well.”

“.....”

Wy-Three was getting concerned that if there was sufficient space on his back, he would be forced to fly while carrying tables and chairs!

While flying to Rosenheim Kingdom, Weed made moonlight sculptures. Seo Yoon’s hair fluttered in the wind while she watched him work. There were moments when men who were absorbed in their work were attractive.

But Seo Yoon was as beautiful as a goddess even when she was absentminded. She was sitting there with the stars and the moon shining high in the sky as her background. Her hair fluttering in the wind. Whenever Weed used the moonlight sculpting skill, it even added unnecessary light effects. It wouldn't be an exaggeration to say it transformed her already beautiful face into a precious treasure!

"As I explore the breadth and depth of sculpting I feel as if it has endless potential."

While Weed used his sculpting knife, he was deeply moved by the originality of Zahab's sculptures.

"The world where sculptures can be sold expensively is coming."

For sculptors it was a future where they truly could not hope for more. If they could eat and live on sculptures, if they could hang all their hopes and dreams on their path as sculptors, it would be true happiness.

*****

Rosenheim Kingdom!

Compared to the past when Weed started, there were many changes. High-end stores were established and the general attire of the beginners was of high quality.

“Rosenheim Kingdom has grown quite big.”

Weed and Seo Yoon, riding on the Wyvern, landed on the mountain some distance away and walked the rest of the distance to the kingdom’s capital, Serabourg Citadel.

There were even some merchants and adventurers passing by that could recognize Weed.

“I am back in my true hometown. ”

The time he sold off a considerable amount of sheep sculptures and the equally enormous number of victims who bought his pieces at exorbitant prices. And the players who suffered carrying heavy boulders for the sake of building the pyramid! If he looked back and recalled the good memories, they were a very welcoming people.

Weed and Seo Yoon hurried their pace.

“There is so much I have to do in the city.”

The item drops from Grapass filled four bags to the brim. He had to dispose of the needless items and meet up with the old handmaiden.

“Finally, I get to sing that song.”

Seo Yoon had a somewhat worried look on her face. The reason she had such a look was that she had heard Weed practising that song. Compared to Zahab's euphonious, dulcet voice Weed's talent was a thousand light years away! It was an odd sound like a rooster crowing timidly in the morning.

'Will it be alright? I hope nothing bad happens.'

Seo Yoon worriedly followed after him.

Weed had just entered the castle gate of Serabourg and was about to go to the Square when the knights and soldiers guarding Rosenheim Kingdom's gates came and surrounded him. The players nearby started pointing fingers and became rowdy.

"Ara, what's happening with that guy?"

"Did he commit some crime and is trying to come back into the city?"

"Alright. There's finally something to see. He's going to be beaten to death by the soldiers."

"Looking at his equipment, he's not a complete novice but could he stand up to the soldiers?"

"So what. Then he would become a public enemy of the

Rosenheim Kingdom and they will dispatch the army to kill him.”

Weed felt the situation was completely unfair.

“What crime did I commit…”

He could only recall a miniscule evil he committed recently.

‘There is only the small amount of time I played as Undead, conspired with pirates and fought Hermes guild’s Polon with the Undead Legion but…’

They were actions that reduced reputation. But if he wanted to work and eat, this much was necessary!

The knights and soldiers did not draw their weapon and threaten Weed, rather they raised their hands to their chests and greeted him respectfully.

“Welcome travelers.”

The players who were expecting an enjoyable spectacle were perplexed by the soldiers actions.

“Huk.”

“I have been doing business here for over 2 years and it’s the first

time seeing the soldiers acting like that. Even the knights are bowing their heads!”

“Who is that person?”

“Do you think rankers from the central continent came here to play? But seeing the response from the soldiers their fame must be…”

The gazes of people coming and going from the castle gates were on Weed and Seo Yoon. Weed tried to ignore them and enter but at that moment the knight spoke.

“His majesty wanted to welcome the travelers and directed me to lead them to the castle.”

The effect of fame and achievements! He could meet any kings in the Versailles continent, but seeing as Rosenheim Kingdom was the region Weed started in, the treatment he received was vastly different. If he stayed behind and remained active in Serabourg Citadel, it was possible that Rosenheim Kingdom would experience tremendous development.

“There is work I have to do to keep the peace on the continent. Meeting his majesty, who rules over Rosenheim Kingdom is a great honor even for me. But there is an urgent matter I have to attend to so I must pay my respects later.”

He had dragged on the quest from the old handmaiden for so long

that he wanted to do resolve it as quickly as possible. He could always meet the king of Rosenheim Kingdom later.

“Well if it's like that then there is nothing we can do. His majesty will be waiting so please attend his audience.”

“I shall do so.”

Weed and Seo Yoon under the gaze of many players entered Serabourg Citadel.

*****

“I am buying and selling items. I do procurement or resale.”

“I can make any equipment you need.”

“Before you go to hunt please check your necessities. I sell them here.”

Weed decided to head to the Square and take care of his bags. An unusually obese man with a parked carriage was waiting there.

“Are you perhaps Weed-nim?”

“Yes, you are right.”

It was the merchant waiting there after being contacted by Mapan. He was ‘Gimme The Money’ an up and coming trader in Rosenheim Kingdom known for his refusals.

“Did you bring the items?”

“Money first.”

“Here. I am being uselessly cautious but these definitely are the goods?”

“Check for yourself.”

If people who did not know the situation listened in on Weed and Gimme The Money, they might have mistaken it for illicit dealing.

“These are definitely the goods. The quantity is without a doubt correct. I receive them in good faith.”

“It was a good deal. If we have a chance then next time as well…”

“Whenever you have the goods, you can search for Gimme The Money anytime in Serabourg Citadel.”

The scene was giving off a bad influence like the crime movies shown on cable.

For Weed, the faster the transaction the better so he received the money bag and turned around with no regret. The leather pouch didn't look like anything special but inside was 168 thousand gold! As these items were from hunting in Grapass, he received quite a sum. It was also thanks to the japtem Seo Yoon collected as he sold them for quite a good price. It was good practise to not only collect japtem but also to sell them for the right value.

"Right, let's go now."

They went to the residence of the old handmaiden. In general the street was filled with similar looking houses but Weed spotted her house quickly.

"I haven't delivered milk for 3 years and newspapers for 7 years just for nothing!"

When Weed entered the old handmaiden's house, he noticed that she looked much older than before.

"The adventurer finally returned I see."

"Yes. I braved the cold wind and morning dew, wandering the continent to keep the promise I made to you."

"Then did you meet Zahab-nim?"

"You were correct about him. Also he made more amazing sculptures."

“Regretfully I do not know much about sculptures. For me I only have memories left of Zahab-nim whom the Queen loved. I want to listen to the song from then.”

Weed pulled out a harp to accompany his singing.

“Then I shall start.”

KEEK… BAAK… QUAAK… CREEK…

As soon as Weed finished his song, the handmaiden’s tilted her head.

“It’s strange.”

“Yes?”

“I don’t think it was this noisy when I heard it then, but it also doesn’t seem different…”

It was on a level where the tune was made up! It would possibly be easier for Weed to go back to Jigolaths than singing.

“But I was happy that I could recalled the memories from the past. Do you know? As you get older the happy memories from the past are like jewels.”

“I think so as well.”

“Zahab-nim and the queen really did make a good match. I really want to see a scene of them making sculptures while travelling together…”

Tears dropped from the old handmaiden’s eyes. Weed became weak seeing the old granny shedding tears.

Weed took out 3 small blocks of wood.

Saksak.

One in the shape of young Zahab, another of the queen and he even sculpted the young handmaiden from the video he viewed in the past.

Please set a name for your sculpture.

“Handmaiden… No, Grandmother’s Memory.”

Is ‘Grandmother’s Memory’ correct?

“Yes.”

‘Grandmother’s Memory’ has been completed.

A sculpture made by Weed, who is close to the highest level of sculpting.

Has been sculpted in a very short time.

Artistic Value: 289.

Mastery of Sculpting skill increased.

“This is a gift for you.”

“To have received such a great sculpture! I do not know much about sculptures but it seems to be made with great skill.”

Weed had an idea that it would increase friendship with the old handmaiden greatly. While he did not do this with expectation of receiving something from her, he did think he could perhaps get a free meal at least. Wyvern’s movement speed increased with his level. Therefore Weed and Seo Yoon flew over from Grapass in a moment and could not eat anything on the way.

Seo Yoon and Weed looked upon the old handmaiden with a warm gaze.

“Thank you. To have received such a present before I die. I have enjoyed listening to your song.”

DING!

‘Continue Zahab’s Legacy’ Completed

Zahab’s song awakened the handmaiden Elzase’s memory. She will tell you a story you did not get to hear last time.

Quest Reward: Gift from her and information on the next quest.

Fame increased by 569.

Experience increased by a small amount.

‘The quest doesn’t end here….’

This was the quest that started from the training center and gave him the chance to choose the class , Moonlight Sculptor. Weed did not expect a big quest reward, which reflected on the 3.7% worth of experience he earned due to his high level. But more surprisingly the quest story that covered Zahab and the Queen was still not finished.

“This is something that I have saved for the person who would allow me to listen to that song again.”

The old handmaiden stood up from her seat and pulled out a small box from the drawer.

“Please open this. It’s a jewel the Queen gave me, I want to give this to you now.”

Weed opened the box and saw 3 diamonds sparkling brilliantly.

‘This must worth at least 70 thousand gold.’

Weed estimated the price the moment he saw it.

“This reminds me about the story of the Queen from back then. When Zahab-nim left, the Queen fell into a great sorrow. As the Queen of the nation, she did not show any grief outwardly and appeared to be well. But something happened back then and she died of a mysterious sickness a year and a half later. I know for a fact that there is a diary she wrote during that period…”

The woman who had to live as a Queen after sending off the man she loved since her childhood! As a Queen of Rosenheim Kingdom she was noble and virtuous, but at a young age she contracted an illness and crossed the great divide.

“There should be many other stories of Zahab-nim in the Queen’s diary that I couldn’t tell you. Please ask around for Fabiane, she is another handmaiden who knows more about what happen back then. I do not know if she is still living. I am not sure if this will help but she really likes the melampodium paludosum flower.”

DING!

A Suspicious Diary Somewhere

Written by Queen Evane, the presumed diary is said to have records of secrets of the kingdom.

To find the diary, you must meet Fabiane the handmaiden who has served within the castle.

Difficulty: D

Quest Restriction: Must first complete the quest ‘Continue Zahab’s Legacy.’

To receive the quest reward, the quest must be completed before the old handmaiden dies.

Quest cannot be cancelled.

A chain quest! It was difficult to calculate how many levels it has been since the training center.

Weed could smell the wafting suspiciousness surrounding the death of the Queen.

“For now… I understand.”

You have accepted the Quest.

Quest reward aside, he came this far and was curious how the quest would end.

*****

Hermes guild and Kallamore Kingdom's great clash! People were drooling as their eyes were glued to the screen.

The knights of Kallamore Kingdom increased their speed as they broke through the chaotic battlefield. They perforated the Hermes guild’s main army and raised their momentum.

The sound of the horn, the trampling of hooves and the shrieking of people as they collapsed filled the battlefield. The broadcasters wanted to capture every minute detail, but because of the grandness of the battle they could only show the aerial view to the audience.

Each battle arrangement had tens of thousands fighting and in the rear of Kallamore Kingdom, over 100 thousand militia were organized and running toward the city.

“Knights of Kallamore! This is truly amazing and frightening. The knights Kolderim is leading broke through the magic attacks and are charging.”

The knights of Kallamore Kingdom were armed with high magic resistant equipments. The weak magic attacks did no damage and

disappeared into thin air. But the spells the advance mages of Hermes guild were using impacted the knights as intended!

Here the knights expertly controlled their horses, riding like the wind as they scattered and changed direction, driving back the Hermes guild. Words could not describe how awesome the scene was, just watching made the heart faster.

“Ah, they are getting killed out there.”

“It would be great if Hermes guild gets utterly ruined by this.”

The viewers sitting in front of the television and the players watching in twos and threes in Royal Road taverns hoped the war would end like this. They were all of one mind and heart for the Hermes guild, which symbolized the prestigious guild in the central continent, to have their power and influence be cut.

Soon after, Kallamore Kingdom and Hermes guild’s total command got involved and the war front became larger. To win the war, one side needed to occupy a minimum of 10 castles and cities. Or if analyzed further, the existence of each surrounding kingdom could be in jeopardy.

On the wide plain where the two kingdom’s overflowing forces collided, causing the battle immersed viewers to forget about time. It was a complete, full scale war!

After a small amount of time passed, the size of the Kallamore

Kingdom's army became smaller and smaller and it retreated to a corner. Many of Hermes guild's high level players were involved and their average foot soldiers experience, equipment, and level was higher than their foe. Each commanders archers, magicians, swordsmen, spearmen, shield men and cavalry were operated efficiently.

Kallamore Kingdom, whose force of cavalry and knight orders were high, began to show their weak point and were pushed back in the overall battle.

"March."

"Control the western side and capture the center."

It was the sight of the Hermes guild, who had prepared for a long time for this war, winning. The infantry cut off the Kallamore Kingdoms flank and encircled the main force. Battalions of archers sniped the famous knights of Kallamore Kingdom one by one.

Kolderim was busy all over, dragging his knights to glory. But the Hermes guild straggled the surrounding knights and killed them off.

"Our share is over there."

Bardray and his Black Knights who were, for a time, looking over the battle, sortied. They were aiming for Kolderim, who was fighting alone in the midst of Hermes guild infantry. They were

planning to declare Hermes guild's victory to everyone after they killed Kolderim.

*****

Weed and Seo Yoon left the old handmaidens house and were walking on the street of Rosenheim Kingdom.

"Ah, this miserable world..."

"Ah, this is annoying. Why is the sky so clear. Just rain damn it."

"I feel depressed so let's go drink some alcohol."

"Sure. Let's just drink."

The atmosphere of the players in Serabourg Citadel was not good. It was because Hermes guild utterly destroyed the Kallamore Kingdom's defense force. Not only the players who saw the broadcast in Rosenheim Kingdom but all over Versailles Continent, the tavern saw a jump in customers.

Even for Weed, the news about Hermes guild was extremely important.

"In the end, they won."

If the Hermes guild became completely ruined, it would have been a heaven sent gift but he did not even hope for such an outcome. Weed had a feeling that Hermes guild would win from the start.

“In this world, the bad guys always live well in a grand style.”

These famous guilds were no different. If Hermes guild fell, someone else would take their place. No matter who, they would not leave Weed in peace. To be successful in life and to make money, one had to live completely opposite of written ethics.

Even with that thought aside, Weed was troubled about searching for Fabiane. Serabourg Citadel of Rosenheim Kingdom was as familiar to him as Morata. From his poverty stricken time as a novice, to the period of running through every nook and crevice to search for people to buy his sculptures!

“I even remember the alleyways.”

The wide paths where the carriages went through were packed with stalls and during the time when people crowded the street, Weed used the alleys to reduce travel time so he knew the alleyway like the back of his hand. Since then a lot of time has passed and some new buildings were erected, but the residential area did not appeared to have changed much.

“A melampodium paludosum…”

Weed had memorised a lot of facts on herbalism so it was a flower he knew.

“It’s just a yellow flower!”

The flower was modestly pretty, average in size with split flower petals.

“I think this alley had some of the yellow flowers growing about back then.”

Weed fumbled through his memories as he walked through Serabourg Citadel with Seo Yoon. Even though the castle had many players, the alleys without stalls were devoid of people.

Bees and butterflies flew over the many flowers growing charmingly on the street. Weed and Seo Yoon were walking through the most scenic alley in Serabourg Citadel.

“It’s kind of far right?”

“Not really.”

“It should be close to here. If we had the time we could try to look for a beehive. There is nothing like honey to bolster the body.”

“….”

Weed found the melampodium paludosum in the alley and visited each of the 3 houses with the yellow flowers blooming on their porch. The first house belonged to a gardener who was a flower enthusiast.

“You have amazing hand skills! If you have come here to learn flower arrangement, I will teach it to you leisurely from the basics.”

If it was Weed from the past who considered flowers to be useless, he would have turned around and left before he heard the entire proposal. But as he learned sculpting and other skills, he felt that nothing was useless in the Versailles Continent. And so he listened to the gardener's words and learned how to pluck out the withered flower petals and cut off the dead twigs.

DING!

Skill: Flower Arrangement Learnt.

Flower Arrangement: A skill used to grow and appreciate flowering shrubs and trees!

Skill level and affinity to land and plants increases when flowers and trees are grown properly.

Fully bloomed flowers can be put into a vase as an ornament.

By learning Flower Arrangement your affinity to nature

increased by 3.

It was an important affinity in manifesting a bigger Natural Disaster Sculpting. Seeing Weed learning it, Seo Yoon copied him and learned Flower Arrangement as well. Weed's skill was at beginner level 1.

"I should plant a lot of flowers at the Morata's lord manor later on."

Through the effect of a Masterpiece that Weed made, a Wildflower Festival occurred in Morata. Of course just looking at flowers was enjoyable but if left unattended weeds and vines could grow ruining them. But when a person applied his hands, plants could find their proper place and become more beautiful.

Weed's Handicraft skill and Art stat were at a surprising level, and with his refined taste through sculpting, if he started cultivation from the seed he could grow breathtaking flower beds and trees.

"To commemorate learning Flower Arrangement let me give you a present."

You have received a white woodsorrel as a present from Gardener Jenkins.

The gardner gave Weed and Seo Yoon a bouquet of flowers with white petals.

“This could become my first Flower Arrangement.”

For Weed, making a vase or a flower pot was like a piece of cake.

“But cultivating flowers during the middle of an adventure is difficult, wait right there for me.”

Weed took a white flower and pinned it on Seo Yoon’s hair. There was no big reason for it other than wanting to try it once. Seo Yoon furtively touched the white flower and looked slightly embarrassed by it.

DING!

Flower Arrangement skill increased to beginner level 2. Flowers and trees become more vibrant. Growth speed becomes faster.

Affinity to Nature increased by 2.

Fame increased by 25.

The flower the gardner gave was of a kind that grew easily and with the intervention of Weed’s Art stat and Handicraft, the skill level increased in a breath of a moment. Also the flower suited Seo Yoon really well and it was one of the reasons he received a lot of skill mastery.

With the white flower pinned in her hair, Seo Yoon looked really beautiful and gave off a feeling of loveliness. Seo Yoon also pinned a flower next to Weed's ear. A message window also popped up for her.

Mastery of Flower Arrangement rose slightly.

The white flower pinned on Weed's hair, withered in the blink of an eye. It was as if some unseen force was sucking up the nutrients!

"I don't think that flower was healthy."

Weed thought as such. Even if it wasn't the truth, his heart wanted to believe otherwise.

To find Fabiane, they went to the second house. But inside were children waiting for their parents to return.

"They went to sell some flowers in the market. My mom knows a place in Serabourg Citadel where a lot of pretty flowers bloom."

"The evil goblins are appearing frequently so it's difficult to pluck flowers these days. It will be nice if someone defeats them... For us it's really important but I think it would be too easy for you to do. I don't have anything to properly reward you with if you clear out the Goblins so I will ask someone else to handle it."

Weed's fame was so high it was difficult for the children to give him a quest. As long as Seo Yoon with her high fame and level. did

not deliberately ask to accompany him on the quest, there was no reason to accept it.

And so the third house! A granny with deep wrinkles was sitting by the window sill, looking at the yellow flowers.

“Are you perhaps Fabian-nim?”

“For a young man to come looking for me, what did you come here for?”

“I came here to learn more about Queen Evane.”

“It’s not a story that should be told on the street. Please come inside the house.”

As the door opened Weed and Seo Yoon entered her house.

“Please have this while you ask all your questions. You mustn’t skip your meals when you are young.”

The food Fabiane brought them was poached potatoes!

Completing quests in Serabourg Citadel blessed them with meals. Truthfully, one of the most developed businesses in Serabourg Citadel was the food industry. There wasn’t any old traditional food but the restaurants, steakhouses, and seafood buffets were famous. Through the development of a Chef’s daring menu, they

could even open a speciality restaurant serving monsters as food.

“Nom nom, this is shockingly good.”

“It’s nice to see you eating it deliciously. I have plenty of potatoes so eat as much as you want.”

“Is it too much to ask if you could pack some for the road?”

“I heard you are quite a famous adventurer... it won’t be a problem to pack you a basket.”

Even while sharing such conversation, Weed was peeling off the potatoes skin fast like a ghost.

Note:

Woodsorrel or 사랑초 in korean might be a double meaning. As (사랑)초 means (love) and also the meaning behind the flower is ‘늘 당신과 함께 하겠습니다’ or ‘Always with you’

Chapter 8: Diary Of Queen Evane

"I heard that Queen Evane had written a diary."

"Where did you hear that... There were only a few people who knew she kept a diary.... Ah, did Elzase Unni tell you this?"

"Yes, she did."

"I see, you were sent by Unni. Thinking about it, it's been so long since I lost contact with her. Though, sorry to say, I don't know what's written inside the Queen's diary."

"Then do you know where I can find this diary?"

"I need to search my memories."

Fabian closed her eyes seemingly viewing into distant memories.

Wagu Wagu.

The only sound reverberating inside the room was Weed munching on potatoes. After his fifth potato, Fabiane opened her eyes again.

"It's been a long time so I can't be sure, but the diary won't be at the Star Palace where the Queen was staying. A month before she

died, she went to her hometown. After that, I never saw that diary again. Perhaps she hid it someplace?”

You have acquired information regarding Queen Evane’s diary.

Weed had a reasonable idea of the location of the diary. It was probably hidden at the hometown where the Queen used to play together with Zahab.

“Then, please take care.”

Weed really did take a basket full of potatoes with him and went over the mountain behind Serabourg Citadel. He arrived at the village Queen Evane used to live in and went to the big tree where Zahab used to make his sculptures.

“It’s probably this place.”

When Adventurers used the Detection skill they received a slithery feeling from places related to the quest objective. As Weed did not have such a skill, he had to actually dig the ground up to find out.

“Let’s get started.”

He took out a spade and began to dig the ground. Through the effect of his Mining skill, the ground was dug up quickly under his spadework! After digging 1 meter deep, he found a wooden chest.

You have unearthed Queen Evane's hidden chest.

Fame increased by 265.

The excavation of Queen Evane's chest improved the adventurer's record. If you report this to the Adventurer's guild you could receive a small reward.

Weed opened the wooden chest. Inside was a pair of rusted keys, a small hand mirror and a book.

You have obtained a key to the Star Palace.

You have obtained a key for a secret room.

You have obtained a mirror that shows the truth.

You have obtained a tear soaked diary of Queen Evane.

Weed checked the keys first.

"Identify!"

Star Palace Key: Durability 2/4

Key to allow Queen Evane entrance to the palace.

Option: Bravery +1

It was the key to open the sealed palace of Queen Evane. Currently the rumors mentioned that after it was abandoned, monsters began to live in the palace.

“I never heard of anything suggesting the Star Palace is open. Then this must be the key that opens the palace. Onto the next item… Identify!”

This time, Weed placed the key to the secret room on the palm of his hand.

Secret Room Key: Durability 1/4

This is the key to open a secret room somewhere.

There is nothing that especially distinguishes this.

It is greatly damaged so it will be difficult to use this several times.

Option: After 4 uses, it will be destroyed.

“Identify!”

Truth Showing Hand Mirror: Durability 14/25

A hand mirror encrusted with precious jewels.

Made of special material, divine power is flowing through it.

Reveals falsehoods and visions, leads one back to the way of truth.

Could be used at a particular place.

Restrictions: Cannot be used by murderers and evil men.

When dancers, bards or priests equip this item, the effect of this item doubles.

Option: Intelligence, Wisdom +7.

Charm +23.

Maximum value of mana increase by 11%.

Faith increase by 38.

In a specific place, it will lead you the way.

“This doesn’t look ordinary…”

Weed sniffed up the many satisfying scents coming from the quest items. Then he opened up the last item left, the diary, and began reading. The diary was not written consistently everyday. There was an entry every one or two months, written whenever it was necessary. There were some parts that were unreadable due to the tear marks, but overall they were not a hindrance.

16th January

I would rather live free than be a queen.

With Zahab…

Like back then… The happy OO ti OO me…

19th March

Will Zahab come to see me again?

The happiest m O ments in my life was seeing him making those sculptures.

If only I could return back to the time when I was young and innocent.

7th April

I want to see Zahab.

My heart will always follow him.

If only I was not OOO then I could be ha OO py OO with Zahab...

6th June

I am gathering trustworthy people to protect Rosenheim Kingdom.

We are prepared to die.

Though I am queen, I will tie my fate with them.

1st September

Embinyu Church.

I think I have rushed too much.

They figured out my involvement.

11th September

The spy ‘Yiorlin’ who is providing information on the Embinyu Church has sent a message.

Assassins have been sent to kill me.

I want to se O Zahab one last time.

14th September

I am burying this diary at the place I have many happy memories with him.

You have acquired information regarding Queen Evane’s death.

Reemergence of Embinyu Church!

Weed was still as he chewed over the content of the diary. But his brain spun faster than when he tried to scam for Yellowy’s feed. All his perception was in agreement.

‘Queen Evane and Zahab. This chain quest is connected to the Embinyu Church.’

Weed came here after meeting Zahab first. The friendship he had earned then was to be used for a situation like this.

‘It’s to fight the Embinyu Church with Zahab and bring them into account for the death of Queen Evane!’

Although the story was different, there was a time when he had fought with the Embinyu Church in the North. When the Queen’s death was all but forgotten, and when meeting the guy who loved her, it was all a scenario that pointed toward the sculptor gaining vengeance against the Embinyu Church!

‘This was a rushed action, it’s like going to a meat buffet and eating only 5 rolls of gimbap before the meat is ready.’

He was sorely regretting his past actions.

‘I should have guessed that the quest would not end with meeting him!’

There were many different thoughts in his head but it was pointless regretting it now.

Weed took the items and returned to the old handmaiden Elzase.

“The Queen’s diary! I could have never imagined it would be found again. Did you meet Fabiane?”

“Yes, I met with her. She was living in the alleyway behind the market district.”

“Oh, is that so. Even though she is living so close by, after I left the castle I never contacted her so I never knew. The reason was because somehow the handmaidens serving the Queen were dying one by one.”

DING!

‘A Suspicious Diary Somewhere’ Completed

The diary of Queen Evane was buried in the ground where she was happy with Zahab.

Fame increased by 17.

Experience increased by a very small amount.

Seeing Weed’s level was so high, the easy quest did not even give experience worth mentioning.

The handmaiden opened the diary and read through it.

“My word, how could something like this…! So there was such a secret behind the Queen’s death. But I think it’s too late now.”

“What?”

“It would have been alright if you came 3 month ago… The royal knight Yiorlin died due to a monster attack.”

“…..”

“It’s too sad what happened to the Queen. Except for this diary there is absolutely no proof about the tragic death of the Queen… The relevant people are not even around now. There is only little old me and Sculptor-nim so I don’t know how we can avenge her.”

DING!

Quest, ‘Deliver the Diary’ did not materialize.

Suspension in the chain quest!

There was a great emptiness that came upon Weed.

‘I came too late.’

The Embinyu Church was already spread widely in Rosenheim Kingdom. Also the related incidents already occurred. Because he came too late, the quest disappeared halfway.

“But if it wasn’t for adventurer-nim, then this old lady would have always just brooded about what happened. Although the Queen and Zahab-nim loved each other, they couldn’t be together and in the end we couldn’t even avenge the Queen.”

"....."

“Perhaps this was for the better. The Queen and Zahab-nim would not have wanted revenge. You must have experienced a lot of hardship because of my unreasonable request.”

Fame increased by 13.

Weed feebly left the old handmaiden’s house. He couldn’t even pack the poached potatoes this time.

*****

On the street, Seo Yoon asked.

“Will you return to Morata?”

“No. We came all the way here and also got the key, we should try going to the Star Palace.”

Weed went to the castle and with the key he opened Queen Evane’s Star Palace. While the castle in Rosenheim Kingdom had many players visiting to meet the nobles and officials, no one went close to the abandoned Star Palace.

Dungeon, you are the first to discover the Star Palace.

Privileges: Fame increased by 1,700.

Double experience and item drop rate for one week.

Monsters hunted for the first time will drop the best possible item that it can.

Bravery increased by 3 for entering the Star Palace.

“Let’s hunt to our heart’s content.”

Inside the Star Palace, old artworks were hidden like treasures and there were rooms hidden with gold articles. This dungeon was luxurious!

Usually in dungeons where only low level monsters appeared, the whole place had to be searched to earn a piece of bronze but here it was filled with treasure. After the death of Queen Evane, the palace was left to rot and turned into a dungeon through a mysterious curse.

The Star Palace was littered with souls of maids, knights, and soldiers who died with regret. The reason was unknown but there was a lot of grotesque monsters called Burgle.

“This is quite a dangerous dungeon.”

At Weed and Seo Yoon’s level, the lingering souls were easy to handle. But the Burgle monsters charged with incredible speed and thrust themselves into battle, not only was their level mid 400, they were extremely dangerous. Fortunately the monsters didn't rush them all at once, so compared to hunting in the Grapass region, it was considerably easier.

“Call: Death Knight Van Hawk, call: Vampire Lord Torido!”

Weed summoned Torido and Van Hawk and fought together with Seo Yoon. When Seo Yoon wasn’t with him, he cautiously hunted the outskirt of the dungeon with Death Knight Van Hawk using Radiant Sword.

“KIEEEEK!”

Radiant Sword was effective against curse type monsters, also the skill mastery increased easily but nothing new came out of the light yet. But still, the Burgles had great strength which made them difficult to deal with. Even if he used his skill, the Burgles bashed in with their shield and pushed in, whirling their great swords.

In the morning when the Radiant Sword became weaker, Weed went to the Square and made sculptures.

“Doing this reminds me of back then.”

Lost in his memories he started making sculptures of deer, foxes,

and rabbits. Truthfully, these were the shapes he sculpted the most, but it wouldn't be an exaggeration to say these shapes laid the basis of his sculpting skill.

"Tsk tsk, you don't make sculptures like that."

While Weed was carving his sculptures, a player who looked the same age as him approached.

"Yes?"

"I am also a sculptor, shall I teach you some tricks?"

This player's class was also a sculptor!

The place Weed was at was a good spot where people had to cross to reach the Square's fountain. Blacksmith and seamstress were a given but especially, there were many sculptors sitting there and doing business. While players with other classes wouldn't be interested, Serabourg Citadel in Rosenheim Kingdom was like a holy land to the sculptors! It was to the point that making and selling sculptures here was recommended in message boards as a way for sculptors to grow.

"My sculpting skill is beginner level 4 but my specialties lie in making deer, foxes, rabbits, and wolves. I have made over 10 thousand of them."

"Why did you make so many of the same images?"

“This is a secret only the sculptors in Rosenheim Kingdom know, this secret is from the peerless hero birthed from Rosenheim Kingdom! The War God and the Great Sculptor Weed did the exact same thing.”

Weed’s eyes were bleak and for the first time he looked around his surroundings, observing the different sculptors all making foxes and such sculptures. These were the many unfortunate sacrificial lambs copying his growth method.

Truthfully, sculptures were sold as souvenirs in Serabourg Citadel so the sculptors financial situation became better. But compared to the sculptors, artists were still scraping by as they had to continually buy paint.

“While the public wouldn’t know, sculpting is a path that is harder than they can imagine.”

Weed nodded his head. Just continually making deer and foxes had truly no bottom or end, it was like walking perpetually to the same spot.

“Most people give up after only a few days, but to become like Weed-nim this is a phase that must be passed.”

“So after you make the basic sculptures in the city, what happens next?”

“After we gather 1,000 sculptors, we are planning to make a pyramid and a sphinx.”

The wrong path of suffering and hardship that Weed laid down, was now walked on and expanded without any change by the next generation.

*****

Park Jin Suk met with chairman Jeong Deuk Soo.

“I don’t think Seo Yoon even notices me. She is so indifferent it’s hard to talk with her. Is there any good method that I can try?”

When she came back from university, she did not go out again. There was no reason for Seo Yoon to accept his proposal for a date at a sudden notice. He had to try and get to know her gradually but Seo Yoon had no openings. Rather Park Jin Suk became more fretful.

“Then how about playing Royal Road?”

“Royal Road?”

“My daughter spends a lot of time in Royal Road, meeting her there might be more comfortable. Perhaps you haven’t played it yet?”

“I am already playing it. These days there is no one that hasn’t played Royal Road.”

Park Jin Suk thought this was a brilliant idea. His class in Royal Road was a hunter. While hunters could not wear heavy armor, they could use a variety of weapons, do archery, and install and dismantle traps. It was a versatile class with comparable strength and vitality.

“You could go hunting with my daughter at least.”

“Then we could easily become closer.”

Royal Road was a game that made and broke apart many a couple. In Park Jin Suk’s case, just getting to talk with Seo Yoon was all he could hope for.

“But there is one person my daughter frequents with…”

“I heard she had a man. But from my understanding, they aren’t deeply involved. I can understand that with Seo Yoon’s beauty many men would follow after her.

“Isn’t it? However she plays Royal Road often with that man.”

“Do you know who he is?”

“The character name is said to be Weed.”

“Weed? It’s really a common name.”

Weed was a name spread out and used so commonly in Royal Road, it wasn't much of a help to Park Jin Suk. Truthfully, Park Jin Suk was an ardent fan of Weed. But he was a bit disappointed learning that this rival copied the name for his character.

“I think he was called the War God in Royal Road.”

“What?”

“He became quite famous after beating some monsters.”

Chairman Jeong Deuk Soo didn’t think it was important and spoke unassumingly, but Park Jin Suk was a diehard fan who liked all of Weed’s adventures so much he memorized them. The name highlighted in stations broadcasting Royal Road dozens of times per day was Weed, Orc Karichwi, Undead Legion and Morata.

*****

Park Jin Suk waited for Seo Yoon at her front door, arranging for the time she came back from university. Seo Yoon was approaching from afar and when she reached her door and tried to enter he spoke.

“Excuse me, I have a request.”

“……”

Seo Yoon did not ignore him but also did not enter through her front door, she did not even turn to face him. It was because she already knew the reason why he approached her.

“Um, I heard that you hunt with Weed-nim in Royal Road. Is it possible that I can meet Weed-nim at least once?”

Rivalry was a rivalry but Park Jin Suk as a fan in Royal Road wanted to meet Weed at least once. However Seo Yoon shook her head in a negative manner. This could cause her inconvenience as nothing would expose Weed into the open as this.

“I really want to know what kind of person he is, I just want to meet him for a brief moment and chat with him.”

“……”

“With my character level, I would definitely lose but I want to ask for a duel with Weed-nim and kinda learn some tricks from him as well.”

Park Jin Suk also wanted to sincerely date Seo Yoon. Through this he thought he could establish a connection with her. While the start would be rocky, afterwards he thought he would have a chance to become closer with her. It was a calculated proposal with a multistage plan.

When Seo Yoon heard it was for a duel, she gave a small nod.

“Rosenheim Kingdom.....”

“I need to go to Rosenheim Kingdom?”

Hearing Seo Yoon’s beautiful voice, Park Jin Suk’s happiness went through the roof.

“Come to the mountain behind Serabourg Citadel.”

“I am currently with some friends in Brent Kingdom. It’s not far from where I am. I will get there as fast as I can. ”

*****

“Robin, is it really true?”

“I am telling you, we are going to meet War God Weed right now.”

Hunter Robin. He brought a lot of his friends to the mountain behind Serabourg Citadel. Tingling with excitement at the prospect of meeting War God Weed! He was a figure that was harder to meet personally than the head’s of famous guilds.

After hearing that they could meet him personally, Robin, who wanted to see Morata, and his friends stopped their dungeon hunt and came immediately. When they arrived, Weed was no where in sight except for Seo Yoon who was standing in full armor.

Robin and his friends were grinning as they approached her.

“Weed-nim hasn’t arrived yet?”

They were tolerant of Weed’s lateness as they haven’t set an exact time,. And if they could talk to Seo Yoon while waiting for Weed, it would be even better.

However Seo Yoon hadn’t even told Weed someone was coming to see him.

As a rule, one should think deeply about the reason for a meeting behind the mountain!

SHIIIIING.

Berserker Seo Yoon unsheathed her sword.

*****

Weed was waiting at the entrance of the Star Palace for Seo Yoon.

“She’s a bit late today.”

She was someone who kept the exact time for a meeting, so he started making sculptures leisurely believinsg she wouldn’t be too late. Weed was making sculptures in the depth of the night but he did not feel any fear. Because if a ghost appeared he could hunt it in a instant!

Sabak Sabak.

He lifted his head as he could finally hear the footsteps of Seo Yoon approaching

“You are a bit late.....”

And when he saw Seo Yoon his heart skipped a beat in surprise. Seo Yoon’s name was indicated in red. It meant she was a murderer.

“Did you go somewhere to kill some people?”

Nod, nod.

“How many?”

“8 people.”

With one stroke, Seo Yoon killed Robin and his friends.

“Wow, you killed a lot. How did the fight start?”

“We had different opinions.”

“Was it a problem that couldn’t be solved by talking about it?”

“Ah.....”

Seo Yoo exclaimed in a subdued voice as if she realized something.

“You haven’t tried, have you?”

“.....”

A slight side effect that remained even if they talked about it! When a conflict in opinion arose between Seo Yoon and someone other than Weed, rather than persuading otherwise she went back to her previous habit. If Geomchi was here, he would praise her for such an attitude.

“If you want to remove the murderer status, you will have to do quests or give donations, hunt a lot of evil type of monsters. If you killed 8 people, it won’t be easy to remove the murderer status.”

With the murderer status, she could be attacked by players. They could only tread carefully as her death penalty became more serious.

“Well, let’s just think about how to remove your murderer status while hunting.”

As other players did not come to the Star Palace, he tried to enter and start hunting. But at that moment, something monumental was occurring in Rosenheim Kingdom.

Chapter 9: Embinyu Church Invasion

"Down with the King."

"Kill all the nobles."

"It's Embinyu god's will. Kill all the heretics opposing the Embinyu Church!"

In the vicinity of Serabourg Citadel, an army of 400 thousand appeared.

The emergence of the rebels! It was composed of both peasants from nearby villages and whole armies from the kingdom, converted to following the Embinyu Church. They came under pretense, waving the Rosenheim Kingdom’s flag while being under the banner of the Embinyu god of destruction.

A message window popped up for all active players in Serabourg Citadel and Rosenheim Kingdom.

DING!

The Embinyu Church has begun an incursion into Rosenheim Kingdom’s capital, Serabourg Citadel.

A siege has broken out in Serabourg Citadel.

Through magical disturbance, the teleport gate and long range teleportation cannot be used.

“What’s happening?”

“What’s this disturbance in the middle of the night?”

The players buying goods in the market for a hunt with their party members rushed towards the castle wall. Beyond the walls of Serabourg Citadel was the Embinyu Church army, which stretched beyond what the eyes could see.

“Did a war break out?”

“Are we safe here? What is the status of Serabourg Citadel’s defenses?”

The players could not hide their anxiety as they looked around Serabourg Citadel. While it was the capital of Rosenheim Kingdom, it was not prepared for a sudden siege. Even the castle gates were hurriedly closed only after the Embinyu Church appeared. The loyal forces were hastily dispatched but could be seen emerging without even equipping their armor properly.

“Ah, really. I even prepared a great house in Serabourg Citadel.”

“I have a business in the Square!”

“Can the Rosenheim Kingdom repel the enemy?”

“There is no kingdom that has yet driven back the Embinyu Church.”

“What will happen to us when Serabourg Citadel gets taken over?”

The players fell into panic. When there was a monster raid, the monsters were easily eradicated by the kingdom’s forces. It was unfathomable for a flock of monsters to even reach Serabourg Citadel. But with the Embinyu Church, it was a different story. They possessed shamans, priests, summoners, warlocks, and dark paladins. Not only that, beyond the castle wall, the end to the crowds of tamed monsters and cultists couldn’t be seen.

The cultists of Embinyu! They were composed of ordinary residents of Rosenheim Kingdom. They were at least level 200, and by believing in the god of Embinyu, they possessed demonic strength! They feared no death, and by increasing their faith through battle, their level rose fast.

The moonlight revealed the shape of large demons that would be critical in the siege warfare. Along with them the 9th High Priest Belloni, from the 11th sect of the Embinyu Church could be seen.

The army of the Embinyu Church that the players could only see on television, was gathered in front of them.

“Apparently the Embinyu Church is regarding everyone who does not believe in their god to be enemies.”

“Are they going to attack us alongside the Rosenheim Kingdom’s forces?”

“They don’t show mercy to beginners. They are a group that destroys everything in their path.”

Panic was radiating from the people behind the castle wall. The sudden message of siege caused people to run in panic in the streets and about the square. In the Rosenheim Kingdom’s palace, the soldiers and knights finished their battle preparations and were moving out to the castle wall.

“Will they let me live if I surrender and convert to the Embinyu Church?”

“You could join the crowd outside and be safe there, but that is probably the worst possible choice.”

In reality, there were many players in the central continent under Embinyu Church occupation that chose to convert.

“In the beginning, they give you items and teach you Embinyu Church magic for free. But afterwards, you can’t go to other kingdoms, and you start to get notoriety or other bad stats. In the end, you can’t ever leave the Embinyu Church and become one of

their minions.”

Death or conversion, only one of the two!

“Then what will happen to us now?”

“Just wait and see. The Rosenheim Kingdom’s forces could drive back the Embinyu Church.”

*****

“Check out Serabourg Citadel. It’s a scoop!”

“Did we dispatch anyone there?”

“There is a female player, Lendelina.”

“Then get us connected to her!”

Every broadcast station was in an emergency. Rosenheim Kingdom was under attack by the Embinyu Church. This was a rare event that couldn’t be seen often, and on top of that, it was about the Embinyu Church, which had spread like a wildfire throughout the continent. That’s why the officials in the broadcast stations were watching the situation with mixed interests.

“Broadcast it live as soon as we are ready! Any station out there

that's already on air?"

"CTS started broadcasting 20 seconds ago."

"Last time I got into a lot of trouble with the boss for being 4 minutes late... Anyway, switch it on as soon as we are ready. Just show them the video and let's worry about the rest later. Contact the programming department and call any available support from other teams. And why are the presenters coming so late!"

Every broadcast station erupted in commotion. While they couldn't suddenly switch to a different program during an important broadcast, most of them initiated a live broadcast because it was a huge incident of the Embinyu Church invading the capital of Rosenheim Kingdom.

Even KMC media's staff was hurriedly jumping around, but they had a reason for it. They specialized in broadcasting Royal Road, and through their coverage of many incidents from the game, they received recognition from the viewers.

"Our preparations are complete."

"Get the exact location for each of the delegates, make sure the program switcher transitions the video correctly. Just remember, we are going live without rehearsal so get it right from the start."

KMC media also initiated a live program. When the broadcast started, the viewers gathered and began to post about Rosenheim

Kingdom in various message boards.

“How many players contracted to us are active in Serabourg Citadel?”

“Including Jenkins and Roads, about twenty.”

Information continued to flow to KMC media. It was necessary for them to contract for exclusive information from active adventurers, warriors and magicians for paramount situations such as the invasion by the Embinyu Church.

“Um…”

The head producerPD 1 hesitated in front of Director Kang.

“What got you on edge during a live broadcast?”

“Before Shin Hye Min went behind the host desk, she told me something.”

“What was it?”

“Apparently War God Weed is in Serabourg Citadel right now.”

“Are you sure?”

When the staff of KMC media heard that War God Weed was in Serabourg Citadel, rather than expecting something amazing they couldn't settle their nervousness. No matter how they saw it, the Embinyu force was too formidable for Weed to do something great.

*****

Weed heard about the Embinyu Church invasion near his rest time.

Weed-nim, there is war in Serabourg Citadel!

Mapan sent a whisper like he was screaming and other party members sent him a whisper nearly at the same time.

Where are you? I heard that the Embinyu Church is attacking Serabourg Citadel, are you okay?

This is Pale. I hope you are safe and what's happening? I will go there right...

Did you hear the news? The Embinyu Church...

This wasn't much, because the number of people on Weed's friend list that had permission to whisper him weren't many.

Sabrina: This time, Serabourg Citadel.

Edwin: The Embinyu Church is growing scarily big.

Pin: I think it will be difficult to block them off at Serabourg Citadel.

He also received information from the Travelers of the Wilderness Guild. And...

Little brother, are you okay?

I just heard something right now...

Disciple, people are telling me the place you are at is dangerous.

What are you doing right now? Are you perhaps in Serabourg Citadel?

The Geomchis sent lines of whispers.

Weed sighed deeply.

“They said scumbags were expected to pay hospital fees when they simply tripped.”

It has been a long time since he came to Serabourg Citadel, but it was truly ridiculous that the Embinyu Church had to attack the moment he was visiting.

“The only thing I can do right now is to observe… Rather, there is one thing that I can do only at this moment. I will regret it for the rest of my life if I miss this chance.”

Weed rushed toward the Square. Seo Yoon followed after him even though she could be attacked by other players in the Square for her PK status. For a PK’er like Seo Yoon to be running around while the Embinyu Church was encamped beyond the wall was unheard of. Nevertheless, the soldiers nearby still took caution and avoided her.

“I need to purchase some items first.”

Weed bargained for items from the stalls.

“With the Embinyu Church outside if you are not careful you could lose all your trade. Take my offer and sell it cheaply to me.”

Buying below the cost wholesale! Weed currently had a capital of over 160 thousand from selling japtem. After seeing Weed’s activity, the merchants soon changed the crowded Square into a wholesale bazaar.

“Selling weapons for cheap.”

“Try putting on some armor. It’s armor that will protect you from the Embinyu Church’s attack!”

“I have general goods. This is an opportunity that comes only once in a lifetime. I am clearing out all my stock.”

Rather than getting all their goods plundered, the merchants were adamant on making just one more penny. The players also crowded to buy necessary items for cheap. The Square was overflowing with passion as people tried to buy and sell.

“Huh, a PKer?”

“There is no time to fight such a person. Just hurry and find the items you need.”

Rather than picking up items by killing the PKer, the goods were being sold for so cheap that the players did not want to miss this opportunity. The merchants also wanted money, because if they died, they would lose less in currency as their goods could be easily looted or lost.

Weed also cleaned out the grocer.

“Give me everything!”

Seo Yoon could not understand how Weed could visit the grocer when Serabourg Citadel was surrounded with battle that could erupt right in front of their noses. Weed’s next action was to go to the castle wall and yelled using his Lion’s Roar.

“Peanuts, squid and soft drinks. Cold soft drinks! Warm potatoes

and sweet potatoes to eat while watching the battle!”

This opportunity was too valuable to waste while being swept away by the tension created by the Embinyu Church, an opportunity to make a fortune!

“Please give me two packets of peanuts.”

“Serabourg Citadel is bigger than you can imagine, will two packets do?”

“Then give me four packets please.”

Weed received the money after he gave the peanuts. At the grocers he cleaned out the nuts and other snacks and made massive amounts of profit.

“The characteristics of a natural born merchant.”

The greatest joy for a merchant was to make and swim in money. This magical fun of charging exorbitant prices to the customers during business!

*****

Nom Nom.

“When are they going to attack?”

“The Embinyu Church is kind of amazing. How did they manage to gather such a large force?”

“I think there will be a stunning battle here.”

The players in Serabourg Citadel sat on the wall and the roof of the stores eating snacks and waiting for the battle to start. There were players who chose to watch the spectacle and some unknown number of people participating with the Rosenheim Kingdom’s force.

Impregnable defense of Serabourg Citadel.

Fight against the Embinyu Church.

If you stand up for Rosenheim Kingdom, fame and glory will be yours.

Reward: Depends on your achievement in battle.

You can earn the right to become the soldier of the kingdom.

Quest Restriction: If Rosenheim Kingdom disappears, the reward is impossible to claim.

There were many players who joined in the defense as the Embinyu Church indiscriminately looted, slaughtered and caused arson.

The quest also popped up for Weed.

“I need to reject this one.”

With his enormous fame, if he joined in the defense his duplicity with the Rosenheim Kingdom’s force would soar. He could easily be forced to take on the captainship of the castle gate or become an important figure for the defense force. Playing a central role in fighting against the Embinyu Church by taking command of a force of hundreds, or a thousand soldiers.

Weed judged that at the most, the number of soldiers defending Serabourg Citadel was around 20 thousand. However the opposing force, the Embinyu Church, was composed of over 400 thousand cultists and monsters. In addition the Embinyu priests, cursed shamans and paladins could exploit the monsters by depending on their power of evil spirits.

“It will be extremely difficult to defend against that.”

While they could rely on the castle wall to prolong the siege, in the end they would have to face the enemy heroically! If Weed equipped Balkan’s items while under Sculpture Transformation he could have become pivotal to the battle, but due to it’s side effect he could not make an appearance so recklessly. Also, due to the incident at the River of Lamentation, he was sure the Embinyu

Church was just waiting for a payback!

"Living comfortably is much better than being immortalized as a hero after death."

If he accepted the quest to defend Rosenheim Kingdom and deserted it afterwards finding the situation untenable, he would be branded with lasting dishonor. Weed, Seo Yoon, and many others who decided not to participate in the battle adopted a wait and see approach.

Weed's face was laden with apprehension.

"I hope Rosenheim Kingdom wins..."

Sudden recovery from seriousness to happiness!

"Well, at least I made some money."

When he thought of his pocket he became happy, but the current situation wasn't optimistic.

Both the players trapped in Serabourg Citadel and the players affiliated with Rosenheim Kingdom were frustrated.

"Fire!"

At that moment, the vicinity of the mountain top that could be seen far away started burning brightly. It was the signal fire calling for reinforcements from all over Rosenheim Kingdom when Serabourg Citadel was in peril.

The dense crowd of the Embinyu Church army that stretched beyond the pyramid and the sphinx, came closer and closer, dragging their siege weapons with them. Soldiers formed from monsters clanged their weapons and roared in rough voices.

“This is insane.”

“I am getting more worked up from this than from watching a horror movie.”

In Rosenheim Kingdom, knights rode dangerously atop the castle wall and clanged their swords with the soldiers in encouragement.

“For the king!”

“Defend your positions. We just need to endure for one day. Reinforcements are being sent from all the regions in the kingdom.”

It was a scene that lit fires in the heart, but it caused as much fear.

“They are coming.”

“It’s starting.”

Players drooled. At last, the Embinyu Church started firing their siege weapons. While boulders and projectiles were being shot toward the walls, the demons, cultists and Embinyu soldiers charged the castle.

The battle between Serabourg Citadel and the Embinyu Church had begun.

“Fire!”

“Fire everything toward the enemy. Kill them all!”

The Rosenheim Kingdom’s archers and crossbowmen were firing their arrows and bolts. But some of the spells from the Embinyu Church managed to slam the wall.

“Concentrate your fire.”

The forces of Rosenheim Kingdom focused their fire of silver arrows on the charging horned demons, seeing it as a greater danger than the monsters or human enemies.

-GWRAAAR!

The archers on the wall shot enchanted and fire arrows that

struck into the ponderous demons that lumbered toward them. After a flurry of attacks, the massive demons collapsed, losing their balance as they tried to take another large step. Pandemonium erupted as the 20 meter tall demons collapsed on the Embinyu Church's soldiers.

"Honor the sacrifice for the gods of Embinyu!"

"Kill the enemy and take your own life."

The cultists and monster troops darkened the castle walls.

"Endure!"

"We can fight them off."

The cultists and monsters of Embinyu stacked their ladders and threw vines starting their climb of the wall. Magic attacks like Frost Wind and Sand Vortex flew at the soldiers on top of Serabourg Citadel's wall.

The magicians of Rosenheim Kingdom entered the fray.

"River of Endless Fire!"

As the magicians thrust out their hands, the ground split and set the path into conflagration.

At that moment, a screech was heard from above and the Embinyu Church's Wyvern Riders made their appearance. Unlike Wy-Three whom Weed sculpted, these Wyverns were extremely fast, sly, and brutal without compare. The Wyvern Riders descended from the clouds, throwing their spears and used their swords to attack the magicians and the soldiers below.

If it wasn't for Royal Road, this battle would have only happened in dreams.

A small part of the players in Serabourg Citadel did feel exhilarated as they could watch the battle up close, but they were also electrified by the magnificence before them.

As time passed, the demons of the Embinyu Church became more aggressive. The large demons that were over 3 meters swayed their horns as they bashed into the castle gate. Some monsters climbed the walls like spiders. The Embinyu Church cultists clung to their spears and sword like weapons, pickaxes and cleavers and came like tidal waves. Warlocks made fireballs fall from the sky and filled the walls with agonizing cries.

*****

Weed stealthily backed away from the place where he was watching the ongoing battle.

"The wall won't last long."

Being the capital of Rosenheim Kingdom, Serabourg Citadel was quite large. The knights and soldiers were resisting the enemy advances, but the waves of the Embinyu Church were too colossal. Here and there flares soared up and walls gave a rumble as they collapsed.

But the Embinyu Church who was waging war in this place was not a power that could win against the whole might of the Rosenheim Kingdom. Along the border with Brent Kingdom and monster infested territories, Rosenheim Kingdom set up fortresses and outposts with permanent garrisons. But in Serabourg Citadel, the royal knights and the guards were being driven back by the Embinyu Church forces.

“At this rate Serabourg Citadel and the palace will be toppled and then…”

The whole public order of Rosenheim Kingdom would collapse. The Embinyu Church would spread everywhere unchecked and the Kingdom would be on the path to ruin. The whole of Rosenheim Kingdom could become a hunting ground seething with monsters like the few regions on the Central continent and mountains of quests asking to defeat the Embinyu Church would be generated.

Either voluntarily or under the command of the king, famously difficult quests were generated in Royal Road that concentrated on the rebels but not one kingdom has yet to successfully drive off the Embinyu Church. Rather there were mass exodus of players from the kingdom, leading to it’s downfall.

“I should escape before it’s too late.”

Weed rolled his eyes. Outside the castle were the Embinyu Church army with hundreds of Wyvern Riders controlling the sky. To survive he had to escape the castle but there was only the perilous way out.

As Weed looked around several guild members or friends bunched together looking for an opportunity to bolt outside.

“Looking for people to escape together. Calling for Warriors.”

“Anyone know how to ride a horse? Planning to get away on a horse through the South gate. Looking for people to come along. Preference to people over level 300!”

“Anyone who can protect a merchant? If anyone could give safe passage I will give a 2000 gold protection fee. I am giving up my carriage, I just need to come out alive!”

The Square and the street were in a pandemonium as players sought for refuge. Even the ordinary NPC residents planned to escape. As the Embinyu Church slaughtered everyone with indifference, once all the residents were killed it would be impossible to re-establish Rosenheim Kingdom. Countless quests would disappear, technology would be lost forever, and manufactured goods would decrease leading to irrecoverable loss.

It wasn’t an exaggeration to say that the appearance of the Embinyu Church is a true catastrophe.

“With the situation like this, we should escape as well.”

“Yes.”

Weed and Seo Yoon decided to squeeze in with the most influential group.

“Excuse me, two Warriors…”

“Our party is full.”

“Is there a place for two people?”

“We don’t accept strangers.”

Even at this moment, the people were lording over the newcomers. The high level players grouped together to survive by themselves. If people wanted to join in, they had to pay for admission and there was a chance that they could be abandoned during critical moments.

“Excuse me, two warriors that know how to contribute.”

“Ah, it’s the merchants that sold peanuts for an exorbitant price.”

"....."

This way, that way, it was difficult for Weed and Seo Yoon to join any group. With Seo Yoon's PK status it was like entering the eye of a needle. Back then Weed had received PK status after hunting in Todeum, but in extreme cases a PKer could be attacked by soldiers so their movements were restricted.

All heads of the groups and guilds had a meeting.

"In a short while the wall and the gates will collapse. When the Rosenheim Kingdom's forces are fighting, let's rush out all at once."

"Everyone rushing to a different direction.... Then we will head east."

"Then we will head west."

"Us, the south. The Embinyu Church will be to preoccupied with seizing Serabourg Citadel, if we penetrate through the encirclement I don't think they will chase after us."

All groups coordinated their escape plans. But the group of 8 people that Weed and Seo Yoon were part of only looked around.

"Which direction should we run to?"

“I am going to the east. Karless-nim is part of it, so the chances of survival are highest there.”

“I am heading out through the south gate. Doesn’t look like many monsters are gathered there yet.”

The beginners were all forsaken to themselves but they had no choice but to be part of the escape plan. They would receive no protection as each group departed Serabourg Citadel. Rather the chance was high that they would be used as monster bait, but the beginners had very little options left to them.

“Sigh, we don’t have the capability to follow after them.”

“Us under level 100, let’s just die fighting the Embinyu Church when they break through.”

The beginners sat at the Square in self-abandonment and each group separated, leading their people according to their favorable escape plan.

Weed fell in deep worry.

“No, never like this…”

If he revealed himself now, no group would reject him. He might be called a coward behind his back but something like that was a natural progression of life, something to endure and overcome. A sacrifice that liberates the underdogs!

Any end of the world movie had a touching moment where through the actions of a few heroes, many survive. But rather than becoming a hero, Weed wanted to be that one person who survived till the end. Sentimentality with devotion and sacrifice just made life difficult.

“I must avoid falling into that temptation. Must never fall into temptation.”

Weed saw many people sitting helplessly in front of him. Befitting of the capital of Rosenheim Kingdom, there were many beginners. There were youths, heads of households and even elderly.

‘If I ignore them, then most of them will die.’

Weed closed his eyes tightly.

‘Let me just take the coward's way out. Besides, not one person gave me a helping hand in my time of desperation.’

Chapter 10: Escape From Serabourg Citadel

“Yeah, you only live once. Receiving condemnation for being manipulative and stingy is nothing!”

Weed made his decision. He would escape together with Seo Yoon.

At that precise moment, Selina who owned a flower store in Serabourg Citadel approached him.

“I beg of you, please save us!”

“I don’t have that kind of power…”

“I heard it from the flowers and the trees. You are the one that can save us.”

DING!

Evacuation of the Civilians

From the plants, Selina has found out the truth of your many achievements. While it is a difficult task, the only person who can defend the denizens from the Embinyu Church is you. In

Serabourg Citadel, the only person who can save the civilians in this perilous situation is the one who has experienced the most adventures.

Difficulty: A

Reward: A bracelet made of flowers from Selina.

Quest Restrictions: Fame decreases every time a civilian dies.

If you reject the quest, infamy will spread.

After this, it will not be possible to perform quests from Rosenheim Kingdom.

Just by accepting the quest your reputation will improve.

Quests that came round the clock. His fame and quest achievements were at such a level that not only people, but flowers and trees were delivering requests!

“Huk, this path is fraught with difficulty…”

Weed furtively glimpsed at the flower bracelet Selina wore from the corner of his eyes. Selina’s flower bracelet was exactly as described, a bracelet weaved from flowers. The flowers looked to be made by children in their playtime, but as Weed observed carefully it was not an ordinary item.

These precious flowers were purported to be found only in the High Elves' forest. The flowers had special strength as they did not wither or die after they were plucked and even now, they were still alive on Selina's arm.

'I heard of stories about this kind of items being worn by the High Elves.'

An adventurer who visited a High Elf village reported seeing it in their store. It was said that the price was astronomical but imbued within was a generous amount of Elemental and Power of Nature. If he could equip Selina's flower bracelet on top of Baharan's bracelet he was wearing, then he would no longer want any other bracelet.

Weed changed his tune.

"Even though I lack the strength, I was planning to do my best to save the people. Though I don't know if it's within my power to do so, I will still give my all regardless!"

You have accepted the Quest.

Your reputation among the people of Rosenheim Kingdom has been revised to 'Savior'.

While the quest was unexpected, the number of civilians Weed could take with him while facing off with the Embinyu Church was

not many. How many people could he possibly lead beyond the wall to somewhere safe?

The square of Serabourg Citadel had tens of thousands of newbies who lost their will and just sat around. With their low level, it was easy for them to succumb to the feeling of helplessness in this large battle and give up. The same newbies who threw themselves into the bush as they got scared of a single deer running toward an apple tree far away!

But there were some who did not depart due to family members being novices, some who were ill prepared to evacuate, and some who were lost and wandering around looking for their party members. It wasn't just the NPCs, but players as well that were both floundering around hopelessly. But there were about 200 high level players staying behind to fight due to their guilty conscience.

Given the uproar of battle that could be heard from the walls, there wasn't much time left.

Weed canceled his skill.

"Release Sculpture Transformation."

His form changed back from the transformation and returned to it's original state. It would be impossible to lead the people to safety with a general form.

"I will have to craft it quickly."

Taking out his sculpting knife, Weed went toward the ornamental statue nearby. It was a big, decorative dragon statue.

Sak Sak!

Every time Weed's sculpting knife moved, the stones chipped away revealing an existence that would ring out and abandon men, women and children.

*****

Every station was relaying the scene of Serabourg Citadel, centering around the wall and the Embinyu Church.

"It's astonishing. At this rate, it will only be a matter of time till the Embinyu Church gains control over Serabourg Citadel."

"With the Embinyu Church's influence spreading from even Rosenheim Kingdom, they can only become a huge threat in the future."

"In the Central continent many players are especially flocking to Haven Kingdom as it has largely avoided the Embinyu Church's wave of destruction."

"Another Rain of Fire Stone is being cast! The walls and the houses nearby are burning.."

The hosts were explaining their concerns on the expansion of the Embinyu Church. They chatted about the spells being cast, about the race and level of monsters comprising the Embinyu Church and their attack methods.

As the show continued, the NKS station switched their view to the square to show the despair and misery of the players.

“The players need to set up an escape plan quickly. Once the wall of Serabourg Citadel falls, death is inevitable. This is really cruel to the beginners.”

“Death is unavoidable for these people gathered at the square bereft of all hope whatsoever.”

As the host was speaking, it was not the same scene of people slumping weakly just a few minutes ago. Tens of thousands of people were now standing, looking over at something.

“What is that?”

“It seems like something is being shaped. The person is using a sculpting skill.”

One man was making a sculpture. The decorative statue of the dragon was being transformed into something else. With never before seen, astounding elaborateness and daring handling of the sculpting knife.

*****

“It’s a sculptor!”

“Perhaps… But no, it couldn’t be.”

“There is no way it could be him. But this is his starting place…”

The person who the players all hoped for, the War God Weed.

Once Weed started sculpting, few people nearby became curious. Then as the sculpture progressed, everyone forgot the impending disaster and watched.

Sak Sak.

The sculpture Weed was creating was far from being beautiful. Weed was only known to make breathtaking sculptures, but still the people hoped against hope that this sculptor might be Weed.

“Something ordinary won’t do. I have to completely relieve the battle. It must be something tenacious and durable. Something with the vitality and health to survive till the end.”

After agonizing through several choices, the form of the sculpture he chose was a troll. An ice troll. Compared to an orc, it was twice as big with longer arms and well developed muscles. But

it also had a large pot belly.

"Power comes from the belly after all!"

Furthermore the limbs were thick and sturdy like a polar bear.

When a sculpture was expressing a particular race, it's appearance and figure could be made more distinctive. The unused sculpting skill Weed developed while making figures of the male orc warrior endlessly was being re-discovered while he was sculpting the troll.

"This won't do. The face is way too placid like that of a goat. There is no way a face like this would cause terror on the battle field."

Weed really didn't like how the face of the Ice Troll turned out. The eyelids were too sunken making the cheekbones look to protruding. It had a large head with equally large teeth reminiscent of a crocodile. Because of the size of the head, there were a minimum of 6 knife marks gouged on the forehead and chin.

If Orc Karichwi was to be picked as the number one thug in the nation, then this appearance was enough to take the heinous Orc Karichwi's lunch box!

"Waaaa!"

“Sob sob.”

The women and children among the denizens of Serabourg Citadel started crying as they saw the sculpture. Due to Weed’s sculpting skill, the troll look like it was alive and animate.

“It’s truly a shame that this is a rushed work.”

If he could have made it as he imagined, the forehead would be more bumpy, the chin would be further jutted and distinct in its two halves and the ears wouldn’t have looked so normal.

“It would have been better if the tongue was split into three strips and darted in and out repeatedly.”

The sculpture was already the sum of the best traits picked from the whole Ice Troll species to give the most menacing impression, but Weed was striving for a higher state of artistic mastery.

Please set a name for your sculpture.

“Battle Hungry Ice Troll.”

Weed chose such name as it was possible he would have to fight till the bitter end.

Is ‘Battle Hungry Ice Troll’ correct?

“Yes. Let’s fight till I die.”

Sculpture ‘Battle Hungry Ice Troll’ has been completed!

A reinterpreted work created by deconstructing another sculptor’s piece.

The Dragon has been converted to an Ice Troll.

The previously completed work was not so substandard, but a sculptor that has ascended to mastery state has had his hand on it.

Still, leaving it as it was might have been better.

Artistic Value: 3

Special Option: Anyone who has seen the, ‘Battle Hungry Ice Troll’ will regenerate health and mana 8% faster for one day.

Healing of any injuries will be 7% faster.

Intelligence and Wisdom decrease by 25.

Charm has disappeared.

Strength increased by 41.

Agility increased by 5.

Mastery of sculpting skill increased.

For the completion of the beast monster sculpture, fame increased by 16.

For the insolent destruction of the original sculpture, fame decreased by 143.

Dignity and Art stat decreased by 1 each.

Weed was okay with whatever criticism people had of him.

“The most important thing about art is self-satisfaction.”

The completion of the sculpture was seen by many people gathered in the square and those who were watching through the live broadcast.

The noise of mayhem and chaos coming from the walls was indescribable. Each group was readying themselves to escape. With this frantic activities in the background, Weed hid himself in a large fabric and activated his skill.

“Sculpture Transformation!”

Sculpture Transformation has been activated.

The endless love for sculpting has created the bridge between sculptor and the sculpture!

Weed's body became bigger, his belly bulged out. His skin became completely white. The white, rather than giving off a noble or pure feeling, just made him look more dangerous due to his fierce expression.

Because of the mismatched size of your equipment with your changed shape, most of your equipped weapons and items cannot be used.

You can now wear the intermediate steel armor.

Please acquire necessary equipment based on your race or appearance.

Due to the effect of Sculpture Transformation, your strength and health has increased greatly. Because of the race trait, your health regeneration became faster. Intelligence and Wisdom has been reduced to an insignificant level. Failure rate of battle related skills has been steeply increased.

Intelligence, Wisdom, Art, Faith, Charm, Dignity has all declined greatly.

Applicable till Sculpture Transformation has been released.

Affinity to Nature has been applied, strengthening the cold effects emanating from the Ice Troll. +239%

Weed liked the change to his physical condition.

“With this overflowing strength, the only thing left to do is fight. Status Window!”

Character Name

Weed

Disposition

Monster

Level

406

Race

Ice Troll

Health

376,271

Mana

1,650

Strength

1,428

Agility

1,395

Vitality

1,684

Wisdom

15

Intelligence

11

Fighting Spirit

719

Endurance

662

Perseverance

959

Art

70

Charisma

462

Leadership

751

Luck

3

Faith

5

Charm

8

Resilience

881

Dignity

6

Concentration

152

Courage

170

*Ice Troll race traits are active.

Health and Vitality regenerates faster, cold is emanating from the body.

Following the change, skill mastery has been adjusted to beginner level 8.

Such one sided conditions! Stats increased proportional as level went up and it could be increased further with effort. Through questing, Weed had managed to raise his battle and sculpting stats quite high. But all that was converted to strength, agility, vitality, resilience and perseverance.

“This is good.”

Weed’s voice changed, becoming deeper but still resonated loudly.

When the fabric was pulled off people became shocked in finding that the number of Ice Troll sculptures increased to two. The new Ice Troll’s skin was snow white and even began to move. This was a huge reveal to the rest of the world on the secret of the Sculpture

Transformation but it did not matter as others could not use the skill until they learned it.

Weed shouted loudly rather than using the Lion's Roar, due to the mana expenditure and the possibility of failing the technique.

"I am Weed!"

"Uwaaaaaaaaaaa!"

*****

Surka, hearing the news about Serabourg Citadel, was restlessly worrying with her party members.

"What if something bad happens to Weed-nim? Moreover, Weed-nim has many enemies already."

In Royal Road, it was a common occurrence for the auspicious players to find a knife behind their backs or be ambushed in dungeons. And for a player that Hermes Guild was publicly targeting to be trapped in a castle surrounded by the Embinyu Church! Could there be anything more awful than this?

Pale patted her softly.

"Someone of Weed-nim's caliber can escape from anywhere so don't worry too much. Even if someone wants to kill him, he won't

die.”

“Yeah, you are right. No matter how many weeds you pull out they just grow back, even if you spray insecticide on cockroaches they just don’t die.”

“Yes, you are totally right.”

If it was Weed, he would be perfectly fine. He was a person who would try to make money by creating a hot spring in the fiery pits of hell!

The party was currently hanging out in Morata’s tavern, watching the broadcast about the situation. Though the Embinyu Church’s invasion force was tremendous, they were confident that Weed, a user of any unscrupulous methods, could escape easily.

But as the view turned to someone who was making a sculpture, people in the tavern turned white.

“Could it be Weed-nim.....”

“Maybe?”

For a person to be making a sculpture where all the newbies were!

“I just can’t imagine Weed-nim to be doing something so out of

character.”

This was the same Weed who grumbled about how hard it was to exploit the newbies, they remembered this vividly. Was it really this Weed who stayed behind for these beginners?

On the screen, it showed Weed turning into an Ice Troll and shouting.

“I am Weed!”

At that moment the deafening cheers of newbies and players gathered at the square of Serabourg was shown on the broadcast.

“Haccck!”

“It’s Weed-nim. Weed-nim is in the Rosenheim Kingdom!”

“War God Weed is on right now.”

The streets of Morata were in a pandemonium.

“Since when did Weed-nim go to Serabourg Citadel?”

“As expected! There is no way he would leave the weak behind and run away by himself. I knew it.”

“Do you think he knew the Embinyu Church would attack and went ahead? You know, to save the people there.”

“Yeah, it might be like that.”

“We don’t respect Weed for nothing.”

The players in Morata were once again misled about Weed!

Pale, Zephyr and even Mapan were becoming uncertain.

‘Is it really like that?’

‘I don’t think I knew Weed-nim’s true character till now, he’s a soft hearted and very kind person.’

‘I thought he was greedier than me. Now I know that’s only the disguise he wears with the intent to value and save the people.’

Seeing how Weed’s closest associates, those who met with him regularly and thought they knew all about him were so shaken in their beliefs, there was no need to speak about the state of the players of Morata.

All development of Morata was started by Weed and a staggering number of policies for the players were currently in progress. Even though he was a sculptor, no one who specialized in Arts and Culture could compare to his planning!

‘Weed-nim has a big heart, he can definitely pull it off.’

‘He did not spare anything and used his own funds to develop Morata from the ground. Other lords only cared about taxes.’

No one could help but admire Weed if they saw the various successes in Morata.

“How could such righteous person exist in this world…”

“It’s because there are people like Weed-nim that the Versailles Continent is not swept up in darkness.”

“Grass Porridge! Grass Porridge!”

*****

Weed gathered the players who were over level 300 in the square. With their current strength it was suicide to fight against the Embinyu Church so they had to find a way to escape.

“How about going through the South? A lot of them are assembled there, if we break through their encirclement I think we will be fine.”

“There are less Embinyu Church forces arrayed on the Western side. If we just avoid the demons then I think we are clear.”

These were high level players who could not bear to leave. But as they saw a smidgen of hope of survival, they began to earnestly speak out their way to escape.

Weed was sympathetic to their plea.

“South or West, they are both dangerous. We are too many and too burdensome for the other escape groups to include us.”

“What if we follow the path they clear?”

“Then the monsters chasing after them will target us. There are many of us so our movements will be slow, and it is difficult to protect everyone from the monsters.”

While the number of players was high, there weren’t many who were skilled enough to protect the players and fight off the monsters. If demons came scrambling in, the casualties would be catastrophic. No one could easily decide where to go as many lives hung in the balance. They were all waiting on Weed. Though they may all die in this place, their heart was consoled by the fact that Weed was trying to save them.

At that moment, Seo Yoon sent Weed a whisper.

There is a secret passage that can lead you outside the castle.

A secret passage?

A secret passage in the royal palace. I haven’t actually been there, but I received this from a knight earlier.

Seo Yoon gave him a piece of a map.

You have acquired the map to the secret escape route in the Rosenheim palace.

Weed hurriedly scrutinized the map and saw that it was an escape route used by the royal family when a crisis arose in Rosenheim Kingdom.

How did you get this map?

When I was heading toward the Star Palace with PK status, the knights in the palaces attacked me. I got it after I killed them.

…….

Usually, beating a palace knight to death in retaliation was something completely unheard of. And on top of that, to receive such a map suggests multiple opponents at once! But discounting the process of acquiring it, the map was absolutely necessary right now.

‘It’s a passage that leads outside Serabourg Citadel. There are

even six escape routes.'

He felt there were many escape routes as it was for the king or the royal family to evacuate through.

'The main problem is that the passage doesn't take you very far away from Serabourg Citadel…'

Even if they did escape through the passage, the distance was short enough for the Embinyu Church to find them. But the most urgent thing right now was for them to escape the castle.

Weed decided to give hope to the despondent players first.

"We are now going to proceed toward the secret passage in Rosenheim palace and escape through there."

He was confident that no matter the slim chance of survival, if there was weight to his words people would follow him.

The news spread through the crowd one by one.

"Weed-nim said he's going the save us all!"

"What are you talking about?"

"We are escaping through the secret passage of the royal palace."

“I trusted him from the start you know. I just knew, Weed-nim would save us.”

“Ah, what are you worrying for when Weed-nim is here. He's just not Weed-nim. He’s the War God!”

The crowd had unquenchable faith in Weed. Usually, with such significant decisions where the lives of tens of thousands hanged in the balance, heated arguments arose and everyone had conflicting opinions. But as one, they all decided to follow Weed. The NPCs of Serabourg Citadel followed suit due to Selina’s quest.

“Then, let’s proceed.”

Weed, Seo Yoon, and other strong players ran ahead, leading the way to the palace.

“Uwah.. we are going.”

“Let’s go!”

As one, the players gathered in the square and ran toward the palace. It wouldn’t be an exaggeration to say that the situation looked like a riot.

“Hyung, where are we going?”

“Weed-nim is rescuing us. We just need to follow him.”

The players in the square ran as one and the residents of Serabourg Citadel followed as well.

Guards were still posted at the entrance to the palace, but they were too busy mobilizing to fight off the Embinyu Church. The knights guarding the palace were no where to be found, but they probably left to escort the king or the royal family to a safe place.

“Look, they ran away first!”

Weed had the map open in front of him as he moved. It was not difficult for him to navigate through the palace since he frequented the Star Palace recently to hunt.

“There are many escape routes, let just go toward the closest one…”

In any palace where the royals were staying, there was always an entrance to a secret passage.

“We will now proceed toward the third prince’s palace.”

“I understand. I will go ahead and scout the place out.”

As Weed laid out his plan, the high level players who stayed behind and the average players who could not join any other

groups, volunteered to scout the place.

Through the scouts, they found out that there was no one in the palace or even any valuables left.

“Let’s go!”

While the third prince’s palace was considerably smaller than the others, it still had a well kept garden with several pieces of artworks. Even while leading the players, Weed still checked on the artworks and ripped off the expensive ones for himself.

“We can enter through here.”

In the prince’s bedchamber, the secret passage was located in the wardrobe. The players with adventure class had scouted out the place and had already opened the entrance to the passage.

“Let’s hurry.”

Dungeon, you have entered the Underground Passage of the Palace.

Privileges: Fame increased by 315.

Double experience and item drop rate for one week.

Monsters hunted for the first time will drop the best possible item it can.

“Ara, it’s a dungeon. Please wait a moment, I will check it out.”

Adventurer Nadal stepped forward and looked around.

“Identify Dungeon!”

Dungeon, Underground Passage of the Palace

An underground passage made for the royal family of Rosenheim Kingdom, for use in times of crisis. As the kingdom has not experienced any upheaval for a long time, the royal family has been using the passage for questionable activities. The wide underground passage has been occupied by monsters for an unknown period of time, but as they consumed the emergency rations they multiplied rapidly.

Difficulty: Extremely High.

Dungeon Size: Immense.

It was an identification skill that could be used after acquiring a certain amount of information about a special area through reading and conversations! Adventurers had an easier time of finding facts and information.

“Oh my, this says there are monsters here. Considering the difficulty, I feel the monsters here are around mid level 300.”

The adventurer spoke worriedly.

There was nothing for this, as Weed's allies had already informed him of the situation.. A group of fairies glowing like fireflies, appeared before him once he entered the dungeon.

The Queen sent us.

This way is dangerous. That way is dangerous.

Even then, Weed-nim here should be able to easily clear the way. Kyaa, the Ice Troll is cool. It’s so lovable.

I think you can go this way… Or was it this way?

The fairies flew around engaging Weed in conversations. Only a noble person could see the fairies, and if they wanted to, the fairies could even hide their appearances from the Spirit Shamans. Though Weed’s morality went back and forth, it was fortunate that it was currently on the good side. Also, because of the quest he accepted from the Fairy Queen, they appeared before him and offered their help.

Book 26: The History Of The Four Races

Chapter 1: The Underground Passage

As an Ice Troll, Weed strode into the dungeon.

“We just need to exterminate all the monsters in the way.”

The dungeon felt empty without monsters. One of the reasons he turned into an Ice Troll was so, rather than wasting time on thinking, he could use that time productively in beating monsters to death.

The quest required as many refugees as possible to be led to safety, away from the invasion of Serabourg Citadel by the Embinyu Church. Speed would define the success or failure of the quest.

The fairies glowed like fireflies, prattling as they followed Weed.

Awesome. He’s so awesome.

He’s totally my type. I want to marry him.

Weed equipped the large leather armor he made with his sewing skill just in case. With his level and strength he could wear steel or mithril armor. But he did not make them beforehand as, considering the weight of the armor, carrying them around was too much and the material was too precious to waste.

Weed squared his shoulders and entered the dungeon first. The players following behind him felt secure in the knowledge that Weed was ahead of them.

“To be able to follow after the War God, Weed... I am salivating to see him fight.”

“I’m going to drink in the sight.”

Among the players, the skilled and capable ones stood right behind Weed. The refugees of Serabourg Citadel and beginners continuously lined up at the end of the queue to enter the dungeon.

Weed walked forward calmly, without a care for the dangers ahead.

Slither.

He heard a small, strange sound.

It’s here. It’s here!

Be careful! Its bites are painful.

The snake that ate that rabbit yesterday. It’s hiding here.

The glittering fairies that flew around the vicinity alerted Weed.

SHICK!

A mottled snake flew toward Weed. These monsters were known as Elixa, they lived within the cracks of the walls and hunted the animals passing by.

“Ah! Weed-nim! Be careful.”

“Weed-nim!”

The players cried out in surprise. The Elixas were a species of snake monsters around level 300. Their levels were high and they slithered around at a frightening speed. Although an Ice Troll did not constitute as a tempting prey for the Elixas, the cold radiating from him must have been unpleasant for them so they attacked preemptively.

In the face of the terrifying Elixa’s surprise attack. Weed casually gave a word.

“You look delicious.”

And then, he swung his disproportionately short stick of a sword.

KANG!

Elixa has received a huge trauma, it has fallen into confusion.

Due to the cold aura from the Ice Troll, Elixa's speed decreased by 14%.

Struck by the sword, the Elixa crashed into the wall and rebounded. The unfortunate Elixa temporarily fell into paralysis. Compared to other species, the unusually high strength and agility that the Ice Trolls possessed amplified it's direct combat potential rather than it's magic or skills. And with a casual swipe, the Elixa had become helpless.

So Weed continuously struck down the Elixa mercilessly into the ground.

"I am going to roast its meat and take its skin as leather. Should I pack its head to make snake wine later?"

Words that could strike fear into every Elixa!

As Elixa were snake monsters that were early to mid level 300, they died quickly under Weed's barrage.

Durability of the Demon Sword decreased.

"Let's continue."

Weed packed up the drops first before heading off.

From the entrance, several Elixas could be seen groveling on the ground. The slippery monsters moved fast and when they spotted Weed, the Elixas shot toward him like arrows. The Elixas could sink their fangs in before the victim knew it and spread their poison, putting even high level players in a pickle.

Weed swatted these Elixas in the air and knifed them without remorse.

“I can make plenty of wine out of you. Come, come every single one of you!”

This Ice Troll was made for battle. Its arms and legs were long with well defined muscles and the soles were made unusually large. And with the cold pouring from Weed, the snakes became sluggish as soon as they came near him.

It’s a monster!

Kyaa! It’s scary!

You must win. We can’t fail to get past.

Weed leisurely took care of the Elixas all the while listening to the ruckus caused by the fairies.

As they plodded deeper and deeper into the dungeon, the mid 300 level monsters, Rigglers, Voichis, and Guldogs started appearing. These were the most dangerous types of monsters that appeared in this dungeon.

Their attacks were stronger than their level suggested, making it difficult to defeat them. But Weed was indifferent.

"Come at me."

Weed took full advantage of the Ice Troll's traits. In human form, he hunted using a combination of precise swordplay and skills. But right now, he did not have enough mana to use skills, only overflowing strength! He could unleash unlimited carnage and destruction. He did not even try to dodge the monsters' attacks.

"Kill that troll!"

"Everyone, let's attack him together!"

You were struck by the Voichi's whip.

Additional 26% defense was applied due to the Ice Troll's resilience.

The Riggler's dagger nicked your leg.

Vitality and Health decreased.

Weed's health dropped rapidly. But even then, with his colossal 370 thousand health, he was in no danger of dying anytime soon. And on top of that, the Ice Troll's traits allowed rapid health regeneration. The regeneration was faster than resting and bandaging untransformed.

He relentlessly pushed the monsters back with his unceasing beatdown.

"Gyaao!"

Weed gave a bellow. With the cold emanating from the Ice Troll, the monsters became sluggish and turned into ice.

"Ah, he fights amazingly well."

"He's really brutal. How can he just charge forward like that?"

Players were stunned in disbelief at Weed's superb battle ability. Weed indulgently received the enemies attacks and returned them sevenfold. The Ice Troll was brutal, smacking the enemy with his sword, pummeling them with stupidly oversized fists and even punting them with his feet.

While the Ice Troll's body was extremely heavy, the inflated strength and agility allowed Weed to move as freely and softly as a feather.

“Strike! Die! Strike! Give me my Items! Strike! You’re still not satisfied?!”

Weed acted like a villain. He ran forward in the dungeon, mercilessly striking down every monster that appeared. In the heat of the moment, he accidentally showed his true character!

They broke through the dungeon in the blink of an eye.

That one on the left is still alive.

Weed-nim, please trash him more!

Ah~ he really is my type.

Weed paid no mind to the excited fairies chattering behind his ears as he broke through the dungeon swarming with monsters. His level was over 400, and he had even transformed into an Ice Troll. There were no monsters in the dungeon that could dare to challenge him.

In the level 300 dungeon with a fairly high difficulty rating, Weed animatedly flaunted his strength. The display in front of the players was not a half hearted attempt, rather, it was an overwhelming display of Weed’s prowess.

“It’s an Ice Troll!”

“How did it get here…”

“Go for a pincer attack! ”

Monsters all ran at him at once. But for Weed, they were only tasty treats.

Pa Pa Pa Pa!

Monsters turned into a grey light and disappeared in an instant. Even if someone else used the Sculpture Transformation, they would never be able to fight like Weed. This was because battle instincts became ingrained through practise. Others fought conservatively, trying to save their strength while defending or just dodging the monster's attacks on instinct.

On the other hand, Weed’s strong point was that he could adapt quickly to any new form. Regardless of whether the monsters were attacking him or not, he steamrolled the dungeon with crushing force. He was hunting even faster than usual, and the refugees were huffing and puffing as they tried to keep up.

“I feel so assured because Weed-nim is here with us.”

“Compared to others, he fights much better. Ten people combined can’t match him. ”

“What do you mean ten, more like twenty.”

The players leading behind Weed had lower levels and were fighting much more carefully. Seo Yoon felt she did not need to show her full prowess as everything was going fine and there were a lot of people around as well. That’s why only Weed’s actions were especially distinguished.

As the players gazed at the Ice Troll, they couldn’t even fathom the crisis happening in Serabourg Citadel as they were brimming with energy.

*****

The current scene of the dungeon was being broadcasted by every station including KMC Media.

“To fight so recklessly…! This rash battle doesn’t follow any tatics. Players starting the game, please do not try this in Royal Road. That kind of fighting is a shortcut to suicide.”

“Weed cannot seem to manage his sudden increase in strength and is fighting sloppily. It’s disappointing to call this one of Weed’s battles.”

Hosts were pouring out their disparaging remarks. Only KMC Media was siding with Weed and positively analyzing his actions.

“Weed is maximising his advantages in strength and resilience!

It’s a great strategy.”

“Yes, up until now, I have seen many videos of how other players fought. But I have never seen anyone clear out a dungeon this fast.”

To fight without taking full advantage of an Ice Troll’s strength and resilience would be foolish. Weed continued to fight while being hit and returning the hits with vengeance. This kind of exhilaration cleared up the fear of the Embinyu Church forces and was enough to relieve the pent up stress.

“And for our viewers, we have a treat for you.”

“What is it?”

“Don’t be surprised. It’s about the War God Weed! We have managed to get ahold of some party members who are close to Weed. These are the same party members that appeared in our broadcast of Todeum. The four of them are on the line right now, please introduce yourselves.”

Am I really on TV? Wow, this is exciting!

Ahem! Hi, it’s nice to meet you.

Hello.

Cough. Whenever you are in the Northern Continent, come visit. If you have the money, I can get anything you need.

All the voices were female, except for the last one. But the third voice was very familiar and had a charming tone, not so dissimilar from all the songs and music videos that were shown.

“The War God Weed is playing an amazing role right now. As this is being broadcasted in real time, I apologize in advance that this interview is going to be brief.”

Sure! It’s fine, don’t worry about it.

I understand.

Please don’t worry, I have been on shows often enough to know.

But we are still getting paid the agreed amount, right?

“I think, you must have spent a lot of time with the War God Weed. Let me ask, how does Weed usually fight in dungeons?”

It’s just like now. Those poor monsters.

It’s difficult to get the first shot in.

He’s always diligent.

I only calculate the japtem at the back so…

“There are a lot viewers who are envious of your position, getting to hunt with Weed. What kind of feeling do you get when you hunt with him? Excited? Nervous?”

It’s hard to keep up with him because he fights so well. You can literally feel the energy seeping out from you. It’s so fast and dizzying… But the taste of your fist smashing the enemy…. it’s fun.

After a successful hunt, confidence just swells up, like you can do anything.

Watching his fight is really awesome.

Well… I just calculate money….

“As the lord of Morata, Weed is praised by the people. Did you know from the beginning that Weed could handle his heavy responsibilities as a lord so well?”

Even I am amazed. I thought he would kill off all his people through starvation.

He might not look like it but Weed-nim is a really kind and soft hearted person. I just knew he would do well.

Nothing is impossible for Weed.

The taxes I have to pay... Ah, nevermind. Everyone please come to Morata and please browse through Mapan's Store.

"Weed's battle is still ongoing right now, we will cut this interview short and continue later if we have the chance. Any shout outs for Weed to encourage him in his quest to save the people of Serabourg Citadel?"

Don't put everything into your fist.

I have faith that you will come back safely.

When you come back, please bring me a pair of boots... And please look for the tailor Vitori, his backpacks are quite popular right now.

We provide the best service with the best quality goods. Call Mapan Chain Store now for franchise opportunities!

*****

The NPCs and the players kept crowding through the pass Weed opened up.

Even though Weed was an Ice Troll, it couldn't be helped that after a prolonged battle, his health and vitality dropped to a low

point. Fortunately, there were many priests among the players. They continuously chanted spells to recover health and vitality, so Weed could focus completely on decimating the monsters.

“It’s all thanks to Weed-nim that we are getting out of here.”

“I am so touched, I never knew he would go this far for us.”

“I am really proud that Weed-nim came from Rosenheim Kingdom.”

The admiration players held for Weed grew by leaps and bounds. But Weed had other thoughts...

“This still isn’t so difficult. There is no need to exert myself excessively to save all these random strangers.”

Weed was already prepared to slip away, naturally abandoning the other players if the situation became too impossible to manage.

*****

Doctor Yoo Byung Jun, sat watching his television in rapt attention.

“The Embinyu forces have already scaled Serabourg Citadel’s walls. It’s now only a matter of time till the walls fall to them.”

“The East gate has finally been breached. The Embinyu forces are now heading deeper into the Citadel.”

“The stores and stalls have been set alight. It seems the Embinyu Church is planning to set the whole Serabourg Citadel on fire.”

The presenters were in a brouhaha about the current situation.

All castles seized by the Embinyu Church were often scorched to the ground and every player was hunted down. These areas became void with only grass growing wildly over the vestiges of the crumbling stone walls. The fate of Serabourg Citadel was no different.

“The Embinyu Church is expanding quite fast.”

Just watching Royal Road gave Yoo Byung Jun great joy. From the shadows and monsters, human greed, growth, and prosperity, the Embinyu Church took every opportunity to expand. Monsters or those who followed malevolent gods, Royal Road did not bar them from their freedom of choice.

There was no limit to the monster's strength as they became powerful by proliferating or through their struggle for survival. They were not bound to their designated areas, monsters in dungeons could roam freely outside in search of prey. Sometimes, boss monsters even migrated their horde to more fertile areas.

Humans could take over villages and castles, and it was even

possible to accumulate skills and knowledge.

With his authority, Yoo Byung Jun could watch any happening on Royal Road as he wanted to.

“Mr. Oh Joo Wan. At this speed, how much further could the Embinyu Church expand to?”

“As you know, because of the Embinyu Church the Central Continent is in turmoil. There is still no statement from Unicorn Corps. about this issue. ”

Employees of Unicorn Corps. were deeply worried. They worried that the complete destruction of cities and devastation of Kingdoms were too excessive. Still, while the Kingdoms and cities held vestiges of their original form, it was upto the players to continue forging the future history. They could clear forests and create dwellings along the riverside to create cities. But it went both ways, if their defenses were ill prepared, it could easily be ravaged by monsters.

Yoo Byung Jun murmured to himself as he continued to watch.

“With this, the chance of the Embinyu Church bringing ruin to the continent became higher. ”

At it’s current course, this was a distinct possibility. Nothing was set in stone in the Versailles Continent, there were still countless monsters and dark forces that could plunge the continent into

ruin. Machiavellian plots were hatched and were progressing everywhere.

If the players growth became slow or they started to feud among themselves, then the Versailles Continent would be forever swept up by the dark forces. It was possible for the players to connect to Royal Road after this. But they would either live in servitude or create new cities and fight there for a brighter future.

If Royal Road was a simple game, Unicorn Corps. would have put a stop to the Embinyu Church to retain players interest. But in this world where Unicorn Corps. existed, they were cleaning out the money from all corners of the globe.

The fate of the Versailles Continent was decided by the players self determination.

“With Bardray being groomed as the next emperor, it’s most likely that he would contend with the Embinyu Church as his territory and influence grew. But more so….”

For some time now, one name rubbed Yoo Byung Jun in the wrong way.

Weed!

Weed’s title of War God was largely decorative, and through his observations he concluded that many of Weed’s portrayals were greatly exaggerated. But as he rewinded the scene of the first time

Weed started Royal Road, he was continuously baffled and surprised.

"Isn't the usual response for humans in face of their adversity to be disillusioned from reality by their lack of ability? Do they not start to procrastinate or to despair?"

But Weed made a theatrical display out of his suffering while overcoming his difficulties. Discovering the Secret Sculpting techniques one by one and then somehow, Weed met Zahab. In the expansive Versailles Continent, Weed prodigiously searched out and set foot in one of the most difficult of places.

"And Morata…"

Weed even possessed a city. It was not something that fell out of the sky as a divine gift. It was a place he obtained and developed personally. Weed did not command troops under a guild like Bardray. But somehow he was popular throughout the continent.

Yoo Byung Jun's was now quite wary of Weed.

"He's quite clever. I am sure it will become another special event when he rescues all the players and NPC's in Serabourg Citadel."

The Embinyu forces encircling Serabourg Citadel weren't normal. It was close to impossible to even fathom evacuating the beginners and the refugees from the Citadel. But even if Weed failed, this righteous act would earn him the hearts and minds of

the people.

“The Embinyu Church should already be blocking that way... If he escaped by himself, I wonder how far he could go.”

*****

Chairman Jeong Deuk Soo was using the weekend to read a book at his house.

“They said it will rain the whole day.”

Rain was beating outside the window since the morning.

“I think with the weather like this, it will be a good opportunity to log into Royal Road.”

His talk with Park Jin Suk rekindled his interest in Royal Road. It was a useful tool to him as he used it to relax to his heart's content during his leaves.

“I should log in before I change my mind.”

Chairman Jeong Deuk Soo went into the room with the capsule. The character Chairman Jeong Deuk Soo logged in as was Bart. He only had starting equipment. And as his hobby was mountain climbing, the last point he disconnected at was a valley where rangers were residing.

“Wow, the water is really clear.”

“Try drinking it. It’s refreshing.”

The valley was a couples heaven! As this was a famous valley in the Versailles Continent, there were even more couples.

“I should go somewhere else.”

Bart walked manly down the mountain.

“It’s so nice that connecting to Royal Road makes me feel several years younger.”

But after several steps, he had an unfortunate encounter with a cute, red eyed rabbit.

“Eek, a rabbit”

Bart cowered, making sure not to utter a sound as he waited for the rabbit to pass by. As he was only a level 3 beginner, even a rabbit was frightening to him. Bart had no battle experience and the three levels he raised were through simple quests that could be ended with conversations.

“I should head back to the village first.”

Bart was not at a level where he could travel anywhere confidently. The valley within the mountain was safe for him as there were many people here. Also it was right behind a major city so no dangerous monsters appeared.

The city in La Salle Kingdom was overcrowded with players, haggling and looking for people to travel with.

“Looking for people to harvest blue medicinal herbs! Anyone over level 25 is fine! You can make a tidy amount of money for just 1 hour of hard work.”

“Looking for party members to hunt in the newly created goblin fort in this area.”

These were the yells coming from beginners, but for Bart the levels were impossibly high.

“Everyone seems to really enjoy Royal Road.”

Wandering around the city, Bart saw the joyful expressions of the people enjoying themselves. The sky couldn’t have been any clearer, the surroundings were no different to reality and the game gave realistic feedback of walking. The feeling of excitement of walking through a new world!

Bart nodded to himself as he watched the birds nesting on the roof.

“There is a reason why this is so popular.”

As a businessman he only paid attention to the technology and the opportunities related to Royal Road. Currently Unicorn Corps. was growing at an unprecedented scale, the turnover or the net profit of all the companies he managed could not even compare. Even the difference in operating profit of Unicorn Corps. to the the top companies in the world started from single digit figures.

“Times have changed. Playing more Royal Road might prove beneficial in the future.”

He thought Royal Road was just simple entertainment, but seeing people being so crazy about it, he wanted to experience the game fully. Fortunately, he had plenty of money saved up. The company's secretary had set aside a lot of money for him to enjoy his vacation days.

“First, get some proper weapons for battle…”

Bart had a modicum of common sense and acquired starting equipment without any level restrictions. As he still did not have a class, he acquired basic garments and a light longsword.

Excited voices from the players could be heard from the shop with the weapon sign.

“Did you hear? The Embinyu Church is attacking Serabourg

Citadel right now.”

“Right now?”

“There is a siege going on and everything. They say the demons are huge!”

“Ah… I was going to go hunt in Bolog dungeon…”

“Is hunting all you think about? Watching this at the tavern is more important.”

“Yeah, I guess you are right. I am going to regret it if I don’t get to watch.”

“Hurry. There won’t be any space left in the tavern if we are late.”

It was all nonsensical to Bart. But it seems like he could see something if he went to the tavern. Perhaps that’s why the street suddenly felt devoid of people and the once crowded stores felt empty.

“I should also head toward the tavern.”

Bart entered the tavern and ordered a whole chicken with beer. And on the large crystal a video was being reflected. On it the siege of Serabourg Citadel was shown just as the player had spoken of

before.

Players were riveted to the large crystal as they ate and drank.

“Kaah, beers good. War God Weed really is different.”

“Can there be any other person who would stand up to the Embinyu Church alone?”

“Ranker? You think high level is everything? They can’t even touch Weed’s footstep.”

“Look at his hunting speed. It’s faster than our walking speed! He doesn’t even blink an eye when the monster appears.”

“The Embinyu Church is mincemeat to Weed.”

Listening to the chatters of other players, Bart continued to watch on the large crystal. The large crystal could relay the exact broadcast from the stations. And the huge time dilation in game and reality could be solved by showing advertisements or other programs in between!

The display usually showed the Embinyu Church destroying Serabourg Citadel, it did frequently change to Weed clearing the dungeon with other players.

“The War God Weed…”

The name was quite familiar to Bart. It was the male character that his daughter Seo Yoon usually spent time with!

“That Weed fellow is someone I know.”

At his mumbling the other people turned and faced him.

“Ahjussi, that person is the War God Weed. Do you really know that kind of person?”

“Yes, it’s definitely him”

“Well, there are lots of people with the same name.”

“I am telling you, it’s that Weed.”

“Ah, Yes…”

Due to Bart’s age, they didn’t hackle him further, but the atmosphere in the tavern told all. For a newbie, who was wearing starting equipment, to know Weed personally was a joke.

“That ahjussi’s is too much.”

“He should at least say something believable.”

Bart became the pompous fool who lied about knowing Weed.

*****

“Gyaaa!”

Weed’s roar reverberated throughout the underground passage. While this had the effect of luring in monsters, it also was a not so small reassurance to the players following behind his back.

“Hurry!”

“Those at the back won’t slow down. If we slow down, it will become more crowded.”

The NPCs and the players followed one after another in the secret passageway. The mid-sized guilds who were originally planning to follow after the larger guilds, also put their faith in Weed.

Over 100 hundred thousand people needed to be evacuated. People all crammed in at once, with many who had yet to even enter the passage.

Weed accepted Selina’s request as he fell into temptation for the flower bracelet. But in truth, this was an extremely difficult quest. This was not a quest that he could prepare for beforehand, and on top of that the moment to moment judgement would decide the fate of hundreds of NPCs.

“Allow us to fight with you.”

“Kill them all! Make them disappear!”

The players with high levels went past the NPCs and helped with clearing out the monsters.

“Forward!”

With the danger biting at their heels, it was a fight against time. Even then, the players felt more fun than danger. They were enraptured in the excitement as they followed Weed.

Even from the far back it was easy to see the large and tall frame of the Ice Troll, swinging his sword with strength! The muscles flexed as Weed grasped his sword, the Ice Troll’s long arm making it look like he was handling a spear as he sliced through the monsters.

“Wahahahaha!”

Laughter leaked out from Weed as he devoured the good loots whole.

The players' bodies tingled in excitement as they watched the Ice Troll, hell-bent in charging the enemy. To them it felt like Weed was presenting them with a question, rather than fighting to

escape Serabourg Citadel.

Why should they live a weary and hard life full of pent up stress? The world was filled with fun that shook the body with excitement! It was a great blessing to even be able to use your body to fight, tussle and just live an exciting life.

You need to turn right.

There is a clear stream flowing there. If you are thirsty, please drink before you go. Weed-nim.

3 monsters approaching! Please give them hell.

There is a trap if you go a bit further. You will just break through right? I think I will fall in love at the sight of you breaking through!

Fairies flew around, directing him where to go. Archers came close to the forefront and fired their arrows before the monsters could approach Weed. The players had never coordinated with each other in dangerous situations before, but they still stepped forward and did what they could. Thanks to this, even though the number of monsters increased, they maintained their speed.

“Heal people.”

As soon as Weed commanded, the priests stepped forward and healed the players fighting upfront.

“Fix.”

Weapons were sent to the back immediately and the blacksmiths fixed them on the spot. Weed naturally maximized the efficiency of the group.

The treasures and lost items left behind by nobles were scattered about in the underground passage. While fighting monsters, Weed opened up 4 treasure boxes.

It’s empty.

It’s empty.

You received three gold coins.

You have found an Royal Ornamental Sword.

As Weed acted ahead of every other person, he obtained a fancy sword decorated with gold, silver, and jewels.

“Identify!”

Royal Ornamental Sword: Durability 45/45, Attack 24~39

At one point, the sword hanged as a decorative piece in the palace

of Rosenheim Kingdom.

It has been lost for a long time and has been completely forgotten by the populace.

Restriction:

Must be over 3,500 fame.

Must be over level 240.

Option:

Charm increases by 4%.

Charisma +35.

Dignity +40.

Art +15.

If this sword is equipped while purchasing goods from a store, you must pay 5% more.

This sword was meant for showing off, rather than for battle. With the jewel encrusted at the pommel, he estimated that his could fetch a high price if he sold it at the store or to a noble.

“Not bad pocket change.”

The underground passage had an expansive tunnel network with many intersections. There were even traps to delay the pursuers but Weed just bashed through them. The traps that maintained their effects were disarmed as quickly as possible at the risk of the adventurers and explorers.

This way, it’s faster.

That path is blocked.

The king is escaping that way. You mustn't go this way, the evil soldiers are coming down through there.

There were many exits in the underground passage. Under the guidance of the fairies, Weed moved around the blocked passage and headed east. They advanced, defeating the monsters in their way and finally, they reached the exit to the surface.

“We will be resting here, before heading out the exit.”

As Weed transformed into an Ice Troll, his health and vitality recovered quickly, but the other players weren’t so lucky as they lied exhausted and panting for breath. Even following him up till this point was extremely difficult for the players.

Now as they headed toward the surface, anything could be waiting for them. The warriors who fought beside him weren't feeling well. But as they caught their breath, they resolved themselves to face what's to come.

'I will become a hero, if I die fighting here with Weed-nim.'

'I am so going to brag about this at work. To boss-nim, supervisor-nim, director-nim, and even to the deputy. If I die fighting in Serabourg Citadel... Kakaaka! Everyone will be jealous of me.'

'Am I on TV right now? I didn't even wash my face today. If my ex-girlfriend who broke up with me for spending too much time hunting and leveling could see me now.'

'My legs are shaking. The excitement is driving me crazy.'

The players were mad with excitement being able to save the newbies and earn their keep next to Weed. Their hearts were beating fast, their mouth dry with exhilaration. If they followed the other groups in their escape from Serabourg Citadel, they would have never experienced this much fun.

Information continued to stream from the players who were broadcasting or those who were defending Serabourg Citadel till the end.

The palace is on fire.

The West gate has been destroyed.

South wall has collapsed, the defenders are retreating.

They were also notified that the other groups composed of large guilds and high level players were beginning their escape. All the castle gates and walls were destroyed. Their only means of survival laid beyond the lines of the Embinyu Church forces. That's why they desperately tried to breakthrough towards their chosen direction.

"They should at least draw some attention from the Embinyu Church away from us."

Weed waited until the right moment before he spoke to the players.

"As we head out to the surface, we will face the Embinyu Church."

GULP.

Players gulped as they waited for Weed to continue. They would have the chance to listen to Weed's speech before they head out to the big battle, where they would have to fight tooth and nail for their survival.

Even against weak monsters, the newbies were overwhelmed and fumbled around. But right now, they were running for their lives away from Serabourg Citadel which was under attack by the colossal forces of the Embinyu Church.

What words could instil courage into these players?!

“Death from monsters, losing items, drops in skill mastery and level… It’s something that happens quite often in life.”

Weed experienced many deaths up till now.

“Especially as a newbie you die a lot. Then you quickly feel like your friends and party members are way ahead of you. The starting days are when the gap widens quickly. When you see strangers prosper, your inside boils up and you feel miserable at the unfairness of it all. And then, you friends start to disappear.”

"...."

“You become anxious to catch up. You start going into dangerous dungeons to level up and find yourself dying again. You lose money and items, you become poor, adventures become impossible and your quests don’t go according to plan.”

"....."

“Even then, let’s all try to be positive as we head out.”

"....."

Without leaving out a word, this message was communicated one by one till the end. All the players and NPCs became subdued.

Chapter 2: Refugees Of Serabourg Citadel

The players' eyes were brimming with determination,

'I must not die.'

'Whatever happens, I will follow Weed-nim.'

'Focus. I will come out of this place alive. I can't die like this or I will be stuck being a newbie. I won't even be able to get a girlfriend!'

Weed yanked the wooden lever affixed to the wall.

Du Du Du Du!

The stone gate blocking the exit began to rise, slowly unveiling the path leading to the surface.

"Now is the time. Let's head out."

The break was brief, but it was enough for the players to recover some of their vitality. Weed headed out first, wriggling his large frame through the opening. As soon as he surfaced, the rest of the players began to jump out through the clearing one by one.

“Don’t leave any humans alive.”

“It’s just for all who do not believe in the gods of Embinyu to die.”

“Purge Serabourg Citadel!”

Upon surfacing, the players were struck by the piercing cries of the fanatics and dark forces of the Embinyu Church. Even though the exit was well hidden with overgrown bushes, it was a mere 2km away from the Serabourg Citadel. A horse could cover that distance instantly.

Weed’s gaze turned to the Citadel. Swarming with Embinyu forces, the area now resembled a large black mass at a distance. Smoke billowed from the buildings as they burned fiercely while large demons could be seen encroaching the Citadel.

The soldiers of Rosenheim Kingdom were slowly being forced back into the palace where they would make their last stand. Weed noticed various groups still within the Citadel’s using this moment to escape.

It was absolute pandemonium! This was a true battlefield.

‘Please come out. Now is our chance.’

Players continued to materialize from the exit. Even nearby escape routes began to spew out players. Over tens of thousands newbies and NPCs had followed Weed, and for all of them to escape would take time.

The first group of players that poured out from the escape route had a fairly decent high level and could fight. Over 200 of these warriors exited, followed by the newbies. The group tried to covertly escape as they possibly could, but with so many people it was inevitable the Wyvern Knights circling in the sky above would detect them.

“Humans!”

“Kill them! Use them as sacrifice for the god of Embinyu!”

Players cried out in surprise.

“It’s the Wyvern Knights of the Embinyu Church!”

“We are spotted!”

Archers, Rangers, and anyone else possessing a bow began loosing their arrows at the Wyvern Knights. A chaotic stream of arrows flew from newbies and high archers alike, and rained down onto the enemy.

“Humans are offerings!”

“Praise the Embinyu Church!”

The Wyverns gracefully evaded the arrows as they dove toward the ground.

The mobility of the wyverns was astounding! To strike them in the air would be difficult, and spells were practically useless against them since they took too long to prepare.

“Evil Spear!”

The critical situation was when the Wyvern Knights came closer and closer as they primed their spear skills!

Weed accelerated furiously and leaped high into the sky.

‘Will it work? My strength and agility have increased radically so it just might be possible.’

BANG!

The ground cratered as the Ice Troll jumped with unbelievable might!

Weed suddenly thrust his sword mid-air. The low flying wyvern attempted to evade the Ice Troll that had abruptly appeared before its eyes, but its efforts were futile, it was already within range of

Weed's sword.

"Gyaak!"

You have dealt a great blow to the Wyvern Knight.

Wyvern Knight is unable to participate further in battle.

The overflowing strength of the Ice Troll!

Weed had not aimed for the Wyvern, instead striking the knight riding the Wyvern. The Wyvern Knight plummeted to the ground as Weed's attack had toppled him from his steed. In a swift and smooth motion, Weed quickly snatched the reins as he mounted the Wyvern. To display such incredulous quick and fluid movements despite having the massive body of an Ice Troll, one would think the scene had been choreographed.

"Gyaaa!"

The Wyvern staggered, nearly crashing, from the sudden brunt of the full weight of the Ice Troll. This was the Ice Troll's weight attack! As the Wyvern came closer to the ground that its underside could literally scrape the surface, it gave it a one last ditch effort to fly back up.

Weed peered down. The high level players had scattered and were resisting the Wyvern Knights' attacks but the beginners and the NPCs were still being slaughtered.

The resident Darium, living some distance behind the palace has died. Fame decreased by 2.

Vortuga the blacksmith has passed away. Fame decreased by 6.

While he didn't mind the players dying, every single NPCs death affected Weed personally. The nature of the quest to lead the refugees to safety had the potential to earn or lose an enormous amount of fame.

Weed could have never imagined the astronomical magnitude of this quest when he was first approached by Selina. The scale of the quest grew exponentially as the abandoned residents of Serabourg Citadel gathered and placed their faith in Weed. Fortunately, Seo Yoon was finally displaying her true ability as she slaughtered the Wyvern Knights, sending them into the grey light.

"Let's go. We've more bastards to hunt!"

Weed pulled the rein on the Wyvern with his left hand. To tame a Wyvern, a player would need high strength and fighting spirit. In these aspect, Weed already qualified. And he had a lot of experience taming a Wyvern through Wy-Three.

But to completely subdue and tame a monster, high intimacy and time to understand one another was required. Weed did not have any of this. But the Wyvern Weed was riding on top obeyed his command and flew towards the other Wyvern Knights.

“Faster!”

Pa-dak, Pa-dak, Pa-dak!

The Wyvern flew as fast as possible. It wasn’t due to its submission and obedience to Weed, but a silent plea to the other Wyvern Knights to knock off the heavy Ice Troll on it’s back. Furthermore, the cold emanating from the Ice Troll frosted the wings, causing fear to seep into the Wyvern from the possibility of crashing.

The Ice Troll was heavy and it was cold. It was truly evil.

“Well done.”

The Wyvern’s desperate measure to save itself went up in smokes as Weed exchanged several blows with the Wyvern Knights and emerged victorious. Weed was used to aerial battles where attacks were exchanged in a flash.

The Wyvern flew toward its other brethren for salvation, but Weed came out victorious in every single encounter.

GYAAA!

The Wyvern Weed was riding on was quickly becoming exhausted as it flapped its wings harder and harder to prevent its

fall. But because of the cold coming from the Ice Troll, soon the whole body of the Wyvern was covered in ice.

Weed waited for his Wyvern to completely freeze over before hijacking another Wyvern in mid air. The sight of a massive body leaping in the air was a truly mind boggling and dazzling performance. The players were dizzy from the heart dropping display above.

“Call Death Knight Van Hawk! Call Vampire Lord Torido!”

Summoning of Van Hawk and Torido!

“Master, I want to fight.”

“This place has the lingering scent of blood. Nothing is refreshing as the blood in the air, it’s much better than any exquisite perfume.”

“Kwaaak!”

The Wyvern was in greater agony as the number of passengers on it’s back increased.

Weed gave them a simple command

“Fight however you want”

Back when they were battling in the Yurokina Mountain, he had to constant supervise and direct them. But now, these two had experienced all kinds of battle with Weed.

Before the weight could overwhelm the Wyvern, Van Hawk and Torido jumped off. Van Hawk flew around, fighting on his summoned Phantom Horse while Torido spread his cape and became one with the darkness. Torido would then appear out of nowhere, behind the Wyvern Knights, plunging his fangs into their unprotected necks.

Woosh!

The pure blood vampire clan that obeyed Torido was summoned as bats and attacked the Wyverns Knights. The Wyverns did not fear the bats, but their movements were hampered as the bats clung everywhere on the Wyverns, sucking out their blood.

“It’s that Ice Troll. Retreat to the base!”

“We need to come back with more troops!”

Eventually the Wyvern Knights retreated. Van Hawk and Torido gave chase and returned with considerable amount of loot.

The Wyvern was spent and crashed to the ground with Weed still on top.

BOOOM!

The combined mass of the Ice Troll and the Wyvern ploughed through the ground as they crashed. Because of the extensive injuries the Wyvern sustained during battle and the additional trauma of the crash, the Wyvern turned into a grey light and disappeared.

Weed's health also dropped considerably but thanks to the priest's Healing Hand spell, he recovered in an instant. The novice priests and all alike who could use healing magic darted toward Weed and a cascade of Healing Hand spells was used on Weed.

The players continuously streamed out from the two exits points, clearing out the overgrown thickets as they took flight away from Serabourg Citadel. Already, several thousands of refugees were out of the tunnels.

Even though the Wyvern Knights retreated, in no time at all, another contingent of cultists were heading toward them.

"Torido, Van Hawk, did you have enough?"

"The scent of blood is delicious. My thirst has not been quenched yet."

"I want to keep fighting."

Weed sheathed his Demon Sword and took up the long spear he snatched from a Wyvern Knight. Because his arm was longer and

his body became bigger, Weed was able to exert greater force with a spear rather than a sword.

He did not have the Weaponry Skill like the Geomchis, as Weed's spearmanship skill level was low the attack damaged followed suit. Even with the spear's negative points, it outweighed the sword basic attack damage and Weed's strength stat as an Ice Troll further increased the damage. Also Weed thought that it would be much better to confront the early to mid level 200 cultist with a spear.

Weed with the spear in hand marched forward. The cultists of Embinyu numbered more than 500! The cultists were a scant group equipped with long pickaxes or bastardized bows, swords and axes without any armor.

"Van Hawk, Torido. Take the front."

"The throng I wanted."

"This is the dawn to get drunk."

Van Hawk charged the cultists flank on his Phantom Horse.

Pooo he hing!

The Death Knight on his Phantom Horse galloped into the cultists and slaughtered them. Torido with his pure blood vampire clan clung onto the cultists back and sunk their fangs into their

necks. The pure blood vampires had to drink human blood for quick growth. This was a once in a life time opportunity for the vampires as such opportunities were few and far between since they started following Weed.

"If it's only 500 cultists, it's easy."

Van Hawk and Torido had the characteristics of an Undead for limitless stamina, no matter how long it took, they could take care of it. But right now, time was not on their side. Before Embinyu Church sent a greater force, they had to clear out the cultists and allow as many refugees to escape as possible.

"I tried my best not to use it, but... Sculpture Destruction! Turn everything into strength!"

Weed took out a Fine sculpture, 'The Evil Merchant Holding A Beating Stick', he carried around in his backpack and destroyed it.

Sculpture Destruction has been used.

The pain! The agony of destroying a Fine sculpture.

Art stat decreased by 5 permanently. Fame decreased by 100.

Art stat transformed into strength with 1:4 ratio for the next 24 hours.

The additional converted strength has been applied to an unaccustomed body due to Sculpture Transformation, 30% penalty has been applied.

Your Art stat is too high. Because your original strength stat is too low, the conversion will not happen instantly.

870 strength has been converted into Advance level 8 skill, ‘Crushing Blow’.

The enemy will be flung far if you hit it precisely with a full powered strike.

Increased chance of enemy falling into paralysis and confusion.

950 strength has been converted into Advance level 6 skill, ‘Piercing Spear’.

This mighty attack will completely destroy the opponent's armor and shield.

1,430 strength has been converted into Advance level 9 skill, ‘Momentary Herculean Strength’.

For a short period of time, it will triple your maximum strength. Requires immense amount of vitality.

690 strength has improved the Ice Troll’s traits.

The cold will now affect up to 15m.

Mastery of Sculpting skill increased.

Weed greatly increased the strength of the Ice Troll with Sculpture Destruction. Indeed strength was the only thing to put trust in. By using the strength properly he could leap through the battlefield with ease!

“Well, let’s have some fun.”

Weed twirled his spear. The spear felt disproportionate to his body and was light as a feather. He felt he could do anything.

“Hyaa!”

As Weed whirled his spear, he leaped into the cultist’s flank.

Pa Pa Pang!

Everytime he spun his spear, the enemies flew several meters back! But, at the same time, all sorts of weapons the cultists held were targeting the large Ice Troll. As the enemies had him surrounded, defending was impossible.

But defending was not part of an Ice Troll’s dictionary. Only attack. Weed swept away the enemies with a whirl of his spear.

Every cultist within the range of Weed's spear turned into grey light. Weed's attack was foolish, daring and full of fighting spirit!

The weak cultists could not content with Weed's high level and strength. It was like watching the strong violently suppressing the weak! The eyes of the low level newbies were wide as they watched in disbelief.

"Ah, I also want to be like that."

"The Ice Troll is so cool!"

"How many times do I have to level up to fight like that?"

Watching Weed reassured the players, some even momentarily forgot about their escape and began to eat peanuts as they watched the spectacle.

Seo Yoon began to flex the frightening temperament of a Beserker. The cultists within her vicinity were swept up in a mana explosion and disappeared.

"Go!"

"Let's increase our level quickly to eat a gourmet meal and find a boyfriend!"

The great escape!

While Weed, Seo Yoon and the other players halted the cultists of Embinyu, they had to flee as far as possible. The players and the NPCs came one after another from the underground passage and continued their escape beyond the hill.

The residents of Serabourg Citadel who have managed to escape gave their heartfelt gratitude.

Fame increased by 34.

The residents are in your debt, your reputation among them improved.

Your intimacy with the residents of Rosenheim Kingdom improved.

Texts kept popping up on Weed's message window.

The number of refugees were enormous, even now only several thousands had managed to pass the underground passages and climbed over the hill. Weed had to buy more time for the rest of the refugees to escape to a safe area.

'I don't know how much longer I can withstand this.'

Looking toward Serabourg Citadel, he saw that it was covered in an inferno and was burning brightly. Soon, the Embinyu forces

would chase after the king and his knights and would discover the refugees. It was only a matter of time till the large army of the Embinyu Church would come after the refugees Weed was leading.

“Sister!”

In the chaos a newbie slipped his hand and was caught on the edge of the rock, struggling to get out. At that place, a seriously wounded cultist was standing with his pickaxe.

“Death is the only option for those who refuse to follow the Embinyu Church!”

For a newbie, a cultist was no different than a boss monster.

“Chad!”

The moment the sister who cried out upon looking at the scene, the cultist who was about to bring down his pickaxe turned into a grey light and disappeared. Behind the point where the cultist was standing was an Ice Troll holding a spear.

Weed who was fighting at the front line saw the boy Chad was in danger, he ran toward the scene at an extreme pace.

“Please hurry.”

Weed personally grabbed hold of Chad’s hand and raise the boy

up. The players escaping in a flurry saw this scene.

“Thank you.”

“It’s no problem. I did what I had to do. ”

There was no hint of hypocrisy or pretense on the wicked looking Ice Troll’s face.

‘Whew, that could have been a disaster!’

Weed never missed a japtem! He found himself fortunate that he spotted the sapphires at the place Chad fell before anyone else.

*****

The refugees did not move as fast as Weed wanted. The newbies could logout if they moved far away from Serabourg Citadel and the war zone. But the same did not apply to the NPCs of Serabourg Citadel and there were quite a lot of children and elders among. Not only was their stamina low but so was their morale, so the marching speed was slow.

Even though Seo Yoon, Van Hawk, Torido and the other players were fending off the Embinyu cultists, Weed’s expression was dark.

“The end of Serabourg Citadel is nigh.”

From afar, it was now possible to see the fire and the smoke rising from Serabourg Citadel. The defending forces were just a step away from total annihilation and portions of the palace gave deafening sounds as it started to collapse. And from some distance away, another contingent of Embinyu Church forces was heading toward Weed and the refugees.

“They sent the Karaclops this time!”

These monsters were rhinoceros that were mammoth sized. Their height was 6 meters and their level was about 360. On the back of the Karaclops were watchtowers in which the Embinyu soldiers rode on.

This was the contingent of Karaclops troops sent to attack the refugees after receiving the report from the Wyvern Knights.

“Kill all those who have rejected the Embinyu Church and are fleeing!”

The archers riding on the Karaclops readied their bows.

Weed stepped forward to draw their attention.

“Not one of you shall pass if you can’t go through me!”

As Weed had overflowing strength and resilience, he heroically

baited them into attacking him.

Pu shushuong!

In response, immeasurable number of arrows flew towards Weed and blackened the sky.

With both hands Weed spun his spear as fast as possible. Like in the movies, the arrows ricochet from his spear.

Chararang!

But arrows still managed to find their way through the gaps and pierced the Ice Troll’s large body.

You have been struck by an arrow.

Health decreased by 275.

You have been struck by an arrow.

Your armor mitigated some damage.

Health decreased by 89.

You have been struck by an arrow.

Your armor mitigated some damage.

Health decreased by 327.

.....

Weed’s body was riddled like a porcupine!

Your body withstood an arrow from a high rank enemy, resilience increased by 2.

Weed successfully managed to draw the enemy's attention. It was thanks to the Ice Troll’s absurd health, he managed to survive. But if there was any slip-up the situation could have turned very serious.

Skills existed whereby it allowed the players to cut an arrow in mid air with a sword, or block them by creating walls. Weed could only regret that he did not have an opportunity to learn such skills. Though even if he had those skills, his mana was too low to use them anyways.

“Stomp them!”

The Karaclops thumped the ground as it dashed toward them.

The NPCs and players began to lose their courage.

“Ah, do we really have to fight with those things?”

“I am scared.”

Other than a battlefield, such a rush of attacks was rare and far between. The players who had only fought against common monsters couldn’t help but be overwhelmed.

“Healing Hand!”

Priests urgently healed Weed.

Weed, Van Hawk, Torido and Seo-Yun stood side by side on the hill.

“What a joyous day for battle. I am going to fight to my heart’s content on this day.”

And with that, Weed moved back a step.

“When I was still alive and well in Kallamore Kingdom, I used to have battles like these every day.”

Even Van Hawk took a step back.

Seo Yoon didn’t want to stand out alone and draw the enemy’s

attention so she also move to the back.

“KARURURU.”

Torido who was facing the charging enemy with his fangs out only noticed now that everyone else had pulled back. But to retreat was out of the question in the face of the Vampire Lord’s dignity. And as the pure vampire clan was flying around as bats, it was beyond unacceptable.

“Blood! I yearn for blood!”

As Torido scurried forward, he unfurled his cape and jump up high to the top of the Karaclops.

“Vampire!”

“Let’s use the vampire as a sacrifice for the Embinyu Church as well. Nothing is too precious as a sacrifice to him. For the complete destruction of this continent!”

The Embinyu Archers fired arrows toward Torido and the Shaman casted curses and binding spells.

“Blade Tornado!”

Torido used his skill. The keen edge of the blood sword devastated the surrounding, causing huge damage to the Karaclops

that were within the attack range. In that time, Weed's health was restored and vitality recovered.

"Let's go Van Hawk."

Weed raised his spear and ran forward. The Karaclops tried to stomp him and the Embinyu soldiers attacked with spells and arrows. Because of his huge size, Weed could not completely dodge all the attacks. Just a graze dealt huge damage to his health. But with his outrageous strength he toppled the Karaclops by bashing its front leg.

"Ka-ang!"

With a roar, the massive Karaclops toppled!

Seo Yoon also used her Berserker skills in earnest and began fighting. Once she started to fight in earnest, her class specialty was hard to halt. Up till now it was difficult to get warmed up, but now it was enough for the Berserker skills to be activated.

She weaved through the battlefield, showing off her incredible strength as she turned the Karaclops and Embinyu soldiers into grey light en mass.

Van Hawk riding on his Phantom Horse, subdued the soldiers with his mobility. Torido flew on top of the Karaclops with his pure blood vampire clans. Morning has yet to come, so the vampires were still frighteningly powerful against the humans.

The Karaclops and the Embinyu Archers ensnared by Torido began to fight against each other.

“Those speaking heresy must die.”

“The vampires were sent by the Embinyu to lead us toward the right path!”

The players who have yet to log out gave support with spells and arrows, and the warriors bravely fought the dangers together. Even though they were killed by the Karaclops hooves and the Archer’s arrows, they fought till the end.

“Mom, I’m on TV!”

“I’m going to brag to my friends that I died fighting next to Weed.”

“Ah! I could have taken that item!”

Magic exploded all around them and arrows poured down like rain.

Weed did not target the Archers, rather he only preyed on the Karaclops.

Koong! Koong! Koong!

A Karaclops charged toward Weed and tried to trample him.

Momentary Herculean Strength has been used.

Strength increased.

“Aaaaaaah!”

Weed held onto the Karaclops leg and flipped it to the side. Whenever the humongous Karaclops fell, large number of Archers and Shamans died as a bonus.

In a war or a siege, Karaclops played a major role against soldiers. They had the ability to lower the morale of the army, so they could be useful in many situations. Once a Karaclops started its charge, the body of the players with low fighting spirit froze up and were killed without being able to escape!

But Weed, Seo Yoon, Van Hawk and Torido had even fought off a Bone Dragon before. With their fighting spirit, something like the Karaclops was not enough to make them lose heart.

Chapter 3: Weed's Decision

Among the players that escaped through the underground passage were Harma, Margo, Glen and Lewis. These were the ones that crossed the Bark Mountain range with Weed and Mapan.

The four of them tried to lure Weed and Mapan into a trap, but the situation turned on them and the quartet perished instead! These four then crossed over into Rosenheim Kingdom and continued their activities, robbing even the Geomchi's unflinchingly.

These four were part of the Ica Guild, living the life of criminals and thought of new creative ways of committing evil! They were a perfect fit for the Ica Guild, lead by the Guild Master Darius.

"I never imagined such a Guild existed. They don't care for anything other than fame and they start Guild Wars without care."

The Ica Guild. When they hear rumors of good farming spots, they call on their guild members to seize the spot by force. They took over dungeons discovered by others, charging high fees like it was an everyday occurrence and expropriating hard to acquire items.

"This is the guild we were looking for."

The quartet quickly rose up the ranks to the Head Enforcers of Ica Guild. As time went by, however, the growth of the guild

stagnated. Because of their comparative guild size, they committed the heinous crime of trying hostile takeovers of famous guilds on the Central Continent and soon found themselves shunned by the people.

The weak should commit enough crime so as not to be caught, but the Ica Guild overextended themselves. Members of the Ica Guild were given the finger wherever they went and their recruitment naturally dried up.

The guild collapsed soon after without achieving their dream of becoming one of the great guilds. The Guild Master Darius fled Rosenheim Kingdom for the Central Continent due to so many people hating his guts.

The nefarious four also wanted to head for the Central Continent. But there were too many grudges there so they departed for the Brent Kingdom.

In the wide and open Versailles Continent, there were opportunities for crime everywhere!

They terrorized the Brent Kingdom with their evil ways and soon their situation became tenuous. Seeing that Rosenheim Kingdom was calmer, the four decided to return.

These four were feeling out the situation in Serabourg Citadel and searching out the street corners with the most merchants when the Embinyu Church invaded.

“What are we going to do?”

“We can just try to squeeze in with some group and escape. I am sure we could get out of here alive.”

When these four tried to join the escape groups, they were found out as the backstabbing quartet and were refused.

“The world is too cruel.”

“I hope to never have to see you again!”

The four backstabbers had nothing, and were left to fend for themselves against the Embinyu Church.

But then, the War God Weed appeared in Serabourg Citadel with talks of rescuing all the refugees. The mid sized guilds threw their lot in with Weed. The relief and happiness passing through the players of Serabourg Citadel.

Just one person managed to change the mood so drastically.

“Oh, man. We are totally screwed.”

“It’s the War God Weed!”

Harma, Margo, Glen and Lewis were shattered by Weed’s sudden

appearance. In hindsight, they did not know that Weed was an incredibly famous figure and only found out through their time in Rosenheim Kingdom.

“We scoffed at that he was a sculptor, but at least we got had by someone better than us.”

“Well, whatever. I got some fun memories out of it.”

The backstabbing quartet let the bygones be bygones just like that.

But after that incident, Weed went onto various epic quests! Weed was plastered all over the Hall of Fame, forums, and game channels. The four also wanted to go on adventures like Weed.

“I am so jealous.”

“Nothing is impossible for him. I’m sure if it was the War God Weed, he could demolish the Cloud Guild in an instant…”

“Even famous Guild Masters won’t dare do anything against Weed when he passes by. Do you think they could coax the dungeon toll out of him?”

“Who would try ask for a toll fee from Weed? When a person reaches that level, everyone else should be mindful of themselves.”

The backstabbing quartet exalted the War God Weed and complimented his adventures, of course, this was only after finding out that War God Weed and Sculptor Weed were one and the same.

“Do you think he still remembers us?”

“Let’s sneak past him. If we mingle with the people, it should be okay.”

The backstabbing quartet mixed in with the residents and escaped through the underground passage. As soon as they surfaced, loud roars could be heard with the sight of an Ice Troll fighting against the Karaclops. The sight of Weed commanding the Death Knight and Vampire Lord over the battle was too epic to describe.

“Hurrah for War God Weed!”

“We are eternally grateful for him rescuing us.”

*****

Weed recklessly thrust himself into the Karaclops flank. He looked as if he had lost his sense!

“Aaaaah!”

“Weed-nim, Nooo!”

Players screamed out in fear.

The mere sight of these massive Karaclops thumping on the battlefield was dizzying. It was terrifying and awful to just think about being grazed by the horns or being flattened by its broad legs. The players thought Weed would be quickly run over and get killed, but Weed was perfectly fine between the gaps of the herd of Karaclops.

“Move out of the way!”

“The Ice Troll went that way!”

The Embinyu Archers and Shamans were powerless to act as it was difficult to target Weed with the Karaclops in the way.

“There was this method!”

Weed was a person who lived comfortably in this world through petty tricks. Even the Geomchis acknowledged this point, that Weed adapted to any battle quickly and improvised fantastical battle strategies and tactics.

“Catch me if you can!”

Regardless of Weed’s large size, he cleverly moved in between the

Karaclops' sides. Weed moved underneath the belly of the Karaclops as they dashed toward him with their horns lowered.

KUEEEEH!

With the Karaclops hustled together, they impeded each other from showing their full might. And on top of that, whenever Weed passed by, the cold aura spread to their legs and hindered their movements.

Even then, Weed did not just scamper around dodging the attacks. This was what they call the perfect opportunity to hunt and grind for experience!

'There are monsters spread out everywhere, I have enough strength and vitality, and there are plenty of priests backing me up.'

While this wasn't a party, when Weed's health fell into critical levels there were over 100 priests ready to use Healing Hand.

"Let's have some fun!"

The spear in Weed's hand shook as if it was about to break. Through the Sculpture Destruction supplementing the Ice Troll's strength, the steel spear began to bend as it was swung with incredible power.

You landed a critical hit!

Crushing Blow!

The Karaclops collapsed.

You landed a critical hit!

Piercing Spear!

Karaclops defense has been ignored and it’s leg has been pierced.

“Hyaaa!”

Weed used the abundant strength of the Ice Troll and fought viciously in between the herd of Karaclops.

You landed a critical hit!

Momentary Herculean Strength has been activated.

Crushing Blow!

Karaclops is no longer able to battle.

Seeing the Karaclops beaten to the ground by Weed, the boss monster came running. Compared to the other Karaclops, the boss

monster was massive, at over 9 meters and its eyes and horn shone dangerously. It was the alpha male Karaclops at level 420! The ground shook from its steps and they could be felt by all.

"It's just a bigger version. The bigger they are the more sluggish them became."

Seeing that Weed was currently an Ice Troll, it was hypocritical of him to say so. Regardless, it was now a match between him and the boss monster. Prolonging the fight held no advantage and no matter how risky it was, he had to win as fast as possible.

Weed stood on top of the hill, waiting for the right moment when the galloping alpha Karaclops would slow down.

'I only need to dodge at that one moment.'

When the alpha male was within range, Weed ran into the herd of Karaclops. The alpha male couldn't bear to trample on its own species and came to a stop, shifting its upper body.

This was the moment Weed was waiting for!

You landed a critical hit!

Momentary Herculean Strength has been activated.

Piercing Spear!

Alpha Male Karaclops has been wounded.

As its name suggested, a single blow was nothing to a boss monster.

Weed rounded the alpha male and continued to attack.

PU-UK!

PA PA PA PA!

You landed a critical hit!

Additional 29% damage was inflicted.

You landed a critical hit!

Additional 58% damage was inflicted.

You landed a critical hit!

Additional 93% damage was inflicted.

You landed a critical hit!

Additional 127% damage was inflicted.

A consecutive critical hit attack!

The Wyvern Knight’s steel spear shattered as it’s durability ran out.

The spear that endured till now broke and shattered. Weed quickly packed the broken pieces into this backpack and took out two different spears. The one he acquired when he fought the Wyvern Knight. The other was the Fire Lance spear he received as a gift from the elder Exper at the farewell party at the ancient dwarf city Thor.

“Enjoy your beating, you bastard!”

Still, the boss monster’s defense was formidable. After dishing out a few attacks with the spear from the Wyvern Knight, the tip quickly broke off and the attack value dropped.

Weed took the Fire Lance spear and leaped into the air near the alpha Karaclops. Taking the spear, he stabbed it into the monster’s body, stomping on it to force the spear deeper into its body and using it as a springboard to propel himself higher on top the alpha male.

“This is the end!”

The alpha Karaclops finally succumbed to Weed’s barrage of

attacks at its back and died standing. The monster had extraordinarily high health,defense, vitality, and agility, but it was no match for Weed's tenacity.

Your level increased.

You have laid the Alpha Karaclops of the Embinyu Church to rest.

Through this great accomplishment, your fame increased by 285.

Charisma increased by 1.

Strength increased by 2.

Faith increased by 2.

Weed's message window kept peppering him with notifications.

You have acquired the Karaclops large horn.

You have acquired the Embinyu symbol.

The horn could be used to make a good bow or a sculpture out of it.

KUUUUU!

As the alpha male perished, the herd of Karaclops began to retreat. Though the Embinyu Archers and Shamans tried to force them to fight, the Karaclops didn't look back as they continued with their mad escape.

"Whew, we barely escaped from that crisis."

Weed turned back and saw that only a fourth of the refugees had managed to escape yet. Their speed slowed to a crawl when they had to climb over the hill.

"At this rate, it will take about a day or two for these refugees to reach a safe haven under the Rosenheim forces."

In the distance, the Seraboug Citadel was slowly being demolished and soon the massive army of the Embinyu Church would be hot on their trail. When this happened, it would become considerably more difficult to help the refugees escape.

The number of refugees that needed to be rescued for Selina's quest to be successful was unknown. But just saving portions and leaving the rest to fend for themselves against their pursuers left a bad taste in Weed's mouth. He had too many bad memories of being hassled by creditors and loan sharks!

Van Hawk, Torido, Seo Yoon, and the players all gathered around Weed. Residents of Serabourg Citadel who were soldiers or hunters in the past, also came forward.

“Weed-nim! We entrust our fate into your hands. We are prepared to lay down our lives, so please lead our family to safety!”

“I am the Knight Odgar! It’s been a long time since I have picked up a blade, but I shall pledge myself anew to the lord of Morata. I shall fight against the Embinyu Church with you.”

Hunter Jenkins and 430 others have joined the battle.

You can lead them in the fight against the Embinyu Church.

Retired Knight Odgar, 7 other senior knights with 894 former soldiers have pledged themselves for battle.

You can now command soldiers with high loyalty.

Weed’s face, which was already dark, fell further. The hunters had nothing to defend themselves with. A few had hunting bows but most were empty handed! Even the old knights and soldiers, had virtually no armors or shields or swords. They were only armed with basic farming equipment and kitchen knives.

“With my luck, what else could I expect?”

“Yes?”

“It’s nothing.”

For the elite forces of Serabourg Citadel to be made up of such a ragtag band...

'They would be of no help against the Embinyu Church.'

Weed soberly dissected the current situation.

"At the current rate, not many people will come out alive. The first to be killed will probably be the elderly and the children when their stamina runs out."

There was a limit of how many Weed or Seo Yoon could protect under their wings. And the Embinyu Calvary or the demons would cause a wholesale massacre.

"I need to think outside the box. Something big to pull the attention of the Embinyu Church someplace else."

The king and the royal family had surfaced from the underground passage and were fleeing elsewhere, escorted by the Knights and Magicians. They had already managed to shake of their Embinyu pursuers and were some distance away. Very soon, the Embinyu Church would turn their gaze onto the refugees.

Weed needed to somehow to make the Embinyu Church give up their chase...

“I need a bait. A bait that would make the Embinyu forces forgot about everything else. A bait strong enough to buy as much time as possible. Hmm… I wonder where I can find something like that?”

Weed reminisced his ill-fated relationship with the Embinyu Church. Not only did he crush their plot in the Northern Continent, he rid the world of Feylord the head of their 11th sect. The Embinyu Church must be sharpening their swords for revenge.

“If I show up in front of the Embinyu army as bait, would they call it a divine intervention?”

The Embinyu Church would definitely go after Weed. The great army formed in part by the forces that burned the Serabourg Citadel to the ground, the cultists, the demons, the Embinyu’s Dark Priests and Shamans would all be after Weed.

“I never knew he would come up with such an idea…. ”

“As expected, he is Weed-nim.”

“Weed-nim is going to sacrifice himself as bait to save us!”

“Uwaaaaaa!”

Weed murmuring to himself was inadvertently heard by the players and spread throughout the entire refugees, raising their morale.

Hope is surging through the refugees of Seraboug Citadel.

Morale increased by 89%.

With renewed strength, the refugees ran faster over the hills to escape.

“Please hurry grampa.”

“Yes, dear child. I must not waste this precious life that Weed-nim sacrificed himself for. Let’s hurry!”

It was confirmed. Weed was now the bait to entice the Embinyu Church!

"....."

Refusing now would reduce morale to rock bottom and make their escape even more difficult. Weed could feel the heavy weight of all these eyes sparkling with hope on him.

The young players and newbies did not have much to lose even if they died. They were acting similarly to the spectators Weed sold peanuts and squids, it seemed they were staying behind to watch.

“This will be exciting!”

“I was always curious how good Weed-nim was in a fight.”

“Yeah, I know what you mean. The cultists and the Karaclops were only warm ups for Weed-nim.”

This was the side effect of exaggerated false rumors! The players had huge expectations of Weed.

‘Well, for the quest to succeed a bait was needed anyway.’

Thinking about it, Weed knew there was no better decoy than him. He had the skills to survive and had a finely honed battle senses. But, to become a live sacrifice was against everything he stood for.

‘Snap out of it. If I get shaken by this much, I will never become rich. I need to throw away these kinds of thoughts if I want to succeed.’

Weed gazed at the the inferno that was Serabourg Citadel.

“See how he’s looking down at the Embinyu forces with such cold eyes. I think he’s really going for it!”

Weed shook his head left to right.

“He’s stretching his neck now. Is he going off to fight now?”

Weed fingered the Fire Lance spear he was holding. Because of the fight with the alpha Karaclops, it’s durability fell considerably.

“It looks like he's going to fix his spear before going!”

There was no excuse left for Weed. If he turned back now, the disappointment will be palpable and people would curse him. Of course, he could live on ignoring what society thought of him.

‘They do say that if they heap curses on you, you live longer… What if I just accept all their criticism…’

That’s that. There was nothing more to it.

But for the quest to succeed, Weed would need to step forward and save the refugees. It was only a matter of time till the Embinyu forces would be after the refugees. And with Weed’s identity being exposed, the confrontation between him and the Embinyu Church was inevitable as they would throw everything against him. The results were the same in the end whichever direction he took.

“I will lay down my life first.”

“It has been an honor that I could die gloriously on a battlefield.”

The hunters and the knights chimed in.

Weed shook his head.

“You do not need to fight next to me. Escape to a safe haven.”

“We cannot do that! If it’s not because we are weak then let us choose an honorable death.”

“The most important thing right now is protecting your families. Return to your families and live happy lives.”

Are you giving up command of the hunters and the soldiers?

“I alone, am enough for this battle.”

The hunters and the soldiers have rejoined the refugees.

Honor stat has been created.

Honor: As a noble, doing righteous acts will increase this stat.

Honor has a great influence on the resident’s loyalty and diplomacy.

It will also be a great help when trying to recruit free knights.

Honor stat increased by 2.

Weed decided to fight alone. But Seo Yoon, Van Hawk and Torido accompanied him down the slope.

“Protecting the citizens is an obvious duty for a knight.”

“I will be able to drink all the blood I want.”

"....."

*****

The Embinyu Church looted and burned Serabourg Citadel.

“Take everything! These are treasures to be offered to the god of Embinyu.”

“Rosenheim Kingdom that has forsaken Embinyu will fall.”

The Dark Priests of the Embinyu Church were looting with their demons before all of Serabourg Citadel burned down. Thanks to the demons the historic palace of Rosenheim Kingdom disappeared from the face of the earth.

Once this job was done, it was most likely the Embinyu Church forces would scatter throughout the surroundings, hunting down the escape groups and the refugees.

Then, a loud voice was heard!

“I, Weed, have come. Embinyu Church, bring your best against me!”

Belloni, the head of the 9th sect was looting the private office of the king. He was peering through the window, looking down from a high place with the palace burning all around.

Over the collapsed walls, stood Weed, Seo Yoon, Van Hawk and Torido. Weed had fearlessly returned within the boundaries of the Serabourg Citadel! While it wasn’t a far distance, it was still smack dab in the heart of Embinyu forces.

“Weed is the highest priority target for the Embinyu Church! Servants of the Embinyu Church, kill that human!”

*****

The Morata’s artist’s eyes were sparkling as they couldn’t keep their eyes off the crystal orb.

“Ah, this is amazing.”

“My hand is getting sweaty just by watching this.”

“I even forgot to drink my beer!”

The excitement began the moment Weed started to lead the refugees out of Serabourg Citadel. As always, Weed's adventures sucked people in. Thus, even though Weed was a Sculptor he was still one of the greatest figures for all the artists.

'If I make this scene into a sculpture...'

'Drawing this will be awesome. This composition is to die for.'

This became a great source of inspiration for the painters and the Sculptors. Already the Sculptor Guild was discussing their plans to erect a huge statue of Weed. If they could just make it, there would be no greater fame. It could even become the next attraction of the city!

And from a single battle, poured out countless scenes for the painters to draw.

"I think the scene where he was battling in the dungeon was cool."

"The speech he gave to the refugees as an Ice Troll wasn't bad."

"What about the part where he fought in mid-air while riding on the frozen Wyvern?"

"Well, that was spectacular. But there is going to be something

much better from now on.”

“Yeah! Declaring themselves in front of the Embinyu army. If only I was with them there…”

The Painters immediately planned their concepts they wanted to draw. Considering the huge amount of paintings about Weed that would be produced, they were already planning to host an exhibition on this.

And in a small part of their hearts, they were lamenting. They could just imagine the excitement, their hearts beating as if they were in Weed’s spot right now!

Besides the artists, players with other classes were also focusing on the crystal orb.

These were Bards and Dancers!

“Observe carefully. This will be our next play.”

“What would the title be?”

“Weed’s stand against the Embinyu Church?”

“No, no. ‘The Saint of the Continent Weed’ sounds better.”

The Dancers and Bards in Morata were preparing to host a grand play of Weed's adventure. They never ran out of idea's when they chose Weed as the main topic as wherever he went, thrilling events happened.

The residents of Morata were also watching the crystal orb.

"Our lord is really different."

"I hope he comes back safely. He mustn't get killed by the Embinyu Church."

Morale of Morata's residents increased.

Loyalty of Morata's residents toward their lord is at the maximum state.

Chapter 4: Flood And The Sphinx

Weed bellowed out a Lion's Roar.

He stood there, with his chest pushed out. His right hand grasped lightly on the spear he had stabbed into the ground earlier. Standing firm and tall, his body language screamed danger.

"Kill Weed!"

"We have to kill that bastard first! Our Lord Belloni commands us so."

Demons started to emerge from the flames that were burning down Serabourg Citadel. The large army encircling the Citadel broke away. Their only goal was to kill Weed.

The effect of Lion's Roar was more than plenty in pulling the Embinyu Church's attention.

"Hmm."

Even Weed did not anticipate such a reaction.

"My popularity is pretty amazing."

The realization of his fame at such a crucial moment!

"....."

Seo Yoon stared at him with a blank expression. She wondered just what kind of plan Weed had that he would so confidently provoke the Embinyu Church like this. She couldn't help but doubt his sanity.

"I will be able to fight as much as I want."

"Let's start a festival of blood."

Van Hawk and Torido prepared for battle. And Weed, turned his back without a second thought.

"Run for it!"

Weed's decision was to run.

Of course, there was no way that Weed would have planned to die, fighting the Embinyu Church till the bitter end. Such a thoughtless plan, was for Weed, the same as pouring out all his life savings on lottery or gambling.

Seo Yoon gave a small sigh of relief and followed suit. To her, running away seemed like the right course of action after successfully managing to draw the Embinyu Church's attention. And especially, what purpose did stabbing his spear into the

ground or giving out a Lion's Roar serve?

But there was a huge leap in logic between the two.

'For that few seconds, I must have looked cool.'

As a man, he also wanted to try that pose.

Now that the whole army of the Embinyu Church was mobilized after him, the only thing left to do was run.

The Dark Paladins, seeing that Weed was trying to flee, chased after him on horseback.

"Time to run. Van Hawk, open up a path."

"Understood, Master."

Running ahead on his Phantom Horse, Van Hawk pulled out his sword and gave a large swing.

Houyhing!

The Dark Paladins, together with their horses, fell.

This was the Van Hawk that Weed treated coldly for reducing his experience points and being useless. But after levelling up, Van

Hawk was showing his use as he made short work of these Dark Paladins. Wherever Weed was, people instantly pictured the Death Knight next to him on reflex. The Death Knight had become quite famous in his own right.

"Forward! Continue pushing through!"

The Embinyu Church army moved in groups, trying to block their escape. The beginner players watching on the hill could see groups of Cultists and Demons moving in perfect order as they slowly closed in on Weed.

"Ah... I thought he said he was going to fight alone... running away also works!"

"It must be terrifying. Just imagine, tens of thousands coming to kill just one person."

"Uwa! It must be electrifying!"

Watching the Demons all gathering in one spot gave a feeling of grandeur.

"We cannot stop here!"

Weed swung his Fire Lance Spear furiously.

Crushing Blow!

The enemy's head flew off.

Crushing Blow!

Dark Paladin has been paralyzed.

The defensive lines formed by the Dark Paladins and Demons were smashed into the air by the Ice Troll. Though most of the enemies could withstand such a blow, there was no time to follow up and kill them.

"It's bad form to leave prey alive... what a waste"

It was a miserable situation for Weed, when the monsters were stacked up for him to destroy he had to run away. But the progress of the battle was changing within the breath of a moment. The high ranked Demons were pulled back from the siege to come after him. In the vicinity were many Cultists, Dark Paladins and Witch Doctors as far as Weed could see.

"All who cannot follow the will of Embinyu are cowards!"

The curse stimulated fear, Fighting Spirit decreased by 56.

"These foolish heathens will suffer in agony forever, without a hope of salvation."

Agony has been instigated, this will cause an additional 17% damage to your health on every attack.

Witch Doctors casted various hexes on Weed, Seo Yoon, Van Hawk and Torido. All over Weeds body were small skulls floating around dizzyingly, on his back were large burning hands that came back and forth. The area was thick with fog, like a riverbank at dawn, limiting the groups field of vision.

It was as they said, the Witch Doctors of the Embinyu Church were hard to deal with. In an instant, seven different curses were cast on the four of them.

“Gossiping about others is the most fun when there are plenty of people.”

Especially when you are talking behind their backs, 3-4 hours, time just flew by!

Before Weed and Seo Yoon went on to engage the Embinyu Church, they received as many blessings as possible from the priests. But because of the curses, the blessings were counteracted, causing malaise and overall battle effectiveness to decrease.

“Don’t stop running, we need to get past the Dark Paladins!”

Curses could be purged faster by receiving blessings or having holy artifacts. Depending on the Resistance and Will Power, Dark Magic effects disappeared naturally over time. But right now, they

had to focus on clearing past the Dark Paladins that were attacking the four persistently.

"I, Knight of Darkness Van Hawk, challenge anyone to a duel."

"The loyal servant of Embinyu, Derikda, accepts your challenge."

Van Hawk skillfully defeated the high ranked Dark Paladin! Weed was finally reaping the benefit of levelling up the Death Knight till now. Weed, Seo Yoon and Torido also pitched in, clearing off the other Dark Paladins approaching them.

Seo Yoon was fully awoken to her Berserker state. Her attack strength was beginning to increase greater than normal and her vitality barely dropped. She was killing off the monsters before they could approach Weed.

The four of them managed to break through the Dark Knights, but after them was a line of Cultists holding their weapons. Having already faced them before, the Cultists did not offer much of a challenge. But having been slowed down by the Dark Paladins, the main Embinyu army that torched the Serabourg Citadel had gotten closer.

The Cultists would most likely delay them further and with the Embinyu forces encroaching in, soon they would be completely boxed in with no way to escape.

"This is the same feeling as getting all 6 of your credit cards

declined.”

It was a situation that was stifling to breath in, with no way out in sight!

Weed looked at Van Hawk and Torido. Thanks to the experience they had following him around in dangerous regions, they fought well. Seeing that they were Undead, their tolerance to curses and poisons was high. Van Hawk had serious injuries due to his fight against the Dark Paladins, but he could still hold his ground.

Seo Yoon, in a show of strength, finished off the remaining Dark Paladins and Demons before they could come close. The Berserker’s ability caused her true offensive potential to awaken as she defeated strong enemies.

Weed with his Ice Troll traits to emit a cold aura to his surroundings, slowing down the enemy.

Due to the enemies low resistance to the cold, they are frozen.

Weed whirled his spear, crushing the frozen Cultists and turning a high number of them into grey light.

Curses became weaker over time so their current situation was not as severe. But the biggest problem was what they had to do next.

‘I can’t positively say that we can outpace the pursuit, no matter

how much we run. But then, if we slip away too early, the Embinyu Church army would become spiteful and target the refugees.'

They had to buy time, pull the Embinyu Church's attention continuously, and had to stay alive on top of everything else. There was nothing more vexing than this.

"I could have slept in during the weekdays. I could have dumped jajangmyeon and ganjajang into one bowl and ate to my heart's content. I could have watched television on the weekend and loafed my time away. Just my awful luck, and now I have to deal with this..."

*****

"Oohhhh!"

"Kahahahaha."

"Just like I told you. This is Weed we are talking about. Only Weed could have adventures like this!"

The tavern Bart was in was rowdy with merriment. The tavern was crowded with customers who forgot about their beer and appetizers and instead decided to watch Weeds adventure on the large crystal orb.

Of course, Bart was watching with the crowd.

‘How is this any fun to watch? They got scared of some monsters, went through some dungeon and now they seem to be escaping in a group.’

But after a small amount of time had passed…

‘Huh, this is a bit exciting, it strangely pulls you in. It’s nail biting how close the refugees are skating with death.’

And a moment after that, watching Weed with just one companion and his underlings going forward to act as bait.

‘Oh! Such a decision……’

The tavern became as quiet as a dead mouse. They watched the large crystal orb as if they were hypnotized, forgetting to even refill their beer. The crowd forgot about everything as they were swept up by the tension of watching Weed, Seo Yoon and his subordinates fleeing as the Embinyu army dogged their every steps.

Bart, having no knowledge or experience of the battle mechanics, could not gauge how well Weed fought. Besides the wolves, foxes and rabbits, he had no idea how strong other monsters were. He accepted, at face value of what he heard, the people’s praises for Weed’s greatness on the battlefield, of his prodigious skills, and his movements that no one could imitate.

He could just feel that Weed was planning something. The meeting he had with Weed was short, but he had come out with the impression that Weed was not someone who would jump in front of the whole army of the Embinyu Church without a plan.

“But, that woman wearing the mask next to him... She seems familiar... It couldn’t possibly be my daughter, could it?”

*****

“Torido, take the left.”

“Understood. Master!”

Torido called upon the Pure Blooded Vampire Clan. The vampires increased their levels as they attacked the Cultists. In a way, the Cultists were the best suited enemy for the Pure Blooded Vampire Clan as they had ‘pure’ blood.

The showdown between the Vampires and the Cultists was taking place everywhere. While there were also many Embinyu Priests, they tried to avoid the Vampires and only came after Weed. Killing Weed took priority before anything else.

Turning left, Torido was faced with a flowing river. This was the place where the Pyramid and the Lion Monstrosity stood towering over the landscape.

“Those who profane the Embinyu Church cannot escape!”

The Wyvern Knights joined in the pursuit, flying low to attack with their spears. And from afar, spells and arrows continued to rain down on them. The Embinyu army was getting closer and closer. From the other side of the Pyramid and the Lion Monstrosity were groups of Demons and Cultists, trapping them in.

They could no longer move freely, being completely encircled and isolated. The Embinyu forces were closing all possible escape routes. Because the Demons were so fast, they were too preoccupied beating back the Demons and Cultists to clear away from the Embinyu Church's encirclement.

'I failed to protect him again.'

Seo Yoon was prepared to fight till the end. No matter what happened, she decided to die first, fighting to protect Weed till the last moment.

"Don't stop now, climb."

Weed began to scale the Pyramid. As it was built as a Step Pyramid, Weed had little problem climbing up.

Seo Yoon had some doubts as going up was a dead end with very little advantage in terrain.

"Ah!"

Having had an epiphany, Seo Yoon climbed the Pyramid.

“We are vulnerable to the enemy’s spells and arrows up here.”

“Abandoning our escaping and choosing to fight till the end, it’s not bad Master.”

Torido and Van Hawk stepped onto the Pyramid’s stone and began climbing up.

The Demons, Cultists and soldiers of the Embinyu Church were still after them. They were harassed by the the Wyvern Knights with every step they climbed. But with Weed and Seo Yoon, who was awakened to her Berserker ability, the Wyvern Knights were not much of a hurdle. With a third of their numbers left, they were even more persistent in their attack.

Finally, Weed reached the capstone. It was the king’s tomb he built by pouring out his heart and soul. While he was the anointed lord of Morata now, before he was a vicious entrepreneur that tapped into his latent potential for business to ruthlessly exploit people without regret to build such an immense structure.

Seo Yoon, Van Hawk, and Torido arrived at the stones right below him.

“Impressive view.”

It was like looking from a mountain peak. Seeing from above, the Embinyu forces were swarming the area. The landscape was blackened by the Demons, Dark Paladins, Witch Doctors, Priests and Cultists crawling down below. Even the High Priest Belloni had left behind the flaming Citadel and was leading a personal force to the Pyramid.

“I guess with this, I managed to buy half the time I need.”

This was enough time for about two-thirds of the refugees to escape safely without any problems. But now with the old and the weak having to march the long distance, they refugees would move slower. Therefore, it was even more crucial for Weed to hold the Embinyu forces attention, now more than every.

"Release Sculpture Transformation."

Weed shifted from the body of an Ice Troll to his original form. He took off the leather armor he equipped temporarily and also put his spear into his backpack.

At this climax where Weed had to fight the most, he threw away the physically advantageous body of the Ice Troll! The players watching the broadcast wondered why. The viewers thought that in his rush, Weed made a tactical error and climbed up the Pyramid by mistake. Suspicion creeped up in the mind of the viewers, that perhaps, Weed already gave up.

“There is one advantage of living in a mountain town. No matter how much it rains, it’s safe!”

Weed took out a sculpture from his backpack. It was the Fine sculpture, ‘Heavy Rain and Flooding River’. The sculpture was carved out delicately from rocks and with Nature Sculpting, Weed carved rain and river water for the finishing of the Fine piece.

“Great Disaster Nature Sculpting!”

You have used the ‘Great Disaster Nature Sculpting’ skill.

Art stat decreased by 20 permanently.

20,000 health and mana has been consumed.

Every stat is reduced by 15% for the next four days.

Affinity to Nature decreased.

Great Disaster Nature Sculpting can only be used once per day.

When a great calamity is called upon, fame or notoriety can be increased depending on the damage.

You can die in the middle of the disaster so be careful.

Weed used the Great Disaster Nature Sculpting at 1,005 Affinity to Nature he had steadily accumulated till now.

“Well, I am sure we are high enough to avoid the disaster.”

Till now, having used the skill twice, he learned his painful lesson. The Great Disaster Nature Sculpting was the perfect skill to kill the user if not activated properly. Having completed his strenuous climb to the top of the Pyramid, he could now use the skill without any worry.

Dark clouds started to gather in the sky and burst with rain. It was as if someone punctured the sky, causing a sudden downpour.

The rain soaked Weed, Seo Yoon, Van Hawk, Torido and the Embinyu forces.

“It’s getting started.”

The rain continued without abating. Until the Great Disaster Nature Sculpting was fully active, the four of them had to fight off the Demons clambering on the Pyramid through the rough weather.

“The Embinyu god is waiting for sacrifices.”

“Climb! Show them the bravery of the Embinyu Church!”

Demons and Cultists were crowding around the Pyramid. Witch Doctors, Magicians and Embinyu Priests sent spell after spell.

Weed pulled out the Helium Torch he had sculpted. The Helium Torch erected a Mana Barrier that blocked long range attacks, casted tolerance limit against dark magic and curses on the user, and increased mana recovery.

“Radiant Sword!”

From Weed’s sword, birds made of light formed. The birds purifying the Demons and intercepting the spells mid-air exploded. Like the Berserker she was, Seo Yoon fought in front and center against the Demons.

Lights and magic exploded, bathing the top of the Pyramid in radiant glory. But to those holding the line at the highest point of the Pyramid, it was living hell.

Only 3~4 minutes in, Van Hawk was spent.

“Master. This is the end for me. I regret that I cannot fight with you to the end.”

Van Hawk, having reached the limits of his health, was unsummoned.

If Weed could have afforded the time, he might have bandaged Van Hawk and sent him to the rear. But there was just no opportunity to take his eye’s off the situation. Arrays of spells from the Embinyu Magicians were sent toward him and he barely could

dodge and block most with the Radiant Sword.

Magic Attack. You were hit by Nurun's Spear.

Health decreased by 869.

Weed's health fell below 34,000 and Seo Yoon was only staying afloat due to her Berserker endurance. Seo Yoon was heavily injured as she went forth against the Demons rushing for Weed and became target for curses and spells. She fought without a care for herself, delivering more attacks than Weed.

Rain beat down heavily, slightly weakening the spells and arrows and helping them endure a bit longer.

"At this rate, we are all going to die…."

Droplets of rain fell down from Weed's face. The Head Priest Belloni and his personal forces were coming within attack range of the Pyramid. Below, were the cries of Demons and Cultists as they stumbled on the wet surface of the Pyramid and falling on their own troops on the ground, causing the air to be filled with shrieks of agony.

Then, the disaster that Weed had been waiting for, finally started.

The place that the Pyramid and the Lion Monstrosity was built on was nearby the Rosenheim Kingdom's Arud River. The

Embinyu Church thinking that the heavy rain was just raising the river level slightly, began to notice that it was over flooding.

“Aarrg!”

“Water. Water is rushing towards us!”

Water began to overflow, expanding everywhere. Soon, the Cultists, Demons and the Priests ankles were submerged. The rising water level didn’t show signs of stopping as it began to rise even more quickly. From the upper reaches of the Arud River, a frightening amount of water rushed by. The lowlands covering the mountains, hills and the plains around the Pyramid began to flood.

Great Disaster Natural Sculpting. Great Flood!

Waves the size of a house, slammed into Embinyu forces.

Kueeik!

The violent waves toppled Karaclops with its strength. The masses of the Embinyu forces were scattered, each trying to look for a way to survive. But the whole vicinity was flooded with water.

The water level quickly rose passed the knees and engulfed the enemy. Buildings toppled and the siege weapons, rocks and, trees were wrecked and floated about. The previous roaring Embinyu Cultists and Demons drowned under the flood and were swept

away.

Weed grinned happily as he watched the proceedings.

“This really is the most satisfying sculpting skill.”

But, Weed was still uncertain about the damage the flood caused to the Embinyu army. He was certain that the relatively weak Cultists would have no hope of surviving the flood. The Cultists could even have been killed instantly when they were swept by the torrent.

However the powerful Demons, Dark Paladins and Dark Priests had high health and resistance. The probability of most of them surviving the flood was high.

With the Embinyu army in disarray and swept up by the flood, now was the chance!

Weed used his skill toward the Lion Monstrosity.

“Sculpture Life Bestowal!”

You have bestowed life upon a sculpture.

Based on your current Art stat of 2,281, this has been converted to 469 levels for the sculpture. As this is a brilliant Masterpiece level sculpture, the Lifeform receives an additional 10% level increase.

Four attributes are granted to the Lifeform. The attributes grade and abilities differ depending on the sculpture's appearance and quality. Stone Att. (100%), Fire Att. (80%), Art Att. (100%), Glory Att. (100%).

Stone Attributes grants special defense to the Lifeform.

Fire Attributes can be used to burn away the enemy.

The Lifeform has been granted immunity to all forms of curse spells.

The Lifeform has gained strong resistance against Dark Magic.

Through the Art Attributes the Lifeform has gained appreciation of sculptures and arts, granting additional 150% effects to work of arts. This includes the Lifeform itself and all nearby artworks.

Glory Attribute grants dignity and charisma to the Lifeform. When fighting with a large army, it will increase loyalty and morale of that army and the knights leadership skill will increase.

5,000 mana has been consumed.

Mastery of the skill increased. The required level and stats consumed during Life Bestowal has decreased by 20%.

Art stat has decreased by 6 permanently. The reduced stat can be recovered by sculpting or doing other art related projects.

Level has decreased by 2. Stats, in response, have decreased by 10 comparative with the levels that have been lost. The reduced stats will be recovered when level increases again.

Please take care of the sculpture you have bestowed life upon. If killed, you will have to bestow life once again. When the sculpture is completely destroyed, it can no longer be resurrected.

Weed's level was reduced to 405, and his Art stat was consumed. But the end results was the Lion Monstrosity of Rosenheim Kingdom coming to life.

"Graaar!"

The Lion Monstrosity woke up with a great howl.

"Gro-rol?!"

When it tried to step forward with it's front limbs, it slipped and flopped in the water that came up halfway to its body. It was a less than stellar first introduction, but it wasn't the first or second time Weed saw such acts from his sculptures.

"What is my name?"

The now living Lion Monstrosity stuck it's head toward Weed as it asked. The Lion Monstrosity was similar in size to the tall Pyramid. It's body was that of a lion but it's head was a close resemblance to the previous king Theodrin.

"Your name is Sphinx."

"It does not matter if my name is Sphinx. I have no plans to be loyal to a master who knows nothing of honor."

The Sphinx had a strong tendency to it's own identity and independence, and did not think highly of Weed as it's master.

Weed had no plans to fight such matters right now.

"Let's sort this problem out when we have time. Right now, we fight."

"The sea I desired."

The Sphinx gave a bellow as it jumped into the water. It crunched the Dark Priests being swept away by the fast torrent with it's mouth and crushed them with it's forelimbs.

"Destroy that lion!"

"The culprit Weed is over there. We must sacrifice Weed as an offering!"

The Embinyu Priests rode upon the swimming Demons. But some of them were swept away by the torrent or disappeared under whirlpools. The Embinyu Priests were in complete disarray and under the mercy of the overflowing river current.

The Sphinx, which was the same size as a large building, splashed around the river and preyed upon the Embinyu forces.

"Twenty. Twenty one. Twenty two."

Weed armed himself with the High Elf Yurika bow and shot at the floating Demons. Seo Yoon and Torido stabbed at the Demons clinging onto the Pyramid. The great flood was sweeping away the Embinyu forces.

Grooooar!

The stroke of lightnings briefly showed Weed's figure on top of the Pyramid. It showed the appearance of Weed, taking aim with his bow while being pelted by rain. Weed, fighting under the darkness with occasional light created an awesome scene.

Weed continuously shot arrows, this time changing his target to the Embinyu Priests. It was much more profitable to target the Priests which gave more experience than the harder to kill Demons. But the good times were quickly passing by.

The effect of the Great Disaster Nature Sculpting was slowly

receding and the rain was stopping. But the water level around the Pyramid was still rising and the torrents were becoming more violent.

“With this much, I have done what I could.”

Weed was not satisfied with the amount of Embinyu Priest he farmed but felt that it was time to leave. The number of Embinyu forces had decreased significantly due to the siege in Serabourg Citadel and the flood. But if they stayed here any longer, there was a real possibility that the remaining forces would engage themselves fully.

Even Seo Yoon was spent, as she fought against the Demons alone.

“We should have bought enough time for the refugees.”

It would take significant time for the Embinyu forces to reorganize themselve to chase after the refugees. A large number of Cultists and Demons were cast adrift to the lower reaches of the Arud River. Even if not many of them perished, the backwash was great.

In a war between Kingdoms, the Great Disaster Nature Sculpting would cause unimaginable havoc. The only small side effect was that the skill didn’t distinguish between enemies and allies.

“Sphinx, time to go.”

“I want to keep on fighting.”

“The enemies are reorganizing themselves. We need to escape now before it becomes impossible to escape.”

Head Priest Belloni and his personal forces, the giant Demons that were scattered by the flood. When the disaster ended, they would recover and come in full force. It was wise to hurry out of where they were, when considering the kind of enemies coming after them

“I do not wish to depart from this place.”

“Why?”

“I have to protect this place. I will protect king Theodrin’s tomb till the end.”

"....."

The Sphinx chose the Pyramid over life.

A side effect of bestowing life on a sculpture! When it was a sculpture, it was meantassigned to protect the Pyramid. It was the symbol of the king’s majesty. After being bestowed with life, the Lifeform did not forget it’s duty and had planned to fight the Embinyu forces till it’s last breath.

“You will die if you stay. This precious life you received, is it not a waste to throw it away?”

“There is a meaning behind protecting what you have to protect.”

“Even then, come with me. If you do, I will prepare meat for you everyday and give two days breaks every year.”

But of course, there was no way he would keepcould guarantee his promise!

“I have already chosen my path. Go, I will protect this place.”

At the Sphinx’s faithful declaration, Weed’s eyes became wrinkled and wet.

‘It’s good that the rain didn’t stop yet. It can hide my tears.’

The tears were definitely not because Weed was touched by the Sphinx’s words. His precious Art stat and level! Weed had invested his precious experience in bestowing life on the Sphinx and now due to its extreme stubbornness, it was planning to die fighting.

“I should have thought this out before bestowing life. I should have granted it life when I had plenty of time and then beat the education into him.”

It was too late to regret now. Staying here any longer to convince the Sphinx otherwise would put him and Seo Yoon in a dangerous situation.

“Wy-Three!”

Weed activated the Lion’s Roar. And a moments later, Wy-Three could be seen flying from afar. Wy-Three woke up at the crack of dawn without being able to wash his face so he could reach them.

When Weed and Seo Yoon got on Wy-Three’s back, the flood current was weakened. The Embinyu forces that were swept up in the flood could now touch the ground. The ground was a shamble with the half drowned Demons and Cultists.

The Embinyu Magicians and Priests began to ready their attack but the Sphinx protected them with it’s own body.

“Go now!”

Weed and Seo Yoon fled on the back of Wy-Three and Torido flew away from the battlefield with his own power. Looking from far, the Sphinx was fighting bravely but soon, it would be encircled by the Embinyu forces and would fight an uphill battle.

“It looks like he won’t make it.”

Trying to escape with a Sphinx that couldn't fly might have been impossible from the beginning. But thanks to the Sphinx, Weed could escape without any problems.

"Wy-Three, don't fly to the refugees. Rather, fly around and take a long detour."

"Understood, Master."

To prevent any possible pursuit, Weed commanded his Wyvern to take a detour before heading towards the refugees.

Pass the hills and slopes was an endless procession of refugees! Seeing Weed and Wy-Three above, the refugees cheered and waved their hands.

'Doesn't look like the Embinyu army gave a major chase.'

There were some attacks by the roaming monsters but that much could be handled by the players and the soldiers. After Weed left to bait the Embinyu Church, many players had already logged out. But still, a decent number of players stayed behind to disconnect from another area.

Weed continued to follow the refugees on Wy-Three's back.

"Here, I have some bandages. Roll back your sleeve a bit."

Weed wrapped bandages around Seo Yoon's arm, who was suffering the aftermath of the Berserker skill even after the battle had ended.

Following after them long after the sun had rose, the refugees at the forefront finally met up with the Rosenheim Kingdom's army. This was the army that was dispatched to Serabourg Citadel after detecting the signal fire.

'I can finally rest easy now.'

Weed logged out, after feeling a bit fatigued.

Chapter 5: Church Of Lugh

Shock swept through the Versailles Continent once more.

The burning of Serabourg Citadel. An incident where more than half of the players and the villagers perished within. Although the players could revive after receiving a penalty, the Citadel and its people were lost forever.

The siege of Serabourg Citadel

The exodus of the villagers, lead by Weed

Replays of the Royal Knights battling their foes

The great fire of Serabourg Citadel

And a mysterious sculpting skill that could summon a flood.

These videos were trending on the top throughout the day.

After the burning of Serabourg Citadel, the Embinyu forces scattered rather than facing the Rosenheim Kingdom's army straight on. Using this opportune moment, every region in Rosenheim Kingdom erupted with insurrection.

and in every region of Rosenheim Kingdom, insurrection

occurred.

“Even Rosenheim Kingdom is unstable now.”

Lee Hyun was eating his seafood noodles as he watched the television.

“This is the place where Serabourg Citadel once stood. The place has been burned to the ground and the only evidence that this place was once a Citadel are these remains of wreckage and rubble.”

“Mr. Oh Joo Wan, I just cannot believe that this place was once the flourishing capital of the Rosenheim Kingdom.”

“Yes, even I was surprised when I first saw this scene. Have you ever visited Rosenheim Kingdom before Miss. Aring?”

“Not yet. It has been a place where I dearly wished to visit at least once, but now it seems it will be impossible to see its previous grandeur.”

This was the aftermath of the fire of Serabourg Citadel that soared brightly into the sky. Before the flood quenched the fire. Only burnt outlines of buildings were left in the ruins of Serabourg Citadel.

Currently, Miss Shin Hye Min, the KMC media’s anchor was on leave so the new star anchor Aring was in her place.

“The players that have logged in after a week are standing in the square, looking around with a stupefied expression.”

The players who had logged out before the battle of Serabourg Citadel took place, logged in only now, after the army of the Embinyu Church had departed.

“I am currently in an interview with a merchant. How do you feel right now?”

“I don’t know. It’s just depressing.”

“The damages caused by the Embinyu Church seem significant, what will you do now?”

“Go to another place and continue my business there. It’s not the first time I have been ransacked.”

The merchant left, dragging his wagon behind him.

Afterwards, she interviewed several other players but the majority gave the same answer. Departing for another castle or Kingdom.

“Still, Mr. Oh Joo Wan, many players are claiming to have seen light of hope in Serabourg Citadel.”

“Yes, I am sure there are many viewers out there who have also seen it through the live broadcast.”

“You are right. It’s the person I want to meet the most, the person I want to go out with! Apparently it was thanks to him that many were saved.”

“It was a strange coincidence that Wargod Weed was in Serabourg Citadel. I thought he had left for the Red Reed Forest and was sidetracked as there were no news about him for sometime. But to my surprise he appeared in Serabourg Citadel and played a major role in the incident.”

“I heard that through this event, Weed’s popularity has risen higher.”

“This is nothing new. You can say that the viewers have more interest in Weed’s distinct progress compared to the other Rankers. Weed has this unique charm about him.”

“Kyaa! Yes, especially when he chwiks! He makes these adorable chwick sounds that make me swoon.”

“Weed was the vanguard for the streams of refugees fleeing from Serabourg Citadel. He literally fended off the Embinyu Church with just one party member. All of Rosenheim Kingdom are praising Weed, and through this incident the surviving players are using this opportunity to move to Morata.”

Lee Hyun felt embarrassed due to all the flattery about him on tv.

“It’s been a long time since I have been complimented. The last time was in primary school, when the teacher told me that with a little bit of effort I could improve my dictation after receiving 65%.”

Just now he received a public confession from Yu Aring. She was an idol singer and worked as a tv host as well. In Royal Road, she tried to increase her popularity by posing as an eye catching priest and she had just publicly declared to him to contact her.

Of course Lee Hyun wasn’t so naive and had no plans to contact her. There was a huge difference between what was real and imaginary. If she was really interested and what she said wasn’t a telescript, she could always use the station’s contact lists to phone him first.

“More importantly, I need to get out of Rosenheim Kingdom as fast as possible. You never know when the Hermes Guild could come after me.”

From the news he learned that the King had escaped safely with his Royal Knights. The King had already gathered an army and began the counterattack, also commanding the nobles to subdue the Embinyu Church.

The Kingdom was embroiled in a civil war, with most players choosing to side with the King. The event to save the Kingdom was the perfect opportunity to stack up Contribution Points.

“There is probably going to be a large scale battle against High Priest Belloni. Belloni hasn’t revealed his abilities yet, but he definitely won’t be a pushover.”

It was at the point that Lee Hyun almost finished eating his seafood noodles.

“And now, we will continue with our coverage of the Central Continent. Mr. Oh Joo Wan, apparently it was another great victory for the Hermes Guild?”

“Ah, yes. If it wasn’t for the appearance of the Embinyu Church in Rosenheim Kingdom, this would had been the first thing I should have told the viewers. The greatest guild in Versailles Continent, Hermes Guild! They have once again defeated the Kallamore Kingdom’s army.”

“What happened to the supreme commander Kolderim? ”

“The knight above all knights, Kolderim, had participated in the battle today as well. After suffering defeat from the previous battle, he barely managed to escape but..... ”

In the previous battle, Kolderim and his knights fought desperately, piercing through the Haven Kingdom’s encirclement and withdrew. The Hermes Guild players tried their best to block Kolderim’s escape, but he managed to escape by the skin of his teeth.

Overall Kallamore Kingdom could not manage to avoid its scheduled defeat with their repeated failures, reducing the army size to insignificant numbers.

"Regrettably, we might not be able to see Kolderim ever again. Bardray has won a one-to-one duel against Kolderim."

Several battles erupted daily in the war of Haven Kingdom against Kallamore Kingdom. They could not stand by and let Haven Kingdom conquer Kallamore Kingdom and Kolderim's fiefdom. Even though Kolderim lacked a sufficient force, he continually went forward to defend his Kingdom and barely managed to return alive.

In this battle, Kolderim was fatigued and seriously injured. In this state, he accepted Bardray's duel and was killed in action.

"We will now show you the duel of Bardray and Kolderim."

Lee Hyun watched closely. Kolderim had many serious wounds in difficult to see places while also suffering from negative effects from curses. On the opposite, Bardray had various blessings and looked as if he just woke up from a refreshing nap.

"Bardray probably had an energizing meal as well."

With the duel taking place with these unfair conditions, Bardray was the clear winner. Even then, just because it was Bardray, it did

not mean that Kolderim would have certainly lost. Even in this dire situation, Kolderim used his peerless skill to battle the enemy.

At the last moment when the winner was decided, Bardray put his sword by Kolderim's neck and showed one last mercy.

"Join Haven Kingdom. If you swear your allegiance to me, I will let you live."

Bardray wanted subordinates like Kolderim. But Kolderim rejected the offer.

"Do not insult a knight before you kill him. I came back from death so I do not fear it. I only regret my lacking ability to protect Kallamore Kingdom."

Such was the end of Kolderim. Even the tv hosts felt remorse at his passing.

"Such a regrettable death. There were many fans who liked Kolderim."

"Yes. But then, the damage done to Haven Kingdom by Kolderim isn't so insignificant. If you take that into account, it would have been difficult to let him live."

"Whenever Kolderim participated in battle, the soldiers and knights morale increased to maximum. Drawing out their best potential and allowing them to fight like the devil."

“It’s now impossible to see Kolderim once more on the battlefield. I predict that the Haven Kingdom will occupy more regions with greater ease.”

*****

The event of Spring in Korean University that would leave you disappointed if you missed it. The MT! Last Spring, Lee Hyun became quite famous and everyone, regardless of year, wanted to go with him. The place that was booked this year was said to surpass last years popularity.

“Sunbae, please take me along, please?”

“There are lot’s of ladies in my group, the Unnis said that they will not manage without Sunbae.”

There was a scramble in the various groups to make Lee Hyun join them. If one of the groups managed to land him, they would have no problem with meals, with sleeping arrangements and would have an advantage during sporting activities.

To Lee Hyun this was troublesome.

Though the place for MT was a secret, it would be an island or a mountainous location. He would need to take enough building material and just make a roof and lay down some blankets. The end. No matter the place, humans were more frightening than any

animals.

“If they really wanted to make MT hard, they should just make them carry bricks on a multistory building or sew eyes on dolls for 4 days.”

Lee Hyun would have to sweat a bit in MT, but ultimately it was more of a holiday. In the end, he thought it was a waste to go to MT yearly and decided not to go. Of course, he was also absent for the new student introduction ceremony!

“It’s not like they won in lotto and they have to pay expensive registration fee every year to attend. Why do they even hold these ceremonies?”

He also decided not to attend sports day.

“These days my heart isn’t so good, so running above my limit leaves me dizzy and faint.”

Even saying that, when he practised his sword, he put in all his effort that his whole body was covered in sweat.

Lee Hyun was a person that no one knew existed in lecture hall if they did not deliberately search for him. The only reason people found him easily was that Seo Yoon was always with him. This was a great speculation among the juniors.

“What’s so appealing about him? I just don’t know.”

“Maybe we don’t have eyes to see men properly.”

The female students were despondent about this issue.

This year, Lee Hyun applied for many liberal art classes on top of his major. Just because it was a university, there was no need to focus only on the major. Coffee making, politics, film studies, the age of the world. These were all subjects that did not link well, but after learning about them, it gave a strange, swelling feeling.

“This subject doesn’t check attendance regularly. I can skip this lecture later on and they did say it gives a lot of credit.”

Lee Hyun researched the various courses. It felt like the university did not offer subjects that were too difficult to learn.

“I shouldn’t attend university with no reason. Completing a teaching degree later on feels like a good plan.”

If Lee Hyun taught students in the future, the parents would bring in bribes naturally.

“Presents are devotion. Complete devotion.”

Lee Hyun had a small desire to become a teacher that would tell unabridged stories on life lesson.

*****

The place Weed connected to was Highland Fort. It was a safe haven he reached with the refugees and players that had escaped Serabourg Citadel.

“Welcome.”

“Weed-nim is here!”

The players that survived thanks to Weed, greeted him warmly. There were also many players that stayed in Highland Fort as they wanted to tour the fortress.

Weed was the most sought after person in Rosenheim Kingdom. An ordinary person would find it bothersome or awkward when a crowd surrounded him. But Weed acted naturally as he even shook some of their hands.

“I have arrived. Did everyone have a good rest?”

“Yeah!”

Some time in the future, he might have to ask for their participation in a large scale quest, sell sculptures expensively or scam them so Weed had to maintain his popularity. This was his outstanding talent as the high priest of hypocrisy! If Weed ever entered politics, he would completely abuse his position. And with Morata and Vargo Fortress growing daily, it was almost ripe for

harvest.

Weed hurried to the flower shop owner Selina to report his quest.

“I tried my best but I could not save everyone.”

The casualties were great for the villagers of Serabourg Citadel and not all villagers followed Weed. Some villagers chose to stay behind, believing the soldiers could protect them. Few were caught by the Embinyu Church as they were following Weed and were sacrificed. Some few were also taken as prisoners and were converted.

The villagers of Serabourg Citadel who followed Weed to Highland Fort were around 98,000.

“There were many deaths. I feel a heavy burden due to their death.”

“No, I must thank you for taking on such unreasonable request. I am sure the people who survived due your courage feel the same.”

“Thank goodness.”

“You have showed us unbelievable courage, determination, sacrifice and support as you led the refugees from Serabourg Citadel. Thanks to you, I believe many people were saved.”

DING!

Evacuation of the Civilians Completed

You have led the villagers, trapped in Serabourg Citadel by the Embinyu Church siege, to a safe haven. They will never forget this for the rest of their lives.

Fame increased by 10,236 due to the completion of the quest and your actions.

Courage increased by 9.

Honor increased by 21.

Charisma increased by 8.

Your level increased.

Your level increased.

Intimacy with the villagers that were rescued increased to maximum.

Selina unwound the flower bracelet and gave it to Weed.

“Please handle it carefully. Then the power of plants shall always be with you. ”

You have acquired Selina’s Flower Bracelet.

“Identify!”

Having finally acquired the item, Weed used identify straight away.

Selina’s Flower Bracelet Durability 18/20. Defense 19.

A flower bracelet gifted by a High Elf. The Roseum and the Anthurium are still alive. The flowers enjoy sunny places and require sufficient watering. When damaged the flowers can recover themselves and vitalize the wearer’s health and strength. This bracelet is made of two different flowers, if one dies so will the other.

Restriction:

Must be over level 450.

Option:

Power of Elements dwells within.

Mana +2,500.

Elemental Shaman skill +1.

Magic skill +1.

Archer skill +2.

Durability recovers by 3 everyday. Blacksmith skill has no effect on this item. If you have a good relationship with plants, in forests and grass fields, you can receive their help.

Affinity to Nature +7% .

Growth item. As the plant grows, it's effect will increase. The item's effect is amplified by three fold to the Elf or Fairy race.

"Awesome."

Weed was so happy that he wanted to dance a little jig right there. He could sell this to an Elemental Shaman, Mages or Archers and they would dump everything they had for a chance to buy the bracelet.

Also items that increased Affinity to Nature was especially hard to acquire.

“Disaster Nature Sculpting’s power will increase considerably!”

Careless use of the skill was virtually a suicidal move, but he would think about that later. Increasing the power of the disaster came first!

“I will give you plenty of water and sunshine so grow bigger everyday.”

He already equipped Baharan’s bracelet crafted from precious stones on his left arm. It was a treasure of the Niflheim Empire that increased magic abilities. He equipped the flower bracelet on his right arm and departed through the Highland Fort’s gate.

The bounty hunters instigated by Hermes Guild could strike anytime so he had to escape as quickly as possible.

“Is that person Weed?”

“Look at the equipment he's wearing. It’s amazing. It gives off a completely different feeling. It feels like he's wearing only unique items.”

“I’ve never seen such equipment on forums. He’s the War God so his equipment must be good.”

Players looked on as they followed after him.

Villagers were praising Weed's achievement everywhere, not only in Rosenheim Kingdom but all over the Eastern side of Versailles Continent.

The players entering the Fort were speaking.

"That guy, is he really Weed? Nevermind, he's really handsome. See Oppa, it was worth coming here."

"Daeun, he looks ordinary. Why are you…."

"……."

Couples could be seen fighting here and there.

In Royal Road, it was commonly accepted that equipment makes the man. Weed was wearing the Tallock's Faith armor together with his Demon Sword. On his head and feets were handmade helmets and boots. He finished off his ensemble with a swirling cape. He also had the Horn of Treserk hanging loosely on a thread around his neck. Weed looked dazzling just by standing still.

'With my looks it's difficult to live in this world.'

He usually didn't wear armor or weapons within villages, but since there were many people who recognized him already he decided to wear it just for the show.

“Wy-Three!”

As soon as Weed called, from the setting sun, a Wyvern was flying toward him with it wings wide open.

“Wow, a Wyvern is really coming.”

“That’s the Wyvern Weed usually rides on!”

The players became more ecstatic as Wy-Three landed in all its glory. Weed climbed on top of Wy-Three and prepared to leave.

“Wy-Three, let’s go to Morata.”

“Kiaaak!”

Wy-Three prepared for the long distance flight with a powerful liftoff. Wy-Three was so used to this that it did not even try to avoid it anymore. It could just think of this as a trip with his Master, separating the wind with their fast speed as they fly through watching the amazing scenery. When he arrived in Morata, he could relieve his troubles to his Wyvern brothers.

“Oh, I remember, Seo Yoon is coming tomorrow.”

“Kuek?”

“Come here tomorrow for her as well.”

“Kuek kuek kuek.”

Tears fell from Wy-Three’s eyes as he flew off in front of the Highland Fort’s gate.

*****

In the Red Reed Forest, the bounty hunters gathered to kill Weed were hunting by themselves.

“Damn, is Weed even coming.”

“Apparently, while we were waiting, he went to Rosenheim Kingdom. This was a complete waste of time and effort.”

The bounty hunters gathered about were composed of Warriors and Magicians. As there were no Priests among them, they could not help but suffer in the Red Reed Forest. The Hermes Guild’s Assassins were also spending their time contending with monsters. Even the additional reinforcements sent by the Guild were having a hard time with the herds of monsters in the forest.

“We just need to be patient for a bit longer. Weed finished his business in Rosenheim Kingdom so he must be coming here soon.”

“There is no other place for Weed to go to next. If we wait here,

we will definitely catch him.”

The Hermes Guild did not know when Weed would come, but they separated to their established spots to prepare for an ambush. They set up comprehensive traps and waited patiently to kill Weed.

The Red Reed Forest continued to attract mercenaries, bounty hunters and assassins. So much so, that the forest was overflowing with them.

Even now mercenaries, bounty hunters and assassins continued to flock toward Red Reef Forest.

*****

Vargo Fortress specialty, the monster rush!

“They are coming.”

“Deploy the archers!”

The starving monsters came at them from far away, kicking up dust clouds in their wake. But the soldiers of Vargo Fortress were trained and had actual battle experience. The 1,500 archers were deployed to the walls and fired their arrows toward the monsters.

Pu-shuuung!

The arrows only caused slight damage to the monsters. In terms of their level to the monsters, it made the soldiers of Vargo Fortress look feeble, making it impossible to cause large damage. If Weed was here, he would have wept bitter tears at the arrows they wasted.

“Prepare for the assault!”

The knights commanded the archers to continue their barrage while also deploying swordsmen up the walls.

The swordsmen began fighting every kind of monster that was scrambling up the wall. Cavalry was set as reserve, waiting, just in case the wall was breached.

Players also fought next to the Vargo Fortress army.

The Mages immediately prepared their attack spells when they saw the dust cloud the monsters were kicking up. They readied their spells in a safe place with plenty of time, increasing the power and the success rate of completing their casting. The Mages used magic attacks that were optimized for a wide area of effect.

‘This is the time to increase mastery and get more experience, who knows when I will get another chance like this? ’

The news of Vargo Fortress attracting monster swarms everyday was already spread widely, causing Mages to continually flock

toward the fortress. Not only were swarms of monsters assured to come everyday, they could also stack up Fame and Contribution in Vargo Fortress.

GYAAO!

Just before the swarms of monsters reached the wall, the few abnormal ones gave off a burst of speed and reached it first. But the monsters suddenly stopped and began to snarl at the wall.

On the wall were paintings of Barbarians, their natural enemies, holding spears. The painting gave off a sense of realism, making the monsters take the wall painting seriously.

Such scene could be seen occasionally elsewhere. Painting of steaming barbeque that monsters found mouth-watering were also drawn on the wall that was built in the middle of the wasteland. These painted walls became a focal point to the monsters.

The person responsible for all of this wall art was Petrov. His name was famous all over Vargo Fortress as a person who could paint masterpieces that could even make the monsters mistake it as being real.

“Attack!”

Arrows continued to rain down on the monsters while the Mages used their spells to eliminate the monsters that were staring vacantly. It was a victory for the soldiers and players fighting

valiantly behind the wall.

When monsters rushed in, some of the defenders would make a blunder and fall into a dangerous situation, but the soldiers and players protected each other. The players could earn a lot of experience points and experience, this was a rare situation. It was so good that every player who came to Vargo Fortress demanded to participate in the monster defence.

“Once again, an easy victory thanks to my paintings.”

Petrov could earn enormous amount of Contribution in Vargo Fortress due to this. But this was not the only thing Petrov did.

Country Snake, Cerberus, Worm and other Sculpture Lifeforms that were given life in Jigolaths were at Vargo Fortress. They came under the orders of Weed to protect the fortress and destroyed monster dens one by one far away. The Death Worm that acted in conjunction with the Knights to defeat the monsters. Petrov built up a friendship with these large sized Sculpture Lifeforms.

It happened one day when he was painting a new piece. The Death Worm that Weed named simply as Worm, popped up from the ground, observed and left. From that day, several other Sculpture Lifeforms came and introduced themselves.

“You are quite a friendly bunch. Let me draw something for you.”

Petrov sometimes drew for them or showed them the work he'd done till now, increasing his friendship. And as the Sculpture Lifeforms were birthed from art, they quite liked it as well.

"What an amazing talent."

"He's much better than our Master."

"You are right. Our Master gave us strange names and just abuses us. I am beginning to like this painter."

Petrov sought friendship with the 47 Sculpture Lifeforms, also buying them food every so often.

"Eat. I will bring some more if it's not enough."

"Nom nom. Delicious. It tastes like honey."

"Bring some more meat tomorrow, and also, I want to drink grape juice."

"I want to chew on some bones."

Petrov fulfilled all their wishes.

'Soon they will abandon Weed to follow me.'

*****

On his way to Morata, Weed gave a surprise visit to the place the King Hydra and the Black Imugi hunted at.

“You guys!”

Using his 9 heads interchangeably, the King Hydra was stampeding through the forest, hunting.

“Master.”

“Long time no see.”

With it’s 9 head ramrod straight, the King Hydra approached Weed. It’s mouth could swallow Weed whole in one gulp. The King Hydra stopped once it stood in front of Weed.

“Move, I was here first.”

“4th head, you ate more yesterday, remember?”

“Me! The Master likes me the most!”

King Hydras were ferocious monsters who were vicious and did not heed orders. That’s why it was difficult for Weed to handle the Hydra. It had a large body; did not listen to beating; and even

doing the utmost to persuade one head, it easily became corrupted by the sly tongue of the other heads.

The wisdom of ‘making sure not to meet the wrong kind of friends’ applied here as the King Hydra became crooked. Nothing could be done as from the beginning, all the heads were attached to one body.

Weed did not need to say anything, as he could clearly see the King Hydra’s belly protruding out.

‘This guy became a glutton.’

King Hydra’s personality was unscrupulous and sceptical that no amount of compliments would help it listen to Weed.

Weed frowned.

“Who told you to eat so much?”

“.....”

“You, did I not tell you not to hunt like that everyday?”

“4th head, I am talking to you. You better listen properly.”

“7th head I know it’s you.”

“From now when I am gone, make sure not to gorge yourself on monsters. They are also precious living beings.”

“I understand.”

“I will eat less from now on.”

The King Hydra acquiesced quickly.

But Weed knew.

‘When I am gone, they will hunt more diligently.’

Reverse psychology! When you tell them not to eat, they will want to eat even more!

“You, when I see you next time make sure you loose some fat.”

“I will try. But just breathing in air is making me fat.”

“We have 9 heads, even eating small morsels each will make us fat..... this is unfair.”

“I don’t care, make sure you lose the fat. Also, the purple tree, it’s dangerous so make sure not to get too close. At your level, you won’t manage. But I did hear the monsters there were really

scrumptious…”

“Really?”

“Are they that delicious?”

“It tastes heavenly. Once you start eating, you won’t even know if one of your head’s disappeared. One monster has a complex mix of 6 different flavors, its sweet, sour, spicy, hot… and what was the other two again? No matter, the taste is unbelievable. It’s something you need to try out rather than listening about it.”

Gulp!

Each of the nine head of the King Hydra was drooling at the thought.

Using this method to direct the King Hydra to it’s most suited hunting ground, Weed pretended to leave, intending to watch what would happen. The 9 heads murmured quietly among themselves and went hurriedly toward the forest with purple trees.

Weed found the Black Imugi bathing at the lake located on top of the mountain.

“How have you been?”

“I been doing great. I have been enjoying the life you have granted me to the fullest.”

“I heard you made a new lair…”

“It’s just a small hole in the ground.”

“Should I call Bingryong and Phoenix for a housewarming party today?”

“Master!”

Black Imugi, who treasured his lair above all in this world, gave a small amount of jewels to Weed to keep his lair a secret. Weed even took pocket change from Sculptures whom he bestowed life upon!

After completing his simple visits, Weed flew toward Morata. As he had no need to hide himself in Morata, he decided to fly straight there while riding on his Wyvern.

“I should use this chance to visit the Church of Lugh in Morata.”

The Sword of Lugh. He still had an errand to return the sword. Weed could have made a simple detour to return the sword while on his way from Vargo Fortress to Grapass Region. But he was reluctant to part with such precious sword.

*****

Church of Lugh. The Church was comparatively new in Morata, but it employed many Paladins and Priests. While it did not reach the height of the Freya Church's reign in Morata, it was gradually developing.

The Church of Lugh was one of the 5 major religions of the Continent. It was quite popular for it's application of light related holy magic. Church of Freya on the other hand, was more related to blessing harvest and birth. Freya Church also improved Charm and other such applications, having more holy magic that had no direct battle applications. Rather there were many people who chose the Freya Church as they became more handsome and appealing as their Faith increased.

Weed could see the many buildings he placed in Morata.

"The high buildings around the square are quite a sight."

He could just feel the enormous amount of rents and taxes coming from these buildings.

The panorama of Morata he saw as he descended toward the ground on the back of his Wyvern... Morata clearly had become a great city. Shanties covered the entire hill, the statue of Goddess Freya gave off a feeling of magnificence around the whole area, the elegantly built Art Gallery with its massive garden, the Lord's Black Castle, the Tower of Light located far on top of the rocky mountain.

And the streets were bustling with players. Many carriages were seen, pulled by cows and horses, carrying people and goods.

“A Wyvern is attacking!”

Someone cried out and everyone looked toward the sky. Then, they could see Weed riding on top his Wyvern, descending towards them.

“Lord Weed has arrived!”

RING RING RING RING!

The bell from the Black Castle began to ring as the news spread.

Weed couldn’t help but grin.

“These are definitely the perks of piling up goodwill. Such enthusiasm at my arrival….”

Weed was still far away, so he couldn’t hear what the players were saying.

“I have yet to see any city as good as Morata. But, maybe… you don’t think he has come to raise the taxes?”

“I was part of the expedition that fought the Undead Legion in

Vargo Fortress. With the lack of news, I thought he ran off with the Sword of Lugh... but he's here now."

"Are you stupid? There is no way Lord Weed would run off with the sword."

If Weed heard this conversation, part of him would be shaken by it. As he already considered the worst case scenario of running off with the sword and selling it! But seeing as there were no players with the qualification of using the sword, there was no chance getting away scott free if he sold it.

The players on the street were waving both arms, cheering Weed.

"The Lord returned!"

"Hurrah! Three Cheers for the Lord of Morata, Weed!"

Players were enthusiastic in their greetings!

As Weed flew over the shanties, players shouted in a loud voice.

"Grass Porridge! Grass Porridge!"

Villagers also gave courteous bows.

"Wy-Three, let's fly straight toward the Church of Lugh."

“Kwaeek!”

Tired from the long distant flight, Wyvern forced its wings to fly toward the Church of Lugh.

*****

“I have come to meet the Bishop.”

From the rooftop of the Church of Lugh, Weed called out to the Paladin below. Wy-Three had landed directly on top of the wide rooftop of the church.

“Oh, it’s the esteemed Lord of Morata. I shall lead you directly to the Bishop.”

The Paladins were polite and courteous. The effect of Fame applied strongly here as Morata was Weed’s territory and was the base for most of his adventures. Compared to other places far off, the effect of Fame was on another level.

Weed was escorted by the Paladin to the personal room of the Bishop within the church.

“Thanks to your leadership, Morata is growing daily.”

It was the first time meeting the Bishop.

“Not at all. It’s all thanks to the diligence of the villagers and the upstanding soldiers. I am fortunate by what little I could assist with.”

The humility was all lip service. After wetting his lips, Weed continued.

“I have visited many places as an adventurer that explores the unknown. Through this, I have something to report to the Church of Lugh.”

“Have you come to report a discovery? We welcome such reports. Where did the Lord return from?”

Weed could have reported this discovery at the Lord’s castle. But, to do so, Weed had to pay a compensation. Rather than paying money out of his own pocket, he decided to report the discovery at the Church of Lugh.

“I have returned from the land of Jigolaths, a land that has not been tread on by any man for long time.”

If he reported this to the Goddess of the Earth, Mine, he could have earned a bit more Contribution Points and Fame. But, through this the Church of Lugh in Morata would become bigger and so will the benefit for the city.

“Jigolaths? I find it difficult to believe that you have returned

from a land that is only found in legends and fables.”

“Here, this is the stone I have brought back from Jigolaths.”

Weed brought forth a piece of hardened lava for the Bishop to see. After the Bishop used his Holy Magic to observe the piece, he nodded his head.

“The light of Lugh shines on places on this continent that man has yet to reach. This piece of rock is definitely from Jigolaths. Congratulations on returning successfully from adventuring to the unknown.”

DING!

You have reported the discovery of the island, Jigolath to the Church of Lugh.

The Church of Lugh’s primary interest is their sacred duty to bring righteousness to the Continent. While Jigolaths is not a great interest for them, by increasing their enthusiasm for adventure they will reward you handsomely.

Fame increased by 850.

Your Contribution Points with the Church of Lugh has increased by 192.

You can check your Contribution Points with Churches under the Religion tab.

Total Contribution Points with Church of Lugh: 315.

Weed, as Lord, earned small amount of Contribution with the Church just by having them in Morata. As the population became larger, the number of trained soldiers increased, the monsters in the vicinity subdued, quests completed, Weed earned small amount of Contribution Points. This could be seen as a privilege of the Lord, but the Church of Lugh did not even pay for the land or pay any other taxes.

Even then as the churches provided Public Order, support of their Paladins, change of class and quest, every Lord thought of them to be important.

“And also, there are several other things I have discovered.”

Weed reported everything he discovered on his way to Jigolaths, the Sculptor’s Tower and the dungeons. He increased his Fame and Contribution Points by reporting about the mermaids, monsters and peculiar geographical features.

Faith increased by 9, Courage increased by 6, Strength and Agility increased by 2 each.

There were many other places he visited like Grapass, the Vampire Kingdom of Todeum, the River of Lamentation, but he

only reported on Jigolaths. This was because the Church would use the information, dispatching their Paladins and giving quest to other players to reclaim the land.

"There is a new dungeon that appeared near the vicinity of Morata. The Church of Lugh has assessed the situation to be highly dangerous. We are planning to dispatch our Paladins to wipe out most of the monsters and I was wondering if I could have the cooperation of Morata's soldiers in this operation."

Use your authority as Lord to command the soldiers to cooperate with the Church of Lugh to raid the dungeon?

Knights and soldiers will be dispatched and a quest will be created.

"Of course."

Weed even accepted their appeal. Morata's soldiers were not properly trained or were on a level to be useful. Through this investment into military power, the soldiers would be re-equipped and raid monsters as well.

"Truthfully, there is a special reason for coming to the Church of Lugh."

It was time for Weed to expose the most important reason of coming to the Church of Lugh. Weed's lips trembled with tension. By returning the Sword of Lugh, he knew it will be difficult to find

a better sword.

“Here, I have brought evidence of Lugh Church’s virtue and justice.”

From his backpack, Weed pulled out the Sword of Lugh and gave it to the Bishop.

Chapter 6: The Genesis Of Sculpting

“I have come to deliver the sword and tell you about the bravery of the people who fought and bled to rid the world of Balkan.”

“Oh, the God Sword! Never could I have imagined for such item to be returned to the church!”

The Bishop accepted the Sword of Lugh.

“I have heard tales of Balkan’s defeat. Warrior, you have achieved a great feat for the peace of the Continent.”

You have returned the Sword of Lugh.

The Church of Lugh made tremendous sacrifices in order to stop the King of the Undead, Balkan Demoph. Balkan’s body was ultimately pierced by the God Sword, successfully sealing off the nearly unlimited magical power of the Lich. In the end, Balkan was defeated by a group of warriors and the sword has now been returned into the hands of the church.

Fame increased by 1,700.

Friendship with the Church of Lugh is now at 32.

Your Contribution Points with the Church of Lugh increased by

1,950.

You can check your Contribution Points with Churches under the Religion tab.

Total Contribution Points with the Church of Lugh: 2,573.

By upholding such sacred act, Faith increased by 13.

At this very moment, the Priests and Paladins who fought with Weed against the Undead Legion experienced a change. Their Faith and Contribution Points with the Church of Lugh increased significantly. Although majority of

Morata's population were believers of Freya, the Priests that fought against the Undead Legion were made up of many denominations.

For the Priests and Paladins from the Church of Lugh, their increase in Faith was especially high. Even then, the increase of Faith to players from other denominations was not small either. Some Advanced Priests found their Faith increased by 30 and even Paladin's attack skill, which was based on Faith and Strength, increased slightly.

And of course, the Geomchis who played a vital role in the battle against the Undead Legion, had their Faith and Contribution also increased.

“Ara, Contribution Points increased.”

“What’s a Contribution Point?”

“Sa-hyung, could this be something bad?”

The Geomchis, who were gathered in Vargo Fortress eating meat, were bewildered by the message that suddenly popped up. In their midst, Geomchi127 who pretended to be educated, as he had a computer proficiency certificate, explained.

“If you have a lot of Contribution Points, you can go there and receive a free meal.”

“Oh, really?”

“Yes. I saw this before somewhere. If your Contribution Points are high, you can use them to get items and free meals.”

“Are you sure that a church would actually give meat?”

“I don’t think they even have beer.”

“Then this is completely useless, isn’t it?”

Even though their Contribution Points rose, the Geomchis could not find any use for it. Truthfully, the Geomchis, by accepting a

difficult quest, had increased their friendship with the NPCs and also had slightly raised their Achievements and Contribution Points.

“Geomchi3 Sa-hyung, what do we do with this Faith?”

“No. 8, does it help with battle?”

“No, not at all.”

“Then, that’s useless as well.”

For Warrior like Geomchis, Faith actually did not help them much at all. Warriors could apply to become guards for a temple. They could be part of temple’s subjugation force and fight monsters and receive quests. If Warriors had faith and were on a quest for the temple, in a very rare occasion a special blessing or a small miracle could happen. But overall, Faith was not important for them.

Faith could increase the resistance against curses, but like before, it was not by a large degree. Even for a Sculptor like Weed, he only gained a slight benefit from Faith while wearing parts of equipment or doing a religious quest. Unless the player was a Priest or a Paladin, Faith could not be used proactively.

“I got excited for nothing. Let’s just eat.”

“Yes, Sa-hyung.”

Starting from the residents of Morata, the people of Northern Continent spoke concurrently.

“The hero that defeated Balkan has returned to Sword of Lugh to the church today.”

“No matter how far and wide you search the continent, no one has undergone such amazing and mysterious adventures like the Lord of Morata.”

“I heard he accomplished every duty assigned to him.”

*****

The Bishop continued to speak.

“Lord, this patronage to the Church of Lugh, this monumental achievement shall be recorded in our annals forever.”

“I only followed what my conscience directed me to do. I do not know if this is the righteousness that people speak of, but I just could not turn a blind eye to Balkan, who believed might makes right. I did what I thought was right, without any thoughts of reward or glory.”

In truth, it was all brazen hypocritical words, but the Bishop ate up everything Weed told him.

“You have truly accomplished a great deed.”

Weed hoped there might be more, but nothing materialized. While he did play a critical role, many other players contributed to the quest as well, making it impossible for him to receive something exclusive for himself.

‘Looks like I need to be satisfied with the Contribution Points.’

But just the increase in Friendship with the Church of Lugh had a positive effect. Because Weed was the Lord of Morata, the Church of Lugh would dispatch greater number of Paladins and invest more into the city.

The Bishop passed his hands over the blackened spots on the sword.

“Unfortunately, the Sword of Lugh has been corrupted by Balkan’s magic.”

“I am truly sorry to hear that.”

“It’s not too late for us to lose hope. The divine power of the sword can be recovered in the land that dwells in calamity, Argoldia.”

Argoldia was one of the 10 Forbidden Regions on the Continent.

It was a desolate landscape of where it was impossible for even a blade of grass to grow. The Church of Lugh maintained a sanctum there but the Magicians of Dark Wood released Chimeras and monsters, making the region uninhabitable.

"Brave adventurer, the Church of Lugh is planning to lead an expedition to this sanctum with its finest Paladins and Priests. Will you not join them and lead them in the right direction?"

DING!

Become a Guide to the Sanctum

The Bishop of the Church of Lugh plans to send an expedition to Argoldia to restore the power of the sword.

Will you not become the guide through the treacherous rocky mountain path to the sanctum?

Because you can command the ever faithful Paladins and Priests, you will be primarily responsible for the failure of the expedition.

Difficulty: S.

Quest Restriction: Those who have murderer status or evil alignment cannot receive the quest. Requires Faith stat.

If the quest fails Faith will decrease, Friendship with Church of

Lugh will decline.

'Just my luck it's Argoldia…'

Jigolaths, Grapass, it felt like he had some kind of connection to the 10 Forbidden Regions. And on top of that, the extremely high difficulty rating!

"The door of suffering is opening automatically for me."

Weed shook his head.

"Unfortunately, I have an appointed duty I must take care of and cannot spare the time for this."

"Adventurer, restoring the God Sword is a crucial task!"

"If it's the Paladins of the Church of Lugh, suppressing the monsters should not be a difficult task for them."

Argoldia was vastly different compared to Grapass. It was located deeply within the mountain range in the Central Continent, with concentration of terrifying flying monsters. Although hunting was done once in awhile in Grapass, there was virtually no information on Argoldia.

Even then, if the Church sent its finest Paladins and Priest, an expedition to Argoldia was possible. It was only that Weed thought

doing the Sculpting Master Quest or trying to find the last sculpting secret legacy as more important.

“But Adventurer, I have heard of your reputation. I know for a fact there is no one who puts their faith in others like you. Are you really thinking of rejecting the position as the guide?”

“More than my duty to the Church of Lugh, there is work I have to accomplish for the peace of the whole Versailles. I must accomplish this task first.”

“Well, if it’s like that…. then there is nothing I can do. It’s not a task I can enforce but if you have a change of heart, please come and talk to me. ”

You have rejected the Quest.

Friendship with the Church of Lugh fallen by 7.

Your Contribution Points with Church of Lugh decreased by 149.

Faith decreased by 2.

*****

After Weed rejected the Bishop’s proposal, a quest was created by the Church of Lugh.

Expedition to Argoldia

After the demise of Balkan, the Sword of Lugh pierced into his chest has been returned to the Church.

But the power of the sword has been corrupted by the Lich's Dark Magic.

The Church of Lugh is looking for people to participate in the expedition lead personally by the Bishop with 80 Elite Paladins and 45 Elite Priests.

Those who are dependable will be presented a great mission by the Church of Lugh.

Difficulty: A

Quest Restriction: Those who have murderer status or evil alignment cannot receive the quest.

The difficulty decreased by a rank and the expedition to Argoldia was opened up to the players in Morata.

"Wow... it's unbelievable."

"Just imagine succeeding the quest."

“This is like a real adventure. Not only that, it’s in one of 10 Forbidden Region, Argoldia.”

“This will definitely be covered by the news network.”

The players who started in Morata were envious as they could not participate in the expedition. Majority of them were still beginners so only players who had crossed over from the Central Continent could participate.

“Do you know any who accepted this quest?”

“Don’t know. But I heard the high level players who are in dungeons and hunting grounds are coming back in large numbers.”

“I just saw Spencer entering the Lugh Church to sign up for the expeditionary force.”

One of the most brilliant adventurer in Royal Road, Spencer! He was one of the first to come to Northern Continent. He based himself in Morata and also showed off his excavations once in awhile.

As the rumor of him accepting this quest was spread widely between the players, the number of knights and warriors accepting the quest exploded. The players could receive support from the Priests and even in the case the quest failed, the expedition would only deepen their connection to the Church of Lugh so there were

quite a few players who thought positively about the quest.

*****

Weed left the Church of Lugh and entered the Sculptor's Guild in Morata.

On streets leading to the Bull Square, variety of Guilds were built based on the services that players required the most.

"I heard that Weed-nim returned today. Do you want to go have a look?"

"You can't. We can't delay our schedule on the exhibition of clay pieces for the coming festival."

Other than the citywide, official festivals, there were many festivals planned by players themselves. The Merchant Association that held business on the different Squares hosted the festival on the appointed dates.

At these festivals, the Bards performed at the amphitheater and the players with Art classes held exhibition of their works. The cooks came out to the streets and sold food cheaply, with the favorite being the grass porridge boiled with beef.

Morata was a city with uncountable joys! The players weren't overburdened by heavy taxes. The city followed proper planning and just staying in the rapidly developing city was fun. Recently,

fairies came to play in the city and pulled the player's attentions.

The players who had just begun Royal Road and haven't even left the city yet, experienced the fun that was to be had in the city. Because of this, later on when they had to chose a class, the beginners chose to become merchants or related art classes rather than classes related to battle or adventures that would take them out of the city.

"Whew. Looks like another all-nighter."

"Let's work hard and go for a beer afterwards."

"Sure. With deer barbeque on the side."

For the anniversary festival of the erection of the Goddess statue, the sculptors planned an exhibition by making clay sculptures of Weed. Even a single theme of Weed had variety of topics. Orc Karichwi, Undead and the Ice Troll that made a huge impact in the recent event in Rosenheim. As Bingryong and Wyvern were extremely popular sculptures, they were added to some of the works.

Conversation among the sculptors could be heard.

"Weed is kind of amazing."

"You mean a sculptor that can accomplish great adventures?"

“No, I mean look how much work there is for us. How does he make most of his sculptures alone?”

“It’s Art. It’s because of his burning passion and focus for Art that allows him to do so.”

Weed was a master at doing menial work most efficiently! If it wasn’t for the discipline that was tempered by doing drudgery and sewing buttons in real life, most of his sculptures in Royal Road wouldn’t have been born.

There were sculptures of Weed in his human form as well, with its equipment having close resemblance to the real thing. While the minute details of Weed’s face weren’t known, the attire he wore could cause heat waves among the players.

“This isn’t well made. Looks like it’s a bit shorter than me.”

Weed passed by the sculptures nitpicking the details. But truthfully the sculptures were so tall that their head parts couldn’t even be seen.

“Ah?”

“No way……”

Weed approached the instructor while he walked among the

sculptures that were spitting images of himself.

“Isn’t that Weed-nim?”

“It’s Weed-nim! He must have some business with the Sculptor’s Guild.”

The sculptors who were queuing up for their turn opened up a path for Weed. It was like the Red Sea opening up a way for him.

‘According to the rumors, he's quite eccentric.’

‘In the Continent of Magic you never knew when his temper would erupt.’

The power and authority of a Lord! If Weed truly was a good and kind person, he would have waited for his turn. But convenience was on the better part than discretion so he walked up to the instructor.

“Greetings to Weed-nim, establisher of the path for all sculptors.”

The instructor gave a respectful bow. Even this happened because it was Morata.

Weed opened his mouth to speak out the promised phrase. It was a phrase written in the Sculptor’s primer. It were the words that

could only be spoken by a Sculptor who wanted to ascend to the top.

“I have made radiant sculptures. Now, I want to attempt a legend.”

*****

Forums that posted about Royal Road were soon swarming.

Thread: Weed is attempting the Sculptor’s Master Quest.

The quest has been started at Morata Sculptor’s Guild.

At once, comments began to steam in. In mere minutes, several thousands of replies were posted.

No way! Who could possibly be doing a class mastery? And on top, it’s sculpting.

If it’s Weed, it’s possible.

Even the fast rising Horse riding skill is hard to master. But mastering the sculpting skill that’s famous for it’s devilish slow mastery? Are you playing Royal Road for the first time?

Horse riding is easy to level up? Did you at least manage to get to

Advance level yet? At that level, you can skip through rivers on horseback and your horse rides like the wind.

Weed is making another miracle.

Is this for real? Is this a lie? A joke?

I just barely managed to raise my Sculpting Skill to Beginner level 5.... but this, seriously!?!

In the broadcast program on Royal Road, 'The Stories of Versailles Continent', had mentioned about class mastery once before. The program said the Class Master quest could lead the player to do something for the Continent and there were some connections between each Race's quest, but no one knew what direction it would take.

Unicorn Corporation, who were extremely reluctant to disclose any information about Royal Road, only revealed one additional information.

Whatever class it is, the very first Master Quest will be a bit more special. You will be able to earn great rewards and it will be slightly more difficult.

To do the very first Master Quest, players competed against each other to increase their skill level. But there were only a rare few that continued to play sorely to increase their skill level. After a certain point of hiding their skills, the players either created guilds

or entered one and then created a struggle for power.

Some died trying to increase their skill mastery by wandering battlefields or fighting and some gave up depressed after their skill mastery stopped to increase.

Representing anyones class by doing a Master Quest was a great glory, which lead the player to step into the unknown.

*****

The Red Reef Forest.

A great commotion erupted among the bounty hunters and players of Hermes Guild who were preparing an ambush. They were the ones who were wondering and waiting for Weed to come.

‘To go somewhere completely different. Why did he go to Rosenheim Kingdom...?’

‘The only place he can go next is here. Weed will surely come here.’

‘He’s in Morata? His next destination must be here.’

Even a lover wouldn’t have waited this nervously.

The Red Reef Forest was a dangerous place and hunting monsters was also very difficult. They had waited a very long time for Weed and now he was going off on a Sculpting Mastery Quest?!? This meant it was truly hopeless to even predict when Weed would come here now.

“No!”

“Listen, let’s just go back to the Central Continent.”

“I should have never left home, this was a colossal waste of time and suffering.”

Most of the bounty hunters, frustrated by the setback, decided to go their separate ways. The players from Hermes Guild were also at a loss. They came here after being tasked by the Guild and could not return empty handed.

“Can’t he hurry up?”

“Is he coming or not? If he’s not coming, he should just say so!”

As Weed never made any definite promise of coming to the Red Reef Forest, they could not really argue about it.

*****

Weed was slightly confident about doing the Sculpting Master

Quest.

‘No matter what type of quest it is, there shouldn’t be any major problems.’

He was a jack of all trades, whether it was battle or adventure, he was confident he could succeed in whatever task Royal Road threw at him! He already collected 5 secret sculpting legacies, the Master Quest itself didn’t feel like it would be extremely difficult.

It was merely that his Sculpting Skill was stuck at Advance level 8, clearing the minimum level requirement to receive the quest. On the quest, he would need to focus everything on increasing his sculpting skill mastery.

“Then I will tell you the old legend that has been passed on between sculptors.”

The instructor began to speak. As this would become a personal quest, Weed opened his ears and the sculptors in the guild listened in, curious about the quest.

“It was before sculpting skill was developed as an art form, as culture. This was when the monsters covered the whole continent. No matter the race, Human, Elves, Orcs, Dwarves or Barbarians, they were devoured by monsters.”

In front of Weed appeared a video only he could see.

It was even before Geihar Von Arpen unified the Continent. The gods created the Versailles Continent and soon after the various races began to appear. It was still an uncivilized era where Humans, Elves, Dwarves and Orcs had to unify their strength.

Humans stood guard against monsters, Elves cultivated crops and produced food and the Dwarves mined caves and sharpened stones for the Orcs to use as weapons. With the Orcs' fertility, Humans' leadership, Elves' green thumb and Dwarves' talent for creating items, the four races managed to survive. The four races lived in harmony within the cave and together they developed law and culture.

After the video ended, the instructor continued:

"It was said that at this moment, the very first sculpting skill was born. It's a difficult tale to believe, but this legend has been passed on by the long lived elves who have exceptional memory. I think, perhaps the Elven Elder Randelia might know more about the oldest sculpture ever created."

DING!

The Genesis of Sculpting

The sculpting skill that was invented when the races just began to work with sands and stone.

As this is contrary to the history of the four races, investigate the

truth about the very first sculpting technique.

Difficulty: Sculpting Master Quest.

Quest Restriction: Sculpting skill must be at Advance Level 8.

Must have friendly relation with the Elves.

If another sculptor did the Master Quest before him, Weed would have a reference to work with. Although Weed did not have any information to work with, he thought it was better to struggle rather than following a guide written by other people.

“Then, I shall go meet her and find out.”

You have accepted the Quest.

*****

Hermes Guild obtained information that Weed was on his way to meet the Elven Elder Randelia.

“Weed is attempting his Master Quest?”

The Hermes Guild had already conquered two-third of Kallamore Kingdom. It was a blitzkrieg that gave no chance for the other famous guilds to take advantage of. It was worthy of its name as

the greatest Kingdom on the Continent.

Hermes Guild was trying to become an empire, but also leaving Weed alone to do his Master Quest rubbed them the wrong way.

“We have to stop Weed. We should dispatch troops immediately.”

“We must stop him at all cost, even if we have to turn the Elven village into wasteland.”

It was decided in a meeting between Lafaye and his close associates that Hermes Guild would send an attack force. The Elven Elder Randelia was known to live in a small village within the Forest of Life. They decided to stop Weed’s quest even if they had to attack the place.

“I give permission to kill all the elves if you must.”

In hindsight the Hermes Guild should have been a bit more patient. But right now they considered every method in order to stop Weed. They knew that public interest on the Sculpting Master Quest was high, but Hermes Guild did not even bat an eye on public opinion.

*****

Immediately after leaving the Sculptor’s Guild, Weed met up with Yurin. He planned to travel directly to the Elven village or

somewhere close by with the Picture Teleportation skill. Even after all this time Yurin's level was still at 80, but that was because she spent most of her time in Royal Road wandering around famous resorts and doing sightseeing.

"I've been to that village before as I heard they had the most delicious fruits. The village entrance is fine, right?"

"Yup."

Yurin began to sketch the village from her memory. It was a sight to behold; her long hair let down with a charcoal pencil in her hand as she sketched the picture.

Even commonly beautiful celebrities had some flaws in their beauty. They could be short or their chest flat, fingers or legs could be thick, too. There were always one or two flaws in their beauty.

But at every angle or any view it was impossible to find a flaw within Seo Yoon's beauty. Observing her silently for an hour would reveal another, newer aspect of her beauty. Even after all the sculptures of Seo Yoon he has carved, this aspect about her allowed Weed to attempt something new every time. Even Seo Yoon's voice and the atmosphere around her was beautiful in and of itself!

Looking at his sister, Yurin did not lack of beauty.

'It's a shame that she is my sister.'

Excluding the poor situation at home, his sister could only be popular with the guys.

Weed spoke in a sober voice.

“You are coming home late these days.”

“I am studying late at the library.”

“Last month the cellular bill was a quite high.”

“I borrowed it to a friend for a bit and that’s what happened.”

Shashak

Yurin retorted while she was sketching

“Few days ago, I saw you putting make up before leaving.”

“I was curious how it felt with make up.”

“You were wearing a skirt yesterday…”

“It would be a waste not to wear what I have.”

Sha Sha Sha Sha Shak

Yurin’s sketching speed became even faster. While she did draw many pictures till now, it was the first time she drew this fast. But it couldn’t be helped because once Weed started lecturing, it would go on for an hour or two. The only way to avoid it was to to draw as fast as possible and escape…….

The picture of the Elven village was completed in a blink of an eye.

“We are going now! Picture Teleportation!”

The moment Yurin activated her skill, the picture began rippling like water. The picture shook more violently as the distance increased.

Then, Yurin drew herself and Weed standing by the Elven village.

Chapter 7: The History Of The Four Races

The Pavroa village was located on the outskirt of the Forest of Life. The village drew in many tourists for its famous fruits.

“It feels like we came here for a nature walk..”

“Honey, this place feels much better than our honeymoon resort.”

There were many couples holding their hands throughout the forest. Light filtering through the gaps on the towering treetops, small forest critters running about the forest floor, all contributed in creating a charming vacation spot.

Rabbits, deers and foxes roamed around, drinking from the stream close to the village. The animals did not flee even when people approached them. Dangerous beasts like lions or bears acted tamely to receive something to eat. Because this was the village of the elves, hunting of animals was prohibited. Some time had passed under this edict, so man and animals could live in harmony.

Suddenly at the entrance of Pavroa village, Weed and Yurin appeared in a wavering manner.

“Hmm, there are so many things to eat here.”

Weed concluded simply after seeing all the animals roaming about. Yurin nodded next to him.

“Oppa, there is so much we could eat here when we are hungry.”

“I already ate, but I am becoming hungry again.”

They only saw the animals as food. Ignoring their hunger, Weed and Yurin entered the Elven Village. In the village under the tree numerous Elves could be seen patrolling. There was a Elven weapon shop, a restaurant specializing in their famous fruits and even a guest house built atop a tree.

If he came to the village when he just started, Weed would have had a great interest in the weapon and armor shop, but now he went directly to Randelia. Through his Blacksmithing Skill, Weed could use Elven weapons. But in truth, trying to find a good weapon in a store was next to impossible. Of course, there were rare items in the shop, but none of them were decent enough for Weed’s level. Moreover, as this village was a popular travel destination, this place was a tourist trap!

“I have come here to learn about the oldest sculpture in existence.”

The Elven Elder Randelia was sitting at the village center by the pond. True to her Elven heritage, she had long hair with an appearance that belied her true age.

“Oh, I am visited by a human sculptor. I have heard of you, Lord of Morata. Of your fairness to the Elves, a great love for the arts and protecting the peace of the Continent through your adventures.”

Because of the various quests Weed accomplished, the Elven Elder Randelia was quite hospitable to his approach.

“Yes. My Path of Art has lead me here to obtain knowledge from the Elves.”

“The oldest sculpture, the creation of the very first sculpture is a tale passed on between the Elves. The humans, with their proficiency of record keeping, did not leave behind any history. The Orcs, with their short lives, could not tell its tale. The forgotten memories of the Dwarves, who live for their passion. There is no reliable evidence of this. Do you still wish to hear it?”

“Yes.”

“It was a time when the four races lived together in a cave. It was said that many sculptures were made then.”

Again, a video began to play in front of Weed.

It was the early days of the Continent, when monsters roamed around with impunity. The harvests of the four races were instantly pilfered. Without any recourse, they settled deeply in the cave, living their days in hiding.

The Dwarves with their prodigious abilities in burrowing the ground, created a network of caves to handle the monsters threat and the races continued to survive due to the Orcs. Who, as competent warriors, withstood the world filled with the violent, incommunicable monsters.

“Gyhaaa.”

It was a period before even the language of the humans began to take form. But, as the four races combined their strength, their number began to slowly increase and they learned how to fight against the monsters.

The Orcs were impressive soldiers, who did not back down against any monster. They saw it as their duty to sacrifice themselves for the continued survival of the Elves, Dwarves and Humans.

Eventually, they managed to leave their cave and establish a city close to a river. It was Versailles Continents’ very first city and it was called ‘Ratzeburg’.

You have acquired information on the origin of the Ancient Civilization of Versailles Continent.

Knowledge increased by 15.

‘Ratzeburg.....’

This was a story that was never recorded in the annals of the Versailles Continent, because records were only kept after the Kingdoms were established.

The image of Ratzburg was shown in front of Weed. Surrounding the city was a firm, wooden barricade created by the Dwarves. Inside the city, were houses made of mud and stone strewn about. Elves sometimes slept atop trees, and a vast difference in size could be seen just by glancing at the entrance of a Dwarf's or an Orc's house.

Flocks of birds could be seen flying above the wide plains that were filled with harvests and fruit trees, with the sparkling river that ran leisurely next to the city.

DING!

'The Genesis of Sculpting' has been completed.

The Elves had passed on a tale from generation to generation about the cooperation between the four races and the sculptures. Perhaps now you can assume some semblance of truth concerning the very first sculpting skill.

Quest Reward: You can receive your reward from the Elven Elder, Randelia.

While Weed completed his quest, he was not in the least happy.

The Sculpting Master Quest did not simply end here, but continued on as a chain quest. The Elf Randelia continued to speak.

"Although our race is long lived, there is still a limit to oral tradition. Right now, the sculptures they spoke of, the location of the city that the four races lived in, are all unknown."

"I assume so."

The Continent was rife with the perpetual rise and fall of Human Kingdoms. The races migrated depending on the movement of the monsters, and even a dense forest could be changed into a great plain over time. The age of the Versailles Continent was 10 million years since its creation!

The birth of each race and the monsters were way after nature established itself, even then, it was still in the darkest, unrecorded part of history. Since then, tens of thousands of villages perished due to monsters and each race had migrated to their own secure territory. It were merely thousands of years since the current composition of the Continent was established.

"I believe only a sculptor, who can create from the impossible imagination, can find the location of Ratzeburg. You, the human sculptor, you who walks the resplendent Path of Art, will you not go and uncover, if us the Elves, have been speaking the truth about Ratzeburg?"

DING!

City of Ratzeburg

Purported to be the city where four races lived in harmony.

Presently, the city cannot be found anywhere.

Go and discover Ratzeburg!

Difficulty: Sculpting Master Quest

Quest Restriction:

Minimum Advance Level 8 Sculpting Skill

Requires Sculptural Memories Skill

Continuation of the Sculpting Master Quest!

Weed replied with confidence.

“Even I believe that Ratzburg existed. I shall go and discover more about the city where the four races lived in harmony.”

You have accepted the Quest.

And then, Weed glimpsed at Randelia speculatively. He was wondering what kind of reward he would receive for the quest.

‘It would be brilliant if it was an Elf Bow. It doesn’t have to be a bow, even an Elven item that raises elemental power is fine. Or even something with Affinity to Nature wouldn’t be bad.’

Any Elven item was considered valuable. The players who chose to play as Elves, rather than Humans, received a huge disadvantage due to this. There were only few Elven blacksmiths in each Elven village, and while hunting, very few Elven equipment dropped. And when it did drop, it was usually the basic equipment that were used by the beginner Elven players. This was why, great effort was required in acquiring Elven equipments. It was with that the Elves were good with basic physical abilities and were experts in Magic, Elemental Powers and Archery, so required light leather armor for mobility.

At last, the Elf Randelia opened her mouth again to speak and the reward for the first quest was…….!

“If you go to the house I live in, there are many fruit trees on my backyard. It will be impossible for me to eat them all, so please take as many as you like.”

You can now harvest fruits from the tree in Randelia’s backyard.

"Huk!"

Weed's expression turned gruesome. It was like going to a rich friend's house and only receiving ramen! Without eggs even!

"Thank you. This is quite fortunate as I was craving for some fruits recently."

"Then I pray that you will become a great sculptor. As us Elves do not have any more information about Ratzeburg, please feel free to quit this unreasonable task anytime you wish."

You can give up this quest.

If you give up this quest, your friendship with Elf Randelia will drop and you will have to restart the Sculpting Master Quest from the beginning.

Rather than wasting time, unable to solve the quest, the game gave the option to give up at this point.

*****

Weed went to Randelia's backyard with Yurin.

There were apples, pears, oranges, figs, pomegranates, chestnuts, apricots, Jujube and Elven fruits. On the vast variety of trees, fruits could be seen hanging on it's branches.

"Those look good."

“Oppa, fruits are expensive these days.”

“That’s why we need to take everything, without leaving a single fruit behind.”

Compared to players who just took a small nibble for a taste before heading out for the next quest, they were different.

“Shake as hard as you can!”

They picked up every fruit that fell. As they laid down fabrics below the trees, they swept up the fruits into their backpacks without worrying about the fruits bruising. The two even filled up the extra backpack they carried around and soon, the trees Randelia was cultivating was bereft of even a single fruit.

Weed spoke as he took a bite out of a ripe apple .

“Then let’s head out to Ratzeburg now.”

As no clues has been given, the situation could only be described as hopeless. The chances were high that even asking the Elves or Dwarves would yield no results. But Weed watched the video on Ratzeburg. He could use that as the clue to find the location.

“The last thing that would change due to time, is the river and the rock types.”

He saw clearly the types of rocks used as materials for the houses. With his sculpting skill, Weed had experience in carving all types of rocks throughout the Continent.

“Well, I can approximate the scope of the location at least.”

Rocks and river, birds and a wide plain, putting these variables into his calculation, Weed could approximate the location more precisely.

“I need to calculate a bit more for a pinpoint location….”

He needed to gather more information to process everything. As Weed hesitated, unable to pinpoint his next destination, Yurin spoke.

“Then should we return to Morata?”

“Not really, we came from Morata so… Let’s go to Vargo Fortress. Pale, Master and Sahyung are there eating together so let’s visit them.”

“Okay, then I will start drawing.”

Shasak

Vargo Fortress was drawn with precision and beauty. With the

Fortress changing and developed rapidly, there was no need to draw it precisely to its present shape. It was as if Yurin was flaunting her skill, built on the experience of countless drawings, as she was sketching a first-rate picture.

“But didn’t you say you were studying at the library a few days ago? I tried to deliver your lunch box, but I couldn’t see you there.”

Shashashasak

Yurin’s sketching speed increased once again.

*****

Petrov became a celebrity within Vargo Fortress, where almost everyone in the vicinity recognized him.

He was known as the Painter, whose paintings were only second to reality and could confuse monsters. While he was not widely known, it was only a matter of time till he would be known as the greatest Painter on the Continent. His fame was to the extent that there were tv coverages of his paintings, with masterpieces plastered on various walls and buildings.

“This new building we are trying to construct… we want to draw a painting on it’s side, do you have the time?”

“Hmm, with the current placement, I don’t believe my painting will make it look better..”

“Then please let us hear your opinion. We will adapt our plans immediately.”

The planners working on the restoration of Vargo Fortress eagerly sought out Petrov’s paintings.

Petrov was the Painter that was rising like the morning star.

Vargo Fortress Influence

Lord Weed: 43,198.

Aqualight Painter Petrov: 3,239.

Petrov’s aim to surpass Weed’s influence in Vargo Fortress was still very far off. Weed had gone through a fierce war against the Undead Legion to recover the region, and commanded extremely loyal residents and soldiers. To surpass and take over territory in a short period of time from the current Lord was by no means an easy feat. It did not help that there were only few residents in Vargo Fortress that enjoyed arts and culture, slowing the rise of his influence even further.

“If it was easy, it wouldn’t be fun. But in the end, my will will be done.”

But as Petrov’s painting covered important parts of Vargo

Fortress, that day would come. Even now it sent a shiver of delight that the Painter Petrov, not the Sculptor Weed, was spoken of first when the players of Vargo Fortress spoke of art.

“Eat as much as you want.”

“Wof Wof!”

He gave food, clothing and even bought houses for the Sculptural Lifeforms. The watchdog of Hades, the great Cerberus, wagged its tail like a cute puppy whenever it stood before Petrov. Even the Fairies that played around in Vargo Fortress came to praise his skill.

- You draw really well!

- Can you see me? Gyaaru.

- Draw me! Draw me! Quickly!

The Fairies would sit on his shoulders or mischievously pull on his hat.

“Truly my skills work anywhere. Well, it’s a sure thing, so there really isn’t anything to be especially happy about.”

Nothing could impede Petrov’s progress in Vargo Fortress.

The Fairies responded positively to his drawings of them. With their ability to manipulate space, the Fairies surprised him by entering his painting and played hide and seek. The high level players even queued up to commission a painting from him. When he revealed the next location of his painting, thousands came to watch. He reigned as a Painter, controlling the crowd.

Right at the moment when Petrov was becoming elated with his success, some people approached him, asking for a drawing. It were three tough looking guys.

“I heard you draw well, I will give you 20 gold so won’t you draw the three of us?”

Petrov was about to scoff at them.

‘Who would so brazenly approach me and demand to draw them a portrait?’

And they were offering a paltry 20 gold! These three must have heard the rumors wrong. For a novice Painter, this would have been a great commission. But for Petrov, it was several hundreds of gold too short for him to accept.

It was just a moment before Petrov was about to rebuke them for speaking such preposterous nonsense and chase them away…

“Geomchi 3 Hyung-nim, did you hear that one of our lads nabbed a guy?”

“Of course. Didn’t the new guy get 3 ribs broken and 2 teeth knocked out in that fight?”

Petrov immediately stopped what he was about to say and momentarily reassessed the situation. Thought rose unbidden in his mind that this was some kind of conversation between gangsters.

“That kid just can’t contain his temper.”

“I only heard the basics. But when a man starts lifting his hand, he can’t leave it half finished! You should have made sure to finish him properly.”

“I understand what you’re saying. I sincerely apologize for this lapse of education on the boys. We should have completely shattered both his legs and left the guy to crawl.”

The Geomchis were talking about the new trainee in their dojo. The trainee had come across a rapist and before anything could happen, fought the armed rapist and prevented an incident.

“He should at least have broken both of that bastards arms, he’s not even scuffed up!”

“Yes, he should have shattered the chin so the bastard can’t swallow soup.”

“Teach the boys properly. Doing it roughly won’t do.”

“I swear it.”

“When you need to step into such situations, you must not think of your opponent as a human. Just think it’s a talking animal. Don’t mind the jabbering, you need to beat him down until he’s on his knees begging for you to end it.”

"I will make sure this mistake doesn’t happen again.”

As this wasn’t a socially polite conversation, Geomchi3, Geomchi4 and Geomchi5 talked softly amongst themselves. But Petrov, who was curious about their muttering, eavesdropped on the whole conversation.

“Ah! Painter! Are you perhaps busy right now?”

“No, not at all. I am free right now.”

“If 20 gold is too small, we can give you more.”

“No, no. It’s enough. I shall start on the portrait immediately.”

Petrov stopped his work on the mural and started on the commission for the Geomchis.

*****

Weed and Yurin appeared together on top of the Central Tower. The vista over Vargo Fortress could be seen from the top. Down below, the repair works on the destroyed buildings caused by the battle were at its peak, the walls were being built thicker and higher. It wasn't an exaggeration to say the whole fortress was one gigantic construction site.

"My precious money..."

As Weed saw that Vargo Fortress was starting to enhance the overall vast scenery with the flat slope of the mountain base nearby, he was overcome by the sudden inexplicable feeling of the loss of his precious taxes. There were plenty of tragedies in movies, novels, poems and dramas, but the greatest tragedy of all was pouring money down the drain.

Just thinking about the money invested into the repair of Vargo Fortress could make him cry like a baby! But still, looking at Vargo Fortress following similar development as Morata was not so bad. Currently, it was shaping up to be a romantic Fortress city and players flocked to the region expecting the place to be completed soon. At the gates the thumping of footsteps could be heard, as players gathered party members and departed for the unknown settlement.

- The Lord has returned, 'Gyaruu'.

- What was he doing?

- Troll, Troll! I was with him in Rosenheim Kingdom.

The Fairies that hid within Weed's collar came out occasionally. The Fairies surrounded him and engaged in endless chatter and mischief. When Yurin lifted her finger, several Fairies came to sit or cling on it and played around.

"First, let's look for the Sahyungs."

Weed and Yurin went to the place the Geomchis were having a meal. The Geomchis were underneath the shade of a building that had yet to be repaired, preparing their food.

"I am going to have a proper meal thanks to the humans."

"Thank you for the food. But it would be nice to have beer to wash it all down."

There were Dwarves and Barbarians with the Geomchis. The Dwarves and Barbarians of Vargo Fortress found a kindred spirit in the Geomchis.

The Geomchis and Barbarians moved from comparing their strength and bulk, to hunting together to becoming fast friends.

"There is a really hard monster to kill…"

“Let jump to it and cut it into pieces.”

“The warriors who can clear that dungeon will receive the recognition and respect of our village! This will become a point of great fame for the humans.”

“Dungeons are nothing. Let’s go!”

The Geomchis and the Barbarians hit it off extremely well.

Drinking beer with the Dwarves, the Geomchis became amiable with them. The Geomchis were able to acquire weapons and armors, increasing their friendship with them to the point of becoming drinking buddies.

Since the inception of Dwarves and Barbarians in Vargo Fortress, their number had increased greatly. And so the meal was prepared in a somber atmosphere, because excluding Surka, Irene, Romuna, Maylon and Hwaryeong, there were close to 800 males. It was at this moment that Weed and Yurin came.

“What! Sayhungs! How can you eat like you are at a funeral?”

“Weed!”

“I will prepare for you a magnificent feast.”

Weed’s master was there, and to repay for the toil they had to

suffer fighting the Undead Legion, he decided to take over the whole preparation of the meals.

“I won’t spare anything as this is food for the Sahyungs.”

Staple foods in Vargo Fortress weren’t plentiful as all of it was imported from Morata. But within the current company were the Barbarians who had brought back over 4 thousand kilograms of various meat from their hunt.

“At the most, with this amount, every person will only be able to eat 5 kilograms of meat. Running out of meat during the feast won’t do.”

While the ordinary person would be satisfied after eating 1 kg, the Geomchis were gluttons who eat till they are almost at death's door. Mindless with their food, and also mindless with their fights, that was the Sahyungs. And on top of this, eating meat with the cool breeze gently blowing in their outdoor setting made them even hungrier than usual.

“I will need to use my authority as Lord.”

In Vargo Fortress, many residents were part of the repair works. One way or another, as he had to provide food for the workers, he decided to willingly go all in.

“Region Information Window!”

Vargo Fortress

A region that was once part of the Niflheim Empire.

Just recently King of the Undead, Balkan Demoph, and the Undead Legion were stationed in this Fortress. Through the endless tide of monsters attacking the Fortress, there is a high chance that this fortress will be destroyed. Under the miraculous leadership of Lord Weed, restoration of the Fortress is underway in this hopeless situation.

Military Forces: 432

Economic Power: 268

Culture: 192

Technology: 71

Religious Influence: 67

Regional Politics: 7

Influence on Nearby Areas: 11%

Influence from the past Niflheim Empire: 2.9%

(Influence deeply relates to the military, economics, culture, technology, religion, population and quests)

City Development Rate: 33

Hygiene: 24

Public Order: 41%

Many residents from Morata and other parts of the Northern Continent migrated here, believing in the ability of the Lord.

Through the dedicated and outstanding builders, the castle, residences, roads and the wall are being constructed and repaired. A large scale repair is under progress, collapsed parts of the Fortress are by large being repaired.

This region still has many dangers in store. Through the repeated monster assaults, the soldiers' real battle experience is rising quickly. They are especially adept at firing arrows.

The security situation outside the fortress is grave, the residents cannot start any economic activities. They want to start farming, mining and breeding livestock. But they are satisfied about the rapid improvement of their lifestyle as the facilities within the Fortress are being restored. While the residents are uneasy about the monsters wandering outside, they feel slightly secure within the strong fortress.

There are Fairies abound, and bustling trade with the Elves, Dwarves and Barbarians. Most of the taxes of Vargo Fortress are collected from trade. The buildings, culture and artwork provide some comfort on this barren land.

The regions religion is dominated by the Church of Freya. The resident's faith are steadfast, they want a church built for their religious activities.

Specialties: None.

Total Population of the Fortress: 6,892

Monthly Tax Income: 24,978 Gold.

Fortress Operating Expenses: Military 47%. Repair Work 34%, Quests and Monster Suppression 19%.

The current situation was incomparable to Morata. With the current development rate of Morata, its economic growth of a few days was similar to the whole economic activity taking place in Vargo Fortress. But if the bustling trade with the other races was taken into account, with the extremely difficult hunting grounds scattered within the vicinity of the Fortress, the economic potential of Vargo Fortress was enormous. If only the Public Order was set straight, the overpopulated Morata would've lots of migrants to Vargo Fortress and development would explode.

Weed thought that ruling over two territories rather than one

was much better.

‘That’s how I gather more taxes.’

If Vargo Fortress was considered as a preparation period, the current speed of its repair was at an unbelievable pace. After the battle with the Undead Legion was concluded, it was rare to find a serviceable building. The walls were at a state where it couldn’t even prevent a starving wolf from entering, but now the Fortress was becoming close to impregnable.

“Lord’s Command!”

Use your authority as Lord to command the residents.

Forcible commands can reduce the resident’s loyalty and could destabilize the Public Order.

“Release the meat from the stores in the Lord’s castle and let them eat as much as they want.”

In Vargo Fortress, relevant buildings like granaries in Morata were prioritized for construction.

Are you sure you want to release the stockpile of meat in the storehouse to the residents?

“Let’s just eat already.”

Following the Lord's command, the meats are being distributed.

The doors to the food storehouse were opened, and the residents took as much meat as they wanted. As there was a lot of game in the area, there was quite a huge stockpile of meat.

Weed built up a 20 meter tall meat tower. For any ordinary people, this amount would make them sick and tired of meat, but it had the different effect of whetting the Geomchis appetite.

"Let's barbeque and eat everything!"

"Uwaah!"

"As expected of Weed."

"The human Lord of Vargo Fortress is quite generous."

Only by showing off his generosity would the people express their gratitude.

Irene came and asked him.

"Um, excuse me... If all the meat from the storehouse is finished, what will they eat tomorrow?"

“Well, you know what they say, ‘never put off to tomorrow what you must do today.’”

“What?”

“Moral of the saying is that, we should think of tomorrow’s work, tomorrow.”

“…….”

Weed interpreted the saying however he wanted to. Regardless, a meat party erupted in Vargo Fortress. The merchants doing business stopped to roast some meat, the players who were about to depart for an adventure gathered in groups of two and three and started fires. Nowhere else other than Vargo Fortress, would the sight of ten thousand players all roasting and eating meat be seen.

Weed was quickly cooking up stew and other dishes that complemented well with meat. Cooking that filled up the whole wide table for 10! As many varieties of food covered the table, the players all began to think respectively.

‘With his high Cooking Skill, just the aroma is making me drool.’

‘I need to get married to a guy who's good at cooking. Someone like Weed-nim, who would always prepare breakfast, would be perfect.’

‘He can cook so many dishes so quickly.’

As the main course, the meat was still being cooked. No one had sampled the other dishes yet. While the masters and the trainees fidgeted a little, Geomchi had yet to touch his food and was sitting on his chair like the elder he was and waited calmly for it to be done.

Weed was cooking massive amounts at once so that it could be placed and shared on each table, with that, his preparations were extremely quick. Fruits and japchae, even the fish that Zephyr brought were prepared and placed on the table.

Seeing the abundant foods placed on the table, one would have the feeling they could eat until their stomach bursts. Even the players who came to see Weed began to drool at the sight. Once the table was brimming with food, the meat was cooked and added to the table, too.

CRAACK!

The table could not withstand the weight and with a great sound, its four legs buckled and broke. It was because Weed had weakened the table before hand by cutting it slightly. Nothing whet one's appetite like the table breaking before a meal!

Geomchis lifted their forks.

"Let's eat!"

“Dig in!”

A meat party began in Vargo Fortress.

Chapter 8: The Location Of Ratzeburg

In the middle of his painting, Petrov learned that Weed has returned.

“Finally, my fated enemy has returned.”

In his time painting in Vargo Fortress, Petrov was coming to like the place. Compared to other regions, Vargo Fortress had many high level players and just past its gates were the sights of a great prairie. The number of players and residents grew rapidly and as time passed, the place began to gain a presence of oldness and ancientness about it. Petrov thought, he wouldn’t mind being the Lord and a Painter in this place.

“I just heard the Lord is hosting a meat party!”

“Really?”

“He opened up the storehouse for everyone to take meat for free. You can eat as much as you want! And if you go to where the Lord is right now, they said that he will cook the meat for you personally!”

“Then what are you waiting for?!?”

Just the simple arrival of Weed caused a ruckus greater than when an army of monsters was attacking Vargo Fortress. Players

were on a wild spree as they grabbed meat from the storehouse. While the players did not take to much as it would become a burden, they also could not refuse what has been given to them by Lord Weed.

“Khya! The experience of eating rich boar meat is amazing every time!”

“Yeah! I think the quality of the meat is higher because the game are so healthy, running around the mountain.”

Gulp.

Petrov, who was painting a ceiling mural, unconsciously swallowed his saliva.

‘I can’t bear it anymore. Should I just eat first and continue then?”

He did not want to be in Weed’s debt. But he would be challenging Weed soon… and wasn’t getting to know the competition important?

‘Let me just have a taste.’

Petrov walked to where they said Weed was roasting the meat personally.

At the place, there was already a long line of players and residents waiting eagerly for just a morsel of food.

“Do you think we will have a chance to eat it today?”

“The line is shrinking fast so… I think in an hour’s time we will get a chance to eat.”

Petrov gave a huge sigh and queued up at the back. He would have to wait a long time, but seeing how so many people were lining up, he couldn’t help but wonder how the meat would taste.

Without him noticing their approach, the Sculpture Lifeforms also dropped in. Trays were brought outside the Fortress for the Lifeforms that were too large, but at this place was the Cerberus alongside the Knight Serbil Prestin, who were already receiving meat from Weed.

“Wof! Wof!”

Seemingly taken by the taste of the meat, Cerberus wagged its tail and when that didn’t work, it rolled on the floor begging for more. It was intimacy that Petrov never saw from the Cerberus before.

“The taste of the meat is phenomenal. I think that Weed-nim’s cooking skill is better than my swordsmanship.”

Even the Knight Serbil Prestin seemed to have a heightened

respect for Weed. With his exceptional control over the fire, the meat Weed roasted was still rich and juicy, with just a dash of garlic salt.

All the effort Petrov put in to earn the hearts and minds of the Sculpture Lifeforms was washed down the drain.

‘No, no. Everything is still alright. If I put in more time later, I will get another chance.’

As he was waiting in line with such a conundrum, he listened to the chattering of the people around him.

“Lord Weed seems popular with the ladies.”

“Yeah, they are also really beautiful.”

The line had shrunk and where Petrov was standing, he could see Weed. Weed had summoned the Fire Elemental, Hwadori, to roast the meat en masse. His motion of sprinkling pepper and salt, carving the meat was fast and natural.

“Cough! Can’t be that beau… beautiful?”

At that moment, Petrov caught sight of Hwaryeong. She was a seldom seen beauty that was sticking right next to Weed and helping him cook. Her face seemed aglow from the blaze of the fire.

‘How could such a beauty be next to someone like him?’

This just threw more fuel on Petrov’s hatred for Weed.

And right at that moment! Petrov saw Weed picking a portion of meat and putting it into a woman’s mouth. A woman Petrov could never forget about, Yurin whom he had met at St. George Castle was eating meat cooked by Weed. The time the two had spent was short but she had left a fiery impression in his heart

‘It’s Yurin.’

Seeing how Yurin was giving such an affectionate smile to Weed pierced his heart. Petrov wanted to dearly meet her again, but not like this, when he was waiting in line to get some meat.

‘I should man up, turn around and leave Vargo Fortress completely.’

Petrov wanted to bury everything and leave. But the reason his feet wouldn’t let him was that he knew, the image of Yurin sticking next to Weed would be forever ingrained in his mind. With his mind perturbed by the event, chattering seeped into his ears.

“Who is that woman?”

“I heard she was a painter……”

“Don’t you know? She’s Weed’s younger sister. She was with him when he was adventuring at the Vampire Kingdom.”

“She’s really cute. I wouldn’t mind having her as my girlfriend……”

“If Weed becomes your brother-in-law, I am sure opportunities would just open up.”

Petrov’s half turned motion stopped and he turned straight in the line again.

“So she was his sister…”

He finally understood the graffiti Yurin drew on St. George Castle.

*****

The cost of all the food and drinks the Geomchis consumed was paid for by Weed.

“Uuuuh.”

“I, I think I am going to die, my stomach is going to burst.”

Through their gluttonous eating, their health actually fell drastically. But even then, they cheered when fresh meat was brought for them.

"Meat!"

"It's rib stew."

"It's rib stew that has been flavored with herbs."

Weed continuously provided food and the Geomchis couldn't refuse it without being seen as impolite. It was a situation where all the 504 people could die due to overeating!

'A Cook is a dangerous profession.'

'I never knew people who didn't even know the meaning of tiredness when they were fighting the Bone Dragon could be defeated like this....'

Even just looking at meat made the rational minds like Pale and Zephyr sick and tired of it. They couldn't help but be amazed that the Geomchis could continue to gulp it down and clear their dishes. Just at the moment when the tower of meat was almost finished, the Barbarians returned from their hunt and stacked up another higher tower of meat with fresh game.

“Meat!”

“Wa!”

The other players sat near the Geomchis and ate.

“Let’s eat!”

“Look at you director Kim!”

“Don’t overburden us. We want to leave work early!”

“We need rest on weekends. Forget humans, even machines would break!”

“Exams, work, qualifications, exam, work, qualifications. Rwaaar! I can’t handle it!”

Through their voracious gorging, the players relieved their stress they built up in real life.

- Let’s eat as much as we can.

- The meat Weed-nim roasted is the best!

The Fairies flew around, tearing into their meat. They were so gluttonous that some of the Fairies couldn’t even fly anymore, no

matter how much they flapped their wings.

When night was about to settle, several bonfires were started and the Geomchis huddled around them. They were roasting chitterlings for a last meal. Then Geomchi spoke:

“There seem to be many enemies targeting Weed these days.”

Geomchi3 replied:

“I saw on the news that Hermet or something is trying to kill him.”

Geomchi4 and Geomchi 5 put in their own observation:

“I heard those bastards were no good at all. They are vicious and greedy lots.”

“They are apparently the strongest bastards in Versailles Continent. No one can seem to stand up to those bastards.”

The Trainees were quiet and listened attentively. Geomchi was setting the mood of the talks and their masters were talking in a serious tone. It was not a conversation any Trainee could just jump in.

Geomchi nodded his head.

“There is no absolute need for us to step into our youngest’s fight. He probably has ideas already.”

Weed, of course, had countermeasures against Hermes Guild’s plots. The Hermes Guild had yet to conquer the whole Continent and he would resist until the end. At present, Weed could use the Sculpture Transformation to sneak around so his main priority was to find the last of the secret Sculpture legacies and finish the Mastery Quest. Even after all that, if he couldn’t escape the clutches of Hermes Guild… he would play the bedfellow.

Geomchi3 was of the same thought:

“Correct. Our youngest must have an idea so leave him to his own devices….. But, I, as a Master, cannot bear to see our youngest fighting alone like this.”

Geomchi3, hurriedly corrected his thoughts in the middle.

“I am sure if we leave him to his own devices, he will perform exceptionally. But us, as Sahyungs, we must help. You spoke correctly.”

Geomchi lifted his head and looked to the night sky filled with stars.

“This Versailles Continent is truly a mysterious place. But also filled with freedom. I have learned the way of the sword my whole life, but even I could have never imagined a day would come when

I had such freedom to explore.”

“……..”

The Trainees and the Master could all sympathized with Geomchi’s words. Even if they had trained their body and mind to the extreme, it had little practical use in reality. There were all sorts of complicated variables like stats, levels, skill mastery and such, but Versailles Continent was a place where they could live with their swords in their hands. They could fight against strong enemies, have adventures and meet new colleagues. This was a world all men dreamed of.

“If a man is strong, I believe he has the right to conquer the Continent. But one thing I cannot stand is them, gathering these weak, vulgar bastards to tyrannize the Continent.”

“We are of the same mind.”

Geomchi gave them a big smile.

“We had plenty of fun at this place, right?”

“Yes.”

“We enjoyed our time.”

The Geomchis weren’t ordered by anyone to defeat monsters and

train their swordsmanship, it was something they did by their own motivation. Sometimes, they did crazy things and enjoyed the full measure of freedom given by Versailles Continent.

“I think, it’s time to become strong. Strong so that no matter what kind of gales blows against us we will not fall. Let us test if an individual’s strength, not the strength of a group, can change the world.

The ability to resist a storm came from strength. Geomchi and the Trainees swore in their heart to increase their levels according to the framework of Royal Road and become strong.

*****

Ratzeburg.

Lee Hyun was on his computer searching for the city, but it was not a name that had been mentioned once in any forums related to Royal Road. Rather, it was like a dam had burst and the forums were awashed with players trying to join Hermes Guild or organize an opposition against the Embinyu Church.

“It’s most likely that I will be the first person to discover the city.”

If he searches the whole Continent resolutely, he might just be able to find it. He would have to deduce the location and reduce the search area.

“Fortunately, it’s nowhere close to the polar regions.”

Using nature for his inference, it would not be anywhere tropical, desert or glacial regions.

“An area in which the four races lived together before they dispersed… The probability of it being an island is low.”

He might have to explore those moderately large islands, but that would only be after not finding the city on the Continent.

“A place with a wide river and a plain.”

Lee Hyun got a map of the Versailles Continent and began to search. Places that had not been explored fully were still clouded by fog of war and the information had to be taken with a grain of salt.

“It has to be a geological area that is flat enough for the four races to establish a great city.”

Even with this much, the number of regions he had to search reduced considerably. While forests could grow, it was impossible for a large mountain to be built.

“They built their houses out of stone. I am sure they had methods to build their houses out of sand or wood… Wait, maybe the Elves

rejected such methods? No, no, the important point was that there were stones nearby for them to build their houses in such ways. There would have to be a ready deposit of the maroon stones they could mine for their houses.....”

As Lee Hyun dissected further, the Free Cities of Britten Union and the Ritten Kingdom had many such geographical features.

“If I take into consideration the migration of birds and the regional flowers and trees.... the chances are high the city is in one of these Kingdoms.”

It was closer to the south from the centerpoint of the Continent, but not by a large margin. The land there was quite fertile, and there weren’t so many monsters roaming its plains. The extensive region also had 24 great rivers flowing in between the Kingdom and the Free Cities. Using his talent for stones and based on the geographical data, he managed to reduce the number to 130 possible locations near the river basin.

“It’s not so easy trying to find a city that existed in Versailles Continent several thousand years ago.”

Just the detailed analysis of the map took three days. Even then, he still had to search the possible locations manually.

“I should look through the tourists photos.”

When a player explored a new area or visited famous places, they

captured the scene and uploaded it onto the internet. Lee Hyun could just search for the places he wanted and most of them popped up.

“This is not remotely similar. Even if you count on the fact that trees and grasses grew over the period of time... the flow of the river and the direction the sun is setting is all wrong. The plains are filled with rocks and it would be impossible to grow crops there. It must be a place where, when the wind blows, the crops give off a brilliant golden hue.”

The land he searched had no trace of any agricultural activities.

Lee Hyun even joined groups to view the photos in Royal Road.

-The farmer's dream in Royal Road. The Royal Farmer.

-From the seed to harvest. Farmer’s Guild.

-Looking at a well cultivated flower brings joy to the heart. Honey and Butterflies.

-Invest in land speculation. Become rich without doing any work. The Land Merchant Guild.

It was groups with interests in land. He used the photos uploaded onto these groups, and any places that couldn’t be confirmed as Ratzeburg with certainty, he discarded them without remorse.

“Huk, deductive reasoning is not easy. It’s not an easy job at all.”

Checking every photo one by one was difficult, but it was a much better alternative than going their personally to investigate. After sifting through and deducing for two days, the number of places that were left was down to 68.

“The city must be at one of these locations. It’s a puzzle game now. A game that will require all my brain power.”

From the 68 places, 42 locations had human villages or cities. Lee Hyun shifted his thinking. Ratzeburg should be in a region where it would be suited for all the races to live in. A place where the river twisted like a snake, a geographical area that could be easily defended from monsters.

“If I would ever build a house to live in then…..”

Deducing the place by imagining where he would actually want to live in! There was no need to think of the price of land back then, so he could choose any location he wanted.

“I should look for the best place possible.”

To Lee Hyun, the Albas region seemed preferable. There was a wide, fertile plain and at the area that looked perfect for a village, it was surrounded by a large river that protected the area from three sides against the monsters. On top of that, beyond the plain a

rocky mountain that could be seen jutting out in the landscape.

“If you stationed a contingents of Orcs here, you could fight quite efficiently. Because no matter what happens, the granary cannot be raided.”

It looked like a fairly easy place to defend when the monsters came to raid the granaries, and there was an abundance of maroon stones in the vicinity. The other five locations weren’t so bad and all were habitable lands.

“It’s fairly certain that the city will be in one of these locations….”

Lee Hyun fell into deep, mental agony. The 6 locations were all very far from each other, and to visit each place one by one would take a considerable amount of time. The possible locations of Ratzeburg he scouted out in Ritten Kingdom and the Britten Union had cities built on top.

“I should visit the Albas region first. It will be difficult to navigate back, but I might get lucky and find it on my first try.”

He finally made his decision after pondering for so long. In his pondering, he still attended University, and in Royal Road he stayed in Vargo Fortress plodding away at sculptures to raise his skill mastery.

“Oppa, you are still awake?”

In the middle of the night, the door to his sister's room opened and Lee Hye Yeon walked into the living room, still wearing her pyjamas.

"Yeah. I have many things to think about right now."

Taking out milk from the fridge, Lee Hye Yeon asked as she began to drink.

"What's the problem?"

"It's that I received a quest to find the very first city in Versailles Continent."

Lee Hyun explained to her the whole story in detail. The information and resources he printed out from the computer were equivalent to three volumes of a thick book. He had also brought a glass blackboard from somewhere and it was filled with scribbles and sticky notes here and there. It was like Lee Hyun had recreated a scene from a drama to find the location of Ratzeburg.

"And this is the video I saw of the city. Using the video, I gathered all these materials to pinpoint the possible location of the city."

Lee Hyun spoke in a low, subdued voice. He had perfectly captured the mood of an older brother that wished for his younger sister to realize how smart he was all over again.

“Ah! So this picture is the image of the city?”

“Right.”

With Lee Hyun’s drawing skills, he drew frogs into dinosaurs, worms into rivers, and ants into transforming robots. But from the video, and using the various photos of Royal Road he had made an accurate topographical map.

“Isn’t this Boronis in Aidern Kingdom?”

“What? No, it’s probably among the Free City in Albas region.”

“No Oppa. I went there once to look at the Butterfly festival they held.”

Yurin moved around the computer mouse and the video of Boronis popped up on the screen.

“Look here. It’s this place.”

It was exactly like Lee Hyun saw on the video back then. The river that twisted like a snake, and a wide plain with birds and flowering trees... it was as if all of it was untouched by time. Even if the river course changed slightly, the mountain range that could be seen far away was exactly the same.

“Look, there is the Olgoro plateau and the Great Plain of Iles, Oppa?”

“……”

Glaring at the monitor, no matter how much he scrutinized to find a flaw in the video the resemblance to Ratzeburg was uncanny.

“Hmph! Then, we will make a small detour before heading to the Albas region.”

Chapter 9: Discovery Of The First City

The First City, Ratzeburg, was supposedly where the Four Races settled and lived peacefully. Weed had come to Boronis to find it, and as Yurin had visited this place for a festival before, they could simply use the Picture Teleportation skill to get there.

'There is quite a lot of people here.'

Weed climbed the Olgoro plateau and looked at the surroundings. Above, the birds flew in flocks and below, travelers and tourists could be easily seen.

Fish were just biting on the fishing pole as soon as he cast it into the vast Tinus River.

"It's a big one!"

"Oppa, how many did you catch now?"

"I think a bit over 20!"

It was a rich and abundant river that was half water, half fish! A river that fishermen crowded over frantically.

On the great fertile plains of Iles in Aidern Kingdom, all kinds of crops were cultivated to feed its people. Having developed their

economy and industry early on, Aidern Kingdom had built the Boronis Castle in this place. But 200 years later, they built a greater and grander castle further back on the Olgoro plateau and relocated there.

In present times, Boronis Castle was an abandoned castle converted to house tourist.

“I am sure Ratzeburg is located somewhere around here.”

Weed followed along the riverside. He wondered if their motive was to defend against monster attacks, as the city was built so closely to the river.

“According to my memories, it should be nearby here…”

The amount of time that passed by had to be considerable, as the place was a heap of sand!

In the morning Weed cast his fishing pole.

“I should just use this opportunity to increase my Fishing Skill.”

If he started making sculptures, it would attract people’s attention, and the worst thing that could happen would be Hermes Guild sending people over to chase after him here. So in the morning, he did something ordinary like fishing.

“Mister, fish don’t bite in that spot.”

Putting the female players who gave him friendly advice to shame, Weed seamlessly pulled in his fishing pole from the river.

“This guy is too big to put in my pot.”

He kept catching fish that were large enough that they had to be held with both arms.

“I should eat is as hoe? If I fry its flesh, its taste should be edible.”

Though it was said that the Tinus River was overflowing with fish, not all were of the enormous size that Weed was catching. With his Intermediate Level 5 Fishing Skill, his bait moved in a special way underwater. The bait, gently swayed its tail with the current, almost as if it was enticing the fish to try it! Weed had better catches compared to others as the large fish fell for the ruse and quickly snatched up the bait.

There were plenty of people diligently raising their Fishing Skill along the Tinus River. There were even 3 players with Intermediate Level Fishing Skill, but the number of people who caught their fish on the first try like Weed were few. Using his Advanced Level 8 Handicraft, he deftly handled the struggle with his catch by using just enough strength to prevent the line from snapping and sapping the stamina of his catch quickly.

Having raised his mastery at the sea, in a few short days, his

Fishing Skill rose to Level 6.

Fishing Skill increased to Intermediate Level 6. The chance of catching a rare fish increased greatly. Maximum health increased by 1,800. A deep flavor is added with all your fish dishes.

Fame increased by 35.

Perseverance increased by 4.

Endurance increased by 3.

You have received the title of, ‘Tenacious Fisherman’.

When residing in one spot for a long time, the effect of the Fishing Skill increases by 4%.

Reduces consumption of vitality.

Even at night, the Tinus River was swarming with fishermen. So Weed had to excavate in hiding.

“Come on, any relic is okay, just appear already. If you are going to appear anyways, something expensive will be nice while you are at it.”

If he was going to find a relic from Ratzeburg, it had to be the

best of the best antique! It was not all because of the quest, Weed was in a frenzy for money.

The hole Weed was digging in secret under the cover of the night, was truly deep. It helped that he had invested a significant amount of time in Jigolaths digging.

“If I had never learnt Fishing or Mining, I would be bored out of my mind.”

Having opened the door of agony and hardship so many times before, this much was child’s play! If he compared what he did in Jigolaths with carrying bricks, what he did now only amounted to waving warning lights.

Weed was in between the thickets using his spade to dig. He let the dug up sand drift into the river. Strangely enough, the place where Ratzeburg was did not seem to be a good fishing spot. It also helped that people were scattered all over the Tinus River as it was so vast.

Like this, Fishing Skill and Mining Skill increased day by day.

“Really, it’s true what they say, a sculptor is talented in everything.”

While meandering as such, by chance in the middle of the morning, something caught on Weed’s fishing pole.

“A fish?”

The thing that pulled firmly, did not feel like a living being. While a proficient fisherman would cut off his fishing line, Weed struggled for about 10 minutes before finally lifting it up. As Weed was using a fishing line he made personally with his Sewing Skill, which had a higher durability than those sold on the street market, there was a possibility he could salvage it.

DING!

An Old Relic, Stone Hammer has been fished from the Tinus River.

Luck increased by 1.

Mastery of Fishing Skill increased.

“One lousy stone hammer increasing my mastery… this can’t be a common occurrence. Identify!”

Cracked Stone Hammer: Durability 7/19. Attack 2~9.

A hammer made from broken stones.

If feels like it could be used in hunting.

Restriction: None.

Option: When an Orc uses this hammer, attack increases by 20%.

“This is it!”

The relic was nothing compared to what he was expecting for, but Weed received a definite confirmation that Ratzeburg was here. Usually he would throw it away as it was a useless stone hammer that couldn’t even be sold as japtem, but he stored it away safely.

“You never know, I could sell it off as a relic.”

Weed had a renewed sense of expectation of his morning fishing runs, as there was now the possibility of fishing out relics. He wasn’t just fishing at a random spot on Tinus River, he was fishing at the heart of the past city Ratzeburg!

He discovered copper shields, broken arrowheads, pottery and dishes. While the majority were useless knick-knacks, some were evidently created by dwarves.

“I only need to dig in this spot!”

In the morning, Weed’s eyes were squinting in laughter as he fished and at night, he hummed as he dug.

“The more I dig, the richer I become. Money, rice… I am going to become rich any day now!”

Like a tone deaf person, his notes become longer.With his scattered humming, it was beginning to sound like a noise coming from a graveyard.

‘This being the First City, I am sure plenty of extravagant items are buried here. Perhaps, I might just find a massive burial sites with gold, silver and treasures inside……’

The hopeful dream of a grave robber!

But reality was a cruel mistress. After several days of digging, the only things he dug up were stones and sands, his desired treasures were nowhere in sight.

Bururuuru!

Even then, with the hope of earning big, Weed carried on, pouring his strength into digging. Finally, he found a sculpture carved from a rock! An arm and a leg were missing, but it was clearly a work depicting an Orc.

“Identify!”

Weed used Sculptural Memories.

*****

“It’s all thanks to you that we managed to drive the monsters back again and stay safe.”

“Chwick! I did what I had to do. Warrior Ulchi, I do not need any praises. Chwick.”

“Oh right, I heard you had a son?”

“He follows after me, with his big head. I am happy. Chichick!”

“Ulchi, I tried to make a sculpture of your seventh son. Here, take this home.”

Ulchi was an Orc, whose body was littered with scars and tattoos. He looked down on the sculpture given to him. It was a sculpture of a young and an adult Orc. It was an Orc’s fate to reach adulthood in a blink of an eye and disappear into the battlefield. To them, sculptures which allowed them to remember their family were one of their most precious items.

“Thanks, I will keep it safe. Chwick!”

Holding the sculpture in his fur covered hand, Ulchi bent his waist to leave the Dwarf’s workshop. On the street of Ratzeburg were slower maturing human children, who were running around and playing.

“Hi, Ulchi Ahjussi!”

“Did you catch many monsters this time as well? My dad told me to tell you that he's really thankful.”

“We are proud to have you with us Ulchi.”

The Humans treated the Orc with friendliness. Whenever they engaged him in a conversation, Ulchi would stop momentarily to chat before heading home. As Orcs were frequently engaged in battle, they lived in the outskirts of the city.

“Oh, come quickly. Chichiwik!”

A female Orc, Juichi, came out to welcome him home. Ulchi gave her a fierce hug before going in. The Ulchi was a large family, with 13 of them just accounting for his sons. There was no suitable furniture in the house at all, rather the only decoration that could be seen were sculptures hanging on a rope near the door.

The Humans and the Elves cultivated the fields and worked in the construction of the city. The Dwarves created weapons and armor for the Orcs. The Orcs laid down their lives to defend the city against any monsters that might attack them. The Orcs were the last line of defense. If they failed, Humans, Elves, and the Dwarves would all perish. Therefore, no matter how many casualties they suffered in battle, they never once retreated.

Ulchi's sons grew up, opened the doors hanging with sculptures and left for the world. One, two... never to return again. Where the sculptures were, more and more were added.

Orcs withstood their difficulties and continued to expand throughout the generations. In that time, the Humans, Elves and the Dwarves also advanced and developed.

The Humans not only became proficient in farming, but also weapon crafting. While Human's strength could not match the potential the Orcs held since their birth, they could overcome it with their superior comprehension and handling mana.

As the Elves began to make their bows and contract with Spirits, they no longer required the protection from the Orcs. The Dwarves furthered their development of weapons and armors. With the sharpness of their weapons and the solidness of their armor, they no longer feared any monsters.

It came to a boiling point, where the Four Races could no longer contend with each other.

The sculpture had listened to the various tales from the world around it.

"The Humans do not respect us. Chichichwik!"

"The Orcs eat too much! No matter how much we grow, it all goes into the Orc's stomachs. We don't have enough food for

ourselves.”

“For how long must we Elves guide the other races, ignorant to the power of nature?”

“They are mindless in handling the equipment we created. Without the Dwarves prowess in metal handling, they would not have been able to battle or farm properly. I get so angry when I see these fools using the tools we crafted without any care!”

Hostility erupted between the Four Races. The Orc’s left the city first. It was because of their ability to reproduce quickly that they found it impossible for them to continue living in a single area forever. While the area far away from Ratzeburg was still crawling with monsters, the brave Orc Lords lead their clan to a new settlement.

Shortly after the Orc’s departed, the Elves soon followed, leaving for their much desired Forests. For some time after the departure of the other races, the Humans and the Dwarves remained together out of necessity. But as the Dwarves advanced their blacksmithing skills, they departed for the mountains searching for more minerals to further refine their skills.

The Humans struggled for some time after the Elves departed as their harvest reduced by half. But having learned farming techniques from the Elves, they managed to increase their crop yield to previous levels again. They had also consulted with the Dwarves to prepare against monster attacks, building a Fortress and walls.

And so, in the last days of Ratzeburg, the only race that lived in the city were Humans. But as the city was built up with mishmash of planning by the four races, the Humans found it difficult to live among the many homes and amenities built for the different races.

In the end, the Humans also abandoned Ratzeburg and departed to create their own Kingdom.

The first city was abandoned by all four races. After several decades the Tinus River began to flood and Ratzeburg was slowly swept away. This was one of the reasons why the Great Plains of Iles was so fertile.

But a time came when there was a greater flood than before. With the city abandoned, the buildings were swept by, flooded and ruthlessly knocked down. The current swept up rocks and trees, the mud sunk to the floor bed. With the rain, river and the passing of time, the buildings completely disappeared and Ratzeburg was sunk and buried.

The sculpture of Ulchi's sevenths son was preserved under a large rock.

*****

City of Ratzeburg Complete

The historic find of Ratzeburg!

This find will make the historians rewrite the entire history of Humans, Dwarves, Elves and the Orcs. By reporting this discovery to any Kingdom or a representative of a Race, you will receive recognition and your achievement will be recorded.

Quest Reward: By reporting this to any Kingdom or a Race representative, you will receive rewards for your achievement in this quest. If you return to the Elf Randelia, you will receive a small reward with the next quest objective.

Fame increased by 4,300.

Your level increased.

Your level increased.

All stats increased by 4.

You have learned a historic fact. Through this special experience, Intelligence and Wisdom increased by 5.

Through this exploration, your Mining Skill increased by 1.

“I don’t know if this is because it’s the Sculpting Master Quest or not, but the quest rewards are amazing.”

Even though Weed’s level was over 400, the experience he earned

in this quest was colossal that his level increased by two. If his level was lower, his level would have jumped by 10 at once like it did when he defeated Lich Shire and his Undead Legions.

"I am sure the Sculpting Master Quest wouldn't end after this much. If the mid chain quest gives this kind of reward, how good will the reward be at the end?"

Weed had an evil grin on his face. By finding Ratzeburg first, any others that attempt the Sculpting Master Quest could no longer receive such a large reward. By being the frontrunner, the rewards befitted it.

"Without a doubt, you need to be one step ahead of the others. In heavy snow, it's the footstep of the lead that becomes the guide for the people following behind."

While his thoughts were positive, Weed's heart was completely black.

'I need to make sure to pack everything good while ahead. Who knows what kind of jackpot the late comers could scavenge.'

The one who pioneers could monopolize quests and treasure!

After discovering Ratzeburg, Weed returned to the Elf village through Yurin's Picture Teleportation.

*****

The Hermes Guild's forces were in battle at the village of Pavroa in the Forest of Life. The Hermes Guild deployed a significant force to quickly subdue the small village. But the magic protecting the Elf Village was triggered, lengthening their campaign, while at the same time they had to fight off the Forest Spirits and the Trees that resisted their advance. Even monsters and animals came out to attack them, causing havoc on their forces.

In the midst of the current battle in the Forest of Life, the Elven Warriors began to arrive and fight off the invaders. Even though they were the vaunted Hermes Guild, with the Elven Archers attacking from the trees and with the Shaman's flinging magic attacks, they struggle to gain an inroad with their attack. Hermes Guild could not even enter the village and were only fighting off the Elves.

Players were disgruntled by this turn of events.

"These bastards, Hermes Guild is sinking their claws in everything."

"Were they not satisfied with Kallamore Kingdom that they have to bother the Elves now?"

"Just seeing those bastards makes me angry for several days, for now, I am not even going to leave the village."

Weed entered the village entrance guarded by Elves. The Elven Warriors were solemn in their vigil, while the Hermes Guild's

forces had to, for the time being, retreat some distance from the village.

“I have returned with the discovery of Ratzeburg. This sculpture and these artifacts are the evidence of my discovery.”

Weed reported his success to Randelia.

“Astounding, the existence of such old relics……”

The relics shown to Randelia were the stone hammer, accessory made of teeth and pieces of a ceramic pot. These were disposal items no one would want, but they held a deep history within them.

“I never truly imagined that you would discover Ratzeburg based on my story. I do not have much in what I can reward you with but… ”

Weed gave a small sigh. He had already picked most the fruits from the trees, so there was not much he could receive from Randelia. If he had went to any Kingdom on the Continent or a Representative of a particular Race, he could have received a greater reward.

“Here, I shall give you a map.”

You have acquired the map detailing the Forest of Life.

The followings are marked, the Elf Village, Monster Habitat, Grove, and places sprouting with herbs.

“Thank you. I will treasure it.”

Weed thought it was a decent quest reward. The Forest of Life was quite a vast area that even players who played as Elves got lost. With a detailed map adventuring would become a lot easier in this area.

“But to see this sculpture in such a state is truly woeful.”

Randelia looked on regretful at the woeful state of the old relic uncovered after aeon.

“I believe that the history of Ratzeburg is something everyone must know. If we could just restore the sculpture to its original condition, I think it can become a good gift for the Orcs.”

DING!

Sculpture of the Orc’s Seventh Son

Many Orcs had bled for Ratzeburg. Without their noble sacrifice, it’s possible that the Humans, Dwarves and Elves would have not survived. Tell the Orc’s about the truth of Ratzeburg! If you can restore the sculpture to a like-new condition, it can become a gift

of gratitude to the Orcs.

Difficulty: Sculpting Master Quest

Quest Restriction: Sculpting skill must be at least Advance Level 8.

Must have friendly relation with the Orcs.

“I will tell the Orcs the truth about Ratzeburg.”

Weed then left the Elf Village.

*****

“I can’t believe it. Something absurd just happened!”

All of Versailles Continent, the Residents began to chatter about.

“Have you heard? Apparently the Humans, Elves and the Dwarves lived together with the primitive Orcs in the past.”

“Apparently there was a discovery so great that we might have to rewrite the history books. Even a greenhorn like you must have heard about it! The discovery unearthed by sculptor adventurer Weed!”

“Only Weed could have discovered something so earth shattering! No matter how difficult the task, we can trust him with it. We might have to pay him a lot, but it will be worth every penny. ”

As Weed successfully completed another super sized quest, other players were filled with envy.

“Ah, when will I ever do a quest like that?”

“I think the quest this time is something super big. Something that includes, not only Humans, but Orcs, Elves and Dwarves as well.”

“With this, Weed’s fame will spread to all the Four Races.”

After the discovery about the Four Races, the relationship between the Races began to improve.

“There is a commission I want to entrust to the Dwarves. Not sure if they will accept it or not, but could you maybe acquire seven swords made by the Dwarves?”

“Recently I saw many monsters lurking in the forest. If only the humans could take care of it, it would be a great help... If you could bring this request to the Humans, I will repay you in full.”

The relationship between the Races began to warm up and more interracial quest was generated. Before, when a difficult event

occurred, the Elves tried to handle it by themselves. The Orc's with their pride and ego had nothing to say to the Dwarves either. But now, the door to interracial quests has opened wider.

In terms of Weed, with his unmatchable renown and success, he could receive a quest from any of the Races. This change in stance did not impact him much, but to the players it was a paradigm shift.

The Residents continued to gossip among themselves.

"It's amazing how Weed found the location of the city where all the Four Races lived together. I heard he reported his discovery to the King of Aidern Kingdom. As a reward, Aidern Kingdom will recognize his position as Count in Morata and granted him the sword of the state. I heard this from the guards so it must be true."

"I heard that he received a send off from the King himself at the royal courts as he flew off on one of his Wyverns. That amazing scene..... it makes my heart excited just imagining it! If it wasn't for my work as a baker, I could have set off after him immediately."

"It seems that he also reported his discovery to the Bakuma Kingdom, Harugan Kingdom and the Britten Union. He seems to have received no small reward for his effort."

"Did you hear? Weed also travelled to Ritten Kingdom. He made a sculpture for the King sometime back and apparently they became close acquaintances. The King personally greeted him and

requested a sculpture of the Queen, the Prince and the whole family."

"Any King on the whole continent would beg to have a sculpture made by the great sculptor Weed, who constantly amazes the whole continent with his adventures."

*****

"Moooooooo!"

Taking the opportunity of his long begotten freedom, Yellowy enjoyed the free time to his heart's content by loitering around Morata. With his majestically rising horns, sensually created muscles, and his strength and figure, his appearance could not be rivaled by any other bull.

"Moo!"

There were many heifers who looked at Yellowy with lustful eyes like a piece of meat. After Weed bestowed life onto Yellowy, there was a sudden surge in the population of cows in Morata. Even heifers, still too young to have discarded their childlike form, looked at Yellowy with desire.

'I finally understand why the residents often say the world is a beautiful place.'

Yellowy strutted confidently around Morata, like a solemn

sovereign emperor of all the cows. Though there were times when other bulls challenged Yellowy, he did not hide away but faced it head on. Clashing their heads together in a bullfight! Butting their heads together and crossing their horns as each bull tried to push the other! A bullfight required unparalleled strength and stamina to win, and Yellowy had it in strides, experiencing straight and easy wins.

‘This is all thanks to Master.’

Yellowy, for the first time, could now understand why Master insisted a bull needed good strength and required him to lug around heavy luggage on his back.

‘It’s all so that I could become what I am.’

There was a reason for having him sleep on cold or hot places, and hunting even while being buffeted by hail. When the number of bulls and cows increased in Morata, he still clearly remembers Weed leading him to a back alley. How Weed stepped back to observe his bullfight against a strong opponent.

‘There was a deep meaning behind it! The only way to gain affection from the heifers is to win in bullfights!’

In a bullfight, Yellowy could not turn his head, but he could always hear Weed cheering for him.

“Yellowy, you must win! Push him away! I raised you to be

strong. You can do it! The only thing you need to win is the faith that you can push him away!”

Yellowy always won, hearing the cheers filled with sincerity. While he might have been mistaken, now and then he thought he might have seen officials and other people exchanging money, but.....

‘I miss Master.’

Yellowy really wanted to see Weed right now.

Chapter 10: The Glory Of The Orcs

While staying in the Ritten Kingdom, Weed made the sculpture of the King as desired. Weed's sculpture level has reached 32.7% of Advanced Level 8. The increased sculpting skills reduced the time needed to create a sculpture.

"Maybe in the sculpting, could it be possible for you to illuminate me enough to make me sparkle?"

"I think it expresses the beauty of the princess with just light itself. Oh by the way, I am lacking a little gold to create the sculpture."

"I will give you some now."

Weed made a golden sculpture of the king's whole family. This cannot even be considered as work, as this was going to be a piece worthy of the extra income generated.

Also, since his Blacksmith skills were not that high, there's a probability that this could even result in a failure. Standing by the window of the jewelry inlay, he worked with his heart and made it look easy. The Queen looked and praised the feats of Weed.

"You're also excellent with your jewelry skill."

Weed's face smiled which looks almost like an embarrassing

smile.

"Seriously, since day one I become involved with sculptures, it is unthinkable for me to compromise or concede."

"So if you want other jewels added, I would be happy to take a look at them."

Even as he almost finished, he was still up keeping the momentum in order to get more from the Ritten Kingdom! He has been commissioned to create a sculpture of the King, Queen, Prince, and Princess all holding their hands. The the nobles were positioned and were carved bowing down to praise the Royal Family.

This increased the amount of work done, however separately the backpack Weed was carrying was becoming even heavier from the unused materials.

To be able to make a sculpture of such a glaring light. It was a piece of pure brilliance and the light was combined with effects of alcohol to further its brightness. It was one of the most luxurious and extravagant works that was carefully made. Weed did not even miss the meticulous or delicate parts, and there was not a single blemish.

Eager to see the moment of its completion, the King, Queen, Prince and Princess came together.

Ting!

Please set the name of the sculpture made.

Weed said aloud, and called to them on purpose.

"With respect to the glory of his Majesty, the King of the Kingdom of Ritten, I shall name this Sculpture "His Majesty Of Immortality and His Family"

- His Majesty Of Immortality and His Family right?

That’s right!

A masterpiece! ‘His Majesty Of Immortality and His Family’ has been completed.

The King of the kingdom of Ritten, this signifies the position to those who are responsible.

You who lined the palace of treasures, gold and gems to create sculptures that blend into the kingdom that created a special tax to the king.

You cannot escape from the historical criticism.

Nevertheless, the two statues of gold and jewels is an exquisite piece and are likely to remain for a very long time.

Artistic value: 923.

Special Options: ‘His Majesty Of Immortality and His Family’ increases their loyalty to the royal family of the nobility.

Ritten fame increases strong growth in the kingdom's reputation.

The Kingdom in the south's discontent is growing.

Increases the appearance of bandits in the mountains of the Kingdom.

- Carving skills have been enhanced.

- Mastery of the skill has improved dexterity.

- Blacksmith skills are enhanced.

- By creating a sculpture of the Royal Family, reputation has risen 514.

- Art stat raised by 5

- Luck rises by 3

- Attractiveness rises by 5.

Until now the completed number of masterpieces: 106

The King of the Kingdom of Ritten was greatly satisfied.

"It's really is a good piece."

"Yes. It was an honor as an engraver to be able to express His Majesty the King. "

"Here let me prepare a dinner for you."

"Thank you, but no sir. I do not need to eat to understand His Majesty's kindness, thank you. "

Though uncommon, Weed refused a free meal. Delicious food was available throughout the making of the sculpture, and plenty

of food was placed in his backpack.

In addition while working, he managed to come out with gold and jewels left over, its best to hurry and escape as soon as possible!

"Wy-3!"

Wy-3 has come down from the heavens as voracious as ever. The Kingdom of Ritten was known for strong long-distance trips.

"Well, good luck."

"I will await for the next opportunity."

"His Majesty will welcome you, anytime you need him!"

Weed jumped on the Wy-3 and whooped up as he soared over the kingdom. On the ground, the soldiers and nobles who were crossing an active area looked up at the sky and gave weed astonished looks. Weed waved his hand and gave a rotten smile.

I feel bad I could not catch you going hanmitcheon properly.

"Kkueeek!"

"This is heavy"

"That's all the money. Later I will feed you some horse meat. "

Having been deceived too many times, Wy-3 was too dumb to say this. But...

"I will only feed it to you"

"Kkueeeeeeek!"

Wy-3 flanged with joy.

"Let's go! Now to the Orc Territory"

****

Orc Land.

There was no official meaning to the name. Since the Yuroki Mountains, the mountains further east were collectively referred to as Orc Land. It was very common among the Orcs.

"Chwichwit!"

"Chwiyiyiyiik!"

Deep in the mountains, there was a new sound other than birds echoing in the mountains. Ever since Weed defeated the army of the Immortal Legion in the Yuroki Mountains, users were able to choose the Orc race.

Since that day users have had outstanding performances up in the Yuroki Mountains. Of course there was still some suffering starter Orcs. Other Kingdoms or those in the Central Continent built walls and were prepared against monsters.

The Orcs had to survive against a lot of strong monsters in the Yuroki Mountains. Their weapons and armor were poor, and food was not very plentiful. It was a much more difficult start compared to other races.

"Ooh, my town is gone. Chwichwi! "

There are many monsters that preyed among Orc Villages in the mountains. Then either a few thousand or even tens of thousands of Orcs would gather.

"Chwiik, Revenge!"

"Chweeeeet!"

Fearless Orcs went out to secure the supremacy of the Yuroki Mountains.

"This time, plenty of food was looted, chwichwichit!"

Orcs were able to multiply their numbers quickly by breeding. The breeding speed of the Orcs and their strong fighting ability is said to be the best privilege given to them. This is not an exaggeration. In addition, Orc users fought without fear of death thanks to their strong bodies.

Revenge, food, securing areas, quests, and exploring dungeons, because of these things mining development continues to occur. The Orcs are currently on a quest to take a mountain passage that was reaching out to the east and south indefinitely.

For those who enjoy a massive battle, and based on the magnitude of the Orcs, one would usually choose them. But if you talk about complex strategies or tactics, the Orcs did not accept them.

"What did you say? Tell me again from the beginning. Chwiyiyiit, "

"I went into the mountains in the valley and secured a passage way for the merchants to trade ... Chwichit. "

Simple words made understanding very effective.

"He abused our tribe, chwiik!"

"Kill, chwichwichwi!"

Stress that other such species would have could not accumulate. Eating, playing, and gathering together to go and fight, such were the ways of the Orcs.

****

Weed visited an Orc stronghold named Flame at Burucia, an area east of the Yuroki Mountain Range. A metropolis for the Orcs was created on the plains. You can expect similar types of culture from a human or dwarf, but the futures of orcs are very different. For Weed it is not an exaggeration to say that there is an extraordinary friendship.

Orc Karichwi! Whether it be in the Yuroki Mountains or anywhere else, no orc was ignorant to his power.

Ulchwi's sculpture of his seventh child has been fully restored. It had a familiar look to the Orcs, after all it is a fine sculpture.

"But the goal here is the look."

Transformed as Karichwi he had to report to the Orcs on the discovery of Ratzeburg.

“Your good looks, not slimmed down, chwichwit. Didn't even see more between the skin."

Orcs looked at him in envy. Karichwi is exceptionally exposed and stands out in appearance among the rest. His protruding buck

teeth and his selfish dirty looking face! His personality was larger than other Orcs, popular for leading the war of victory against the Immortal Undead Legion.

"If you want to become popular like Ulchwi,! Eat a bunch! You will gain more fat that way Chwiik"

"Thanks for telling me, chwiit!"

"I'll tell you about Ratzeburgh chwichichi. You better dig out your ear and listen!

Everyone was talking about Ratzeburgh! Weed did not care for gossip or explanations. In the human kingdoms, the king would meet him, and just as with any other mission they would talk about how they had trouble finding the meaning of the story. But there was absolutely no need.

"We Orcs guarded the other races!"

"Surely our ancestors are great Orcs, chwiit."

"Ulchwi was also great, chwichichwi."

"I hear there were loads of strong Orcs, I want to be so as well, chwiyiyiit."

"Ratzburgh we all lived together in harmony, chwichwichwit."

"Split the food, Chwiyiik."

Orcs who divided the rice to eat meant that they are recognized as key associates.

"I ate! Orcs have more meat chwichichichichiyiit!

Reported the discovery of Ratzburgh to the Orcs.

Due to the achievements for reporting the discovery of the ancient city, reputation with the Orcs will increase 690.

Orcs need courage to demonstrate their lack of law and order to protect.

As a reward your intimacy with them will lead to increased courage.

Courage is increases by 13.

Leadership increases by 9.

Charisma increases by 7.

Fighting Spirit increases by 6.

- Humans, Elves, and Orcs are now into a friendly state.

- Orcs and Dwarfs friendship that was in a wild state, has now rather improved.

This quest has a tendency to give out huge compensation. Even when reporting to kings, elegance, fame, charisma, charm etc... all rise significantly. The adventurers will have another reason to become envious when the findings are reported.

Weed took the sculpture to complete the quests given.

"It's time, chwit. So this is the sculpture. "

"It seems to have the markings of a brave Orc Chwiyiyiik."

Ulchwi completed a sculpture of his seventh child.

After a long time the sculpture returned back to their arms.

Orcs will be able to watch the sculpture and think about friendships with the other races.

"Chwiyiyiyiik."

Weed waited while looking around. Well what he is really waiting for is the compensation. This amount was enough for the master sculpting quest. Whether or not this chain-quest will continue keeps him curious.

"This sculpture I cannot get free, chwichit."

"This is the behavior of the right Orc"

Orc honesty is a virtue; Weed could also ask him for something.

"Come, follow me Chwiyichwiik." Weed took one last look and followed.

The Orc Chieftain Bulchwi leads Weed to his tent. When he arrives, there are plump young female Orcs preparing lunch.

"Let's eat together. Had trouble. Chwichwit. "

"....."

This compensation! This was a fancy rice meal that was a great honor for tens of millions of Orcs. 'That's right, how can I expect much compensation from the Orcs.' Weed wavered for a second before taking a seat and started to eat. Anyway, all that remains at least is to be seen eating the rice.

The Orc Bulchwi was a great glutton, and it was the same with the other young Orcs as well. Weed with the appearance of Karichwi ate several dogs and barbecued deer.

Meal finished, this time I got to go seriously bulchwi said.

"I will give away only 10 Orcs. Chwichichichit"

"Chwiik?"

They spoke English!

Weed did not know English and was puzzled. He wondered why all of a sudden.

"They will go along with you Karichwi their love for you is great, you can cancel if you want Chwichwichwiyiit!"

Weed now had an understanding

As a reward for the Quest it seems he was offered a bunch of Orcs!

"No never mind its fine. Profit! Chwiyiik!"

He never refused! But imagining the hungry hordes of Orcs is

terrible. Only 10 alone, but a large number of Orcs are truly powerful. Orcs usually settle a village and raise a family in order to eat well and spend quality time at night.

"And Karichwi I have something I have to show you, Chwichwichwit! "

"What is it!"

Bulchwi went into the space behind the barracks floor and removed a clogged straw. Then he entered the cellar down below.

"There is a need for absolute secrecy, chwichit only you will know of this place.

"All right. My mouth is sealed, chwichiik!"

Bulchwi pulled out a helmet from the edge of the cellar/basement. There was ancient writing next to it.

"This is the most ancient Orc loaded steel helmet... Chwiyiik, Chwiik"

Weed gently wiped the dust and dirt off with his fingers and sat down. Maybe it's enough to say this wasn't the final product, the iron smelted was not made properly. It was half fused together, but it is still iron. Made with a rugged texture, there are bumps made in the pitches and three short dog horns.

"I'll find out, chwichit!"

Identify!

Orc Loaded Steel Helmet

Durability: 24/60 Defense: 129

The Legendary Orc Farah took the gift from the Dwarfs who had created this helmet. The first four races lived in the great city of Ratzeburg where this was produced. Dwarf craftsman made the heavy helmet with the most solid pitching.

- Despite the age, the steel helmet still has life preserved by the Orcs.

Restrictions: Orc Race only.

Level: 570

Strength: 2,300

Special Options:

- Complete immunity to magic.

- Rules over all the Orcs

- Orc Birthrate increased by 50%

- Resistance to Magic

- If targeting a stronger monster, can deal 40% increased damage.

- All combat skills increased by 35%

- Impossible to Repair

+ 25 all stats related to combat.

Due to the historic feel of the goods Blacksmith skill proficiency increases.

"Chwiyiyiyiik!"

Weed snorted roughly. Such a wonderful item! This really is equipment that can be called luxury.

"Farah is the king of goods, chwichwichwi!"

"Have you never heard? Farah was the best Orc, everyone always followed whatever he said. chwiyichwiit"

Orcs told tales about how they grew up listening to Farah. Each generation has tried to come just like him. Weed really is no different when it comes to old treasures or selling. It is impossible to repair the limit, but still it would be sad if during a huge battle it breaks.

The Orc race really had a ridiculously high power limit, but whoever used this was a force to be reckoned with. Having been made roughly around the same time, a part of it stood out to weed. Looking like it has been made out of iron; it instead seemed to have been carved out of the bones of some animal.

"Perhaps this section... Chwiik. Identify!”

Steel Helmet Horn: Durability 14/25.

Horns are made out of Manticore bones.

It symbolizes the dignity of the Orc Race.

Orcs successful in hunting horns have been made by artisans.

Artistic value: 59.

Special options: Attack while wearing this helmet increases by 7%

While reading the story behind the sculpture it activated Weed's memory skill. Images from the eyes of Farah came into view.

****

Farah was in control of the Orc Race! With clear eyes looking down below at the Orc hill, the area was expansive. The Four races were currently living inside the buildings of Ratzburgh.

"Come on, chwiyiik!" Farah is taking out monsters with a ton of Orcs while a war is being waged in the vicinity of the city. In Ratzburgh City the size of the land for cultivating crops has grown and monsters have been invading constantly.

Farah has countered instead by taking out the monster strongholds rather than defending when they come to the lands. Because of this, Ratzburgh City was growing bigger day by day, and was also becoming safer.

"Chwiyiit, lets plant more corn tonight! chwichiik! So let's all eat

and share."

Orcs, even humans, elves, and dwarfs all respected Farah. He has widened the scale of appointment with orcs, and established a flat bank by the river. Rahtzburgh was being kept in order. That made the four races able to establish the current parameters.

****

"Chwiyiik!"

Weed spewed a loud and long snort. In the video it showed the Orc Race Farah leading the battle. The Orcs back then were hunting the Manticore bones, an impressive accomplishment. And back then the Orcs were incredibly brave, unlike now. He and his Orc brothers were devoted enough to the task and were willing to die for the people of Rahtzburgh.

Farah was the commander and because of that they were able to familiarize themselves with various combat methods. A true Orc!

He held a foundation that grew under his Orcs, and it later grew more than 40 times that number by the time he died. He even leaded a monstrous force before he was killed.

"I'll get to have fun!"

He wouldn’t have any place to lead the Orcs when they go hunting. This wasn’t something very new either. Looking back at

the Old Continent and how things changed, Weed became frustrated.

Orcs do not currently walk around as freely as the humans that rule the continent. Only on the fringes in the east and far south could they actually breed. But in comparison to the past, it was unprecedented, with a much larger liberty at hand.

"I have forgotten the appearance of Farah, I wish I could remember. Chwiik, if you could remember can you possibly carve Farah?" Bulchwi said as he took the helmet back.

"I could sculpt Farah. Chwit."

"Well son, let me thank you. chwichichichik!"

Ttiring!

A Sculpture of the Orc Farah

Orcs will quickly forget the facts they learned. After a few years they may not also remember Rahtzburgh. Farah made sculptures of Orcs to show his bravery. Through the Orc Carvings and forgotten instincts you will be able to learn a strong power.

In the history of the continent of Versailles the Orcs were

selected late, however through the quests of the species they were able to find the glory of the past.

The completion of the Sculpture will increase Orc Birth Rate.

Difficulty: Master Sculpting Quest.

Quest limit: Level 8 Advanced Sculpting.

Must have created a Masterpiece.

Must have a close relationship with the Orcs.

"I will make, chwichichik!"

You have accepted the Quest

****

Yu Byeong-Joon was feeling a sense of old age.

But every morning he wakes up with a thrilled heart. "Indeed, today, what will the adventure be?" Since playing Royal Road, he has watched a lot of people. Yu Byeong-Joon saw that people could not help having been limited mainly to ranking in the top of Royal

Road.

For a beginner, it is difficult even for those who enjoy light adventure. He had seen Weed's adventure from the very beginning. He saw him as narrow at first, as he explored dungeons and completed quests.

But suddenly he seemed to be watching him every day about his adventures. Of course it was not in a position to support the pure-hearted. 'Maybe I should saenggosaengeul today?’

When we see suffering it is just as enjoyable!

****

The Hermes guild could not believe the recent raid.

"For what have we been here, really?"

They came to the village of elves to attack, but the success of Weed was already clear. Even with the extremely hostile elves, as well having users and soldiers die, all of these were all terrible outcomes that were for naught. Moreover Weed was touring the various kingdoms while leaving no trace!

While the inhabitants of the continent of Versailles praised Weed, they were able to gather the news. Rumors said that Ritten was a kingdom and they were to arrive at the same time as Weed. But as soon as we were told to attack weed we were wiped out by a

Wizard of Ritten Kingdom.

And between absently circling, when we came close, a Wyvern flew into the sky and left.

"Wow! Long live Weed!"

"Please defeat the Hermes Guild."

Users and residents cheered by lifting their hands.

Weed is popular damn that guy! Users of the Hermes guild were forced to watch while hiding their identity.

"Now where else should we go?"

"Through the guild, we were asked to keep track of him, don't take the opportunity to look after.

He was moving fast, but if you keep trying the opportunity will come. In fact usually when leaving a kingdom there are people hunting, who would then chatter about the events in that kingdom.

There are constant hunting grounds for each level in the Kingdom. And the person you want to find usually can be found pretty quickly just by poking around and moving through the kingdom. But it's not just any one Kingdom in the area, but the

whole continent keeps saying he was just there.

"Did you hear the news that came from the East? The Orcs seem to be very happy.

"Perhaps could it be Sculptor Weed?"

"The Orcs have a higher self-esteem about their past.

“I tend to disregard the stupid orcs but we have to admit there could be something going on there.”

"Would this not be thanks to the discovery of Weed?"

The Hermes guild raid was devastated.

"Shit. Next up is the Orc Land."

"When are we going to get there?"

Chapter 11: History Of Orcs

Sakaksakak~

Weed confidently moved his carving knife.

‘I am somewhat familiar with the Orcs.’

It is really difficult to create a sculpture of something you’re unfamiliar with. And it’s also hard to find balance between these distinctive races since they reveal different personalities. But because of Weed’s adventures as Karichwi within the Orc tribes, he actually knows a lot more than anyone else.

‘Parachwi was an Orc known for being charismatic.’

T/L: [This is that ancient Orc I called Farah before]

Although he had little selfish and evil looking eyes, this was only just part of his appearance. Their past ways of living kept the 4 races alive in the Versailles Continent. They were tough creatures and took control of many frontiers. They would go past the cliffs and head towards the wilderness the monsters are. They will hold chest up high and would seem to have control with their freedom living as Orcs.

Parachwi held a glaive on each of his hands, roaring and was showing a great scene. Weed was making a sculpture at the Orc

Stronghold Bursilia high above in a gateway.

“Chwiik!”

“Karichwi is making something, Chwichwit!

“Your talent seems to be good, Karichwi Chwichwichwi!

“Chwiichiig! Let’s go hunting Karichwi.”

The passing Orcs were giving a short look as they pass.

If it was another human sculptor, the pressure would have been very substantial. The Orcs were being recognized as barbaric and heinous creatures that’s why having a certain degree of fear will never allow you succeed this.

On the other hand, it was totally different in the case of Weed.

“Chwiis, don’t bother me. I need to completely boil it before taking out some, chwichik!”

“Chwi, chwiig, Karichwi that would be great.”

“Frightening, chwichwit!”

“When you get back from hunting, bring me something to eat,

chwiik!”

“Oh, Roger. Chwichik!”

Weed was extorting the Orcs even from what they eat.

Karichwi’s face is rather different as it was already enough to scare other male Orcs. While the female Orcs, they were secretly looking at his face as they blushed. The brawny female Orcs will then throw dried horse meat to him then show their shyness and run away.

The Orc that surpasses the world’s most popular idol!

***

The large sculpture of Parachwi was about 4 meters in height. Whether it was the Orc’s strength or their dignity, it would be recognizable even from afar.

The Hero of the Orcs was standing on Bursilia!

This sculpture of Weed looked like it was made using a sheer amount of force. But if you looked closely, you will see that it contains very fine details.

The sculpture’s eyes and chin were brown in color even though it was made of stone. Even the wrinkles on the neck was neatly

reproduced. Its rough leather armor and crude iron boots gave the same feel as what those Dwarven Blacksmiths makes. The thickness and length of his round glaive along with its sharpness seems good for grinding. There was also a knife that goes well with Orc Parachwi, but it might have been of little use for him.

“This is good enough… chwiik!”

-Please set a name for the sculpture.

“Name, chwiik. I’ve already decided. Orc Lord Parachwi.”

-Is Orc Lord Parachwi correct?

At first, he did the sculpture because of the quest. But after learning the history of Parachwi, he wholeheartedly wanted to do this sculpture no matter what. Although in his heart, he still regrets having the lack of skills.

“The work of Karichwi, Chwiichwiit!”

“Keuuk! After this, I also want to be an excellent warrior Orc, Chwiichichwiik!

“So handsome, Chwiik, he looks like dependable.”

Seeing that the Orcs cheered as they looked towards the sculpture of Parachwi, Weed suddenly felt like his heart became

lighter.

At least, the sculpture has captured the hearts of the Orcs.

“Orc Lord Parachwi, right. Chwichiik!”

Ting!

Magnum Opus! You’ve completed Orc Lord Parachwi

Hidden Heroes have played an important role in the long history of Versailles Continent. This is a sculpture of Orc Lord Parachwi that was brought into this world. The sculpture was created by a sculptor who is discovering the history of the continent by utilizing his full talent. It is an embellished and accurate depiction of Orc Lord Parachwi which gives the Orcs an endless sense of pride.

Artistic Value: 21,328.

An artwork based on the history of the Orcs.

Effects: Increases the Health and Strength of all Orcs by 4%.

Increases the Charisma and Leadership of all Orc Lords by 14%.

Increases fertility rate.

Reduces the phenomenon of Orcs weakening when fighting stronger monsters even with lower stats.

Increases the growth speed of young Orcs who sees Lord Parachwi by 20%.

Increased birth rate of Orcs Lords and Orc Warriors.

Increases the recovery rate of Orcs around the statue by 65%.

Number of Completed Magnum Opus: 11.

– Sculpting Mastery has improved.

– Handicraft Skill has improved.

– Sculptural Understanding has increased by 1

– Fame has increased by 2,178.

– Art stat has increased by 49.

– Charisma has increased by 22

– Leadership has increased by 22

– Stamina has increased by 25

– All stats has increased by 3 for completing a Magnum Opus.

“Chwiiik!”

Weed felt good that he sniffed and was about to shed tears. His Orc Lord Parachwi sculpture was a successful Magnum Opus. And this time, his Sculpting Skill has also increased by 6.2%.

‘The reason has got to be the big size of Parachwi’s sculpture. Though, I also did well because it was easy to begin with.’

Everything that happened went well!

Bulchwi approached Weed.

“Good work. Chwiiik!. The Great Orc is holding some puny knife used for peeling leather, Chwiik. And I actually wondered if it was gonna be quite fantastic, chwik! Is this what Orc Parachwi looked like? Ch..Ch..Chwik.”

“That’s right. Chwikk!”

“It looks like it could even eat a hawk in one bite! Chwikk.”

“Chwikk. Easily.”

“I like this stone. Great Job. You really are Karichwi. Chhhhhk!”

Orc Lord Parachwi’s Sculpture completed

Through the appearance of Orc Lord Parachwi, the historical legitimacy, strength and courage of the Orcs is being shown.

The Orc’s eyes will now be open to art. Orcs who see this sculpture will understand the mysterious power of Culture.

You have finished the sculpture of Orc Lord Parachwi during the first Sculptor Master Quest.

This work will be registered as a treasure among Orcs.

Culture will be created in Orc cities and villages.

Due to the benefits of culture, Orcs will be able to enjoy and learn from seeing a work of art.

Friendship with the Orcs has reached the state of “Brothers”

Orcs will never stand still when crisis befalls their brothers.

The Orcs will celebrate the completion of the sculpture and will

hold a festival within the entire tribe.

The festival will take place for 25 days having increased birth rate of 300% during this time period.

This news was like a blessing for all Orc users!

The Orcs were multiplying at a scary rate. By the end of the festival, there's probably going to be a ton of Orcs for sure.

Users who chose the profession Warrior Orc usually handle the heavy jobs especially when they are in a hunting party. But also among users, some usually gather youth Orcs in the town when going hunting to give them the heavy burden jobs. Now that young Orcs are growing much faster due to the Orc sculpture, it will make the users really happy.

The Versailles Continent is a vast place and there's still far too many frontiers. Except for the extremely northern parts, there are several places around Morata where a variety of monster hunting grounds exists.

If this culture reached out to the stronger Orcs on the east and south, then someday an organized Kingdom of the Orcs might be built.

'Look at that fast power breeding of these Orcs, they may not take so long to finish.'

Up until now, great rewards have been reaped from the Sculpting Master Quest.

Weed waited for Bulchwi to return.

“Karichwi, I thought you were just a normal Orc chwichichis. But it seems otherwise. Chwichiig.”

“I was just a little bit on the superior side, chwichwichwi. Still, there’s no need for you guys to be so timid.”

“Thank you. I will give you a bunch of Orcs, about 250,000 of them chwichik!”

Weed absolutely did not want this compensation.

“Chwichichiik. There is no need so don’t bother.”

“Just take it, chwichwi chwiik! And when I saw the sculpture of Parachwi, I heard the young Orcs sing about a song I really didn’t really know about.

“What is the song, chwik!”

“I really had no idea about it until just recently, chwiik.”

Bulchwi bashed together the glaives in both of his hands which

caused sparks to fly up as he sang.

Outside the cozy cavern, Clang!

It’s too hard and high to invade in, Clang!

With a blocked rock crevice, Clang!

I walk against the wind, Clang!

As the winter passed, Clang!

I moved through the petals, Clang!

Place where we live, Clang!

To obtain precious water, Clang!

You can sow the seeds, Clang!

You can sow the seeds, Clang!

But monsters are scary, Clang!

We will fight till the end, Clang!

In order for Orcs, Clang!

Orc don’t know how to walk towards enemy, Clang!

Blindly goes along, Clang!

His pronunciations were not only inaccurate but also, during the middle of the song, the Clang sound was where the important words were at. Each hit of the glaives was overflowing with excitement between its stones as it violently strikes down and gives a reminiscent look as that of a drummer.

Despite having a lot of difficulty on hearing the song, Weed still clapped even though Orcs were actually tone-deaf creatures.

“Great singing! chwiik!”

“Any Orc knows how, chwichwichik. Although I sing better, Chwiiig! But of course still not as good as you Karichwi.”

– You have gathered the information about the four races who lived in the cave.

Bulchwi then continued.

“Karichwi, no matter what you do, chwiiig! We are always here for you. About the songs that the young ones are singing, chwiik.

Could you go and find it out?”

Everyone knows about the song of the Orcs!

Ever since the users has been able to use the Orcs, the Orcs have been singing some songs. But the question is, whether these songs actually points to a quest or to a treasure. But, if you actually didn’t know the exact location of Ratzeburg, it was actually an absolutely useless song.

The Orcs were not leaving any writings for the future. And with their frequent battles, they could just thin out and die. Their only means of passing important information to influence their race was through singing.

Ting!

The Sanctuary of the Four Races

Humans, Dwarves, Elves, and Orcs lived together in a cave! The four races teamed up and were able to survive together.

Report on how they lived together inside the cave.

Difficulty: Sculptor Master Quest

Quest Limit: Sculpting Skill Advanced Level 8 or higher

“Chwiik. Of course, I’ll learn about it.”

– You have accepted the quest.

***

“Ugh.”

Lee Hyun’s hair was messy and his body ached badly. He was as tough as steel, but he’s recently going in between attending school and playing Royal Road so he accumulated a lot of fatigue.

“Maybe I should take a break for a day.”

He recently suffered a major event in the Rosenheim Kingdom and after that, he’s been stuck on doing continuous quests.

His head was particularly painful; searching for information about Ratzeburg these past few days seemed to have exhausted his mental power. The body important and must be conserved like a treasure. When he was young he didn’t know anything at all about how precious the body is as getting sick gets increasingly harder as one age.

“Young people need to stay healthy or else they would end up paying hospital bills.”

Hospital bills are more dreadful than a dragon!

It was Saturday. Lee Hyun jumped out of his blanket then started eating breakfast.

“Zzzzzzzz.”

Straight to sleep!

It did not even took 30 seconds for him to fall asleep again completely. The moderately humid room is full of hung up laundry and by placing pots with plants and herbs, would it bring the room a feeling of relaxation.

“Ah. I slept well, it’s already lunch.”

Lee Hyun got up for lunch and ate rice then right back into his cycle and went under his blankets.

“Zzzzz, Fuhyuhyu.”

He slept until evening then ate rice again.

“There are nights where I need to sleep soundly. Worrying too much about things can cause problems. Zzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzz.”

He lied down and slept deeply as soon as the lights have been switched off. After sleeping the whole day, he was woken up by the

chirping birds early in the morning.

Lee Hyun jumped up right out of bed.

His body felt lighter and fresh, he was even considering on going for a cold bath to clear his head.

“It has been a restorative sleep.”

This was the best medicine since it did not cost any money.

Now that he has his mind relaxed and have eaten, he was already in the mood to start a good day. He logged in into his computer to check the finances for the house. But then, he suddenly remembered a promise he made.

“Oh, is today the day to go hiking?”

The plan he made with Hyo Rin Jung to go hiking was today. [T/N: Hyo Rin Jung is Hwaryeong]

Lee Hyun suddenly forgot that he was looking towards their household budget schedule.

He needed to climb up early on a mountain in the morning since she needs someone to look out for her.

“Sigh~, I need to get ready.”

Lee Hyun immediately informed his sister to wash up and prepared a meal for her to eat later then wore T-shirt and pants.

Hyo Rin Jung was born to be a musical genius.

For Hyo Rin Jung not to be put in an embarrassing situation, even though Lee Hyun did not really want to go climbing, he just thought of it as an exercise and feeling fresh air. It would be healthier to wake up early on a regular basis for delivery than to hike occasionally. Lee Hyun was not really in the mood for hiking as he had delivered 500 newspapers and milk by running up and down steep hills on a snowy day in the middle of winter.

“I do want to know a little bit of the good view of the mountain, but I don’t really know where to go.”

Lee Hyun just waited while he was on his computer. Before selling equipments, he went and confirmed the market price first.

The transaction price for swords are steady right now while the price is dropping for the staffs. The price for mage equipment were originally expensive, so for it to sometimes decline should be normal.

Recently in the Hall of Fame, videos of independent adventurers were being more popular compared to the users that shows a guild war during the recent week.

While in the forums most of the time, people talks about three trending topics. It includes their boasts about the Hermes Guild, The Embinyu Church and other guilds. But right now, what dominated were the stories about Weed's adventures and his quest.

Weed felt proud as the Orc Boards were full of praises for him. The female Orc users says that their ideal guy was Karichwi and should dependable while others say that day by day he was becoming more brutal.

'It seems a lot of users are picking the Orc race now.'

Maybe it was somehow due to the inconveniences in the Yuroki Mountains and the city being not that developed that the users does not usually pick this race. But this is actually the appeal of the race itself since it allows things like raising your own young Orcs which allows other people to appreciate the Orcs more.

Owning a tribe of young Orcs, it will steadily grow and grow until it became thousands in numbers. Due to the nature of their species, they are being able to rapidly expand in an area. Some popular users actually include Orcs that have quite achieved a large amount of forces.

Kkokkiyo! Kkokkiyo!

[T/N: And yes this is a rooster crowing.]

He goes between the internet and boiling the sauce then waited for it to cool down. It was 6 am and the promised hiking is almost approaching. Lee Hyun made a pajeon and was only preparing a kimbap and makgeolli.

[T/N: Pajeon is a korean pancake with green onions as its main ingredient along with other ingredients.]

Kimbap is rice with various ingredients usually covered in seaweed like sushi.

Makgeolli is the korean wine made from either fermented wine or wheat.]

'Then, I'm going to eat.'

As he was making a cheap lunch, he jumped over to look out of the window and Hyo Rin Jung's car was parked in front of them. She got a show until dawn then came straight there. She was wearing a hat and sunglasses and actually fell asleep on the driver's seat. Lee Hyun gently tapped her window and Hyo Rin Jung woke up then greeted him with a fresh voice.

"Good Morning."

"Is that drool in your mouth..."

"Ah!"

And before the sun came up, they went right off into the mountains.

***

The car was parked in a parking lot near the entrance of the mountain and Lee Hyun brought their lunch in his hand.

“Shall we?”

“Yes. I think this will be enjoyable because it has been a long time since I went hiking.”

The city was not that far from the mountains. But since they came early, it was very quiet in the parking lot. Hyo Rin Jung was in her hiking boots with his backpack along with her climbing gear and was perfectly ready.

“How’s school life?”

“I attend just not to drop out.”

“Just asking out of curiosity so please don’t misunderstood, are you planning on having several kids?”

“These days when raising a kid, you need to make money. It is a must to do.”

“Don’t you think it’s good for extended families to have harmonious relationship?”

“I’d rather cherish my family rather than cherish someone with a lot of money. Rice is already enough to feed someone so what you need in life is someone that you really love, am I right?”

“But, you still need money……”

They went up the trail as they had a 20-minute conversation of that kind. Hyo Rin Jung was hiking with the desire of being with Lee Hyun as long as possible which took around 4-5 hours.

“This is more like a test.”

Even though she had physical training like stage dancing, this sudden hike in the mountain still forced her down to the ground in the morning.

“All my makeup is already erased…..”

Hyo Rin Jung stopped and catches her breath.

As they climb up, her heart beating fast as her body temperature rises was evident enough that it’s already unreasonable to continue!

That's why after a while of climbing they rested. Although she wanted to get going, the way she looked she might go down if forced to go on.

"Wait a minute, let's get some rest"

After climbing for another 30 minutes, it was already hard for Hyo Rin Jung.

She relaxed on a stone near Lee Hyun as she waited for supplements then he said.

"Is it hard? Do you want to come down now?"

"Absolutely not! I'm saying we go up to the top. The fog at the top is floating so if it lifts up I will be frustrated since I want to feel it."

Lee Hyun waited for Hyo Rin Jung who was sitting next him to get up and depart. But at some point, Hyo Rin Jung's head gently leaned to his shoulder.

She lacked sleep because she prepared right after her concert and could just sleep for a little bit during dawn.

Lee Hyun sat there and felt the breeze as he listened to the sound of the birds. Hyo Rin Jung continued to lean on his shoulder as she slowly fell asleep then Lee Hyun tried to wake her up.

“Hmm, it’s cold to sleep in a place like this. You should take your medicine or else you’ll catch a cold.”

Lee Hyun took his sweater off and carefully wrapped it around the back of Hyo Rin Jung. She was so deep in sleep that even waking her up couldn’t even do anything.

“If that’s the case, I’d rather carry you on my back then.”

Lee Hyun pulled up the arms of Hyo Rin Jung.

“Now, where should we go?”

At once, he started to climb the mountain again.

“I remember when I used to deliver rice in high mountains like this.”

Back then, he had travelled 20 kilometers bringing 3 sacks of rice so Hyo Rin Jung was rather light. Carrying a girl up a mountain is not easy, only because he did had a lot physical training could he easily do this.

He could go and carry her without even resting.

Drops of sweat came from his forehead along as it was drenched along with his t-shirt because of the sweat and fog. It was really

hard to move without giving her discomfort.

“Today I don’t have any need to go out, my whole day will be solely on Royal Road.”

Lee Hyun piggybacked Hyo Rin Jung and strongly believed in his body due to his past experiences of carrying heavy sacks of rice.

Hyo Rin Jung was having a dream.

Whenever she is having her hard times, there would be a man that would back him up. Although poor at academics, he was caring and warm like a family man! Although he has an eccentric personality, he’s still funny and trustworthy. This was her dream marriage life.

“A guy who does the laundry, wash the dishes, cleans the house and earns money.

Then have kids and share hardships as they grow up.”

Hyo Rin Jung’s dream family was perfect in everyway. On the television are apartment commercials, refrigerator ads, and washing machine ads. All of it put together has a sweet dream-like atmosphere.

Hyo Rin Jung then wakes up from her dreamland and slowly opens her eyes. A snapback to reality, she was on Lee Hyun’s back going up the mountain.

‘Oh… he’s giving me a piggyback ride.’

Hyo Rin Jung tried to ask why but then thought it would be difficult for Lee Hyun and might surprise him if she did. Secretly deep down she felt warmth from Lee Hyun. She did not feel that the scent of a man drenched in sweat was disgusting or dirty.

“I want to get up to the top, could you do that as a favor to me?”

Hyo Rin Jung was getting all warm inside to the point that she can’t even imagine.

The warmth was indescribable.

His breathing was getting heavy and his whole body started to sweat while silently climbing up the mountain!

“I don’t really know what you’re going to see at the top of the mountain. But as soon as we’re up there, we will eat kimbap and afterwards go back down.”

He would have never imagined what she was thinking.

Hyo Rin Jung buried her face onto Lee Hyun.

‘I am glad we came to the mountains, today seems like it will contain many happy memories.’

And Lee Hyun...

“Heavy, heavy.....”

***

Weed connected back to the place that what was Ratzeburg. Based on the songs of the Orcs, the sanctuary of the four races was located in a cave.

“I have to look for places with mountains or mountain ranges in the surroundings.”

Beyond the Great Plains of Ilsu was a steep and mountainous terrain.

“Going against the wind, so it must have windy parts. Walking with the blooming flowers, though it might be spring at that time. There are lot of areas with blooming flowers....”

Weed who was in Ratzeburg decided to go towards the most probable place with the same topography, towards the east.

He could’ve just took the Wyverns and went to the possible mountains. But, they might pass something and go beyond it so he chose to just directly walk until the end. Also walking allows you to see more, think more and also experience many things.

Vanessa Gardens

Because of the Butterfly Festival, there would be lot more people in this place. The flourishing flowers were all in full bloom, that's why Weed was so careful not to step on them.

"Let's not destroy nature."

He slowly walked on the ground as flowers that swayed by the wind could be seen.

"Beautiful."

A lot of people who were attending was endangering the flowers on the roadside.

Some of the flowers which took the Lord trouble of putting them in the roadside were already dying.

– For having a good treatment with the environment your Flower Arrangement skill mastery increased.

– Affinity to Nature has increased by 1.

A smile flashed from the Weed's face.

“Well, not really expecting something like this… But, this is also not quite bad!”

Even though he could not pull out flowers because of Affinity to Nature, he could still make a landscape map of the area and sell it to Florists.

He continued to walk on the garden and found a place where rubble was piled up. It was strangely old and was the type of thing that you would pass by without regard. But Weed still wanted to go closer the rubble just in case.

At that moment….

Ting!

You have found the historical place of Petra Walls.

Your Reputation has increased by 230

Your Intelligence has increased by 3.

You can now build Petra Walls on your governing cities.

Petra Walls reduces the morale of the of monsters with low construction costs.

A vision appeared in front of Weed.

Dwarves were splitting through big rocks. They were cutting the rocks to an appropriate size and let the Orcs build. The rocks then became a barrier to prevent monsters invade the Great Plains of Ilsu

“If it was back then, I would have not come here.”

Weed stood near the rubble as users nearby frequently passed by. The users went to the hunting grounds and stepped into the rubble then just went away, Weed prayed right after. But someone like Weed, discovering something or having special experience was not what he was looking for. He was considering on joining the festival but then what Weed only really wanted was historical knowledge about Ratzeburg.

‘I have to know the equipments that they used to know their topography’

Weed goes around and find what he could on the Ruins of the Great Plains of Ilsu.

What he got was not very significant. He got weapons of Orcs stored in their storehouse along with seeds that belonging to the Elves found on a hill made of stone. Because it had been too long since Ratzeburg had existed, what he found was only broken pieces of pottery along with some metal debris. He also then fished on the Tinius River.

Fishing in Ratzeburg

This was the location that the humans used to catch fish.

When there’s no meat around, Dwarves also often come here.

Your Fishing Skill proficiency has increased.

Using this fishing spot to fish would increase the probability of catching fish by 37%.

After these minor discoveries, Weed gradually walked towards the east.

After a long time of searching, he arrived in a mountainous area. With his level, Weed does not need to worry about surviving from the beasts residing there. Beginners who starts in Boronis also sometimes come here. It’s rough terrain was by far still normal and also almost desolate.

“It seems to be around this area.”

He arrived to a place with blooming flowers after walking down a path in the mountains of Ratzeburg.

“It is very high and indeed difficult to break in. I’m going to have to do a search in the higher part of the mountains.”

Through inspecting several mountain peaks, it alone would reduce the area to be searched.

“Wy-Three!”

Weed rode the his wyvern while looking on the mountains.

“I’m exposed too much; monsters on the high mountains would quickly discover me. The four races must’ve chosen a place that would keep them away from unwelcome forces.”

He went and looked at these peaks.

“The terrain must be very steep. If you rolled in this cliff you will die.”

The place has a normal amount of trees while the closest place to this valley also seems to be good. In this quest, Weed gathered a lot of knowledge regarding its location from the store houses.

“This is too narrow. Even though it is a large cave it will be too hard to…. pass through!”

A cozy sanctuary yet hidden!

A lot of trees grew up here while large and small rocks were located down below. A lot of beasts do not dare to come here but that might be also because there are other monsters that were

hanging near the gorge.

Weed walked around and checked the rocks.

He was also pushing larger rocks and look for hidden spaces that might not have been explored yet. There were a lot of pieces of unusual rocks on this peak. But sadly, there was only one rock that was useful for a sculptor. Even if a sculptor was lacking strength, he could just use a good trick in this rock and just chip it away and break it down. Many of the materials used was here, although he just find it a little strange.

“There are some signs here, looks like hit marks...”

Some scratches were found around the rocks!

“Identify!”

– You could see hit marks of Orcs.

“It’s nearby.”

Weed looked around with keen eyes.

A suspicious area where large trees are conveniently located. The trees are very tall, and there are many stones and rocks below.

‘I never thought it would be located here from the beginning’

Weed started from above and cleared the stones one by one.

Tuda dadak!

A squirrel jumped out from a hiding place and startled Weed.

Weed pulled out a stone that seemed to look like it was artificially placed among other stones of proportional size.

“This has been worked on.”

With all of the stones removed, there was an entrance to a hole that was big enough to accommodate two or three people.

Book 27: Forge Of Hestia

Chapter 1: Sculptures Made From Earth

“Could this place really have something? I have not seen anyone enter this place at all.”

Inside the cave, Weed held a magical stone which releases light. Although he could use a torch, if that place that he came in was actually the correct one, the heat from the fire might undermine the ruins.

Weed walked inside the cave.

Ting!

You have found Montvertruria, the sanctuary of the Humans, Elves, Dwarves and Orcs!

You have arrived at the cave where different races had lived together and overcame challenges before they scattered around the Versailles Continent. The origin of this place was said to be the remain of a blessing from the gods.

Benefits: Fame has increased by 12,000.

You have received the ‘Adventurer Who Explored the History of the Continent’ title.

You can report about this discovery. Nobles and knights can't afford to hide this great discovery, you must directly report to the King.

– Due to the adventure, all stats have increased by 7.

– Courage has increased by 12

– Due to this historical discovery, Intelligence has increased by 9

Finally, the cave in which the four races lived has been found. His Sculpting Master Quest to find Montvertruria after Ratzeburg has led to a successful discovery!

"Kehehehe, I have come to the right place!"

Using the magical stone, he found his way in the dark and found out that the interior was pretty broad and forked off to a six-branch path.

"I'm going through all of it. Not going to every path would be ridiculous."

His Sculpting Master Quest has been advancing swiftly so far and he was also interested about finding something about the history of the races. It was better than he had expected.

As if Weed got a winning lottery ticket, his imagination ran wild

as he became anxious about what's going to happen with this life changing event.

'The first cave contained gold ingots while the second one gave out ancient diamonds and lots of rubies. Rubies have also increased in value lately. The third cave contained various weapons and minerals. The fourth one gave out silver ingots. Well, it would've been great if the silver was not tarnished. And now the fifth cave...'

Even one antique vase would already have a tremendous value itself.

"I did not know I would be selling antiques for money. Life is blind once a lot of money has been coming in. Kehehehe."

Weed's heart palpitated and trembled.

"The Sculpting Master Quest has never been this good. Going here first, even beggars could get rich on robbing this place."

This is the oldest place on the continent, naturally, he's going to sweep everything and leave nothing behind since one wouldn't really find anything here except for best treasures.

Weed saved the largest one among the forked paths for the last. If one relied on his instincts rather than greed, this would naturally be the better choice.

“I think that in there, it will just give me gold. But anything is also fine.”

Jewelry, gold, silver, antiques and ornaments! Any of those, unless there are also other valuable goods.

Clink Clink!

However, there was only a little that remained in that cave and only one broken steel weapon was left on the ground. The greedy Orcs took everything when they migrated from Ratzeburg. It was as if a moving company was called and left it desolate!

Weed was not yet done. He looked at the whole cave and tried to find a secret passage that might also contain goods.

“Still, I haven’t even entered on a lot of caves. I’m just going elsewhere. In here, there isn’t even any bowls or chopsticks for me.”

Hope has slightly decreased.

***

As they ate meat in Vargo Fortress, Geomchi decided that they needed to get stronger!

In the Yuroki Mountains, Seechwi was enjoying her date with

Geomchi2 when Yurin arrived hastily using her Picture Teleportation. Geomchi along with the idiots from Geomchi2 to Geomchi5 were then gathered together.

Geomchi said.

“Let’s take a monster subjugation quest.”

“Yes master, let us prepare here then.”

Geomchi2 having seen the Orcs in Yuroki Mountains, found out how important it was to have a proper tactics and combat readiness.

With the current experience of the dojang instructors, they would be able to easily wound those weak Orcs.

Geomchi shook his head.

“At most, I would just see and calculate your abilities on fighting monsters and whatnot here. Let’s go to another place.”

“The Master’s words are right. I was wrong.”

Geomchi, the instructors, and the practitioners went to the gates of Vargo Fortress, heading for a dungeon. They traversed the rough terrain carelessly and headed forward.

They always fought this way because only by going through big risks would one be able to usually win big.

Martial Arts was a profession where you must overcome your limitations. One must have the courage to jump down from a cliff in order to get stronger.

“There are dangerous places nearby. Once we enter, there will be Barbarians that we have been always hearing about. There will be also a lot of monsters that will emerge.“

“Then, let’s enter!”

Even though the Barbarians were just outside the Hairen Nest, they still did not risk going in.

However, Geomchi led his disciples and went in without hesitation.

“Kill all of them!”

They only chose monsters which looked strong when they fought.

During their beginner days, a lot of them died since they lacked barley bread.

“Why are you leaving yourself in a good shape when your mind is

having hardships.”

“Do as the Master says!”

When one’s mind is poor, the body also suffers. Conversely, if the body is weak, the mind will also suffer.

Since ignorance could always be attributed to being more courageous, Geomchi watched the monster army with a pleasing smile.

“Hehe, these guys are unbelievably fast and strong.”

“Refurbish your skills. Sword-cloning Skill!”

“Concentrate your attacks!”

The Geomchi practitioners struggled and fought from their respective positions.

However, monsters still continued to emerge and jump out of Hairen Nest.

In the surrounding areas, hunting didn’t occur that much that’s why those monsters have already bred for a long time as they flock in like bees, causing a slight uproar.

The monsters who attacks Vargo Fortress to obtain food were only the ones who are small and weak from their herds. Because of that, the level of monsters that they were currently hunting has already entered a whole other level of monstrosity.

The Geomchi practitioners then realized that they were not really experiencing a lot of danger that often.

Eventually, the practitioners died one after another. The seniors risked themselves in saving each other; at least they still have their spirit even if they had lost the battle. Even though they had their Sword Cloning skill, it was still very difficult for them to deal with the monsters. Because of their low mana, they could only use this skill a few times.

“Well, I guess that we need to invest a little more stats on Knowledge and Wisdom in order to increase our mana.”

Every time the practitioners level, they were putting only one point on Wisdom.

Although they had underestimated their skills, continuing on fighting was something that has been actually quite helpful to hone their body to some extent.

Geomchi5 shouted that enemy scouts that went out before already came back.

“Master, monsters are coming!”

“What? Then let’s go and find a good place to defend.”

The Geomchi practitioners from Vargo Fortress ran away towards the surrounding ridge and hid under it. A group of hungry monsters who just came back from the outside had flocked towards the instructors.

“Eat the humans!”

“They are fools to have come out of their city. Also, their weapons are mine!”

The monsters’ drool dripped down as the black land surrounding them was covered by it.

The Geomchi practitioners felt a surge of tension and excitement.

“To be able to fight wholeheartedly. This is a new experience of fighting monsters.”

Even the Geomchis that had sustained severe injuries still went in and fight.

“Keh! Human, die!”

“Take of their skins and eat them… Curse of the Serpent!”

Monsters shoot poisoned arrows and even used magic.

Suddenly, people suddenly emerged from the ridge around them and out came a surprise.

It was the Geomchi practitioners that were located on the surrounding ridges.

It looked like a warzone as the fighting broke out.

“Seniors, go ahead already.”

“We’re coming!”

And again, the practitioners died one after another.

This time, there were a total of 143 who died. If you consider the current strength of the Geomchis, they sustained enormous damage. After the battle ended, the surrounding corpses and loot that piled up could already fill the surrounding mountains.

“Master, should we pick the items on the ground?”

“Just bring those which looks like sellable.”

“Yes!”

The merchants who would hear this conversation would be shocked.

Usually, the Geomchis only takes swords and weapons that look good and the rest of it will just be left because they were too tiresome to bring.

“And also, look for rings and necklaces. Be sure that I will get the one with the most Knowledge and Mana.”

“This is so that we could at least use our skills more than once. Let’s pick them up and wear them so that we would become stronger.”

Geomchi was a man who ignored rings, necklaces and other accessories that he wore until now. There were even rare jewelry items among the things that he abandoned since it did not get his interest. The collected value of them was actually already enough to buy a collection of luxury villas in Morata.

“Master, I have seen Barbarians around a dungeon entrance .”

“The let’s not just watch and go find it.”

“Yes!”

The practitioners split up and found the Barbarians along with

the dungeon entrance based on the description.

“Let’s consider it first.”

“Let’s go in!”

You have discovered a Dungeon, Favlo Mountain Den.

This is the borders of Barbaric Kana Tribe.

This monster den is very important to the monsters. Stories says that this place contains hidden treasures of the monsters, but someone has yet to enter and discover it.

If you conquer this dungeon, you will receive honor from the Barbaric Kana Tribe.

Reward: Fame has increased by 1980.

Double experience and item drops for one week.

The first monster to be killed will drop out the best item.

The level of the monsters living inside was very high to the extent that their levels were even higher compared to the normal Dens.

“Let me see your battles. Inside is the lair of the monsters so until you beat them, meat is prohibited.”

“Yes, Master!”

Geomchi1, Geomchi2, and Geomchi3 explored the interior of the den and led half of the practitioners into battle.

Geomchi4 and Geomchi 5 along with the rest fought with the monsters who were going to come to the entrance of the den.

From an early age, even if they did not attend school, they were still able to regularly eat more than three meals a day.

Even if they had bad exam results, they ate their rice as those practitioners remember the warm memories of their parent’s compliments!

Whenever they were dungeon hunting, they weren’t eating meat and sometimes, even rice. However, even with these hardships, they were overcoming their battles.

“I will take the lead.”

“Master, we’ll follow right behind you.”

Geomchi1 along with Geomchi2 and the practitioners, head straight and fought all the monsters that emerged.

The levels of the practitioners were not very similar. In particular, some were low-level people. However, the instructors and seniors watched each others back and perfectly cleaned up the dungeon with only 47 deaths.

“Well, a lot died.”

“I’m sorry, Master!”

If you compare it to the difficulty of the dungeon, what they got was actually just a minor damage. They fought without a priest and just used bandages to cover their wounds and they still did an incredible performance.

Ting!

You have cleared Favlo Mountain Den.

You will be respected as a true warrior by the Barbarians of the Kana Tribe.

– Fame has increased by 2.

– Charisma has increased by 1

The practitioners did not insist on using swords during hunting. Basically, using swords was an excellent idea. But, Martial Arts

with the Weapons Master skill made it possible to use all kinds of weapons.

If they have a long range opponent, they could use bow and arrows to attack while if the opponent is tough and has a high defense then they could use axes as a weapon. This way they could take advantage of the weapons whenever they are needed. That was their huge advantage.

The Geomchi practitioners could change their equipment to become different types of combat professions so that they can do a precise hunting when fighting Bosses.

“Is it already the end?”

“Yes! The treasures have also been taken already. It turns out that these monsters have quite a lot of weapons and coins that piled up from the fortress of the Niflheim Empire.”

“Among the equipment, is there anything I can use?”

“They are all very old stuff… Just a bunch of armors. But it looks like it could be fixed.”

“Let’s just show this to Weed later on. Now to eat rice, let’s go to the next dungeon. There must be at least one strong one there.”

“Yes, Master.”

The Geomchi instructors and the practitioners just ate barley bread to fill their stomach. They went on to another nearby dungeon without even going back and repair their equipment at Vargo Fortress.

And again, 39 became victims of the place after cleaning up the dungeon.

“There are really a lot of good monsters and dungeons around this area.”

“It seems like they are for us, Master.”

“Also, where is the next dungeon in the vicinity?”

“According to the words of the barbarians, it is located straight ahead.”

“If it’s close then let’s go so that we could eat rice.”

The Geomchis entered into a nearby dungeon again. This was the third dungeon they have entered and also the hardest one yet.

In this place, 53 people died while 130 people were wounded and it would be difficult for them to battle for the next 2 days unless treated by divine magic.

“Send the injured kids to Vargo Fortress, we are going to the next dungeon.”

“Yes, Master.”

Geomchi wanted them to grow stronger that’s why he decided they continued on.

Since most of their levels had already exceeded 300, it would be a great loss if they died.

Many of the victims were practitioners so they have to cooperate more

So far, the monsters that they were fighting were far stronger than the average monsters.

It sends down a chill to their spine when they think that their level and proficiency in Weapons Master will decrease. However, as a lot of people have been dying, the practitioners have to cooperate even more.

Even if they were showered with arrows, if they still have plenty of health remaining, the 4 hyungs will still plunge in and attack.

“The 350 of you, retreat to the sides!”

One of them was injured badly on the ground and one senior still

helped him as they were attacked from everywhere! The teachers and practitioners stepped in and used their skills in battle. They should become more cautious when they are hunting inside the borders of the monster den; but instead, they still fought riskily and hastily.

When they see a weak point on the monsters, even though no one is saying anything, they would unite and focus their attacks until they break through. Geomchi2, Geomchi3, Geomchi4 and Geomchi5 with the teachers, other geomchis and the older practitioners cooperated their attacks and broke through like they were sharp fangs.

With years of sufferings with each other, they could just exchange glances and they will never lack anything in battle.

“Geomchi2, Is it hard?”

“No, Master. It’s actually quite fun. Let’s go to the next dungeon.”

“Let’s go!”

Geomchi was then followed by the instructors and practitioners as the mood changed. They got excited as their enthusiastic selves remembered the fights that they’ve fought.

This was the Geomchi way.

In Royal Road, when monsters die,they don’t really die. In reality however, people die and knowing it will help them to move one step forward.

Inch by inch and step by step, they tediously hunted and collected EXP to build up their proficiency on their skills. They also trained masochistically but, they practiced like this in order to become stronger.

Despite of having an impossible battle, they still adapted to the situation very well. And their crazy hunting speed was already enough to give goosebumps! Even though they have injured legs and there are monsters at a distance, they still tried to fight.

The Geomchi practitioners did their best on fighting as they increased their levels.

***

Weed was currently at the entrance of the forked path and just came out from the fifth cave.

Even though there was only one place that contained gold and silver, the other rewards made him smile that it was already enough to reach the heavens.

Weed then ran into another cave as soon as possible.

The entrance to the cave was a little smaller this time so he

guessed that the ones who lived here are no other than the Dwarves.

“If it is the Dwarves, what they have will probably be something expensive. I only expect the best from these races.”

Although the entrance to the cave was quite narrow, the space that it was connected to was significantly larger. Inside was dug up places and stone pillars etc. The foundation for the whole cave was also inside.

It was the first city in the continent that the Dwarves created and in there, was a miniature version Ratzeburg.

As a sculptor and a person who owns a city and a castle, having sufficient artistic and archeological knowledge by observing the shape of the city was enough for him to build buildings and areas from the ancient times.

Buildings from the ancient times require a shorter construction period at a low cost. With its high historical value as well as its cultural aspect, even if one’s city development is low, this will help raise it.

Rather than creating a new building, he could restore the shape of a building that once existed and its properties should also be granted.

You can now build Special Ancient Buildings.

Art, Knowledge, and Luck has increased by 13

The Dwarves would stand and look at this miniature version of the city of Ratzeburg that was made.The Humans, Dwarves, Elves and Orcs lived in harmony because the model showed that they used a variety of different buildings and structures.

Maroon Colored Street

The paved stones in the city will make it easy to move.

Helps horses and people move quickly.

Special Properties:

Historical Value: 3580

Artistic Value: 498

This helps promote commercial development.

Orcish Bathtub

Sometimes after going to battle, the disgusting Orcs go home early and use this while dressed.

It is even wide enough to drag it down to the river for a swim.

It ‘was’ great pride for the Orcs to finish having their baths and looking respectable.

You might die if you use this with low health.

Special Properties:

Historical Value: 1935

Artistic Value: 179

After bathing, your physical recovery rate will increase by 45%

Orcs increases their Charm by 3.

The Ancient Ampitheatre

This was made so that the races could discuss the threats surrounding them. But soon, it turned to a place where the Orcs and Dwarves boast their strength. While the humans create musicals as the Elves showed their proudest Elemental Magic.

Special Properties:

Historical Value: 7410

Artistic Value: 2930

This will cause a significant impact on culture and local politics.

Increases the loyalty of the people.

The Great Trees Square

This place symbolizes the unity and prosperity of the four races.

This is a square with fruit bearing Kota trees at the middle.

A lot of Orcs, Humans, Dwarves and Elf mothers spent time to care for the children. When a mother is raising a kid, they need to give them meals. They very much do anything from selling their unnecessary stuff to helping on hunting and construction.

The most enjoyable sight that happens here is when husbands get in trouble and their wife scolds them that tree.

Special Properties:

Historical Value: 9340

Artistic Value: 689

The Kota tree is needed for construction.

This showed a very large impact on the formation of the earliest commercial cities.

Helps in stabilizing peace and order and reduce conflict.

What Weed wanted was that yellowish gold.

But instead, what he acquired was knowledge about a lot of buildings and structures in Ratzeburg. The ancient city buildings had low cost. Whether it was culture or technology there were no limits overall. So rather than creating new forms of architecture, the buildings were just restored and in addition, will also have historical value.

Weed then recalled the content he has seen in the information boards post in the past.

“Historical Value of a city….. They found a lot of ruins of a city called Antika.”

Ratzeburg is already beyond comparison to the human city of Antika which was built far off to the future. Having historical value on a city brings tourists from all over the continent. Depending on its commercial development, the cultural growth will also be faster.

“Anyways, where is that hidden gold?”

Weed looked all around the cave of the Dwarves and it looks like there's nothing to grab there. Except for the miniature scale of Ratzeburg, there are only vague traces where a furnace was installed.

"I'm pretty sure there's no treasure here. No! It's too early to conclude it. There must be something that I missed, they might have left a map or something."

Weed used his hand to touch and observe the walls and ceilings. He also looked at the material the stones were made of. Perhaps because he was blinded by jewelry that he did not abandon his expectations until the end.

He held on and just grabbed onto his will to not give up!

"I'm sure. Clearly, there's no way that this place will have no remaining items anymore."

Weed walked away from the model of Ratzeburg. He took a stick and walked as he poked the ground.

We do not know if someday there will be another sculptor that would come and discover this cave. How depressing would it be if he would hear a rumor that something else was discovered here that Weed missed. It was more terrifying than having chicken and pizza past its expiration date along with undercooked pork belly then riding a public transportation with a sick stomach.

Tung Tung~

At that time, something rang on the ground.

“What’s in here.”

Weed carefully dug the ground and looked. He found 12 kegs that were sealed.

“Identify!”

Aromatic Dwarven Keg

Durability: 4/25

This drink is made by brewing different fruits and grain. Back then, it was forbidden for the races make liquor and the Dwarves sneakily brewed and drink some.

The barrels were made of elven wood that’s why over time, its deep flavor permeated into it.

But since too great of a time have passed already, the question was whether the alcohol actually tastes delicious.

“It’s alcohol. But I don’t really know if I want to drink that.”

For Weed, everything that's free is quite a good thing. But this was really just as much as rotting already.

Even if he sold it to others and they accidentally died, he could just deny the facts and eat their insults. What only prevented him from doing it was having a lot of people being ripped off, tarnishing his reputation.

"I'm just going to see the seniors and give this to them."

The Geomchis would not possibly regret it, even if they died due to drinking.

There were several caves where the Dwarves stayed, but he only found some pieces of broken bowls in addition to the barrels. Other than that, his other discoveries weren't really that important.

"If anything else, these barrels... are gonna be worth the same as great antiques."

With this, Weed's face finally brightened up a little.

The barrels was made from Elven wood so he could assume of its archaeological value. While the material of the barrel is good, the materials used on the alcohol was fresh so it's also expected to be good.

Weed having a lot of background in alcohol making learned the recipe which corrected some of his assumptions about alcohol making and increased his cooking skill level.

This ancient treasure that the Dwarves made, could help him reap huge profits using the recipe. It could also allow his cooking skills to level up and gain more popularity.

“The alcohol, I would’ve immersed it a lot if it was me.”

Weed had collected fruit while he was hunting on certain regions. He had a lot of experience on manufacturing alcohol because he was using those fermented drinks to sell or give them to the Geomchis.

Especially when there is a need to increase the amount of alcohol, a suitable ratio of water is needed to dilute it perfectly. In the Versailles Continent, no one was able to best him in this.

Chapter 2: A Ceramist

Weed entered the cave of the Elves.

The cave was warm as if it was outside and not deep underground. There was clear running water inside the cave along with an abundance of trees and flowers.

You have enjoyed the garden of Elves that was created at Montvertruria.

It was a garden that the Elves planted and grew!

It was an important source of nutrients for the races when they hadn't caught anything and food were insufficient. Even though the Elves have departed and many long eons have passed, this garden has grown and endured on its own with the blessings of the spirits and nourishment from the earth.

– Due to the adventure, all stats has increased by 6.

– Luck has increased by 7.

– Affinity to Nature has increased by 3%.

Weed lifted the vines that were draping through the trees and stumbled across a pond in the center.

The plants that grew in the pond looked like emeralds. It was filled with lush and overgrown trees and flowers which makes an atmosphere that makes him feel desolate. They were growing high enough to reach the ceiling. Although there was no one to watch it, the flowers had already budded and started to bloom. With no one to eat them, the tasty fruits had just fallen to waste on the ground.

“How unfortunate that these would just be thrown out like this”

Because he had brought 70 leather bags with the expectation that he would perhaps obtain some items, there was plenty of space remaining to store them. Weed gathered various seeds and nuts then classified them by flowers and trees, and then put them into the bags.

If there was anything there at all, he packed it up without exception.

“If I were to plant these in Morata, nothing bad would probably come.”

Weed was excitedly collecting the seeds and putting them into his bag when the flowers and trees suddenly shook gently.

Furthermore, they gave off a strong and mysterious scent.

Ttrring!

We welcome visitors to the flowers and trees.

These long-lived plants seek fresh air, water, and sunlight.

If planted safely, and the trees and flowers are unharmed when the tree grows you will be able to receive a reward.

He was going to take them either way, but to think that he ’ll also receive a reward!

Weed took an axe from his backpack

“I don’t know whether to use this to make a table, chair, or something else.”

It would have been fine to just cut up the bottom trunk of the tree and bring it. But he still dug up the ground with the flowers and also the tree roots including its soil and put it in a bag.

The value of Elven wood whether as a building or as a material is very high. It was ultimately the best material when dried under the sun. If the tree does not die and is planted on a fertile soil, then it shall grow into a very big tree.

Although the garden of the Elves had different kinds of flowers and trees, many of them were common except for 7 seeds.

“Identify!”

Brond Tree Seed

Durability: 1/1

The favorite fragrant wood of the elves.

Once grown to 2m in height the tree will bear sweet fruits, and the leaves can be used as medicine. It has a very clear spirit and so it grows well in unpolluted lands.

Snowflake Flower Seeds

Durability: 1/1

It can’t be easily picked up since they are very small seeds!

It grows easily in shallow soil so it’s recommended to instill to the ground. It’s blooming flowers look like a snowflake and the seedlings spread relatively fast.

Jackal Tree Branch

Durability: 22/22

A steel-like solid wood.

It has an excellent growth rate.

It blooms only during the spring and does not bear fruit.

Pyrud Tree

Durability: 10/10

A hollowed tree.

Usually used as habitats for small animals.

If a dense forest is created using this, it will increase the fertility rate of wild animals.

Creating a flower garden and forest and putting them around Morata and Vargo Fortress was not a bad idea.

“Seems like a lot of tourist attractions are going to be put on this year. Since I only have my sculptures there, it’s a little empty. I also need to create a place for couples to go out without spending a lot of money.”

With Morata and Vargo Fortress, his future plan of ripping off couples would have a lot of places to exploit!

The old people like forests especially mountains and valleys. Those rough and rugged mountains on Vargo Fortress would most likely be one of the top tourist destinations with that outlook.

Spring, Summer, Fall, and Winter; tourists could fully enjoy the landscape with the changing environments. Especially now, since

continuous renovations were being made to Vargo Fortress, it could now accommodate tourists with excellent and alternative buildings.

But there was also a slight problem that bothered Weed. And that was that outside the gates, it would be too dangerous. When the beginners go out for a walk, they couldn't have imagined that they would meet a monster and have no time to escape then die. It was truly a dangerous attraction.

"I guess this is enough for now."

Weed packed a few more items into the bag which included seeds, trees and also fruits.

Because there were so many items he had filled 45 bags with the items from the current cave.

"The caves are not yet fully explored. There's also still the humans' place, got to fill these bags from the place I'm going to next."

Weed went into the next cave.

Inside the cave where the humans have lived, he found that there were a large number of paintings there. He found inexperienced workmanship of past humans and also found traces of art that was just created for the first time.

Dwarves could have made better quality arts due to their high dexterity, but the dwarves instead made practical and durable items such as equipment and weapons because the dwarves valued such practical and strong ones since it was necessary, and so it was the humans who made the first artistry on flowers.

They even had clay figurines, bowls that were made from baked clay, and even sculptures that represented Gods. There were even images that were painted on the ceilings and walls.

You have seen the statue of the Goddess of Land Minne.

You have received the blessings given by the statue.

Your affinity to nature has increased.

You have seen the statue of God of War Ahtrok.

Combat Mastery has increased by 3.7%

Strength has increased by 3

You have seen the statue of Goddess of Cooking Hestia.

The fire when you are cooking will adjust on its own for 30 days.

You have seen the statue of Goddess of Abundance Freya.

Art, Charisma, and Luck has increased by 9

It was the oldest remains of the Versailles Continent. It was also the beginning of sculptures and artworks being born in this priceless place.

“There were over a 100 sculptures here. But, the paintings were painted on the wall… Too bad the paintings already went through time and its color already changed and even has cracks.”

Weed admired the old sculptures which were not even recorded on history books. There were sculptures of 32 Gods and 11 Goddesses which had a very smooth and aesthetic appearance that was much better than what Weed could have made.

The Statue of Freya had excessively large breasts while her sides and thighs were not the usual sizes. Each of their standards for beauty was different during that time frame. Because the orcs liked fat and large bodies, there were some statues and sculptures that were fatter and wider than normal.

Between the circle of Gods, there was no difference between the great religious statues since they all had historical values. There were also some significant things to this. When a priest has been found at certain conditions, one could revive its religion.

“I guess even I won’t be able to take or sell these unique items”

Weed, no matter what his strength or stats were, could never have been able to take on such a terrible curse to that extent so he just viewed the items.

Most of the sculptures were a replication of their own appearance rather than having various themes. The sculptures expressed scenes of hunting or cooking around a bonfire.

Most of them were made by baking clay.

It may be because in the past, the technology of carving stones was not as developed as it is now.

“These types of sculptures doesn’t seem bad as well”.

Weed did not prefer baking clay when sculpting.

Clay is to be avoided when sculpting very large sculptures. If a hard stone was used for sculpting, a chisel could be used for various exquisite expressions and it is also easier to adjust the sizing accordingly. The stone is also favored in a way where it is less likely to be damaged after finishing it.

The larger the clay sculpture is, the more likely it is to have cracks or end up crumbling due to its weight. However, clay is a wonderful material in that regard because it is made by a sculptor’s hands.

In other words, the clay sculptures were done with feelings.

***

A historical day to the Versailles Continent.

The Hermes guild completely swallowed and picked up the Kallamore kingdom.

The Kallamore Kingdom ceased to exist.

The King has died.

The honor and respect of the nobility and aristocrats will be lost.

The Kingdom Knights affiliation disappeared and received new identities as free knights.

They will not be able to swear loyalty for 5 months to other nobilities.

The citizens still remain loyal to the King and Kallamore Royal Family.

The wickedness that the invaders of Haven Kingdom displayed shows that they might undergo severe hardships in the future.

The Security has decreased by 96.

The Productivity has decreased by 87%

The Culture has decreased down by 79%

Commercial activity has shrunk severely.

Monsters are rampaging in every direction.

Fall of the Kallamore Kingdom!

The broadcasting stations and most of Royal Road users leaned to the side of the Hermes Guild.

Because people would have a better impression from the Hermes Guild which gained even more power and territory. Users who are not within the Hermes Guild circle of influence will not be able to be symbolized as a power. In addition, the guild brings many significant benefits, for example, private hunting grounds, weapons and armor, and even support for magic books.

Following the might of Haven Kingdom, there will be a possibility of them raising taxes in order to raise a more powerful military force. But the fact still remains that there were remaining areas in the Kallamore Kingdom that were still not neutralized.

Resistance armies rampaged from all locations, residents burning villages and fleeing.

Petrov appeared on the occupied territories of Kallamore Kingdom.

“There are still traces and signs of the war.”

The military that fought seemed to swept devastation towards everywhere in the city. On the streets, there were fragments of broken weapons, arrowheads, etc. Although, there were still many users that were active residents that lived there.

“That vile Haven Kingdom. I will take revenge on them.”

“Bardray. There might be no one that would be able to compete with their military force. And now, Kallamore Kingdom is just going to be forgotten in history.”

“In the occupied territories of Haven Kingdom, double taxes will probably going to be imposed. Ugh. I have abandoned the mill because of this war. How am I going to prepare for those taxes now?”

The suffering voices of the residents could be heard.

Residents of Kallamore Kingdom in the area have lost their properties from arson and looting. After the knights and soldiers lost their lives in the war, the monsters from Senbain Mountains came down near the village and jumped in.

Even though the users could protect it, a lot of them still left and just went away to another Kingdom.

“Let’s go to another kingdom. There’s not much help we could do here.”

“Yeah. I’d rather go down to the South.”

“Let’s just depart anywhere as soon as possible. I just want to get out of here already.”

For the beginners, it is a necessity to move and choose a place that is more stable in order to hunt.

Although to a certain extent, most users are already at a level where they are able to receive lots of requests. However, due to residents living in poverty they do not get the deserved reward. In order to avoid severe persecution from the Hermes guild in the future, they would rather move to a different kingdom.

***

Petrov looked at the Kallamore Kingdom.

The cities were so devastated that they were already incomparable to anything.

“The state of Hermes Guild does not interest me.”

The strong military force that headed off to war!

They were occupied at the capital enjoying a rest. The hardships of the residents is already evident while a lot of the monsters are still around the kingdom increasing their suffering.

“They seem to be doing this intentionally.....”

Hoping this could raise the level of their soldiers, they are increasing their force by utilizing the large scale breeding of monsters. Petrov was suspicious and uncertain on whether the confusion was created to make the recruitment of soldiers easier or whether to make the army stronger and more energetic.

As for the Haven Kingdom users, they planned to save them for later so that they could easily get fame if the capital rebuilds.

But right now, the fleeing residents were already killed by the monsters.

“I’ll draw these scenes into a painting.”

Petrov focused into it after looking with his eyes and painted the ruins of the buildings.

A painting that represented the horrors of the war!

Thanks to Petrov being not yet famous, he was not found out and also not disturbed.

<The Evening of a Devastated Village>

<Shameless Occupying Forces>

<The Departing Inhabitants.>

From the fine pieces that were drawn, sometimes a masterpiece will come out.

The residents approached him.

“Hey, are you a Painter?”

“I’m just a little decent, but yes.”

“I need a favor... I want to have of painting the tranquil old days in my house. I can only give you the description of the life back then.”

“That is enough, I can make the painting based on your description”

Petrov also receives commissions from people and resolves it for them.

He looks at the bulletin board of the old village and looks at the photos there then draws a painting based on it. He also secretly draws the paintings of the banner of Kallamore Kingdom and the knights that died in the village.

He was placing the joys and sorrows of the residents into the paintings as his fame rises while also gaining intimacy.

Petrov still has not yet drawn anything in his canvas when he suddenly recalled the unforgettable face of a person.

“Yurin……”

She might have even known that he had appeared at Morata.

But, her brother was Weed.

He had a brief encounter with Weed, but he was greater than what he expected. The conversation they had before splitting up flashed before him again.

-There’s a lot of meat, freely eat what you can.

-Thank you.

Weed was so kind-hearted that he even extended his own hands towards strangers!

Actually, the meat that was brought out into the festival was just be eaten mostly by the Geomchis and as for the other users, they would just think of it as an act of kindness....

Petrov remembered the grilled meat made by Weed, it was juicy and chewy while the flavor remained intact.

“He’s also good at cooking.”

After he had learned that he was Yurin’s brother, Petrov had reevaluated his opinion of Weed to a better light. Weed’s Sculptural Lifeforms, being Lord and leading Morata and Vargo Fortress were all amazing deeds.

On the day his adventure happens, the ratings of the stations would soar in unison.

“Doing sewing or general work. I can’t be compared to him on fighting or even in just levels.”

Petrov suffered a wound in his heart.

He wanted to impress Yurin by showing off his painting skills.

But even though he had a lot of confidence, it was hard to compare his skills as an artist to a sculptor’s.

He also has a quite a lot of organized people that could intervene. Weed was also the one who made the specialty landmarks located in Morata which are the Tower of Light, Freya Statue, and more! Weed's accomplishments were impossible for anyone else to achieve or follow.

Although Petrov does have the skills to compete, it still seems that he was unable to win the respect and affection of people like Weed. He was constantly creating works of art so it's still nothing even if he took away Vargo Fortress from him. Petrov just realized that the sculptor profession will still be more respected compared to a painter after being snapped out of his arrogance.

"I know why Weed's sculptures were amazing. They were created through adversity and that way, it will receive recognition. When there was nothing during the early days of the town and even stars were not even present in on the place, he made the Tower of Light which gave the residents courage and when he created the Freya Statue he united the people. It was then when culture and development started of the now flourishing Morata."

Each sculpture has a story and each one also endured their own trials. Petrov actually also toured the continent and created pieces based on his own adventures.

But it seems that only after receiving the recognition of the people will he be able to proudly walk in front of Yurin.

***

The Grass Porridge Cult had already surpassed 3 million people!

In the continent, they are considered the largest force in the north.

But, most of the beginners over time had committed some dreadful things.

I don’t want to go alone since I’ll be bored. I am hunting at the Chaotic Rocky Area anyone who wants to hunt together can come along. I am a girl.

Someone at the entrance of the shack left behind a post.

Then, a hunting party of 20,000 had been formed!

If not for this bulletin board thing there wouldn’t have been such an uproar.

“There’s so many people together. Anyways, shall we?”

“Lets run. I’m excited.”

“It feels like this is just a group picnic.”

In the chaotic rocky area, the large amount of monsters who lived up there were exterminated.

Does your Grass Porridge members always visit a map and the usual is what always happen? I was in the midst of traveling when I saw Herd Plains and there were delicious and full grown grasses in there. In Morata, it's a little freezing. However, the Grass Porridge Members would have not much trouble if we do something about it right?

At that day, Morata's Grass Porridge Cult moved extensively. Day and night people went to Herd Plains and because of it, the number of people there was already impossible to estimate! But only one thing is for sure, after three days, the Herd Plains has been renamed to Herd Wastelands.

This is Rebecca, a merchant from the Central Continent and its my first time in Morata. I say hello to you all and for travelers that needed large open spaces outside the east gate, 20 silver each one is enough. It's on a first-come, first-served basis so don't come in late. Huhuhu.

Merchant Rebecca continued on interacting as she held her empty pockets then sadly cried.

When the Grass Porridge Cult was just starting they were just a poor group of beginners. Initially, they were just alternating on hunting rabbits, deers and wolves. But as they grow in Morata, they would introduce quests to each other that gives out at least 1 silver.

During the early days of Morata, the city wasn't even fully

equipped with necessary things and people didn't even go outside the gates since there was the risk of the bandits. However, as Morata was developed day by day, the members of the Grass Porridge Cult also grew.

They went as a crowd when hunting as they also actively participated on other quests.

Although they were doing boring and easy quests, their motivation was great.

"In Morata, there's a lot of requests related to the Niflheim Empire."

"Can we succeed on those quests?"

"We can't. But if we obtain leathers even without having commissions, then one day we'll be like Weed."

"Grass Porridge! Grass Porridge!"

As they were enjoying the arts and their adventures in Royal Road at Morata, the Grass Porridge members were gradually growing and we're not even aware of the big change happening.

In a brick house shack.

They wore cheap clothes and decent equipment. The Grass

Porridge cult members were also eating decent meals from restaurants. The average levels of the beginners were climbing up step by step each time Morata's production and economy increases.

***

Weed found the suitable clay on making a sculpture in Montvertruria.

Clay pieces could express any subject. You could create the work very well even though you only know the certain characteristics of the race.

The effect of having good Handicraft mastery was also a big advantage.

The color and texture of the clay is an important part of every sculpture and made it possible to create something as if it was alive.

<Features of a Dwarf in Clay>

< The Orc Family Eats Lots of Food Together>

<Human Submerged in Sorrow>

<Elves Planting Fruit Trees>

Looking at the finished product, its viscosity was unsatisfactory.

“The facial lines and fine clothes is the tricky part since it needs to be delicate.”

Collecting clay for making sculptures has a new feel even for Weed.

“When I was a kid I played with mud and created one or two things with it.”

During the rainy day season, did not have the leisure to joyfully play with the soil. During his childhood, he created a dam using the clay that prevented rainwater on seeping through and sold it for 300 won to his friends!

He had not needed toys, instead he had used materials such as water and dirt to build it.

“These pieces that I created are already okay. The materials also vary depending on the representation that I want to do. In particular, the soil in this area is really good.”

The soil particles in Tinius River are double in number and also pale white in color. If he gathered the mud and small pebbles and filter out those foreign materials in it, it will be an excellent material to make sculptures.

Sculpting was an art closely related to life.

The materials in his surroundings easily absorbs moisture and becomes clay and shaping it allows you to create a piece comfortably. To create something beautiful or create something you cherish is the natural choice to do.

There was no need for heavy burden jobs like cutting gems or stones.

Weed then turned his eyes to the other clay works.

There he saw a collection of past eating utensils such as crude bowls that were made from clay. It still has artistic value, but it's still not much, what matters is the historical values of these amazing antiques.

"I wonder what it'll be like for me to make such pottery out of mud and clay?"

Instead of simple dirt plates, he wanted to make a ceramics!

Even though celadon and white porcelain had been around for many years, people were still impressed by them. [T/L: Celadon is a Korean porcelain with a translucent and pale green glaze.]

Producing things like that seems to be a good way to raise his sculpting skills

“It very easy to transport but still costs a fortune if sold. The material costs for creating this does not even exist. Kehehehe.”

Weed came out laughing as he thought about the money he would earn. The requirements to make ceramics were Blacksmithing Intermediate skill level 7. Along with his ability to deal with fire, he could create excellent pieces.

He thought about retiring from making sculptures and instead make a living through blacksmithing, if he decided to change to a blacksmith he would not have to worry about food and expenses.

“Now, where am I going to start. I’m not yet familiar with it so I’m going to start making the bowl from the inner side.”

Making sculptures has such a broad domain. In here you need to shape the clay using the hands and then bake it in fire since there also different fields in sculpting.

Blacksmithing Skills are better related, but the basic forms and appearance is a work of art so one needs Handicraft Skills, Engraving Skills, and Blacksmithing Skills in order to make the ceramics.

Weed shaped using his mud-covered hands but creating a round bowl using his fingers was not comfortable for him.

“Someone have to help me in this. Dirtman!”

“What makes you bring me here.”

This Dirtman that he summoned looked drooped and tired.

During the old days, it was always delighted whenever it was summoned to the world. But very often, they were being summoned primarily by Morata users. At first they were steadily doing their good work, but then they slowly became foul-mouthed. Some say that it’s actually charming in its own way then they even gained popularity.

While assigning work they would often repeat a phrase or comment.

“It would have been better if I had not been born.... Why do I have to suffer as soon as I was born?”

“Oh, my back. My back hurts but I still have to keep working.”

“This task is very easy. If you finish early should I give you a break?”

“They say that the Lord of Morata, Weed is the most handsome person in the continent. But I don’t really know whether to trust that.”

When the Dirtmans were working diligently, these spirits would

even receive more work. Their different personalities became strong and carefree compared to Weed's which was the result of the steady eduction that the spirits received from him!

The created spirits of this abusive sculptor had no choice but to bear their orders.

"There is work you want me to do."

"We may be a little tired but if master asks then we will work hard for master."

"Its an easy task, just make this turn for a bit."

Weed stretched out wide stone tablets to Dirtman.

He realized that he needed a rotating bottom plate when piling the mud in order to make pottery comfortably.

Weed was very focused.

"Rotate it and maintain a constant speed. Don't shake it or else it will stop."

"If it's just something like this, it's easy."

The tablets were not a little bit lighter than wood, but Weed still

did not care.

It was not his task to do work, but the Dirtmans'!

"Remove any debris or stones that are caught in the mud."

"I'm going to pick it out."

"Summon Fiery Pebble!"

"Weed hurray!"

"You, make a fire."

"Keuhi, I know."

"It needs to be hot and strong. We also have to maintain it at a constant temperature."

Dirtman and Fiery Pebble were given their tasks and fully undertook their work.

Weed also summoned other spirits.

"Droplet summon!"

Then, a pretty spirit made from water dew mysteriously appeared.

“I want to do what you’re doing, Master.”

“You sprinkle some water over that heap of earth over there.”

Usually, because of his mana shortage, he limited summoning of spirits to a minimum. Even though the spirits were called separately, his skill proficiency on Elemental Shaman skill still did not climb.

Now, with Seulroeo’s Wedding Ring, Baharan’s Bracelet and Helium Torch, that level of mana consumption was pretty easy to bear. With sharing his work with the spirits, the structure of his workplace in making pottery was now roughly equipped.

“Forming a simple bowl would probably not be that difficult.”

Weed used his hands and bashed together the wet soil.

In the rotating stone plate, he started to create forms using the heap of mud. With a keen sense in his fingers, he made sure that the mud do not get crushed and get built little by little.

Chururururuk..

As he molded the clay the shape of a plate was being made.

“This method of crafting is actually pretty fun. Since the material is free and easy to acquire it won’t matter if I fail”

Weed made items ranging from bowls to plates.

His first attempts were crude, like a dog bowl, then later he managed to make more acceptable bowls.

“Should I bake it now?”

Weed put the plates and bowls into the fire. While putting the items into the fire Weed thought that they would heat like ceramics, but instead the water evaporated and shattered the clay.

“I guess I’ll have to wait for the clay to completely dry before I heat it”

The ‘dog bowls’ had already dried and because of that, he could use them for experiments. Weed created a furnace and put heaps of dirt into the furnace and heated the dirt.

If you are cold and hungry, you could solve it by eating hot sweet potatoes. It’s like killing two birds with one stone!

After burning the wood, I could use the ashes to cook the potatoes, sweet potatoes, and meat deliciously. Just telling the Geomchis that I would cook these for them would be enough to

make them drool enough drool to cook ramen in.

"Now then, it's time to check how my finished project looks."

Weed turned off the fire in the oven and looked at the 'dog bowl'.

Adjusting the temperature suitably for the mud must have been what he had probably done wrong since approximately 1/3 of it has cracks. Some parts of the rim were cracked, but the rest has a well-baked appearance that he initially wanted.

– You have made 29 bowls, Sculpting Mastery has increased.

– Blacksmithing Mastery has increased.

"Not very pretty but anyways this is my first work. Identify!"

Roughly Made Bowls

Durability: 11/11

A pot that is wide enough to hold food.Made by the famous artist Sculptor Weed!

The thickness of the bowl is very thick and there are no significant tacky burns due to strong fire.

The practical usage of clean clay as a material was very excellent!

If this work of Sculptor Weed emerged to the continent would be wanted by a lot of people.

Artistic Value: 27

Special Options: Storing in this should improve the taste and aroma of the food.

Considering that it was his first work, it was already good. The thickness of the bowl had made it rather heavy and the size of the bowl was pretty big. His failure was written all over the product.

“Not only this bowl, I want to also make ceramics.”

It could be seen the only thing to do basic pottery is just using

mud and fire. He made the bowls simple, rough and just how he wanted. In order to make a piece, he needs to refine the soil particles until it becomes fine enough and that is when he could make a form into it.

“To the next piece…”

He continued his work as Dirtman, Droplet and Fiery Pebble helped him.

He created a little more delicate form of pottery and continued to experiment with the temperature of the fire. After doing the form of the pottery and completely dried it in the shade, he put it in the oven and did biscuit firing.

He finely adjusted the fire.

He then proceeded and put glaze on it. He made several types of glazes by crushing stones mixing with ashes of burned plants. He also created a variety of colors in the process. Weed mostly prefer color white or transparent blue.

He applied the glaze then went back to baking using a strong fire as the inner glassy glaze beautifully melts down and the ceramic was completed.

Weed experimented on different types of glazes as he uses his Mining and Herbalism skills and used it on practicing on baking ceramic.

“My hands have quite a lot of work to do.”

Pottery is very meticulous. Even though he was successful, this work is not very easy. Any little mistake in the whole process will change its color. Weed has made numerous burnt bowls and only broke the bowls if a failed piece is produced.

Hailed by the Artists as the continent’s best sculptor, his pride has been instantly crushed.

“This is fine. The materials are almost free!”

Weed was very positive.

Sculpture and Ceramics were deeply related, but their methods of making largely differed that’s why he failed to learn it. Creating a form with clay and going through a number of steps was also fun.

“Let’s make it more diverse. I think it’s still early but I’m still going to try and undergo with it to see if it’s alright.”

Things that Weed could create using his imagination was endless.

A jug that resembled the shape of an animal!

Ceramics is not just for dripping water to the mouth. If he tried to make a turtle, he could demonstrate his skills as a sculptor

better. Weed already made a lot more of complex sculptures.

“As an ornament it is already selling well, as an artwork it’s going to be worth even higher.”

He united the mud into a solid and then chose how to sculpt it using his carving knife. Because he was unfamiliar with using wet soil and doing complex shapes, he had to considerably suffer. Even though the carving knife was only swerving into the mud, there were still parts that were mashed.

“I want you to grab and hold it just to be sure not to shake the mud, Mind Hand!”

Weed having Advanced Handicraft Mastery, used his hands showed skills that only appear on legendary craftsmen. Because of his full concentration, the physical contacts did no damage to the ceramic.

Meanwhile, his sculpting knife was able to trim the shape up.

“The number of work is a lot. Call Death Knight Van Hawk, Call Vampire Lord Torido!”

“What’s going on!”

“Where is the fight, master!”

Van Hawk and Torido was also summoned!

“If you guys can’t always have fun! Hurry up and break this!”

Weed made them break stones and mix charcoals. Their duty was to make glazes.

Van Hawk and Torido did not strongly resist their tasks. While traveling with Weed, they had already grown familiar with Weed’s chores such as crushing garlic, peeling potatoes and onions.

“At least today’s task is easier.”

“I hope I can finish early and rest”

Weed made the ceramics with the three spirits along with Torido while Van Hawk is also given a lot of work in the process.

– 42 special types of ‘dog’ jugs has been created. Sculpting Mastery has increased.

– You have succeeded on adjusting the fire delicately.

– Art has increased by 1.

– Affinity to nature has increased by 2

This time, it seems that he somehow managed to produce a decent work.

“Identify!”

Duck Water Jug

Durability: 14/16

A water jug represented by a mother duck.

This piece is an excellent sculpture made by Master Weed in a different area. This is going to pitch a high price as the duck is incredibly and clearly expressed.But this was not managed to be glazed evenly because of some insoluble materials and there were also slight cracks inside because of its complex structure.A rare luxury, it seems like the high nobles and royalties are going to like it.

Artistic Value: 361

Special Options: +26 Dignity

It will enhance your dignity to the kings and nobles.

Given the fact that Weed is still inexperienced, creating a good piece of pottery like this is already on the successful side.

“Now that I’m familiar with glazing, I need more practice on making ceramics.”

Torido, Van Hawk and all of the spirits were on the move and had work to do. But there were still unexplored caves in

Montvertruria

“Maybe I should fill the entrance to this dungeon with a bronze door to have a nice atmosphere in here.”

Weed sent a whisper to his sister.

– Yurin.

– Yeah, brother.

– What are you doing?

– I’m currently feeding Yellowy grass.

Yurin particularly like Yellowy more than the other sculptural lifeforms, she especially paid attention to and stroked his rib area.

– I found a place during my quest right now. I’ll explain it so could you hang out here? Many of the sculptures and paintings are going to be helpful to you.

– I’m feeding grass to Yellowy.

– Oh, and bring the others. I feel that underneath this place will be a dungeon.

***

Yurin used Picture Teleportation to teleport herself along with Pale, Maylon and Surka, and so they arrived together.

“There is actually such a place like this! I’ve never seen something like this. Can we look around here?”

“It’s okay, help yourself around.”

Weed said generously.

The place is quite okay for him anyway since he have certainly packed everything he wanted.

“This place in the history of the four races is marvelous.”

“My art stat also increased by quite a lot. Thanks to you Weed my art stat have exceeded 300.”

As they enjoy Weed’s sculptures and go for an adventure, the art stat of their party grew steadily. Even those with a non art professions was already enough to be considered as an expert. Morata users had much higher stats on the artistic side compared to others who belonged to other cities. With the development of Morata through sculpting, painting, singing, dancing and performances, residents would find that a lot of requests has a lot of connection to arts.

“Is this is what you made with clay?”

Hwaryeong showed an interest to the bowls and jars that Weed made.

She saw his experiments used different glazes and that each of the bowls was made with different colors. Among them was a clean and clear white bowl which caught her eyes.

“It’s beautiful.”

“The hardness of the glaze is not that good, but it is among the best of-of the good pieces I’ve made.”

It was fine, but there were some parts underneath that was not glazed although his works are becoming increasingly better and more durable.

“I really want to have this bowl. Can I have at least one?”

“Feel free to take anything as much as you want.”

There were many bowls and since they were being mass produced, giving away a couple of it would not be a huge waste.

Mapan arrived late and looked at the bowls with shining eyes.

“Weed, Hi. I would like to have a few….”

“Of course I’ll sell.”

Weed cut him off coldly.

It was because Hwaryeong’s purpose was just for collectibles while it’s obvious that this Mapan will use it on his eight trading posts.

“Oh, I think I would be able to attract great popularity for you.”

Mapan who was watching the pottery did not hide his admiration. In the Versailles Continent, ceramics were precious pieces. Only wealthy nobles and royal families could use something like this since this art is of high quality yet he was able to sale this luxury.

Dwarf Storehouse

You are the first discoverer of the Dwarf Storehouse

Benefits: Fame has increased by 680

Double experience and item drops for a week.

The first monster killed will drop the best quality item it can drop

As expected, they have discovered a dungeon!

It was a dungeon where the dwarves kept their goods.

“It was just as I expected.”

Seoyoon who was also staying at Morata also joined them through Yurin’s skill. The efficiency of that party has reached a terrifying level.

“Van Hawk, lead the way.”

“All right master.”

Weed along with Death Knight scouted the dungeon that allowed

them to have a perspective of it at the beginning.

He pulled out and held Kolderim's Demon Sword as he entered the dungeon. He kept Seoyoon on his right side as she vigilantly observed. Pale and Maylon hold their bows as Zephyr, Hwaryeong, Surka, Bellotte , Irene, Romuna and Yurin go along behind them which was the elite squad. Mapan came along while dragging a cart for holding japtems or loot.

"We will never give you the treasures. It is ours!"

"Kiee, its a thief! There are thieves!

There were graverobbers that roam and appear frequently in the dungeon.

Whether poison, magic, sword or arrows, it was very tricky to use it with the endless graverobbers that came. The traps that were installed by the dwarves inside the dungeon was also very complicated.

"The graverobbers that roam are in the mid 300 levels."

Weed was a little disappointed.

Seoyoon and his friends are already at level 400 so doing a dungeon of this level was a little unreasonable. Because this place has a deep historical meaning with it that's why he had hopes regarding the difficulty of the dungeon. If it's like that then the

treasures here would probably also have a relatively small value.

The grave robbers compared to other monsters has higher health thus also giving more experience and with their low speed, they could be hunted comfortably.

“Moonlight Sculpting Blade!”

He used his brilliant sword freely and was very overwhelming.

This happens when the skill proficiency is improved and then later on it could be properly used!

-You have acquired a saw from the graverobber.

– You have acquired a key from the graverobber.

– You have obtained a bag that contained little things.

Graverobbers have dropped considerably different kinds of loot. Weed along with Torido, Van Hawk and Zephyr just put on a defensive at the beginning as the other people on the rear and sides support them. Their hands and feet were always tied because otherwise they would fall into danger. Then, they found Dwarven boxes in between and opening them was a fun activity to pass the time

– You have acquired old books and the Diary #2 of a Dwarf.

– You have found a bronze sword

Fame has increased by 310

– You have found a stone blade

Fame has increased by 195

– You have obtained a drinking glass of the Dwarves.

The weapons and armor of the Dwarves back then were too underdeveloped that's why their performance was not that good.

The bronze and brass swords were not properly made and it was just suitable to leave it as antiques!

"It's gonna be alright if I just brought this into the Art Center."

Contributing the antiques inside the Arts Center was what he is thinking. They discovered lumps of iron ore, silver ore and mithril inside a box and expected that their income is going to be great.

What Weed was feeling was already enough for the corners of his mouth to creepily rise.

Weed was hunting together with his friends except when he was

drying the wares or it was already time for the glaze. He was also accumulating experience as his ceramics were becoming smoother and its gloss was improving.

Although there were no Masterpiece or Magnum Opus, there were still Fine pieces of works that appeared.

“Kkyaah! It’s so wonderful.”

As Weed created Ceramics, Hwaryeong looked and watched every time. In fact, one of the reasons she liked Weed was because of the appealing expression he made as he worked. She was mesmerized when Weed’s expression becomes serious as he created sculptures. She focused only on Weed’s mesmerizing figure while he worked.

While Weed was sculpting his wood sculptures, he was silently thinking.

‘How much can I sell this for if I succeed. It does not have a lot of material value. Oh, these days the value of the trees is very bad. Apart from this since I have not bought a tree. If I have moderate to large stones, I could create large sculptures. Creating sculptures is important, however, it also needs packaging. And there will be a line of rich people out there who will look.....’

Weed was busy with clay on making pottery as his hand was stained by earth all over. A dirt-stained person sitting there in the workshop was definitely not ugly. It creates a subtle atmosphere which immerses the women.

Irene, Romuna, and Hwayreong blankly stared at him while he worked.

“I want to learn pottery”

“Later, I will do pottery with my boyfriend.....”

A guy needs to be close to the body of a girl and place his hand to guide on creating pottery. It was a very subtle and strange atmosphere!

Then, Weed stretches out his hand through the waist and gently touched and shaped the pottery.

“Kyaaa!”

“Whah!”

The face of the women blushed as their eyes shined.

‘Who the heck.....’

‘Who could it be?’

Weed checked behind him but saw no one there.

One of the sculpting skills for his profession was Mind Hand!

With the hands of a craftsman he began to carve a variety of sculptures with his hands and the Mind Hand..

It was a weird and different experience from what he had expected.

Chapter 3: The Orc's Quest

The Hermes Guild had no choice but to devote their time on maintaining rule over Haven Kingdom for the time being.

With the rebels around Kallamore Kingdom jumping around, they must supply materials to be used on the war. In some villages, there were also rebellions happening because of the heavy tax. If a cease fire doesn't happen soon in the surrounding areas, the embers of the war will be carried around.

The Hermes Guild was prepared and put countermeasures for all possible events. They were actively sending out troops to stabilize their occupied territories and defeat the rebels.

Bard Ray was having complete control over the guild with the work of the executive leaders while he alone, was watching all over it from behind.

"Now, it's finally time to start what I have been delaying for some time."

He decided to go visit the Black Knights Guild in the capital of Haven Kingdom.

The Black Knights Guild along with Hermes Guild had many users hanging around a crowded place. When Bard Ray appeared bringing with him his Royal Guards, the crowd became quiet as mice in a dike.

The King of the Haven Kingdom, the strongest person in the continent.

He who owns both authority and power, Bard Ray. Both sides went out of his way as soon as possible.

Bard Ray went up to the instructors and said.

“I want to make all my enemies be on their knees and use the Path of the Sword for justice.”

The users were all silently astonished.

‘Is this the his profession’s Master Quest.’

‘Bard Ray issued the first challenge to become a Master Black Knight!’

The instructor looked at Bard Ray and slowly opened his mouth.

“As a Knight and a King who wants to learn the way of the glorified sword, you must first accomplish a task, it is rumored that there is a massive amount of monsters that is marching towards Evoque Town. Block those monsters and visit the old veteran Kuhlra[Kolla], he will teach you the ways of the Black Knight.”

Evoque was a small mountain village that did not belong to any Kingdom.

Fighting there to confront the monster invasion was his first given task!

‘This should not be too hard.’

A Knight could choose whether to focus his profession skills on either spear or sword.

Bard Ray selected the sword and his current skill level had stayed at Advanced Level 7.

Although his level was up to 480 and his fighting skills were highly destructive, simple hunting couldn’t improve his basic sword skills, much. In other words, his basic skills wasn’t developing much.

But this was definitely not slow compared to other people.

Unlike others, the swordsmanship of the Geomchis also progressed very fast because they only focused on hunting with their basic sword skills.

“Go to the village of Evoque.”

With Bard Ray’s quest, he went to the village of Evoque along

with his Royal Guards and the military force of Hermes Guild.

“Let’s raid the village. Keee.”

“Uhihi. Kill them all!”

“Take vengeance on the humans!”

More than 3,000 monsters had flocked towards Evoque village.

“Huh, What?”

“We’re dead. The monsters are going to kill us all.”

The residents were engulfed in a state of panic.

Given the area of the Versailles continent, there was no respite at that very moment; new villages were disappearing at the wake of the monster raids. If a kingdom does not send any reinforcements then, it means the death of them all.

“We will handle them.”

“No. This is my quest. Remain and defend the village.”

“Yes!”

Bard Ray left his Royal Guards and his army in the village. The Evoque village had already become an impregnable fortress.

Bard Ray was admired by the attending users along with the broadcasting station officials. The spectators that have flocked in was already uncountable.

A bunch of monsters shot at him with black magic as he pulled out his sword.

He received a whisper.

– The location of Kuhlra has already been found.

Hermes guild's intelligence group was running around the place, unseen.

He needed to be alone when facing the monsters for his first quest. Although, his Royal Knights could always be mobilized at any time.

The fact that Bard Ray started doing his Master Quest had reached the internet and had spread everywhere.

***

As Weed peacefully explored the dungeons and made sculptures

in Montvertruria, another incident took place inside the continent.

Orc Stronghold Bursilia!

After the sculpture Orc Lord Paracwhi was completed, there was a big change that was happening.

“Chwichichis, it is dark today.”

“Let’s go to sleep, chwiiik!”

Orc male and female couples disappeared and went into their camp in the night.

And not a long time later, adorable young Orcs were born!

The population of young Orcs in Orc Stronghold Bursilia had grown enormously.

“Chwiiik. I am going to be a great orc like Parachwi. Chwichiik!”

“Humans are not that detestable, chwis. We also have something to learn from them. Chwiichwiig.”

“Sculptures are nice, chwichichis. We have to have a lot.”

The birth of young Orcs!

Due to the exceptional characteristic of their fertility rate, the Orcs were massively growing in number. Because the Orcs have grown quickly to fight monsters the inhabitants of Bursilia have continued to expand to the south.

Even though a lot of orcs died as they advanced, many new Orc's were born afterwards.

Food and gold were found, Orcs also became interested in and started hoarding cultural artifacts especially sculptures. The Intelligence of the Orcs was gradually increasing with the effect of arts and their trade had also improved and increased a lot.

"7 Glaives for 30 gold, chwik! And 2 belts for 25 gold? Chwichit! Then give me 450 gold."

"Thank you for selling me this cheaply, chwiik!"

Trading between Orcs have also been actively ongoing.

The price calculations of these greedy Orcs are very complicated and tend to be more expensive by several times. That's why the most accurate price they have paid for an item is 1 gold each.

Orc Lord Bulcwhi was with large Orcs who were carrying huge sacks on their backs.

“Goodbye, chwichis.”

“Chwiik, see you later.”

The Orcs have shared their farewell greetings inside the square.

There were 150,000 Orcs!

They had to leave to search for new settlements.

“Go to Karichwi, chwichichiik!”

“Will there be tasty food and also a warm bed, chwiik!”

“Of course, chwichiiig. That’s why you have to go to Karichwi, chwik!”

After Weed succeeded his quest, the contribution points that he obtained was already enough to command over 250,000 Orcs.

His familiarity with the Orcs was already at the level of Brothers.

Although Weed had refused the compensation of receiving a bunch of gluttonous Orcs, these Orcs had chosen him.

“Karicwhi would be glad to see us, chwichik!”

“Chwiik, I want to meet him as soon as possible.”

And the Orcs set off from the Bursillia Square.

Even though they were carrying a lot of food, by the time they arrived at Morata they would be very hungry

***

Weed made a large number of ceramics as he also hunted with his companions. His Sculpting Mastery was currently Advanced Level 8 at 43.8%.

They ranged from large to small with contrasting thickness, he produced a variety of ceramics as he accumulated experience. Then, later on, the more he created the more the quality improved and became remarkable.

It was already at the level where the Kings and Nobles would covet it and everyone would want 1 or 2 of the ceramics that he made. In addition, he also used Moonlight Sculpting a little and used light into the ceramics.

“This time I’ll create the glaze.”

Yurin also worked and applied glaze she also took care of painting the ceramic.

– You have drawn a painting on the ceramic made by Sculpting Master Weed.

Fame as a painter has increased.

Yurin's Painting Mastery had increased quickly and above all, her Fame grew enormously. This is by simply collaborating with Weed since it's still a great achievement for novice artists. As the ceramics were overlaid with various colors, their value as a luxury item would be worth much more.

The ceramics made by Weed were already satisfactory.

"I could really rip off a lot with this!"

The special type of ceramic he created which was elegant and charming was a great one. Even the pure features of the ceramics, the smoothness and spontaneity has been ingrained it it.

"It seems exciting. Please teach me."

"Could you not learn by looking?"

His other companions looked at the ceramic accordingly as he gave an introduction introductory on making pottery.

When Weed was creating the pyramids, they just watched it and

looked as if they had no interest. But when he was making pottery, it had a nice and simple atmosphere.

"I need some help back here."

Hwaryeong looked for opportunities that would lead to physical contact.

'If I used my spare time to learn about this stuff, then I would be popular to women. Yurin would also come one of these days to learn pottery.'

Zephyr learned the process of making pottery without abandoning his habits as a playboy.

'With ceramic, you could also make money.'

While Mapan's motive was still greed and money.

'I will give this as a gift to Maylon.'

'I want to make this for Pale.'

Weed hunted and also created ceramics. It was a very enjoyable and pleasant time.

"Do not force it when you are stroking it, try to feel it."

“Like this? Maybe not. Weed, press my hand because it looks like it would help me learn this feeling.”

Weed and Hwaryeong made pottery as Seoyoon stood in a distance while watching them.

Seoyoon also learned how to make pottery. Possibly because she had a keen eye, she created a narrow bottleneck vase easily.

Whether Hwaryeong needed help from Weed because she was actually bad at making pottery or whether she was using it as an excuse she(Seoyoon), nor anyone else, could not tell.

“……”

Seoyoon got up from her place and went into the depths of the dungeon.

Her other teammates were busy making ceramics and because they thought she would just briefly step outside and come back, they did not follow her.

Seoyoon continued entering the dungeon.

“Kihihihis, that seems to have a lot of money.”

“I’m going to rob you of everything.”

The graverobbers arrived and began to taunt her.

.

Krrung.

“Kkuek!”

“Please, spare me.”

“Aaahhh!”

It was a massacre of the graverobbers!

Seoyoon usually did not use her full abilities to share experience with other people and level up their skills.

But now, she revealed the true strength of a Beserker as she continued to enter the dungeon.

“Kkhahaha, I couldn’t find any treasure, but look what walked in!”

“It looks like we are going to get our drinking money for tonight... Kkweeeeg!”

***

Seal of Vulcan

You are the first discoverer of the Seal of Vulcan

Benefits: Fame has increased by 1298

Double experience and item drops for a week.

The first monster killed will drop the best quality item it can drop

The last remaining dungeon in these caves!

Seal of Vulcan was a place where devils were confined. The levels of ordinary monsters were already at level 500. There were also some that were at boss levels at some areas.

“Uh, could we really hunt in here?”

“Let’s herd just one over here to see. Torido, get going.”

Even though there was Weed, Seoyoon along with the summoned Torido and Van Hawk, the hunt was still quite difficult. Although the divine power of Irene was not weak, the damage of the Vulcan Protectors was too high making the task riskier.

The deeper they went into the dungeon, more Vulcan Protectors appeared, until they couldn't move on further without taking risks.

"I guess we should stop here for now"

Weed looked regretful as he said those words, but the others were happily agreeing.

Whenever they stayed with Weed they always hunted strong monsters, but as long as they were with Weed it felt easier and faster.

But in their hearts, no one wanted to really wanted to hunt the dungeons with the Vulcan's Demons.

"Then, let's go back to the Dwarf Storage Area."

The time for double experience and 2x item drops had already passed but since it was not really a bad spot to hunt they continued to hunt.

But all they have discovered were boxes of dwarves as graverobbers continued to appear. They dropped a lot of Adventurer, Excavator and Professional Thief items. Sometimes, even magic equipments that was fairly decent compared to the level they were hunting.

“Well then, I’ll go see my quest for a while.”

“Yeah. See you later.”

Weed reported on his Sculpting Master Quest and with the help of Yurin, they headed for Bursilia.

***

“Chwiik. The song only continues down to the Orcs, it just mentioned that the four races lived together in a cave.”

“Well then. Chwichiiig. Karichwi, I will believe in your words then.”

The quest has been reported to Orc Lord Bulchwi.

Ttring!

You have completed The Sanctuary of the Four Races.

Through the song of the Orcs, you have discovered the cave where the four races lived together.

Now that they are separated, did they vary between being in good terms or in dispute. But, if a big crisis approached, the past historic friendship between the four races might then someday be binded

again.

Quest Reward: Deeper ties with the Four Races.

Each great choice you make will make some impact with each of the races.

– You have gained historical knowledge.

Due to this special experience, Wisdom and Knowledge has increased by 2.

‘The Sculpting Master Quest is to create a good order among the four races.’

And finally, he has completed another step of the quest.

After transforming to Orc Karacwhi and returning to Burslilia, the street have changed by quite a lot. The Orcs on the streets were steadily increasing while the Parachwi sculpture had became a valuable treasure to the Orcs.

‘The fertility rate of the Orcs is really scary.’

And the status of 150,000 Orcs leaving towards Morata was something that he did not know of yet!

Bulchwi has released a gallant snort.

“Karichwi, the young Orcs that are interested in sculpting has increased, Chwiiig. Although it is useless, but do you think you could teach them how to make a sculpture? Chwis.”

Ttring!

Sculpting Master of the Orcs

Orcs are currently thristing for art.

Teach the very forgetful and greedy Orcs to make sculptures.

Difficulty: Sculptor Master Quest

Quest Limit: Sculpting Skill Advanced Level 8 or higher

With the own power of the Orcs, they must create a work that has artistic value of more than 70 and they should create more than 50 pieces.

Must have a close relationship with the Orcs.

“I will teach, Chwichichichichichis”

– You have accepted the quest.

“When will you start, chwiiig.”

“Right now will be alright. chwis.”

***

As Weed taught sculpting, a lot of Orcs flocked around like a cloud.

Young Orcs filled the whole plaza to the point that some were even standing behind!

It was because Weed’s intimacy with the Orcs was strong and along with his large fame.

“At least 70 artistic value, finishing up this quest should be pretty easy.”

The Orcs have received commissions to create sculptures. Weed did not truly have the motivation to teach the complexity of Sculpting.

‘I don’t need to tell them about the aesthetics of sculpting and the value of art.’

With the intelligence of the Orcs, you can only expect them to do damage. Furthermore, Weed had no idea about things like that.

It was enough to just create what your heart wants you to create. Afterwards, they will accumulate their proficiency and they will desire to create greater things on their own.

If one tries to accomplish too much from the beginning then they will fail.

Orcs users also came to learn from the lectures of Weed.

“Cwhiik, feel the knife.”

The young Orcs felt their knives, swords and glaives wilfully and did what was told.

Human castles also did not have many users who carried sculpting knives; Orcs would also probably not have the knives or skills either.

“Sculpt with that knife, Chwichwichwichwi. You should, chwiis. Create any look that you want to create. Chwichik!

He described it with simple moral lessons that was good to live by.

Actually, rather than describing it to the Orcs using words, it would be better to just show it to them.

“I will make a sculpture, look at it well and create with your own accordingly. Chwichwis!”

Since the Orcs were interested, it allowed them to make sculptures and easily make a good deer sculpture.

With Weed’s skills in carving deers, he created one which was proportional to it’s real size and it was very excellent that you cannot already distinguish if it’s real or not.

And because of this, there came a lot of deer pieces.

The Orcs were at the level where they could only wish to be like him. They were even hardly worth the quarter of what Weed makes.

“Chwis. Sculpting is hard.”

“I will never learn, Chwiikchwiik.”

“I’m hungry, Chwirik.”

“Let’s go hunting, Chwichichichik.”

More than half of the young Orcs who were in the square did not try anymore, got up then scattered. The very faint eagerness to learn sculpting in their minds have disappeared.

With the urgent nature of the Orcs to learn sculpting and his sloppy teaching is what made this quest fail.

But, Weed have experienced and saw enough of these Orcs to learn about their nature.

“By creating a good sculpture, chwiik. I will give money. Chwis. And give meat. Chwichichis. And also drinks. Chwiichwiiik!”

He was so desperate that he even put on a reward just to achieved his objectives.

The young Orcs were blinded by greed began crushing stones and cutting trees then began to make sculptures.

“I’ve made a deer, Chwiichik!”

What the young Orcs have brought were hardly deers and couldn’t even be seen as one.

Their legs were at different lengths and what’s more is their legs were also too thick.

Rather, it was better to say that they were bears on their four feet!

“Karicwhi, the one I made looks the same as yours. Chwiik.”

“Chwichiiik. It does not resemble at all. Identify!”

Chopped Wooden Barrels

A work of a young Orc trying to make a bear using wood.

It looks like one can’t imagine that this was actually a sculpture.

Artistic Value: 2

At least those poor things made of wood was much better.

Those sculptures made of stone which were not even finished was smashed then dumped away. Because the young Orcs used axe or glaives with their power to chop stones did their sculptures break.

“Do it seriously. Chwiik!”

All day the ‘dog’ pieces that were produced did not even exceeded by one.

The only tolerable thing that happened that he didn’t even need to use Identify to look.

The wastage of materials was absurd, the trees were all cut badly with many scratches and grooves marring the form.

“Tomorrow will be better. Chwiiik!”

Possibly that it was because it was their first day of the learning process and it was too broad to be easily understood.

When he also did not know much about sculpting back then, he also had a lower possibility of creating a good work.

Since Orcs could make better sculptures with a lot of practice patience was needed.

Weed’s tone grew louder.

The night of the second day.

“Just do it like you learned it, chwik”

Night of the third day.

“Why won’t it go straight, chwik.”

Night of the fourth day.

“These hopeless guys, chwiiiiiik!”

As the days go by, the Orcs have not yet adjusted their strength on the materials and still even had that poor aesthetic sense.

Weed wanted to teach that everything was not to be beaten and bashed.

“Chwis. I’m hungry. Let’s eat rice.”

“Scultping is boring. Chwirik.”

“I want to money alreay. Chwichwichwik.”

The appearance of Weed’s lower jaw in Orc Karichwi made them quiveringly tremble. The young Orcs were also quickly growing day by day. The majority of the Orcs were already tired of sculpting and just went out for hunting.

Only some Orcs remained and steadily learned sculpting.

“If you learn how to sculpt, Chwiichwiik. You will get out money and food and you will be popular with female orcs as well, chwiik

“These are the words of the esteemed Karichwi, Chwiichwik. What Karichwi only tells us are real. Chwiichwik.”

“Chwichwis. Sculpting is so good, chwiiiik. Let’s continue learning.”

“Yes, Chwiiiis. It’s just tough at the beginning, chwichwis. Like when it is difficult to eat meat when it’s chewy.”

Weed convinced them by sugarcoating his words as they go on.

Although the young Orcs were very stupid on sculpting, they bit by bit gradually got used to his teachings.

Even though it was not refined or clean, the Orcs were producing more than one sculpture.

Boar Wooden Doll

A wooden product made directly by an Orcs that is wanted to be played with.

Surprisingly, the eyes, nose and the mouth was rushed.

This work was a result made from the competition between the young Orcs.

Artistic Value: 23

Well-carved stone with smooth cuts

Artistic Value: 5

Stone Axe for Young Orcs

Attack: 7

Actual stone axes that was reduced to a small toy. It looks like it could hurt and possible to be used for hunting.

This is a useful work when young Orcs are going to do a mischief and do group fightings.

Artistic Value: 28

“Phew~, chwiik!”

Just a snort came out.

Weed complimented and urged on the young orcs. The talent of the Orcs were visible. To avoid getting distracted, he was giving them foods as he taught them.

“Mastering sculpting could allow you to do things. Chwik. An Orc that could do a lot of things are loved by females. Chwiik.”

And finally among the Orcs, some artists stood out and emerged.

The subject of their sculptures did not vary that much. The Orcs made their sculptures in accordance with their interests like

hunting.

Or a sculpture of themselves being an Orc Lord!

Some Orc with a Glaive

The appearance of an adult Orc on a sculpture.

There is a lot of mistakes due to inexperienced handicraft but within a short period of time still developed an excellent work.

The attitude of an Orc scout in the bushes was well represented.

Artistic Value: 72

A sculpture which barely passes the beyond 70 Artistic Value mark has finally been made.

Weed continued to the side where he did not taught yet while full-blooded orcs that just makes sculptures by smashing have already quitted.

The savage and hurried nature of the Orcs was something that made teaching them not an easy task.

– The Orcs have made 50 sculptures with Artistic Value more than 70.

– Your Sculpting Mastery has increased.

– Leadership has increased by 4

– Wisdom has increased by 2.

Weed felt like he had finally passed a big mountain.

‘The difficulty of this Rank A Quest was much more difficult compared to others.’

The young orcs would forget everything that was taught to them once they turned around being ingenious and having a strong personality, they only made things they wanted despite the advice he gave them.

As for Weed he doubted if the Orcs will be able to develop and the sculpture may be questioned.

The personalities of the Orcs meant that without using the skills they learned would disappear. Weed worried about this possibility.

However since there were now some orcs who had the skills and sculptures, he felt that things would work out.

Weed’s job had been to plant a seed.

The rest was up to the orcs, whether the seed would grow or not.

“The sculpture. Chwiik. Orcs are smarter easily. Chwi Chwi Chwi Chwi.”

“Made an effort, chwik.”

Sculpting Master of the Orcs has been completed

You cannot predict at all what they are making, not even the orcs themselves are aware.

Quest Reward: Orcs has increased reputation as a sculptor.

Your Contribution Points has increased by 34.

You have acquired a new skill!

A Summoning skill has been acquired.

Summon Sculpture: Summoning type skill

By consuming mana, you will be able to call and summon the sculpture you have made.

The consumption will become larger according to the size and artistic value of the sculpture.

If you try to summon a sculptural lifeform, the consumed mana will be 10 times higher.

It was a very useful skill for Weed.

“I could use this anywhere, but I don’t really need it.”

Even though this time it is only a petite size Wyvern.

1-2 times the mana was discarded the moment when he tried to summon the dead.

I can just order them to go and wait, i don’t have to use mana.

‘I don’t really know but summoning Bingryong at the start is probably going to be hard. Since the wyverns have a low artistic value, this skill would be occasionally be helpful.’

Bulchwi handed over a map that was made of leather.

“We found this, but it’s just gonna be useless for us to use anyways. Chwichichis. So I’m giving it. Chwichwiiig. To you Karichwi.”

– You have acquired a map of a hidden gem mines in the Versailles Continent.

It was very precious for someone who has jewelry skill. He was as cheerful if he's a female student getting a luxurious bag.

"No, there's no need to give this to me, chwiik, but since it's your wish for me to have it I'll take it gladly."

Unfortunately, when Weed looked at the map, it belonged to the Kingdom of Harpan.

There is no doubt that an excavation for the gem mines have not yet started.

If you beat the monsters and developed the mines, he could get a great return. But also in the vicinity, there would be prestigious guilds that would interfere and used it for exploitation!

'I'm just going to sell this to the Miners Guild and people who might be interested.'

He could also sell it to traders. If not, finding people who would want to give this to Harpan Kingdom to raise their contributions would not be hard.

"If you have something more to say then say so, Chwichiig!"

“Karicwhi, there is a little dangerous task that I want to ask. Chwiigchwiig!”

“What, chwis”

“Chwichwichwichwiik!”

Then, images started to pour out in the eyes of Weed.

***

– Gyooooo.

A Chronodon opened huge wings was flying through the sky. It passed quickly through clouds, mountains and rivers.

-Kiyaooo!

The Chronodon was going on a rampage and breathed flames onto the ground. It burned the land and made rivers of fire.

The Chronodon was flying and created a sea of fire on the ground!

The Orcs built a stronghold on the mountains.

Although they primarily hunts monsters and animals, they also

raised fruit trees for a living. The young Orcs and female Orcs looked after the fruit inside the stronghold. The Orc Warriors were holding glaives and spears as they guard the fort.

The Chronodon could be seen on the sky and its fire breath rained down onto the stronghold and mountains.

-Kuwaaaaa.

A huge blast came down from the skies towards the Orcs which caused the stronghold to be caught on fire.

“Chwi, Chwiiiiiis!”

The Orcs tried to stop the fire and was jumping up and down but it was useless.

The Orc Warriors fired poorly made arrows towards the Chronodon but with its poor accuracy and specifications, it almost did no damage.

The fire even moved towards the skinny trees in the mountains and created an enormous wildfire. Eventually, the roaring fire burned off by itself. After that, what remained was just the black ruins of the stronghold and not even 1 orc survived.

After the Chronodon did its devastation, it expanded it wings and flew to another place as every one of its own kin joined and gathered altogether.

Soon, hundreds of Chronodons covered the sky.

“We have to get rid of the Chrodons, chwiichwis. It’s going to be a lot of hard work. Even so a lot of Orcs just went and cowered back to the bosoms of their mothers.”

Listening to the words of Bulchwi, Weed had other thoughts running through his head.

The disgrace and plea of the orcs did not garner and sympathy or empathy.

‘Chronodons are usually around level 315.’

They belonged to the monsters which are very difficult to hunt.

“That one is, the biggest Chronodon there is, chwichwiiig. That bastard really is. Chwit!”

It was really bad when it comes about the Boss Chronodon. It leads the crown and the level of is this leader is known to be more than 480.

“Karichwi, one of your friends Orc Gelchwi also died. Chwichwichwis!”

“Gelchwi is… chwiik!”

Whenever Weed is around Yuroki Mountains, the one who helps him during hunting is Orc Warrior Gelcwhi. But later on he received his jealousy because he was very popular within female Orcs, he was a very thickly muscled orc.

“The orcs did not just die, chwiik, they found out what the Chronodon’s like, they like big bird eggs. Karichwi will you help us?

Battle Against Chronodons!

The Orcs met a bunch of Chronodons during the process of expanding their territory.

The Chronodons is a very ferocious race and prefer to just destroy things rather than talk about it. Each time the Orc’s settlements were burned, it was done by them.

As long as the Chronodons are live, not just the orcs, but other living things will not be able to live at the El Nath Mountains and the Grey Lakes.

Countless of Orcs were defeated by the Chronodons and they start their expeditions only to be wiped out every time.

Difficulty: Sculptor Master Quest

Quest Limit: Sculpting Skill Advanced Level 8 or higher

The Orcs must fight and finish a victory against the Chronodons.

At least 35 Chronodons must be killed.

– The Battle Against Chronodons Quest has started.

Background information

The Orcs found out that Chronodons were very frantic about large bird eggs. However, these large birds avoid the Chronodons by fleeing to other places and never left anything away. You could create sculptures of bird eggs to persuade the Chronodons to go into the ground so that the Orcs could fight them.

Not just tactics and sculptures were needed, but a tight collaboration with the Orcs is also required for the quest!

‘If this quest is to succeed, the forces of the Orcs is going to increase a little more.’

As the Orcs continued to expand more, he was commissioned to get rid of this great obstacle in front of them.

“I Karichwi, will have the Orcs do this. Chwiiiig.”

– You have accepted the quest.

Chapter 4: Bird Egg Sculpture

The Chronodons were monsters that most people didn't often meet in the Versailles Continent. The information boards and various message boards didn't have much information about them around.

Title: Meet the Chronodon

It's the worst, really the worst!

Today was so unlucky.

A Chronodon herd was flying in the Habis Plains.

It was a place where merchants and users pass by. Except for a few lucky people, it was now deadly silent. The town was on fire and has been burned down.

Title: I died

I looked as I died. I watched as I died.

I had the chance to run up against the Chronodon. It will attack unconditionally.

Title: How to live after meeting a Chronodon!

You can’t.

It’s really awful.

Even though he had never fought them directly, looking at the boards and clips would still equip Weed with the basic knowledge about the Chronodons.

“It’s not that hard to hunt them one by one, but they are usually in groups and anyone can get overwhelmed by their retaliatory actions, and their numbers……”

If you missed even one Chronodon during hunting, they would bring all their companions and come back later to take revenge.

It was a flying creature that flies and can breathe fire on everyone that’s why they were mostly avoided during huntings.

Although the humans who lived in towns or on the mountains sometimes encountered the Chronodons, it could be said that the only safe method to avoid them was lay low and out of sight. Hunting them to gain loot or experience was a waste of time since it was too dangerous, and had a high likelihood of death.

“As flying creatures, placing good traps would certainly catch groups of them.”

Weed scouted out the El Nath Mountains.

The reason he directly looked at El Nath Mountains was because its terrain seemed like it would be an important element to the battle.

Creating a place with fake eggs through sculpting and using it to lure the Chronodons would make the aspect of battle different.

“If the Orcs fight on ridge of mountain or canyon they are good as dead and there’s gotta be a place where soaring is blocked by trees..”

Weed swiftly hopped on to the El Nath Mountains.

Thanks to his Quadruple Run skill, the stamina consumption to climb the mountain was lessened considerably.

Of course it was uncool. But one should not only focus about his appearance!

The El Nath Mountains was quite rough and its slope was steep and the road was also considerably high.

“The terrain in this place seems to be quite favorable.”

Due to the Chronodons, areas of charred and burnt trees could be found.

There were also not many monsters and mountain beasts so perhaps it could be guessed that it was an area often visited by the Chronodons. Sometimes, there would be 1 of those Chronodons that would fly through the sky, its size was much larger than that of the Wyverns.

Whenever there was an unexpected sight of a Chronodon, Weed would hide underneath the thick trees.

“Only by placing a good trap will the Orcs be able to catch them in groups.”

The goal of this quest is the victory of the Orcs. Although it was difficult, with their excellent fertility, even if they fail at first, they could still drag it on to continue and this was their tremendous advantage, the ability to continue and challenge them and prolong the fight.

They could only do it with tactics!

Of course, if his first attempt fails, his intimacy, contribution points, along with the trust of the Orcs would also decline.

***

Choi Sang-jun fell on his desk during break.

“Ah, it’s difficult. It seems like I fought all night yesterday at Pormos Castle.”

Choi Sang-jun was very popular in his department as part of the Black Lion Guild.

The Black Lion Guild fought a battle on Pormos Castle of Tullen Kingdom last night.

The industry of Tullen Kingdom has developed well due to its paved roads and rich materials. Since merchant wagons could move quickly through the paved roads, trade was being done actively and as a result, its population was quite large.

The Kingdom of Tullen is where the Black Lion Guild has its greatest influence and the Beden Guild was centered around Las Boa Castle!

In the Versailles Continent, they were in the top 20 favorites when it comes to the two-sided guild wars that’s why the people were very interested.

Girls came near Choi Sang-jun.

“Sunbae-nim, tell us what happened.”

“Didn’t you see it on TV?”

“I have, but I want to hear it directly from the people from their experience. It was really an unbelievably great battle!”

“I did a lot of running about..... I don’t know whether it came out nice in the broadcast.”

“As an elite player of the Black Lion Guild, didn’t you go beyond the walls?”

“Ah, that’s right, I did!”

Regardless of the department, stories about Royal Road were the most popular.

There were a lot of people that was playing Royal Road, so it is expected that if you belong to the elite players of the Black Lion Guild, you would easily be a celebrity.

There was also a much superior user known in every department, and that was the name of Lee Hyun.

Stories in the past about Choi Sang-jun, Min So-ra, Lee Yoo-jung, Park Soon-jo, Joo Eun-hee, Hong Sun-ye’s adventures exploring a dungeon that attributed with him had spread. Turning in the adventure tasks, Lee Hyun did not really care. The unrealistic stories about his outstanding success as a Dwarf Sculptor have quietly spread among the students.

And the name of his character was actually also Weed!

As he couldn’t help but doubt, Choi Sang-jun told the other students.

“Does being God of War Weed near us making sense? You can’t be saying that that Hyung is Weed? Plus, he’s also a dwarf.”

“Although.. I don’t think Lee would look like it too. You’re kidding me if you tell me that this oppa that I meet in school that cuts class and sleeps during school is the charismatic Weed.”

“There’s also the time when I answered him when he asked whether a certain professor did not check attendance.”

“Look. This must be some mistake, I’m telling you.”

Thanks to Choi Sang-jun, he was able to bury the topic regarding Lee Hyun without having the gossip become larger.

However, the party who participated in the adventurous tasks were still continuing to harbor doubts about Lee Hyun.

***

The broadcasting stations were trying to record a large surplus of broadcasts in Royal Road for the crowding ads.

Their fierce competition for audience ratings became like a war

now.

“Are there persons who have newly completed quests?”

“A quest to find the master of the Broken Sword. It managed to become a hot issue on the boards, but no one could complete it.

“Learn more who has completed it and see if we could put it on air.”

“Yes, I will send someone.”

The broadcasting stations established an extensive research and spared no effort to inform the viewers about the affairs in the Versailles Continent.

“How are the ratings on the Battle of Pormos Castle?”

“We are at 3.4%. If combined with other stations, it would be at 25.9%.”

“How did the KMC Media do?”

“They are at 7.5%”

The KMC Media has very good sound effects and camera control. This further strengthened their benefit of having a quick-reporting

system. The other broadcasting stations were late by one step and a part of them could only envy them.

But the staff of KMC media actually hated that fact.

“We’re working overtime even today?”

“There is currently an invasion being led by the Embinyu Church. The director mobilized the broadcasting station and has gathered us!”

The sudden live events that were taking place on Royal Road must be relayed immediately and depending on the response of the other broadcasting stations, certain improvements were being made.

Each of the broadcasting stations had their own competitive staff. And with their insufficient personnel, they rarely leave their work on time.

“This month, there will be specialized programs on hunting dungeons every Monday, not on a Tuesday. Aren’t there any knowledgeable persons about it in here? ”

“The Almighty program director took care of it and directed that one.”

Then leave it at that, and what happened to Basic Quest Guides for Beginners?

“It will start next Wednesday afternoon throughout the country.”

“The advertisements?”

“It’s already slightly more than half, it seems it will be able to fill up to 80% before it starts in the country.”

The day of the broadcasters had their minutes and seconds flying by as they competed. As the 24-hour broadcast system was equipped, the scale of the stations also increased.

Even though the viewership of the Royal Road in the night was high, the broadcasting team were always prepared with a backup program in addition to the regular one for emergencies.

KMC Media, CTS Media, LK Games, On Studios, Digital Media, CHN Broadcasting.

Each of the stations having a high share of audience and spared no expense for equipping themselves with the best staff.

“Weed! Weed has started his adventure; Start broadcasting, immediately.”

“I don’t care anything about the other broadcasts. Disconnect the current broadcast, circumstances will be explained later.”

A dedicated team was created for the special program called ”Weed”.

When Weed’s adventures were broadcasted in this program, the audience would always jump for joy. Advertising sales were the additional parts of income, once the viewers count grew up.

If the adventures of the Weed weren’t broadcasted by their stations immediately, it’d be no wonder that they’d lose viewers to other stations.

The owners of the eateries and pastry stores near the stations would also await the day Weed’s adventures would be aired. Because on days like that, dozens of the station staff would buy toasts, and bread to prepare.

***

“Chwiik! The day after tomorrow after the sun goes out, Chwichiwchwis. When the moon comes, we’re going to go to Grey Lake. Karichwi, you get ready until then.”

The Orc Warriors were preparing to leave El Nath Mountains for the Chronodons. The elite Orc warriors that were mobilized in Bursilia were numbered 120. Flashing glaives and leather armors could be seen upon the Orc Warriors. Having survived countless battles, they boast of being the surviving veterans.

Once the quest returns as a failure, the Orcs would also be receiving a considerable blow.

Even with their vigorous breeding capabilities, they wouldn't be able to repair the damage since these experienced Orc Warriors have been repeatedly battling as they were being raised.

Other than some invited users, the progress of Weed on his quest regarding the Orc locals was not known at all.

'There's little time.'

Weed prepared for the quest and even went back to Montvertruria to make ceramics with his friends. As their experience on making ceramics was being increasingly solid, decent works are also being produced en masse.

"So this time, you're doing a quest for the Orc Stronghold. Have fun!"

"Isn't catching Chronodons dangerous? They are flying monsters that's why they're pretty hard to catch."

They could just leisurely talk when they were making ceramics as Irene and Surka were interested in Weed's said quest.

The girls visited places from here and there and most of them liked the adventure.

“Can we also go?”

Hwaryeong had an idea and would try to secretly follow. And Bellot who was watching from the background, it looked obvious that she wanted to also go. Nowadays, she was having occasional dreams about their adventures on Jigolaths. In life, she did have much opportunity to experience thrilling moments.

One of the best reasons why Royal Road is popular among people is because you could enjoy adventuring here.

For Weed, those hints of wanting to go were all around and already out and wide open.

“Well, you guys couldn’t interfere with the quest. Because it requires for the Orcs to fight so just watch.”

“Kkyaa, really!”

Yurin used her Picture Teleportation from Bursilia without having to go along with the Orc Warriors towards the El Nath Mountains since they could not wait.

“Ah, maybe it’s alright. Sure, I also wanted to see.”

Despite of the good news, Maylon held her two hands together and was restless. She was on a dilemma since on that day, they

have a program in the broadcasting station.

Going to the station would get her bonuses while going with the wind and going to El Nath Mountains would get her what she really wanted.

She was a live broadcast host and her mood was different since she was leaving her other co-workers with her assigned tasks just to be involved in the adventure.

Pale calmed her down.

“Don’t worry about it and just do what you want.”

Maylon showed a tearful face.

“Huhu, my vacation days this year is already spent.”

She felt bad for her co-workers that’s why she decided to just work. As host and for the sake of the viewers, she thought it would just be better to go.

“Hunting Chronodons.....”

Weed was hunting on Montvertruria and decided to modify some pre-made plans. Originally, his quest was about creating sculptures perfectly enough to be mistaken as a bird egg and to entice for the Orcs to attack.

Needing to seize 35 Chronodons. If the sculptor here had no ability to fight, there will be no guarantee to do this quest even how many times he did this. It was indeed a difficult request.

The trust will decline and with the deaths, his level will also fall a lot.

But Weed was not some common sculptor since he also developed a lot of offensive stats and skills.

“The leather of the Chronodons should rather be on the expensive side when sold... probably. A herd of the Chronodons usually has about 90 of them. If these guys disappeared, the Orcs would even have a larger area to expand.”

***

After two days, Weed returned to Bursillia and met Orc Lord Bulchwi.

“I need a favor, chwit!”

“What happened, chwichwik!”

“I need Orc Warriors. Chwiiig!”

“Chwiichwiig. If you ask, how many Orcs will you need along the

way. Chwiichwi!”

Orc army can be mobilized with the current Contribution Points and Intimacy.

Orc Warriors 240,000

Orc Champions 80,000

Orc Shaman 5000

Orc’s contribution was crucial and the Orc armies had a high intimacy with Weed, enough to be referred as brothers. Karichwi had built up his contribution and familiarity with Orcs, after he led the Orc army in the fight of Undead Legion.

‘I think it’s still little compared to the enemy.’

Weed thought that the Orcs were stingy in providing him support, considering his massive contribution towards the Orcs.

He thought like that because he didn’t know that majority of the Orcs had already left for Morata.

“It’s going to be around 10,000 Orc Champions. Chwichichi!”

“Alright, chwiik! I’ll get them ready”

– Contribution Points towards the Orc has been reduced.

If a huge number of orcs died in the battle, a lot in his contribution points would be reduced. Battles could build up the experience of the Orcs and if the battle is won, Contribution Points would also increase. Chronodons are obstacles to the prosperity of orcs. So if the quest is cleared, his Contribution Points would increase a lot.

“Gotta get rid of these things quickly. Chwiiik!”

***

The Sculptural Lifeforms fought fiercely with the monsters every day in the vicinity of Vargo fortress.

“Keuoooo!”

The contribution of early-born wyverns and the big bodied Bingryong in the battle was no less. They would hide and head out, doing the scouting as they go around in groups and hunt monsters.

The strongest is the Pheonix and Goldman who mainly shoot arrows and Yellowy who was always being overlooked. While those Sculptural Lifeforms who were given life on Jigolaths were on Vargo Fortress and reducing the monsters there.

Thanks to these night and day activities of the Sculptural Lifeforms, the risk of getting swept by these monsters has decreased.

“Kkieeeeg! I’m back.”

Wy-3 who went away just came back and the Wyvern went and welcomed him.

“Thanks a lot, Wy-3.”

“Kklugkklug. This, time I went very far.”

The Wyverns who have their time for themselves did not really envy him. Because of the dirty nature of their Master, Wy-3 like it more when he gets lots of free time.

Wy-3, who sitting on the ground, laid down on his stomach and said.

“He said that he needed more personnel now. Master is calling us to go to Bursilia.”

For the Wyverns, those words were like lightning!

“Kklugkklug, when are we going?”

“We have to come by tomorrow evening.”

Considering the distance between them and Bursilia, they could arrive if they flew overnight.

“Too bad.”

“Golgolgol. There’s a lot to do.”

“Mooomooomoo.”

Bingryong, Goldman, Yellowy and the others were all watching from the sidelines.

“Bingryong, you have to come.”

“Kwaaaaeeg!”

“And as you come, go and bring Goldman.”

“Golgolgol!”

Yellowy’s eyes narrowed down and his tail swayed as he tried to cheerily laugh.

“And Yellowy, you come with Light Wing.”

“Mooooo.”

The cries of Yellowy rang out.

***

El Nath Mountains.

Weed along with the 120 Orc warriors arrived at night and commenced operations for the Quest.

Kkang! Kkang! Kkang!

“Shall I make it properly now?”

Sculpting stone sculptures of birds and eggs. It was already enough for Weed to call it a cinch.

“Real art has got to be demonstrated here.”

Indeed, making fakes is what could be said Weed specialized in. Because he had already saw all kinds of quality of work since he also started from a lower proficiency in Sculpting. However, he needed to place it until morning that’s why he needed to hurry up on preparing since time wasn’t really on the generous side.

The Chronodons have a low night vision that's why they go and hunt for food when the sun is up and not when it's evening or dawn.

Having excessive workload on a tight hour was indeed something that every worker in the Republic of Korea have experienced and was tired of. He was already familiar with the culture in elementary school when he cram his studies and it's not impossible for him to do.

"Then, I have to make a shady place rather than a bright place so that they would not notice that the eggs were fake from a distance. And the others would find it hard to flock on us. It must be a well-hidden place."

A few Chronodons would appear and would pretty much ignore to be cautious.

It was not an exaggeration that Weed's stone sculptures were excellent. Those round white stone sculptures then using tree branches to make a bird's nest and spread it naturally.

The Orcs prepared 8 large stones!

Since he needs to create big bird eggs, The Orcs brought stones which size was already enough that it couldn't be hugged by the arms.

The Orcs, who were preparing to fight came heavily armed and

so they couldn’t bring a lot of heavy stones because they were already tired from wearing their gear.

“I guess it would be better to make more bird eggs than I need. I think having them distracted would make it easier to hide and camouflage.”

Due to the lack of stone, Weed just made the bird egg by baking the soil and putting glaze on it.

Making ceramics includes sophistication and artistry but he just made it so that it had a similar form.

Weed made a perfect nest for the birds to lay their eggs this morning.

If this trap works then they would not be too bad to eat!

A new way on how to use sculpting!

Romuna admired while stroking the stone.

“Wow, excellent work.This big round thing really looks like a bird egg.”

Bellot wandered around the sculptures looking for any flaws.

But she saw they were appetizing bird eggs.

“Sculpting in this type of style, I never thought it was possible. I didn’t know too much about sculptures, but it appears there really is no limit to sculpting.“

Whenever the sun rises, the Chronodons will start to come in flocks. His friends already became excited about what would happen.

A Chronodon was flying over the El Nath Mountains.

Weed and his friends, along with the Orcs are completely disguised and hid their bodies in a large pit around the bushes.

Weed wanted the Orcs to follow his orders better so he changed into Karichwi. The body of the Chronodon was visible from the sky as they hid stealthily between the leafs.

‘Come on down.’

Anxiously waiting they sat down on the ground as the sounds of the Chronodon crying echoed through the sky.

The Chronodon was looking for its breakfast and noticed the bird eggs that were placed under the valley. It checked if there were any other hostile monsters or other Chronodons on the ground as they would contend over the food.

“Charge!”

“Finish them.”

When the Chronodon went down to the ground, the Orcs who were hiding rushed in.

The steel snare activated and threw a steel net to capture it.

The Chronodon emitted flames, but the more experienced Orc warriors carefully sidestepped the fire and attacked the trapped Chronodon.

The Orcs have succeeded in the hunting of the Chronodons.

Remaining Number for the Quest: 34

You have acquired a Chronodon leather.

“Good start!”

After a while, Chronodons came back and Orcs started hunting.

Because of the excellent position of the traps and the combat abilities of the Orcs, the hunt went easier than they thought it would be.

By noon, a total of 7 Chronodons were caught!

Weed was fighting as an Orc thus their hunting speed was very fast. The best moments for the Orcs to attack the Chronodons was when they opened their beaks to tear apart the eggs and swallow them.

The sun was in its zenith floating up high as Weed and the Orcs ate a meal of dried jerky at noon. There was no damage to the Orcs yet, and the quest was safely proceeding.

In the afternoon, the Chronodons entered as packs of 3s or 2s.

‘To prevent damage to the Orc army, we need to rest a little.’

Regardless if it was a pack of 2 or 3 Chronodons, they were beaten down to the ground by the Orcs without hesitation.

With Weed’s Charisma, they quickly threw the nets in order to poke them with a spear using close combat.

The hunting was easy, due to the best Orc warriors present in the hunting tribe. Weed’s level was high and the chronodons which were fallen and trapped in the nets weren’t a threat anymore.

Then, things started happening when only 21 were left to finish the quest.

In the sky, a total of 5 chronodons appeared at once.

And then he turned around to scout the place, after which 3 chronodons landed down to earth.

Pale who was behind and came along as a spectator, gulped.

‘You might get caught this time.’’

Weed’s friends were nervous.

The problem would arise if the three Chronodons realized that the eggs are fake. A greater crisis would then occur if the Chronodons in the sky also joins the battle after Orcs start attacking.

Weed didn’t find the whole quest as difficult, but he found it problematic if the Orcs would be roasted by the fire and couldn’t get out.

‘They should start eating it now, isn’t it? They would notice it that the eggs are fake.’

‘Quickly hunt those 3 Chronodons and step back to wait for the next opportunity……’

Romuna and Surka became anxious when they saw the Orcs at

risk.

Since Weed had not signaled the Orcs to run out, the Orcs still hid and did not come out of their hiding.

The Chronodons approached to eat the eggs.

It’d be wiser to use the opportunity rather than doing nothing.

The Chronodons pecked out the bird eggs with their beaks.

After the outer shell of the fake egg was broken, the fragrance of meat started leaking!

Chronodons swallowed up the small eggs as whole, that were scattered around.

– Eukekeke (Delicious)

-Ukkyakkya, ukkyalu (Gives taste. It’s the best taste.I haven’t eaten such a delicious egg in the history of my flying around.)

-Kiyalululu (That is why we won’t break the eggs).

The two of the Chronodons which were flying in circles landed down to eat the eggs.

Weed cooked these.

The Chronodons landed on a place closest to the eggs without stepping on them.

The outer shell was made using baked soil, and the inner contents were egg and ostrich egg contents.

-The Chronodons have praised you on how delicious the food that they ate was.

Cooking Skill proficiency has increased.

He got through the monster by using his mastery in Cooking Skill.

For Weed, this is not a very good news since the monsters were eating without paying!

He could not forgive free eating customers.

‘No one will get away.’

Weed gestured the Orcs to go for a sneaky approach.

They went to the nets once the Chronodons were caught in order to bombard them.

The Chronodons ate as their minds became occupied and did not already know what was happening in the vicinity.

“Attack!”

Weed along with the Orcs, struck at them all at once.

They cast a snare into their wings and legs then covered them with the net.

A perfect surprise in the middle of eating!

And Weed used his skill.

“Sculpting Blade!”

A simple but effective skill with destructive power!

Although he could use Moonlight Sculpting Blade, he has low mana with his state as an Orc.

Chronodons breathe fire as they were trapped in their nets and snares. However, they also placed hidden water on the rocks to the place where the bird egg were set up in advance.

Weed was prepared for the situation, just in case things didn’t go

as planned he had set even more traps to counter the Chronodons.

In some of the large clay bird eggs, the Orcs smashed the shell and jumped out which surprised the Chronodons.

Due to your outstanding commanding ability, Leadership has increased by 1.

After hunting 5 altogether, only 16 Chronodons were left to be killed to complete the quest. Even though the bird eggs that they created has slightly decreased, more than half of the target monsters were already killed.

“Karichwi, you really have the qualities of an Orc Lord. Chwiichwiig!”

“Many of your Orc tricks are cunning. chwis.”

Weed received a lot of praises from the Orcs to himself.

“Today, before the stars comes up, chwichiwchwis. We can do it in no time, chwichwichwiig.”

“If these guys get away, chwichwig. And bring their kin. We’re all dead. chwischwis!”

“Karichwi is the pride of the Orcs, chwiiig. Karichwi, I assure you that we are like brothers even if we are going to go away and live

together, chwiiiiik!”

The Orcs talked among themselves.

Weed was gazing at the sky and was effortlessly waiting for the Chronodons to appear.

Then, when he was listening to the stories of the Orcs, he suddenly got a goosebumps.

He’s even more shocked compared to when the 5 Chronodons appeared.

“What do you mean when you said you leave and live with me, chwiik.”

“Moratna, chwik.”

“Going to see Karichwi in Moratna. Stupid chwiiichwichichig.”

“Tell me about it, chiichwii. I’m going to be happy.”

“Karichwi living with his Bursilia brothers. North of the Continent, where some went to find the house of Karichwi. Chwichichwiig.”

Weed’s face turned yellow.

“And, a few of them went? chwichwis.”

“It’s only 150,000, chwig. Don’t you like it. Chwiik!”

“If Karicwhi is glad, chwichichwis. you can tell by his face, it is very obvious.”

“Congratulations, Karichwi. Chwichichichwis.”

The Morata that he cherished and raised was eventually going to be visited by flock of Orcs!

Since Weed also experienced the life of an Orc, he had no extreme prejudice against them.

He was proud of the culture and architecture of Morata and he did not have any discrimination against Orcs.

The Orc species itself is already attractive enough. But, with the nature of the Orcs species, they do not pay taxes on their city or kingdom.

‘I heard that if the Orcs were forced to pay taxes, they would do riots.....’

That was paying no taxes on Weed’s territory. What’s worse is when the Orcs did a large scale breeding. It’s too painful to

imagine!

‘’No, they’ll still never safely reach the far north. The sense of direction the Orcs are really poor. With their sense of direction, if they met dangerous monsters, they would die. And I did not hear the news so how are they going to go access the land up north.’

If the Orcs does not have any Sea Navigation Skill, it would be more dangerous. These 150,000 Orcs residing there would already be a tremendous power but it is already a given that this long-distance migration is not going to go smoothly.

‘At best, they would make a log raft, take it with them and go. They may reach the wrong place and the ocean currents will sweep them away. With the poorly made raft, the rope would unwind then they would be swept and will not even have the chance to swim through the waves hitting them. At least one whirlpool and storm would sweep them away……’

Weed was hoping for the annihilation of the Orcs.

***

The 3 Mad Sharks of Becky Nin.

During the trip to the Jigolaths, Weed had met the three sharks during his trip and had enjoyed the company of the pirates on board for the most part. The ghost ship sailed, the first mates and rowers travelled widely around the seas, plundering and trading at

random places here and there.

“Hoist up the sails. Let’s go plundering!”

They were people who enjoy the freedom of the sea!

The damage between the fleets of Pirate King Griffith and Drinfield have grown extensively.

Previously, Griffith had observed etiquette and admitted his wrongs in small doses, but now the pirate ships within Griffith’s influence have expanded to a point where his desires grew as well. By using the treasure map he found by chance, he was able to find buried pirate treasure.

Whenever he raises his pirate flag, he was able to command a kraken.

In most kingdoms, a price was put on their heads as the three mad sharks of Becky Nin became the deities of the pirate world.

To consider only those ships in the pirate fleet, there were now more than 30.

“What are those?”

“Seems like Orcs, Captain!”

They discovered an Orc group which was cutting trees in the seashore. Young and old, there were many Orcs who were making a raft to get a ride across.

Orc Lord Seechwi!

She and Geomchi2 both joined on this to head North with a bunch of Orcs .

Seechwi had been tasked to lead the Orcs and was meticulously preparing by taking massive amounts of wood.

In order for the Orcs to travel to the North, the imported food they brought was insufficient. They are unable to hunt while moving and other kingdoms do not have open borders for the Orcs.

The Orcs could only inevitably choose the ocean.

Some Orcs were glad they were lucky enough to go to Morata.

“Orcs attack and hoard experience by doing things constantly. I do not know if there will be any loot.”

The 3 Mad Sharks of Becky Nin were looking at the thousands of Orcs that were going to the sea, they looked at all of the chieftains that could raise their levels.

If they shot the rafts made by those Orcs, they could easily earn

experience points.

However, Seechwi found them and kindly advised them.

“We’re going to go to Morata, chwichwichis. Please don’t disturb us, chwiim!”

Unfortunately, the 3 Mad Shark Becky-nin did not have any sympathy for the female Orcs. But they were very curious as to why Orcs are going to go live in Morata.

“What’s going on?”

“Orc Karichwi, chwis! No, Weed-nim, we’re going to migrate to Morata with Weed-nim. Chwichwichwiig!”

Hye, Fractal and Board Mir always recalled Weed whenever they were drinking.

“Our teacher is actually not different from God of War Weed. We learned the bad things from him. Yet, we can’t even go toe-to-toe with him.”

Now looking back, bad things happen whenever their destiny tries to meet with Weed. They could become famous and do their wicked deeds properly because of what they’ve learned.

Although, every time they do wicked deeds to Weed they still

lived so it doesn't really matter at all. Unfortunately(?), the 3 Mad Sharks of Becky-Nin are not really evil by nature. Becoming famous among the pirates, Drinfelt and Griffith were thinking they had a great debt to Weed giving a weak point in the seas and allowing them to dominate.

[TL: That question mark was left by the author]

"Lets let them ride on our ship."

"Aren't those Orcs too much?"

"I know some people among the sailors and the crew who knows how to make ships."

"Most of us knows a little bit."

If one lived long enough on a ship, their Shipbuilding skills would naturally increase its proficiency until Beginner Level 3.

"All of you go and help the Orcs make their boats. Even building a simple raft would also increase your Shipbuilding Skill. "

"Is that a good plan?"

Hye, Fractal and Board Mir did it as if it was their job and helped with the migration of the Orcs. The time to create the rafts has been greatly reduced and they gave a course guide about voyaging

in the sea as well.

Chapter 5: The Birth Of Ceramists

Ever since the hunting of the Chronodons by the Orcs started, there were no still accidents that happened. The bird eggs were so well made that they were already enough to attract the Chronodons. There were also the skillful warriors and hunter Orcs to take into account.

When there was only 4 left for the completion of the quest, 6 of them suddenly appeared all at once.

Every second was a dangerous moment.

‘This is the end.’

All six of them descended to the earth as Weed and the fearless Orcs waited for a surprise attack.

“Chwiiik, Catch those bastards.”

“Don’t forget the revenge for the Orcs. chwis!”

“Let’s defeat these guys and go back to Bursilia. chwiicwhiiiig!”

Although it was the final attack, the Orcs were still not careless and distracted. While there was also some mild behaviors, Weed’s leadership and nagging while keeping an eye on them kept them

from doing so.

-Kkaeraek Kkaeraek(It's a trap. Let's escape).

-Kkiet (Let's eat the bird egg)!

A struggle between the Chronodons!

After the 4 climbed up the beautiful net, it was already easy enough to hunt the remaining two.

The Chronodons breathed flames as they were caught on the net. But, it was a slow process.

It's like there are spoon and chopsticks on the dining table for this quest. There were different ways to handle the situation!

Then, a voice was heard from the skies.

-Kkukkkyeeeeee(The Orcs are attacking our kin)!

There was 1 Chronodon that was passing by and witnessed the spectacle.

-Kyalalululu!

-Kukekyaaaaalog!

-Keukikeuki!

The Chronodons who were in the net and the Chronodon in the skies were having a conversation. Given the circumstances, their words were probably asking them to be rescued.

But the Chronodon who was flying through the sky changed its path and did not come down to land. Perhaps it was going to go back and lead a bunch of its kin.

“Weed! What do we do?”

Pale and his other party members who were hiding and just sightseeing sprang out in surprise.

They saw that their own kin was being hunted so the Chronodons would probably come back for revenge.

A huge crisis might fall upon them.

“Once I deal with these guys. chwiiig!”

Weed thoroughly eliminated the Chronodons who were hanging on the net.

The Orcs killing all 35 Chronodons has been completed.

You have accomplished the terms of the quest.

Sculpting Mastery has increased.

The reputation of Orcs as Sculptors will improve.

Leadership has increased by 4.

Quest complete!

Weed commanded the Orcs.

“Orcs, go back first. chwiik!”

“Karicwhi, no way… chwis.”

“Chwichwichwis, please could you…..”

The eyes of the Orcs turned fierce.

“It’s not going to be fair to leave you alone to eat these delicious eggs, chwiichwiiiik!”

“If it’s really bad for Orcs, chwichichwig. Then we should split it and eat them with each other.”

The Orcs' thinking was just up to that level.

Bellot just sighed dramatically.

'Idiot Orcs, I'm just trying to tell them I'm going to send them first. To protect them from being caught by the Chronodons.....!'

Weed became stuck thinking about how to deal with the situation when his face suddenly toughened.

"You guys, go first, chwiiik. I'm going to guard the back of my brothers, chwis!"

The Orcs were really going to fight to the end that's why Weed encouraged them twice to thrice harder. When they all had disappeared, he dispelled his Sculptural Transformation. The Orcs were surprisingly sharp, that's why he was quite surprised.

"Whew, they almost got caught!"

"Weed-nim, do you have any plan?"

Pale felt something and asked.

In this situation, when Weed sent the Orcs first, he's got to have some ulterior motive.

“Let’s just first eat these bird eggs together.”

There were still remaining bird eggs that were not broken!

The flames, discharged by the Chronodons during the battle, had cooked the eggs perfectly and deliciously.

He sprinkled the salt, that he created in his journey to Jigolath and ate the eggs together with his party.

***

1 of the Chronodons flew back to their lair.

‘The Orcs killed them all. I’m not going to leave even 1 of them alive.’

If the leader of the Chronodons led them, they could surely avenge their resentments.

When they arrived back to the nests as quickly as possible, their kin was nowhere to be found. It was only filled with traces of the battle that took place nearby along with the lingering scent of salted eggs.

“Kkuwoo?”

The Wyverns, Goldman and Bingryong were at the nest looking at the Chronodons.

At that time, it was projected that there were 10,000 Orcs that raided the nest of the Chronodons.

The Orcs suffered considerable damage while Bingryong and the Wyverns had succeeded in their activities to wipe out the Chronodons.

***

“Chwik. Karichwi, you are just too great. Chwichichig. Without a doubt an incredibly amazing and exceptional Orc.”

Weed went back to Bursilia and lots of praises poured in from the Orc Lord Bulchwi. The fame of Karichwi and his fame with the female Orcs had increased further as well. It was an obvious fact that the males felt nothing but envy towards Karichwi.

“First, I spoke to all of the Orcs, chwichichik. And many of the Orcs believe that sculptures, to the Orcs, are also extremely important, chiwchichik. I, Bulchwi, must also admit it as well, chwik.”

Battle Against Chronodons completed

It is shown that the Orcs are born warriors and have great physical strength.

The flying Chronodons have showed their weakness and you achieved victory based on sculpting.

The territory of the Orcs will expand out on Gray Lake and El Nath Mountains.

Although there were a lot of unknown monsters, the Orcs will think you can overcome any crisis well.

Orc Lord Bulchwi will have respect for sculptures and Orc Sculptors within the tribe will be given more preference.

Fame has increased by 2960

All stats has increased by 3

Friendship with Orcs has increased.

Orc sculptures will be respected better.

The Orcs will develop the culture and knowledge about Sculpting.

Among the innumerable sculptures they are able to create, there

would be a high possibility that there would be unique pieces that the Humans and the Dwarves are unable to create to be born.

This Orc culture made their inner unity become even more firm.

The birth rate of Orc Shamans and Druids has increased.

Through sculptures, they will be able to pass their skills on hunting to their young Orcs.

The Orc Heroes created solidarity between the Orcs species.

Weed solved the quest but rather than rejoicing, he felt as if something was off.

With his Sculpting Master Quest, in the end, he felt that it was somewhat empty!

“This sculpture, chwis. Seems to have improved. Ratzeburg, I’ve been thinking a lot about it. The Orcs have laughed at and played with the Dwarves as if they were toys. Chwiiig!”

Neither past nor the present story between the Orcs and Dwarves was good. Orcs were the most disliked race and were bad with relationships, the Dwarves were also the race the Orcs particularly hated.

“Though in fact, chwichichwig. I want to apologize to them.

Karichwi, I’m trying to give them sculpture as a gift, chiwchichwig. We want you to take this job, chwiiiig.”

Relation Improvement of the Orcs and Dwarves

Orc Lord Bulchwi have known the truth about Ratzeburg and replaced his thoughts about sculptures. Their narrow-mindedness and intolerance caused a division between the disagreeable nature of the Dwarves and them. Apologize first to reconcile with the dwarves.

Because of the generosity of the Orcs, you would probably reach out to the dwarves.

Difficulty: Sculpting Master Quest

Quest Limit: Sculpting Advanced Level 8 or higher.

Must have a close relationship with the Dwarves.

Weed then nodded.

“The Dwarves has beer already embedded in their loud and boorish beards, chwichichichichig! I guess meeting and talking with them is really going to be a bother, chwik!”

– You have accepted the quest

***

“Kehehehe, finally done!”

Mapan was riding his wagon and arrived at Hilswade Castle.

The big shops in the capital of Aidern Kingdom were often selling a lot of luxury goods!

“Hmmm, I don’t really whether could I get a reasonable price for these.”

Mapan bought the ceramics made by Weed along with the ceramics made by their friends in Montvertruria.

His merchant wits felt something, he seemed to be a little salty about his earnings on buying those ceramics.

Weed’s ceramics cost 30 gold each!

Bargaining and selling artwork was difficult; errors could easily be made and the price wasn’t even certain. With Weed’s prior experience in the past on making proper ceramics, it ended up getting sold 30 gold per piece.

Of course, the ceramics that the others made did not even hit outside 5 silver.

“I wonder if this can really sell. I don’t really know, but the market price is going to be a big adventure.”

Mapan carefully steered his wagons containing full of ceramics and headed for the shopping district.

The trading post was surrounded by the residents while bustling sounds could be heard.

“The world is truly difficult to live on.”

The most notable traders that could be seen were importing glass ornamentals and were earning a lot of money. What will I be able to buy with that kind of money?

“Floor carpets are a very rare sight these days. If it was to be sold today, a lot of people would still buy even though it is a little expensive…”

“In the next few weeks, wine created from grapes will come out. In this neighborhood, although it is popular, wouldn’t it be better to bring and sell it on a further location? Oh yeah, there’s also wine that comes from Morata of the north. I wonder what is the taste of wine there. In Aidern Kingdom, the flavor is rich, although a little distasteful but the wine still sells well.”

The words from the residents were a very valuable source of information for the merchants.

Looking at the small portion of the goods in the Versailles Continent could help set what the trend would be.

For Mapan to have an increased prestige and charm, he wore commercial expensive clothes and got out of a carriage.

“The ceramics would probably sell better.....”

His heart was pounding as he opened the door to the bowl store and entered.

With Hilswade Castle being a fairly large place, more than 20 users were picking bowls. Merchants, cooks, there were such a huge variety of people that were purchasing house bowls.

“What brings you here?”

“Just came to sell some things.”

“Let me see it.”

Mapan took out three water jugs and bowls Weed made from his bag.

The shop owner carefully looked at the bowl and shook his head.

“If you did not know, there are also shops in the mountains

where you could buy these products.”

“Ah, is that so?”

Mapan felt embarrassment about the bowls as his face reddened.

“Hihi!’

“Look at him. He’s completely embarrassed from importing cheap bowls.”

“I agree. How useless must it be that a store doesn’t buy them. If it’s passable, I might just give it a shot.”

“When people can’t use it, is it not supposed to be sold to the Goblins?”

In the Versailles Continent, most of the novice traders are a pain in the ass and would just indiscreetly laugh at you!

The merchant attire that Mapan was currently wearing was acquired by going around with the Geomchis and was a rare equipment that’s why users would usually not recognize it.

But, the shop owner of the bowls continued and said.

“I don’t really know much about art. This valuable work is

supposed to be used for holding food or drinks, right?”

“Yeah?”

“You could see these kinds of artworks in luxury good shops and art exchanges.”

With your high valued goods, Fame has increased by 2.

Mapan’s heart rate accelerated.

‘Jackpot!’

Considering the deceptive nature of Weed, what he brought was quite sensitive. But it seemed to be worth at least 30 gold.

Mapan went to see the store owner of the luxury shop of bowls by looking for the store name. If he had any expensive items, this was where they supposedly did business.

He showed the ceramics to the owner to find out their prices.

“Well. This bowl… The color is beautiful and the finished quality is quite excellent. It’s going to be noticed by a lot of nobles. Merchant Mapan, I have stumbled on your name quite a few times. I heard that you were oftenly trading quality good products and have a good reputation in this particular field, I would be generous and give 220 gold for each one.”

It’s already 7 times the amount he had paid Weed, and as for the profit one gets for specialty goods, it was a huge amount!

Besides, Weed created it using dirt, water, fire so the price to produce it is even second to none. Right now, selling and trading it would reap benefits since this it was considered as a profitable business and merchants embraced something that would give tremendous experience and fame.

But, Mapan grabbed the opportunity once it came into view rather than sell. Since he has good items to sell, it was possible for him to ask for more money.

Of course, in the worst case scenario, his intimacy will fall and he would not be able to make another transaction then just go to another kingdom to trade.

“Did you know who did this work, how could it be that the best selling price is at that? It upsets me that you believe that it was a good price for what I brought.”

Mapan slightly noticed that he will come out strongly if he sold out Weed’s name.

“Let’s see. What the… I made such a mistake! It’s the work of the most famous sculptor and adventurer Weed! My whole life, it was my real desire to see Weed’s sculptures.”

Your first trade has succeeded.

Due to selling items, your accounting skill has increased by 0.9%.

The price of Weed's sculptures was influenced by his fame and received an increase in its price.

Due to the numerous adventures of Weed, it was already something normal that he already had a certain level of intimacy with any resident. As the merchants always have wanted, it was their dream to sell trading goods at an overpriced price.

Mapan swallowed his saliva and was thrilled.

It was an exhilarating moment like when a warrior is hunting for a dragon.

"Considering the person who created this, I'm not going to sell this stuff if I was you! These rare bowls of yours are difficult to come by. 280 per piece would be fine. What do you think? Would you sell?"

The gold offered was 50 gold more than what he originally expected. However, the greed of these merchants would always want themselves getting the premium.

"It's not what I expected. I will go and investigate on five other places."

“315 gold! For anything more, look for His Majesty the King, it’s not really practical for a house. What do you think? I think this is fine so would you sell it to me at this price?

Your second trade has succeeded.

Due to selling items, Accounting Skill mastery has increased by 1.2%.

Mapan was also now getting rejected at luxury stores and since it’s difficult to deal with the shops, the correct decision should be to come back to Hilswade Castle.

But, his greed was still the one who took over.

“Well, I think it is a little lower than the ideal price… Didn’t you know that these goods are priceless?”

“Hmmm. Even so, I could only purchase it until 326 gold.”

Your third trade has succeeded

Due to selling items, your Accounting Skill mastery has increased by 1.7%

You have received the ‘Clever Merchant in Selling Valuable Goods’ title.

As a well-known merchant, you would be able to receive and increase in price from the shop owners.

The third trade which was quite tricky also succeeded.

Those were the success stories on the merchant boards are on this level that week.

The weekly success stories on the merchant boards If the conditions for trading goods was good, a positive reputation should spread. With high intimacy, there would be an increased possibility of frequent buyers but rather, there's also the risk of failure and it would be difficult to even attempt to bargain.

The presence of him being Merchant Mapan was not really on the bad side, that's also why he succeeded on bargaining a deal even on his third attempt.

'Where is going to be the fourth?"

Of course, if his 4th bargain is to be successful, not only his accounting skill but he will also be able to get a tremendous reputation and trading gains.

He wasn't even sure whether they could receive special titles, since other merchants hadn't until now.

“I will sell.”

“Thank you very much!”

Mapan had to stop here.

Merchants knew very well that people with excessive greed can only be called as madness.

Right now, Weed’s ceramics is currently more valuable than a priceless treasure. If afterward a lot of pieces has been released, the prices will fall and would even have a stricter quality check. For now, this level of fine luxury was alright.

You have sold works of art and reaped massive profits in the trade

Fame has increased by 3697.

Art has increased by 2.

The traders looked at the message window that floated.

A new trading item, ‘Ceramic’ has been registered in your inventory.

Since that time, they paid close attention to the what the

residents of Aidern Kingdom were saying.

“Have you seen my ceramics? Have you? It has a very clear color and an elegant appearance...

Believe it or not, this is the best jug!

“Sculptor Weed created another great work of art. Ceramics! They were favorite artworks of nobles and rich people that’s why each of the merchants was currently contesting.”

“They said that there is an opportunity to have one of Weed’s works in Hilswade Castle. I think that Merchant Mapan is going to be the next person with great wealth. It would be awesome if you could get regular dealings with him as in the position of those shops.”

– Ceramic is creating a trend.

In Versailles Continent, Kings and nobles desire ceramics.

Although you can sell this in any shop, you can receive a specialty product treatment.

If you sell in large quantities, you could get contribution points for the city.

And furthermore, a new thing happened.

– The Ceramist profession has been created.

A sculptor can change his job to a ceramist, having to make ceramics professionally his profession.

Knowing how to handle clay and fire, this is a job that belongs to the hands the fastest growing handicraft.

New artworks could now be created by this new profession.

***

“Whew….”

Lee Hyun went to his school on foot.

Listening to lectures, eating lunch then going home was his university life!

“This University has no romanticism!”

Actually, Lee Hyun never attended MTs, Club Meetings, sports competitions, or conferences. He never attended all the non-required activities, that’s why he wasn’t really worthy of saying these words that came out from his mouth.

But the truth was, Universities were already being caught up in winning employment wars.

The second year students were already preparing for their future on certifications and language studies. It was ordinary to build up experiences in the related companies. Students preparing for the Civil Service Exam were easy to find and could be found everywhere.

[TL: Civil Service Examination is like exam boards but for those who wants to be government employees which is implemented in a lot of countries.]

“It looks like the era of working to become slaves of the government and companies is growing and the era of living as beggars has come nearer..”

“The world is still land.”

Land Investment!

There was a celebration next week in the Korea University since each of the departments had been readying for the season. Even though the freshmen were tired and not in their right senses.

“I will not go to school during those days, I will just go and play Royal Road.”

Lee Hyun strongly decided.

At that time, the students were reminiscing about their memories when they had enjoyed the festivities, but Lee Hyun only thought about the money people earned and how he could earn money as well.

So far, he was consistently earning considerable amounts of money in Royal Road from the auction items. He was piling up his savings from the salary he was receiving from the adventure videos relayed by the broadcasting stations. Recently, he was being just a little envious about those wealthy kids who had been born wealthy.

Not even a funny comedy program could make him show a very heartwarming smile compared to his hidden account deep inside his drawer.

“Hyung, Hello!”

Park Soon-jo pleasantly greeted him.

“You’re early.”

“Yes. Not long ago, I just finished the quest I was doing.”

Nowadays, it could be noticed who were suffering on quests and Park Soon-jo must be finished on his since his look turned brighter.

He had successfully completed his Thief quest with several stages which is what he called the greatest adventure.

“Hyung, would you like to know about my quest?”

“Oh, the lecture is going to start so if there’s still time then tell me about it.”

“At first, it just started from a simple request from the Thieves Guild. Then I was asked to deliver one gray cloak.”

Sometimes, chain quests lead to quests with a whopping eight times significant increase in scale and difficulty. After finishing a chain quest, the residents of the Bansen Area would usually talk about Thief Nide and talk about him. But it was such large quest that it had already grown larger than usual and was spreading far.

“Have you ever heard of Thief Nide? If Joo Yung-nim finds that thief, he would definitely kill him.”

“Joo Yung-nim had one of the most prized magic items, but someone stole it. The thief fled to some dungeon with it!”

“A great deal of trouble has been done by that thief called Nide. In the dungeon, it seems Nide discovered something great and has it.”

Because it was a quest obtained from the Thieves Guild, after completing the quest, he also gained notoriety. Not only that but

he also got a thief class exclusive item which is the Pelwi Thief Gloves.

[TL: Park Soon-jo is Thief Nide, it's weird how he didn't tell the story of him being Nide."]

"Wow, I'm jealous. I am telling you, the items you get are very high level."

"Hyung is also high level."

"I'm what? I need to earn just to save my family and feed them."

Seoyoon laid down her bag and sat next to Lee Hyun.

It was as if suddenly, that was a fixed seat for Seoyoon as it was the only place she sat on.

"Good morning."

Park Soon-jo greeted her and Seoyoon merely received it by nodding her head slightly.

This overbearing and the natural beauty!

'Elegant, she's actually prettier today compared to yesterday.'

By her simply accepting his greeting, Park Soon-jo was already feeling glorified. Just the fact that Seoyoon knows about you was already enough to give boundless joy.

Thanks to being friends with Lee Hyun he could also sit near Seoyoon.

For most people as long as they were given lunch boxes for lunch time for a year by her and have a warm bonding time, then it would be the happiest memories of their living life. But as for Lee Hyun...

“Yesterday, the bacon omurice was tasteless.”

[TN: Omurice is Omelette-Rice]

“I slept late that’s why I did not have the time to prepare it. Today is the seafood nutrition meal with boiled potatoes, is it alright?”

“It’s delicious.”

Some people were murmuring in the distance as they saw and heard the conversation between Lee Hyun and Seoyoon. Lee Hyun was sometimes seen as the best hyung, but he was also infinitely hated and envied.

***

During the start of the class, the assistant came.

“Okay, okay! Today, your professor is going to be a little late.”

“Then, is it canceled?”

“No. Because of the academic calendar requirement, it couldn’t be canceled so please just wait for 40 minutes!”

Lee Hyun did not really have any love for studying. But, the more they did this, the more his college tuition will be wasted!

But it was not like the time when if the train arrived late, you would get a refund fee. When the classes get canceled or end early, the fees were not even being returned.

“This is an unreasonable and pre-modern system. Also, with the corruption of the foundation of the school, it’s like digging for underground water and when water surges, they are not prepared!.”

How come that the irregularities regarding the school foundation could only be seen by Lee Hyun.

Some of the students said.

“Now is the time for the Stories of Versailles Continent... isn’t

it?”

“Yes!”

The students turned on the big TV that was installed on the classroom wall.

The program just started, Shin Hye-min and Oh Joo Wan described the contents of the broadcast.

“Today, we sure are to tell a lot of facts. Mr. Oh Joo Wan, is there any news that you prepared for us?”

“Yes, if you’re curious about the best, this is the video of the Battle on Bard Ray’s Quest and it will continue until it is live for Part 1.

The eyes of the students brighten as they looked forward to it.

“Wow, we can see the fight of Bard Ray?”

“Last time, him fighting with the army of Kallamore Kingdom was a big hit.”

“He is undisputedly the Versailles Continent’s best user. Giving him that is already pretty much by default.”

He is the King of Haven Kingdom and Hermes Guild.

It’s not even an exaggeration to say that Bard Ray’s military force belongs to the best and majority people are just afraid or jealous.

“I think there’s a lot about the Black Knight’s Quest last week. And it’s also about the invaders and I think that the majority of the contents is about that fight.”

“Yeah. Bard Ray doing his Profession Master Quest is already a thing that a lot of the viewers probably knows.”

“Profession Quest of a Black Knight, due to its background, would have a lot of challenging battles that would be needed to overcome. I’m currently working on the story regarding the background of this war. In a few moments, we’ll watch that part of the video for more information.”

If everyone wants to see the battle of Bard Ray, then they would have the right to organize and broadcast it off time.

Even Lee Hyun was usually seeing a lot of videos of the battles of Bard Ray.

The enormous strength and skill of a Black Knight was well executed and it showed a flashy fight for the eyes of those who watched!

There was one who always used excessive force who was

nicknamed “The General” but his efforts was all for nothing since it was still not enough to prove it.

“Then, about the recent trends of the Embinyu Church. These are the videos of the result of the wars in these past three days. Now, are you prepared on the news for the merchants?”

“Yes. And this news leads to surprising events. Ceramics is being extremely popular among the nobility recently. And Ceramist as a new profession has been created for the art department.”

“There was a lot of rumors that this tremendous impact was produced by the ceramics made by Weed. Whether this part is a fact or not, we will let you know through the reporters. We have information for those novice users who will select the Ceramist profession which we will be covering along the way, so don’t miss it.”

“An introduction to hidden dungeons and hunting grounds, still unresolved high difficulty quests, bizarre events that are taking place every day in Palemo Castle, and also the recent news about Monka and Morata will be continued in Part 2. We will continue after these advertisements.”

The students were hoping for the lecture to start late as long as possible. They were not in the mood to study since they are immersed on the television.

“Solaya, we are telling you now to go to Morata. It’s great. There’s a lot to be noted at today’s broadcast.”

“Are you coming to Morata? Come and see, send us a whisper Prudin. I’m currently in Morata.”

“Since when were you there?”

“A pretty long time now! It’s also the place being governed by God of War Weed. I’ve really been originally interested in the North.”

The adventures in Morata were also being enjoyed by the students.

Chapter 6: Forge Of Hestia

“At this point, I need to endure this.”

During his quest, Bard Ray was teleported and sent to the middle of a battlefield.

In the history of the Versailles Continent, it was The Battle of Kelton Kingdom and Mapon Kingdom!

Bard Ray was currently wearing the suit of the Kelton Kingdom.

“Not bad. Fights like these…”

Bard Ray pulled out his sword.

Soldiers of Mapon Kingdom rode on horses as their gallop resounded on the earth. Dust clouds and long ringing sounds of the horn that they produced also caused them to feel excitement and fear towards the war.

“Cut up those guys”

“Kelton Kingdom, let’s counterattack and recover our lost ground.”

Bard Ray thrust his sword through the ground.

“Sword Awakening.”

– Turns the potential of the sword to power.

Durability will fall rapidly but the skill effects and damage will increase by 68%.

Since Bard Ray had an absolutely unbreakable sword option, he didn’t need to care about its durability declining.

“Strong Will.”

– Prevents physical deterioration due to damaging of equipment during battle.

Suppresses confusion, paralysis and skill failure.

“Black Knight’s Strike.”

– The first attack and each successful 10 consecutive attacks would activate a lethal wide range skill.

“Summon Sword of Dalun Hana.”

[TL: That actually meant Other One Sword or Different One Sword but then it looked dumb so I just kept the Korean name]

Around the body of Bard Ray, a translucent sword consisting of Mana has been summoned.

– In accordance with your skill level, mana is reduced by 70 per second.

The Sword of Dalun Hana is itself an offensive and defensive move.

It could cut off arrows and magic ranged attacks.

Bard Ray used a Secret Sword Skill. That fact alone was already shocking which also made the users thrilled.

In the continent, there were some Secret Sword Skills users but their masters were very picky in teaching the skills.

Although this fact was already known to some extent, If Bard Ray was the one who used the Secret Sword Skill, the power of its skills would be exhibited properly because of his level and equipment.

“This is just in order to deal with these guys.”

Bard Ray referred to as Royal Road’s “The General” just finished and ready to fight.

Although the soldiers of Mapon Kingdom was the one attacking,

it seems to have been short-lived.

***

“Such extravagance!”

“Bard Ray is currently sweeping away the soldiers.”

“That appearance, that mighty power! Bard Ray is showing the viewers the show that they just really want.”

Each of the hosts of the station was raising the heat by their descriptions.

There were series of amazement each time Bard Ray’s attack skills hit, bringing out its destructive power.

Soldiers being killed, even knights, were just being passed and grazed through a few times by his sword before turning into gray.

The army of Mapon Kingdom had been collapsed by just 1 person, Bard Ray.

“Now, it seems like we’re going to give you, the viewers great news.”

Oh Joo Wan conveyed the message.

Not only to KMC media, but this information was also delivered in all of the stations at the same time.

“The Unicorn Corporation said about three minutes ago. That currently, the users that are doing their Profession Master Quest is said to be at 27 people.”

“That many?”

“Yes. And a lot of them are hidden.”

Some of the Versailles Continent’s top players were not deliberately disclosing their information since in some cases, there were some that were falling from their rankings due to disputes.

The users who were proceeding in doing their Profession Master Quest usually proceeded on doing it secretly since it will be troublesome and to avoid interference.

You don’t need to say the same about Dark Gamers and reclusive type high-level players.

“This was released by the personnel of Unicorn Corporation since the nature of each Profession Master Quest does not really overlap nor interfere with each other. Of course, they made sure that the person who was currently conducting it is kept secret. But, the people doing their Profession Master Quest by themselves was said to be at five people.”

“Do you have a clue of these other famous people who is not Weed and Bard Ray?”

“For those people who are doing their Profession Master Quest, I’m about to say a couple of them. I know a person who is currently active in a famous guild. Among them, some of the viewers might know who this is, is Adventurer Chase.”

“Wow! Chase-nim is currently doing his Profession Master Quest! Somehow, his name is not something that is often heard in the taverns lately.”

“He was an adventurer that has frequently been rising and has been the talk of the people because of his special discoveries and commissions that he must complete. For a while, Adventurer Chase did not appear that easily even in the famous cities in the continent since he was proceeding with his profession and its nature.”

Chase was very active on the Hall of Fame in the past.

Although the people who played an active part on the ruins could only be counted on one finger, it was already enough to be called a great adventure.

Shin Hye-min was checking a monitor for the reaction of the viewers in the boards while she followed his words.

“Then again, let’s go back to the contents of the announcement of Unicorn Corporation. Mr. Oh Joo Wan, are there any more stories to be unveiled?”

“Yes. This information would likely be useful to the users who are currently doing their Profession Master Quest.”

“There would probably a lot of difficulties for the users who are first to try. I’m happy if we could help them a little. What kind of news is this?”

“So far, with the operating policy of Unicorn Company the detailed material about it is not yet known. The users must find about it themselves. However, each Profession Master Quest is said to consist of at least twelve stages to twenty stages.”

Shin Hye-min had a charming face mixed with a face about to cry.

“Oh my. Those series of quests are so many, I think it made me dizzy.”

“The quest could just also easily proceed even though they put a lot of stages and might actually progress faster than we thought. Also, depending on the contents of the quest and profession, it may also take longer.”

“Then, what is supposed to be the disadvantage?”

“Given that the quests are in accordance with the characteristics of their profession, it would not really help them having different quests. Rather, the Unicorn Company said an important information about the Master Quest.....”

“What is it? What is it?”

“I’ll let you know after these advertisements. It seems even Ms. Shin Hye-min wanted to reveal it as soon as possible. As the Profession Master Quest is progressing, the secret skills for each profession could be obtained one at a time. In addition, the latter half is said to lead on quests that are relevant to those secrets.”

“Wow! Then, I’d like to do my Ranger Master Quest soon.”

“The same is true to me too. It’s only a shame that my profession skills still have not reached it yet. Note that for one to start his Profession Master Quest, one must be at least Advanced Level 6 for the Combat classes, Advanced Level 7 for the Adventurer classes, and Advanced Level 8 for the Art or Production classes.”

“It seems that Combat classes have a little advantage?”

“Even though they would be the first on the starting point to finish the quest, they still need to master their profession skills, so I don’t really see it as much of a benefit. Rather, breaking it down, having insufficient skills, then hoping for an early quest start, then dying during the quest would significantly drop your skill proficiency.”

“If you really are to die in the midst of mastering your profession skills, it would really hurt my heart.”

In order to analyze the impact of the information stated by the Unicorn Company, they deliberately needed a little time off.

The viewers on the boards were already in an uproar.

– The Master of their Profession. Who will it really be in those 27. Ah, it would be nice if I was one of them. When I connect to Royal Road, I’m too busy playing in eating that my character only increased its Belly Fat.

– It is going to be a fierce competition behind-the-scenes.

– I never really had much to talk about until this Profession Master Quest. The news about Weed had already spread even before qualified people appeared and started buzzing in.

– But perhaps the most ahead are Weed and Bard Ray. The first master should come out from one of them.

– And ignore Chase-nim? Just how great do you think the adventures of Chase are.

– Chase-nim is the world’s most outstanding excavator.

– Now that’s not a problem. In the Profession Master Quest,

they’re supposed to acquire their Secret Skills one by one.

– Bard Ray who now has a Secret Sword Skill will be even more incredible if he gets another one.

– My point exactly. Right now, he’s stronger than ever.

– Now that they will receive those in their Profession Master Quest, isn’t it just excessive if they also receive rewards after the quest is fully finished?

– What could be the rewards?

– Mastering the profession skills is usually not difficult. Although on intermediate or higher levels, trying to raise their skills even by a step would be very far off to reach. If you consider that there’s probably something.... I don’t really know.

The news made a commotion between the top-ranked players in Royal Road.

***

“Pretty good.”

“I thought so too, Master.”

“Why are we not as great?”

The Geomchis were at Vargo Fortress. They disposed their japtem then had their moment of relaxation as they eat at a tavern.

Then, through a crystal ball, they were watching a video of Bard Ray’s battle.

“That guy has a brilliant technique.”

“He is fighting with ranged attacks quite comfortably.”

“His slash hits their shoulders then pushes through and throws them away. He doesn’t even need to step back for a single time.”

“He has a stiff leg. If he fought while moving a little more, wouldn’t it be more advantageous in terms of skill effects or defense?”

“If he just went 25 meters to the right, then break the sieging machine as he fought along, that would be the best course of action.”

He exhibited his enormous military force and took an active part in it as arrows hit his body. The instructors were clicking their tongue as they were busy watching Bard Ray on what he was doing next.

If the battle was Bard Ray fighting with monsters and 1 versus 1, they wouldn't be able to find fault with him to that extent. However, because they were judging the situation of this complex battlefield, his mistakes were eye catching since they were considerable.

"The combat ability of Bard Ray is really magnificent. It seems that the soldiers of Mapon Kingdom who were supposed to be attacking are terrified."

"He's like a commander of Mapon Kingdom brandishing his whip onto the soldiers. It looks like their attack is not retreating against Bard Ray."

"The soldiers killed by Bard Ray have already reached over 300 in the news!"

The Geomchi instructors and practitioners were drinking beer and eating chicken as they continued to watch the crystal ball.

"We're only fighting with the monsters and it's really boring. If we fought like that, it would rather be fun."

"Then even come out on television…. are we going to be famous? It looks like they're strong."

"Ahem, if it really is just not far away, it really looks thrilling and fun."

The practitioners were badly yearning for it.

“Just really how much sword skill does Bard Ray have? Just seeing his power, it seems like he’s almost in the state of Master! ”

“A Sword Master! A state that’s really like a dream.”

“In the Versailles Continent, he’s by far the strongest user.”

Geomchi put down a chicken leg on the table.

Of course, none of the meat has remained.

“Geom3.”

“Yes, Master.”

“This so-called Profession Master Quest, can’t we get it?”

“I think we can get it. Geomchi17 have met a samurai who is a Martial Artist on the way as he was wandering around. And he said that once we’re able to deal with any kind of weapon, we need to find him.”

The Weapons Master skill of the Geomchis were already at least Advanced Level 4 reaching up to level 7. Originally, they were not using their attack skills properly and just deals damage purely with

their sword up to the utmost limit. The result was, they were able fought with stronger monsters.

"Master, then shall we come for our Profession Master Quest?"

"We're not. We're just going to focus on hunting in the vicinity. The disciples should be brought along to form them."

Although with the level of the Geomchi instructors they could already start the Profession Quest, among the practitioners, there were still some that had a quite low level in their Weapons Master skill.

"Let's give the boys a little more push until we put them in order. We will not have the quest until they master their Weapons Master skill first."

"That's a good idea, Master."

"Let's get rid of all the monsters here"

"Come on, we're going to go to the hunting grounds so let's fill our bags with dried jerky and barley bread."

***

The Part 1 of Stories of the Versailles Continent just finished and the classroom was noisy.

“Ah, It’s really amazing.”

“It was really a huge fight. I could just see those fighting stuff on fantasy films.”

“Bard Ray knew that he was going to lead the fight to victory.”

The flagship of Kelton Kingdom was placed in a situation where they needed to endure until Bard Ray returns. But instead, he slaughtered the knights of Mapon Kingdom and did a huge war achievement.

The Kelton Kingdom along with the King greatly praised Bard Ray after he came back. Not only that, while defending the legitimacy of the royal family among the knights, he was very Black Knight-like who was merciless to his enemies and was then given the Sword of the Royal Knight.

It was already enough for those scenes to be imprinted deep into their minds even for those people who did not even like Bard Ray.

“To receive the Sword of Kelton Kingdom, I wish I was Bard Ray.”

Anyone at that moment would have wanted to be the hero himself.

Despite of the bustling noise around, Lee Hyun just quietly watched the television. Suddenly, he felt a slight tingling sensation on his stomach. That sensation was not really pleasant.

His appearance looks well but it seems like his belly seems to have given a more honest response.

“There are 27 people in their Master Quests. There’s really a lot of users that are stronger than bosses.”

“It is Bard Ray yet, my heart does not really want to follow my mind.”

“I want to see or get near Weed at least once. God of War Weed is really cool.”

“Why not go to Morata then?”

“Meeting Weed in Morata is difficult.”

“But still, it’s also an adventure if you walk around all over the place.”

The students felt a trembling chatter.

‘I need to go home to Royal Road’

‘Wait. After properly finishing today’s hunt, I will be level 277.’

‘If I use the item that I received yesterday, it will be easy for me on the future huntings, very easy.’

His motivation to see himself on a broadcast being on Royal Road was being ignited by these students even more.

“Hyung….”

Choi Sang-jun was the type of boasting person.

The professor shortly came, and the lecture took place within the remaining time.

“Today’s lesson ended quickly, seems like I need to give an assignment.”

“Booooo!”

“Professor, that’s too much.”

Lee Hyun just left his Korean Business assignment since for him, it was like a story from a foreign country. In the University, you could get yourself as much as you want to get.

But, Lee Hyun was a bad student and just wanted to receive his

diploma.

***

Weed connected again and he appeared where he was at Orc Stronghold Bursilia and the female Orcs needlessly went towards him while sniffing their noses.

The very popular Orc Karichiwi did not go anywhere yet.

“Chwichichwiiiik, It would be nice if they broadcasted the Sculpting Master Quest.”

Weed just had to put up with the inconvenience.

Each of the broadcasting stations was very eager to contact him. There was a competition for the Profession Master Quest of Bard Ray and Weed since if they could broadcast it, it would give a great effect on their publicity.

But Weed’s stance was, his adventures on looking for Ratzeburg and Montvertruria could not be revealed in the broadcast. The information of his Sculpting Master Quest that will be shown is him helping each of the races and restoring the history and art rather than the battles.

In the case of the Black Knight, it was alright since there were a lot of portions of battles that could be broadcasted.

While, the Sculptor Quest on its own was located in historic places that's why it needs to be a hidden.

If Weed's location is to be known, the Hermes Guild Team will interfere with him and it's going to be very burdensome.

The Hermes Guild who attacked the Elf Village has already traced and heard about Weed being in Orc Stronghold Bursilia.

However, there were far too much Orcs in the Orc Stronghold. There were only a bunch of them spying and was looking for an opportunity to invade.

That's why Weed had to leave the Orc Stronghold.

"Chwichichwis, Those guys are bad for us Orcs and are always insulting us, chug! Chwichichwis, These bad guys are looking to taste us especially our young Orcs!"

Weed told Orc Lord Bulchwi to dedicate himself on telling lies about the Hermes Guild Team and then left Bursilia.

After that, he did not really had any interest on what happened next.

***

Weed arrived at the place after asking for Yurin to bring him to his castle in Morata!

Since he obtained Vargo Fortress, he frequently heard Morata oftenly become a hot topic in the broadcasts and boards.

As he reinvested his taxes to the maintenance of the town, A lot of unique Arpen Empire style buildings were built in Morata.

4-storey Stone Townhouses and Luxury villas has been built that overlooked the lake shores. Rich merchants and high-level users then will have the ability to show off their wealth if they wanted to live a nice and convenient life.

The housing policies of Morata that was given will surely fulfill their desires!

But, there were also a lot of cheap shacks for beginners while the experienced architects were building villas centered on a lot of scenic places.

Weed and the other artists created sculptures and paintings. The architects create the Arpen Empire Buildings with their heart and soul and paid attention to the structure and foundation.

Due to the blessings of Goddess Freya, there were vast blooming flowers along with the dense trees. The birds, butterflies and bees flying around, their very beautiful culture and trade, the City of Adventure!

Both the residents and users were feeling that their life was just changing in Morata. At the same time, Weed used his authority as Lord to be able to accurately see and observe it.

“City Information Window!”

Morata

Morata’s local area belongs to the Niflheim Empire.

Currently, the best ruler that is reigning the North is Lord Weed.

He has the best city to represent the North as the center of trade, art and adventure.

Morata as a noble land of the north is respected and is called a majestic city.

With its great architecture, the completion of the Grand Cathedral and the Grand Library in the northern part of Church of Freya was an opportunity to widely spread the culture of Morata.

Military Force: 316 Economic Power: 4329

Culture: 5241 Technology: 997

Religious Influence: 91

Influence to the neighboring areas: 82% Regional Politics: 74

Influence of Niflheim Empire: 22.4% (Military influence, Economy, Culture, Technology, Religion, Population, and the related areas)

City Development: 322 Hygiene: 44

Public Order: 91%

The economic influence and politics is growing throughout the north as being the center of trade and commerce.

The population growth and trade has an astronomical increase and more resources are being put on city development.

The residents are given opportunities to pick on several profession guilds.

Morata is leading in development in the North of the continent.

Due to the expansion in culture, the area has been extended to the nearby shores. If the number of merchants that deals with fishermen and marine transport reached a certain extent, you could build a harbor.

The farmers have obtained their confidence with their successive harvests to grow Tea Trees. When you begin to successfully harvest the grown Tea Trees, it will be able to raise the cultural level of Morata as well as an increase on the major exports.

The chances of techniques in Sewing being forgotten to history is decreasing.

It is scrupulous and a challenge for the tailors trying to recreate its glorious past in history.

The current cloth wears, leathers and leather armors is of good quality and fine clothing is being made to be wore by the nobles.

With the technological development and financial commitment, the Tailors and researching on ‘Silk‘.

Blacksmiths are producing steel swords from smelted iron.

Inexpensive and reliable quality goods are being sold in a lot of shops such as Golden Jewelry, Steel Swords, Leather Gloves, Fine Clothes, Sheep, Ale and Olives.

A lot of other goods are being produced in Morata and trade is actively progressing.

The surrounding cities are also improving little by little.

The residents are proud with special buildings and the wide streets in the city.

The merchants have requested for a road that leads to another area!

As a place of adventure and exploration, the remains of Niflheim Empire is currently being traded in the stores.

The young ones love Lord Weed.

If you go to alleys, you will not be able to find scribbles denouncing the Lord.

But when there is a massive war going on, the morale seems to not be high.

Although the finances of Morata does not occupy a large portion for military expenditures, a lot of the money has been committed to it as the tax revenues increased by quite a lot.

You have a lot of loyal knights.

The driving force to the developing culture is their endless confidence and rich support of the artists.

The artworks in Morata Art Center have antiques and artifacts on display which includes sculptures.

Residents are hoping for more Grand Buildings.

Due to the continuous economic development, this place is now in the state of middle class.

Due to the demand of moving away from shacks to get new houses, housing constructions are active.

Freya is the most believed religion in the area. They hold a vast granary around the city.

There are a variety of agricultural products that are being grown.

The army fights with the monsters regularly and due to the economic development, crime rate has dropped.

Specialties: Artworks, Leather and Cloth products, Tomatoes, Grapes, Rice, Beef, Milk, Cheese, Wine, Silverworks, Palm Wine, Fine Fabrics, Gold Jewelry, Steel Swords, Leather Gloves, Fine Clothes, Sheep, Ale and Olives.

Entire Territorial Population: 2,423,932

Monthly Tax Income: 2,311,627 Gold.

Village Operational Expenses: 6% Military, 36% Economic Development, Culture 14%, Monster Subjugation Commissions

19%, City Maintenance 22%, Offering to the Church of Freya 3%.

The tremendous wealth of Morata!

While it is where the beginners gather together and is just developing city in the north, it is becoming wealthy and is being equally famous as those famous cities in the Central Continent.

What's more is its population had already far exceeded the size of a big city.

Even though the number of residents and beginners are steadily growing, the tax was also increasing steadily.

"Now, grass porridge is the only thing worth to be put on the mouth!"

In Morata, his current savings amounted to more than 3.7 million gold.

If it was a Lord in the Central Continent, the typical thing to do was raise an army using the funds.

For it to not be taken away from them, they were raising their armies then invade a lot of the surrounding villages.

This was because there's also a lot of commercially developed cities which are wealthy there.

Morata was mainly devoting itself to the internal affairs that's why the city grew itself from ruins.

"I guess I need to build more Grand Buildings. I also wish to make the active trading come true."

The Lord could build even more different types of Grand Buildings which is due to the result of adventuring, culture, technology and population.

He was struggling when he built the Grand Library and the Grand Cathedral since he was mobilizing a lot of the funds and resources of Morata but now, he can afford things of that degree.

If he built two more Grand Buildings in Morata, then it would be the largest city in the Continent.

"And the sun will shine for more taxes!"

His endless greed!

The belly of the goose that lays golden eggs is not something you could separate from it.

Without selling the golden eggs and hatching himself will he be able to exploit all of those goose families.

“Construction of Research Tower!”

It was designated to be built on a vacant lot in the outskirts of Morata.

Ttring!

Research Tower!

This tower is where the mages stay to study about the truth of the world.

It would allow to study the four different branches of magic.

Developed magic could be taught to qualified mages and in exchange, the mage will give research or jewelry.

It will create a rapid growth in training among mages and will be able to teach unique experiences.

The research capacity of the Research Tower will vary depending on the abilities and number of the staying Archmages.

A lot of money is going to be spent to support the mages with their grants and remunerations.

Construction Cost: At least 1.8 million gold.

Construction period of at least seven months.

The construction period may increase depending if there's any accidents with the personnel involved.

Experienced Architects are required.

The Architects who participated in this work will be able to get a unique experience.

Multiple sculptors, painters and mages have to be mobilized. The artists who participated in this work will be able to have additional opportunities with their name.

– Are you sure you want to start the construction of the Grand Building, Research Tower?

The money-eating Tower!

Weed knows from experience that the normal construction costs could increase.

But as he saw it, it also has very large operating costs that was not there until after the construction of the buildings in Morata.

Once the mages grow, the hunting speed of the users will increase while a market for magic items will be formed.

Magic items are made with rare materials and are very expensive when traded.

From the perspective of the Lord, it is worthy of his little investment.

“Though it is expensive altogether… This is good compared to the much worse situation back then when I built the Grand Cathedral. Start construction!”

– The construction of Research Tower will proceed with the command of the Lord.

The residents in Morata has increased and the skill of the architects have improved a lot.

There are even some users in Vargo Fortress who wants to increase its foundation by building a Great Building since they were not satisfied with just the Fort.

It’s only a small money to spare compare to how this investment will be able to earn big money in the future!

“Grand Buildings on testing the Ranger Class is not bad to put in there. Buildings for Adventurers also seems to be not too bad.”

The fate of more than 100,000 users has been mixed up with the

conflict of Weed on choosing between those professions.

“Would 2 more be alright? If I continue to invest, it seems that I would be a little short for money even if the taxes come. No, I’ve got to build something solid rather than increasing their number.”

Weed decided to build another one.

It was among the Grand Buildings of the ancient architectures!

He was to build the unique heritage that the Dwarves made in Ratzeburg.

“Construct Forge of Hestia!”

It was designated to be built outside the gates of Morata.

Ttring!

Forge of Hestia!

The Dwarves liked the warmth of Goddess Hestia’s embrace just like a furnace.

They built a very large forge to extract iron from iron ore and named it the Forge of Hestia.

Sometimes when the blacksmiths are smashing the iron, little sparks which were said to be blessings from Hestia would come and emerge.

The items made in this place is said to contain with special powers.

Construction Cost: At least 950,000 gold

Construction period of at least five months.

The construction period may increase depending if there's any accidents with the personnel involved.

The Architects who participated in this work will be able to get a unique experience.

A number of blacksmiths have to be mobilized.

Blacksmiths who participated in the work would be able to get the opportunity to learn about fire.

Once the Forge of Hestia is completed, you will receive a gift from a blacksmith.

– Are you sure you want to start the construction of the Grand Building, Forge of Hestia?

“Start!”

The construction of Forge of Hestia will proceed with the command of the Lord.

In Morata, there were still a lot of users that were lacking in ability.

The beginner blacksmiths were making swords and armor with the provided good-quality iron.

“As Lord, it’s unfortunate that this much is only what I could give!”

As trading is conducted, the products that comes from the forges of Morata is going to be sold out more.

Also, if you wore good equipment, even as a warrior, your body will just feel like an itch and being in Morata will be much safer.

The time to increase the tax payments is coming soon!

Weed was investing while overlooking the distant future.

“I guess I’m gonna make some ceramics.”

With the rivers, lakes and the fertile land of Morata, it comes

with several types of soil. The city then has a large flame furnace that is not being put out by the blacksmiths and just let it blaze.

The Lumberjacks around the vicinity of Vargo Fortress were also been shipping fine quality timber.

Those were the optimal conditions on making ceramics.

Currently, each Profession Master Quest has an ongoing fierce competition.

The number of people in the quest spiral is not that many since they were the best users in their own professions.

To complete his Sculpting Master Quest, he needed to work in his spare time to increase his skill level to the maximum.

“The others, they only get regular Combat Quests while their skill level also increases and even gain items. This world is really unfair.....”

The Sculptor also complained for a moment.

Weed had stacked his contribution points of each race to a massive amount that others would find unreachable.

In terms of having a background on Ratzeburg, there’s a large possibility that only him, the sculptor, was the only one who needs

to find that place.

He also came to increase his skill to acquire the Secret Sculpting Skills till the end of it.

“I must firmly keep and see to it that they are popular and be shared to the nobles!“

In the Versailles Continent, although ceramics was not originally an unprecedented thing at all, it was still classified as a luxury for the crowd with its artistry.

Weed just created a sensational trend through Mapan making the sales.

“Also, I got to sell and drag this valuable and popular trading goods through the merchants.”

Ceramics has better conditions compared to other works of art since you could get the amount 3-7 times better.

It’s a good chance for the beginner sculptors since without the having the sculpting skills, everybody was just figuring out how to make ceramics.

Ceramists will also quickly blossomed after making works and sell them in the city.

Although they were just simple vases and water bowls that were made using the hands, it still attracted great popularity among the girl users.

At this rate, if he failed to sort things out, he'd obviously feel sick in his stomach!

"I have to make true ceramics and roughly figure out its laws on creating a failure. The soul of the artist is a huge platter with plenty of luxuries and their works must be indefinitely overpriced!"

***

A post in the Royal Road forums has reached 17 million views in just one day!

Title: It really sucks if you're not living in Morata.

Uh, I'm a newbie that started in Morata!

My level is now 19, please understand even though what I'm going to say is a little rough.

I feel so good in the inside right now.

Originally, every beginner will find it unbelievably difficult and having no money is tough.

Honestly, what can I start to do with just 10 barley bread and 1 canteen of water?

But, I was just shared with a delicious Grass Porridge on the streets!

I'd do hunting outside on the day and if I'm hungry, I could eat the given grass rice cake.

While traveling, it's best to fill one's belly with grass rice cake.

And the quests... there's a huge variety of quests that could be found only in this city too.

Having errands for Weapon Shop owners? Who are like this in Morata?

The lost legends of the Niflheim Empire or, requests for finding items or, connecting and talking with several people, you could have a lot of commissions to complete.

Originally, it was hard to get quests without Fame and Intimacy.

But the loyalty and satisfaction of the residents to the Lord of Morata with their current life is so high that the people are friendly enough to trust in you.

Talking to some people could help gather some fragments of stories and completing it would sometimes lead to major quests.

Commissions with difficulty level C or D.

I’m a beginner that’s why naturally I couldn’t yet.

Because of putting records about quest information on the Grand Library, other adventurers would reward me after giving them info.

That’s why I have been out collecting artifacts made by them for the quests.

The lost people from the Niflheim Empire have flocked in as Morata have been filled with them.

So they create the quest while I am out collecting the artifacts.

And, invest my money in equipment whenever food does not need it anymore.

But apparently, what I did first was to find out the cost of equipment sets in the boards and try to buy it from the merchants who were selling in the square or stores.

I feel bad, the price was much cheaper than the outside.

Morata's tax is so low that the profits remain from what they sell! Whereupon the one that the merchants are saying that they stay and sell in Morata since the tax also remains the same. There's just a lot of users that sit down and could earn a fortune.

That's why I don't like to be a merchant later.

Customers are too many and too busy making money that I can't even roam around to have fun wherever you like

As for trading, you are supposed to manage those who complain about how expensive your items are and very tedious to deal with customers that you need to smile, thank and greet.

I spend money to admire a lot of artworks scattered in Morata, and saw a novice works in the inexpensive Arts center, which collected lot of money. I saw lots of it.

From the benefits of Art to the Bard performances then, I went to see the hunting grounds and fight with monsters.

Also, being on hunting grounds with a lot of people is exciting and the forest is wide enough to see that the beasts are indeed diverse. The public security is also good for beginners since those difficult monsters do not get near the city.

When I walk and meet with the Paladins and Priests of Freya, they give blessing and healing magic every time we meet.

Why am I saying things like this?

If you're a beginner here, you must've been shocked since it's so fun and comfortable.

Then with the money collected, you will be just in time to have a good outlook of your shack.

Due to the level distribution in Morata, I am not really worried about me going elsewhere.

Not only the Art Center or the Grand Cathedral, but I also visited the packed guild buildings and the Grand Library.

But what's more is, the Lord is building another 2 Grand Buildings.

Do you think the Lord of Morata is really crazy?

Yet in the Central Continent, aren't they living by being heavily persecuted under the rich guilds?

We're really enviable. Only by living like this will you really feel like you're living in this world.

I also have some tough times, those times where you feel like it's very difficult and painful to live.

Comments have furiously spurred out.

– Morata was like this... so this was the reason people wanted to go here.

– It is heaven. I started on Lyps Castle. Sigh, the bad guys there. My heart has been always the same and I want to kill them to the point of death.

– I feel so sad with this bad writing.I went here since the other place was troublesome. All the time, I'm always feeling alive. Morata is an absolutely good place to live on!

– Grass Porridge! Grass Porridge! There's hair that came from the Mushroom Grass Porridge.

– The Lord has been going on creating a lot of Grand Buildings.

Wealth. Love. Almost everything. Maybe, I should go to Morata.

– I'm a highschool student who has not yet started Royal Road, I would like to play it now. Won't I regret it if I go and started in Morata? Is it really particularly like that?

– The one above me is so naive....

– The one above, please be careful. If men and women kiss, there'll be babies.

Chapter 7: A Country's King

It's probably because of the 2 Grand Buildings being built in Morata that there was a continuous crowd of people.

There was an expansion of the city boundaries such as road widening and opening squares. There were residential districts that emerged on the outskirts. At least, it's a little distributed now.

"Woah, so this is Morata!"

"These enormous buildings are unbelievably large, larger than I thought."

"It looks just as it was shown on the broadcast, there's really a lot of artworks. This, this is the sound of music... there's a concert there, look."

"Let's go there fast!"

Due to the spirit of the beginners and their large numbers, there was really no space to move very much.

– Morata's population and economy are growing rapidly.

Due to the active trading along with the production and consumption, the economy is booming.

This boom increases the production volume by 25% and you will reap 10% more tax from the residents.

Weed desperately wanted to increase the taxes very much!

Although the boom gave temporary effects, after all, the fact that he was going to increase the tax was something crucial.

***

Weed went to the nearby lakes and rivers to gather dirt for making ceramics.

Meanwhile, maintenance work was currently being done inside the Lord's Castle.

The rooms were full of broken windows, cobwebs, and dust, and many things that needs to be cleaned. The available rooms were the weapon and food warehouses, stables, wine storehouse, the study, and his comfortable Lord's private bedroom while he also cultivated the plants on the gardens.

"Well, let's start with it gently."

He was in his room in the Lord's Castle and did not dispose of the scattered pieces of wood, stone sculptures and japtem since they might be related to a Quest. There were also a bunch of soil heaps

that was categorized by type.

“I’m going to make it as usual!”

Hwaryeong and Bellot, who seemed to have become attached to Weed’s ceramics, were eagerly anticipating to have fun with them so they went to the Lord’s Castle along with Irene.

The others, who had different intentions, arrived in Morata through Yurin’s Picture Teleportation. Some had their equipments checked while the others visited the squares.

“Well… I’ve got a reservation at a restaurant, wanna come?”

Zephyr offered to buy Yurin food on a delicious date.

“I’m really hungry so… okay.”

And so, both of them went and disappeared into the crowded streets and shops. Of course, Weed as Lee Hyun wouldn’t leave them to have their quality time alone and sent someone.

Weed asked Seoyoon alone for a favor.

“Stealthily follow them, if you catch them holding hands or entering a desolate alley or if you suspect any funny business being done, just kill.”

If she were to kill, she wouldn’t do it without plenty of suffering.

Weed wanted to relieve his worries and dedicate himself just to creating ceramics.

The curves were well molded and were made quite elegantly. The glaze blended in as it transformed into elegant colors as it was shown on the ceramics. It was something that didn’t lack of what was called as art!

“Use the hands slowly. I should press gently rather than use force.”

Weed was shaping the ceramics as Dirtman was turning a stone tablet.

“Mind Hand!”

Although those three hands were a strange sight, he did not waver and just focused on making the ceramics. His finger motions changed depending on the type of soil he was using. Putting in too much force would most likely crush it by accident.

Meanwhile, mistakes like these could hardly be seen on the ceramics made by Weed. The handle-free jar ceramic was completed along with the beauty of its proportions in the underlying structure. The ceramics also had a large interior that could easily fit something when needed.

“There is no limit to the imagination, I’ll try and also create something unusual.”

Sculpting just like a master, the durability of his works were quite high and thanks to his Handicraft Skill, not much of the clay has remained.

Even if he created it to be narrow and thin, it did not break down. There were really no limitations to the variety of shapes to create.

He even created a Wyvern that had water coming out from its mouth, while it’s honestly stupid that the Yellowy that he made in a form of a jug was actually also eye-catching. He even made pieces with low artistic value that were popular with the public.

In particular, limited edition ceramics!

The price would rise the more scarce it is, so he would probably release 12 ceramics for each design. The exact depiction of one of Weed’s tricks has also appeared in the Ceramics.

“It’s a really pretty jug. But isn’t this part too wide?”

Hwaryeong, who was next to him, also gave tips. According to her words, the jugs were beautiful but they didn’t necessarily need to suit the tastes of the poor people.

Bellot was calm and managed to create earthen bowls fairly well with her talent. However, she had no Handicraft Skill so it was still

quite difficult for her.

While on the other hand, Irene could only create simple flower pots to grow flowers in for the shacks.

“This basic shape should be able to support itself, now to form the rest.”

Weed used different temperatures of water depending on the type of clay and ceramic he wanted to create.

The clay that had just completely dried in the shade was still unglazed. As the water and the ceramic dirt came into contact, its color mysteriously changed. Weed used the glaze that he had obtained from natural materials to make white ceramics and blue ceramics.

Roasting it in this way wasn’t something usually done when making ceramics. Although, nothing significant really changed compared to the ceramics he had made before.

“It seems fine to draw additional paintings or engravings.”

He used the pile of clay to form a jug then he used his knife to put carving patterns afterwards.

Although he tried to carve it in a straightforward manner, the characteristics of the exterior part of the piece became different after the heat had warmed and baked it.

After baking it again in the furnace, the color of the soil was still attached while the paintings on the ceramic changed.

Although Weed was unable draw on it as if it was white paper, the etchings on the ceramic along with its shape made it quite an exceptional piece. This sculpture and painting was different and broke the usual methods that are known to the people.

Weed realized that he could create variations in any of his sculpture works with Painting.

– Painting Skill proficiency has increased.

“Indeed what any worker will know, one should always work with humility.”

At that moment, Painting became one of the goals of Weed.

It was then the final stage of completing the ceramic in the furnace.

“Something really pretty, maybe something like that is what would come out?”

Bellot and Hwaryeong’s eyes brightened as they looked at the ceramic.

A glossy milky-white clay like snow came out.

The blue green ceramic with flowers and animals released a vibrant expression as it was just coming out from the furnace!

Finally, after multiple tries of rough glazes, they used water to clean it well with the help of his earth and water spirits. The two could only look with their eyes in the beauty in front of them.

The Sculptors, Ceramists, Painters. It's not even an exaggeration to say that magic happens at their fingertips.

"I'm still a little short regarding how I do my paintings.... how could I do it a little better?"

With this sculpture of Weed, he now climbed to heights that were being looked from by Masters.

It was best to carve patterns or put paintings on the clay whenever it was moist. But nevertheless, ceramics couldn't be said to be pure sculptures.

"The balance of the clay and fire.... It should have the feeling of being alive as those Sculptural Lifeforms....."

Weed was contemplating on how to make different styles and types of ceramics. The way the color was inscribed on his current ceramics was too monotonous. The glaze couldn't be felt and was unnoticeable since it was buried in the patterns and drawings.

“I should try and use different colors on the ceramic paintings. Rather than forcing the clay’s color to change by painting it with glaze and colors, let’s just use the nature of the ceramic itself.”

He used his carving knife to etch fine patterns nimbly and made them in just some parts of the white clay. The clay was roasted in fire as it became reddish and darkened. And after baking it in the furnace, what appeared was a clear blue ceramic with black and white colored patterns.

“Kyaaaa!”

“This is just too pretty!”

Even though Weed was inexperienced on painting, the colors of the ceramics could still be seen as beautiful even by those without eyes to see.

The illustrations engraved on the ceramic work were strengthened by its sleek and elegant curves.

Celadon for Flowering Plants:

Durability: 33/33

A work of Sculptor Weed that portrays the beauty of clay.

The geniusness of his versatility produced a new art on the continent.

The painting carved into the ceramic is very deep and is not shallowly inscribed.

His talent in dealing with soil and his ability to control the temperature of the fire was shown, though there's a bit of disappointment on this created artwork.

The whole process of making this was done by Sculptor Weed himself.

This work is worthy of being counted as the best among the ceramics in Versailles Continent.

Artistic Value: 3,986

Special Option: An artwork with high artistic value.

It will give you a special good luck everyday.

If you own this in your home, Dignity, Charm and Luck would increase by 5%.

You could only apply up to a maximum 10 effects of ceramics at a time.

– Sculpting Skill proficiency has increased

– Handicraft Skill proficiency has increased.

– Your Painting Skill has increased to Beginner Level 5. The lines of your paintings are going to be more accurate while you can also utilize your tools better.

– Blacksmithing Skill proficiency has increased

Since the ceramic was subjected through various processes when making, several of his skills leveled up at once when it was completed.

Hwaryeong also did not ask it for free as a gift this time.

She really wanted to have that work very much, though as a friend she couldn't just ask him to give her free things every time, it was not really polite to trouble him by getting it for free. She also felt that giving Celadon for Flowering Plants to her for money was very rude and senseless.

'I don't really know how much I could get from this. I would just find a good owner for this later who would take this and would buy it at a high price.'

'Ah, I think I really couldn't buy that work of his with just money.'

She also looked at the other works of Weed that was baked in the furnace.

‘I will buy them right away after they come to the stores.’

Bellot also had her eyes on some of his ceramics.

‘This is beautiful. That’s just so cute. How can you make pretty patterns like this? The form is good and harmonious and also life-like. Maybe it’s okay! I really just want to have it.’

Although it was not really for fashion but rather its artistic value, it would still be likely to enjoy a storm of popularity if the stores sold something like this.

Weed did not really make ceramics by utilizing the beauty of the drawings.

He also created ceramics with special forms such as large bowls and angel figurines. As with creating sculptures, he was also looking to train and develop his techniques as he created these ceramics with his endless materials.

“Identify!”

Flower-shaped Jug:

Durability: 17/17

Made by the great artist Sculptor Weed.

This ceramic is already enough to say that in the Versailles Continent, even though it was just a meeting of clay and fire, it wasn’t an exaggeration to say that it still gave birth to a miraculous work of art.

Wide open flowers with delicate thin stems would bloom in this.

A fascinating and expressive work that has been created with a certain degree of Handicraft.

Rather than the artistry, the mysteriousness of the work is what seems to be attractive in this work and will make it more and more popular.

Artistic Value: 598

Special Options: If this is close to the plants, they wouldn’t dry out even without water.

It will even create a good taste in wine and tea.

Dignity: +16

Charm: +22

Weed not knowing the time, got hooked on doing his works.

Making ceramics is a very complex process and you need to pay attention even to smallest detail.

However, no matter what hardships you recieve, one would always admire looking at the ceramic after it’s out of the furnace.

“With this, it’s not over yet.”

Weed also made bowls and small plates that were at least intermediate size.

Doing the simple processes doesn’t really take much; and that includes engraving patterns and painting figures.

“Morata also has a lot of beginners who don’t have a lot of money. They also would be able to buy ceramics if I could create small ones for quick production.”

Despite of his spirit as an artist, he was still thinking of extorting money from the rabbits caught by the beginners!

His other party members also came and didn’t leave for a while since they were also making their own ceramics. He was peacefully immersed on making ceramics and continued to make them

tirelessly, which made him look attractive.

“Its material value isn’t really what’s going to determine its price, but rather its nature as a specialty product....”

Day and night he was producing artworks; he produced some Masterpieces and even produced a Magnum Opus!

Ceramics have now piled up on the empty rooms of the Lord’s Castle.

He was only focusing on making ceramics and by the time he finished more than 400 ceramics, his Sculpting Skill had increased its proficiency by 9.5%.

Because his Sculpting mastery was at Advanced Level 8, his proficiency did not increase that quickly.

And with the basic form of ceramics, Sculpting really has less involvement in it. But instead, whenever he successfully adjusts the fire accurately, his Blacksmithing Skill really increases its proficiency by a lot.

Sometimes, he would also fail when he was in the process of creating the form. In such cases, what would come out was something that was almost hard to look at.

Soon, Weed had then made 700 ceramics.

At that time, his Sculpting Skill proficiency was at 52.6% Advanced Level 8.

Not only that, but his Blacksmithing Skills has also increased its proficiency to 75% Intermediate Level 8.

His Painting Skill has also increased to Beginner Level 9.

If one pondered about how difficult it is to make ceramics, they would find that it is really difficult. However, Weed made a lot of good works while also enjoying it.

***

Park Jun-suk was missing Seoyoon on a daily basis.

“Ah, how long was she sick in her heart.”

Although Seoyoon was very brutal when he and all of his friends were thrown and killed in the backwoods of Serabourg Castle, he could still understand it.

Anyway, it could be seen that her heart wouldn’t easily open. He honestly feels bad about it but the common sense in this world is that any behavior of a pretty girl could be easily forgiven.

“So, she was actually the Berserker girl who’s always going

around with Weed.”

Seoyoon was also beautiful to the extent that no one could rival her beauty. Not just that, but she was also very strong in Royal Road.

Park Jun-suk was already more than happy with those characteristics of hers.

“I’m going to explore the various parts of Versailles Continent. I wish I was going around far longer than Weed.”

She seemed really happy as if a love arrow was shot into them whenever they were adventuring and this alone, proved that she was out of reach from anyone including him.

“I’ve got to keep up with their levels even if it would take me a lot of time.”

“Please give me four herbs.”

“Those who have a lot of broken swords. Those beginners who are looking for someone to repair it, give it to me and you could use it in a minute.”

Hunter Robin reconnected back on Pallet Kingdom where he was mainly active.

[TL: To those who forgot, Robin is Park Jun-suk]

A lot of users were actively trading with the merchants in places such as equipment shops. Everyone gave their attention to Robin for a brief moment.

“Wow, he’s really high level compared to me. Look at the equipments he’s wearing.””

“Aren’t those made by Berbang?”

“Look at his torso, I think that’s actually his golden signature mark.”

“I heard that they’re unbelievably expensive….. The money needed to create clothes made by Berbang is no joke.”

Robin shrugged lightly.

‘I can’t get enough of this feeling.’

He wore equipments that could already be considered the best at his level 355.

It included polished shoes, tanned light leather armor set, jewelries like necklaces and bracelets to raise his profession skills, and a ring.

Of course, he didn’t collect these equipments by hunting or finishing quests.

Even for Weed who did the best of quests, although he succeeds in them, his Sculpting profession equipments still doesn’t come out lined up like that.

Of course, Weed would actually be more disappointed if the item that is obtained after doing a difficult quest was used for Sculpting.

Robin bought high-level accessories and equipments by spending a huge amount money. He didn’t spare any cost in wearing the best equipment right from the beginner level. So his power level always rose by a level.

He was very satisfied whenever the people were surprised after seeing his high-level equipment.

“I want to go to where he hunts.”

Robin headed to a restaurant to buy food.

A guild chat window floated along with a message.

[Kuvera]: You came, Robin. We connected just now.

[Ritz]: We’re in the capital. Where are you?

Robin joined a guild called ”Cool Guys”.

Consisting only of the sons and daughters of millionaires, they spent money like rain in a rainforest.

[Robin]: Where? Me too.

[Kuvera]: Then, it’s great. Have you received any quests?

[Robin]: Nope. I’m just going to hunt. I don’t have time to bother talking with these people..

[Ritz]: Then let’s go together. Let’s meet at the Central square.

Kuvera and Ritz arrived at the Central square.

Both of them were knights wearing full platinum set armor along with peacock feathers that were plugged in the top of their helmet.

“Heya.”

“Let’s buy some food and then get busy hunting.”

“Then let’s go? Which mercenaries should we hire?”

“We can look for the Favela Mercenary Guild.”

“Shall we take them with us? We are too weak. It’s hard to raise a level…….”

“Nowadays, people are begging others to let them join a party”

Robin, Kuvera, and Ritz were in levels of mid-300s.

Their equipments while being beginners were great that was why they hunted quickly back then. With just the help of their equipment, they were able to hunt higher level monsters without much difficulty.

However, as their levels grew higher, it also became harder for them to increase it. Problems like instantaneous judgement errors and lack of teamwork couldn’t be covered by their high-level equipments.

This resulted in them being overwhelmed by the monsters in spite of their basic skills and stats.

Although their level was on the mid-300s, their fighting prowess itself was really on the weak side. So to overcome this, they hired mercenaries and Dark Gamers.

***

In Morata’s Jewelry Exchange, a great thing was happening. The

owner of the shop politely greeted the people who were looking at his stuff.

“Are you really going to sell these pieces?”

“Yes. How much might be the price?”

“The prices for these artworks are difficult for me to decide. It is even in the level where anyone would covet its worth. These would probably be sold out to the kings of the entire continent. Please tell me the value that you would like to receive.”

The store owner was asking the person to determine the price of the things to be sold rather than doing it himself.

The items to be sold were either white or blue in color.

There were drawings of various plants, and depending on one’s taste, there were also colorful patterns like golden dragons, Wy-3 who was spreading his wings through the floating white cloud and as well as Bingryong.

Weed didn’t sell the Masterpiece and Magnum Opus ceramics that he created since he was planning on putting it up on the Art Center. Since there’s a lot of residents in Morata, that fact is already enough to see that his income for the entrance fees would be on the increasing side.

Those common ceramics were really just intended to be disposed

of and only gives a good price with the treatment of specialty products.

“These ceramics... determining their value is so difficult that it made me sweat blood. Going to the wide world, a lot of people are asking and hoping if they could just buy these for 798 gold each and would mean a lot to them if they receive it at that price.”

Speaking of it as 800 gold would give it a feel of being too expensive so that’s why he decreased the price by 2 gold!

Although ceramics wasn’t Weed’s specialty, most of the skills used were on a very high level.

If you also consider their artistic value, that price is what it was probably going to get.

” It’s 798 gold... could you get it at that price?”

“You know Weed, the gap between us is really high so naturally I’m unable to get it.”

“But, that money could just buy your armor there.”

“If its cost is like armor for beginners, then I would buy. This level of work isn’t really going to cost a lot of money as you said.”

If the offered price was excessive, the trade was being cancelled.

Sometimes, if the money that he asks for is more than the reasonable amount, he was being given penalties as an artist along with lowering of his reputation.

Weed was really sensitive about that fact and that's also why he is very reluctant sell it at that.

A shop owner said after a moment of contemplating.

"If this was under normal conditions, I would buy this for the correct value. But ceramics such as this are currently being seeked out by a lot of people. Although it would take time to separately sell them, needless to say, it's already enough for me to get it. We would now be able to put specialty products that hits the prices at 500 gold. Thank you for selling your ceramics, my Lord!"

– Your first trade has succeeded.

Currently, whenever you sell goods, you would get 3 Honor stat.

The value of the ceramics was actually worth more than he thought.

However, the shop owner said as he continued.

"However, once I buy a bulk of these art pieces, I'm going to be lacking in funds. How about I give a downpayment of 220 for each of them first, will it be alright?"

“I will sell them.”

The shop owners were being meticulous in checking each of the ceramics. They were looking for cracks or if the colors of the entirety was uneven or even if the patterns were displaced. Either way, the prices were being slashed more and more.

But still, these items were a little hard to find. And with his works, some purchased them at a higher price than others.

– You have reaped massive profits from selling large amounts of artworks.

Fame has increased by 3589.

Honor as Sculptor has increased by 9.

Charm has increased by 7.

The Local Reputation of Morata has increased by 1.

He received a profit of 268,000 gold!

As for Weed, he already created enough clamor with the residents of the other regions and Morata.

Now that his ceramics were being sold, it is going to be scattered in each of the regions within the continent and would meet their new owners.

There were even some people who were looking for Weed's ceramic plates.

Perhaps a lot of people that are to be born in Morata will have big dreams of becoming a Ceramist. This is because of the abundance of the good soil just scattered about and also with the Forge of Hestia being created along with a lot of investments in culture for the city which were also better than anywhere else you could found in the continent.

Since Morata will now sell a lot of good quality ceramics, it is going to be registered as a local specialty product. Now that precious items will receive a specialty product treatment, it would create a temporary trend within.

"Esteemed Lord, I thank you for your trade."

"You've done your business well."

Weed just came out from a trading post.

After the users heard the news that he appeared, they visited him together like a bee swarm.

"You must've earned a fortune from those trades."

“It’s just pretty decent.”

“Since its Weed-nim, it isn’t something special, right? You can’t be pleased by a deal like that.”

Weed indeed sold ceramics and gained a large amount of money. He put his hands onto his mouth trying stop himself from laughing.

Even if it was just for a precious medicinal root, he would be slightly pleased by it.

“Kehehem!”

While trying to maintain decency, he also still managed to look dignified and solemn.

The popularity of Weed in Royal Road has already reached the top. It is very rare to see people in Morata that don’t like him.

The village elder of Morata walked with a cane.

“My Lord, I am here.”

Weed established himself and toughened his expression.

This village elder who became the Earl of Morata brought back so much painful memories of spending a lot of his money!

“Due to the rule of this great Earl, this village has become a city and truly became a great place to live in.”

“Of course, that’s what we need to be doing.”

“This land is now….”

The village elder stopped for a moment and had a look of having filled with regret.

‘There’s no way he’s going to ask again…’

Given the economic scale of Morata, Weed was no longer that poor anymore that investments will shake him up. Although he achieved a lot of profits with it, making your hard-earned money disappear in an instant would also make one cringe.

And now, he didn’t want to lose even one gold.

“This land has been welcomed by good development with the indomitable leadership of its Lord. The people who lived here were also hardworking and loyal. After the fall of Niflheim Empire, the people who were suffering from the monsters and cold still enjoyed an abundant and safe living, and all this thanks to the Lord.”

“Ehem.”

Weed was becoming more anxious as he received more praises.

Surely enough, he had some request, trying to explain their background for very long.

From an early age, rather than praises, he was more familiar with scoldings.

“As long as it is with their Lord, even if it is a monster lair, they will follow you without hesitation. I say this on behalf of the residents. To ensure that the development and glory of Morata will continue, I am making an earnest request as Earl for the army to go to the higher place and touch the entirety of the North.”

Ttring!

The Small Kingdom that Began in the Land of the North.

The population and economic power of Morata has already succeeded that of a size of a city.

The residents have faith that does not easily shaken the security and also enjoy religious freedom and cultural prosperity.

After the collapse of the Niflheim Empire, you are considered the

most developed city in the North.

All the adventure and trade in Morata is already enough for this to be accomplished.

Bring back the stability of the fallen lost people.

The beginning of your Kingdom is going to be a small territory. It's going to be haunted by a bunch of monsters and due to the unknown dangers, it may not go as smoothly as expected.

But, the residents are willing for this request because they believe that their Lord will dominate for the better future.

Can you bring the big burden of leading Morata onto your shoulders?

If you accepted the Elder's proposal, you will rise in place as the King of city states after your rough coronation.

Morata and Vargo Fortress is going to be declared as a region of your Kingdom.

Other than the town areas, the territorial expansion in the surrounding place will accelerate.

Your political power will increase in the nearby areas.

Although the size of your army is increasing, the residents will still feel anxiety. However, if the size of your army is too small, feeling this anxiety is much worse.

You can arrange diplomatic actions with the other Kingdoms.

In the internal affairs and construction areas, you could exercise your authority to be more powerful. You can now build the new buildings that are added.

The result of these diplomatic negotiations may vary according to the King's Fame, and the event that will occur in these affairs will be depending on your Luck.

The Country's King!

Because of the birth of Haven Kingdom, some small countries that will belong to users will rise in place.

The difference them is, the Kingdom was already equipped, not like Morata that needs to be cultivated by the people in position.

Weed finished the calculations in his head.

This thing that came wasn't just a blessing for this person.

Entertainment, bribes, blind money, high status.

These things are indeed what was believed to bring spicy elements in life into this world.

“I will go forth and break through difficulties with the people of Morata and devote a lifetime living with it.”

The dream of being a permanent dictator!

– You have accepted the King’s seat.

All your rights are born of after your coronation.

The form of your Kingdom from a small city state could become a formal Kingdom depending on the size of your territory.

Choose the name for your Kingdom.

“A name for the Kingdom…”

There was no apparent name that was quickly rising on Weed.

Yet, what he was thinking as the usual names of Yellowy, Wy-1, Wy-2, Wy-3, it would be best not to name the capital this way.

Probably, he’s the first user to create a Kingdom in the north and is going to be ridiculed with a name like that.

But, Weed immediately decided for the name of his kingdom.

The Sculptor who unified the continent and created the Arpen Empire!

Even though their glory has passed for a number of years now, you could still raise something that is fallen if your mind pursued on achieving it.

– You have chosen ‘Arpen’ as the name of your Kingdom.

The activities of your kingdom officially begins after the coronation finishes.

Please decide for the amount of funds to be used for your coronation.

A more luxurious and magnificent coronation would lead to a high Fame of your kingdom alongside with a high loyalty of your army.

Weed did not like those formalities.

Substance is not really important for him, if he is to calculate the up and downs of this coronation he’d rather have Morata be as it is.

“The cost of the coronation…. still anyway, I suppose 30 gold is

what the ceremony just needs.”

In his thinking, he just wanted to put and leave a glass of water to them. But still, its scale is significantly increased being a national event.

“I think that’s just too small. His Majesty the King have an extreme strictness as Lord so the residents also have a certain bar of expectations from him. The diplomatic envoys from the foreign lands would also laugh at us and it’s not even enough to inform the entire north about our Arpen Kingdom.”

“I cherish the residents either as King or Lord of this place and that fact would not change. I’m simply paying the coronation at the minimum. And if there’s even 10 gold that remains on the money, please use that money to pay for the maintenance and jobs of the poor residents of Morata.”

“Okay then. It will proceed according to the Lord’s will.

– You have chosen 30 gold for the cost of your coronation.

Weed then finished his day in Morata and with the help of Yurin, they moved to Vargo Fortress.

“I must use this money from those ceramics to build buildings.”

Vargo Fortress was yet to be touched.

The Great Trees Square, Orcish Baths, Maroon Colored Streets were made.

He ordered for the building of the buildings of the the city of Ratzeburg where the four races lived together.

In addition to the advantage of their low construction costs, the different races also liked it. The Barbarians, Dwarves, and Elves living together could raise the effectiveness of these buildings.

“This is nice for its cheap price!”

The construction of the buildings in Ratzeburg had cost 150,000 gold while the remaining money was used to build markets, commodity exchanges, etc.

The lots of tradings from between the races increased the trading tax income.

He also built forges where the Dwarves could stay.

With the characteristics of the elves, he built the Archery Training Center for them to use. It made it possible for the improved accuracy and change of profession to Archers and Rangers.

“I suppose it would be best to level up as an archer here.”

With monsters flocking to the city walls, an archer would be able to shoot unlimited times which was the best condition for their growth. The Archers are also able to increase their proficiency as much as they want in their skills like Penetrating Arrows and Tracking Arrows.

In order to give the Barbarians something, a Warrior Arena was also made. It was a place for teaching them things such as learning how to control the body and learning different skills.

“I guess that’s roughly enough.”

Weed then moved towards Thor, Kingdom of the Dwarves.

***

The Largest Dwarven City in the Norn Mountains.

Iron Hammer!

It is the capital of Thor Kingdom and also the largest producer of steel in the Versailles Continent.

After watching the little dwarves that were running around the fountain, Yurin said.

“The Dwarves are so cute together. They aren’t even slow at

running.”

“Hadn’t Dwarves shown up in the city before?”

“Even though sometimes I’ve seen many Dwarves in the tourist spots, this is first time I’ve seen them like this.”

Together with Yurin, Weed headed to the authorities of Thor Kingdom.

In the Thor Kingdom, there are no kings, only alternating Dwarf Elders.

“Human adventurer. We have also heard about your name, do you have any important business? You may enter.”

The Dwarves guarding the entrance willingly moved out of the way, due to Weed’s high Fame.

Due to his virtues, he was able to immediately meet the Dwarf Elder.

“What brings you to come and see me?”

“I’m here to speak about your relations with the Orcs.”

“Those orcs. There is no way we can get along with those dirty

bastards who spout smelly snorts. Don’t try to accomplish such a fool’s errand.”

Ttring!

Friendship with Dwarf Elder

Dwarf Einhand is annoyed about the Orcs.

Dwarves and Orcs would fight with each other whenever they faced each other during their journeys.

But if you became friendly with Einhand, he will lend his ears to listen to you.

Difficulty: D

Quest Limit: In order to do the Relation Improvement of the Orcs and Dwarves quest, you must complete this quest first.

“Please try to listen a little more to my story. It’s an important story.”

– You have accepted the Quest.

Weed came to know about the character of Einhand through the boards.

‘He really likes jewelry, custom-made armor and alcohol.’

If Weed wrote a thesis about flattery, he’d definitely get a Ph.D!

It may be recognized in a prestigious international journal.

He simply took out and showed him a ceramic cup.

“Although this is not really much of a big deal, I am offering this as a gift to Dwarf Elder whom I always admired.“

“This thing... recently, these ceramics became very popular.. I can’t believe you made this wonderful stuff. I really respect the skills of humans. But it’s really a pity that Dwarves love metal more.”

Einhand’s evaluation in Weed has slightly increased.

The Dwarves has extraordinary Handicraft so if they saw an excellent piece, naturally they would like it.

“I’m not talented much. I think that putting your soul into the sword that you create is what truly makes it an outstanding masterpiece. And also, this is an item that I have discovered accidentally. Let’s try it just once.”

Weed took out a bottle of wine.

Inside it was the ale that he found in Montvertruria.

Several types of fruit were contained in the barrels and the Wyverns carried them over to Morata.

He made Wy-3 send a barrel to the Geomchis to look if it really tastes like wine. After that, he was immediately sent back for more.

Actually whenever the liquor bottle was opened, animals would gather responding to its smell. While Weed came to see the Dwarf, he purposely brought a bottle of the wine

The wrinkled eyes of Einhand frowned.

“I can’t really understand those habits of people on drinking wine.. Who the hell is going to drink this thing that tastes sour?”

“I think so too. I only put the contents in this wine bottle because it’s worthy to store it here.”

“I am actually very strict about drinks. If you dare insult me with this and my tongue the tasted nothing but poor liquor, it’s going to be regrettable that stories about this moment will be known.”

Weed pulled out the cork.

‘Ttak!’ And the clear sound spread out along with the pungent aroma of the ale.

“Kueueuee! This, This smell.....”

“This ale was found in Montverturia. If you want to, I could just tell the story later. I just hope you could taste a little of it. ”

“So you say that this smell is what it really tastes like. This is my first time smelling this kind of fragrance. Is this drink really alcohol?”

This drink, wouldn’t you want to drink it?

Weed poured the ale into the glasses that he brought along.

When he saw the bubbles rising up in the drink, Einhand’s eyes trembled violently.

“Thank you! Keueuk. It’s really a taste that kills.”

– After drinking the ale, Einhand is in a good mood.

Friendship with The Dwarf Elder has been completed.

After the completion of this Friendship with The Dwarf Elder, the stubborn Einhand now finds human adventurers as favorable.

Although he did a wonderful job, but the stories will seem to show something contrasting, about talents of human adventurers and ale.

The Dwarf being excessively praised and then the gifts, then a bribe liquor to top it off!

Even in Republic of Korea, bribery and alcohol weren't things that could be stopped.

Then, Weed started talking stories about the Orcs.

"Long ago, Dwarves, Humans, Elves and Orcs lived together by cooperating with each other."

The person who was listening to these words had differing expressions than normal. Weed was explaining about Ratzeburg.

Of course, It's centered largely around the Dwarves.

"It'd not be an exaggeration to say that Dwarves worked with iron just to feed the remaining three races."

"I didn't know there was such a thing that happened long ago. I've complete faith in your words"

"The Orcs are also aware of this and plan to get along with the Dwarves by sincerely apologising."

"So, I guess Orcs too have conscience in them."

Ttring!

Relation Improvement of the Orcs and Dwarves has been completed.

The Dwarves have accepted the peace request of the Orcs.

In the future, fights between the two would be reduced a little.

– Friendship between Dwarves and Orcs has increased.

– Fame has increased by 157.

Einhand said.

“Us generous Dwarves are going to also send a little present to those barbaric Orcs. I’ll ask our blacksmiths to make glaives for the Orcs and send it to them.”

“Orcs would also love it when they received the gift. Indeed, the Orcs could forever try but they would never catch up to a Dwarf’s ability to create weapons.”

The production and transportation of the glaives along with sending it to the Orcs became a quest that the users could take. If you think about it, this should probably bring the true sense of being successful in the relation improvement.

Of course, if this important transportation quest failed, it'd revert back and would be difficult for the two races to get close again.

Einhand said.

"Given the circumstances of the Orcs, I think it would be already enough if you teach us Dwarves about the way of sculpting."

"Among the humans, my skills are fine as well. How can I dare to keep up with the skills of Dwarves anyway?"

"No. Your name is well known among a lot of Dwarves.You've made considerable amount of work to lead the art of Continent Versailles."

Weed was becoming very proud about his skills and was about to praise himself but Dwarf Einhand continued.

"But whenever I see a sculpture, I feel disappointed."

"Yes?"

"How much do you know about iron? To process and strengthen iron by using several kinds of materials is an easy task for us. It's no exaggeration to say we Dwarves bring prosperity to the human civilization."

Iron was an important material in the world.

It was used as the material for making most of the weapons and as a construction material too.

Iron is an essential material used for the development of a country.

“Most of the sculptors use materials, like trees and rocks that are easy to handle, to create sculptures. One can make a beautiful iron sculpture if he is skilled. As a sculptor, if you could create a sculpture that expresses the beauty of iron, you’d gain recognition among dwarves.”

Ttring!

Dwarves Love Iron.

If a sculptor wants to be recognized by the dwarves, he must be able to handle iron.

You must possess remarkable skills to deal with iron.

The level should be significant to the eyes of the dwarves.

Difficulty: Sculpting Master Quest.

Quest limit: Advanced Sculpting Level 8 or higher.

Blacksmithing Skill must be Beginner level 8 or higher.

After the completion of this quest, familiarity with Einhand will increase.

“Ah, well, did I drank too much beer last night? I’ve been seeing the wrong people. Quite a lot of people know that you already have the knowledge even regarding blacksmithing. There’s no need for you to be doing this!”

– You have completed the quest

– Fame has increased by 350

– Blacksmithing Skill proficiency has increased.

– Intimacy with the Dwarf Einhand has increased. It is already enough for you to share beer with him all night.

Weed was able to solve the quest immediately because of his high Blacksmithing Skill.

‘So this was the destiny of being a Jack-of-all-trades Sculptor.’

Only a Jack-of-all-trades person could handle a variety of

Sculpting materials.

Einhand spoke again.

“Kehehem, with your ability as a blacksmith, you are pretty comfortable to talk to. On top of us being Dwarves, there’s also story about our weakness....”

“Is there something you’re concerned about?”

Weed, who was cunning with his flattery and sweet words, changed his face with a serious expression and showed that he was seriously concerned.

His acting skills would even overshadow the real actors.

For money, he could even pull off an act of crying.

“Do you know about Kaybern?”

“Yes, I know about him.”

Akryong Kaybern!

He’s the longest resident of Thor Kingdom.

Dwarves have been living in these rugged mountains, and this

region was in the territory of Kaybern.

Chapter 8: The Offering Work Of The Dwarves

“We dwarves have to regularly give jewelry and gold bars to Kaybern. Kehehem. We couldn’t help but do it if we want to keep on digging iron in the caves inside the territory of the Dragons.”

“I understand. Though, Kaybern really is a bad guy, making you bribe him like that.”

“I think so too... well, anyways we actually need to devote a tribute to him every three months.”

Despite the vigorous production capacity and trading activities of the Dwarves in the Thor Kingdom, they still hadn’t become one of the powers in the continent. This was because they were limited by them needing to devote a tribute for the dragons on a regular basis.

But, thanks to the protection of the Dragons, their mine development became faster since they didn’t need to worry about monsters or outside aggressions which gave them the advantage of being safe.

“Also next month, we are to devote the offering... the other dragons aren’t really a problem when it comes to receiving reasonable amounts. But for Kaybern, he is always very sensitive.”

In the Thor Kingdom, the one who always brought a lot of

trouble to the Dwarves among the five dragons was Dragon Kaybern.

Unless the Human, Elf or Orcs users were adventuring pretty recklessly, the times when they would see a dragon were very rare. Because Weed knew very well the damage they could do, naturally he never wandered about and he had also never met a dragon.

However, the Dwarves had undergone tremendous difficulties many times due to the Dragons coming to the villages demanding this and that. The Dwarves couldn't help but settle to the haunting of the Dragons which brought in a chaotic atmosphere.

"The demands of Kaybern have been getting worse. Although us Dwarves could just take out and give a large amount of the gems and gold that we dug from the mines, wouldn't it be better to give it to them as beautiful pieces? Whenever the Dragons are not satisfied with the offering of us Dwarves, we suffer a lot of hardships... Fortunately, you, Sculptor, I think that you could go and do something about it."

Ttring!

Treasure Offering to Kaybern

Produce 2800 pieces of jewelry and golden sculptures to be offered to Akryong Kaybern.

Einhand will send four of his fellow dwarves to help.

The sculptures should meet the taste of the dragons.

If you are successful, you would be recognized by the Dwarves as a sculptor.

Difficulty: Sculpting Master Quest

Quest Limit: Sculpting Skill Advanced Level 8 or higher

It should be completed by the next month on the 25th.

If you fail, Friendship with the Dwarves would decrease and you would lose their trust.

To receive the whole quest again, you must increase your intimacy with the Dwarves by getting their trust back through commissions.

From today, there were still 52 days remaining.

‘I just need to create 60 of them each day.’

A unimaginable workload!

“How could I just go and watch the Dwarves suffer? As a Sculptor, I will exert all my strength to carry this through.”

– You have accepted the quest.

“Then I’ll put my trust in you.”

The gems have various sizes and the quality of the craftsmanship will also vary depending on its raw form. Then, he was going to create the golden sculptures by using the method of filling molds with melted gold.

“Since the Dragons like glistening stuff, the pieces must be eye-catching.”

Weed then got into work.

In Iron Hammer, he borrowed basic equipments from Einhand that he could use.

A hammer that increases durability and a furnace that increases the sturdiness of the iron for purification of impurities was used.

Einhand, including some great blacksmiths of Iron Hammer also helped him.

They also had the work environment that was just suitable for it.

They just dug from the mines and carried the wagons that were filled with gems in their gemstone state.

“The first batch. Normally, I would be able to dig till about five wagons each batch..”

Weed was greedy.

“Gulp! If I run away swiftly after gathering everything....”

While in the quest, this sculptor was trying to run away with all the treasures of the Dwarves!

But then, the only thing that forbids him from doing it is that Kaybern will pursue him and Morata will receive the Dragons then a lot of people there will die. However, as he was in agony and having a tough expression from thinking about running away, the Dwarves passed by while nodding.

“Considering you’re just a human, you really have enthusiasm regarding your work.”

“I agree with those words.”

To end this awkward moment, Weed finally took out Zahab’s Sculpting Knife.

“Allow me to make one.”

Ttang! Ttang! Ttang!

Weed looked back on all types of sculptures he made so far.

“Rather than particularly enhancing its artistic value, it’s still important to satisfy the quantity in the end.”

While maintaining the proper quality of the work, he also needs to meet the needed amount.

Weed made molds of animals and monsters.

He had made lots of molds for clay ceramics that were used for production. If he created the mold for the gold in a manner where it just needed to be filled in, the other blacksmiths could be assistants to help him with his work.

By pouring in the gold, they were able to create brilliant golden sculptures.

For a sculptor, it was a really enchanting experience.

“They say that no one could ever get tired of gold, it would never be enough, and anxiety would also creep in. Even if one is an owner of a jewelry shop, one still might not know happiness in life.”

If Weed became an owner of a jewerly shop in the future, he would not know how to be calm and would always have unsleeping

eyes in the shop from being worried about the thieves.

The gems were cut finely using the knife.

“For the gems, even a little margin of error is alright since you could just create it again.”

Although Einhand said those words, making mistakes would degrade his reputation and credibility as a Sculptor. Once a gem had been cut, it couldn’t be restored to its original state.

Diamonds, rubies, sapphires, and others, the majority of these gems were being cut to create a constant angle on their surface. Depending on the size and angle of the cuts in the gem, it would also have varying brilliance.

Weed was already an expert in sculpting sculptures with glittering lights since he had also practiced a lot regarding Moonlight Sculpting.

“What could be the preferences of a dragon: they’ve always loved the appearance more than the artistic value itself.”

Since the Dragon likes glittering gold and jewelry, he focused on satisfying that point.

As a sculptor, it was rather close to just simple labor.

However, opportunities like these, where he could handle this much gold and jewelry, were very rare.

Although his Sculpting mastery increased a little, his Faith stat also fell. Whenever he looked closely at the gold and gems, somehow, the dwarves' trust in him suddenly diminished.

While being in Iron Hammer, he was also provided with unlimited food but that was only whenever he was working.

***

The Hermes Guild called up their raid team to eliminate Weed again.

"It seems like this method is not very effective."

Weed was like a mudfish and was very difficult to catch, freely wandering around the Versailles Continent.

When their raid team had arrived in Bursilia, the Orcs had jumped on them on a large scale. Rather than them hitting Weed, it was them who badly received the counterattack of the Orcs.

Although with the power of the raid, they could have defeated the Orcs easily, it was because in just over an hour, they've already been attacked by the enemy 17 times that they lost.

“Revenge, chwichichichwis!”

Perhaps their idea was to fight while looking for Karichwi since they might not have known if he was in that mix of Orcs. As they were just looking for him while fighting, they didn’t even know that it was already their end as a more fearsome Orc army came, pushed them out, and wiped out the raid. No matter how high level they were, their force were not capable in competing against that number of Orcs.

Eventually, the raid team gave up and was wiped out.

If from the beginning they chose to retreat from the Orcs, the results wouldn’t have been the same. Although in the stance of the raid team, they were fighting aggressively as they didn’t know what other strategies to use against Weed. In the end, they couldn’t deal with the continuous attacks of the Orcs.

After the raid team was wiped out, the Orc Commanders gave some words.

“A lot of Orcs died, chwichichichwis. Go home and eat your meals then sleep, chwichichig!”

“Not only sleeping, waking up and eating, also, create lots of baby Orcs. Let us thrive, Orcs! ”

And once again, Hermes Guild had suffered another disgrace. This time, they’ve neither defeated nor even fought with Weed.

With that scene around the Orcs, the raid team had been pretty much annihilated. It was quite different from the situation that they had expected.

Because of this, a consensus had been made between the chief executives of the guild since it was extremely difficult for them to harass Weed.

“Send an assassination quest as what was planned, this information must not be known. If you see him, follow behind and pursue him since currently, he’s like a ghost.....”

“The location of the raid team has been already been known, they should just escape since it would be difficult for them to try and counterattack the Orcs. Wouldn’t that be a much better idea for them?”

The chief executives of the guild were currently in a point of embarrassment.

They are one of the the great powers that rules Haven Kingdom and Kallamore Kingdom. Depending on the policy that they decide, the situation in the Central Continent would also vary.

However they were annoyed of the fact that their hands are always tied about this trivial thing of harassing Weed.

“How is Bard Ray-nim currently?”

“Currently, he’s proceeding on his tenth quest.”

“That’s really quick progress. Isn’t that even faster than Weed?”

“Information says he’s being followed by his Royal Guards. They help behind the scenes which causes the time needed to be shortened by a lot. And Weed, according to the words of the spy we planted in Morata, he’s staying in Morata for a while now. Regarding his whereabouts, it seems that he’s just making ceramics for the meantime.”

“I suppose his time is going be delayed by a lot. What about the activities on having Bard Ray obtain a new armor?”

“We are currently proceeding in it smoothly. There are no apparent obstacles in the dungeon excavation.”

“If necessary, we are going to add more men to the tomb of Black Knight Teru in the Kallamore Kingdom region.”

“Thank you for that. We hope to dig into it this week.”

The Hermes Guild had gathered information about a certain dungeon in Kallamore Kingdom.

Adventurers, Thieves, Knights etc. were organized as excavators to actively dig and identify the location of the treasures.

As an adventurer who has the backing of the Hermes Guild, it would be easy for him to raise his skills along with finding treasures. Although of course most of the treasures are to be given over to the guild and are not to be his own possessions, even that degree of support is already pretty good for adventurers.

“However, the adventurers were also hearing information about rumors that are not good for our Kingdom.”

“What is it?”

“Although we can’t really help it since it’s a war, but it seems that plundering the cities of Kallamore Kingdom has decreased our reputation more than what we had thought. And after the occupation, rather than being stable, there are increasing complaints and uprisings happening every time with the rebels.”

“We can’t help it. An arrow that is shot somewhere could never be stopped. How about the movements of the other guilds?”

“There are about 5 large Guilds that are following us on our backs. The Cloud Guild, Lion Star Guild, Roam Guild, Black Sword Mercenary Guild, Black Lion Guild. It seems like they have accepted and soon, they will belong to the Kingdom.”

“In the end, it seems things are flowing just as expected.”

There were also numerous of prestigious guilds that belonged in the Hegemony Alliance that was why their overall strength was

still unclear.

If you included the Hermes Guild, these six large guilds built up a colossal power.

“The next Kingdom we are going to aim for is La Salle.”

“Among our neighboring countries, their forces are rather weak.”

“That’s right. We will invade it like lightning then after the occupation, we will strike Britten Alliance Kingdom at once.”

The chief executives were already preparing for the next war.

If they were to be successful in absorbing La Salle Kingdom and Britten Alliance Kingdom, they were definitely going to be an empire with absolute power.

“The Britten Alliance Kingdom probably wouldn’t have a formidable resistance.”

“Although it is just made up of several free cities and principalities, they are historically unified. As you know, that area also has a branch of the Cloud Guild.”

“A confrontation is inevitable and we have already deliberated about it beforehand with the Cloud Guild.”

“It is being prepared. I don’t think they are going to expect us.”

“The forces of the Britten Alliance Kingdom, what are they like?”

“The level of their elementalists and mages are great. Even their army has a lot of users.”

“If their users resist us, then I guess this is going to be a long fight. Currently, it is not really recommended for this war to be a very long one.”

“Once our guild has started its attack, the smart high-level users are going to surrender.”

“While Bard Ray-nim attracts their attention, make sure that we are not careless with our preparations for the war.”

“Well of course.”

The chief executives went on with the meeting until late at night. They were the ones who frequently made the important decisions in their huge kingdom.

“Indeed, speaking of Weed…”

“What we just need is to use our numbers. However, only chasing him on the back like this isn’t going to be really effective.”

“As a mudfish, trying to get close and catch him is going to be impossible.”

With the Sewing and Blacksmithing skills of Weed, he’s been able to wear most armors. While using his Sculptural Transformation even for a moment would change his expression which was already close to being impossible to find.

It was really a difficult thing for them. Because with his ordinary face along with its bounty, it was hard for them to see him casually walking around.

In addition, he was fast enough on noticing their groups intercepting him. Even if the raid teams go around as the assassins follow behind, he would still not fall into their trap.

Among the the chief executives of Hermes Guild, Butler, a user who frequently used and came up with wretched and cruel ideas and plans, said.

“If we wish to eliminate Weed... and are having difficulty about it, why not stir up Morata and its residents?”

“Stir them up?”

“Send thieves and assassins to catch Weed as we send people to Morata to pillage and sabotage them....”

“We might deal substantial damage to them then.”

“Although the other side has a much higher reputation, our Hermes Guild will give compensation to them for it. And if this assassination was to be committed secretly, they should be hidden in the capital.”

Rafael made the decision.

The external affairs or operations of Hermes Guild is mostly influenced by his hand.

***

“Chwiiig!”

The Orcs crossed the sea and arrived in Morata.

“That smell just now smells good, chwichiiig!”

Weed was hoping for them to have a bad time on the sea and decrease their number.

However, they received a very kind care from the 3 Mad Sharks of Becky Nin. With the commercial activities going on near the harbor of Morata, the users and fishermen actively cooperated.

“These Orcs have come for the Northern Continent... And helping them, we would do Weed a great favor.”

“Let’s see to it that the Orcs have fish to eat. The Orcs might love some fish stew.”

Fishing ships and trading ships moved as they followed the fleet of Heint.

The Orcs rode into the the ships as it went back on forth from East to West. The outgoing ships carried a lot of weight as it was full of Orcs. Although their sailing speed slowed down, in any case, all of them arrived safely.

“Kyaaa! These Orcs. They are so cute.”

“It’s really good to see Orcs here in the North.”

“If you guys are hungry, would you like some Grass Porridge?”

The beginners of Morata and the Orcs have met with each other.

Although it was a meeting of Humans and Orcs, there was no prejudice between the races.

“I wanted to became an Orc.”

“Yeah. we chose the Orc Race because we wanted to, there wasn’t much places to go so we had to go to Morata.”

The Orcs blowed off a snort as they came to the gates of Morata.

Since they ate well, their population has boomed to 175,000.

“There’s a lot of stone sculptures, chiwchwis!”

“The Humans here sing so bad, chwiiiig!”

The Orcs haven’t adapted that well yet with the culture of performances and arts.

“Cheap stuff, chiwchis!”

“I need to buy, this thing. chwiiiiig.”

In the squares of Morata, they were selling according to the market price.

Because of the greed of the Orcs, they would even try to sell one wooden sword for 4000 gold that’s why they thought the items there has a cheap price.

“I’ve bought it cheap, chwichichig!”

After the Orcs purchase the equipments, they have been trying to resell it for more than 70,000 gold. Of course, there would be no person who would buy that.

Currently, it was the time for the Orcs to have a settlement.

The Orcs who were on the square and streets of Morata, sat down and crowded around the gates.

Although the day had been difficult for them, the Orcs had been given some good news.

– In Vargo Fortress, there's a large statue of Orc Karichwi!

– The settlement of the Orcs made up of soil and stones is already completed.

– There are also camp for Orcs with baths and dining rooms.

Weed, using his authority as Lord, made an Orc village for them to live near Vargo Fortress.

It was on a perilous mountain area, a dangerous place where monsters show up and was usually avoided.

"Let's go, chwiiig. If only Karichwi was here, he would be able to help."

The Orcs moved to Vargo Fortress with the command of their commanders.

Vargo Fortress compared to the big city of Morata was far inferior to it.

Even with the completed buildings from Ratzeburg, from culture to commercial development including their buildings still paled in comparison.

“Good, we could run around freely, chwiis. We need a place to live, chwiis!”

The Orcs rather liked the rough ground, away from the city. They just hoped to live even in a hard place just enough to plant crops and fight with monsters.

Even if their survival was at risk, it was a place where they could enjoy their freedom!

The Orcs wanted to live as they overcome the environment with power of their race. And, they decided to settled down in Vargo Fortress.

The Dwarves, Barbarians, Elves, Orcs and Humans were seeing each other face to face in Vargo Fortress.

***

Weed continued to work along with the Dwarf Blacksmiths as they created treasures to be offered to the Dragons.

Kaybern’s Sword Demand

The Dwarves must demonstrate all their skills to create and offer swords that the Dragons have demanded.

If you do not meet the deadline for the demand, you will incite the anger of the Dragons.

Difficulty: A

Quest Limit: Blacksmithing Skill Advanced Level 4 or higher.

Also, you must create swords of the highest class that is currently existing.

The best of the Dwarf Blacksmiths were involved.

If the Dwarves failed this production quest, the most dangerous thing would be those dragons.

Although, the reward for this is that they would be able to fully utilize the materials of the Thor Kingdom. Except for the fact that their properties are completely given up to the dragons, as a blacksmith, they are able to walk with both of their arms with the

offerings.

Since Weed was not eligible to participate, he just learned techniques that might help him in creating the sculptures from other blacksmiths.

Although there were a lot of pieces he needed to make, the Dragons usually didn't take the artistic value as of importance. By focusing only with the quantity, he was able to help out in the work of the other Blacksmiths and be able to learn some techniques from them.

"You are pretty devoted. Well, I don't really have any reason not to teach you."

The Dwarven Blacksmiths didn't give him any of the high level secret methods, just those common techniques.

However, Weed who could be said to lived his life on flattering people, worked in the same space as Master Abu and taught him simple things one by one.

– You have learned to refine steel from Dwarf Ronhand.

Your Blacksmithing Skill proficiency has increased.

You can now produce a breastplate with higher defense.

The techniques he could learn from the Dwarves seem to be not that bad.

From how to create a brazier to techniques of beating the hammer, there were a lot of great things he learned regarding the production.

Since the Blacksmithing Skill has a very broad usage, learning it would help in a variety of aspects.

“You’re not a dwarf. Well, the ale tastes quite good.....! I can’t teach you my techniques... These side dishes are amazing. Where have you learned your cooking techniques? Although I don’t recklessly accept disciples, by looking at your passion, I will just give you only the gist of the basic parts.”

***

In Iron Hammer, the capital of the Thor Kingdom, there were no monster raids which was why there were no battles happening amongst the Dwarves.

Rather, the competition among the Dwarf users mainly took place inside their forges.

Selected users that dream to be the best Dwarf Blacksmith also created the swords.

Norn Mountains, Ulta Mountains, Saigorn Mountains. In these

three mountains were where the high quality iron ores were being collected and what was raising the Blacksmithing Skills of the Dwarves.

“These freaking iron, I’ve already been beating these things until dark. Forhand, how many swords have you created?”

“I’m at 17. You?”

“21. Today, I’m gonna need to buy ale.”

“My throat is pretty thirsty too, let’s finish this up and go.”

In Iron Hammer, the Dwarf Blacksmith users that have gathered together numbered quite a lot.

Gazing at the furnace just like every other day, hitting iron was usually something that didn’t really require perseverance.

However it is really rewarding for a Blacksmith to have his weapons become a world famous product along with his name engraved on it. To be able to create outstanding weapons or armors would give one a sense of accomplishment!

However, with this tedious and repetitive work, one would go and get himself some ale. With their racial characteristics to blame, they would feel longing for the taste of ale whenever their satiety drops. As the dwarves long for ale, they would treat themselves in the capital. They would occupy all places including

the taverns, trading posts and forges in the squares of Iron Hammer.

“Kehe... Good.”

Weed drank his ale.

In Iron Hammer, Intermediate Class Blacksmiths and above in particular, were provided two glasses of ale for free.

“Finally, it’s today.”

It was the day when they would offer the treasures to the Dragons!

Fortunately, the required number jewelry and gold sculptures had already been done. Weed gave the gold sculptures that he made which were shining and glittering. Einhand also gave it a compliment.

“If it’s this kind of work, even that strict Kaybern would also like it.”

“Is it alright?”

“This much is good even for the eyes of a Dwarf.”

Einhand and the Dwarves departed to give their offerings to the Dragons.

By now, they should've arrived to their destination, the lair of the Dragons.

After completing this commission, he would've completed his tenth stage of his Profession Master Quest.

"When is it going to be done."

Weed was gradually eating his share of the peanuts along with two glasses of ale which was given free of charge.

Over the past 52 days, he was doing nothing else but create sculptures. Naturally, one would also want to give a reward to himself.

"I need to take a break until evening. My blacksmithing skill has grown further and have also gained considerable earnings!"

For some time now, he never got any hunting experiences nor loot.

However, while he didn't want to use these expensive materials for his sculptures, his Sculpting Skill proficiency has increased.

His current Sculpting mastery was at Advanced Level 8 at 61.1%.

As his Handicraft Skill has also increased a lot, his Blacksmithing Skills even rose one step further.

“Well, I’m actually like an honest laborer. I think it’s actually good if in the future there are only quests such as these.”

Like this, he spent his time on a tavern waiting for a message window to float.

Treasure Offering to Kaybern has been completed.

Kaybern did not praise the efforts of the Dwarves.

But still, with the treasure transported by the Dwarves, they were also quite satisfied that’s why they didn’t kill them.

The arrogant Dragons ignored the contributions of the Sculptor who created those art pieces.

Quest Reward: You will receive it from Einhand.

Your reputation as a Sculptor will increase for the Dwarves.

Contribution Points has increased by 61.

Title! You have received, ‘The Great Sculptor the Dwarves

Acknowledge’.

The Dwarves are the most demanding race with regards to pieces.

Even they wouldn’t disregard the sculptures you’ve made.

The Dwarves will regard your works with 6% higher of their original value whenever you trade.

Your Fame will spread very fast among the Dwarves.

His quest was a success.

In any case, once you see them, you would know that the Dwarf race was very pitiful!

“It was really for the best that I did not chose to be a Dwarf.”

While they do have the ability of dealing with iron and their god-like Handicraft, these Dwarves were living as they received the persecution of the Dragons.

Even the users of Royal Road, as their levels continued to climb up, they still didn’t even know when it was possible for them on promising to hunt these Dragons. Although the Dwarves of the Kingdom of Thor could try and go together with all their power, if it fails, they would not be able to avoid the punishment of the

Dragon.

In the worst case scenario, their Kingdom would also be gone, that's why they don't even try and gamble their hard work.

"Anyways, although this quest is taking a long time, this quest should be coming to its end now."

Weed was flattering a pretty Dwarf girl that was working in the tavern.

"I am hearing the compliments and words of a Master Sculptor who knows how to see beauty."

There was a female Dwarf who was sitting and whose height was smaller than Weed.

"Do you want some more peanuts?"

"If the lady would want to give some."

Giving Weed even just one glass of beer would make him cheerful.

***

The Dwarf transport came back safe and sound.

Weed met with Einhand and heard about the result of the quest.

“Kaybern… whew, he’s really frightening.”

“Did he look really scary?”

“Not really, it was his words that scared me. I couldn’t even properly look at his face. That bloody voice and the surrounding atmosphere, it was already enough to make my heart tremble!”

The Dwarves that were included in the transport didn’t really mind just cowering and looking into the ground. Due to the nature of the Dwarf Race, even though they were the only enemies of the Dragons in the vicinity, they could only cower from the horrors since they didn’t really know what to do.

Even though the Dwarves normally have the characteristic of bravery, the Dragons were an exception. If one would look at the history of the Versailles Continent, the capital of the Dwarves never committed any riot against the Dragons.

They would be working till their death in the coal mines, or they would dig and create then decorate the jewelries to be offered.

All Dwarves who did not comply would become snacks for the Dragons. It was already an instinct of the race itself and it couldn’t be denied that this fear was already carved within them.

“I didn’t know that my sculptures were actually received easily.”

“Well, If you look at me, he allowed me to live so it was alright I suppose. Anyways, a lot of you really worked hard.”

“Not really. I did this work for the Dwarves.”

“I’m giving this to you, a reward from our Kingdom.”

Einhand handed over 3 white cloths to Weed.

– You have received 15 Mithril Piece.

– You have obtained 6 top-class Adamantium Piece.

– You have acquired 35 first-grade Iron Ores

“This is so much…..”

Even Weed was surprised with his rewards.

“Us Dwarves will not forget this favor.”

Even though they were persecuted by the Dragons, the Thor Kingdom was still basically on the rich side.

Also, since there were a lot of mines, the Dwarves could just hand over refined stuff that they mined.

‘If I used this, I would be able to replace a lot of my defensive equipments.’

Weed could now create a better armor to wear.

This will make hunting on the battlegrounds be a bit more on the dangerous side.

While he could have higher defense it would lower agility while the lighter weight would help increase the effect of Agility but lower defence.

It would help to have his life not decreasing that much, if a person was less nervous on fighting whenever he attacks, one would be able to concentrate which will make his hunting speed faster.

‘Why did they even select to play as the Dwarf race from the beginning?’

Weed’s heart was even lighter than dry grass.

He decided to use the materials and set it up once the Forge of Hestia had been completed.

“As a Dwarf, I am very interested about your creative works. I have heard a lot of stories about you.”

“What stories?”

“Legends say that you turned iron into gold.”

“Eh, Einhand-nim!”

“Oh, this kind of thing is just necessary for our blacksmiths, I don’t really need to say these stories to you. About sculpting, I know some strange stories regarding it. Us Dwarves have learned a secret…. I could tell you one.”

Einhand seemed to be talking about where the quest will lead next.

“There are legends about sculptures that came to life from long ago. This story is about the birth of the elementals and I don’t know if this leads to something that might be related to the supremacy of Sculpting or Swordsmanship. Do you still want to hear more of the stories?”

It was the story about the three Secrets Skills of Sculpting.

Weed was of course well aware of those three since he had also acquired them.

“Long ago, the sculptures have been given life and I’m very curious about this legend.”

He looked and met with Zahab with his Radiant Sword, he could go and meet him again later.

He would probably be much welcomed for the things he had done for Queen Evane.

The elementals also created sculptures, it’s not really not much of a question since they’ve already know it.

“From a distant past. There was the Arpen Empire that was built by the power of Art. During a time when war was repeated time and time again, he unified the continent into one glorious empire.....”

This led to Einhand’s long description about the history of Arpen Empire.

Weed was already bowing as he doze off.

It was like during middle school. This was how he was listening to the stories in class!

This technique was being used during his classes in the University and was also used in front of Einhand.

“It was just a barren land, where they prevent the invasion of monsters. There were a lot of things there that were made based on Sculpting. Could you even imagine it. The Emperor of Arpen Empire was actually said to be a Sculptor!”

Einhand shouted intensely with excitement.

Weed even tried made himself looked surprised at some times.

For a person with a profession of being a Sculptor, this splendid legend was enough to evoke a sense of pride!

“Ah! Is that so?”

Weed replied rather uninterested.

Before, he already knew a lot of information about Sculptural Lifeforms that’s why things like these was not really that new to him at all.

It was just like those TV Specials with those films or comedy shows that were repeated each time on holidays every year.

“The great Arpen Empire very much liked the Dwarves. Since we also preferred being artists and engineers, we stayed and enjoy the flourishing empire that the humans have built.”

Einhand then slowly said in a low gentle indifferent voice.

“The Emperor of Arpen Empire! He might even be the most amazing person in the history of the continent. His Sculptures are very special. If you want to find out more about the Sculptures of Life, try to find Raihand who studied the Arpen Empire in his lifetime. To where his current location is, I don’t really know. Perhaps he is somewhere in the Ulta Mountains and Norn Mountains.”

Ttring!

The Sculptures of the Arpen Emperor

The moment his sculptures were written in the history of the Continent, the Arpen Empire was born.

Geihar Von Arpen.

If you want to know more about the sculptures of the former emperor of the continent, find Raihand first.

You will be able to hear more about the story.

Difficulty: Sculpting Master Quest

Quest Limit: Sculpting Skill Advanced Level 8 or higher.

Sculpture Repair Skill needed.

Sculptural Memories Skill needed.

His 11th quest had already started.

However, another message window rang out.

Ttring!

– Secret Sculpting Technique, you have already learned the sculpting technique of the Emperor Geihar Von Arpen.

Since you already know the sculpting ways of Emperor Arpen, you can now proceed without needing to resolve the quest.

The Sculptures of the Arpen Emperor has been completed

As the Legendary Moonlight Sculptor, you already know everything.

The sculpting of Geihar Von Arpen was already led through you.

Fame has increased by 1,980

Due to knowing this historical knowledge, Dignity has increased by 12.

Due to your relationship with the Emperor Geihar you would be able to receive the respect of those who respect the Arpen Empire.

All stats have increased by 2.

Chapter 9: A Meeting With A Sculptural Lifeform Race

Weed said to Einhand.

“The Sculptures of the Arpen Empire Emperor haven’t disappeared yet. I have already learned it.”

“Ah, that’s great!”

Einhand had burst out an exclamation just like when he drank the delicious ale.

“If you are what you said, then you really ought to be called a Great Sculptor. Then, if I could ask you for one more favor, do you know the place called Ugoth?”

Weed have somewhat seen the said place.

In Thor Kingdom, it’s the name of the region south of Saigorn Mountains. The Dwarf Warriors block the monsters in the border regions while there are also a lot of high-level adventurers visiting this place because of the numerous undiscovered dungeons that are yet to be found here.

A message window flashed in front of Weed.

– You have chosen Sculpture Life Bestowal for your Sculpting Master Quest

The rest of your Profession Master Quest is going to be determined by commissions related to Sculptural Lifeforms.

“Anyway, some Dwarves there have talked with the Goblins.”

“What did they say?”

“They said that whenever they walk as they sing songs, they would occasionally see small creatures among the bushes.”

“What was their size?”

“About half of a squirrel? They’re probably not monsters, though, we Dwarves have actually never met them. I think it would be better if you investigate what’s in there. I don’t really think it’s something major so just look it up whenever you’re not busy. If you have the time, then just check it out.”

“Well, I’m going to go look at it whenever I’m not busy today.”

Although Weed answered like that, he thought that it was something that is needed to be found.

These kinds of hints are sometimes connected to huge events or rewards. Of course, although that is very much unlikely to be the

case, it was still worth to check it out.

“And in Ugoth, because there has been a swarm of monsters recently, a lot of Dwarves are currently in danger. If you could make strong Sculptural Lifeforms as if they were made of steel like in the past Arpen Empire, I think you would be able to regain peace and order in Ugoth. Although, yes, it is a shameless favor, but could you give a little bit of help to the Dwarves in Ugoth? ”

“Of course, I’ll see to it and do my best.”

Weed thought it was just a simple Combat Quest.

Although it was something rare for a Sculpting Quest, it may be a commission that will give him a heavier burden as it was a quest regarding Sculpture Life Bestowal.

“And also, you would do a great deal of help for us by doing this. So if you help Ugoth, us Dwarves won’t even know what valuable gift we would give.”

Ttring!

Protectors of Ugoth

A hidden force of the Arpen Empire!

If a Sculptor knows how to use Sculpture Life Bestowal, he would

be able to do a great deal of help for the Dwarves of Saigorn Mountains.

Enter with 10 or more Sculptural Lifeforms and lead them to help restore the peace in Ugoth.

The Dwarves will reward you for this favor.

And, you may be able to find something else in Ugoth. Although, it might also be one of the lies of the Goblins as well.....

If you encounter these strange creatures, it will lead to the next stage of the chain quest.

Difficulty: Sculpting Master Quest.

Quest Limit: Advanced Sculpting Level 8 or higher.

Sculpture Life Bestowal Skill needed.

Playing Skill Level – It requires the cooperation of a Bard with Singing Skill of Intermediate Level or higher.

You need to hunt 500 monsters to complete the quest.

Weed didn’t actually remember anymore the levels of the monsters in Ugoth

Even if the place would have quite a high level of difficulty, if it were those Sculptural Lifeforms, it wouldn't really be a commission that would take a long time. However, in the long run, having taken Sculpture Life Bestowal for his Profession Master Quest, he was a little worried that the Combat Quests are going to be more and more difficult.

In fact, he didn't really have much faith about continuing his quest with his Sculptural Lifeforms.

"As incompetent guys, bringing them all here would just do nothing.... If I want to move forward with these guys and in my quest, it's going to be difficult."

"Kwaegwaeaeg!"

"I don't really know why was I even born. Meoooooo."

"Pick Light Wing. He's loyal to master."

The Sculptural Lifeforms were gathered together by Weed as they were being scolded.

***

All the Barbarians around Vargo Fortress were anxious about a certain place.

“No Warrior has gone in there and come out alive.”

“Legends say that a devil lives in there.”

“That place has an awful smell of rotting corpses along with an ominous aura flowing around it. If you want to take your life, there are much better ways to do it.”

Therefore, the Geomchi instructors and practitioners received a quest from the Barbarians.

“Uh, can we do this?”

“Even if we fail, we’re not going to die.”

“Your brains aren’t on your foreheads, so use it as we strike them.”

“We will follow the words of Master.”

The Barbarians said that they were difficult monsters that is why they would flock them and defeat them with sheer numbers.

Since there was no need for all 505 persons to do it, they divided their number and was scattered through different dungeons.

“ABSOLUTELY DO NOT ENTER THIS PLACE. Well, those words are something we should worry about.”

“Where is the entrance located?”

“Some human warriors even say that the trees above prevent us from calling out.”

“Then that would be fun. I will fight first!”

“Those guys have awfully strong claws. At least it weakens them when it rains since its sight is not that good in the rain, if you use that....”

“In any case, is it just that way that I could kill it? Even if the rain does not come, I’m still going to fight.”

Fight Fight Fight

“Go faster!”

“Let’s welcome the monster gladly.”

The Geomchis rushed in as they endured and clutched their injuries.

They run, crush, and fight as they do each dungeon and

overwhelmingly reduce the time to accomplish it in the shortest time possible.

“We don’t need to complicate things. Just kill everything that is an enemy.”

“The idea of Master is right!”

As usual, they exceeded being heroic in battle as they died one after another.

Geomchi489 is a person who belonged to what could be said as an elite class of the society.

From an early age, he had demonstrated the characteristics of being a promising genius and it continued till middle school, high school until early graduation.

And, he left the best University in the Republic of Korea and became an exchange student to study abroad for a government scholarship. He won mathematical championships; he was also well known in the academic community to the extent of publishing his own journal paper.

He was guaranteed to be employed as one of the chief executives in a company and had even mastered the art of overspeeding on a highway without getting caught by surveillance cameras!

Geomchi489 has a lot of self-distress in his life.

‘Like this, I’m going to be promoted by the director which is earlier than others even than the vice director…. also the director. Earn salaries of hundred millions and also earn bonuses that will depend on the stocks. The companies will also give out personal cars, and later on I would climb up to be the CEO or Vice president of the company.’

Although he seemed to live a successful life, he never felt the joy of living. On the television, what appeared wasn’t that interesting as it showed something about a group.

It was about a dojang where they could come for exercise, and grabbing the chance would allow them to see the path of the sword.

His whole body felt a burning passion to welcome the sword.

Since then, the sword became his hobby and he started attending the dojang. Although drops of sweat came out as he worked hard, he still enjoyed training his body.

However, there were some minor side effects.

Being with the other practitioners or just wearing his uniform gave him a habit of using violence more than his head.

“Kill them!”

He didn’t care about the knowledge he accumulated from the society. If someone grabs the sword along with the practitioners, then one would naturally become ignorant.

The correct and wrong decisions are what matters little thought is given to other matters.

If one had the courage to throw one’s life away, giving importance to the body rather than the knowledge, a life in ignorance could be rather fun.

“Look. If you try, it’s possible isn’t it!”

“Yes, Master.”

“Being under command of Master is really…. a blessing of the Versailles Continent.”

The surviving instructors and practitioners were busy flattering Geomchi.

The seniors cooperated with each other while raising their levels at a high speed. They also gained and distributed information about the new hunting grounds around Vargo Fortress.

Geomchi3 saw Zephyr and his colleagues as they wandered around the shops.

“Hey, Zephyr.”

“Yes, hyung.”

“Are you doing anything?”

“Uhhh….”

Geomchi3 was gritting as it was really urgent. Although Zephyr had a challenge that was needed to be completed by tomorrow, he was unable to make himself say it.

“I’m not.”

“Then, let’s hunt together.”

“Well… Let’s do it then, hyung-nim. But, there’s also Pale-nim and the others.”

Zephyr knew that the Geomchis were very ignorant as he saw it whenever they were hunting.

But, they were not strangers who didn’t know things about Vargo Fortress.

When the Barbarians said a word to them about a place, the Geomchis went along with the practitioners and completely swept

the monsters in there!

They exhibited their combat skills and hunting speed which was enough to cause the Barbarians to be amazed.

Like this, whenever they take part in hunting, it was an obvious fact that one would likely die.

If he came alone without Pale, Surka, Irene and Romuna, and got sandwiched between the practitioners, he might collapse because of exhaustion without having any partner to share his pain.

“Alright. Then, we will start when we are all together.”

Like that, they have decided to hunt altogether!

Geomchi2 has been reunited with Seechwi who was surrounded by Orcs.

“It’s been a while, chwiiig!”

“You did a lot of effort just to come this far.”

Both of them hugged each other tightly as they shared their warmth.

Looking at it, although it was awkward as it was a display of

affection between an Orc and a Human, it was an affectionate feeling for the two.

“I have to go for hunting now….”

“Let’s go together, chwichichwiik!”

Orc Commander Seechwi led the Orcs and joined the hunt.

Elite Orc Champions entered the dungeon and hunted. As the Orc Champions traveled beyond their Rugged Mountains, they grew while fighting with monsters.

And Seoyoon also hunted along with the practitioners. In other words, they were a disaster.

Anyway, since she has only been making ceramics and sculptures for a while now with Weed, she wanted to raise her level by hunting along with the Geomchis.

The profession of Seoyoon, the more she fights the more powerful she becomes, a Beserker!

Not only does the power of her skills were great, as soon as she finishes an entire dungeon, she would immediately go to another dungeon. She goes around attracting a large number of monsters while the Geomchi instructors and practitioners just watched from the sides looking at her ability to slaughter.

“That girl is stronger than us.....”

“Our hunting abilities seems to be unable to keep up in comparison with hers.”

“No! This can’t be! Even if we lose to her at eating meat we can’t lose at fighting. Let’s go!”

Geomchi, the instructors and the practitioners became more ignorant.

***

In order for Weed to complete the Ugoth Quest, he needed to call 1 Bard.

“So I must not do this alone and also need cooperate with a user of different profession. And the Bard should also be a fairly high level and must have at least Intermediate level of skill.”

He could always ask for help when regards to Bards since they dominate Morata more than in any other city. Although there were lots of talented people in Morata, people would run towards him even barefooted if it was Weed who called. Unfortunately, his skill level wasn’t that high yet.

“If it’s Bellot, she’s going to be enough since it just needs to be

Intermediate.”

Weed sent a whisper to Bellot.

– Excuse me, are you free right now?

– Heek heek.

– Bellot-nim?

– Whew. Sorry, did you just call me?

She still had her usual charm, though the only difference was she was in a hurry which was not the usual Bellot.

– Right now, if you have some time....

– Weed-nim! I have time, I absolutely have!

– If I could just have a moment, I need you to help me on something

– Just so I could escape here. Then... I would have a lot of time.

It was the first time that something about having lots of time for a man came out from the mouth of Bellot.

At her current situation, she was interrupted as she was fighting with Hwaryeong and the Geomchis.

Although her level rose quite easily, she was still quite pleased. Their hunt will not end even after their current hunt while she was already exhausted and wobbly on playing and singing songs.

– Then, I will ask and contact Yurin to take you with her.

– Please do, and come a little faster.

***

Weed, Bellot, the 6 Wyverns, Goldman, Yellowy, Silver Bird, and Light Wing arrived together in Ugoth. Gold Bird also came along because of Silver Bird.

Ugoth was located in one of 6 areas of the Dwarves, he rode a Wyvern to the sky and overlooked the buildings where the Dwarves lived. Of course, the Dwarves became even smaller. However, this is also where they built lots of armors, weapons and others.

The Adventurers who visited roamed around the busy streets away from the races.

“First, we’re going to catch monsters, you alright with that?”

Bellot sighed deeply.

“So. I’m going to hunt again?”

She just escaped from the tigers and actually came to the lion!

“It’s just 500 monsters, we should be able to get this done and catch them easily.”

“Did you just say 500?”

Bellot took out her instrument and was ready to play.

The combat abilities of a Bard are actually on a decent side. However, the bodies of the Sculptures of Life didn’t move from their places. She was just playing something that would significantly boost the potential of the Sculptural Lifeforms when...

“Kaeaek. Somehow, what I hear are just noises.”

“……”

The Wyverns didn’t like music because of their brutal and hurried nature. However, Silver Bird liked it enough that she danced about as she chirped.

As the strings of Bellot's instrument strummed, Silver Bird did an adorable dance.

However, the adorable and cute movements of Silver Bird weren't appreciated by the insensitive Weed.

"Are you drunk?"

"Twit twit!"

Silver Bird turned her head and showed a sulky look.

The Wyverns were suspicious and thought that they had been left behind while the others got to drink.

"In any case, let the battle begin!"

The price he needed to pay for the Quest was mobilizing his Sculptural Lifeforms.

The Wyverns, who could also be called the Lord of the Heavens, flew even on the low mountains.

Weed and Goldman were armed with bows and shot any monsters that were wandering in the woods. If their arrows just grazed though the monsters and survived, the Wyverns would immediately follow them with an assault.

“I’ll play a quick rhythm.”

Since Bellot played at a higher speed, the Wyverns felt that they were lighter along with enhanced agility and moved quickly.

The monsters of Ugoth were suitable prey for the Sculptural Lifeforms. Occasionally, when he found places where lots of monsters gathering around, Weed would jump to the ground.

“Radiant Sword!”

Weed rode Yellowy as they rallied in and win battles.

– Remaining Monsters: 264

The hunt progressed quickly.

Although there are high-level monsters in the areas of Ugoth, they were quite fragile from the combination of the Wyverns.

“Kyalulululu!”

Silver Bird called up a mysterious fog.

Although it was normally used in a siege, it was still possible to use it even in these high mountain areas. It was a technique that

endangers the monsters by confusing which also boosts the morale of the soldiers.

In Vargo Fortress, this technique of Silver Bird was something that is used very often for the soldiers and Sculptural Lifeforms for them fight with an advantage.

Bellot, who was riding Wy-1, showed a clear smile as she was playing.

“So pretty.”

The mysterious fog shrouded the Saigorn Mountains and stretched out as the monsters lost their sense of direction and wandered around.

Although Bellot had a lot of combat experience, she was still isolated in the fog while the Wyverns had the great idea of assaulting anyone with the shape of a monster.

However, Weed said casually.

“Hey, I cannot look for japtem… cancel your skill.”

“Kkyaruk!”

“Anyways, I didn’t tell you to do this.”

Since she cast her skill needlessly, Silver Bird could only suffer the scolding.

Silver Bird, who considered Weed as a father since birth, twisted her beak in dismay and sulked. In time it actually became crooked now.

And so, they ended up fighting 500 monsters until the evening.

Ttring!

– You have completed the target number of monsters in the Guardians of Ugoth quest.

You can receive your compensation for your commission by going into town to look for the Dwarf.

Although it was also a fact that they hunted more quickly, it still took some time for them to distinguish the monsters.

Because it was related to the quest it was better to hunt higher level monsters than lower ones since they might receive better rewards from the dwarves,.

“Now Bellot-nim, I’ll be needing your time.”

“What’s the matter?”

Weed's Quest was probably just getting started.

Since, if he didn't find the small creatures that the Goblins have told about, then it wouldn't lead to another quest.

***

As Weed hunted around Ugoth, he looked carefully at his surroundings.

It was a place of lush greenery and yet, it is said that the Goblins are living in a nearby cave.

"Then, I'll start here."

Bellot sang as she played her instrument.

Going for a walk in a deep dark mountain path~

Stepping on the falling leaves making a rustling sound

And as I walk I lost my way

This trip will lead me somewhere

I don't know what's coming out

I tremble as I sing a song

Whenever I hear the wolves

In the night, her voice spread in all directions.

Although Bellot's ability to handle instruments was considerable as a Bard, her voice was the one which was particularly beautiful and clear.

But occasionally, some creatures, except for the Goblins, would take a look and peek on them then escape. And the small creatures among the bushes also didn't show up.

Bellot thought to herself.

'This is embarrassing.'

Of course, although they had Sculptures of Life with them, the idea of singing while being alone with a man brings a pretty strange atmosphere.

She felt nothing but shyness and throbbing!

"Even now, there's still nothing that's coming out. I'll just continue to sing."

As Bellot continued her singing, she hoped that something would occasionally hear her music and show up.

Since they were near the cave of the goblins, other monsters don't usually come out which was why it had quite a desolate atmosphere.

Yellowy and the Wyverns fell down and dozed off as they fell asleep.

Eventually, Weed intruded.

"There seems to be something wrong with the song."

"Yeah?"

Although her job in reality wasn't really a singer, Bellot was still a proud Bard inside Royal Road.

"The tone accuracy and my playing, I don't think I really had any mistakes there?"

Weed shook his head.

"I didn't mean it like that. Let me just recall and sing the lines in the song once again."

“….. Let me have this one.”

Weed’s singing was the worst of the worst.

Although Bellot also knew this very well, she just decided to follow him and didn’t react even after he tried to sing some of her songs.

Weed just changed the lyrics of the songs that she will sing.

“The song will be like this.”

“The lyrics are a bit… How will I put this?”

She can’t bear to say it since the lyrics were already embarrassing enough to even try and just say it on its own!

However, there seems to have a high probability that the Wyverns and Yellowy will like them upon hearing them.

“Well, let me sing it then.”

A jewel is buried in a deep dark mountain path~

The fallen leaves below make a rustling sound

I cooked a bunch of delicious food.

No one also comes here.

A song that nobody listens to.

A song you mustn’t hear.

Don’t come here to hear.

Weed was thinking as he listened to the beautiful song of Bellot.

‘This will make the Goblins come….’

Her singing skills were quite on the decent side.

The song has a refreshing feeling to it without any messy tune nor any careless high notes.

It was very nice to listen to along with her clear playing. If her proficiency is already enough, Weed would most likely find those little creatures.

‘Maybe there’s a problem with the lyrics?’

Weed immediately saw something that moved.

When Bellot already changed the lyrics of her song, the reactions of his Sculptural Lifeforms also changed.

“Moooooooooo.”

Yellowy who was down with his sleepy eyes dug into the ground using his hind feet.

Pabababa!

(T/N: Digging SFX)

Yellowy was trying to find if whether or not there was really a gem.

Of course, it was also true for the Wyverns, even Silver Bird and Golden Bird chirped and released their hunger chirps.

rustle rustle

And then, a gentle shake resounded from the bushes.

Weed was able to find the creatures that were smaller than a pine cone that were squinting in the bushes.

Ttring!

You have found the Ellyons, a Sculptural Lifeform race that was given life by the Emperor Geihar Von Arpen.

Ellyon is a race that belongs to the fairies.

Since they have a very long life, it's hard to find a case where someone dies of old age from them.

Their body size is very small while they also love music and sculptures.

The foods that they eat are mainly dew and grains that they gather during dawn.

They are peaceful creatures and aren't interested in fighting. They don't even have a territory that separates them from others.

They love this place and didn't seriously damage the nature.

– Due to this rediscovery, maximum Health has increased by 1000.

Mana has increased by 500.

All stats has increased by 2.

– You can report this new race that you have found to a King or Lord.

If the cities and countries knew about the Ellyons, your Knowledge and Affinity to Nature will increase.

Guardians of Ugoth has been completed.

Goblins being honest, that fact is something that one would find hard to believe. But what they said was true.

– Sculpting Skill proficiency has increased.

– You have a good reputation with the with the Goblins.

If you talk with them, they will give you stories about what they know.

– Luck has increased by 7

– You have completed the Protector of Ugoth Quest.

You can now proceed to the next stage of your Sculpting Master Quest.

***

Bard Ray had to pay 400 defensive troops to take defense in Kraton Castle.

Even if the castle fortifications could be used, the troops fighting for the other side was 10 times greater than them.

The soldiers were being trained and had brought out their new equipments like throwing spears and swords!

There were only 20 days till all of their enemies marched towards them.

During that time, the soldiers were being trained and the residents were either forcefully recruited or being commanded to do renovations.

Of course, since they lack war supplies, it was just barely possible for them to increase their production capacity.

“I made a mistake, I’m sorry.”

Even though Bard Ray was the one who directed their training, the soldiers were still unable to follow along easily.

“If you do not listen….”

Bard Ray took out his sword then brandished it.

Then, the soldier who made the mistake changed into a gray light then disappeared.

“.. you will die. Keep it into your mind.”

– The soldiers of Kraton Castle has been reduced to 399

– The fear of the Lord has spread among the soldiers.

Notoriety has increased.

The effect of leadership is going to temporarily improve.

“Yes!”

BardRay was already in the eleventh stage of his Black Knight’s Quest.

As the difficulty his quests gradually rose, the support of Hermes Guild also increased accordingly.

The preemptive soldiers for the next quests were given simple items to wear with low-level restrictions such as magic rings, magic daggers, leather armor which was given to them for them to own as their payment.

Although most of his Black Knight Quests are just nothing but

blindly fighting to survive, being able to manage troops was a common thing.

He even has his status as the King of Haven Kingdom and along with his charisma and leadership, he was already on a level where you can't even envy him.

However, it was not enough to immediately turn those soldiers into Elite troops.

In preparation for the upcoming battle along with the plans, a lot of things have changed.

"Have the residents focused on the production of bows and arrows. And, add more people to the wall to repair it overnight."

"The complaints of the residents will increase."

"This work is for themselves."

Although the fatigue and complaints of the residents kept on increasing day by day, Bard Ray could only manage to suppress the rebellions.

The accumulated information that he gained as he ruled the territories of Kallamore Kingdom became useful here.

All of the residents were already dying as they are being abused,

unable to take a break.

The soldiers also, those who didn't follow the proper training were being sent to the hazardous walls to do repair work.

When the 20 days passed by, the enemy was already done preparing for battle.

Soldiers of Kraton Castle: 620 People

Discipline: They may engage in war out of fear of their King

Morale: Low

The enemies came marching towards the castle and the soldiers had put on a strong resistance.

As they dropped stones and shot their arrows, they also fought the enemies who came up on the wall.

That moment of Bard Ray's Quest was being broadcasted live on every game broadcasting stations.

"Once again, he's literally just massacring them as if they were monsters!"

He is currently demonstrating an even more overwhelming

strength in comparison with all of the combat capabilities he'd previously shown as he dominates the battlefield.

"The soldiers, who are not that quite suitable for fighting are giving a pretty good fight."

The soldiers who rushed towards Bard Ray still fought while tying him in place in spite of having to sacrifice themselves.

Although they backed off a little bit since they don't want to get injured, only by killing the Lord would they put an end to this fighting and it's either they will be killed or be lucky enough to survive.

Eventually, Bard Ray was safe and kept his Kraton Castle which will probably start new legends. A status window appeared and he has obtained the Lightning Spear and a Lightning Armor Set.

His Black Knight Quest proceeded to its next step.

Of course, the part in which BardRay accepted the quest wasn't disclosed in the broadcast.

"Thy Knight, thine cruelty couldn't be told as inevitable for peace. For thy sword of the Black Knight, there is a monster near Melbourne Mines on Treipeak Fort. If you have thy sword, you are able to learn the swordsmanship known as Destruction. To wake up this monster, thou must seek the gem from the Earth Shaker."

Bard Ray laughed coldly.

“Melbourne is... in the area of Black Lion Guild.”

***

“Ah.”

Bellot was tightly clutching her two hands.

The Fairy Ellyon was wearing green clothes along with a hat which was so cute and really adorable.

“This is so nice.”

She twinkled her eyes as she didn’t know what to do with this cute thing.

Also, having discovered the Ellyons together with Weed, she was also given similar rewards.

As a Bard, she will be the first one to sing a song about the Ellyons. And through this song, she would earn greater fame that which would make it possible for her to attract more audience.

Ever since their biggest day of adventure when they visited Jigolaths, she has pretty much been standing by till today.

Weed went down to the Ellyon and lowered his body.

At first he thought that there were only 1 of it, but inside the bush, there was actually more than 30 of them.

“Hello.”

Weed spoke and said hello to them.

During the era of Emperor Geihar Von Arpen, there were lots of Sculptural Lifeforms in his Golden Age of Sculpting.

Since he had discovered one of the Sculptural Lifeform race, he couldn’t help but be excited.

– A human.

– He has spotted us.

– Shall we hide again?

– He doesn’t give a good impression. I think he’s a bad man.

According to the reports of the Goblins, they do not run away. But looking at Weed, it looked like the Ellyons were trying to run away.

However, someone among them said.

– Look at those. They’re the same as us.

– They are like art created by children.

The Ellyons came and cheerily jumped up and down on Yellowy and rubbed their face on the bodies of the Wyverns.

“Moooooooo. They smell.”

Yellowy and Wyverns felt ticklish and shook their bodies.

Silver Bird jumped off as it look towards the little fairies, showed a prim air, then flew away as it smiled and went up to the branches.

Weed raised an Ellyon with his finger.

“Ellyon Information Window!”

– You have observed the Sculptural Lifeform.

You cannot check some detailed information.

Name: Ronnie Ellyon

Race: Fairy

Preference: Nature

Level: 51

Occupation: Dew Drinks Leader

Title: The Secretly Wandering Rascal

Fame: 2

A creature that was created by Emperor Geihar.

They are good at farming and also have the ability to dig for minerals.

They love music and arts.

Although they have a few combat skills, it couldn’t be seen by the eyes of the wicked.

+Unknown

+Unknown

Weed looked at the Ellyon closely with his eyes.

As he looked at it closely, the more that it looked like an innocent kid.

It was a fairy girl that was dressed up like a little girl.

– Let me go.

Weed put the Ellyon to the ground.

Suddenly, the Ellyons gathered together and there were 100 small creatures that surrounded Weed in a circle.

Weed and Bellot didn’t run away as the Sculptural Lifeforms did a mysterious thing.

– I’ll let you know something about us.

They heard the voice of the Ellyons.

Then, a vision flowed in the eyes of Weed.

***

Ever since the death of Emperor Geihar, the one who unified the Versailles Continent, the civilization of the Arpen Empire crumbled rapidly.

Due to the disputes between his children and his Knights, the great empire has scattered away and each of the Sculptural Lifeform had to leave.

“Let’s search for new grounds to live on.....”

“The day will come when the arts and culture in this Continent will bloom again.”

“May peace always be with you.”

The Sculptural Lifeforms, who left the Empire to collapse, experienced dangers and stayed hidden on the continent.

The Dwarves who lived in their underground world, deeper than a subterranean city, ascended to the skies and prayed.

They went to the seas, large islands, mountains and forests that the Humans have not yet explored and even swamps.

Although the Sculptural Lifeforms that Emperor Arpen created were tenacious, they became completely dispersed out.

The Ellyons was in charge of the Empire's farming, mineral extraction along with its lakes and ponds.

Even without fighting they still had the ability to adapt to things.

They adjusted to the mountains with those rocks and earth while avoiding monsters and managing to stay alive so far.

***

We have been waiting our days for Sculptor who would be the successor of Emperor Arpen to visit us.

Despite the friendly statement, Weed didn't feel very bad.

The way of speaking just reminds him of when dust gets caught in his eyes.

'Sculpting Master Quest. As I've discovered Ratzeburg, my reputation as a Sculptor and creating Sculptures had a positive effect and have spread towards each of the races. Back then, when I chose Sculpture Life Bestowal, I'm really going to meet the Sculptural Lifeform Race.'

– We could live a longer time compared to the elves. However, our strength have weakened a lot. To return us back into our original selves, we need the strength of the Sapphire of Melbourne.

Weed flinched as his body trembled.

“Wait you can’t possibly mean.....”

– Wouldn’t you obtain this Sapphire for us and make a sculpture with it?

Ttring!

The Ellyons Wants Sapphire

In the Haineph Mountains of the Tullen Kingdom, there is the human-made Fort named Treipeak.

This fort served as a protection of the Melbourne Mines from monsters and other kingdoms.

While angry spirits haunt the mines, this is also where you could enter and excavate the finest of sapphires which could be used in creating sculptures.

Difficulty: Sculpting Master Quest.

Reward: Loyalty of the Ellyons

Quest Limit: Advanced Sculpting Level 8 or higher.

Mining Skill is required

A Magnum Opus Sapphire Sculpture

The Melbourne Mines boasts to be the the continent’s largest depository of iron and sapphires.

If a person gains ownership of these mines, that person will gain astronomical wealth and power.

As a place of never-ending war between the guilds, it has its famous Oden Fort.

Currently, that territory belongs to the Black Lion Guild.

– We have already lived for a long time and we also miss the art and culture of the Arpen Empire. If you then decided to create this sculpture for us, I could only believe in your words then. If you give fresh fruits to the spirits, they will not actually fight.

Weed nodded his head.

“Then, don’t worry about creating the sculpture and just wait for it.”

– You have accepted the quest.

– Thank you.

“No. Only this much is what can I do for you guys….”

The Sculpting Master Quest, he would give his best efforts to the Ellyons since he might be repaid tenfold for his efforts.

Book 28: Special Reunion

Chapter 1: Melbourne Mine

Weed used the teleport gate to arrive at Treipeak Fortress in the Haineph mountain area..

“It is just my luck that there are hardly any people around.”

The Versailles Continent felt narrower as he travelled around it. He couldn’t feel the pleasure of travelling around to dangerous places in order to obtain gold.

“Iron ore is needed.”

“Discount sale! This is the last bargain for iron ores!”

Many users were trading at Treipeak. Even though they weren’t merchants, the users were selling minerals obtained from hunting in the Melbourne mine.

Melbourne Mine Entrance Fee

Underground 1st Floor 300 gold

2nd Floor 850 gold

3rd Floor 1,800 gold

The 4th Floor is a guild restricted area

Users had to pay the Black Lion Guild a fee to access the hunting grounds so users were also selling any loot they obtained. Sometimes they obtained precious items but they had to split the share with the Black Lion guild so they obtained almost no profit from hunting. But the Melbourne Mine was popular with users whose priority was raising their levels instead of earning money. Miners digging for iron ore were also common so they needed to pay a separate fee over time.

Weed shook his head.

“They really have a lot to learn about governance. If this was a dictatorship than it would be perfect.”

He had just become the king of the Arpen Kingdom. It was only a small kingdom but if he learned advanced ruling techniques then he would become a vicious king later on.

“Looking for people to hunt on the 2nd floor. You can hunt until late at night!”

“Black Lion Guild is forming a party. They will keep all the items but the admission fee will be free. There is a profession and level restriction.”

Weed spent a short time at the peak of the mountain watching

the people and the drifting clouds. There was an admission fee so he sent a whisper to Hegel who belonged to the Black Lion Guild and who was willing to listen to him. Users were gathered at the walls built along the mountain ridges. It was a necessary structure for comfortable walking.

"Aren't there people completing the Class Master quest these days?"

"Isn't it Bardray? He is being actively supported by the Hermes Guild."

"Phew, the God of War Weed-nim is a match even without the support of a guild."

"Do you know what the reward will be for the Black Knight Master Quest?"

The Class Master quest was a popular topic among users. The scale of the quest would be enormous considering they needed to master a skill. Based on the information revealed by the Unicorn Corporation, a special reward would be given for mastering a profession skill so it became a hot topic among the users as time passed. It was enough to make people who were indifferent to skill levels start grinding their skill proficiency.

"I saw on the bulletin boards and news broadcasts that the Black Knight completed a class quest."

“I heard from CTS Media that he obtained a legendary spear and armour.”

“Bardray obtained that with the eleventh quest.”

“When did he do the eleventh quest?”

“He succeeded yesterday and it was broadcasted live all night.”

“Wow. Then I should watch the reruns.”

“The CTS media broadcast is good because CTS has a cooperation with the Hermes Guild on their screen time.”

Weed’s eyes filled with jealousy. He didn’t receive any special rewards for his Sculpting Master Quest except for an increase in the friendship of each race and the discovery of ancient ruins.

Meanwhile Bardray who was a competitor with a similar quest, the master quest, received the best equipment to continue his adventure. The thought of it caused a pain in his stomach!

Hegel finally arrived through the teleport gate while Weed was agonizing about it. Weed shook his hand.

“Ah, you’re here!”

“Weed hyung?”

“Yes, it’s me.”

Hegel tilted his head to one side.

“Eh, wasn’t Hyung a dwarf?”

Weed had the body of a dwarf the last time Hegel saw him. Weed roughly explained it.

“There were circumstances so I briefly changed by body in order to enter the Dwarf Kingdom for a quest. But why were you late?”

“I’m late because I dropped in at the guild office. Ah, do you know my colleagues here from school?”

Hegel pointed towards 2 girls who bowed.

“Hello Sunbae-nim!”

Dine and Alice attended school along with Choi Sang-jun. In Royal Road he was known as Hegel.

“It’s great to see you again.”

Weed greeted them roughly.

“Yes, me too.”

“Hyung wanted to see the Melbourne Mine….. I called these kids here to accompany hyung. Is that okay?”

“It doesn’t matter to me.”

Weed only cared about entering the Melbourne Mine for free.

“The Melbourne Mine isn’t a simple dungeon so a bit of preparation is needed. Follow me.”

Hegel was a member with the mark of the Black Lion Guild stamped on his armour so he received enormous benefits on Treipeak. At every store he visited he could buy things at a low price without any tax. The prices were cheap enough to make him envious and the items had a high rating.

“I hope you enjoy your visit Sir Hegel-nim.”

The soldiers politely greeted while lifting their spears.

“He is a member of the Black Lion Guild.”

“Look at that great equipment.”

Even Hegel's arrogance was natural based on the reactions in the surroundings.

"Sir Hegel-nim, good luck. There are a lot of monsters in the mine."

"Thank you for coming to this place Sir Hegel-nim. Please come in."

It was to the extent that the guards gave them VIP treatment at the entrance of the Melbourne Mine. This respect was realistic to Weed.

When he was a child he had been envious of children from rich homes. But it would be difficult to succeed in this tough world with such a narrow mindset. That's why he actively used flattery!

"Hegel you really are big."

"Hehe, this is just something basic."

"It seems like you've gained a lot of levels and your equipment is also better."

"This time I've received the best equipment from the guild so monsters of this degree won't be much risk."

"The Black Lion Guild is really amazing!"

“Hyung isn’t in a guild?”

“I’ve also joined one.”

The standards of the members of the Travellers of the Wilderness Guild was quite high. Whenever he opened the guild chat he mainly heard talk about treasure hunting or boss monster hunting.

In general small guilds needed dozens or hundreds of people to hunt a boss monster. Hunting boss monsters increased the guild’s reputation, causing more people to want to join and then allowing them to hunt stronger boss monsters.

The Travellers of the Wilderness Guild never summoned their members for a reason like that. They were a hermit type guild so they would just quickly gather a few people if needed for a boss hunt.

“If it is difficult at any time than just tell me hyung. Everybody in the Black Lion Guild receives this treatment.”

“Yes, thank you.”

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

People arrived one after another at the teleport gate of Treipeak.

“The air is truly refreshing.”

“This is the Tullen Kingdom with a high teleport fee so you need to hunt eagerly.”

The users who arrived were prepared and scouted the surroundings.

Turok: The Black Lion guild doesn’t seem like much.

Arkhim: Is the area around the teleport gate safe?

Turok: Yes. The group can move here.

The 10 users scattered around the fortress reported back. They were secret scouts belong to the Hermes Guild. A bright light continuously occurred at the teleport gate.

Papapat!

Bardray, his Royal Guards and the assassination squad had moved here with the teleport gate. The dark ruler of the Hermes Guild, Bardray the King of the Haven Kingdom had arrived at Treipeak.

His group disguised themselves by wearing equipment of a much lower level. Bardray and the Royal Guards had recognizable faces so they needed to take precautions. The assassination squad that

followed them wore plain clothes and make-up that hid their faces like dancers.

Kasim: We will split up after arriving at the Melbourne Mine. If we are detected by the Black Lion Guild then it will become difficult.

Bardray, the Royal Guards and the assassination squad dropped by the stores and bought useless items to buy some time. 500 people were moving to Treipeak so the teleport gate was a lot more active than usual. In order to avoid suspicion they arrived at different times throughout the next two hours. Scouts were placed on the main street in order to observe the military personnel of the fortress and members of the Black Lion Guild.

Greiden: I've confirmed that there are 60000 infantry, 20000 archers and 3000 knights at the fortress. There are members of the Black Lion Guild at the fortress but they think that other areas are more important so most of the users have been deployed elsewhere.

Turok: If a battle starts then reinforcements will come very quickly.

Kasim: If we disrupt the power maintaining the Melbourne Mine then those guys won't be able to come in time.

Bardray's quest was taking place in the Melbourne Mine, an area under the control of the Black Lion Guild. His Class Master Quest attracted a lot of attention so he had to hide while fighting the boss

monster hiding in the mine. There was no way the Black Lion Guild would allow the Hermes Guild to dispatch troops to the Melbourne Mine. Instead of requesting cooperation, he decided to just use all his power to sweep through it.

Reikina: The scouts have arrived at the mine. I've checked the entrance but haven't seen anything special. I will pay the toll and enter first.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Weed and Hegel entered the underground 1st floor of the Melbourne Mine.

Kang kang kang!

The scene of users mining was common. Good quality iron ore could be obtained in large quantities at the Melbourne Mine. Iron ore could be easily changed into money and if they were lucky enough then some people could obtain gold.

'There are a lot of people here.'

Weed usually hunted with a small handful of colleagues or alone. The Melbourne Mine was a popular hunting ground so it wasn't an exaggeration to say that people were flocking in groups. There were buried miners, lost soldiers and people hunting monsters in parties. Alice asked in a cute voice mixed with charm.

“Sunbae-nim, what type of place is this?”

“It is a good hunting place for level 150 and loot often drops here so some people stay until level 250. You can even become intimate with blacksmiths in this place.”

Hegel kindly explained to his juniors. Parties who came first could occupy a decent hunting spot but they averted their gazes whenever they saw a member of the Black Lion Guild.

“Then what is your level?”

“Both of us are a little bit over 220.”

“Then you could just move straight to the 2nd floor.”

“Really? Thank you Sunbae-nim.”

Hegel brought his juniors down another floor.

“Is Hyung okay?”

“I don’t care. You know better than me what to do in the Melbourne Mine.”

Weed followed without any complaints because he could dig sapphires from the 3rd underground floor. The problem started

from the 3rd floor because he couldn't go down further without any identification. That's why he was going to adhere himself to Hegel.

A member with the mark of the Black Lion Guild descended to the 2nd underground floor. There were a lot of people hunting but there were some empty sections. Hegel brought them to an empty place.

"This is a place where only members of the Black Lion Guild can hunt. I'm here so you guys can hunt here as well."

Dine then asked like she noticed something strange.

"Thank you Sunbae-nim. By the way, are you going to run around hunting?"

"Yes. I'll be guarding the passage from any monsters that might run out. You don't need to move around so hunting should be easier."

"Ah, I see.

The Black Lion Guild had secured all the good hunting spots. This was one of the benefits of being a member of a large guild who owned hunting grounds. The problem was that these people were weak in long distance adventures despite their high levels. This was because they weren't used to improvisation when encountering a problem.

“Now let’s get started. A lot of monsters may appear but just remain calm.”

“We’re going to be hunting here?”

“Don’t worry, I’ll watch for any dangers.”

Hegel blocked the front of the passage. He was wearing high defense armour that exerted a strong power in combat. It was an armour that absorbed most destructive attacks. He even had a Kite Shield that protected his whole body so he could defend against a lot of monster attacks. The high defense ability of the equipment made it possible to fight on the front lines. Hegel stood while holding his shield.

‘This is tasteful armour.’

He felt his heart pound. He was excited to start the hunt and receive attention for his armour.

“Sunbae-nim, you look so cool!”

“Please show me how to hunt. I think it will be really helpful if I see you fight first.”

The girls’ cheers increased Hegel’s good mood.

‘This isn’t that hard.’

Weed observed the surrounding parties fighting monsters. The 2nd floor was mainly infested with a monster called Menchura. They were level 210 so Weed just had to swing a fist and they would die! Even if several hundred monsters suddenly appeared, he could just move forward and wipe out all of them by wildly swinging his sword. Sometimes a Menchura would summon flames that roamed around. The flames lit up the mine and shiny minerals, making the surroundings look beautiful.

“Now!”

3 Menchura that had long feelers like a cockroach appeared. They attacked Hegel all at once but couldn’t deal any significant damage because of his high defense. Hegel easily defeated the 3 of them with a few swings of his sword.

“Sunbae-nim, you’re so strong!”

“This is just a basic level. I will worry about blocking so just attack it.”

“Yep!”

Hegel, Dine and Alice worked together to deal with any Menchura that appeared.

Weed was in an ambiguous position. He accumulated almost no

experience from hunting the Menchura. However he was a master at grinding in any situation!

"3rd grade iron ore. This is what I need. If you have any items you want then just tell me."

Hegel generously split up the loot with the two girls.

"Sunbae-nim, that magic didn't seem to work just now. How much resistance is there?"

"Approximately 39%. It isn't an exaggeration to say that even fire won't damage it."

Hegel's equipment came in handy when fighting monsters with Dine and Alice. The Black Lion Guild knew a lot about the monsters they were hunting. While the three of them were hunting harmoniously, Weed was bored.

He was level 400 so he couldn't help feeling safe and comfortable in this dungeon. The Melbourne Mine was a popular hunting ground so any monsters that appeared were taken care of by other users.

'It should be more dangerous. This method of hunting monsters is inefficient. Instead of a mixed buffet style meal, they are just adding water to rice and eating it.'

But it was difficult to go down to the 3rd floor when considering

the other peoples' views. Rather than trying to hunt, Weed just sat down and started making sculptures. He would make some profit rather than waste time.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The members of the Hermes Guild were arranged in the Melbourne Mine.

Turok: The scouts have finished being placed around the mine.

Reikina: There is nothing unusual around the entrance of the mine and the 1st floor.

Kasim: The Black Lion Guild's troops?

Turok: It seems like the level in the dungeon isn't that high. According to the reports from an agent we dispatched 3 days in advance, a total of 160 people over level 300 entered the mine since yesterday. Among them are 75 members of the Black Lion Guild.

On the 3rd floor the level of the monsters exceeded 300. Therefore quite a few high level users tended to visit there. Of course that was nothing compared to the invading forces of the Hermes Guild.

Kasim: If it is only that degree then we can quickly obliterate them.

Arkhim: It won't be good if we drag it out for a long time. They can notice at any time so we'll start immediately once Bardray and his guards arrive.

Kasim: I'm asking for final confirmation. Are we only fighting against the Black Lion Guild?

In the current guild chat channel, those given a special mission were given permission for a separate chat channel by the Hermes Guild. It was in order to maintain the security of the mission against other guilds.

Arkhim: Our goal is the success of Bardray-nim's quest, even if that means the death of everybody in the Melbourne Mine.

The Black Lion Guild was one of the prestigious guilds. It is because they were the Hermes Guild that they could make such a drastic decision.

Arkhim: I'll briefly tell you the plans. The Melbourne Mine belongs to the Black Lion Guild but they are also fighting in 11 other places. Even if the Black Lion Guild notices our intentions, it will take some time for their troops to arrive.

The Hermes Guild had sent teams to attack several places at the same time to act as a distraction. They also entered an agreement with the Beden guild for a siege mission.

The Black Lion Guild was completely rattled because of their calculations.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Hegel boasted of his strength while fighting the Menchura on the 2nd floor.

“Most of the monsters are vulnerable to continuous attacks. They will fall into a state of confusion so just keep hitting them.”

“It’s hard Sunbae-nim.”

“I’ll give you a demonstration.”

Hegel’s aim was to spend quality time with his juniors. Meanwhile Weed yawned as he made simple sculptures. The sculptures were completed in no time. If he sold the sculptures for an extravagant price than he could make money!

“Hyung should hunt as well.”

“No, I’m fine. I’ll do it later.”

Weed sometimes raised his head to watch the hunt while creating sculptures. He needed to go with Hegel to the 3rd floor anyway. The petty rules meant he couldn’t go downstairs without being attacked by the Black Lion Guild. Flattering Hegel was the price he

had to pay for it.

"Hegel, you are really cool when fighting."

"No, it's nothing."

"You seemed to have gained many levels while fighting."

"Ah! Hyung, I got to level 330 this time."

Occasionally he would throw out words of praise!

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Melbourne Mine's underground 4th floor!

Here users more than level 360 hunted in parties formed by the Black Lion Guild. The 4th floor had the form of a seven branched tunnel. This was the territory of the Black Lion Guild and they even manufactured maps of it. Many monsters emerged and users enjoyed hunting here.

"Today we've hunted quite a lot."

"If you're tired do you want to go out and get some fresh air?"

"It's okay."

One Black Lion Guild party was preparing to return to the fortress. Then the mine started shaking.

Kurururung!

“This earth is shaking!”

“Is it going to collapse?”

“It would be tough for a big mine like this to collapse.”

“But the ground is shaking... Watch out, rocks are falling from the ceiling!”

The Black Lion Guild members hunting in the Melbourne Mine started clamouring in the guild chat. It was like an earthquake had occurred through the entire Melbourne Mine.

The earth shook, revealing the hidden dungeon Belkain’s Lair.

Currently all users who enter the dungeon connected with the Melbourne Mine will receive 2 times the experience and item drop rate for one week.

The best item will drop from the first person to hunt the monster.

“What’s this? The entrance to a dungeon suddenly appeared.”

“Should we enter through here?”

“It seems to be connected to Melbourne Mine’s 4th floor so the degree of difficulty won’t be ordinary. Should we contact the guild first?”

A hole had suddenly appeared in the wall, revealing a huge cave. Users from the Black Lion Guild gathered and consulted with their guild. And prompt reports starting flying through the guild chat.

Kamaras: Many holes were created in the dungeon. An identified force came to kill the users! A member of the Black Lion Guild tried to stop them but came under attack and died. Other people appeared and also died. It is impossible with just us so we need support.

It took only 1 minute before other users reported.

Ject: An unidentified party enter the dungeon en masse, killing all users. A battle ensued and they mercilessly attacked our guild. The power of the enemy is beyond imagination.

Pum: A battle has also started on the mountain range. The guard posts and fortress has also received fire. This is an urgent request for reinforcements!

The Black Lion Guild's members hunting in the dungeon were suddenly attacked. The situation didn't end there.

Mirnak: Large scale combat troops from the Beden Guild are approaching Kurun Castle. Judging by all the magicians, it seems like a siege is about to occur!

It wasn't difficult to recover when the peace of a dungeon was disturbed. Unless the monsters stormed out and slaughtered the inhabitants, it wouldn't deal substantial economic or security damage.

But if they lost the siege then the castle and surrounding area would be passed to the Beden Guild. The Black Lion Guild had invested a lot in the development so it would become extremely unstable. If the residents were reduced then it would take some time to recover.

That's why most of the central area of Versailles where the war was concentrated had a reduction in inhabitants, agricultural areas and technology. They would still receive a loss if they surrendered to the enemy.

Nechak: I'm now in Kurun Castle. I've observed that the number of Beden Guild members challenging us is quite significant. The Black Lion Guild is convening an emergency meeting for the first time in its history.

Koka: All users engaged in hunting, questing or business are ready for battle and waiting for a command.

The Black Lion Guild entered into an emergency system. The guild leader quickly grasped the situation and urgently sent reinforcements to Kurun Castle. It was a priority to prevent their castle from being taken away.

While the Black Lion Guild was waking up, the massacre of the Melbourne Mine by the Hermes Guild had begun.

Chapter 2: Bardray And The Royal Guards

Sakain: Clean up the 1st floor as quickly as possible then proceed to penetrate a path for Bardray to go down to the 2nd floor.

The Royal Guards and 2 Night Blade assassination squads from the Hermes Guild had been mobilized to fight in the Melbourne Mine. The Night Blade Assassin Guild had at least 300 assassins. 2 groups of 80 elite assassins with terrible power had been selected. Those two groups from Night Blade were enough to completely dispatch a smaller guilds. The assassins rushed out holding their weapons.

“Kyaaaak!”

“I’ll leave the dungeon so spare me.”

“Everybody is indiscriminately being killed. Run away!”

The users hunting in the Melbourne Mine were being wiped out. Some begged and some cursed but the assassins from the Hermes Guild were merciless. It was a source of decent income for them so they thoroughly slaughtered everyone.

Bardray walked through the dead towards the 2nd floor with the Royal Guards.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

“Hyung, what do we do? There is a sudden attack so are we going to die?”

“What’s the big deal? We’ll just step carefully.”

“That……”

Hegel explained the contents of his guild chat.

“Oh, they’re really bad guys.”

“Completely unlucky.”

Alice and Dine had annoyed him but Weed was the type to drink every last drop of milk even if it was two months overdue. Therefore he had stayed with them and discovered the serious problem too late.

“Can’t troops from the Black Lion Guild stop them?”

“The event is occurring in many places at the same time. A war is occurring so there is no guarantee they will send help here.”

The Black Lion Guild had experienced many wars. Hegel was also experienced in many sieges upon the enemy but now it was the

rare situation where they were being attacked!

Usually if there was a hunting ground or dungeon then a village would naturally be in that area. Sending a raiding party was a dangerous tactic because there was no guarantee they could return safely.

Weed sighed as he discovered that the Black Lion Guild was too busy to control the situation.

“The hospital bill had just decreased and now this happened.”

“Eh?”

“There is such a thing.”

He thought this would be easy thanks to Hegel, only to have an accident like this happen again.

“I couldn’t guess it at all. For an incident to occur in the dungeon while the Beden Guild is attacking.”

Something like this happened when they didn’t even know the identity of the enemies. It would be too late by the time they figured it out. Weed stopped making his sculptures and stood up.

“What did the Black Lion Guild members in the mine decide to do?”

“They tried to fight back but I heard reports that the enemies on the 1st floor are no joke. So we decided to gather on the 4th floor.”

“Is that so? Then can I go there?”

“It won’t matter if I bring you with me.”

“Thank you. Let’s go.”

Weed checked his backpack.

He had stored some of his equipment in case he needed to meet a lord or noble. But Kolderim’s Daemon Sword, Talrock’s Armour, the Ancient Shield, Saint’s Staff, Barkhan’s full set, Baharan’s Bracelet and Seulroeo’s Wedding Ring were present. If he lost even one of those items then it would be a huge psychological impact.

‘Even if the forces of the Black Lion Guild are spread, the invaders’ power truly isn’t ordinary.’

Weed couldn’t imagine that the people in the Melbourne Mine were Bardray and the Hermes Guild. Still, they needed to be of a very high level if they were stepping on the Black Lion Guild. Judging from Hegel’s expression and the great number of intruders, this was a really big crisis. The entire Melbourne Mine was a combat area so logging out was impossible.

“Let’s go down the stairs to the lower floors.”

Weed also had a map of the mine so he knew the approximate route.

“Hyung, I will open the way.”

Hegel said while holding his sword and shield.

“There’s no time for that now.”

Weed drew his Daemon Sword.

Then there was an eerie feeling! Weed jumped across the gap and attacked the Menchura that was frozen by Weed’s charisma and fighting spirit. It couldn’t even attack Weed and kept on trembling pitifully.

Seokeok!

-The Menchura has died from the devastating attack.

He hadn’t aimed for a vital spot yet it had died just from a graze of the Daemon Sword! All the Menchura blocking the route died from just a touch from Weed.

“Uh?”

Hegel was outraged. He had diligently raised his level to 330 thanks to hunting with his guild. The Menchura was still scary even if he was this level. But just lightly wielding his sword like it was a joke and killing the Menchura was an impossible task.

'Even one of the hyungs who founded the Black Lion Guild can't do this much.'

Hegel couldn't demonstrate his full ability in fights because of his own lack of judgement and senses. But many users included Hegel were weak compared to their level.

When Weed was level 330, he had been fighting against dragons and touring Todeum. This was because he increased his stats more than others and he persistently raised his many skills. Compare that to other users who were accustomed to wearing good equipment and facing moderate monsters. While Weed was eating barley bread, other users were living while eating well cooked beef steak.

Weed disposed of the Menchura and asked.

"When will reinforcements from the Black Lion Guild come?"

"I don't know yet. Right now other places are more urgent. I won't be able to tell you the time."

Weed continued fighting while surveying the area. Some parties

were still hunting because they hadn't gotten the news yet and some users were talking in loud voices.

"Do you have any information about the enemies that struck?"

"I don't know."

"Then you don't know how many there are?"

"A little more information just came from the Melbourne Mine. There are at least 300 people."

"Their estimated level?"

"It's outrageous. A user from our guild who hunted on the 4th floor fought one of them on the 1st floor and died. That's despite the fact that he is level 367."

When it was this degree, it wasn't just the hospital bill but the insurance expenses as well.

'It is really dangerous.'

Weed moved at a faster pace.

He had learnt how to live a proper life when he was a child. He had learnt different things from society as he grew older. How to

endure injustice. What to do when work wasn't easy. The way to tread on other people to take the ball away.

"It is really hard to live honestly..... No wonder good people like me have no choice but to suffer and resent the world."

"Eh?"

"It's nothing."

A bunch of Menchura had gathered at the entrance to go down to the 3rd floor. The monsters in the Melbourne Mine happened to breed very fast. Usually it was a condition for good hunting but it was just an obstacle in situations like this.

"I'm going to drill a path."

Weed had many sword skills. Although he trained in all the skills, he focused on some exceptional ones.

The Imperial Formless Sword style!

It could be properly utilized for hunting as long as he didn't break the opponent's weapons. He might win the battle but there was no telling what loot he might not obtain if he recklessly broke equipment.

Sculpting Blade, Heriam Fencing and Radiant Sword, Weed had

diverse skills that could be used depending on the characteristics of the fight. Radiant Sword was a ranged attack skill that used beautiful light.

"If I eat the entire roast chicken as a midnight snack then I won't be able to eat grilled rib eye."

A knife used to catch a chicken couldn't be used to catch a cow.

Given the level of damage dealt to the Menchura, using Radiant Sword would just be abusing the monster.

"Huh?"

Hegel, Alice and Dine couldn't understand the meaning of the words Weed kept on muttering.

"Hyung, let's fight together."

"No. I'm going to eat alone."

Weed steadily walked through the congregating Menchura towards the 3rd floor.

Kyahaoo!

Kuyayang!

The Menchura didn't have the capacity to threaten him. Instead their eyes were filled with deep fear. Weed's fighting spirit was strongly emitted when a battle started.

The God of War.

He had fought countless battles with the strongest monsters on the Versailles Continent so the Menchura found it difficult to attack against his fighting spirit. The Menchura willingly fled to the rear to retreat. It was only 1 person approaching but 17 Menchura were running away. However it was impossible for Weed to just leave the obvious experience and loot to descend to the 3rd floor.

"Sculpting Blade!"

Weed's sword plunged towards the Menchura. It was the mass death of all monsters within the radius of the sword! It dealt a mental shock to anyone who watched the Menchura simultaneously disappear.

Now the Menchura desperately fought back despite the pressure from his fighting spirit. Weed generously welcomed their attacks with his body. He was in the state where he wasn't wearing proper armour since it was packed.

-The Menchura's attack has grazed you.

Health has fallen by 46.

-The Menchura's attack has hit a vital spot.

Your Perseverance has increased from the pain.

You have tolerated the damage thanks to Resilience.

Health has decreased by 159.

Weed felt ticklish!

"Let's clean this up."

The monsters gathered around the entrance to the 3rd floor quickly disappeared. Weed had been completing his Master quest not just in the Melbourne Mine so he hadn't been able to fight as much as he wanted. He made sure to wipe them all out without leaving even one behind.

"Wah! Sunbae-nim, you're the best."

"So strong! What is the name of that attack skill?"

Alice and Dine started talking in appealing tones. Hegel spent that time being shamed and it was a repeat of a nightmare.

‘Ah…. This happened before.’

The Dwarf sculptor Weed! He remembered Weed’s surprising actions in the Kramador dungeon. When they went down to the 3rd floor, the users there were aware of and preparing for the attack.

“Where are those guys?”

“I don’t know but they seem to be fighting furiously so we should prepare for a battle.”

The Black Lion Guild members were guiding users down to the 4th floor. The Melbourne Mine’s 4th floor was a tunnel so the entrances were narrows when plenty of obstacles. Therefore it was a good terrain for a fight. The members had faith that the Black Lion Guild would send reinforcements even if it took some time. So they were bringing users from the 3rd floor down.

“Hyung, let’s go quickly as well.”

Hegel would feel more relieved if he was with his guild members so he wanted to rush. But Weed had work to do on the 3rd floor.

“A lot of people seem to be descending… This is a great opportunity.”

“What type of opportunity?”

“I don’t care if you go down first.”

Weed took a pickaxe out of his backpack and headed towards the mining area. The deeper it was in the mine, the better the iron ore that emerged was. Of course he also dug out sapphires.

Kang! Kang! Kang!

A lot of sapphires came out thanks to the skilled use of his pickaxe. It was a technique that controlled the power in accordance with the pickaxe weight and aiming for the exact spot. It was similar to the attack used when fighting a large enemy.

-Kuhehehe.

-Let’s release our grudge. Those bad guys left us locked up here to starve to death.

-You must be the servant sent by the Tullen King.

Angry spirits appeared on the 3rd floor every time someone started mining. They were dead knights with a hatred for invaders. A battle would occur whenever they appeared so the soldiers needed to protect the miners. Of course, most miners moved with a hunting party. This was also a good place for priests to hunt with their purify magic.

“Wait a little bit.”

-What is he saying? Our desired vengeance……

“Take this and eat it.”

Weed threw the spirits an apple.

-Apple.

-It is ripe and delicious.

The evil spirits attached themselves to the apple. The coveted apple disappeared in a few bites.

-Sweet.

-A few more.

-Then we won’t kill you.

“Whew.”

Weed sighed while moving his pickaxe and started throwing them fruit one by one.

-Your friendship with the spirits has increased.

A relationship of mutual trust is generated with the Melbourne spirits

.If he had time then catching the Melbourne spirits wouldn't be difficult. Sculpting Blade and Radiant Sword were techniques that could even take care of spirits. But right now dangerous forces had entered the mine so he wasn't in a position to do that.

"Live and offer up fruits to spirits, their fate....."

Weed sang as he focused on his pickaxe.

-Sway sway, look over there.

-Are you looking for the sparkling blue jewels? There are some on the right side.

He dug where the spirits told him to with his intermediate mining skills and sapphires came pouring out. The spirits liked the fruit and gave him valuable information about where to mine.

-A medium sapphire gemstone has been unearthed.

Luck has increased by 1.

-A large sapphire gemstone has been unearthed.

Luck has increased by 2.

The degree of proficiency of the Mining skill has increased.

“For mining skills to be used in a Sculpting Master Quest.....”

It meant a character needed to be a jack of many trades to complete the quest. He needed sapphires to complete the quest so finding a lot was good. He needed to make a sculpture so different quantities of sapphires were needed. Weed continued digging despite being satisfied with the quantity of stones.

“I don’t know when I can get such a quest again.”

His mining skill also continued rising as he continuously dug out quality sapphires. Sapphires were beautiful so they could be processed into jewelry or when given to a senior magician, it could add attributes to swords and armour. Jewelry that increased attack damage could be sold for an expensive price.

“Hyung, let’s stop now.”

They didn’t dare leave Weed so Hegel and his two juniors were restless. Weed who was surrounded by spirits just kept on mining.

-It’s there, right there.

-There is a huge gemstone…… If he wanted to eat something sour then shouldn't he buy a pomegranate?

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The Hermes Guild had no difficulty wiping out the 1st floor of the Melbourne Mine. The Night Blade assasssins wiped out all parties. The assassins' names were flashing red.

But they had the skill to hide it so that their infamy didn't show when entering a village. Of course, if the other side had excellent observation or surveillance skills then they would be exposed and difficulty would ensue. However the territories dominated by the Hermes Guild granted amnesty to them so they didn't care about their infamy.

"Let's go."

Bardray and the Royal Guards went down to the 2nd underground floor. A portion of the Royal Guards had already gone ahead and slaughtered the users with overwhelming force. Some users tried to escape to a tunnel but the Night Blade assassins caught up and ended their lives.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Yoo Byung-jin felt like he became a lot older every morning.

“In retrospect, my youth passed by really quickly.”

He didn’t know how precious time was when he was young. He spent the entire time inventing Royal Road. Now his body had grown old and it wasn’t the same any longer.

Virtual reality drew a clear line in human history. There was so much potential for future development but Yoo Byung-jin thought that he probably wouldn’t see it.

“One day I’d like to live quietly in a place where people don’t know where I am.”

Looking back the ambition that had burned in him just increase the burden and made living life harder. Yoo Byung-jin wanted to find his successor so he watched what was happening in Royal Road on a daily basis.

“Tsk tsk, greed is never ending. If it isn’t stopped……”

The greed of a giant guild. The greedy humans moved in a herd and caused endless disputes. This could also be called human nature so Yoo Byung-jin watched it thoroughly.

“Morata… The Arpen Kingdom will probably become quite big. The growth is surprisingly quite rapid.”

There hadn’t been anything left in the Northern Continent so it was a poor area. Weed’s adventure had truly been beyond

expectations. He had gone through many adventures since becoming a Legendary Moonlight Sculptor and raising a kingdom. His actions were amazing in a world dominated by monsters, swords and magics.

"If I played Royal Road then I would probably start in Morata."

If people gathered together than a huge power would naturally be formed. Yoo Byung-jin saw the variety of events that happened daily in Morata.

Adventurers triumphantly returned with new discoveries. Warriors going out to increasingly distant places to hunt and bringing back news of the defeat of a dungeon. Bards succeeded in putting on great peformances. Tailors carefully wove fabric to develop their skills and it was the same for blacksmiths. Sculptors and painters created pieces of beautiful art on the streets. Gardeners pulled out weeds while carefully growing their prized flowers and trees.

Morata didn't have sudden changes. All sectors were gradually getting better every day. This ordinary miracle would eventually lead to a kingdom. That's why Yoo Byung-jin often watched Weed. While the war-torn cities on the continent were hard for beginners, Morat was a surprisingly good living area. In addition, Weed was currently part of the competitors ahead in their fields who were completing the Master Quest.

"He might meet Bardray in the Melbourne Mine."

The two people didn't know that they were in the same dungeon. Normally millions of people watched Bardray and Weed's adventures but the nature of the incident meant that it couldn't be broadcasted live. The only person who saw the surrounding circumstances was Yoo Byung-jin.

"What will happen……"

Yoo Byung-jin curiously watched the monitor. And he became more impatient as he watched Weed continue mining sapphires.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

"There's this much?"

Weed's eyes twinkled as he looked at the sapphires in the basket. He also obtained quite a significant amount of 2nd and 3rd grade iron ores. The minerals had quite a significant weight but he didn't think they were heavy.

"In order to make money in this land… It is worth learning the mining skill."

It was one of the skills that made money in Royal Road.

"Now I should do a little more digging."

"Hyung, we should go quickly. There's no time to waste here

anymore.”

Hegel said from the side. He had been upset since finding out the Melbourne Mine was attacked. Meanwhile the Black Lion Guild were gathering the users on the 4th floor. Hegel was anxious and wanted to join them soon but Weed was doing something unexpected.

‘This Hyung’s level is significant. I can tell that his combat ability isn’t ordinary just from the little bit of fighting I saw. He will be useful for today’s war. However, if I can’t pry him from the sapphires.....’

Weed had completely fallen under the spell of the sapphires. He could obtain plenty of gems and minerals by listening to the spirits. If he combined his sculpting and blacksmithing skills in the future to earn money then he would be really satisfied.

“Sunbae-nim, come quickly.”

“You can’t do this here!”

Dine and Alice couldn’t hold back their words anymore. The memory of Weed’s charisma when fighting against the Menchura had vanished. It was annoying since Weed was busy.

“Kekekeket. A sapphire. It is a top of the line goods without any scratches.”

He couldn't just mine recklessly. He needed to be careful whenever he found a sapphire. If he didn't cause any damage to the surface of the gemstone with his pickaxe then the price would climb higher.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Yurin met many people as she freely travelled around the continent.

"This beautiful lady painter, can I request a favour?"

A man wearing a magician's robe approached.

"Your sense of colour is very good. I'd like a picture..... I'll even buy you a drink so we can talk."

A knight also approached.

"Can I entrust this picture that I excavated to Yurin-nim?"

An adventurer brought a picture that had been painted a long time ago. She liked painting pictures of cities and scenic views while talking to people. Users and residents sometimes told her stories of hidden trails and valleys with flowers blooming.

"This place is also hidden. Draw it as soon as possible."

While drinking milk with barley bread, the painting remained in her mind not just on the canvas. She remained lost in thought while drawing a picture of a beautiful landscape, and enjoyed the free and satisfying time until it was completed. She also talked with people while drawing portraits. It was to the extent that her friends and connections couldn't be ignored.

But Yurin was happiest when she was in Morata and Vargo Fortress. She went hunting with beginners and gave out small amounts of paintings. Her ability to paint also progressed rapidly.

"Do you want to have a meal together? I know a good cook. I think you'll love it."

Sometimes Yurin met Hwaryeong who was having a difficult time hunting with Geomchi.

"Okay unni."

The two of them had a meal and saw a performance. Morata was a city of art and performances so the ratio of female users was high compared to other areas. Morata was a city of art and performances so the ratio of female users was high compared to other areas.

"Was Weed-nim cool even when he was a child?"

"He... He made sure I always wore 2 layers of thick underwear even in the house."

The two women often discussed Weed. Yurin had a good sibling relationship with Weed while Hwaryeong was interested in him.

“But can I ask if the two of you ever fought?”

“When I was young I used to misunderstand Oppa but now he is the one I love most in the world.”

“That’s right. There probably isn’t anything to fight about. I asked something unnecessary.”

Yurin and Weed had a positive relationship like Hwaryeong expected.

“No unni. I also got annoyed at Oppa... Although it happened some time ago.”

“Did you?”

“It was last winter.”

Yurin’s eyes were already wet just thinking about it.

“These ugg boots that I really wanted to buy....”

Girls liked wearing ugg boots in winter because they were cool

and cute. But the larger reason was because they were warm and big so they were convenient to wear. Yurin wanted to wear the boots when studying in the library.

"I asked Oppa to buy me those boots."

"So?"

Hwaryeong's eyes flashed once she realized the story was about shoes.

"Did he buy you pretty ugg boots?"

Usually men didn't have a very good response to women's shoes or bags. In particular there were many men who didn't like ugg boots.

"He didn't buy it. He took it as a declaration that my feet were cold and gave me socks....."

"Keeek!"

"But they were thick socks that can't be easily worn with shoes. He assumed that all boots were identical even when explained about the ugg boots... Euheuheuk."

Hwaryeong patted the devastated Yurin on the shoulder.

It was the saddest story she had heard recently.

Chapter 3: Woomba Belkain

Bardray and the Royal Guards arrived on the Melbourne Mine's 3rd floor.

"They've been informed that we were coming."

"It seems like that."

The 3rd floor was empty of users. A few thieves searched the area but couldn't find anyone in the vicinity.

"There is no time to delay. Anybody who is hiding here will be allowed to live."

"Let's go."

The Hermes Guild split into two parties after dealing with the users on the 1st and 2nd floor. The Magician Hit Squad took the thieves to set traps to prepare for when the Black Lion Guild's reinforcements arrived. They created a perfect layer of trap fortifications on the 1st, 2nd and 3rd floor to buy time. Meanwhile Bardray, the Royal Guards and the battle group continued going down.

"Now it is a little bit exciting."

“How strong is it really… It will be an exhilarating fight.”

The battle group pulled out their weapons. They had to get rid of the remaining users in the mine and complete the quest. It was Bardray’s Master Quest so it was natural that they mobilized all the capabilities of the Hermes Guild.

They figured out that Belkain was hiding in the Melbourne Mine. Belkain was classified as a medium to large sized monster. Its level was estimated to be more than 620! According to the history of the continent, it was said to have climbed out of the bottom of hell. 100 years ago it caused terrible damage to the Tullen Kingdom until the High Elves eventually defeated it. It escaped while wounded to the Haineph Mountains and hadn’t appeared since.

“According to a report someone found Belkain’s tail feathers in this part of the mine… There is a high possibility that we will have to fight it soon.”

“I’ve heard its cries once or twice but never figured out the location. I decided to leave it alone.”

History stated that Belkain had a very destructive power over the earth so it was dangerous.

“Get ready for battle.”

They had reached the entrance of the 4th underground floor so heavy resistance from the Black Lion Guild and the users gathered

there was expected. The knights with high defense went down the stairs while covering themselves with shields. But unexpectedly there were no attacks from the Black Lion Guilds and hunting users.

Kentrio: The enemies aren't visible. Come down and see.

Originally the Black Lion Guild had planned a line of defense at the entrance. But they felt it was too reckless since the dungeon was revealed after the earthquake.

Belkain's lair!

They could buy some time when moving there and if lucky then they could find an exit for the mine on the other side. The trails around the entrance was investigated.

"They aren't in the area. And the footprints have continued into the dungeon."

"How pitiful. Did they enter just to die?"

Krobidyun said.

He was a level 446 Necromancer in the Royal Guards whose original profession was a senior magician. He hadn't changed to a Necromancer while Barkhan and his Undead Legion were still alive. He had been watching Weed defeat the Undead Legion on the broadcasts and started to wonder about the potential of

Necromancers. He had the basic skills of a magician and the full backing of the guild so his abilities as a Necromancer quickly grew. A Necromancer was active in large scale battles which is why he came along this time.

"Leave some troops behind while we enter Belkan's lair."

Bardray began to take the lead. He changed his armour and sword to his original one. It was armour he got from the Royal Knight of the Kelton Kingdom while completing his class quest.

The Black Knight's full set!

It wasn't an exaggeration to say that it was one of the best items that had appeared in the Versailles Continent to date. The Royal Guards also changed into their equipment for fighting boss level monsters. They used spears, maces and axes with destructive power to fight against medium and large sized monsters.

"We're going to smash that guy."

"The battle axes will move forward first."

Bardray walked faster than usual. Rather than feeling burdened at the possible appearance of the Black Lion Guild's reinforcements, he welcomed it because he could show a strong appearance in combat. He could show off the power of the strongest warrior on the Versailles Continent. No one could touch the mighty Bardray.

“Kukukuk, come with me.”

Krobidyun started summoning the undead. A Necromancer’s role was to create an undead army as combat troops. He raised the corpses of the users hunting in the Melbourne Mine so a minimum of Death Knights and Dullahans were summoned. There were also a few people with the power of a Doom Knight. If he used the Black Lion Guild members on the 4th floor then his undead would grow even more.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

-What should we do? I think they’re coming this way.

-Shhh, be quiet.

-Hyung, do you plan to just wait until they pass?

-Maybe they won’t see us and will just pass unaware.

Weed and the other 3 people were hiding on the 3rd underground floor. Hegel had been eager to go down to the 4th floor but when he calmed down, he realized that there was no point.

The intruders weren’t idiots so they had probably come with enough power to attack the Black Lion Guild. Hegel heard about the situation on the 1st and 2nd floors so he knew the users on the

4th floor didn't have the level to stop them.

He had lost his sense of judgement when he panicked but that was when Weed's survival instinct shone. He decided to remain on the 3rd floor that most users had abandoned.

'It doesn't seem like there are a lot of people here. Therefore the intruders would only leave a small amount of people behind to search.'

He had learnt to quickly calculate money under a vicious boss so his head came to a quick conclusion. But the other 3 people didn't understand that Weed's judgement was that good based on their expressions.

'I dug sapphires until it was quite late……'

There was no denying that he was greedy for gems.

"Kuaaak!"

"We didn't commit any crime……"

"Banish!"

The sound of users hiding elsewhere and being caught could be heard. The users couldn't hide from the enemies who had assassin or thief classes. Weed was hiding in a recess at the end of the long

tunnel where he had been digging the sapphires.

Now some assassins were heading this way. Professional assassins could hear any low breathing as a loud sound and determine minor temperature differences. Meanwhile the thieves specialized in dismantling traps in dungeons. But when it came to installing traps or surprise attacks, the assassins were the class with the superior ability. They had high destruction capabilities but low stamina so they couldn't fight for a long time on the battlefield.

'If they come closer than they'll find us.'

The assassins could use stealth technique when walking. Although their movement speed would increase if they released stealth. The assassins thought the enemies were weak so they didn't feel the need to hide and searched in pairs. Two assassins were also coming to scout the place where Weed was hiding.

'There are two of them so I need to end it quickly.'

Weed pushed Hegel forward when the assassins approached.

"H-huh! Hyung!"

The two assassins who discovered their prey kicked hard across the ground and ran forward. Both foreheads were tagged with the mark of a murderer. Hegel could tell that they were at a reasonable level just by looking at their equipment. This was a clean-up

strategy so they didn't bother informing the other assassins.

"Guardian Wall!"

Hegel struck a defense pose with the shield in front of him. His body was frozen and he didn't even dare strike back. The assassins used the momentum of their speed to execute a jump attack. Suddenly birds of light came down on them. It accurately aimed for their heads!

"Keuuuuk!"

"T-this....."

One of the assassins suddenly had their health rapidly reduced. They raised their dagger to try and defend from the continuous attacks. But the birds of light just changed trajectory and attacked the assassins' vital spots. There were seven consecutive critical hits! The two assassins disappeared into the grey light.

The assassins had offensive capabilities but their health and fitness were significantly lower. They also couldn't wear heavy armour so their defense was low. Therefore they were weak in a frontal confrontation.

Weed used the perfect opportunity to make Hegel bait. The assassins were careless while expending their power on attacking. They never expected that someone with Weed's sword skills would be hiding in order to take advantage of it.

“Hyung, what skill is that?”

Hegel was more interested in Radiant Sword than being resentful. The sword technique was very flashy and powerful.

“It’s no big deal. We’ve caught two of them so that will buy us some time.”

“Now we will be safe?”

“No, the other assassins will probably flock here when those two don’t come back after a period of time.”

Weed said while picking up the loot the assassins dropped. They were murderers so it was possible to obtain gold coins, jewellery, a poisonous dagger and a ring that increased the critical strike chance.

“Too bad. These aren’t expensive.”

A lot of people chose to play assassins. The items could be easily sold despite not being worth much so he couldn’t complain.

‘I wonder if these guys belong to the Beden Guild.’

If the Beden Guild had this power then they wouldn’t have been successively defeated by the Black Lion Guild. A great power was

needed in order to simultaneously attack the Melbourne Mine and other places.

'Right now they're unidentified. Did someone join forces with the Beden Guild in order to deal damage to the Black Lion Guild?'

Of course, this raiding operation could cause quite a few losses since it involved hundreds of users. The reinforcements from the Black Lion Guild could confine them and deal damage in return. In addition, they indiscriminately slaughtered users so the Black Lion Guild wouldn't be the only ones hostile to them. He didn't understand the reasons but he had become involved in it anyway.

"Now I see no other methods besides fighting."

The God of War.

Weed's combat instincts were unleashed.

"I'll just dig up 2 more sapphires……"

"Hyung, please!"

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The assassins moved quickly. They laid their traps while searching for users and killing them. 25 assassins were executing their mission on the 3rd underground floor.

“It has been some time and no. 43 and no. 44 haven’t come back yet.”

“Are they just delayed?”

The mine was complicated so it would take different amounts of time to return. Despite the degree of error being taken into consideration, all of the assassins had gathered except for 2.

“There was no indication of it earlier.”

“Call them in the guild chat.”

The assassins called the colleagues that hadn’t appeared. There was no answer.

“They’re not even responding to whispers.”

“Perhaps.....”

They either terminated their access or died! There was a battle occurring in the Melbourne Mine area so they couldn’t log out.

“They’re dead. Someone strong is lurking.”

“What was no. 43 and no. 44’s search direction?”

“The coal mine area.”

“Let’s go there.”

6 assassins moved to that area to search for their colleagues.

Sneak sneak.

They used their stealth skills to become invisible when walking! The assassins also wore camouflage clothes so they assimilated with the surrounding landscape. They also wore boots that didn’t make a sound when stepping on leaves or gravel. The only indication that something was moving was a transparent afterimage.

-It is this area.

-Look carefully and don’t forget to check the boundaries.

The assassins slowly moved forward.

Rumble!

“It is a trap.”

“Twieot!”

The assassins thought there were traps installed in the ground so three ran forward while the remaining three retreated. The assassins were good at discovering traps because they installed it themselves. Normally traps had a minimum size and were interlinked.

'If a small trap is installed then we won't be able to notice it……'

'Is it a user with the same class? Then no wonder why no. 43 and no. 44 didn't return.'

The assassin had a brief thought. Those with higher skills could install smaller traps with intense power.

'Pop.'

The assassins scattered and crouched down. They were prepared to defend against explosions, arrows, poison or anything else!

"Van Hawk, strike!"

"Understood Master."

Instead of a trap, a Death Knight was waiting in the dark to strike. Van Hawk's attack power and level wasn't something that the assassins could endure. Two assassins were killed with consecutive attacks! Meanwhile Weed had taken care of one

assassin.

“It was a fake trap!”

The three assassins that escaped to the rear realized their mistake. They were assassins so they reacted more keenly to traps compared to other people. They had also been tense because two of their colleagues had disappeared without a trace. Now three of them had died without a proper fight.

“Let’s retreat and return with more numbers.”

The remaining assassins weren’t fools and tried to retreat after three of them died. They had already announced in the guild chat that there was a surprise attack. It was reasonable for the assassins to consider their safety and retreat.

“This fragrant smell. I’m feeling thirsty.”

Torido appeared behind the assassins’ backs. He used the vampire movement skill Nobility of the Night to suddenly appear behind an assassin’s neck.

“Yum yum yum!”

The body of one person became paralyzed by Torido’s attack. The two remaining assassins that were still free made eye contact and nodded at the same time.

“I’m sorry.”

“I’ll see you afterwards.”

The assassins realized how difficult the opponent was when the monster Torido appeared. The ring he wore indicated that he was a Vampire Lord. They would rather live with regrets then die trying to save their colleague. But the vampire servants that appeared completely blocked their escape.

“Death Blade!”

Van Hawk’s black sword flew towards them. The assassins split to either side to avoid it.

“Sword Kaiser!”

Weed’s Daemon Sword became absurdly large and split apart an assassin. It was a skill that burned all his mana to deal one blow. It was a bit excessive to use on one person but he chose it when considering the assassin’s ability to make a rapid escape. Van Hawk had also taken care of the remaining assassin.

“This is a decent item that dropped.”

Weed acquired boots that increased agility and movement speed. The level limit was 320. These boots would have a wide usage on

the Versailles Continent. It was also useful in battle so it was an item that anyone would desire.

"Ah... Hyung!"

Hegel said after emerging from his hiding spot. He saw Weed's ability in a fight so he knew Weed was a high level user with great skills. Yet he had summoned a Death Knight and Vampire Lord as his subordinates. They were the famous Van Hawk and Torido.

If someone didn't know about Weed then it wasn't possible to call them a fan of Royal Road. Hegel considered Weed the War God as a hero. Hegel personally envied and admired him despite belonging to the Black Lion Guild.

"Omo, Sunbae-nim!"

Alice and Dine's eyes also changed. They looked like brightly shining lanterns. Anyone who knew they were with the God of War would envy them!

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Bardray and the Royal Guards safely arrived at Belkain's lair.

"Strengthen the boundaries."

The 220 Hermes Guild members raised their tension. The thieves

and scouts in the Royal Guards went to check the situation and returned.

“There are traces of a battle. We also found 7 bodies around Belkain.”

“There’s already been a fight since they entered.”

The users hunting in the Melbourne Mine had an average level of 380. Once there were no more monsters then they would move to another hunting ground to obtain profits. The monsters in Belkain’s lair were level 440 so there would be casualties even if the users teamed up. Separate users had to suddenly form a team so it was difficult even if the class configuration was good.

Krobidyun used those bodies to produce Doom Knights. Necromancers who raised their skills quickly could participate in boss fights with the Hermes Guild. That’s because Necromancers wearing class exclusive items could summon undead creatures from friends and foes.

They discovered less monsters and significantly more corpses of users as they entered deeper into Belkain’s lair. Krobidyun counted the number of undead created so far and shook his head.

“If it’s like this then they should’ve let us wipe them out first.”

The users seemed to prefer going to the end of the dungeon than to be killed by the invaders. Little by little they discovered the

corpses of the Black Lion Guild members.

“Well we shouldn’t pay any regard to it. They were already destined to die.”

Arkhim said with a laugh. Power and strong forces ruled on the Versailles Continent. It was natural for the Royal Guards to think that the weak would die.

“Let’s continue.”

Krobidyun continued summoning Doom Knights. The Elementalists used a skill to transfer mana to him so he could keep summoning an undead legion. Bardray and the Royal Guards continued deeper into Belkain’s lair.

“If an enemy appears now……”

“I can see why those that entered recklessly died.

Belkain’s lair wasn’t a long dungeon. They finally arrived at the last location where the boss monster was.

-Kuuwaaah!

A huge roar!

-You’re stupid for trying to find me when I’ve been living quietly… You made me decide to enter the world once again!

The Woomba Belkain was fighting the Black Lion Guild and general users who seemed like they were going to die.

“Unbelievable……”

Kasim’s jaw dropped at the sight of the surprising battle. The Woomba Belkain had sturdy arms and legs as well as a head with big, menacing horns. He held stones that he rotating viciously to bump into users. It lived up to its reputation in the Tullen history books as it slaughtered the users that came to its lair.

-Humans, you are savage beings that need to be stepped on. I don’t know how you came here but I’ll kill you all.

The brutal Woomba Belkain swung its paws and tail, killing 5~6 users. That wasn’t the only thing that froze the chests of the battle company. The loud noises of the users hunting in the Melbourne Mine drew the monsters.

They entered the dungeon to find a way to somehow live. But the monsters’ levels were too high than they ran into the boss class monster Woomba Belkain.

“The intruders are behind us and the monsters in front so how can we win?”

“I won’t surrender and die if there is even a slight chance of living.”

“If it is like this then I should at least have a clean death.”

“I can’t just die like this.”

The users chose to fight and die. The intruders or the boss class monster! They chose to die by the hands of Belkain instead of the Hermes Guild. Belkain had also drawn the wild monsters wandering the dungeon. They headed towards the place where Woomba Belkain was.

Thus the Hermes Guild were welcomed by various monsters and were plunged into pandemonium.

Chapter 4: Approaching Danger

“Sunbae-nim, I really wanted to meet you. Can I ask you to sign my leather armour?”

“Me too. I wanted to see you. My dream is to be able to see and listen to Karichwi!”

Weed’s adventures were often shown on TV and as reruns. Alice and Dine were fans that watched the live broadcasts of all his adventures.

Records of Weed’s Adventures

They even joined the fan cafe that spread stories of Weed’s adventures. The girls liked Weed so much that they connected to it every day to write something. Of course, Weed had no interest in such popularity.

“Well, I’m busy now……”

“Kyaa! Sunbae-nim’s voice really lifts the atmosphere.”

“This is my opinion. I’m sorry. Later on… No, when it is a more comfortable time.”

Weed coolly accepted it despite his annoyance. His eyes changed

the moment his true identity was known.

“Wah! Hyung, can you also sign something for me in the future? It’s such an honour to be friends with the God of War.....”

Hegel was also jumping with joy They were in danger because of the intruders in the Melbourne Mine. But even if he died, he thought it was more important that he met Weed. Weed didn’t agree of course.

“We killed them quickly this time but the remaining assassins will start to move.”

The assassins would come like a swarm of bees once communication was cut off with their colleagues. This trap worked well but he couldn’t hope that such luck would continue. Weed sighed.

“This is always my fate. Although I hesitated for a while.....”

Van Hawk wiped the blood off his sword and said.

“Don’t worry Master. I’ll fight against them.”

Torido stepped forward as well.

“My throat is still dry. I’m going to soak my fangs in their blood.”

Weed felt it was worth training them as subordinates.

“I can throw them if I want to live.....”

“.....”

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The assassins who had gone searching for their colleagues were ambushed.

-How many are there?

-They seem strong so shouldn’t we be especially vigilant?

Usually a report would’ve come in by now. But this time there was no news. That could mean an early death in the battlefield.

“Were they careless?”

“It doesn’t seem like it. No. 21 is very prudent.”

“It seems like a formidable enemy is hiding.”

The assassins had all types of means to fight against their enemies. Stingers, poison spray, smoke and curse magic were the basic items! Relentless attacks and surprise skills that lowered

stamina and health. The assassins' weak point was that if they encountered someone with high defense then they wouldn't last long. But the assassins' critical hit probability and attack damage was much better than other classes and they were excellent at causing confusion and paralysis. The remaining 17 assassins tried to develop a methodical way of fighting.

"We don't know how many there are."

"We need to pull out our weapons in case the Black Lion Guild members arrive."

The assassins equipped a crossbow on their arms. It took a longer time to reload than regular bows but the enchanted arrows were fired faster and dealt more damage. This was the combat equipment for assassins. The preparations for battle quickly finished. The assassins also prepared traps. Just before the 17 assassins were about to start moving, a message appeared over the guild chat.

The Hermes Guild chat was also filled with members not active in the Melbourne Mine.

Steer: Weed the God of War has been discovered in the Melbourne Mine.

Reikina: What?

Steer: I was told the news by a spy who sneaked into the Black

Lion Guild. Weed seems to have killed the assassins on our side in the Melbourne Mine.

The assassins panicked. The damage to the Hermes Guild after they entered the mine was negligible. There had been no deaths on the 1st and 2nd floor. Given the circumstances, the assassins that disappeared must've been killed by Weed.

Steer was an assassin who specialized in overseeing information for the guild so there was no doubt he was correct. Hegel had expressed his delight at Weed's appearance in the Black Lion's guild chat.

Steer: I just received more news from my spy. Weed is on the 3rd underground floor while hiding his identity.

Teurok: Then this is a golden opportunity to kill Weed.

Credun: We need to use this chance to get rid of Weed who has been causing our guild headaches.

The chat window for the Hermes Guild was in an uproar. Bardray and the Royal Guards were already fighting in the Melbourne Mines and now new information had come up. They could finally kill Weed for the guild's honour. The users in the Hermes Guild were all excited.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Members of the Black Lion Guild gathered one after another at the teleport gate.

“What is the power of the Beden Guild that attacked the castle?”

“More than 70,000.”

“They’ve collected a lot more than usual.”

“This time it seems to be life and death for them.”

Carlise, the head of the Black Lion Guild received the reports. He made the decision to fight the enemy.

“Siege weapons have been installed in Kurun Castle and the battle seems to be starting in the evening.”

“There is a little time. If we can’t stop them then the Beden Guild will be one step closer to occupying the Tullen Kingdom.”

That’s why the Black Lion Guild sent temporary reinforcements to Kurun Castle. The Beden Guild had insufficient troops compared to them. If they expanded their defense using the castle walls then the Black Lion Guild could hold out for one day. The time was limited but it was enough to defeat the party invading the mine then return to win the siege. That’s what the leaders of the Black Lion Guild thought.

“For Weed the God of War to appear in the Melbourne Mine… Why is he there?”

“Is he working with those guys?”

“There are no reports that Weed attacked us. They’re saying that he is fighting the assassins that attacked the mine.”

“Maybe he came because of his quest.”

“The Melbourne Mine possesses sapphires with the best clarity as well as good iron ore that might be required for a sculpting quest.”

If it was any other time than the Black Lion Guild would be sensitive about Weed entering their area. Weed had a huge reputation as the God of War so they would either react hostilely or cooperate when meeting him. Now an urgent problem has occurred in the place they controlled so that couldn’t care too deeply about it. A magician called Tefest suddenly pulled out a crystal ball.

“Guild Master! You should see this. KMC Media is currently broadcasting live about the Melbourne Mine.”

“It isn’t good that the surprise attack is being broadcasted.”

The Black Lion Guild didn’t find it pleasant that the attack on a major hunting ground would be known.

“That’s not the problem. Look at the broadcast.”

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

KMC Media was suddenly organizing a live broadcast. Oh Joo-wan was speaking some exciting news.

“A great event has just occurred in the Melbourne Mine. I told you about the attack on the Black Lion Guild and was going to organize some videos for the viewers about the siege.”

“Oh Joo-wan, are you saying that isn’t the case any longer?”

“Yes. First, we have determined the identity of the intruders. Surprisingly we discovered that Bardray is among them. As you can see from the video.”

-Kuoooooh!

The Woomba Belkain’s paw hit the ground. The earth moved like a wave and attacked the users. It was an attack that buried them in earth! The Woomba Belkain continuously waves its large paws and hit the users. It was a procession of death in front of the monster!

Bardray and his Royal Guards were also engaged in the battle against Belkain. It wasn’t a situation that could continue for a long time as monsters kept on gathering. Originally they wanted to get

rid of all the users in the Melbourne Mine before starting a fight with Belkain. But the users had started the battle first and monsters were gathering in the lair.

"It will be difficult if we delay any longer. Let's go!"

The Royal Guards and their combat group armed themselves and fought against Belkain and the wild dogs of hell. The undead summoned by Krobidyun rushed towards Belkain. They didn't have that many expectations from the undead but it would be good if they blocked Belkain a little bit. Bardray showed off his battle skills.

"Sword Awakening, Strong Will, Power of Birth, Black Knight's Strike, Summon Another Sword!"

Four reinforcement skills. And sword techniques! Bardray ran towards the Woomba Belkain despite the rippling land. The video was forwarded by a user hunting in the Melbourne Mine who entered Belkain's lair. The user was associated with the KMC Media so the video was sent to the station. The broadcasting station had seen it while analyzing various videos. And the Head Director made a decision without taking the time to hold a separate meeting.

"Broadcast it now."

The user from the Melbourne Mine had sent an approximately 7 minute long video before dying. The user's job was a thief so they managed to avoid attacks until they were killed by the Royal

Guards. The users belonging to the Black Lion Guild lacked experience in melee fights so they died quickly. Belkain and the various monsters caused a large scene of confusion.

"It's really is amazing. Bardray and members of the Hermes Guild has appeared in the Melbourne Mine. Is the Black Lion Guild aware of this fact?"

"The possibility it high that they didn't know until now."

"It is difficult to think the Hermes Guild would attack a hunting ground belonging to a rival guild."

"Presently we can only make guesses about their current state. I will let you know as more solid information comes in but based on the current situation, the probability is high that they are the suspects."

Oh Joo-wan continued talking while looking at the footage. Bardray had taken members of the Hermes Guild to hunt a boss monster. Sweeping through an area until the Black Lion Guild's influence was an event that would have a large impact. It was a short video but the sight of the Woomba Belkain slaughtering the users made it obvious that it wasn't an ordinary monster.

"News has come in again and the monster in the video is the Woomba Belkain! It is the legendary devil like monster that swept through the Tullen Kingdom."

“A tip came in. There is a user still alive. A video is being sent and I will connect the video as soon as it is ready.”

CTS Media and LK Game Broadcasting didn’t fall behind KMC Media and also broadcasted about the situation in the Melbourne Mine. The PDs were sent videos from users who died fighting against the Woomba Belkain or from users still alive. The Woomba Belkain’s lair was a hellish battle zone but users who stayed far away in a corner could survive. However the monsters and Hermes Guild were both enemies so there was no guarantee how long they could last.

Yoo Ah-ring suddenly screamed.

“Ahhh!”

“Yoo Ah-ring ssi must be really surprised by Bardray’s force.”

“It’s not that... Another man is also in the Melbourne Mine.”

“Who is it that made you so surprised?”

“Weed! I received information from a reliable source that Weed the God of War is in the Melbourne Mine!”

The news made each broadcasting station even more frantic.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

A painter in the Black Lion Guild was upset after watching the broadcast.

“Hermes Guild... They dare do this when they haven’t even disbanded the United Supremacy Alliance yet! They have violated the agreement.”

“We can’t forgive them for entering our area and slaughtering our members.”

It wasn’t just the Melbourne Mine. If the Hermes Guild was behind it then it explained everything that happened today. Carlise had a cold smile on his face.

“The attacks on the other places were just to disguise that they were coming to the Melbourne Mine.”

The Black Lion Guild had sustained considerable damage in various hunting grounds. But if they looked at the reported numbers than the invaders of the Melbourne Mine were absolutely overwhelming.

“An earthquake occurred in the Melbourne Mine the moment they entered and then we received reports that a dungeon entrance appeared.”

“What is the target they are trying to obtain in the Melbourne Mine?”

“It must be something really valuable if they dared to worsen their relationship with the Black Lion Guild.”

“Even Weed the God of War is inside there. He is with Allen’s younger brother but we also need to consider him.”

The opinions of the Black Lion Guild were divided. Carlise wanted to lead a giant guild that could step on the Versailles Continent. He fought and raised his military power before gradually expanding his territory. He had raised a successful guild so far. Now was the time to make a serious decision.

“All reinforcements sent to the other hunting grounds will be cancelled.”

“What about the Melbourne Mine?”

“I will take some warriors and go there directly.”

The Black Lion Guild suddenly moved away from what the Hermes Guild predicted.

Their original plan had been to take care of all the users in the Melbourne Mine first. But users had entered Belkain’s dungeon and the news about them was discovered too early.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Weed started wearing his armour.

-You have worn Talrock's Armour.

Defense has increased by 102.

Faith has increased by 100 due to your pious heart.

Fame has increased by 300.

Strength has increased by 20.

Agility has increased by 30.

Charm has increased by 25.

Fighting Spirit against an enemy has increased by 40.

Maximum mana has increased by 15%.

Magic damage reduced by 10%.

You are immune to Confusion and Fear.

You can acquire favour from the Dwarves by wearing this armour.

It was the armour he received from the Freya Church. It was a valuable equipment that increased his combat ability and magic defense. Although it was a snow white armour, it changed into black armour thanks to mithril's light absorbing properties.

'I have to set the groundwork.'

Weed use his skills like Sword Grinding and Armour Polishing. He needed to create an optimal physical state in order to escape.

"That armour looks cool."

"Where did you get such armour?"

Weed just walked forward instead of talking about pointless things. If the opponent didn't move then finding hidden assassins was extremely difficult.

'They could pop out anywhere.'

Weed grasped his sword lightly for a quick response. Van Hawk and Tori were to his left and right while Hegel, Alice and Dine were behind him. They wouldn't be much help even if they participated in the battle.

‘There might be 1 person or 3 people hiding in the area.’

Weed didn’t slow his pace even when he came to a place with of rubble and stone scattered around. He suddenly stopped moving when he sensed that he was being watched. There was a large gap when walking through for several people so the assassins intended to attack there.

‘If I go past then I’ll be more nervous about a possible attack from behind.’

Now was a great chance to get the jump on them. He would rather fight the assassins head on with the element of surprise. He instantly came to a conclusion the moment he sensed it.

-Weed-nim, are you in the Melbourne Mine right now?

The whisper came from Pale. Weed had never told him that he was going to the Melbourne Mine. Pale and his other colleagues had gone hunting with Geomchi. Weed hesitated before sending a reply back through a whisper.

-I am in the Melbourne Mine.

-I’m watching the broadcast right now and they’re stating that Weed-nim is in the Melbourne Mine.

Weed thought that he needed to leave this place as soon as possible. He wasn’t interested in how it was discovered. Hegel

might've said it through the Black Lion Guild Chat or Alice and Dine might've spread it. The dead assassins also might have recognized Tori and Van Hawk and mentioned it before they died.

-And the people indiscriminately killing everyone are the Hermes Guild.

Weed was still walking while on the lookout for assassins but he was finally able to understand.

'As expected... It needs to be a large organization to do something like this to the mine controlled by the Black Lion Guild.'

Pale's whisper continued.

-And it was mentioned that Bardray and elite troops from the Hermes Guild are in that place.

Weed stopped moving.

'Even if my fate is to be entangled with that guy, this is just too twisted.'

It was to the extent that he wanted to yell at the developers! He hadn't doubted that the assassins had a high level but he never thought they were with Bardray and the Hermes Guild.

'It will be tough for me to survive.'

This had become a serious problem of survival. Weed knew it was inevitable and that he couldn't avoid a large fight with them anymore. Judging by this situation, he would even have to destroy a Masterpiece sculpture.

"It is valuable but....."

Weed didn't carry Masterpiece sculptures with him so he pulled out the Fine piece, the Last Warrior. The sculpture showed the courage of a warrior standing up to the King Hydra.

"In the end it became like this. Sculptural Destruction! All of it will go to agility."

The sculpture was crushed and scattered like sand. He gave priority to agility over strength because he was fighting assassins.

At that moment.

Weed's body became lighter.

-You have used Sculptural Destruction.

The pain of destroying a Fine sculpture! The grief!

5 Art stats have permanently disappeared. Fame has decreased by 100.

The Art stat has been converted to Agility for one day.

Since your Art stat is too high and your Agility stat is too low, the conversion won't be converted all at once.

980 Agility has been changed to the level 9 advanced skill 'Wind Sprint.' You can use mana to run with the wind.

This will be more useful when travelling long distances outdoors than indoors.

650 Agility has been changed to the level 8 advanced skill 'Avoidance.' The enemy won't be able to attack accurately.

The efficiency of leather armour has also increased.

430 Agility has been changed to the level 5 advanced skill 'Lucky Help.'

Enhances the probability of a critical hit to increase damage.

1,040 Agility has been changed to the level 2 advanced skill 'Excellent Experience.' Reduces the activation time required for an attack skill.

It is also possible to grasp the weak points of the skill that an opponent users.

760 Agility has been changed to the level 6 intermediate skill ‘Distance Reduction.’

Stamina and mana will be consumed to strike the enemy with extremely quick movements while ignoring distance.

-The proficiency of the Sculpting skill has increased.

Weed felt his lighter body become steady.

“This is the taste.”

He was so light it felt like he could fly freely. Both feet were on the ground but he felt pushed whenever the wind flowed. Of course it consumed mana. Weed walked quickly without paying attention to the assassins anymore. The situation had changed so there was no need to worry about the time anymore.

‘He is suddenly walking faster.’

‘An opportunity.’

The assassins made preparations to move from their ambush spot. One strike would mean the difference between life and death! They just needed one hit to paralyze him for a short period of time. If their surprise succeeded than an assassin could catch someone stronger than them. It was a great honour that their opponent was

Weed the God of War.

‘Now!’

4 assassins came running out of the shadows. Two of them came from the land while two jumped down from the ceiling of the dungeon.

“Die, Weed!”

“This is your end.”

The assassins had been through many fights but they had never been as thrilled as they were now. They aimed their crossbow at Weed the God of War. Torido and Van Hawk were there as well. But Weed was the only thing visible in their eyes.

“Fire!”

Syu syu syu syuk!

The arrows loaded on the crossbow fired in a straight line. The arrows seemed to go straight through Weed’s body! At that moment, Weed popped in front of them at an unimaginable speed. Thanks to his high agility and evasion skills, the arrows only hit his shoulder, left hip and right leg.

-Poison! Poison! You have been poisoned.

Your health has decreased.

Your mind and body will be damaged unless you detoxify quickly.

-You have suffered injuries in battle.

Your vitality will drop quickly.

Your health has been reduced by 2,180.

-Damage has been decreased thanks to the faith given by Talrock's Armour.

The arrow that hit his left hip did quite a bit of damage. But Weed was unconcerned about it and just rushed at the assassins with a terrible speed.

"Wah!"

"So fast……"

The assassins quickly pulled out a dagger as he approached.

"Heriam Fencing!"

Weed struck the assassin.

-The 1st consecutive attack has succeeded.

Agility increased by 20%.

-The 2nd consecutive attack has succeeded.

Strength increased by 40%.

His accuracy and destructive power rose greatly thanks to the increase in Agility from Sculptural Destruction. Radiant Sword was a ranged attack skill and Sculpting Blade a moonlight sword skill that the assassins could avoid. It also consumed a lot of mana despite its strength.

Thus he approached so quickly that afterimages were created and used Heriam Fencing on a nearby assassin with low defense. Unfortunately even if the consecutive strikes succeeded, his Agility was already increased from Sculptural Destruction so there was only a basic rise in the stat.

-The assassin has received a crucial impact.

Health decreased by 31,760.

Maximum health will be decreased by 2,110 until a complete healing is accomplished.

Stun has been caused for 2 seconds.

Stealth techniques can’t be used.

The appearance of a blurry assassin became clearer.

-The 3rd consecutive attack has succeeded.

Agility increased by 40%.

-The 4th consecutive attack has succeeded.

Strength increased by 40%.

-You have killed an assassin on the Tullen Kingdom’s wanted list.

Fame has increased by 15!

If you go to the Tullen Kingdom then you can receive the reward.

-You have gained experience.

An assassin died due to the continuous attacks! Weed didn’t stop using Heriam Fencing and maintained the maximum power while hitting another opponent. He picked the vulnerable areas with low

defense to deal more damage.

The sophistication of his destructive power was completely different from when he fought the Menchura. The benefit of Heriam Fencing was that attacks would increase exponentially when the consecutive attacks succeeded.

The first assassin couldn’t escape from it and died instantly. They were equipped with a dagger in one hand and a crossbow on the other. They didn’t have any shields and meagre armour so they were easily damaged.

-The 5th consecutive attack has succeeded.

The enemy has become confused.

The enemy’s Fighting Spirit has fallen.

Agility increased by 40%.

-The 6th consecutive attack has succeeded.

Strength increased by 50%.

The damage of the secondary shock wave has increased by 15%.

-The 7th consecutive attack has succeeded.

Agility has increased by an additional 30%.

Strength has increased by an additional 20%.

These attacks used 1,500 mana.

Weed took care of two more assassins. He acquired a cloak, dagger and crossbow as loot. The experience and items dropped was large because the murderers were wanted in a kingdom. Torido had also sucked the blood of one person.

“It really is worth drinking corrupted human blood.”

“Let’s go!”

Weed took out his bandages and did simple emergency aid before advancing openly. He wasn’t concerned about being seen by assassins.

Hegel continued to boast about Weed in the guild chat. Dine and Alice’s hearts were pounding excitedly. They didn’t know Weed’s inner thoughts at all!

‘If I’m going to be fighting then I should show the world a confident strut.’

It was like how those who took a minicar to a hotel would receive

worse treatment than those riding large, foreign cars. He didn't know if it was true but the outer appearance was necessary.

'I need to make the assassins hesitate. They are moving systematically but they will be tense.'

In a battle, the side that cowered first would be more disadvantaged. Weed smiled like an office worker returning home with his favourite cake. He had polished his rotten acting skills while watching morning shows with his grandmother.

Surge!

Something rolled under Weed's feet as arrows fired from the left and right.

"This....."

Weed stopped as he was about to take out the Ancient Shield. He had used it too much and there was only 31 durability left. He shouldn't use it unless he was really desperate or there was an important purpose.

"Torido, Van Hawk! Unite!"

"Understood Master."

All three of them tolerated the arrows with their bodies. Van

Hawk had high health because he was a Death Knight. Torido also had a tenacious health because he was a Vampire Lord. Weed's resilience didn't need to be mentioned. He also had high agility and evasion so he could avoid flying arrows by shifting his body.

"I am loyal and will happily obey Master's command."

"I have to quickly catch one human and drink from them. Beautiful lady over there, I will prepare a bunch of flowers for you……"

Van Hawk and Torido had different ways to endure the pain. Weed just wrapped more bandages around his body. There was nothing like a bandage to restore health in combat. It was a bandage made with advanced Sewing and Herbalism so these trivial injuries were quickly treated.

Snap!

"Hey, over here!"

Kwaaaaang!

"Is everybody okay?"

Weed, Torido and Van Hawk had been caught in a trap. But the situation wasn't that dangerous. It was mostly due to Dine who was a shaman so she gave them healing potions that recovered health. However, it was impossible for the assassins to have left

after installing the traps.

“We really managed to catch Weed?”

“We made perfect use of the timing.”

“It is difficult to deal with him ourselves. We should wait until reinforcements from the Night Blade or the battle company arrives.”

Weed had been caught by a trap and ambushed by assassins in the immediate vicinity.

Chapter 5: Excavated Ice Beauty

Bardray, the Royal Guards and the battle company heard the news about Weed.

‘This is a really good chance. We can finally catch the ankles of the guy irritating us and execute him.’

‘The heavens are helping the Hermes Guild. If we defeat him today.....’

The assassins had secured the Melbourne Mine’s 1st, 2nd and 3rd floors. This mine contained the power of the Hermes Guild so they could turn to Weed after completing Bardray’s class quest.

‘This has become interesting.’

Bardray was also thrilled at the thought of Weed. He had wanted to meet Weed again in Royal Road to get revenge. Unfortunately he was in the Woomba Belkain’s lair and he needed to get rid of the Black Lion Guild first. He would show Weed the colossal gap in power and defeat him. The Black Lion Guild was coming here but this dungeon was under the Hermes Guild’s control.

“The monsters are continuing to gather!”

“I’ve sealed the three back passages. There are additional monsters in the passage.”

The Woomba Belkain's lair was a huge cave with many passages connected to it.

-Kiiek!

-I'll eat the humans who dare attack my mother.

Users had run away from the Melbourne Mine only to intrude and annoy the boss monster. They had dragged the monsters only to die but it caused difficulty for the Royal Guards and battle company.

"Stay here. Endure and don't leave even if you have no health left."

The priests belonging to the Royal Guards and battle group became busy. If they were kicked by the Woomba Belkain or stabbed by its horn then it was no different from death. Belkain's children and the wild dogs of hell were also tough. They were at least level 400, with skin as hard as steel so they didn't suffer much damage.

"Wounded Heal!"

It was a 4th stage magic used for absolute recovery. The level of the priests wasn't ordinary so if they didn't die then their health would be half recovered. Bardray walked to the side of the Woomba Belkain. His legs sank into the ground whenever he

moved a step. The ground changed into a swamp due to intensity of the technique to increase his strength and vitality.

“Shock Wave!”

“Thunder Arrow.”

The magicians and archers indiscriminately attacked the Woomba Belkain. Its health steadily decreased despite there being no change in the outward appearance. The Woomba Belkain continued attacking users with its horns and paws. The surrounding stones were also thrown at people so the collateral damage was significant.

“Heavy Blow of Satisfaction!”

Bardray walked towards and Woomba Belkain’s side and dealt several attacks in a row. If vulnerable areas with low defense was hit in succession than symptoms of Stun or Paralysis would occur. The Woomba Belkain wasn’t so weak that it would suffer those effects but it still lost a considerable amount of health. He used his sword techniques and repeatedly struck the Woomba Belkain. It was a medium sized monster so it wasn’t pushed back by the intense attacks.

-You’re the strongest human here.

The Woomba Belkain showed fierce hostility towards Bardray. He had struck its flesh more times compared to the other Hermes

Guild members so naturally he would attract its hostility.

-The Woomba Belkain has unleashed its Fighting Spirit.

You have overcome it due to your high Honour.

Bardray stood facing it. Meanwhile pieces of stone, arrows, magic and even axes were flying about in the surroundings.

-Kueeeeek

The Woomba Belkain stumbled as it experienced attacks from all sides. But it was a boss class monster so it tightened its stance without falling down.

“I guess I have to use this. Hero’s Sword!”

Bardray’s Sword emitted a pale light. It was another sword technique! It was useful when the hero’s fame was high and the opponent was a legendary monster. Once the skill was used, the sword would break and it would be impossible to recover. The Hermes Guild obtained many of the best magic swords so Bardray didn’t regret losing the weapon.

-Kuaah!

The Woomba Belkain jumped and twisted its front paw. Bardray swung his sword towards the paw.

Pwaaaaang!

There was an enormous noise as an explosion occurred.

Strength vs. strength.

While Bardray confronted it head on, the Royal Guards continued reducing its health with magic and arrows. Over 14 Hermes Guild members were sacrificed to the Woomba Belkain's paws and horns. Their deaths were a shame but it was because Bardray used his command skill.

Black Knights had a skill called 'Brave Conductor' that raised the combat power of his subordinates when he was the leader. All the Hermes Guild members belonging to the Haven Kingdom needed to fight against the Woomba Belkain directly.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Flames rose once Weed was caught in the trap. Arrows flew from every direction.

"Now."

The assassins didn't miss this opportunity and started to attack. Hegel, Alice and Dine were in the back but they didn't care about them.

‘I’ll kill them later.’

‘It isn’t worth dealing with those guys.’

The assassins’ goal was Weed! They concentrated their attacks on Weed in order to kill him. Despite his high resilience and evasion, Weed lost 30% of his health the moment he fell into the trap. He was also previously injury and had bandages wrapped around him so it had the effect of weakening his vitality. Weed closed his eyes. It was the Close Eyes Tightly skill that increased defense!

“Van Hawk, forward.”

“Understood Master!”

Death Knight Van Hawk dashed forward with Weed, it was a risky move. Weed had his eyes closed so he had to believe in Van Hawk. He used his improved agility and the Wind Sprint skill! He exquisitely avoided the arrows and spears fired from the trap. Some hit but he endured it with his resilience and perseverance. Van Hawk then reached the assassins. Weed flew at an alarming rate and opened his eyes in front of them.

“Heriam Fencing!”

The assassins’ form was completely weak. Their secret was to hide in the darkness until the moment they could inflict maximum damage. Weed fell into the trap so the assassins had decided it was

time to attack. Now there was a frontal confrontation with the assassins so his chances were good.

Of course, if he was attacked in his vulnerable spots when surrounded then it could be dangerous. When he decided on a place and time to fight the assassins, he had wanted a war of speed. The front two assassins tried to defend but Weed's attacks exploded on their body. Heriam Fencing hit 6 times as it became stronger!

"Our chance is still here."

"He is weakened so we can kill him."

The assassins' attack with the trap was in vain so they had to chase after Weed. Weed struck with the much stronger Heriam Fencing.

-The 7th consecutive attack has succeeded.

Agility has increased by 30%.

Strength has increased by 20%.

The destructive power of a fatal blow has increased.

-The 8th consecutive attack has succeeded.

Agility has increased by an additional 15%.

The enemy will be pushed away.

-The 9th consecutive attack has succeeded.

Strength has increased by an additional 25%.

Enemies are stunned.

A fatal blow has been dealt.

There was a total of sixteen consecutive attacks! It was a high level sword technique that the enemy couldn't stop. Weed used the chance to press and knock down the assassins with his swordplay. His heightened agility shortened the skill activation time and Heriam Fencing proceeded from the beginning to the end. Weed's feet, lower back, shoulders and hands were in a perfect posture like an action figure performing a skill.

-The skill proficiency of Heriam Fencing has increased by 0.1%.

-The skill proficiency of Sword Mastery has improved.

-The durability of the Daemon Sword has decreased due to the violent movements.

Van Hawk and Torido also attacked them from behind. The battle that began since the trap was activated proceeded at a lightning fast speed.

“Kuooh.....”

“So strong.”

The assassins hit by Heriam Fencing were either killed or suffered significant damage to their health. His agility was also high from destroying the Fine sculpture. He suppressed the assassins secret attack with his defense and attack speed.

“Weed, you disturbed the Hermes Guild so you will surely die here today.”

A wounded assassin then said. Weed killed him and took his items. The acquisition of smoke bombs!

“I am honoured to fight Weed the God of War today. Let’s have a great battle next time.....”

“More troops will come to kill Weed. It’s a shame I can’t see how long you last.”

Weed swung his sword at another assassins without any regrets. The assassins were fully exposed and slower than Weed so they couldn’t escape. Their escape routes were also blocked by Torido and Van Hawk. The last assassin begged him.

“Spare me just once. My wife is playing at the beginner’s hunting ground and my children are crying for barley bread……”

Weed struck with his sword. This was a battle where lives were risked so begging for mercy didn’t make sense. He also couldn’t give up the loot and experience.

“This area seems to be almost cleaned up.”

Weed had exterminated all the assassins from the Hermes Guild on the 3rd floor. In addition to Sculptural Destruction, the help from Torido and Van Hawk ensured his victory. But Weed’s body was a wreck from falling in the assassins’ trap.

The big disadvantage of Heriam Fencing was that he couldn’t avoid enemy attacks because it would stop the sword’s movements. His health had fallen to 57% by the time the attacks ended.

“I’ve gained some time but they will soon be swarming like bees.”

Just when Weed thought about escaping.

The Black Lion guild had passed onto Hegel the information gathered from the broadcast and he received a communication saying that they were the Hermes Guild.

300 people had entered from the Hermes Guild. The assassins

had also covered the 1st and 2nd floor with traps so he needed to take that into consideration. Weed didn't have a skill to release traps so the chance of fleeing through dozens of assassins and traps were unlikely. In addition, there were still the general soldiers of the Hermes Guild waiting.

"If the assassins are preparing traps for a raid then there is no way to sneak out. I'm not about to risk my monthly salary on being reckless."

If his health was reduced a lot then he could use Seo-yoon's Berserker skills. If he fell in many traps then his chances of survival would become much slimmer.

"If someone enters then the assassins would gather upstairs. Even if I hide again, those guys will be searching so I'll just be detected."

Weed looked at the items he obtained.

Assassin's camouflage clothes, dagger, crossbow, boots, gloves, belts, masks, he came across quite a few decent items.

The assassins dropped more items than usual because of their murderer state.

"Now that I have this……"

Weed disarmed his Talrock's Armour, Daemon Sword and other

equipment.

“I need to get dressed.”

He wore the assassin’s equipment! Users with the Blacksmith skill could wear clothes of different professions. Weed’s level in the Blacksmith skill meant he could wear level 409 equipment.

“Well, this much should be similar.”

The equipment obscured his face so he couldn’t be distinguished from the Hermes Guild’s assassins.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Dante was a beginner user just getting started in Morata. He was the classic beginner grown on grass tea. He had to decide on a class.

“I’d like to be a sculptor like Weed-nim… Although I’ll never exceed him.”

He first felt admiration when seeing Weed’s sculptors in the Art Centre. There wasn’t any wasted materials. They had simple and concise forms that were expressed clearly. There were also no mistakes. Weed wasn’t afraid of failure so he tested various possibilities.

“The challenge is becoming a sculptor everyone respects.”

That was the reality that came to his mind when thinking of Weed. In the worst case situation, he needed to have confidence to rip people off! Dante chose not to become a sculptor. If he couldn’t be the best then he didn’t want to do it.

“I should get a different job that suits me.”

He also engaged in business by the square and learned basic ice magic. There was a time when the north was covered in the ice. There was a high percentage of ice magicians so the magic related to it developed a lot.

Dante read the books in Morata’s library to boost his knowledge and wisdom and admired the artworks. Morata’s knowledge, art and religion was a lot higher than other areas.

“You don’t have enough money. You can eat for free until you gather enough money.”

Dante turned to construction to earn money. Morata had a lot of construction of villas, houses and commercial facilities. Right now there was the construction of Research Tower and the Forge of Hestia. Beginners earned money by carrying stones and sand. Sculptors, painters, architects, magicians and blacksmiths all participated so the great work of architecture was carried out smoothly.

“I need a job.....”

After hunting in the area nearby, Dante returned to the village and read a book related to adventures. He still had a general profession despite passing level 47. Some fellow novices only obtained a good job when their level exceeded the 60s’. Then a Morata villager called Karen approached him

“Ajusshi, hello.”

Dante happily received the greeting.

“I have a question. Do you know a lot of things from reading books?”

“It’s nothing. Still, I might be able to answer your questions so please ask it.”

Karen had been a Morata villager since the days when they were turned into statues by the vampires. Currently the users’ interest in them was receding.

That’s because they could get larger quests and more rewards from those that immigrated to the north compared to the natives. But Dante didn’t care about that and liked conversing with all users and residents.

“Morata in the past... There was only winter in the north. A cold and hungry hunter told a story about seeing an ice sculpture.”

“Ah, wasn’t there something like that?”

Dante said with a laugh. This was a city that Weed established. So the story about the sculpture was right. Residents often told useless stories like these so to more users it was a waste of time.

“Those who were tired could take a rest when they arrived at the sculpture. Surprisingly they couldn’t feel the cold anymore. The hunters really valued the sculpture.”

“There is a special power concentrated in the sculpture.”

“I also think so. After all, we are Morata villagers so we are proud of sculptures. There was a giant ice dragon and…..”

Something flashed in Dante’s head.

‘Wait! This story isn’t just about Bingryong?’

Bingryong who followed Weed was already a celebrity and there was no one in the north who didn’t know about him. Users would after chase after Bingryong when he was hunting at Morata to see him use his Ice Breath on monsters. In particular, young children really liked Bingryong.

“There was the ice dragon but also a sculpture of a mysterious beauty.

“A beauty?”

“The hunters and travellers who saw the sculpture were suffering from fever so I don’t know if it is attractive but..... Can you find out a little more about the sculpture?”

Ddiring!

-Ice Beauty made for Morata!

The master sculptor Weed made a number of sculptures for Morata. One of the pieces was praised as a work of beauty!

Level of difficulty: D

Quest Restriction: Be acquaintances with the Morata villagers, miscellaneous knowledge, walking around many areas in the surroundings and acquisition of ice magic.

“I’ll look for it.”

-You have accepted the quest.

Dante willingly received the quest. He couldn’t help feeling excited about a sculpture of Weed’s that hadn’t been discovered yet.

“The quest restriction is a complicated. Aren’t I the only one who can do this quest? Ah, that can’t be.”

Dante used his remaining money on a map of the area that cost 14 silver. There were many novice painters so he could buy a drawn map for a cheap price. Dante looked at the map of the mountains that he spent his fortune on.

“Where is it? I heard that Weed made Bingryong in an icy storm.”

If he looked at Weed’s history behind his sculptors then he really admired him. There was a philosophy that those who lived a righteous path could cut costs. Sculptors were always spending money like water while struggling with deficits. Weed lived with strict moderation while making sculptures so he could make a profit. Dante looked at the map and muttered.

“It would be nice if I could get information about Serbian Witch’s curse that covered the north.”

In those days it was rare for users to come here because of the environment impact. The quests were low value and likely to fail. Then the painter Aiels who sold him the map asked.

“Are you looking for a specific place?”

“That’s right, I’d like to know the place where Weed-nim created

the Bingryong sculpture.”

“Not a lot of people know that. You should go to the top of Painter’s Hill. There is a painter there who draws Bingryong professionally.”

Morata had a separate place called Painter’s Hill. It was a place where 1 and then 2 painters gathered until a village of shabby shacks were created. People wanting to buy paintings also gathered so the place was called Painter’s Hill.

“I’ll draw the painting you want. You’ve just finished a dungeon hunt. I’ll draw your moment of glory.”

“Professional portraits! I can also draw pictures of you hunting monsters. Even if you are level 1, it is possible to have a picture of you hunting a dragon!”

“Paints for sale. The colour will slightly vary when it is used.”

Dante climbed up the hill and saw many pictures of Bingryong. Bingryong, the Wyverns, Yellowy, Golden Bird and Phoenix. They were popular subjects so there were main products containing them on Painter’s Hill. People who loved Weed’s adventures collected pieces about these creatures as well as the orc Karichwi. Tori, Van Hawk, Lich Shire and Lich Barkhan were also popular pieces. Users sightseeing in Morata often bought these types of souvenirs.

“The contents of Weed’s adventures are really valued. He’s gone to various places.”

There was a painting of lava erupting from the volcano in the Jigolaths. Some painters professionally drew scenes of Weed’s adventures. There was also paintings of several places in the Versailles Continent. Dante headed towards the area filled with Morata scenes.

Among the pictures was one where Morata was covered with snow. The mountains and hills were covered in ice and snow and looked completely different to now. He automatically felt cold as he saw the imagines until he observed one of Bingryong. A few days later, Dante climbed up the mountains with three miners he made friends with.

“It’s really here? It is too close to Morata.”

“It is true. There were many ice storms in those days so we have to dig to prevent ice and snow from covering the village.”

“Well, even if you don’t believe it… Let’s just try it.”

The miners had a lot of work these days. They dug iron, copper and jewels from the mines nearby as well as participated in the construction of a Grand Building. It was an important time but they accepted this request because of the intimacy Dante built with them.

“It might seem a bit ridiculous. But Weed sculpted his pieces in this area.”

“Soon he shall be the king.”

“He might be the king but he is ruling over a narrow land.”

A road was being built between Morata and Vargo Fortress that was wide enough for 4 carriages to pass at once. Morata had invested quite a lot into road construction. Once the road was completed then the merchant’s carriages could move more easily. This would reduce that rate that vitality was lost.

If a monster appeared then the carriage could easily escape so it was a big benefit to merchants. An expansion of trade would naturally occur and fresh products could be obtained. It was also possible to receive fame and money by completing quests to procure goods. In the north most roads were to connect long-distance cities. It was started quietly but that wouldn’t last long since it was Morata.

“Let’s dig quickly.”

The miners carefully dug at the ground. For a while they didn’t find anything.

“Phew, it was in vain like I expected. If we can’t find it here then I’ll have to give up the quest.”

Dante said in a bittersweet voice to the miners. Morata was quite wide and quickly growing so he couldn't go around searching different areas. Then one of the miners suddenly shouted.

"Wait a minute, there's something here!"

There was a piece of ice protruding from the surrounding stones and soil. It was hard to recognize the shape because it was melting. Dante quickly cast a spell.

"Cold Spray!"

It was a simple magic that caused a chill so it wasn't suitable for fighting monsters. However Dante considered it a good magic to know and learnt it.

"Please take it out."

"Understood. We'll have to dig by hand without using equipment since this might be a sculpture."

The miners removed the earth with the hand and started excavating a lump of ice. Unfortunately the hands and legs of the statue had been melted in the meantime.

"Well, I don't know what value this will have since it is melted."

"Didn't you want to find it to complete a quest?'

The miners continued digging until they saw the sculpture's face.

"A sculpture of a beautiful girl……"

"Kuuuk! This is worth the lifetime I spent solo. I feel comforted just looking at the sculpture's face."

Weed's work was worthy of being called an Ice Beauty. It was an ice sculpture so it should be cold but the sculpted figure caused a warm energy. But when the Serbian Witch's curse was broken, this portion of the land was pulled down. The Ice Beauty was buried in the ground along with snow and ice so it was preserved.

Bingryong also remembered the Ice Beauty that was born with him in the past, like a chicken and its eggs. It was fortunate that the face and body shape was left. This was the second sculpture Weed properly made after the statue of Freya at Baran village.

"This sculpture isn't just for us… Now other people can see it."

Dante decided on a class. He decided to didn't want to wait for a noble profession. Right now he could feel the excitement of a class.

"I will be an Adventurer. There is still a lot of mysteries and legends in the Versailles Continent that will take a lifetime to discover."

A warrior, magician or even merchants could comfortably go to a resort area to rest. On the other hand, there was a lot of work to do for the Adventurer's quests so it was a highly competitive field.

Discovery, excavation, searching and limited terrains were all areas difficult to find in another job.

Chapter 6: Special Reunion

Weed secretly descended to the Melbourne Mine's 4th floor. He was fully equipped in the assassin's costume so he wouldn't easily be suspected.

"As expected, there is no one here now."

There didn't seem to be anyone protecting the entrance of the 4th underground floor. They had completely moved into the Belkain's lair. They never imagined that the assassins upstairs would fail!

"As expected from my cheap tricks....."

Weed briefly became conceited. The other assassins would be searching the 3rd floor. In the end they would come down but he had earned some time.

"The 4th floor is also dangerous. There isn't anywhere to hide so I have to keep on moving."

He slowly walked towards the Belkain's Lair. Things had turned out like this so it was meaningless to rush. The assassins were hunting upstairs while nearby, Bardray and the Hermes Guild were hunting monsters. Either way he was surrounded by enemies so he had no choice but to improvise.

-Come down now.

Weed sent a whisper to Hegel.

-Thank you, Hyung.

Hegel, Alice and Dine chose to go a different way from Weed once they came down to the 4th floor. They decided to hide in the tunnels until the Black Lion Guild's reinforcements arrived. They couldn't help in a battle against the Hermes Guild so they could only wish him good luck.

"I'll only believe in you."

Hegel declared proudly. The monsters on the 4th floor were daunting opponents. The two women, Dine and Alice's hearts were also towards Weed.

"Sunbae-nim, no Oppa, be careful!"

"Oppa, I'll cheer for you in my mind."

His heart pounded with excitement as he entered the Belkain's lair where Bardray and the Hermes Guild were fighting.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

“Ah, unfortunately the video isn’t showing anymore. If it lasted a bit longer than I think the many viewers would be delighted.”

The user who communicated the video died so the broadcast of Belkain’s lair stopped and changed back to the studio.

“Bardray’s combat ability is really frightening. Have we ever had such a strong user on the continent?”

“The power and techniques that battered Belkain like a storm is truly outstanding. He is the warrior that can pull out all the potential of a sword! The sword techniques shown in the video is brilliant.”

While the host was commenting, there was a war going on behind the scenes. The broadcasters were trying to secure various contacts for the videos of Belkain’s lair. Bardray’s quest wasn’t the only significant thing.

“If the Black Lion Guild enters then a war will occur between them. I’ve heard reports that Guild Master Carlise is already there… If we broadcast it then it will be a ratings jackpot.”

“Contact the advertisers. Ask them to put advertisements during the late night dinner time and the reruns in the empty hours.”

The advertisers had to wait in line as well as pay a premium. Weed was in the Melbourne Mine. His rivalry with the Hermes Guild was well known so it was difficult for the broadcasting

officials to predict what would happen. The broadcast officials were hoping such a situation would occur in the Melbourne Mine.

The Master Quest competition between the Hermes Guild and Weed were the viewer's favourite material.

"What are the ratings right now?"

"It is at 12% and rising. It is the highest daily value in recent months."

"The bulletin boards?"

"It is paralyzed. The pages can't move quickly and the title can't even be read properly."

The bulletin board was filled with requests to quickly show the videos. The video had stopped at such a moment! CTS Media, KMC media, Digital Media and LK games were all annoyed. While they were trying to contact the general users who survived, an official reply came from the Hermes Guild.

They had accepted an offer to broadcast a video!

The Hermes Guild would provide the best audience ratings in return for some of the proceeds from the advertisements. It might seem a bit excessive but the broadcasting stations didn't dare refuse.

Other stations played regular programs so they couldn't obtain game scoops. Every station organized regular programs throughout the week related to Royal Road. But the regular programs could be put on hold or cancelled based on the audience ratings. Royal Road had many adventures that could occur at any time and stimulated excitement in people's chests during the live broadcasts.

"Today will require working overtime into the night. Deputy Park, have you ordered toast?"

"Yes! I called and the auntie is already making it."

"Order some kimbap as well."

"I'll also call the lunch bento place."

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Weed slipped into Belkain's lair. The Hermes Guild users were fighting like crazy. Various magic effects raged while weapons were raised with violent cries.

'It really is spectacular.'

This was the combat power of the Hermes Guild that was said to be the strongest on the continent. Even the Baby Belkains were at

least level 450. The demon species were usually strong. They had exceptional physical abilities and could even use black magic. There was also their resistance to magic, arrows and spirit magic.

The Baby Belkain and the wild dogs of hell frantically ran around killing the Hermes Guild members. Sometimes some users were unfortunate enough to be surrounded by monsters and killed. They wore great armour while high level priests used their recovery magic in a magnificent fight.

The Hermes Guild had brought their elites so not one user was lax. Their level, skills and equipment all played a role in the battle. Everybody here had a level that would raise a great fuss if they were in a city.

'As expected, the Hermes Guild is brilliant.'

Weed watched the battle from an inconspicuous corner. It was the skill of finding a quiet corner that he polished in middle school, high school and university! There were a few people here that were also assassins.

The assassins fought by aiming at the monster's back but it was a risk in a large scale battle like this. Those in a crisis situation could only watch. Weed looked similar to the assassins so they weren't interested in him.

'No. 19.'

‘Weed must’ve been stopped on the 3rd floor so he ran here.’

‘This will result in censure from the guild….. Right now there is a battle so I’ll leave it be.’

The Hermes Guild had a simple marker on the assassin clothes. The identification number would be written on the pants or coat. Weed used the Sewing skill in order to repair the clothes and create a disguise. It was impossible to consider him as anything other than a fellow assassin.

‘He’s fighting well.’

Weed primarily observed Bardray fighting.

He was fighting equally or even had a slight advantage with the Woomba Belkain. His body was fast and his finesse and strength were overwhelming the monster. Of course, he also received blessings from the shaman, priests and other attack support. But the Black Knight at the front was still considered the most dangerous one.

‘Fight to your heart’s content.’

Weed waited quietly for the battle to finish. Time passed without any special incidents and it seemed to be Bardray’s victory. Arrows, axes and spears were driven into the Woomba Belkain’s body. The body became a wreck as its health suddenly reduced.

-Kuooh. You won't be safe either!

Stones flew and a minor earthquake occurred from its death throes. The Hermes Guild had a lot of experience with boss class monsters so the priests had already formed a protective layer. After that the warriors backed off and long distance attacks were used until the Woomba Belkain collapsed.

The Baby Belkains and wild dogs of hell were completely wiped out by the Royal Guards and the battle group. The knights drove them into a corner while the magicians used mass destruction magic on the group. The Necromancer Krobidyun also systematically raised his power by calling more undead.

'Undead……'

Weed had a close relationship with them so he wasn't disturbed. In fact some zombies even seemed cute if he looked at it for a long time! He couldn't help admiring the Hermes Guild's Necromancer summoning Doom Knights.

'Summoning so many undead would consume enormous amounts of mana. His equipment is also excellent.'

Weed felt a stab of jealousy whenever he saw a user with a higher level than him. His relationship with the Hermes Guild might be hostile but he still admired them. They had been together for a long time so they knew their roles in catching the monster.

The strategies to fight in a group in Weed's head were implemented at quite a high standard here. The Hermes Guild optimized every aspect, including power and loyalty.

'If I was in command then I would quickly take care of the boss monster before sweeping through the dungeon.'

There were many boss level creatures in the Versailles Continent that hadn't been caught yet. There were monsters that dominated an area as well as legendary evil monsters. Elves, Fairies, spirit monsters, their difficulty was much higher. In Jigolaths and beyond Vargo Fortress there were bosses that transcending imagination. There were those like Kubichya the Chaos Warrior who had a great ambition to rule.

Such creatures would also hunt to raise their level and gain rare items. Weed had no interest in users that were a little stronger than him. He just wanted to challenge himself and hunt every type of monster. Yet in reality he was a Sculptor!

"It is almost going to fall!"

"Be strong until the end. Archer unit, don't save your arrows and don't miss. Magicians prepare to deal the final blow."

Bardray and the Royal Guards moved without hesitation. They had brought weapons suitable to hunt a boss monster. They systematically hunted the Woomba Belkain.

‘My body is itching.’

Weed desperately wanted to barge into the battle. But if he moved then his plan of hiding in a quiet corner and not attract attention would fail.

-Kkueeeeeee!

The Woomba Belkain gave its dying shriek. The Hermes Guild had sacrificed 35 people from the Royal Guards and battle company. A boss class monster had more resistance as it approached its end. Its attacks were focused on Bardray so the other warriors threw their bodies.

“Kuwawawak!”

The warriors shouted in order to attract the Woomba Belkain’s attention. The Hermes Guild thoroughly defended Bardray through the crisis. The commander was the pillar that supported the Hermes Guild. The Woomba Belkain howled as it was wounded by Bardray.

-The Woomba Belkain in the Melbourne Mine has entered its eternal rest.

“Success!”

“The Hermes Guild has done it again!”

“The Woomba Belkain. With this we’ve accomplished another myth. We are the strongest on this continent!”

The Royal Guards and battle group raised their weapons and cried out. Weed watched the Hermes Guild with envious eyes. They were so happy about causing another legend.

‘They played a firm part.’

Hunting boss monsters allowed them to obtain difficult items as well as increase their fame and stats. That’s why every guild periodically hunted monsters in the dungeons. Boss class monsters were fairly limited and were quite dangerous. But if they thought of the sweet fruit of victory than they would have no choice but to grab their swords and depart.

Bardray picked up the equipment that the Woomba Belkain dropped. Many viewers were probably seeing this through the live broadcast!

‘They can even get a transit fee.’

Weed counted the number of Hermes Guild users still alive. The number of Royal Guards and battle company still alive were 160 people. They were sitting down to rest as well as maintaining their weapons.

‘Let’s just settle down and watch. I’ll just the moment they’re

fighting against the Black Lion Guild to escape.'

The cave that the Woomba Belkain and the Baby Belkains hadn't been explored yet. The Hermes Guild would probably be able to obtain a treasure chest there. Weed didn't think that he could obtain anything. In this world, guys like that wouldn't leave anything behind. Among there were people with the Adventurer class who would clean everything out.

Weed was watching with a pain in his stomach when the movement of the Hermes Guild subtly changed. Users who had been relaxing got up one by one and headed towards the entrance. Weed's nerves became sensitive. The Hermes Guild blocked the entrance and were then gradually approaching him.

'Was I discovered? Indeed... By now they should've finished searching the 3rd floor and might've come downstairs.'

However it wasn't definite that he was discovered. He had worn the assassin costume obtained from the ones he fought on the 3rd floor and sneaked onto the 4th floor. Weed didn't change his attitude and just stood there calmly. Only his eyes were rolling around while calculating ways to escape.

Then Bardray who had been resting after defeating the Woomba Belkain walked towards him. Bardray spoke first.

"How are you?"

“……”

Weed’s mouth slightly opened. It was difficult to answer but he couldn’t pretend not to understand. Bardray would discover he was camouflaged as an assassin. But the movements of the Hermes Guild seemed to suggest he was already discovered.

“I knew you had escaped from your pursuers but I didn’t expect to meet you here.”

“……”

Weed was definitely discovered. He didn’t know how to react.

“How did you know?”

“I received word that the assassins searching upstairs couldn’t find Weed. And you’re not a murderer.”

The assassins had slaughtered the users when they entered the Melbourne Mine. So most of the users’ names had the murderer status. Weed might look the part but there was no way to camouflage the murderer state.

‘Of all things… He also noticed pretty fast.’

Weed was in a difficult situation. Normally it wouldn’t be that bad even if it was a great power like Bardray and the Hermes Guild

‘I really have no luck.’

Weed couldn’t deal with them in a place like this! The archers and magicians were ready for battle while the armoured knights were narrowing the distance. The earlier scene where the Woomba Belkain received a concentrated attack crossed his mind. Bardray also hadn’t put his sword into his scabbard yet.

‘They’re almost fine after the hunt because of the treatment from the priests.’

Bardray said arrogantly.

“Anyone who rebels against the Hermes Guild will die. Weed, today is the day you’re going to be trampled.”

He was qualified to be the strongest person on the Versailles Continent. If the opponent was anyone else then Weed would either fight or reconcile peacefully. But there was no way to escape from the dragon’s claw or bite. If he had to die anyway then he chose to die fighting.

“This will be a fun day.”

Weed slowly took off the clothes of an assassin. The equipment didn’t match him and it was also low level so it wouldn’t be good in a fight. He wore the Talrock’s Armour and other equipment while the Hermes Guild watched.

‘They have no choice but to watch.’

Bardray and the other users had already changed their armour and weapons. It made no difference to the power of the Hermes Guild here. The archers and magicians could easily take care of Weed with their ranged attacks. They were some of the highest ranking users on the Versailles Continent!

This was basically saying that Bardray agreed to fight the opponent alone. He had received the blessings of the best shamans and priests on the continent so his health and mana were already recovered. The effect of blessings, even when it was low levelled meant the situation wouldn’t ever be fair.

Bardray thought he couldn’t defeat Weed unless he as in the best state. Bardray would gain great honour from Weed’s death and he would gain a lead in the competition to complete the Master Quest!

Weed grasped the Daemon Sword and took deep, short breaths.

‘I need to cause chaos and scatter the enemy.’

Even if he couldn’t prevail against the power of the Hermes Guild, he had no intention of just dying. Weed was about to use Wind Sprint when the hiding place behind Belkain shook.

Kwarururururung!

It became difficult to keep his foot steady on the shaking ground. And a monster appeared!

-My dead wife here……! You humans dare commit such a reckless thing.

The body was even larger than the Woomba Belkain. He had intimidating horns and the body was covered in dark red hair. In addition, the eyes and mouth showed its vicious natured. It was the Woomba Belkain's husband, the Red Belkain!

"W-what the. There is still one left."

"This guy isn't ordinary."

The Hermes Guild moved quickly. The troops that had surrounded Weed prepared for battle with the Red Belkain. The Necromancer Krobidyun used magic to confirm the monster's information.

"Blooming health, show me everything. View Life Force!"

Ddiring!

-Red Belkain

A devil that personally dragged himself out of hell. The husband of the Woomba Belkain, he rules the Haineph Mountains.

-He doesn’t take damage from steel weapons.

-Very high magic resistance.

-Not affected by black magic.

-All spirits summoned below intermediate level will be sealed.

Health: 100%

Mana: 100%

“T-this.....”

Krobidyun’s complexion became dark. Bardray’s quest was to hunt the boss monster of the Haineph Mountain region. Judging by the description, he was the real monster. He was at least a minimum of level 620 and judging by the appearance, stronger than the Woomba Belkain.

The most challenging thing was that steel weapons wouldn’t do any damage to him.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Carlise and the soldiers from the Black Lion Guild arrived at

Treipeak's teleport gate.

"We have to go as quickly as possible."

The rode their prepared horses from the fortress to the Melbourne Mine. Dust was raised in the mountain area as hundreds of horses sprinted. The Hermes Guild had placed intelligence agents in good positions to observe the mountain area so they reported the situation in real time.

-They're currently at Treipeak, the Black Lion Guild has arrived faster than expected.

-Guild Master Carlise is accompanied by a large number of members.

-They passed point 3 without any hesitation and 20 magicians were visible.

The Hermes Guild also left rangers and archers to ambush them in the forest.

"Multiple Shot!"

Arrows poured down on the moving Black Lion Guild.

"Surprise attack. Just go through without paying attention to it!"

The warriors struck the arrows with their swords. They bombarded the rangers' hiding spot with magic attacks but ran through without confirming the result!

They quickly arrived at the entrance to the Melbourne Mine. All the attempts from the Hermes Guild to contain them were ignored. The Black Lion Guild members were still gathering at Treipeak so they were assigned as the rear-guard unit.

"Are we really going to fight? It will be irreversible once we enter the Melbourne Mine."

A magician called Rondal asked Carlise.

Rondal was one of the founders of the Black Lion Guild. Their hunting party became famous as they rode through the Tullen Kingdom until Carlise, Rondal and a few other members formed the Black Lion Guild.

"The Hermes Guild was the one who broke up the United Supremacy Alliance first." They have to pay the price for that."

Carlise had decided to fight. Bardray and the Hermes Guild had invaded the Tullen Kingdom so his pride couldn't let them get away with it. The military forces at Treipeak were also moving to this area. They restored peace and order to the vicinity of the mine as well as taking care of the remnants of the Hermes Guild.

"Enter."

The high defense warriors and paladins of the Black Lion Guild entered the Melbourne Mine.

Chapter 7: Inferior Duel

Weed moved at the same time as the Red Belkain attacking the battle group.

‘I’m alone so it is too disadvantageous.’

The entrance of the lair was being blocked by the Hermes Guild.

‘If so.’

Weed decided to believe in the intelligence of a monster.

“Those are the guys. They attacked your wife!”

He immediately ran to the Red Belkain’s side and attacked the knights of the Hermes Guild. It was a difficult tactic to choose but he had no choice if he wanted to live!

“Heriam Fencing!”

“This is.....”

The Hermes Guild members were astonished A boss class monster appeared and now he was fighting on the side of that monster! His actions were ridiculous.

-Burial Ground!

The Red Belkain sank to his knees on the ground and used a wide area skill. Those wearing thick armour had their agility reduced and were buried in the ground. Weed was close to the Red Belkain but he wasn't affected. This was the amazing intelligence of a boss class monster!

'I will fight this little guy after killing them.'

Weed also had similar thoughts.

'If I survive here then can I kill him and collect his items?'

The two of them attacked without hesitation. The Red Belkain ran and thrust his shoulders, making a warrior's body bounce back. The defense of the shield and armour meant the warrior didn't die but Weed attacked again. He used Wind Sprint from next to the Red Belkain to move at a speed that was difficult to follow and attacked the warrior.

"Strong Shield!"

The warrior decided to withstand it. Weed's damage might be great but a warrior with high defense and the priest's healing wouldn't be easily killed.

Meanwhile the Red Belkain was dashing around and using attack skills on the users. A boss class monster recklessly used wide area skills.

-You have heard Belkain's cry.

Fighting Spirit has decreased.

Morale has decreased.

The probability of a skill succeeding has decrease and mana is consumed faster.

The Red Belkain's Phantom has appeared. Any attacks will damage it instead.

Arrows and magic furiously attacked the Red Belkain. The Hermes Guild had changed to an active offense. If the Woomba Belkain and Red Belkain appeared at the same time then they would've received more damage. But each one was hunted separately so the battle became much easier. The advantage of a large scale hunt was that each class could play a role in restraining the boss monster.

'The Red Belkain needs more strength. Right now he is my ally.'

Weed used Wind Sprint to chase the melee classes.

‘If more time passes then the Red Belkain will become easier to hunt.’

Even if dozens of Hermes Guild users died, their damage still accumulated on the Red Belkain. Krobidyun was already summoning a doom knight to attack the Red Belkain. Other users would find it hard to judge because of the danger but Weed wasn’t scared of the undead.

Huge explosions and attack skills ran rampant in the dungeon! In the midst of this hectic scene, the Hermes Guild was focusing all their attacks on the Red Belkain. They were experienced in hunting boss class monsters so even minor attacks hit the Red Belkain’s leather and slightly reduced his health. That damage would accumulate and he would eventually collapse.

The Red Belkain had the largest power but the close combat users received the priests’ help and persistently held on. Warriors at the forefront of the battle held up their shields and took the attacks head on. Weed had to shake this balance of power.

“Radiant Sword!”

Birds of light flew from Weed’s sword and struck the warrior from behind. This sword skill consumed mana but he wasn’t in a position to worry about that. The Red Belkain was suffering from huge attacks! The warrior’s health was reduced from Radian Sword.

-You have killed the warrior Wabulla.

-Experience has been acquired.

-Fame has increased by 169.

-The Knight Burgulleo has been killed.

-Your level has risen.

-Fame has increased by 369.

-Due to the cowardly act of targeting the back during a battle, the Honour stat will decrease by 1.

A master of turning over the situation! Weed was also level 410. The Hermes users' level started in the early 400s and some users were beyond level 430. He gained a lot of experience from putting these users away. Usually it was difficult to meet so many high level users in common dungeons.

"Kill him! The damage is greater because of him!"

The cry was heard and the long range attack unit started aiming at Weed with arrows and magic. If that much power hit his body then it would be impossible to live! The archers and magicians aimed their tremendous firepower from the Red Belkain to Weed. Weed kicked the ground and ran from side to side as he kept on changing directions.

Kwang! Kwa kwa kwang!

Pusyu syu syu syuk!

Every place he passed had arrows, ice chunks and flames narrowly land on either side of him. The arrows chased behind him. The Hermes Guild's extravagant long-range firepower was aimed at Weed. Weed's health dripped out as the arrows grazed him. He moved suddenly and was able to avoid being damaged by every arrow thanks to his evasive measures. However Weed still lost 20% of his health in an instant.

"This degree isn't enough!"

Weed went in front of the Red Belkain. The long ranged attacks then stopped as they worried about hitting the warriors and knights. The little bit of damage he received was nothing compared to the power of the Hermes Guild. There was no way to escape this dungeon anyway and it wasn't an exaggeration to say that the Red Belkain was rampaging wildly.

"Radiant Sword!"

Weed used Radiant Sword while the priests prepared shields and health recovery spells. The Hermes Guild's iron wall was to such a degree that anyone would feel despair.

This was from the perspective of the battle group and the Royal

Guards. Usually they were at a standard where monsters could only do minor harm to them. That's because they prepared the best equipment and manpower before they went. That's why they could endure it when the Red Belkain appeared after the Woomba Belkain. But Weed's interruptions made it much more difficult.

They were worried that his cunning would make the battle more hectic! The warriors whose health fell into a dangerous state sighed with relief as they managed to interrupt the Red Belkain's attacks.

"I barely lived."

"I almost fell into a critical condition. Please treat me quickly!"

The priests' mana wasn't infinite so they couldn't use healing magic continuously. Weed's Radiant Sword exploded during that short moment of carelessness! Weed used a powerful attack skill so there were almost no players who could escape unscathed.

"Calling Death Knight Van Hawk, Calling the Vampire Lord Torido!"

"You called Master."

The Red Belkain fired sharp needles from his skin as Weed's subordinates were summoned. Van Hawk grasped his sword and tried to attack the Red Belkain as soon as he appeared.

“I’ll fight with this guy.”

“Not this guy.”

“Master, what should we do then?”

“Those humans and the others. Along with the barbarians…… And that big monster is on our side.”

His subordinates quickly understood that the Hermes Guild were the enemy without the need for a long explanation.

“As expected from Master……”

“I thought it would be like this.”

Van Hawk and Torido were easily convinced by Weed so they commenced the fight against the Hermes Guild. Whether it was a good or bad command, they just believed in Weed’s instructions.

Despite that, Weed’s complexion didn’t brighten. Not a lot of people had died from the Hermes Guild despite Van Hawk and Torido being summoned.

There were the warriors, priests and ranged attack troops. It would be impossible to change the military situation if he stayed faithful to this method. The melee users also changed their battle formation and tactics when dealing with the Red Belkain. Weed

needed to try more active and colourful attacks.

But to be able to steadily block a strong monster deserved praise. Long distance classes like archers, magicians and shamans were good at pouring out firepower. The effect of the monster was nullified by long range attacks.

Weed had previously seen a video of the guild hunting a dragon. The Hermes Guild was filled with high power individuals faithful to the basics. He had never seen such a massive, stable hunt. There were also 30 Royal Guards in the background that hadn't come out yet. They stayed back in order to defend the archers and magicians from the boss monster.

'The Hermes Guild is certainly worthy of being called the strongest power on the continent. They can hunt monsters effectively even when being disturbed.'

Bardray walked over to Weed with some knights. He hadn't participated in the Red Belkain hunt. Most of the damage had been done by the battle company and the Royal Guards. The Necromancer Krobidyun only increased the number of undead for the hunt. So Bardray decided to do what he wanted on the battlefield.

"Resistance is futile. But as a minimal courtesy, I will give you the opportunity to fight me alone."

Weed had no intention of fighting Bardray. He had seen Bardray's destructive power and swordplay when fighting the

Woomba Belkain. The level difference was quite obvious so it would be difficult to deal with him. It was inevitable that he would be lacking in power and die!

Weed's Heriam Fencing wasn't suitable for fighting against a strong soldier. It was a series of consecutive attacks aimed at any gaps! The skill took advantage of any holes in the enemy's defense.

Moonlight Sculpting Blade might be gorgeous and beautify but it wasn't enough in a 1 on 1 battle. There was also the Emperor's Triple, Back Stab, Sword Break, Sword Dance and Sword Kaiser. But even if Triple or Sword Dance succeeded a few times, it wouldn't deal that much damage to a knight. Sword Kaiser was a very powerful skill but the level difference and equipment meant there was no guarantee the opponent would die. In addition, it would consume almost all his mana.

The only sword technique Weed had left was Radiant Sword. It was very convenient so he used it a lot in battle. But the skill proficiency compared to the mana consumption meant it was largely useless now.

It was okay when dealing with other users but it wasn't enough for Bardray. He needed to take advantage of the terrain of the Belkain's lair. When he took into account Bardray's support army, Weed was inferior in all aspects.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

"If it is inevitable then I'll have to fight."

Weed checked the Daemon Sword with his eyes. He had been using this sword for a few battles. If the durability was reduced than maximum damage couldn't be exerted and the accuracy would become poor.

'If only I could use repair, Sword Grinding or even Armour Polishing……'

They wouldn't give him time for that. The fight wouldn't be easy even with the Red Belkain still alive.

"I'm going to start. If you want to fight than follow me."

Weed ran next to the Red Belkain.

"He's moving. Get ready to fire!"

The archers and magicians tried to respond. But the Royal Guards used their jurisdiction to stop them.

"Weed is Bardray's. Don't touch him and focus on the monster!"

"Understood."

The ranged troops didn't attack Weed. Weed's movement speed was fast enough to confuse Bardray.

“He really is an irritating guy.”

Bardray shook his head as he spoke. Then a magician summoned his horse, Rindullin!

It was a horse with the best blood handed down from the Royal Family of the Haven Kingdom. It possessed elegant white hair that was beautiful like a jewel and was worth more than a greatsword. It was a horse with wise intelligence and good luck!

He also held the legendary Lightning Spear that was an item he obtained from the Black Knight Master quest.

“Let’s go!”

Bardray pursued him on horseback. Weed, Van Hawk and Torido ran across the confusing battlefield the Red Belkain created. And Bardray willingly followed.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

“To the rescue!”

“It isn’t a problem if we die. If a friend is in danger then of course we have to go rescue him.”

Pale, Irene strongly argued to Yurin. Weed had fallen into the

worse danger because of the Hermes Guild so they couldn't just sit back and not fight. Even if they were just eggs being smashed against rocks, they still decided to go to the Melbourne Mine.

"Yurin, please send me there. I'll risk my life to rescue him."

Zephyr also didn't miss this moment to gain Yurin's heart.

Previously he had gone to play at Yurin's house. He came to her house to fix some home electronics but he received a formal invitation to lunch as a friend. He wanted to see many sides to Lee Hye-yeon as she prepared rice for him.

'This is a chance for a date……'

Choi Ji-hoon felt like this was a time to become closer to her. So he had paid more attention to his attire than usual and also sprayed perfume.

'It will be nice if we can carry on a dialogue over sweet rice. If we're alone than the intensity of the conversation will increase. If this is a success than maybe……'

He even brought a ring as a gift when he went to Lee Hye-yeon's house. A wolf with a lot of experience was visiting. And at a time when Lee Hyun wasn't there!

"The house's ceiling is a bit lacking. Oppa is busy these days… Can I entrust it to you instead?"

“Please leave it to me.”

He had to fix the sink in a luxury shirt. In return Lee Hye-yeon gave him delicious soybean soup. The atmosphere was completely different from the food he normally ate like steak.

‘I will aim for my chance after eating the food.’

A chance for love could pop up at any time. He was eating fermented soybeans but Choi Ji-hoon’s nature as a player was too durable. He was silent for a while.

“Is there anything to drink?”

Choi Ji-hoon had to drink something in order to get rid of the soybean smell.

“There is cinnamon tea.”

“That.....”

“You don’t like that drink?”

“It is a good drink.”

They watched television while drinking cinnamon tea.

‘This atmosphere is difficult. The sweet moments……’

Choi Ji-hoon was proud of his ability to talk to women. He was just thinking that when Lee Hye-yeon stood up from her seat.

“I’ll bring some snacks.”

“Oh, thank you.”

Eating snacks would ensure a better flow of conversation than watching television.

Yurin brought out kudzu roots!

“What is this?”

“Snacks. Oppa dug up a lot of them.”

They watched television while chewing on the bitter kudzu roots.

“Isn’t there any coffee?”

“I have some Heotgae Tree Juice if you want to drink it?”

“Ah, no. It’s okay.”

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Weed’s spine was cold.

‘Left side.’

He changed directions and plunged to the right. A sword descended on the spot where he was! He freely attacked and defended with his sword as he ran.

-You are inside the sword’s attack radius.

Avoidance has been applied.

You haven’t received a serious injury but your health has reduced by 4,324.

The skill had a wide radius so his health has suffered a major blow from just being in the area. Of course, he was fighting in the area where the Red Belkain was so they both naturally got injured.

“Healing Hands!”

The priests urgently used healing on Bardray. Bardray continue chasing after him on Rindullin. The horse didn’t miss its target despite the chaotic battlefield.

Kwarurung!

A colossal explosion occurred every time he thrust the Lightning Spear. Weed moved between the Red Belkain and the users he was fighting so Bardray ended up dealing damage to the Hermes Guild instead. The Red Belkain was also cooperating so it helped Weed play an active role. Bardray just ignored the Red Belkain as he rode past.

“Wind Sprint!”

Weed used his maximum speed and ran up the wall towards the ceiling. The eyes of the watching Hermes Guild users widened.

“What amazing speed. How can he run so fast?”

“I wouldn’t be able to keep up if he runs like that in the field.”

It was to the extent that Bardray couldn’t chase him on Rindullin. He ran between users and monsters as well as jumped up complex obstacles.

“Radiant Sword!”

Weed attacked from a distance but the blade of light passed Bardray to hit another warrior. Bardray was insensitive to the damage dealt to his guild. He didn’t pay attention no matter how

many people from the Hermes Guild died.

The Red Belkain stomped the ground with his strong hind legs.

-Earth's Wrath!

A massive shock wave spread in all directions at once. Weed's excellent agility and being in a place that wasn't affected beforehand meant he barely received any damage. The Hermes Guild continued using melee skills in order to keep the Red Belkain in check. But this time they were disturbed by Weed and the aftermath was colossal.

Belkain's lair shook like it was about to crumble from the tremendous skill.

"A warrior died. The monster has broken through the line of defense!"

"Knights stand in until another warrior arrives! Archer unit, use your powerful arrows to stop the Red Belkain from escaping the encirclement."

It was easy to see why formations and specific roles were important in hunting a boss monster. That's why Weed focused his attacks on the battle company instead of Bardray.

Weed and Bardray's game of tag!

Usually a knight riding a horse had more of an advantage but Weed utilized his agility and the terrain around him.

-Lightning has been summoned with the Lightning Spear.

Your health has reduced by 2,892 due to the electric shock.

Your movement speed has decreased for 9 seconds due to temporary paralysis.

‘The odds aren’t in my favour at all.’

If the situation continued like this then it would be impossible for Weed to survive. Bardray’s attack range was wide and the confined space meant he couldn’t completely avoid it. Apart from his rapidly declining health, his vitality and mana were also at its limit thanks to the use of Radiant Sword and Wind Sprint. Bardray quickly rode Rindullin up to him.

“Hero’s Sword!”

Bardray’s attacks strengthened even further as he used another sword technique.

‘As expected, it is impossible to get out of this. It might’ve been possible if the Black Lion Guild arrived early…..’

The Black Lion Guild was currently being detained on Melbourne Mine's 2nd floor by the traps and assassins. Weed looked at the Red Belkain and decided to give up on finding a way to live. There was hardly any ways left visible.

'Now it is a plan of desperation.'

"Van Hawk, Torido! Attack."

Weed ran to the place where Bardray was. Van Hawk and Torido who had been half watching the Red Belkain's battle followed his command. The two of them were ranked quite highly among the boss class!

Van Hawk flew towards Bardray with his sword while Torido called a Blade Storm. Weed then struck using Radiant Sword. The sum of the combo caused Bardray to suddenly experience a moment of great crisis. Then the priests gathered in a corner started singing.

-The hymn of the god Tyr has been used on the battlefield.

Bardray has temporarily gained an invincible state!

For a brief moment he will experience no loss of health and his power will double without any side effects.

"You can't resist the assault of the Black Knight!"

Bardray combined his power and Rindullin's speed as he charged.

"Tahaaaat!"

Van Hawk tried to block the horse with his sword.

Jjaeng kang!

Van Hawk's sword broke and he fell into a ghost state.

"Master, I'm sorry."

The Death Knight Van Hawk groaned with pain before he was recalled with a burst of grey smoke. The damage received from magic and arrows had accumulated then he received Bardray's attack directly. Weed watched it with regret.

'If only the sword didn't break……'

It was an equipment that he had handed to Van Hawk. Of course, the standard of the equipment was low compared to his level but it was broken in the fight against Bardray. Bardray also just rushed through Torido's Blade Storm. Tyr's Hymn was applied so he just ignored the attack.

"Heavy Blow of Satisfaction!"

The small birds made with Radiant Sword were destroyed. Bardray ran up on Rindullin and swept his sword from the bottom to the top.

“Sunset Sword!”

A flow of mana was shot out of the sword.

‘This is dangerous.’

Weed was stuck in one place because he used Radiant Sword. Bardray was combining his power with Rindullin’s acceleration so the destructive force would be huge if it hit him directly. The range of the mana flow was broad so Weed couldn’t find a place to avoid it. The skill was now being used against one person but it was originally used to slaughter an enormous number of people or to destroy castle walls.

“Close Eyes Tightly!”

Weed closed his eyes, took out the Ancient Shield and threw his body to the left. The Daemon Sword could also be used as a means of defense against the enemy’s skill. But the durability had fallen so he needed to rely on the shield to reduce the damage. However Bardray’s skill had reached him before he escaped.

-You have become Stunned from the huge impact.

There is a sharp decline in health!

Your high Concentration overcame the Stun.

There is a chance that your body may receive paralytic symptoms.

All skills aren’t available for 22 seconds.

The enemy has absorbed some of your mana.

2,795 mana absorbed.

Fighting Spirit has temporarily been decreased by 29%.

The Sword of Holy Power has been received.

You aren’t a monster or wicked person so no additional damage is received.

-You have received a large injury.

If you don’t heal it quickly than your resilience will permanently decrease by 2.

-The durability of the Ancient Shield has fallen.

The durability of Talrock’s Armour has fallen.

The connection to your chest has weakened.

Defense reduced by 17% until it is worn again.

Chapter 8: Armour Taken Away

Weed's health was only just over 40,000 at best. He had low health and resilience compared to his level but he overcame it with perseverance and his armour.

Bardray's attack was powerful enough that he lost 17,000 health. The Black Knight had high level equipment and various blessings placed on him so a frontal attack was extremely successful.

"Kuook."

Weed was thrown back and fell to the ground.

"Master!"

Torido rushed out to oppose Bardray. He could attack and defend but Torido couldn't fight in a one on one battle without getting injured. Fortunately Torido was in a good condition compared to Van Hawk because he could suck blood to recover.

'This method won't work.'

Weed touched his chest where his armour was crumpled. Bardray's level was definitely higher than his own. His attack skills were also superior. Aside from Radiant Sword, he didn't any useful skills to fight against Bardray with.

The thing that differentiated Weed from other users was his much higher stats. The stats stacked due to his sculptor skill, blacksmith skill and sewing skills so they were a big help.

Bardray raised his stats by clearing dungeons, hunting boss class monsters and completing difficult quests with the Hermes Guild.

If compared than their stats would be at an almost equal level.

Right now Weed needed a drastic measure. Disaster Nature Sculpting!

‘A volcanic eruption, earthquake, landslide, mine collapse or even filling it with water would be nice.’

But Disaster Nature Sculpting required an appropriate sculpture to use it. Even if Weed had a sculpture of a volcanic eruption then it was also likely that he would die as well. If the disaster was too big then it was highly likely that he would break his own rice bowl! If he caused a volcanic eruption then he couldn’t escape the cave so he would be caught up in it.

‘There’s also Summon Sculpture but I don’t want to use that.’

He could summon some sculptural lifeforms as reinforcement. But this place was too confined for Phoenix and Bingryong to play an active role. The wyverns were too weak so he couldn’t bring them. Goldman and Yellowy had struggled in the Jigolaths so he would feel sorry if they had to struggle on the brink of death again.

The King Hydra would but suitable but the Red Belkain was here so it might turn into a situation where they fought each other instead.

“I need to do this by myself.”

Weed decided to fight alone. In the worst case situation he would just lose a bit of experience, skill proficiency and an equipment.

“I have to gather myself and try again. Bardray, I can truly feel the power of the person called the strongest on the Versailles Continent.”

Weed had never met a rival before. He had a few exchanges with people from prestigious guilds on quests but he had always been stronger. Now the target he wanted to fight was Bardray! His life would fly away if he was defeated but for now he had courage. If a drop of soy sauce was buried with bean sprouts then it wouldn’t be afraid to sprout anywhere on the Versailles Continent.

Weed wound a bandage around his body at a fast pace. Torido’s health was rapidly falling as he duelled with Bardray. This was due to the holy damage received from the priests’ support.

“T-thirsty.”

He fought a lot harder when his health fell. Weed inwardly thought ‘Torido, I’m going now.’ He was thinking of landing a surprise blow on Bardray. The surprise attack wasn’t effective.

“Oheok!”

“Bardray-nim, danger!”

The Hermes Guild’s priests watching the battle noticed it seconds before he struck. The fight against the Red Belkain had become stable so many eyes were turned towards Bardray. The Red Belkain was losing health and vitality under the onslaught.

Weed ran to Bardray’s side.

“Seven Celestial Footsteps!”

It was a technique that could change the direction of each step! With Wind Sprint also activated, he moved so fast that afterimages could be seen.

“I’ve been waiting for you to come.”

Bardray blocked with his sword like he already knew about it. Weed knew that there was a limit to his attacks.

‘The performance of his armour is really amazing. I’ve barely done any damage to him.’

If a strong attack was about to be used then he needed to take advantage of the time required for Bardray to activate it. Weed

immediately turned sideways and continued his offensive.

“Sword Dance!”

Brandish, stab, slash!

The continuous swordsmanship made it difficult to even respond. He was looking for a gap in Bardray’s defense.

“This isn’t enough.”

Bardray said as he blocked the sword. Some attacks he missed while some he blocked brilliantly. Weed moved to the side and continued attacking. Although Bardray tried to take one or two steps backwards to counterattack but Weed just struck more harshly.

‘The differences between level and equipment is somewhat reduced in close combat. If it doesn’t take one or two hits then I will hit him a hundred thousand times!’

Weed’s speed was so quick that Bardray couldn’t stop everything.

-Your sword has been blocked by the defense.

You have hit the shoulder armour of your opponent!

An accurate attack has succeeded.

The armour has absorbed a lot of the sword's destructive power.

Vitality has been reduced by 149.

-Your sword has clashed with the other sword.

-Your sword has pierced the enemy's chest.

An accurate attack has succeeded.

A fatal blow!

The opponent is wearing an item that gives immunity to confusion and paralysis.

Health has been reduced by 617.

Weed's sword was incredibly fast. The attack speed was almost impossible to believe. Bardray blocked with his sword at an angle and aimed for a counterattack.

"Quite good."

But Bardray grasped the fact that Weed's offensive power was weaker after their swords clashed. Weed's movements might be

fast but Bardray didn't have to stop every attack. Bardray fought back and the battle between the two of them became even fiercer.

He remembered something Geomchi said when sparring.

-Look at your opponent. If you look straight at the opponent then you won't lose.

He looked at Bardray's eyes, shoulders and muscles hidden by the armour. The sound of swords hitting each other rang out through Belkain's lair like a musical instrument. Weed concentrated his nerves as he battled carefully.

Flames flew forcefully as the two swords clashed. The flames were like a tumultuous wave! Bardray didn't see a message window.

'It really is enough to make me nervous.'

Weed's level was definitely lower and Bardray was overwhelming in many aspects. The difference between the power and skill when handling a sword was obvious. However his continuous, aggressive attacks meant Bardray lost the initiative and was forced on the defense.

'It is good that I met him now. It might've been dangerous if I met him later.'

Weed would grow very quickly while continuing his adventures.

Bardray considered it fortunate that they encountered each other right now.

‘I will thoroughly defeat him. He will be unable to face me again.’

His level was high enough to bully people. He wanted to prove that the Black Knight had the ultimate power so Bardray’s sword dealt some serious damage. He estimated that they were trivial attacks and his armour absorbed most of the damage.

He just needed to defend his weak points and counterattack against Weed. Of course, if he used his wide area skills than this fight could end more easily.

“If this is the extent of your skills then it is time to die.”

Bardray strongly wielded his sword.

“Spatial Destruction!”

Spatial Destruction occurred in the entire radius around them! A colossal wind swept through the area.

“Kuuuk.”

“Treat us faster!”

The Hermes Guild members fighting the Red Belkain also received damage. The priests hurriedly used healing magic. Usually a boss monster hunt would get all the attention but the top priority was Bardray's battle with Weed.

Weed passed behind Bardray's back. Thanks to the 'Excellent Experience' skill and his agility, he was able to grasp the direction of the attack as soon as the skill was used. He was able to move quickly because of the rise in agility gained from Sculptural Destruction!

Until now he hadn't been that tense about the series of attacks. It might be difficult but he also felt that it was fun.

'My vitality won't hold……'

Weed's vitality stat had reached 423 points thanks to making sculptures and production skills. Wind Sprint and Seven Star Form meant he could quickly change directions. Unfortunately his speed decreased as his vitality fell. It would be difficult for Weed to continue fighting Bardray with low health and vitality.

Then the Hermes Guild magicians secretly gathered together and chanted a spell.

"The caught body will be held and can't move. Twilight Pressure!"

It was a magic to restrict movement!

Weed's magic resistance was decent but it failed to block the spell from a coalition of senior magicians. Breaking the binding would require a significant amount of time and magic items. In the meantime, Bardray turned towards him.

"The time has come for you to die."

Bardray's sword was covered with a pure white flame.

"Noble Sword. Saint Flame."

Weed tried to avoid it but his foot wouldn't move.

"This! My leg……"

He tried to stop him but it was meaningless. Weed tried to call Torido but he had changed into a bat and was too busy avoiding the arrows to come and help.

"Close Eyes Tightly!"

Weed covered his body with the Ancient Sword and struck a defense pose. Bardray's sword was swung. The warrior's sword struck Weed completely. It wouldn't be easy to catch Weed again if he missed so Bardray poured all his power into this attack.

-Your strength and vitality has decreased and you can't properly

defend.

A fatal blow!

-You have received a massive attack and died.

Additional damage is caused by the flames.

You don’t have the help from high rank healing magic or water spirits so your health will decrease by 475 every second..

Your waist protective piece has received a blow beyond its limits and has been destroyed.

-The effect of Seulroeo’s Wedding Ring isn’t applied due to the drastic drop in health.

-Your health has decreased and you have died.

The skill level of ‘Power to Reject Death’ is low. The skill isn’t activated thanks to the holy power entering your body.

It is impossible to log in for 24 hours. Your skill level and proficiency has declined due to your death.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Weed disappeared into a grey light after Bardray's attack.

"Hooray Bardray-nim!"

"He won! Bardray-nim is the strongest in the continent!"

The Hermes Guild members cheered at the historic victory. Congratulations poured over the guild chat.

Bardray had made his competitors kneel in many battles. But their chests trembled at the thought that millions of people would be watching it through the broadcasting stations.

"This armour."

Bardray picked up the Talrock's Armour that Weed had dropped. The size of the armour wasn't different from some of the other japtem dropped from the monsters in the Melbourne Mine.

'This armour isn't that good. He was wearing something like this to fight?'

The Talrock's Armour didn't even register in Bardray's eyes. He found the best items and wore legendary equipment so this armour was just disappointing to him.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The Black Lion Guild had dismantled all the traps and arrived on the 4th underground floor.

“Those guys should be in the dungeon. Let’s go.”

Carlise and the elite members of the Black Lion Guild moved. Hegel, Alice and Dine had already been discovered by the assassins and died!

When they arrived at the lair the Red Belkain was almost dead. The continuous attacks from Bardray, the Royal Guards and the battle company meant the momentum of the hunt was in their favour. Even the assassins helped by hitting the Red Belkain in the back.

The Red Belkain cried out as he continued dying. He would exert more power as his life decreased but the users were experienced in fighting boss monsters.

“Fire!”

The prepared arrows and magic were launched. The Red Belkain was interrupted and couldn’t concentrate on using his skills. There were also shamans in the battle company that helped in decreasing the monster’s attack, defense, vitality, strength and concentration.

-The Red Belkain in the Melbourne Mine has entered its eternal rest.

The hunt was a success! Bardray delivered the final blow and also monopolized the loot. A recording of the Black Knight's swordsmanship was obtained.

"The 12th stage of the Black Knight Quest has been fulfilled."

"Congratulations Commander-nim."

"There isn't much left in the future."

Carlise had brought 750 people from the Black Lion Guild. They came to reclaim their territory from the Hermes Guild running wild in the Melbourne Mine.

"Strike!"

The Black Lion Guild fired off magic attacks. The conflict between the core power of two giant guilds started.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The special KMC broadcast with Oh Joo-wan was in progress!

"Ah, look at the Black Lion Guild."

"Today is certainly an unforgettable day. The magician Puroyan is now using the large scale ice magic, Ice Storm."

“The ground has frozen so that will be a problem for the knights of the Hermes Guild.”

“This is still too premature to judge but from Oh Joo-wan ssi’s view, who do you think will win?”

“It’s really hard to know before the results come out. The Hermes Guild generally is much more powerful than other guilds and they have Bardray……”

“Are you saying the Hermes Guild will win?”

“Yes. I will give it to the Hermes Guild.”

Many broadcasters reporting on the battle between the two guilds predicted that the Hermes Guild would be superior.

The battle group was filled while outstanding users and the Royal Guards had a large number of users with their level unknown. They also weren’t busy hunting the Red Belkain anymore. There was no chance if Bardray and the Royal Guards came out.

“Ah! Now assassins have showed up behind the Black Lion Guild and are attacking. It is an ambush and they assassinated the priests first.”

Even if the host didn’t talk, the video looked incredibly violent.

The Hermes Guild sent a video and the Black Lion Guild also agreed to cooperate and send in their side. The location of the battle kept changing and the sight was enough to make someone's mouth drop open.

The elite of the high level guilds fought together in the midst of explosions, lights and noise. Meanwhile shamans and necromancers were summoning the undead and spirits.

The team were editing the video in real time and adding effects so they had no time to go to the restroom. The production team also talked about Weed's battle with Bardray while working.

"Weed died……"

"Oh, Weed the God of War is no match for Bardray."

Bardray's victory was also discussed on Royal Road's various bulletin boards.

Many people talked about Bardray's use of various blessings and fighting against the tired Weed, calling it a cowardly victory. A few people mentioned how Weed tried to use the Red Belkain to conquer the disadvantage of the battle.

The audience rating already wasn't a concern anymore. There was no doubt that today would have the highest ratings. It should've been a happy day from the position of the station but KMC Media who often reported on Weed's adventures was

disappointed.

CTS Media and LK Games were also talking more about Weed and Bardray's fight than the battle between the Hermes Guild and the Black Lion Guild.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Seo-yoon went to the beauty salon to do her makeup and hair. She also bought clothes at the department stores.

'I should cook a dish.'

She wanted to go to the mart in order to cheer up Lee Hyun.

Bardray and the Hermes Guild had defeated the Black Lion Guild. The Hermes Guild had elite members and were tactically superior compared to the hastily gathered Black Lion Guild. The priests, magicians and warriors all cooperated together after the Red Belkain was killed. On the other hand, the rushed Black Lion Guild couldn't cooperate properly so they couldn't demonstrate their full abilities.

Bardray and the Royal Guards. Bardray overwhelmingly won in a confrontation with the head of the Black Lion Guild but he was out of mana afterwards. In a perfect trap, 200 more reinforcements from the Hermes Guild had showed up on the 4th floor.

Pale, Irene, Surka, Hwaryeong, Romuna, Zephyr, Seechwi and

Seo-yoon belatedly arrived as the Hermes Guild were leaving the Melbourne Mine. Needless to say, they were killed by the wide range attacks from the archers and magicians with Bardray.

Seo-yoon could penetrate through the large number of attacks to kill 7 knights but she eventually died under the concentrated firepower. The Hermes Guild then strolled to a special teleport gate and disappeared.

Seo-yoon was more worried about Lee Hyun than dying in Royal Road. He had a high pride as the God of War only to be killed. In fact, it was difficult to win every time. She had failed many times when participating in quests or hunting monsters. But he had died and even lost armour so his heartache would be too big.

'I need to be beautiful and give him comfort.'

Seo-yoon headed to Lee Hyun's house with a shopping cart. Then she saw a neighbourhood grandmother dressed in shabby clothes and pushing a cart full of recyclables.

"I'll help you."

Seo-yoon took the handle from the grandmother. She wanted to see Lee Hyun but the cart looked heavy.

"Young Lady, you don't need to do something like this..... It is quite heavy so pushing isn't easy."

Syu syu syu syu syuk!

The cart steadily moved! Seo-yoon gently pushed the cart and said.

“Where are you going?”

“To my house to finish some work.”

“Then let me know where your house is. I’ll take you.”

“You don’t have to do that……”

“I want to.”

“It is pretty far Young Lady.”

“It’s okay. I am able to take you.”

If Seo-yoon told Lee Hyun about a good deed then he might feel less sad. She didn’t want to see Lee Hyun with a sad face. She felt the need to quickly go and soothe his pain so that he wouldn’t be sad. If he had only died then she wouldn’t worry so much but he had lost the Talrock’s Armour.

Seo-yoon guided the grandmother up the slope.

‘The place isn’t too far……’

When she climbed up the slope in Lee Hyun’s neighbourhood, there were narrow and shabby houses gathered together which was where the grandmother lived.

“By the way Young Lady.”

“Yes, Grandmother.”

“Are you heading towards the house where there is a pomegranate and fig tree in the courtyard?”

Lee Hyun had several fruit trees growing at his house. There were apples, pears, peaches, chestnuts and even oranges.

“How did you know?”

“I’ve seen you a few times.”

The grandmother pushed the cart with Seo-yoon while they climbed the slope.

“Are you dating the young man living in that house?”

“No.”

“Then why are you visiting his house?”

In the grandmother’s point of view, there was no need to say anything else since she kept on visiting his house.

Seo-yoon’s face turned red.

“I’m glad he seems to have met a good woman. It has eased my heart a little bit.”

“.....”

“That young man, he is very famous since our neighbourhood is filled with elderly people.”

“Huh?”

The fact that Lee Hyun was famous in his neighbourhood was new to Seo-yoon. She was worried that he might’ve done something wrong or committed extortion.

“That young man really lives a tenacious life. He tries to raise his younger sibling decently.....”

“Yes.”

“He delivered the milk and newspaper to everyone in the

neighbourhood. He even carried all the bags from the market despite the fact that I can't pay him. Another time he helped me while I was doing a trade at the market. He chased after some thieves that stole something when I wasn't looking and I really felt sorry looking at his distant form……"

"Ah….."

Seo-yoon was finding out how Lee Hyun lived in the past. He lived a hard life so he was diligent even now.

"That young man was able to later buy a house…. It turned out really well. Has it been 1 year and a half since then? I didn't want him to live like that. Sometimes his body was so sick yet he still conducted business. Even now he is still collecting scrap items in order to live."

Seo-yoon just listened to the grandmother's quiet words. The grandmother seemed to be choked up with emotion. She was getting good information about Lee Hyun so she couldn't say anything.

"Is it difficult for you to come around here? There are a lot of empty bottles and cans in that park."

The grandmother gave her valuable information about her life. She talked about Lee Hyun again as she looked at the distant mountains.

“Although he could receive various benefits from going to the government’s office, he still needed to raise a sibling.”

His grandmother was in a really difficult situation at that time. He didn’t know when the welfare benefits would come in but survived the winter thanks to support and advice.

“Last winter he placed an electric blanket and kimchi rice in my house at dawn. It wasn’t just me but every elderly person in the area received it. It would’ve cost quite a bit of money..... But there was an old man who saw him place it in the middle of the night.”

“He did.”

“It snowed quite a bit last time so there wasn’t too much work. But the young man still made boxed lunches with seaweed wraps and took it out of his house every day.”

“There is no reason to make it if people don’t eat it. If you like it then please take it. Because I made it just now.”

“Thank you. I don’t know how to pay you back.”

“The food would just go into the garbage bag anyway.”

Lee Hyun and his sister made a lot of food for half a month.

“And he also gave us some medicine. If he sees us become injured

then he won't leave without treating it... The hospital bills are quite high these days but it makes me feel warm whenever he tells me to be careful."

Tears gathered in Seo-yoon's eyes. She understood. Lee Hyun had experienced many pains in the past so he could understand the pain of other people.

"He even helped one grandmother to the hospital and paid for the bill when she was worried about it. There is no elderly person in this neighbourhood who hasn't received the help of that young man. He also bought books for children living without parents and helped them study. His good deeds....."

Seo-yoon headed to Lee Hyun's house after taking the grandmother home.

Bark bark bark!

The dog was barking in front of the strangely silent house.

'Don't tell me.....'

Seo-yoon felt her heart sink as she opened the gate. There were 7 different locks on the gate but fortunately she had all the keys in advance. She walked through the yard on trembling legs and stood before the front door. She dimly saw someone lying down in the living room.

‘No!’

Seo-yoon opened the front door and entered the living room. Lee Hyun was lying collapsed on the living room floor.

“Heu heu heu heu heuk.”

Her heart jumped like crazy as tears emerged. The makeup she did in the beauty salon became a mess because of her tears. Seo-yoon’s heart ached as something she never considered happened.

A door that had been closed in her mind broke open.

‘When I was a child… It is the same.’

When Seo-yoon was a very young child, she had seen something she really didn’t want to see.It caused a huge wound in her mind until she met Lee Hyun.....

The person who helped Seo-yoon was lying there collapsed.

“I-I.....”

She staggered as her legs seemed to lose all power. She was scared to even approach Lee Hyun. Something precious had been taken from her while she was pushing the cart.

“W-why did he do this? Why……?”

Seo-yoon whimpered. A huge wave of sorrow rose inside her and she thought that she might never be able to smile again.

Then Lee Hyun started moving and twitching. He was still alive so the idea of calling an ambulance passed quickly through her head…..

“Keeeeeeok!”

A long yawn came out.

She suddenly saw traces of kimchi fried rice and jjapaghetti (black bean instant noodles) on the table in the living room.

Lee Hyun touched his stomach.

“I carelessly slept after I ate too much and now I need to go to the bathroom.”

Seo-yoon stared at him with tear stained eyes mixed with a violent anger.

Chapter 9: Second Secret Sword Technique

On the road to Korea University.

Lee Hyun was disgruntled.

“I really can’t understand the heart of a woman. If a formula to understand a woman’s heart was published in a global journal then it would be the best discovery.”

Yesterday Seo-yoon had went to the kitchen without saying a word. She prepared the ingredients and had cooked a dish with a light smile. Then she committed an atrocity by forcefully feeding Lee Hyun curry.

Seo-yoon still looked beautiful despite her tear streaked voice and cruelly sat next to him. Lee Hyun was reminded of his bad relationship with her in the past.

Then Seo-yoon left and Jung Hyo-rin arrived in the evening. She arrived late because she couldn’t cancel her schedule and wanted to go out to a night club as a distraction. Alcohol wasn’t good for his the health and it cost money so it wasn’t his first choice.

However Lee Hye-yeon wanted to go so the three of them went.

It was full of many lights and loud music. He found a quiet room to drink alcohol. Lee Hyun had needed to make a booking for this club. It was the place where Choi Ji-hoon often got the number of girls after a short conversation so he recommended it to Lee Hyun.

“Excuse me.”

The women who followed the waiter left after seeing Lee Hye-yeon and Jung Hyo-rin’s faces.

He wandered about what happened but Lee Hyun just blamed it on his plain face. In the end the three of them drank alcohol and exchanged stories. Lee Hye-yeon and Jung Hyo-rin even sang to brighten up the atmosphere.

So yesterday’s evening disappeared in vain!

Now Lee Hyun was going to school early in the morning. The freshman welcoming party, the MT, the festival and now summer vacation had passed.

“The tuition fee is flying away really quickly. I can see why university professor is listed as a good job.”

Middle school and high school studies who studied a lot really had foresight.

“A cosy job without the possibility of becoming unemployed should be chosen.”

Lee Hyun said as he sat down on the bus. He finally arrived at the school after half-dozing off. The surrounding students stared at Lee Hyun and whispered.

“Isn’t that him?”

“Who?”

“On the school’s website... A member of the virtual reality department.”

“That person?”

“He looks like the student in the MT photos.”

The university students showed an intensive interest in Lee Hyun. Older women and adults also looked at him as he walked to his destination.

“He’s already arrived.”

Lee Hyun went through the front entrance of Korea University. Students kept on pointing towards him as he walked towards the classroom.

“Virtual reality department.....”

“Yes.”

“Can I receive his signature?”

People made a lot of noise and they paid a lot of attention to Lee Hyun. He usually lived an unobtrusive life so the pointing wasn’t usual. Then students suddenly started stampeding as Lee Hyun arrived at the classroom.

“Sunbae-nim!”

“Hello!”

“Yesterday’s battle was really cool. Although it is a little regretful that your myth of invincibility broke.”

“To be so close to Weed the God of War….. Sunbae-nim, can you give any advice about Royal Road?”

“Please recommend a hunting ground for a level 234 ranger.”

The school boards had revealed the identity of Weed the God of War. Choi Sang-jun and his two juniors told their friends and it quickly spread through the entire school and also on their bulletin boards. The prominent Weed from Royal Road went to their school so he had the popularity of a celebrity!

“Sunbae-nim, I really respect you.”

“Can’t you talk a little bit about the battle?”

“How did you obtain the Death Knight?”

Students who hadn’t always been friendly flocked around Lee Hyun. Students from other departments also came to ask Lee Hyun questions. His popularity was enough for a celebrity to run away.

‘This is why I can’t sleep.’

Lee Hyun wasn’t friendly to his fans.

“The secret to being good at fighting in Royal Road…..”

“What is it?”

“Gulp!”

“I don’t know. I just hunt.”

Lee Hyun ignored them and went to his seat. His desk was still uncomfortable as people swarmed around it.

‘Bardray……’

The people who watched on television wouldn't know any better. In the battle between Lee Hyun and Bardray, Lee Hyun had definitely attacked more fiercely.

'I couldn't win.'

Lee Hyun really felt like there was a drastic gap between him and Bardray. Bardray had formidable defense and attack. It was apparent that Bardray's combat skills were above his. The only area he overwhelmed Bardray in was speed but that was just temporary due to Sculptural Destruction.

'Bardray... I can fight to a certain extent in a melee match. If I only use skills that it will be impossible to win.'

If this had been a broad terrain then he would've died without being able to run away at all. Even if he hadn't been bound by the magicians, there would be no way for him to win if they fought a little longer.

'If only I had resurrected with the Power to Reject Death……'

The Royal Road related boards were also actively debating that point. Weed the God of War could resurrect to a more powerful form after dying. He was reborn as an undead and led other subordinates in a miracle like battle. If Weed had revived than there was a lot of expectation that he would've changed the situation.

Barkhan's full set. He had obtained the skull, robe, cloak, boots, necklace, ring and magic book. If he equipped Barkhan's full set then his power would be comparable to the Hermes Guild's to a certain extent.

'But it wouldn't have changed the situation completely.'

Lee Hyun exerted the largest strength when he becomes a Necromancer. A Lich could create a legion of undead but they were weak in the beginning and would need to be trained. It would be difficult to overcome the interference from Bardray and the Royal Guards to summon the undead.

'I don't want to.'

Lee Hyun didn't want to be defeated because he would lose skill proficiency, experience and drop items. There were a lot of people who still respected Weed as the God of War.

Even if he was defeated by Bardray, he was still the user with the best popularity in Royal Road. Everyone still liked Weed the God of War.

'I don't want to live like that.'

Lee Hyun wasn't satisfied with his strength. During his days playing Continent of Magic, he really had a nasty temper. He would step on others, kill anyone who attacked him and sweep

away anyone making noise.

The name God of War had a different weight in Royal Road. His true nature was kept unchanged.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

“Fighting until they’re sick. Then they will take a little more from someone else……”

The war between users was fun for Yoo Byung-jin to watch. The development of the Central Continent was high so war constantly broke out in it. There were many sieges in order to expand their power.

After the Hermes Guild occupied the Kallamore Kingdom, other guilds couldn’t make their headquarters there. The surrounding castles, cities and fortresses were eaten. A union tried to actively resist against them. The King had withdrawn like the Haven Kingdom and there were several places far from the guild’s reach where an army was gathered.

The Embinyu Church was also spreading like wildfire by gathering new followers through brainwashing and fear. From the viewpoint of a large guild, the confusion caused was a chance for them and it wasn’t possible to reserve hunting grounds so it wasn’t bad.

If the Embinyu Church occupied an area than urban development

would fly away but taking back the plundered riches could secure contributions and public sentiment.

Most of the huge guilds based their growth on aggressive invasion rather than managing domestic affairs.

“If the chaos continues getting out of hand than the Central Continent will go through the Dark Ages.”

Yoo Byung-jin knew information about Royal Road that wasn’t available to broadcasting stations.

The Embinyu Church got its energy from public sentiment. Their rapid spread was enough to make someone tremble with anxiety and their hidden strength transcended imagination!

If they became a powerful force in the Central Continent than it would be difficult to knock them down. If the Embinyu Church developed into a new kingdom then it was likely that the Dark Ages would spread to the rest of the land.

“This will be a historic occurrence. It isn’t surprising that such a thing happened in Royal Road.”

Yoo Byung-jin asked the artificial intelligence system that governed Royal Road.

“What happened to the Hermes Guild and the Black Lion Guild?”

-After the Black Lion Guild was defeated, the Hermes Guild moved everywhere. The United Supremacy Alliance is still valid and a war is carefully spreading. The Black Lion Guild seems to be shrinking as the users are leaving for other prestigious guilds.

“What happened to the Black Lion Guild’s plan to occupy Tullen Kingdom?”

-They are spending a significant amount of time to control internal affairs. Carlise had power and a high level of popularity but it wasn’t easy to restore his reputation after losing so miserably to Bardray on television.

“The Hermes Guild is quite tricky.”

-They have a large structure, excellent momentum and daring tactics.

The Hermes Guild had trampled the Black Lion Guild in the Melbourne Mine so recovery wasn’t easy. The users lost a lot of experience and skill proficiency and their confidence was shattered by the defeat. The Black Lion Guild had been dragged into the Hermes Guild’s tactics from the start.

Bardray didn’t withdraw even when his boss monster hunt was revealed on broadcast. Carlise and the Black Lion Guild were furious and ran there only to be completely smashed by the full power of the battle company and Royal Guards.

The result would be the same even if the Black Lion Guild sealed the entrance of the Melbourne Mine and waited. Yoo Byung-jin could see everything through the AI. The Hermes Guild had secretly concealed 200 people around the Melbourne Mine. Their strategy to not withdraw and lure the Black Lion Guild down to them succeeded.

The ones who benefited the most from this battle was the Hermes Guild.

“A guy with decisiveness is good.”

-Lafaye being the Guild Master is justified.

“He has the ability to manage the guild’s external affairs. His schemes seems to be okay since they’ve managed to swallow the Haven Kingdom.”

Yoo Byung-jin surveyed various locations in Royal Road.

Known tourists sights overflowing with people. The cliffs, mountains, volcanoes, lakes, swamps, rivers and oceans. There were superb views and many people were living happily. There were those enjoying farming and picking up fruit. They could have fun and experience various disciplines they couldn’t in reality.

Users were playing the role they desired. Defeating wild monsters for growth and requesting help from others were also

important elements. The number of users increased daily but the continent was very wide. Endless risks and adventures could be found. Those who couldn't invest time in hunting and adventures could stay around famous cities for safety.

"How is the Class Master Quest of the farmer Miretas proceeding?"

-Stage 9 has just been completed and they are proceeding to the 10th part.

The Farmer Master Quest was proceeding a bit slowly because they needed to cultivate the seeds they sowed.

"Adventurer Chase?"

-He can't find the necessary purple small sword. He hasn't found the 2 clues necessary for a later adventure.

"He has been blocked for a while on the 11th quest. His ability to solve riddles and sociability is a little low compared to his pathfinding abilities in a dungeon."

Yoo Byung-jin observed the users challenging their Master Quests one by one. The amount to time associated with each quest was steadily increasing.

The broadcasting stations were eager to get an interview with players challenging the Master Quest or a video of them

completing the quest. If Yoo Byung-jin provided the scenes he was currently looking at to the broadcasters than it would lead to great popularity but he wouldn't do such a thing.

As the Class Master Quest progressed, it could change the lives of users. New products never seen before would be registered, new dungeons opened and even friendship between nations would be affected.

"Weed?"

-He hasn't logged in yet. Not enough time has passed for him to log in.

If a player died than they couldn't log in for 24 hours of real time.

"The blow would be huge. Bardray publicly defeated him so his level and skill proficiency would drop. Right now is an important time."

A sculptor was a professional that was a lot more difficult to raise the skill proficiency compared to others.

"Please let me know when he connects. And set up Weed's video on the bottom of the monitor."

-I will carry out your command. If Weed connects then his image would be displayed on the 8th or 9th monitor.

Yoo Byung-jin prepared a huge space so he could monitor Weed.

“It would be fun to watch him connect and feel despair. Kul kul kul.”

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Lee Hyun had a hard time at school due to the students crowding around him. It had even been reported among the juniors.

“Will you be at Morata?”

“I would like to go eat together with Sunbae-nim.”

He kept on receiving greetings from juniors he didn’t know. There were no juniors who didn’t know Lee Hyun after the MT and festival. He was part of the virtual reality department and now they discovered that Lee Hyun accomplished huge achievements in Royal Road.

He was only a 3rd year senior but his popularity and influence as the Lord of Morata was incomparable. In a vote conducted by a broadcasting station, Morata was chosen as the number 1 place people wanted to live in.

“If I’m in Morata then can I meet Sunbae-nim?”

He also heard shy confessions from female students. Even the university professors thought positively of Lee Hyun.

‘It would be useful to get credits.’

Lee Hyun headed home after class. He couldn’t access the game yesterday so he had cleaned the house with Seo-yoon. It had that refreshing feeling after the housework was finished!

“It is time to go back to the battlefield.”

Lee Hyun entered the capsule.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Weed reconnected under the walls of Treipeak.

“Wear leather armour.”

He quickly wore the costume for level 130 beginners.

“Having a plain appearance if useful in times like this.”

If he changed into common clothes then not that many people would recognize him. Treipeak was still the area of the Black Lion Guild. Weed’s presence here wasn’t important to them as they were still confused by the Hermes Guild’s raid.

“I need to check it out… My lost experience!”

Weed had to observe three different types of bad news. Experience, skills and equipment!

“Stat Window!”

Character Name Weed Alignment Historical Hero

Level 409 Profession Legendary Moonlight Sculptor

Title World-changing Sculptor Fame 92,007

Health 41,230 Mana 19,405

Strength 1,443 Agility 1,097

Vitality 209 Wisdom 355 (+51)

Intelligence 505 (+55) Fighting Spirit 525

Endurance 270 (+68) Perseverance 55 (+8)

Art 2,430 Charisma 530

Leadership 787 Luck 143

Faith 207+435 Charm 451+30

Resilience 471 Dignity 153

Concentration 92 Courage 200

Honour 43 Affinity to Nature 1,043

Attack 7,103 Defense 1,941

Magic Resistance

Fire 33% Water 39%

Earth 39% Black Magic 41%

+ All stats have an additional 20 points added.

+ The Art stat is granted an additional 80 points.

+ All stats will increase by 30% on a moonlit night.

+ Specialized items.

+ All production skills can be learnt up to the master level. Preferential treatment will be applied to the skills of all items manufactured with Smelting. You can learn the best skills.

+ Unusual sculptures or sculptures will high artistic value will increase your fame.

+ All stats have been raised by 178 points due to sculptures, production skills, combat experience and quests.

+ All stats will increase by 15 thanks to wearing Baharan's Bracelet.

His level had fallen back to 409. Even if experience was difficult to gain, it was easy compared to others. His sculpting proficiency had fallen 11.4% and was now at 49.7% advanced level 8. His Handicraft, Blacksmith, Sewing, Cooking, Fishing and attack skills had all declined slightly.

"Indeed... It wasn't possible to receive help from luck."

An Adventurer's Luck stat could lessen the damage of death. But the effect of Luck didn't really apply well to other professions. Weed's Luck wasn't high enough to decrease the death penalty.

"Then the item....."

He manually identified all his belongings. Bandages and herbs, arrows, fishing rod, whetstone, sculpting materials, the quest sapphires were all meticulously checked!

“T-Talrock’s Armour of Faith is gone.”

The wonderful armour that protected him from monster attacks for a long time was lost.

“This damage……”

Weed briefly closed his eyes. He had to endure the fury pumping in his chest. His heart wanted to go to Haven Kingdom, the area of the Hermes Guild to get revenge. But the result would just be his death again.

“I’ll definitely make them pay.”

Weed decided to focus on his work to push down the anger.

“I need to report back for my Class Quest and obtain a secret swordsmanship technique.”

The first step to becoming stronger! He could receive a sword skill if he met the Sword Master Ash. Weed was eligible because his Sword Mastery skill had reached the advanced level. Radiant Sword couldn’t be the only secret sword technique that he learnt.

“Anyway, the proficiency of Radiant Sword is still low so it would be better to learn another skill.”

Weed’s resolution to become a jack of all trades!

Ash’s island was a place where students accidentally stumbled upon by boat and was difficult to revisit. The route changed due to wind and ocean currents so it would require a few months investment. But he had Yurin so it was possible to go there by painting.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Splash… Splash…

Seagulls flew around an island that had waves hitting it. Weed arrived at the unknown island where Ash lived with Geomchi and Geomchi2.

“Weed, this is the place to learn a sword technique.”

“Yes. I understand, Master-nim.”

“It might not be any good but it would be better to learn it.”

Geomchi, Geomchi2 and his other teachers had also arrived at the Melbourne Mine yesterday with Yurin but they arrived late. They had attacked the Hermes Guild entering the teleport gate

only to bravely die!

Geomchi and Geomchi2 prided themselves on their strength but they were incited by Weed and decided to come to the island to learn the secret sword technique.

“You have to learn from other people……”

“……..”

“Of course Master-nim doesn’t need to learn the sword technique but you can look cool if you use it in a fight.”

“…….”

“Well, your popularity with women…….”

“……..!”

When Weed, Geomchi and Geomchi2 arrived, Ash walked out from among the trees.

“You came here to learn swordsmanship from me? If so then you must be qualified for it.”

Ash raised his sword for a confrontation as soon as he appeared.

“Your short words are convenient.”

Geomchi took out a sword from his bag and easily proved his eligibility. The fight didn’t even last 30 minutes. He had technical sword skills and could also use mana to double the damage and push the enemy away. The fake bodies were too flimsy.

Geomchi enjoyed a relaxing few minutes before Ash was forced to admit his skill. Geomchi was the strongest with a long sword!

Geomchi2 also achieved a similar result against the clones.

“I am Weed. I am a sculptor but I really admire you. I want to learn this sword technique to ensure the peace of the continent. It is an honour to meet you.”

Weed was a little different. His opponent was a higher levelled Sword Master so flattery naturally emerged from his mouth.

“Your profession is a sculptor so you must’ve gone to a lot of effort to learn the sword. I’m looking forward to a good fight.”

Weed carefully controlled his breathing as he watched Ash make some clones. It would be difficult to find the real body among all the clones.

Weed chose the simplest approach. He would just fight recklessly until they all died!

“I’ll start.”

Weed was surrounded by many layers of Ash and his clones who poured attacks towards him. Weed demonstrated a high degree of concentration.

‘I need to think faster and move more quickly. My body’s reaction speed needs to reach the maximum… Just like when I found 100 won that fell on the road.’

When fighting he had to consider the enemy in front, on the sides and even an attack from his back.

-You have been injured in the leg by Ash’s clone.

Until the injured area is recovered, movement speed will decrease by 7%.

Health has decrease by 983 due to your resilience.

The fake bodies weren’t as strong as the real thing. The attacks didn’t have a high risk due to his resilience and perseverance so he wildly swung his sword.

“Heriam Fencing!”

Weed was full of scars every time he defeated a clone. He looked

like a mad berserker in battle as he attacked without defending his body. It was awfully ignorant compared to how the Geomchis had performed. Weed jumped into the centre of the clones.

Violent sparks flew every time his sword hit something. Weed fought like he was the last remaining knight in a destroyed kingdom! He breathed roughly while competing with Ash's clones. He didn't want to step back anymore since his loss to Bardray.

'If I'm defeated by this much... I'll have no choice but to envy the son of a rich family.'

Weed had 1/3rd of his health left. Ash made an offer once he eliminated 10 clones.

"This degree is enough to stop. You seem to be lacking the skill to digest my technique."

Weed shook his head.

"I will keep fighting."

"Then don't regret it if I kill you."

"I'll regret it but I will still fight."

The battle became easier for Weed as he reduced more clones. However his health was still decreasing and he had a lot of minor

injuries. His movements slowed and became more difficult due to his wounds.

‘The only thing I can believe in is my body. I will win this!’

He was the Geomchis’ student so he had a high level of technical skill. He was able to enhance his attack damage while the real Ash was hiding. Weed’s Sword Mastery skill was advanced level 2.

Thanks to the difference in attack and mana management, it was difficult to block the strikes from the real Ash. It was difficult because Ash kept on hiding his body among the clones.

‘I have to smash everything.’

Weed threw his body at the clones.

-Your Fighting Spirit has increased thanks to the violent battle.

Your attack and defense stats will rise.

“Keheok!”

Weed only had 4% health left. However all the clones were gone. The only one left was Ash. If he threw his body then there would be a 2 out of 3 chance of death.

“Your technical skill might be lacking but you have the quality of never giving up. I’ve realized that after a few minutes of fighting you.”

Ddiring!

-You have fought against Ash with much lower weapons and armour so all stats have increased by 3.

-Through the match you have acquired the Sword-cloning skill.

The Sword-cloning skill! Geomchi and Geomchi2 decided to go to Morata to drink beer with the other instructors and trainees. It was to learn Radiant Sword from the statue kept inside the castle. Weed moved to Ugoth to report his Master Quest to the Ellyon.

Chapter 10: Helium's Rebirth

He needed to make a Magnum Opus sculpture out of the sapphires for the Ellyon.

"A sculptor doesn't seem to be a good profession."

Those who enjoyed making things would like having it as a career. But his greed deepened as people continued passing through the area. The desire to make a better work!

From that point on, he was under enormous stress as he tried to create something.

"I need to sacrifice all these sapphires for the Fairies... If it wasn't for the quest....."

Weed had to use the precious ingredients. If he used good materials than his ability as a professional sculptor would often rise. It was difficult to suppress his desire to sell the materials for money.

"The sapphires from the Melbourne Mine are the best. There is enough to make a sculpture."

Weed decided to make the piece of work in the Ellyon's area. Working with jewels needed precision. Morata was filled with the sound of people bustling by and the noise from the construction of

the Grand Buildings. He needed to make something that appealed to the Ellyon's desires so he could correct it if he saw their reactions!

"I need to invest a bit more in order to make a Magnum Opus sculpture."

It was difficult to return to the Melbourne Mine to dig more sapphires. The mine had been closed by the Black Lion Guild. Only the guild members could go hunting there and the miners received a thorough inspection. The Black Lion Guild didn't want to permit another humiliation from outsiders.

It would be a big blow if the sculpture failed so Weed pulled out some rubies. They were rubies mined from Syaspen Mine. He had heard from the Dwarf artisans in Kuruso that good quality rubies came from that mine. So he mined rubies in a dungeon seething with monsters. Weed collected a large share of rubies this time.

"The harmony of the blue sapphire and red rubies....."

Sapphires meant wisdom and ruby was power. The sculpture was designed to combine power and wisdom!

"It would be better if the sculpture is beautiful and has a historical value. Something that will be nostalgic for the Ellyons....."

Weed had already decided.

Geihar Von Arpen!

He was the Emperor who unified the continent and led the sculptural lifeforms. If he wanted to increase his skill proficiency then he needed to endure it. He needed a theme in order to create a great sculpture.

“I’ve seen the video several times as a sculptor. I should be able to reproduce his majestic form from the past.”

Weed shaved a big rock. He used the Sculpting Knife and hammer to precisely carve Emperor Geihar. The Emperor often ate so his stomach was big and his legs were short and thick. His arms were also short and his fingers were a mess of calluses and scars from the sculpting. The chin was fleshy so it was the most difficult part to express with sculpting.

“Indeed, it definitely isn’t that easy.”

Fortunately (?) his head was bald so Weed didn’t have to worry about expressing his hair. He looked like an ordinary old man but he was the great Emperor Geihar so it was a challenging sculpture. His expression had to convey confidence and conviction while he looked at his sculptures with soft eyes.

To be honest, the sculpture that Weed made wasn’t handsome. Despite the appearance, the difficult part was capturing the feeling of Emperor Geihar.

“It should be decorated with gold, rubies and sapphires. He needs to have the best clothes and decorates to represent the greatness of the Emperor.”

The sculpture shone with a splendid light as rubies were placed on it. And he decided to take advantage of the sculptor’s wide shoulders. He placed a sculpture of a bird made out of melted gold on the right shoulder. He often looked at the real thing so it was possible to sculpt a figure that was almost the same. On the other shoulder he laid down the sapphires very elaborately. There was also an Ellyon mischievously grabbing Emperor Geihar’s sleeve.

The process of making a sculpture was very important to Weed. While creating Emperor Geihar he carefully carved the rock, melted the gold and precisely worked the rubies and sapphires.

The sculpture of Geihar Von Arpen who was Arpen’s Emperor and an important part of Versailles Continent’s history was completed.

Ddiring!

-Please set the name of the new sculpture.

“The name of this sculpture will be Emperor Geihar von Arpen.”

-Emperor Geihar von Arpen is correct?

“Yes.”

Ddiring!

-A historic sculpture, a Magnum Opus! Emperor Geihar von Arpen is completed.

This is in the distant past but there was once a time when the Versailles Continent was united under one flag. The borders between kingdoms disappeared and all species kneeled down to the Emperor!

The luxurious and extravagant sculpture embellished with rubies, sapphires and gold clearly shows the Emperor who managed to achieve the great feat of conquering the continent.

This charming and incomparable piece of art is created by a master sculptor popular among the masses.

There are no current sculptures of Geihar von Arpen so this sculpture has a high historical value.

Artistic Value: 24,789

Special Options:

Anyone who sees the sculpture of Emperor Geihar von Arpen will have their health and mana regeneration rate increased by 34% for

a day.

You have acquired historical knowledge about the Arpen Empire.

Fame has increased from the creation of this sculpture.

All stats related to sculpting will increase by 30% for a day.

The prestige of Kings and Emperors has increased.

If you own a palace or a castle than the areas political power will expand.

Relationships with various species in that territory won't deteriorate.

All stats increased by 30.

The effect doesn't overlap with other sculptures.

Current number of Magnum Opus created: 12

-The skill proficiency of Sculpting has improved.

-The skill proficiency of Handicraft has improved.

-Fame has increased by 2,670.

-Art stat has increased by 37.

-Charm increased by 8.

-Charisma increased by 9.

-All stats will gain an additional 3 points for making a Magnum Opus sculpture.

-You have completed the sculpture necessary for the quest.

Weed had a soft smile on his face.

‘Emperor Geihar is wonderful as expected.’

The exquisite sculpture was able to successfully satisfy the Ellyons! His sculpting proficiency also increased by 5.4%. It still wasn’t enough to recover the damage from dying. But he was able to gain a lot of experience from the Magnum Opus sculpture.

Ddiring!

-The Ellyon born from a continent of art and culture desired a sculpture made of sapphires.

The Ellyons have been waiting for a good sculpture to appear among the humans.

Now you have demonstrated an ability to sculpt without betraying their faith. The Ellyons will now leave the home where they've lived so far to follow you.

They are like blades of grass that don't grow in deserts……

-Fame has increased by 1,600.

-Friendship with the Ellyon race has increased. Unless you make a critical mistake to disappoint them, this friendship won't fall.

The 13th stage of the Master Quest has been completed. An Ellyon then carefully said.

-Will you lead us well?

They were a playful, small species. It was natural for them to be frightened of Weed.

"I will be a good master so you and your companions don't need to worry."

While he was obtaining the sapphires from the Melbourne Mine, he died and his Talrock's Armour was taken away. Given the reward for such a difficult quest, he definitely had to make them

work!

‘Farming, mineral extraction, lake and pond management etc… There are many uses for the fairies.’

Morata has a mining team, a large granary and employed workers at the lake. If the fairies help than the yield from the work will increase. The Ellyon continued.

-By the way, can I bring my friends? They’re poor and hungry.

“Friends?”

The Ellyon hadn’t brought any meal expenses yet they wanted to bring a guest! As the amount of sculptural lifeforms increased, Weed had to move from persuasion rather than violence to earn their respect. The sculptural lifeforms possessed a pristine innocence so he had to soothe them while they were working.

‘I have to act calmly and decisively if it is like this. If I hesitate even a little bit than I will seem weak. Even if I beat them up, I need to precisely control my power while their health is reducing……’

The Ellyon replied.

-They are friends who worked together with us in the Arpen Empire. They have an outstanding talent for raising animals.

Weed’s voice became tender.

“Your friends have a talent like that?”

There were many benefits to large scale breeding of sheep, rabbits, cows, horses, pigs etc. Morata required leather as well as to stabilize the price of meat in the food industry. In fact, Weed used quite a few ingredients to make delicious food so he was sensitive to these areas. If the food was delicious than the number of users staying in the city would increase and they would use more money.

Thanks to Yellowy, there was a large cattle breeding and transport industry so there were various benefits to raising animals.

-Yes. But right now they have been confined by the Sulleion.

“Confinement. Good gracious!”

Weed’s voice had a note of fake concern in it.

-Can you defeat the Sulleions and save my friends? It is dangerous work but it might be possible for a sculptor like you.

Ddiring!

-The Ellyons were a race of fairies that live with their friends the Arnin and their animals.

They have no combat power and have been forced into labour by the Sulleion.

Defeat the Sulleions who rules the Harsel Mountains and rescue them!

It is impossible without a large war.

This will be very dangerous for a sculptor.

Level of difficulty: Sculpting Master Quest

Quest Restriction: Level 8 Advanced Sculpting

Sculpture Life Bestowal is necessary.

“Hrmm.”

Fortunately, this commission this time was in the north. The Sulleion was a reptile like warrior tribe with yellow eyes and skin covered with a thick substance like keratin. There were a tribe with numerous forces in the Harsel Mountains. Cities and villages were difficult due to the steep terrain and rivers so settlements were formed rather than large villages and cities.

“The Sulleions… They really aren’t an easy opponent.”

There were at least several thousand warriors in a large settlement. They were also spread out through the Harsel Mountains so it was difficult to judge their scale.

‘I can’t give up here… It seems like I have to use Sculpture Life Bestowal for a large scale battle.’

It was a quest where he had to train sculptural lifeforms to fight in a war! If successful than he could obtain an entire tribe of sculptural lifeforms. Weed decided to accept the commission. He had kept the lifeforms for something like this.

“I’ll accept the quest.”

-You have accepted the quest.

-You have consented to a dangerous task so all stats will increase by 2.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The information about the Class Master Quest competition was the most popular program for each broadcasting station.

“According to the Hermes Guild, Bardray has currently completed his 12th Black Knight quest so what about Adventurer

Chase?”

“I’ve just received news that he has collected the necessary materials and is preparing to challenge his 11th quest.”

“The warrior Python has also proceeded to the 9th quest and was aiming to hunt monsters yesterday. The detailed video is ready so I will show it later.”

“It is still unknown if there are other people doing the Master Quests. CTS Media promises to give the viewers the information as quickly as possible.”

“Su-hwi ssi, the competition is getter hotter and many people seem interested in the Master Quest.”

“Doesn’t everyone wish to become the master of their class?”

Among all the players, there were 9 people revealed to be challenging the Master Quest. The broadcasting stations wanted to know their every move.

Becoming the first Class Master was an unspeakable honour and a record that couldn’t be established again. But there was almost no talk about the Sculptor Weed. Weed only informed a few people about his progress and he didn’t brag about it in cities.

Recently he had died to Bardray so the broadcasting stations became negligent about mentioning him in the Master Quest

competition. To finish the quest they needed to master their class skills.

The sculpting proficiency he lost due to his death couldn't be raised in a short period of time so they thought he had fallen behind the competition.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

"Tsk tsk, he made a mistake. The quest this time is too difficult."

Yoo Byung-jin clicked his tongue as he watched the monitor. He had watched his videos as soon as Weed connected. The degree that he completed the Ellyons' quest was expected. However the difficulty level for the next quest received was too high.

Even if his subordinates listened to Weed, the Sulleions wouldn't be easily defeated. They had a great ability to utilize the caves in the Harsel Mountains. It would be difficult to suppress them even with a large scale army.

"His misfortunes only get worse. It will be bad if he fails this quest or dies."

Yoo Byung-jin thought it was fun to watch Weed. No matter what type of difficulty, he always seemed to succeed.

"Bardray has a significant advantage because he can easily raise Sword Mastery. It won't be easy to raise Sculpting proficiency even

if the quest is completed.”

If he had to use an analogy, it was like climbing a high mountain and the current location was under the cliff. If he climbed to the top of the cliff then he would become a Sculpting Master.

Weed would definitely reach the Master stage someday but he was severely disadvantaged compared to his competitors due to the nature of the class.

“On top of that... I don’t know when he will get the final sculpting special technique. It is great that he even collected this much.”

So far Weed had collected all the class related secret techniques except for one. Yoo Byung-jin asked the artificial intelligence system.

“What are the current odds if Weed and Bardray fight?”

-Weed improves depending on the geographical elements and skill utilization. Bardray has many people under his command. If these elements are met for both people than Weed’s chance of victory is 7.2%.

If the favourable blessings and military aspect is removed from Bardray than Weed has a slight chance. If they are fighting on a cliff where the wind is blowing hard and Weed rides the wyverns than his odds will increase to 19%. Even if he is at a disadvantage

against Bardray, in most cases he can escape without dying.

If Bardray's dangerous attacks continuously succeed in a row than he will die. Bardray has a higher level but Weed is used to hunting against a large number of monsters. Van Hawk and the sculptural lifeforms will also increase his damage.

"If Weed obtains the final secret sculpting technique than what are his odds?"

-The effect of the final sculpting secret technique depends on the user but it would make his power dozens of times more effective. If Weed obtains it than he will be able to properly take advantage of sculpting's characteristics. Weed's chances will rise relatively high if his attack power and reaction rate is taken into consideration.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

"Oh, level 14."

Bart killed a wolf using a rusty sword near the gates.

"Congratulations, ajusshi."

"Thank you."

The people in his party congratulated him. The others were also beginners like Bart.

“Now you can use a sturdy iron sword. Your damage will increase even further.”

Bart felt a pleasant feeling while hunting in a party. He had come to the northern city of Morata! Beginners could ride transportation carriages for merchants for free. Travelling here and hunting gave him a feeling of excitement. The people here were also friendly so it was easy to adapt.

‘I can understand why Royal Road is so popular. This is completely a community.’

He could clearly feel that as he watched Morata. Adventurers who completed great explorations would report to the residents in the square! Their appearance was always greeted with applause. There were also sweaty people participating in the creation of the Grand Buildings. Many people admired the cool sight of Hestia’s Forge and the Research Tower being built.

“Has the budget exceeded this time as well?”

“By an awful amount. Nevertheless, the Grand Buildings will continue without being cancelled.”

“When they are completed then it will be good to be a Blacksmith or a Magician.”

Morata had a lot of fame even in the Central Continent. The local

specialties were sold at a much more expensive price in other cities. In the future Morata would certainly be the main city of the kingdom. Central Square had also acquired a new specialty.

“Wah! It is the Ice Beauty! It really was worth coming here to see this.”

“So pretty. A goddess.”

The restored Ice Beauty had been left in the square. Ice would melt in the sun but magicians used magic to lower the temperature. Morata was a large city so magicians were commonplace. The magicians thought of it as an honour to lower the temperature of the Ice Beauty.

“That is my daughter..... The ice creates a different feeling but she is still very pretty. Yes, even as a child she was pretty.”

Bart wanted to boast about his daughter. But that was impossible when he recalled what happened after he said he knew Weed. Weed was the God of War so the Ice Beauty’s existence was above people like him.

“Bart ajusshi, collect the wolf leather and bring it to the general store.”

“I’ll do that. I need to buy a sturdy iron sword.”

Bart quickly rose from where he was sitting. It wasn’t easy to

meet a party he could trust.

He was busy with his company so his growth in Royal Road was slow. It was normal for him to fall behind beginners moving fast.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The capital of the Thor Kingdom, Iron Hammer!

Weed headed to the government office and met the Dwarf Elder Einhand.

“I’ve returned after cleaning up the monsters at Ugoth.”

“Thank you for your hard work. I’ve heard news from a dwarf that Ugoth has become safe. I was thoughtless last time but my recognition of a sculptor has changed recently thanks to you.”

Weed was happiest in these moments. He had completed the quest and came to receive the compensation. It was the feeling of returning home after a hard adventure.

“The four dwarves that you assisted have prepared a gift.”

“Such a thing… I wasn’t thinking about it.”

This was just out of politeness but he had no intention of

refusing.

“We dwarves are good at making things. We wanted to make you a desired equipment but....”

The Thor Kingdom contained the best dwarven blacksmiths who could make luxury equipment. Einhand swept his hand over his beard.

“You are a sculptor that can draw out the beauty of every type of material. So I gathered the materials and waited for you to visit.”

Einhand handed over a backpack. Weed immediately opened the backpack and looked over the goods. There were 22 pieces of Mithril, 5 top class pieces of Adamantium and 20 of the best iron ores. When combined with the reward he received for completing the Akryong Kaybern quest, the quantity was enough to make 3 armours.

“Thank you very much. I will use this well to safeguard the peace of the continent.”

“The burden you carry on your shoulders is truly big. Please continue walking the route of art in the future.”

“In order to make a living... I will fulfil my duty to make art more widely recognized.”

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

-The Grand Building Hestia’s Forge has been completed.

Total construction period: 4 months and 26 days.

Cost of construction: 2,211,002 gold and 35 silver.

Number of construction staff who participated: 428,883 people

Building value: 142,329

More staff participated in the construction as planned so it finished 7 days faster.

Blacksmiths can extract iron from iron ore more quickly.

When an object is created with the Blacksmith skill, an additional effect of +3% attack and +11% defense will be added.

Items filled with Hestia’s power can be created.

The Dwarf settlement rate has improved.

The satisfaction of dwarfs living in Morata will increase.

The great Hestia’s Forge was completed.

It was created a few days quicker thanks to the active participation of the Morata users. The Research Tower was proceeding at a similar rate and was 97% completed.

The city was once again filled with a festival.

Weed walked through the uproar of people eating and drinking and entered Hestia's Forge. Hestia's Forge was filled with the best facilities and the offering to the temple meant an endless flame was always burning! Today was the completion date and tomorrow the forge would officially open.

"You can make whatever you want comfortably."

Weed used his power as the Lord to monopolize Hestia's Forge today. He decided to make an equipment from the Mithril, Adamantium and iron ore obtained from the dwarves' quest.

"I lost Talrock's Armour so I need to make something even better."

Unfortunately Weed's Blacksmith skill was only intermediate level 9. His Blacksmithing hadn't reached the advanced level but he needed an armour to wear in battle right now.

"There is merit in making the armour directly."

He could adjust the weight to distribute the necessary strength and agility. Wearing heavy armour was inconvenient to his movements in battle. The advantage was the high defense but it sacrificed agility. If Weed made it directly then he could create an armour matched to his combat style.

“Then let’s start melting.”

He placed 35 pieces of Mithril, 12 Adamantium pieces and 55 high grade iron ores into Hestia’s hearth. The armour was difficult to obtain so a lot of materials were needed if he wanted to produce it directly.

“Mithril armour is light and has high magic resistance. It is worth every penny but.....”

Weed took out the divine torch made of Helium. It was a Magnum Opus sculpture that had a lot of great options. If he carried the torch during battle than health and mana recovery rates would increase by more than 50%. It also increased the power of his battle skills and shrinking dark type monsters. It was useless against a strong human like Bardray but quite useful when monster hunting.

“It is better to use this as armour.”

Weed threw the sculpture made of helium into the hearth.

Ddiring!

-A Magnum Opus sculpture can be destroyed.

When a sculpture is destroyed, a significant amount of fame and reputation will be lost.

The hearth's fire wrapped around the Helium sculpture and it started to melt. Weed didn't take it out and just looked on.

-The form of the Magnum Opus sculpture has been damaged.

The quality of the sculpture is doubted.

Fame has decreased by 4,250.

Your reputation as a sculptor has somewhat decreased.

The Art stat is permanently reduced by 31 points.

Helium was a precious material so it was too dangerous to leave it as a piece of art on the Versailles Continent.

"It would be better to use it as a material than to make a sculpture from it!"

Adamantium had high defensive powers and was difficult to break. But it had a heavy weight so it was better suited for

warriors.

“If I make something from Adamantium than the Orc Karichwi can use it. Orcs are continuing to grow healthily so I can sell it later.”

An excellent blacksmith had the skill to make superior steel armour. It was rarer for people to wear Mithril and Adamantium but they were uncommon materials.

The Mithril melted like water in the endless flames of the Hestia’s Forge. Mithril was more expensive and precious than gold and silver. But that was a bargain compared to the brilliance of Helium.

“At this standard there won’t be any impurities.”

Weed scooped out the Mithril and Helium and poured it into a template he created. Sometimes materials wouldn’t mix well so a conflict would rise. When a blacksmith handled the material, the synergy effect would maximize. Just mixing the Helium and Mithril was a big adventure.

“If it doesn’t work than I’ll have to melt it again.”

He mixed the Adamantium with iron and poured it into a template for an Orc’s armour. He waited for a short time next to Hestia’s hearth. The flames were roaring upwards.

It wasn’t easy for a blacksmith to create such huge flames. The forge was an underground facility so the flames seemed to emerge from the ground. Morata’s blacksmiths were pleased by it so it became like a playground.

“It should be done.”

Weed opened the template. The Helium and Mithril and the Adamantium armour revealed their shape to the world.

The Mithril armour synthesized with Helium emitted a refined beauty while the Adamantium armour was a fearful size and thickness.

The work hadn’t ended so Weed grabbed a hammer.

Tang! Tang! Tang!

He struck the armour in order to temper it. He repeatedly heated it then hammered it in order to increase the defense and durability.

Chiiiiik!

Holy water was then used to cool off the Helium and the Adamantium armour. The holy water was obtained from his contributions to Freya’s Church and the Church of Lugh.

Armour was being made even before Hestia's Forge opened the next day. Patience was necessary for the task but he had to spend a lot of time creating the armour that would protect his life from now on. It was a repetitive work that required strength, vitality and concentration.

"That Bardray bastard! Hermes Guild, I'll see you soon!"

He poured all his bitter feelings into striking the armour all night and it was finally completed.

Ddiring!

-The skill proficiency of Blacksmithing has increased.

-The completed armour has become harder due to Hestia's flames.

"Identify!"

Weed examined the Mithril and Helium armour that he would mostly be wearing.

-Goddess' Knight Armour

Durability: 170/170

Defense: 197

A divine metal armour has been born. Made from a mix of Helium and Mithril from the Thor Kingdom.

Made by the genius Weed who excels in sculpting and blacksmithing!

Goddess Freya's love and Hestia's consideration resulted in the divine power dwelling in this armour. The blessings from the goddesses will be an absolute help in defeating monsters.

Restrictions: Level 530

Knights recognized by the Goddess only.

Strength: 900 Dignity: 200 Faith: 300

Options: Faith + 120, Fame +6,100

All stats increased by 31.

Arrows won't hit it correctly.

Mana recovery rate increased by 39%.

Enemies will require a lot of luck to rob you.

The probability of acquired gold and items will increase due to your luck.

Defends from the darkness.

Defends from abnormal states.

Leadership over paladins and soldiers of religious orders will increase.

Resistant to black magic and curses.

Effect of Freya’s blessing:

-When the enemy has strong damage, the defense of the armour will increase by 42%.

-It is easier to obtain grain, herbs and nuts from the forests, mountains and fields.

Effect of Hestia’s blessing:

-Damage from iron weapons will decrease.

-Very light.

-Very hard.

-Will never break.

“Keoheoheok!”

Despite the good materials and production environment, the armour came out a lot better than expected.

“As expected, it is worth living a sincere life.”

The armour became a lot better thanks to the blessings of the goddesses. Weed didn’t meet the wearer restrictions. But his blacksmith skill was able to lower the restrictions so he could wear it.

“I don’t know whether to celebrate over a well-made piece or feel sad as a sculptor.

The Helium Torch was made to assist in battle. But the armour meant he could fight against much stronger monsters.

Weed worked hard to raise his resilience and perseverance but his defense was still lacking compared to his damage.

If he wore good armour then he could kill monsters that had been difficult up to now.

Chapter 11: 30 Gold Event

The trees and flower seeds he obtained took root in Morata. Freya's followers generously blessed them, causing an abundance of fruit. Users took the fruits to the chefs who developed new recipes.

The Grand Buildings, the Research Tower and Hestia's Forge had also been completed. The users and military were working together at Vargo Fortress to suppress the monsters and enhance security. And it was finally the coronation day that Weed had been waiting for.

"A lot of soldiers can be seen in the city. What day is it today?"

"I don't know. There seem to be more people than usual."

Users who returned from hunting found that Morata's atmosphere was different than usual. Soldiers and knights were lining the streets from the gate.

"You're asking what day it is? Don't you know that today is the day of Lord-nim's coronation?"

"A serious event is occurring in the north. The Lord who I respect is about to become a King."

The users came to known that a coronation was taking place

takes to the residents spreading it. They were surprised that Weed would become a king but there were no complaints. Morata was growing rapidly and spreading.

“But where is the coronation taking place?”

“Bingryong Square or Wyvern Square?”

“From the Central Square?”

“Is there nothing?”

“Then in front of the goddess statue?”

The Morata users wanted to attend the coronation. Usually the preparations for a state event like this would be started early. Morata was in a good state of urban development so there were several squares and parks suitable for a large scale event.

“Do you know where the coronation is?”

“I don’t know.”

The Grass Porridge Cult searched widely for the coronation ceremony. But they couldn’t find the venue. The players in Morata were baffled. They wanted to know where Weed’s coronation ceremony was going to take place! By the time the sun had risen halfway up, the soldiers and knights were arranged in the Central

Square.

“The coronation is taking place in the Central Square.”

“Let’s go quickly!”

The users and residents also gathered in the Central Square so there was a population of thousands. Weed’s friends like Pale also set aside anything else and attended his coronation ceremony.

A wooden table was placed in the Central Square with a thin gold crown and a clear glass of water on it.

“Don’t tell me……”

“Only that……”

“Isn’t it different from what I imagined?”

After a while, Weed was escorted out by knights. He wore his newly created Goddess’ Knight Armour and a spectacular cloak.

Various local specialities were given to the Lord to commemorate the coronation. Morata’s best tailors had created the cloak for him.

Weed appeared riding a nice, white horse and escorted by 30 knights! Weed stood in front of the fountain. The redness on his

face wasn't from excitement. The budget for the coronation was 30 gold but it was a little embarrassing when standing in front of so many people.

'Should I have used 40 gold?'

Weed walked silently and stood in front of the table. Alveron, the pope candidate of Freya Church was standing there. Alveron bowed respectfully and said.

"It has been a long time."

Alveron had grown from a beautiful young boy. He grew taller and was handsome enough that even actresses would envy him. There were also no flaws in his smooth skin. In the past he had accompanied Weed but now Alveron occupied a great position in the Freya Church. He was in charge of the Cathedral and missionary activities in the north! Weed spoke in a low voice so that other people wouldn't hear.

"It's great to see you. You didn't experience anything difficult?"

"It is thanks to Weed-nim's effort in maintaining the peace of the continent....."

"I did go through some troubles. Then Alveron, what level are you now?"

In the past he had been depressed by Alveron's colossal level.

They killed the vampires together but he couldn't help building up envy and jealousy.

"I'm ashamed since my service to God is a little lacking. I am only level 553."

"Keheok!"

It was really difficult to raise the level of priests. They were stuck hunting in parties and always needed to be looked after by others. But their abilities and blessings couldn't be compared to other professions. Alveron's level meant he had to perform a 'miracle' every day or use his blessings on fearful monsters. Weed suppressed his deep jealousy towards Alveron.

"Alveron, our time hunting together are still good memories for me."

"It is the same for me."

"I look forward to still being your close friend in the future."

"Understood."

Alveron started the coronation.

Marching soldiers and knights and a performance praising the king were boldly omitted. Weed thought it was a waste of time.

Soldiers and knights had expensive operational costs so he would rather use them to get rid of nearby monsters.

“The Freya Church, the Church of Lugh and the four other religious orders of the Versailles Continent has blessed the rise of Weed’s Arpen Kingdom.”

-You have received the recognition of the religious orders.

Faith has increased by 25.

Honour has increased by 17.

Luck has increased by 10.

Leadership has increased by 10.

-You have received recognition as a King from the Gods.

There will be high levels of religious activities in your Kingdom.

The loyalty of residents with high Faith won’t decline.

The religious orders in the Kingdom will give small support to quests and military activities.

Alveron placed the gold crown on Weed’s head. It was an

affordable crown that raised Charm by 7 points. Anyway, he couldn't wear the crown in battle so he was going to leave it in the castle.

"Let's have His Majesty the King say some words."

Alveron advanced to the last stage of the coronation ceremony.

The King's speech!

Weed was formally inaugurated as the King and was speaking to the residents and users for the first time.

"Hum hum."

Weed went up to the altar and looked out at the people. Many users had gathered in the Central Square. There weren't any empty places in the square and the streets were also busy.

"I'm speaking as the King."

-Skill: Lion's Roar has been used.

"Ohhhh!"

"Weed-nim is talking!"

The King received love from the crowd. The noisy square quieted as soon as Weed began to speak.

People had expected a grand coronation ceremony so they were disappointed when it ended so simply. But they watched in silence at the chance to hear King Weed's words.

"The Arpen Kingdom will continue to grow in the future with you. More commercial buildings will be built, trade will expand and more quests given. This will be a good land for people to live."

It was important for leaders to give hope with confident words. Of course, Weed's inner thoughts were completely different.

'I will collect the taxes from everyone in the Arpen Kingdom!'

"There is danger everywhere when we exit the gates but we can overcome that danger. It is possible if we have courage."

'They have to exit the gates and play even if it means dying."

"Go out into the wide land and adventure, fight, mine ores and also farm crops. The Arpen Kingdom will be waiting as your home."

'People who pay taxes are welcomed.'

Weed was respected by the users as the Lord of Morata. Users in

the central, eastern, western and southern parts of the continent also praised Weed's reign. The users were immersed in Weed's words and gave cheers of joy.

"Now everyone close your eyes."

Most of the users closed their eyes at Weed's words. They were prepared for any type of surprise event. They had more expectations because the coronation was too simple.

Of course, Weed hadn't prepared anything separate. He didn't want to spend money on something like that.

"Close your eyes and see it. A spacious area filled with wandering herds of monsters……"

Nothing could be seen but the users imagined it. The target was different depending on their level and experience.

Kobolds and goblins were perfect threats for beginners. Other people imagined a variety of monsters like the undead, Lamia, trolls, lizardmen etc. The high level users experienced many unmatched, dangerous monsters. And it didn't matter what level they were as monsters they saw over the internet or through broadcasts moved through their thoughts.

People who liked Weed's adventures saw the time he fought the Skeleton Knight or the dragon in the Valley of Death. The time he transformed into Karichwi and commanded the Dark Elves and

Orcs to fight against the Undead Legion was already a legend!

'If I was that character.....'

They were afraid of the monsters but there was also a lot of excitement. Their hearts pumped and limbs trembled at the thought of adventures.

"And listen with your ears. The rough breathing, roars and sounds of the monsters..... Now, open your eyes. Do you want to run there?"

"Yes!"

"I want to go!"

A smug smile formed on Weed's face. He realized how to scam using emotions when building the pyramid.

"The future of the Arpen Kingdom is bright. In the northern area, scary monsters often breed and expand so there are many unknown risks."

In fact, there were many fearful monsters in the north recently. As the north became warmer and more crops grew, monsters would naturally increase further.

"You will walk on rough land and fight against monsters. If you

triumph and return to the Arpen Kingdom with the loot than it is possible for you to become a hero. This is the heart of the Arpen Kingdom!”

Weed emphatically yelled using Lion’s Roar.

“Do you believe it?”

“I believe it!”

“Will you be residents of the Arpen Kingdom?”

“I will!”

The crowd replied in unison. Thus the coronation was finished with the imagination inspiring words.

Weed showed a speaking ability that was beyond that of a fraudulent founder of a religion!

A message window than appeared before all users in the Versailles Continent.

-The Arpen Kingdom has been established.

King Weed has created a small kingdom including Morata and Vargo Fortress.

It is the centre of trade in the north and is leading in arts and culture. It is a kingdom where a significant amount of weapons and quality fabric is created and possesses various types of local specialties..

There are a vast number of residents and many are talented people.

Due to the grain coming from an abundant land, the birth rate is very high.

The Ellyons have moved to Arpen Kingdom and it is their new playground.The nutrient rich fruits and grains will grow even more abundantly.

The interest of the Elves has increased thanks to the Ellyon’s move.

The support offered to the King by the residents are absolute and they will unite together to stand against any threats.The residents have leaped forward tremendously despite the difficult environment so they have an optimistic attitude.

The Grand Buildings the residents built together will be the light that illuminates the beginning of the Arpen Kingdom.

-The fame of Morata and Vargo Fortress has increased.

-You will have a large political influence over any areas in the vicinity that doesn't belong to the kingdom yet.

-A small riot is taking place in Vent Castle.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Bart's party arrived back late to Morata from their hunt. Morata's streets were wide so carriages and horses could run quickly. But there was an enormous crowd because of Weed's coronation ceremony so they couldn't go towards the Central Square. Bart spoke to his party members.

"Wah, as expected from Weed the God of War. Look at all the people gathered here."

"Is this the first time a kingdom was established on the continent?"

"The reason is that it is Weed-nim's kingdom. He restored the village single-handedly and gathered all the people together until it became a kingdom....."

Bart was once again surprised by Weed after listening to the words of his party members. He understood that Weed was a popular person and that everyone liked his adventures through experience. But he exerted an absolute influence.

"By the way, should we join the Grass Porridge Cult?"

“Will they accept someone level 25?”

“If we are Morata residents than they will welcome us. Does Bart ajusshi want to join the Grass Porridge Cult as well?”

Naturally Bart also wanted to join the Grass Porridge Cult. They were the organization with the largest number of forces. If he joined the Grass Porridge Cult than adventuring in the north won’t be boring.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Meanwhile the competition to become a Class Master was in full swing on the Versailles Continent.

When the name and location of a user trying to become a Class Master was revealed, attempts of assassination and obstructions would occur. The broadcasting stations also encouraged this fighting in order to make it a more intense competition!

Geomchi yawned as he spoke to his trainees.

“The victory was too easy.”

“I understand, Master-nim!”

Now that they knew Radiant Sword, hunting around Vargo

Fortress was much easier.

“The increase in skill proficiency for Weapon Mastery feels much better than before.”

“It is the same for me, Master-nim!”

In the past they just haphazardly swung their weapons while fighting. Aside from basic martials arts skills, they mainly used mere power. That’s because they didn’t have enough mana for their skills!

Now they looked at the artworks in Morata’s Art Centre and distributed their stat points into wisdom and intelligence every time they levelled up. The result was that their mana grew enough to be able to use their secret sword techniques a few times. It was like going from rubbing two sticks together to make a fire to using a lighter!

“Now the fighting won’t be as easy as before.”

“Yes, Master-nim.”

Geomchi, Geomchi2, Geomchi3 were heading to a place where 50 monsters were gathered.

Just previously, they had killed 120 monsters before their bodies became a wreck. They took a short break and wrapped bandages around them but that wasn’t sufficient. They might fight like a

berserker but they needed to manage their vitality and strength. During a battle they would tear out ribs and eat the meat!

“Those children should learn the skill quickly. When everyone reaches level 8-level 0 then we will start the quest.”

“Yes. Geomchi5 will do it first and the rest will shortly follow.”

Geomchi5 had already reached advanced level 8 in Weapon Mastery. He decided to experience the Class Master quest for a martial artist first. It was a judgement to reduce the trial and errors.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Geomchi5 met with the barbarian Hanson and had a conversation. He met with the barbarian to receive the martial artist quest.

“It has been about approximately 10 years. I met a very strong warrior.”

“Should I kill him?”

“He was very good at handling weapons.”

“Kill? Or should I pull it?”

“Beritan left its nest… The villagers that went to Beritan’s nest only saw the corpse of a monster left behind. Now monsters have gathered in Beritan’s nest.”

“I’ll kill everything.”

“Please defeat the monsters and find any traces of the strong warrior that left the corpse behind.”

The Class Quest was more fascinating than Geomchi5 had thought. There was a great martial artist. The request was to trace his tracks and battle him.

“In the end I will kill that guy!”

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Weed saw a separate message window after he became king of the Arpen Kingdom.

-The King has the authority to make any demand of the residents.

The residents won’t be able to refuse the King’s orders if they don’t want to die.

However, if an impossible request is asked than loyalty will fall and a resistance army will be established.

You can appoint the nobility. The nobles are subject to the taxes and benefits of their territory.

Royal Knights can be installed.

You can select a state religion. Many residents believe in the Goddess Freya.When a state religion is established, any missionary work related to that religion will become smooth thanks to the Goddess of Luck.

But there will be strong opposition from other religions.

-The construction of a palace is necessary for many internal affairs and governing.

The King was able to exercise a strong authority. Fame, Dignity and Charm were best when dealing with residents. Any quest could be given or property taken away by compulsion.

“There is a reason for trying to obtain power.”

Even after the coronation ceremony ended, the users and residents didn’t scatter to other places. Their eyes were sparkling with expectations. This was the first time a kingdom was established on the Versailles Continent.

Even the release of Huksaeng (drink) from the warehouses would

be looked upon favourable. Morata was a financially rich city so they were expecting even more.

It was Weed's extreme crisis! People were still flocking towards the Central Square and the streets.

Weed used Lion's Roar again.

"Morata has made 4 Grand Buildings!"

"Kyaaaak!"

"Waaaaaah!"

The sound of cheering filled the city.

"The Arpen Kingdom is a great place to live every day!"

"Hooray King Weed!"

The beginners that started in Morata responded loudly. It even reached unknowing users outside Morata's walls. More users were connected than normal in order to watch the coronation. More than 500,000 users were cheering King Weed!

Irene was worried about the situation right now.

“The atmosphere seems to be escalating. What is he going to do?”

Pale also had similar concerns. Even if the coronation ceremony was simple, astronomical funds would still end up being used.

“If this continues then it will be difficult……”

The atmosphere of the crowd was becoming alarming as they kept on being incited!

Surka and Mapan was the same.

“I really am worried. What will he do?”

“Judging by Weed’s personality, a large incident could occur.”

The target they were worried about wasn’t Weed. It was the crowd gathered at Morata! Weed knew how to take advantage of all the gathered people. If they felt tricked by his sweet words than things might get out of hand!

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

“As the Arpen Kingdom’s commerce and military expands, the area will become stable for everyone.”

“Hooray His Majesty!”

“The treatment of blacksmiths and tailors will improve and they will be able to concentrate on their work.”

“King, King, King!”

“I promise I will continue to implement support policies for artists in the kingdom.”

“I believe in the Arpen Kingdom!”

The crowd’s joy reached its peak.

To be honest, there were many people who suspected that Weed’s attitude changed after he rose to the position of King. But he made large promises to many groups!

Weed had no choice but to talk like this.

“Morata’s art and cultural community will continue to develop. Morata will become the capital of the Arpen Kingdom!”

“Waaaaaah!”

Cheers for the King and the Arpen Kingdom continued to emerge without any breaks.

He could speak fluently whether scratching the itch of a crowd or threatening Yellowy. He had the natural temperament of a con artist and he knew how to drive a herd mentality!

“If art and culture isn’t delayed than the Arpen Kingdom will continue to prosper. The number of artworks will increase and new performances will be held!”

Weed’s words aroused the users’ sympathy. Many users raised their stats from looking at the sculptures and paintings in Morata. Some were less relevant to battle like Courage or Charm but all the stats went up permanently. If art and culture developed then it would be easy to raise a person’s fame and ask for commissions from merchants.

“So I’m going to create a sculpture of an unprecendented scale to commemorate the founding of the Arpen Kingdom. And I’m giving you a chance to participate if you want to!”

King Weed, the best sculptor on the continent was giving them a chance to participate in his work!

“Please let me do it!”

“I want to make it.”

More than anywhere else, the Morata users were used to labour. They were involved in the creation of the Art Centre as well as the 4 Grand Buildings. Users who migrated from the Rosenheim

Kingdom also had experience with creating the pyramid. If Weed spread the rumour that a giant sculpture was being created than a crowd would follow. The fearsome support army, the Grass Porridge Cult consisted of 3,700,000 people alone!

'Now it isn't too late.'

Compared to other professions, the proficiency of Sculpting grew quite slowly. Obtaining the materials and manually working on it himself would take a long time. He had made a lot of sculptures since reaching advanced level 8 but the growth of his skill proficiency was still slow. In order to overcome this, Weed decided to not make the sculptures alone.

'There are a few stages left in my Master Quest. If the rest of the commission requires using the lifeforms to fight than it might end quicker than I thought.'

If he postponed the difficult battle then the sculptural lifeforms would grow stronger and his prospect of success will rise. Instead of making rushed sculptures, he should raise his skill so that he could complete the remaining requests quickly.

His Class Master Quest!

Weed aimed for a large reversal at the final stage.

Book 29: Worst Destiny

Chapter 1: Failed Sculpture

Morata became the main attraction on the continent as beginners starting Royal Road started flooding it.

“I’m really looking forward to it.”

“That’s why there are so many people. I want to quickly go hunt and enjoy adventures.”

The nationality of the users who started in Morata was affiliated with the Arpen Kingdom. The new kingdom ruled by King Weed! The beginners had to stay in Morata for 4 weeks. It was a large urban area so there were minor quests such as delivering books, materials transport etc.

“You worked hard.”

“Thank you very much! If you need any more work then please come again.”

“Do you mind some hard work?”

“Of course not. Please let me do it!”

They gained 10 copper, 20 copper and slowly collected money. The prepared money was able to buy them a rusty long sword and

leather armour.

The residents would give them quests in the future and would conduct trades so the beginners tried to raise their intimacy early.

The beginners in Morata also ate grass porridge.

“The streets are clean and spacious. There are also many new buildings.”

“Did you see the shacks on Painter’s Hill? There are many things to be seen there.”

“Shall we go?”

“Yes. It is one of the twelve famous places in Morata.”

“Where are the other places?”

“Bingryong Square in the evening, Freya’s statue by the lake, the back alley of the Cathedral, the tailors gathered at the market on Central Square, the Art Centre, the Tower of Light! And other places. I saw it from the broadcast.”

“So let’s go play at Painter’s Hill!”

It was a village filled with sculptures, artwork, performances and

Grand Buildings! Even if the history was short, there were many things to see. A person could just roam around and enjoy the day.

“Keheok… It is up to here.”

“Ugh, I want to see more places.”

The amount the beginners could explore was limited by their vitality. A user who learnt the cooking skill dejectedly passed the grass porridge boxed lunch to a friend.

“Do you know what profession you’re going to select?”

“I’m going to follow Weed-nim and become a sculptor. In the future I would also like to go on such adventures on the continent.”

“It isn’t easy to go on adventures as a sculptor…. Well I’ll cook you tasty dishes. Later visit the restaurant among the shacks.”

“Uh, yes.”

The friends wandered as the sun set. Then they climbed the hill hand in hand and watched the night view from the Tower o Light. They saw the rock where grand ambitions were inscribed.

-Collect and sell any japtem.

-I had a hard time as a beginner so I want to sleep at night without being troubled.

-Prepare for a home early.

-Sincerely pay taxes to preserve the peace.

It was unknown how long the poor handwriting carved with a knife had been there. There were many places to see and enjoy in the city but the beginners' dream was to collect 4 gold and enter the Art Centre.

"Let's join the Grass Porridge Cult.

"I'm going to gain money and buy a shack."

4 weeks passed for the beginners and they could finally leave the gate! Normally they would hunt deer or rabbit and grow gradually. However Weed had other intentions when he established his kingdom in Morata's Central Square.

Beginners hunting near Morata and nearby cities gathered and heard his words. Users were continually entering through the north, south, east and west gates on horses or carriages. Of course the broadcasting stations also came out to cover the story.

"It's starting now."

“It is the first time I’m seeing a coronation… How exciting.”

“What did you say before? I couldn’t hear you over the noise from this crowd.”

“It looks like the crown is being handed over……”

“Already?”

“Huh, it’s over?”

“It ended this quickly?”

The ceremony proceeded at super speed without any performances from bards or a tournament between knights. The crowd were disappointed but hesitated to scatter.

They had affection for Morata so they wanted an event to mark the establishment of the Arpen Kingdom. And then there was Weed’s declaration to create a large, historical sculpture that would make Arpen prosper!

Until now users had only seen the words created by artists but now they were given an opportunity to participate. It was a scale that didn’t exist in the history of the continent and they could contribute to a great work! They shivered at the thought of such an honour after hearing Weed’s yell.

“Hooray King Weed!”

“I want to do it!”

A fanatical heat swept through the square. This was a huge opportunity that might not return if they didn’t participate. He was giving a boost to the city so the Weed’s esteem started to rise in the hearts of the pure beginners.

“He really is a great king.”

“Yes. He is considering the plight of beginners like us and understands even when we have such low levels.”

The naive players thought he wasn’t going to raise taxes! But Pale’s party knew the truth.

It would be forced labour as soon as they joined the team to make the sculpture! He didn’t rally the forces and make them do it by force. Instead he deliberately lured them so they couldn’t escape

Weed was creating a sculpture of a scale that didn’t exist in history yet so it was difficult to not participate. Maybe that’s what he intended by making the budget for the coronation ceremony 30 gold. A grand plan to turn the large crowd in the square into labourers!

Surka analysed it with a cool head.

“I think Weed-nim’s voice was trembling because of the construction costs.”

Mapan felt such an eerie feeling that goose bumps appeared on his skin.

“I really have a lot to learn.”

The crowd was moved by Weed!

A good businessman needed to be able to scam people. He couldn’t imagine what the largest construction would be.

“Come on, let’s go!”

Weed led the crowd out of the gates. He moved along a pretty flower path towards the mountain. This was the mountain region with quarry mines.

“You should be able to carry them one by one. Move quickly. It will be difficult if it is too late. It will be hard to move once the sun sets.”

The crowd carrying rocks and minerals formed a procession like a swarm of ants. Weed’s destination was a wide wasteland where not even a single blade of grass grew. The distance was so far that Morata’s walls and buildings couldn’t be seen.

A procession of workers that exceeded 100,000 people headed to the mountains from Morata. They carried necessary materials such as stone and wood.

The beginners were henceforth faithful workers.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

“The land price is also cheap… This place won’t rise much later on so it is good to leave sculptures here.”

Weed quite liked the wasteland.

Sculptures were influenced by the terrain and natural environment. If Weed designed the sculpture in a barren place then it might result in a higher effect.

The sculptor was supposed to be the largest one in history so it needed a vast area.

“Bring more stones!”

“The foundation here needs to be steadier. Dig deeper and let’s get started.”

The workers committed to carrying the stones from the mountains through the forest. The number of users who believed

in Weed and decided to participate in creating the sculpture couldn't be counted.

There were slightly high level users migrated from the Central Continent and Rosenheim Kingdom.

The beginners that started in Morata and members from the Grass Porridge Grass also joined and completely changed the appearance of the wastelands.

Weed specified the designated land and the rocks were stacked up there. It was a massive scale like the Great Wall of Chine or a pyramid was being built. It was a huge civil engineering project run by the King.

"Collect your children and come work quickly."

"Ummoooooo."

Yellowy and his children also carried the rocks.

Various construction materials were piled up! A small mountain of rocks and dirt was already formed.

"What are you going to create?"

"I don't know. I'll just make it once all the materials are collected."

Weed wanted to make a large sculpture so the users had gathered big, usable rocks. The Arpen Kingdom was the first one founded so there was a lot of interest in Weed's business. Roads were being connected in Morata while architects were laying the foundation to build a square.

Weed decided to set a working area where 32 sculptures could be placed. It was so big that he wouldn't be able to manage it alone.

"I have to recruit some disciples."

He couldn't carve 32 sculptures in his large workshop alone. If someone did the minimal trim on the sculpture then the work would become easier. Weed placed an advertisement on Morata's gates as the best sculptor on the continent.

-Weed wants a disciple.

Hello!

Sculptor Weed is working with a friendly atmosphere in the wasteland. He is looking for disciples to trim the sculptors together.

Every day 21 hours will be spent creating the sculptor and 3 hours running errands.

Anyone can apply.

4 coppers an hour.

However, the probationary period is 3 days and only half the salary will be paid.

If you receive an injury while making the sculpture then it will be bandaged.

No days off.

No additional pay will be given for working at night.

Hospitality-Grass porridge will be provided as a meal 3 times a day and you can lay down anywhere in the workshop to sleep.

There will be rabbit soup twice a month for dinner. However you need to catch the rabbits directly.

Always recruiting.

People with experience in sculpting preferred. It doesn’t matter if you are novices. People with sincerity rather than talent will be preferred.

The worst working conditions! Still, it was a chance to become

Weed's disciple so there was no shortage of people.

"Is it really going to be like he wrote?"

"Even so, I want to become a disciple. I can learn his skills."

From beginners to senior magicians, the applicants gathered like clouds. Weed held brief 10 minute interviews.

"Do you know sculpting?"

"Yes!"

"I learnt it a little while ago."

The applicants standing in front of Weed were nervous and couldn't breathe properly. Many people who dreamed of becoming a sculptor started in Morata. They had large aspirations for sculpting so they had prepared in advance.

"Can you continue to trim the sculpture even when it is raining or your stomach is empty?"

"Yes? Of course... My body can continue even when the weather is bad."

"Pass!"

Beginners who didn't possess the sculpting skill were also supported.

"Limbs intact and…. Do you have a lot of time?"

"Yes. I have a lot of time to spare because I'm unemployed."

"Pass!"

Weed pulled 700 disciples in an instant! Weed had the novice sculptors start to prepare the rocks. The complete beginners helped by running errands.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

A famous sculptor called Depth who had intermediate sculpting was also supported by the disciples. He had moved to Morata from Rhodium in order to raise his fame as a sculptor.

"I've always admired you. I hope we get along well in the future."

"Yes. You're quite proficient in making sculptures so you'll have a lot of work."

"Give me any work you want."

Depth had decent sculpting skill so he was given the task of refining the sculptures. He directed the exterior to be trimmed to the height Weed indicated as well as the basic form of the sculpture.

“This is enough to start working.”

Weed used the Sculpting Knife and tools like a chisel in order to create the giant form of a person. He spread the Wings of Light and created a mysterious atmosphere.

“There is no need to use too much technique. It just needs to be faithful to the prototype even if it is a little clunky.”

Tang! Tang! Tang!

He commenced carving away at the rocks. Weed had level 8 advanced sculpting so he gradually revealed the beauty of the stone. He expressed the smoothness and magnificence of the large rocks that had been on the mountains for hundreds of years. Perseverance and vitality was necessary in order to slash at the hard rocks.

A sculpture was born with his passion and commitment. It was said that all noble art was born from hardship.

“If I ever have a child then I’m not letting them become a sculptor!”

Weed understood why parents wouldn't want their children to have the same job. Something had to be experienced in order to be properly understood.

Royal Road was a difficult and dangerous place but even a sculpture in reality would have a hard life. Of course, he was doing well to the extent that he was respected but he wouldn't recommend it to his children.

"If they just commit moderate sins and study hard then they will succeed."

The hearts of most parents were probably similar. Weed occasionally looked down at the ground to see lots of people working. The road leading up to the wasteland was full of people piling up a mountain of rocks.

They were making a marble building in accordance with the number of sculptures. Everyone was working tremendously under Weed's direction from above.

"There's no time to rest."

Weed didn't delay and continued slashing at the rocks. While he was making the sculpture the Wyverns, Bingryong and Phoenix visited.

"You came again. Go and hunt."

“Master, Master! Today I ate 2 horses.”

“Eat until you’re full. I’m a little busy.”

“Delicious. Horse meat is always delicious. Master.”

“Yes, I know it is delicious. So go have some more.”

Silver Bird also sometimes had serious worries.

“Golden Bird’s eyes are sometimes strange when looking at me. But it isn’t in a way I don’t like.”

Phoenix came in the middle of the day and made it even hotter.

“Master, this sculpture seems great.”

He apparently didn’t have anything to do and closely watched Weed making the sculpture with his hot body. Weed’s perseverance was already at the bottom.

Then Wy-3 flew over.

“Master, I ate 3 horses today. Do you think I’ve gained weight?”

Weed had spent little time with his sculptural lifeforms these days. So they kept on coming back repeatedly in order to see Weed.

And they were sculptural lifeforms so they had a strong interest in the art Weed was creating.

“Wy-3.”

“Master. Speak.”

“Let’s stay together for a long time.”

“Understood Master.”

But Weed didn’t hit him angrily to make him go away. He wanted his sculptural lifeforms to stay with him in order to make them work for a long time.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The expectations of the crowd in Morata were enormous.

“Look at that massive scale. What on earth is being made that is that wide?”

“Is it the Royal Palace?”

“Doesn’t it really seem like it?”

Weed was making something with marble. There seemed to be 32

sculptures and if they looked closely then they seemed like buildings from different kingdoms. It didn't seem that luxurious but there were pillars of marble that seemed to be lining a large space.

Stones were dug from the nearby quarry but the marble naturally wasn't free. It was bought from another village in the north so it consumed the Arpen Kingdom's budget. The funds invested in this were enough to build 3 Grand Buildings.

The people were so curious they couldn't stand it.

"Why is he creating such a tremendous sculpture?"

"If the finances from the Arpen Kingdom are invested in it then wouldn't it immediately decline?"

Given the scale of the construction, it was like money was literally being poured into it. Right now the residents of the Kingdom had the highest loyalty and security.

The future of Morata and Vargo Fortress was very hopeful. If the state's finances were consumed excessively then taxes would increase and the residents would naturally be dissatisfied.

In addition, it might not end with just a tax increase. Eventually security would deteriorate and the number of bandits would rise. The users were anxious about the something going wrong with the Arpen Kingdom.

Weed was always trying to squeeze as much as possible from the budget but an unprecedented sum of money was already invested in the construction. Other cities didn't even have the funds for 3 Grand Buildings so there weren't many people who understood. It might be understandable if they were building a palace or military facility but these funds were being spent on a sculpture!

While a great deal of interest was being shown to Weed's sculpture, the face of the sculpture slowly started being revealed. No matter how they looked at it, the sculpture was just that of a plain looking woman.

The users who carried the stones slumped as they had expected a great work.

"Is he really trying to make a Magnum Opus?"

"No way. The Ice Beauty Weed created is dramatically beautiful."

"The Goddess of Freya Statue is also pretty."

Weed's sculptures were a great pride to the Morata users and they felt admiration every time they saw it. The sight of the rising morning sun through the morning mist on the Goddess of Freya Statue was really dazzling. Weed had the Morata users' active support so it was hard to believe he would create such an ordinary sculpture.

“This is a complete failure.”

“I agree. There is no law that Weed will succeed with every sculpture.”

“It seems like his abilities have degenerated.”

“Hey. I’m just going hunting. This is a waste of money and time.”

The users ranged from disappointed to concerned. The result was too mediocre for the hard work of so many people.

“If it is only that degree then it isn’t worth learning.”

The disciples and workers who participated became disgruntled and started quitting one after another. It was to the extent that secret rumours spread through Morata’s back alleys.

“Bardray killed him so his sense of sculpting must’ve fallen.”

“I never really thought that much of Weed’s sculptures. Hasn’t he just been lucky in the meantime?”

They didn’t dare speak openly because they were scared of the Grass Porridge Cult but a lot of people who came to Morata started making accusations of Weed.

The crowd that had cheered passionately when Weed revealed his plan had their hearts turned cold. A colossal amount of funds and people have been invested in this work so they couldn't help feeling disappointed. A sculptor truly carried a heavy burden.

"What is he going to do?"

"It doesn't seem that good based on this."

Irene and Surka watched Weed hanging from the sculpture. It was becoming troublesome like they expected. The hearts of Weed's party would hurt the most at a time like this.

Weed completed the first sculpture while receiving distrust. People looked up from the square without any expectations.

Weed carved the double folded eyelid and the sculpture was completed!

-The statue of the Goddess Hestia has been born!

Hestia has defended the Versailles Continent since ancient times. She is in charge of the family hearth and loves creative abilities.

Her statue was destroyed in a war so her existence is only known in the dwarven and human records.

The restoration of a Goddess Hestia statue will have great

religious significance to the dwarves on the Versailles Continent.

The completion of the first Statue of Goddess Hestia has been recorded in history.

Those who admire the Statue of Goddess Hestia will have health, mana regeneration and vitality increased by 35% for a day.

The effect of spirit magic and attack skills will increase by 11%.

This is a religious statue so the Faith stat will permanently increase by 7.

Sculptors, Bards and Painters will have their Art stat permanently increased by 9.

Goddess Hestia's blessings will irregularly be given to artist professions.

The ability of humans and dwarves to deal with fire has improved by 13%.

There is a 4% chance for a magician's fire magic to have an unquenchable effect.

The Art stat has permanently increased by 6 points due to the creation of an ancient work of art.

Statue of Goddess Hestia!

Just watching the finished sculpture permanently increased some stats.

“Weed created a sculpture of the Goddess Hestia?”

“Wow, the real deal!”

The people who believed in Weed and watched the completion of his work were able to enjoy the effects and obtain the stats. The people who carried the heavy materials for the sculpture felt as light as a feather.

Ddiring!

-The Statue of Goddess Hestia has been completed and Arpen Kingdom’s political power has expanded.

Relationship with the dwarves has improved.

The influence of the new religion will give residents positive hope.

Every person visiting Morata heard that a statue of Goddess Hestia was created.

“He really is Sculptor Weed. The God of Sculpting!”

“I moved chunks of stone 7 times! I really suffered making the statue!”

“I unconditionally believed in Weed’s sculpture from the beginning.”

“Let’s quickly go and carry the stones.”

“The taste of the grass porridge is best after working.”

In addition to the beginners, candidates came from outside Morata and the number of applicants increased infinitely. The number of workers supporting after one day was 300,000 people.

The people who played a role in creating the Statue of Goddess Hestia received more specific blessings. They gained slightly more Faith, Strength and Perseverance. Even their contribution to the Arpen Kingdom increased so they couldn’t give up this chance!

A massive amount of stones were stacked up in the construction area.

“Use your body weight when swinging the pickaxe.”

“It is easier to carry the stones if you bend at the waist and shoulder. Then keeping on looking straight ahead no matter

what.”

“Don’t try to forcibly carry too much. It is faster to carry a lighter weight 3 times than it is to carry a heavy stone once.”

The experienced users from the Rosenheim Kingdom who participated in creating the pyramid gave advice to the beginners.

“Is it hard?”

“No. It’s okay.”

Pale and Maylon once again showed their affection as they carried the stones. Surka was still waiting to meet a good man.

“That looks too big so hall I break it?”

“That would be good… Is it possible?”

“Yon han kwon!”

Pa pa pa pa pak!

Surka’s fists broke the rock! She carried heavy stones that even men didn’t dare pick up.

“Hello.”

“Thank you, Priest-nim.”

Irene and other priests welcomed the players who worked hard. Cooks appeared and offered food to workers who carried the stone. The terrain changed every day through the extensive labour.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Vent Castle!

It was an important gateway to protect Mordred, the capital of the Niflheim Empire. The Empire’s Capital had collapsed completely and after the north became covered with ice and monsters, the army made sure to keep the gates of Vent Castle locked.

“This will protect our lives. One day the Niflheim Empire will rise again!”

The knights fought against the monsters and protected the castle. The days were filled with severe ice storms. Vent Castle was the only place where the people in the north lived.

They became self-sufficient with food as they lived within the boundaries of monsters. Then the Northern Continent recovered its mild climate again but they still didn’t open their gates.

“The north is dangerous. And the person who inherited the Niflheim Kingdom hasn’t appeared yet.”

The knights and soldiers ruled Vent Castle!

Meanwhile other areas of the north received Goddess Freya’s blessings and harvested many crops. The price of Morata’s food became cheaper and the birth rate in the village miraculously increased. The hunters and soldiers scattered through the north to live. They struggled in the freezing cold weather and died fighting monsters while residents would give birth. The result was the growth of a small village.

Meanwhile Morata’s political power in the area increased.

The waves of change also came to Vent Castle.

“Excuse me… I’ve come to sell food.”

Gamong was a novice merchant from Morata.

“Disappear quickly!”

The knights of Vent Castle heartlessly tried to drive her away. But Gamong was familiar with such reception. Her fame wasn’t high and she didn’t have a lot of trading experience.

Merchant activities in the north weren’t that good. If she went to

the Central Continent with Morata's specialties then she could get good treatment. That's why most of the users traded back and forth with the Central Continent or between players in Morata.

Roaming the north with a trade wagon wasn't a good idea. There were many dangerous monsters around the roads so it was difficult for merchants to move. The development of other villages in the north was slow so they didn't have specialities like Morata.

"But a merchant's path is to establish a trade route first!"

Gamong didn't want to be like other merchants who pursued comfort. Usually merchants became respected in Morata before going to other large cities to trade. Fortunately there was a rich amount of product from Morata so she could go around selling it to the north. Gamong went around the north trading japtem.

"Please check the taste just once."

Gamong gave olives, wine and rice to the knights before leaving. Food had a shelf-life so it would rot if left for too long. This was a transaction where she only received a loss! However Gamong had hope.

"Morata will keep on getting bigger. And people live in the north so trade will start becoming active."

She roamed the north with food wagons from Morata. If she met monsters then she would give most of it away. Fortunately she also

sold it to travellers, soldiers and other lords but she couldn't say that she made a profit.

"Ya ya. That's crazy. Don't do it."

"Having just one store in Morata will collect money. All you have to do is eat and then play."

Every merchant she met in a bar tried to stop her. Gamong watched the Tower of Light at night and didn't give up hope.

"I'm going to be a large trade merchant. I will pull 1,000 trades..."

So she toured the northern area for a few months. She didn't earn money but the income she found was a fast and safe route between small villages and a rise in intimacy with local residents.

"Would you like to see Vent Castle?"

She was handing out food in a mountain village when a grandmother of one of the residents asked.

"Yes. But I've almost given up. It isn't easy."

"One of the guards is my grandchild... If you mention my name then he might let you in."

Ddiring!

-You have acquired information on how to enter Vent Castle.

Gamong was so excited that she couldn't speak. She could enter the castle that allowed no-one in for the first time! If it was any other class then she would be interested in the quests but she was a merchant. She was interested in what she could buy and sell there. Gamong arrived at Vent Castle 2 days later.

"Hrmm... I've heard about the good deeds you've done in this area by distributing food. I'll grant my grandmother's request."

Vent Castle was a relic from the Niflheim Empire. The goods that could be traded in the stores also reflected the technology of that time.

"I... I'll now become a wealthy merchant!"

Gamong cried out as she rejoiced. If she took the goods from Vent Castle elsewhere then she could obtain huge money. It was an exclusive trade because there were no competitors!

She didn't know how long the monopoly would last since other merchants would start knocking on Vent Castle's doors now that Gamong succeeded. Before the monopoly period ended, she would build intimacy and obtain vital information on products.

Gamong bought items and armour from Vent Castle with

excellent workmanship that could be sold at an affordable price in Morata. Vent Castle had been closed off so their items and armour were kept at a low price.

She brought a huge amount of food from Morata to Vent Castle.

“Now. Morata’s specialties! Lamb and beer, rice, tomatoes, cheese, wine, today they are all sold really cheaply! Come fast!”

“Merchant-nim. How much is this?”

“4 copper please. I’ll give you a little bit more.”

She ran out of stock in an instant after selling it at the square.

-You have sold food to Vent Castle’s inhabitants at a low price.

Trading Fame has increased by 24.

Charm has increased by 3.

Gamong thought of the distant future as she sold all the food. It was possible to receive 3~4 times the purchase price so the deal was profitable for her. Her fame and intimacy increased after selling a lot of food from Morata. And the reaction came immediately when she purchased goods from Vent Castle’s stores.

“Gamong is a good merchant. I was waiting for your visit. This doesn’t sell very well... Would you like to see? I will increase the quantity sold to you.”

A merchant couldn’t buy goods unlimitedly even if they had the money. There was a certain quantity of weapons and armours that would be sold.

“Hehehe, I’m rich. Rich!”

Gamong was given a large sum of money and fame as a merchant.

It was difficult to imagine as a novice merchant but every trade accumulated. A merchant normally had thick stomach that rocked every time they walked.

Gamong wasn’t the only one who benefited from it. When the food from Morata was grown or processed, Vent Castle’s birth rate would increase. Merchants had a large contribution to the stability of a region.

The trade was successful and the closed up attitude of Vent Castle slowly loosened.

“According to the goblins, a sculptor called Weed has succeeded in great adventures. The goblins are good at lying so I don’t know how reliable they are... But it is surprising that we are the only ones who don’t know about Weed.”

“Is this warm climate really due to Weed’s adventures?”

“We’re trying to restore the honour of the Niflheim Empire but we’ve heard a lot of rumours about Weed.”

“Is it true that Morata is more prosperous than Vent Castle?”

“Was the Arpen Kingdom really founded? Well... These days I keep on hearing stories about Weed and Morata so it might really be possible.”

All the residents in Vent Castle also knew about Weed.

“A vagabond said that Weed is creating a huge sculptor. Morata must be an amazing city thanks to his sculptures.”

“The food we’re eating has been grown in Morata... That toasted bread is very delicious.”

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

“This is suitable to be a workroom.”

The blacksmith Herman left Kuruso in the Dwarf Kingdom and arrived in Morata. Herman was also challenging the Blacksmith Master Quest and his ultimate target was to make the best sword.

That’s why he came here.

“Hestia’s Forge will be very helpful.”

Kuruso had a rich abundance of high quality iron and metals. The treatment of dwarf blacksmiths was also good. The prices for equipment made at Kuruso’s forges were 2~3 times that of other places.

Despite these many conveniences, Hestia’s Forge was better at making products so 1 in 5 blacksmiths came to Morata including Herman. He didn’t come alone and was accompanied by many other dwarven blacksmiths. The dwarves were keen to see the land.

“This place is good. The land is flat and wide. We can build a house and forge here.”

“Kya! This beer taste is amazing. I need to drink in order to build a house.”

“Isn’t it beer brewed by humans?”

“You won’t understand until you try it. This beer tastes good like steel.”

The dwarves’ agility and handicraft meant they could use construction techniques. They wanted to buy land close to Hestia’s Forge and the vacant land was wide and spacious. And the

minimum value of the land started from 4,500 gold!

"The land value is so expensive!"

"This isn't a main street. The price is strangely expensive."

"But it isn't to the extent that we won't buy it……"

The dwarves went to the government office and purchased the land. Weed had considered this when he built Hestia's Forge.

'This is the location with the most potential for growth.'

Other people wouldn't have thought of land speculation at the time. Weed took ownership of the land and waited for the rich dwarves to move. He had this in mind from the moment he started building Hestia's Forge.

Chapter 2: Garden Of The Gods

Weed's coronation ceremony spread and every user was interested in the north. There were millions of people currently in Morata but there was no publicity.

Unlike Bardray and the Hermes Guild's dazzling coronation in the Haven Kingdom, it became known that Weed only spent 30 gold. He spent millions of gold on the Grand Buildings yet only 30 gold on his coronation.

"This... It really does seem like a fairy-tale king has been selected."

"Kya! So different. He didn't spend a large amount of money on the event because he cares for the residents."

"The village will grow with the king. I knew it."

Unlike Weed's actual intention, praise calling him a great ruler spread.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Weed decided that the name of the place would be called the Garden of the Gods.

Apart from the sculptures, a temple was built with flowers and trees being planted. If it was just the sculptures then it would look slightly lonely. Many people worked on the sculptures, garden and architecture so it was like a large scale business.

It was necessary to grow flowers and trees to raise his Affinity to Nature. There was no sense in planting trees that grew in forests or the mountains. Plants that grew on cliffs and rocky crevices would just die when moved to a botanical garden. In order to grow something in the barren wasteland, water was dragged through a channel from the river.

It was a project that required enormous commitment and the exploitation of the workers!

“Keohohoheok……”

“Let’s have a short breather.”

“I think I can go a little further.”

“Haven’t you heard? Romomo-nim died this morning while holding the stone. Take a break.”

“Kuheuhuk. No wonder why I haven’t seen him.”

Beginners that carried a heavy burden were also killed. Only 3 sculptures had been completed but it was already an essential place for priests and paladins to visit.

The Faith stat was important because it improved holy magic and combat skills. Those who prayed enthusiastically at the Garden of the Gods would receive more special benefits.

“Weed-nim really is thinking about the priests and paladins.”

“Yes. He really is doing a lot for our classes.”

Weed wasn’t just thinking of those classes.

“There is no useless regionalism or class discrimination in the Arpen Kingdom.”

It didn’t matter if people started in the north or came from the centre of the continent. Any user who paid taxes would be treated fairly!

It was no surprise that the Garden of the Gods spread on the internet. Videos and screenshots of the construction was placed on Royal Road’s bulletin boards and the users paid it a lot of attention. It was also introduced through KMC Media and CTS Media.

“Another sculpture in Morata……”

“The scale surpasses all imagination.”

Priests from the centre, east, west and south areas of the

continent went on an expedition to Morata.

“It increases Faith… You have to come see it.”

The core of priest associated classes was hunting with a party. Priests had blessings, protection spells and healing abilities were critical in stopping the party from dying.

Therefore competition among priests existed and they were sensitive on how much health they could recover with magic at once. People who could heal a warrior by 1,730 would be more popular than those who could recover 1,500 health. The job of a priest was to support the hunting party so they needed a lot of self-confidence.

Morata was quite a long way from the Central Continent but the priests thought it was worth it and embarked on a pilgrimage. The users with clergy affiliated classes gathered en masse in Morata by riding horses, carriages or using a merchant’s ship.

“Going dungeon hunting. I’m a priest.”

“Opportunity to get treated by a priest more then level 200. Items will be shared between 2 people.”

“I’m a priest who will serve the party without questioning them. Please state your conditions.”

It was important to find good priests when hunting on the

continent. It was to the extent that priests could state a ransom in some areas.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

"This is the 14th quest finished."

Bardray was ahead of most people in the Class Master Quest. He was commissioned to fight the cannibalistic monster the Kajanka!

He relayed it to each broadcasting station in a live feed when he received the request. The battle video had the best audience ratings for that time slot. The hosts all praised his strength and skill.

"How can he fight like that?"

"It is amazing how often he aims for the weak points. It is close to perfection."

"If there is a god then he might fight like this... There doesn't seem to be anyone capable of fighting Bardray."

Bardray had popularity, fame and the power of the Hermes Guild! But the video with the highest viewership was his battle with Weed.

Bardray also watched back Weed's battles. Weed drew his sword

against the warriors of the Hermes Guild.

'His attack skills flows naturally from his body.'

Weed's fierce attacks weren't broken. The Heriam Fencing that Bardray knew only went up to a maximum of 6 consecutive attacks. That alone was incredible when looking at the Royal Guards.

But Weed had succeeded 16 times against the assassins. Bardray was shocked at his movements.

'How can that be?'

He found other combat videos of Weed.

'He surprises the monsters with his Fighting Spirit and them cuts them while they're hesitating. Once he strikes the monsters first, he continuously attacks without any room for counterattacks. When surrounded on all sides, he deliberately induces a reaction to create a gap where he can attack the monster's back. He manages to escape when besieged from all sides so he must be familiar with fighting. What type of combat experience has he had?'

It was really difficult to imitate the attack style he used against the Bone Dragon. Just damaging the Bone Dragon's when it flying through the air required a large amount of courage. Most users sensibly chose to attack from a long range. Yet Weed rode a wyvern and battled the Bone Dragon in the air.

“Doesn’t this behaviour indicate that his skill and level is quite high?”

Even when he was the Lich Shire, an orc or commanding the Dark Elves, Weed always managed to succeed at the last moment. He was an expert at finding the enemy’s weak point and damaging it! The more he looked Weed’s battles, the more amazing he thought it was.

‘If skills, level and equipment was removed, could I win in an equal 1 on 1 sword fight?’

Weed was very fast. But Bardray’s speed also increased thanks to various blessings. He also rode the finest horse Rindullin. When the difference in reaction speed and range of skills was taken into consideration, they were approximately equal.

However Weed was the one who took the lead in his attacks. He took the most difficult route by aiming for a weak spot and attacking it 2 times, 3 times, etc. in a row.

‘And the numerous irregular attacks……’

Weed’s swinging sword caused a flow.

Quick, quick, slow, quick, strong, slow, strong, quick, strong!

The strikes were like a storm and the body would become bloody and confused as it tried to catch up. He changed the rhythm so it was like he had different personalities when fighting several people.

Those who fought against it directly couldn't understand unless they viewed it from a distance. Bardray used his secret sword techniques but he was still battered. The glitz and glamour was hiding the aggression. The destructive manner was enough to cause a chill down his back.

'It is fortunate that his offensive power was weaker. It could've been dangerous.'

He knew that the attacks didn't deal that much damage so he could counterattack strongly.

'What happens if he uses that against monsters?'

Bardray never thought of other people's combat style.

His method of hunting efficiently was to keep a balance between distribution and mana, maintain a reasonable balance and wreak havoc with his skills.

But Weed displayed a fighting style that was a stage higher. He enjoyed the fight and threw everything into it.

'It was a decent attempt. Hunting has become more fascinating.'

Bardray realized something that he was personally lacking. It was reflected in his Class Master Quest. Every time he fought monsters or other knights, it was easy to grasp the opponent's weak points by referring to Weed's battle style.

'I have to practice striking one point over and over.'

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

"Faster!"

"Three wagons containing red stones are here!"

"Lay it from here to here."

Users filled the construction site of the Garden of the Gods. The passed the place where the square had been completed and the temple would soon be built.

"As expected, this is really interesting. The construction labourers are really working together."

Weed proudly watched the construction workers. This was the taste of power. Their working pace while digging and carrying was so fast it transcended imagination.

"If it is this much then the other structures will be finished

before the sculptures.”

Weed was making a statue of a god he saw in Ratzeberg. In the case of gods forgotten by the world, a new religion would be born when the statue was completed. Once other sculptors knew what type of work was being done, the progress became faster.

Weed left the lower portions of the sculpture to them while concentrating on the more time consuming parts.

“The chance to participate in a work of the gods won’t come again.”

“Yes. We can gain a lot by participating in the work.”

The disciples became motivated and increased their workload.

“Uaaaack!”

Sometimes a sculptor would neglect to tie their ropes properly and would fall to their death. However the sculptor never forgot their pride in the job. Working with Weed raised their secondary stats, skill proficiency and they obtained fame as a sculpture. Therefore they happily stayed up all night working.

By the time 4 sculptures were completed, hundreds of thousands of users were helping every day. When 6 sculptures were completed, the materials didn’t need to be gathered anymore and they just filled the square.

The Elves came and planted wildflowers and flowers representing each god.

By the time 10 sculptures were finished, the roads to Morata were opened. The work was being conducted at a frightening pace due to the crowds involved.

“Just yesterday I was on that mountain……”

“We all relocated in the morning.”

“Has the shape of the lake changed?”

“If you look at it from the air then Morata seems like it is collapsing.”

They were worried that the features of the terrain would change due to the construction. As soon as the foundation of the Garden of the Gods was completed, the people rushed to set up the pillars and exterior decorations for the temple. The walls contained images of the gods Weed was sculpting.

“What god is Weed-nim making this time?”

“The God of travel and time, Turoche!”

“Who is that?”

“I don’t know.”

“Another unknown god has appeared again?”

“But now quests have been given to players with Adventurer or Scholar professions. They have been asked to find out about Turoche.”

If Weed made a sculpture then the adventurers would obtain information about it. Once a sculpture was completed, a quest connected to the relevant god would be given.

“Oh, these words are related to Turoche!”

A message would be sent to each library looking for a description. Once information about Turoche was discovered, the quest completion window would pop up! The birth of a god would then lead to other quests.

“Ugh, it kills the flavour of beer. What request should I do next?”

“You’ve already completed Hestia’s request?”

“Yes. It wasn’t a difficult request so I finished it right away!”

Adventurers and requests were once again hot in Morata. The statues in the Garden of the Gods had an increasing influence on

local politics, new types of requests were generated and there were religious benefits.

Priests and clerics screamed with joy while adventurers went off on the road to complete requests. Meanwhile architects also gained skills by building the temple.

“This temple is too plain. We need to consider the attributes of Goddess Hestia. The dwarves need a comfortable place to visit.....”

“The temple doesn’t sell any beer?”

“Gulp! Business seems to be going well but wouldn’t this be better? A place needs to be left in the middle of the altar for a holy fire to burn.”

“Small chairs also need to be installed for the dwarves’ comfort.”

Thanks to Weed’s speech and the result of the sculptures, the temple erected received an overwhelming response from the crowd. The temple was constructed to be preserved and wouldn’t collapse for a long time.

The architects who created the building gained a lot of fame and skill proficiency. They showed various skills and made a beautiful building thanks to the crowd’s help.

Arpen’s financial status was strong thanks to Morata but the Garden of the Gods consumed the stored funds. However the

residents weren't worried about such things.

"Aren't the number of users increasing these days?"

"Yes. It isn't strange for beginners to start in the Arpen Kingdom anymore."

"It isn't just beginners. Users are flocking every day from the Central Continent."

"Indeed... Goods are being traded in the square. People are buying very expensive magic supplies right now."

The priest affiliated classes that came to see the Garden of the Gods was the main source. Some came alone but more often they came to Morata with people they were friendly with.

"This is the north!"

"I heard there are a lot of quests here so we came for adventures."

"Let's explore a dungeon."

The priest and paladins had no intention of leaving before the Garden of the Gods was completely finished. The number of people living in Morata increased as they swept through monsters and various requests. They also returned to Morata due to the beautiful

art and performances.

The people who came from the Central Continent paid the Arpen Kingdom's taxes, covering the necessary construction costs for the Garden of the Gods.

The priests even made offerings to particular gods which contributed to the construction expenses. The Morata beginners added a few coppers while the priests and paladins from the continent came up with a lump sum.

If they made contributions then it would be easier to become a high ranking priest of a new religion.

He also carved the likeness of the Orc God and the God of Barbarians.

Ddiring!

-The Orc's religion has been born.

The Orc's vengeful thoughts and culture will expand.

-The Barbarian's religion has been born.

If they come to the temple then they will obtain a strong power.

The degree of friendship with the Arpen Kingdom has risen.

The pride of the residents and users in the Arpen Kingdom rose as each sculpture was completed.

The Garden of the Gods gave never ending blessings to those living in the north. Those who participated in changing the wasteland also gained fame and honour.

A kingdom was an unbeatable culture was being built up day by day.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Weed spent 3 months on the Versailles Continent making the sculptures.

It was a tedious and hard work but he gained willpower from watching the users below.

“The population is increasing. I will earn taxes from them in the future!”

When he was making the Grand Buildings, they felt like a bottomless pit of money but now it was an amazing feature of Morata.

“I have to make sure the Arpen Kingdom’s population continues

to increase and that they won't go anywhere else. They have to stay in the kingdom and pay me taxes for their entire lives!"

Therefore a large public work like the Garden of the Gods was necessary.

It was like when looking at stores with flashy interiors. They were designed to induce the urge to enter and buy something. And the taxes couldn't be refunded even if they belatedly regretted it.

He couldn't be stingy in his investment to collect money from the residents.

"It has to look expensive. Later on I can raise the taxes! I can also scrape money from the tourists."

Architecture was useful in making a city famous. But he didn't plan to make the Garden of the Gods larger then necessary.

Ratzeberg was an important spot where the gods first entered the world. A lot of people had believed in those gods until they had been forgotten. When considering the religious and historical value, now was the best time to create the sculptures. He had to complete it before other sculptors or artists found Ratzeberg and informed the world about it.

"Business requires good timing!"

Weed's used his skills and the faith of the residents to create

wonderful sculptures.

“The rise in sculpting proficiency at advanced level 8 is really slow. I’ve confirmed it while making the sculptures!”

Currently Weed’s sculpting proficiency was advanced level 8. So far he had created 11 sculptures and gained 27% sculpting proficiency. He also gained stats from making works with historic and religious value!

Weed also received the blessings of the gods so his Handicraft, Cooking, Fishing and Sewing proficiency increased a little bit.

While the gods were no longer worshipped, their appearance would have a large and small effect on the continent. It wasn’t an exaggeration to say that Weed was the cause behind a grand event.

He had taken one more step along the path to a Master Sculptor.

“I don’t know whether I can make such expensive sculptures again if they are destroyed.”

Weed wanted to go fight but he continued with the tedious work.

The Goddess’ Knight Armour made from helium!

It was an equipment that received the blessings of the gods so options related to faith and defense were added. If he wore it then

fighting would become more fun but he now had to make sculptures every day.

A fierce cry erupted from the ground every time Weed finished a sculpture of a god. A large crowd was waiting and it was especially a priority for those involved in making the sculptures. He had to stomach making the sculptures for the future of the Arpen Kingdom.

“It must be hard, Master-nim.”

He used the Wings of Light and rope to carve the shoulders of the sculpture. He quietly trimmed the stone at night under the moonlight and the stars.

‘Other people are having fun hunting and adventuring.’

Weed envied them yet still called himself a fool Life was meant to be enjoyed in moderation yet he chose the difficult occupation of a sculptor.

He lived life eating barley bread while shedding tears. But he felt a sense of accomplishment and fulfilment when giving joy to people with his work. There was no one who hadn’t experienced hard work in their lives.

“Taxes… This will help increase taxes in the future.”

Weed was working on a sculpture at night when a visitor arrived.

He flew up near Weed on a big bird.

"Weed, it has been a while."

The dwarf blacksmith Herman! He owned a blacksmith shop near Hestia's Forge and provided tailor made armour and swords to people. There was a very long waiting line for Herman's equipment. Weed welcomed him happily.

"Hello. I heard that you settled in Morata. How have you been in the meantime?"

"Morata is a really nice city. I regret I didn't come here faster from Kuruso……By the way, speaking of Kuruso's farewell ceremony……"

Weed hadn't seen Herman since the day he fled from Kuruso's farewell ceremony.

"Farewell ceremony? It was a long time ago so I don't really remember it. What about it?"

"Well, on the last day when you left Kuruso… Ah, it's not a big deal."

Herman decided not to speak about it anymore. He earned a lot of money as a dwarven blacksmith so he decided not to bring up some petty cash. Furthermore, the farewell ceremony was a custom created for dwarves not users.

‘It is best that I retreat.’

He didn’t know Weed that well but he was aware of the possibility of violence over some drinking money.

Weed had a calm smile on his face. Much of the mental fatigue from carving the sculpture flew away.

“Did you come here to get my permission to form a blacksmithing street near Hestia’s Forge like Painter’s Hill?”

Herman and the other dwarves that came with him from Kuroso wanted to create a blacksmith street now that they had decided to settle in Morata. His dream was to have an area in a city to sell good quality weapons and armour.

“The smithy is surrounding by other blacksmiths living and working together. They will help each other so wouldn’t having a store that mainly deals with metal be good for urban development?”

Having a place with many restaurants together was good. It would draw in more users and business. Herman wanted to actively participate in urban development while leading the blacksmiths. Blacksmiths contributed a greater role in Morata than other classes.

It was like how people saw similar things with their eyes. Morata

was now the capital of the Arpen Kingdom so it was competing with other cities on Versailles Continent. Its potential would be endless once the Garden of the Gods was finished.

His dream of making it the best city on the continent in the distant future wasn't just a delusion. Because right now the place was like heaven for the users.

Weed also had a warm smile on his face.

"I've already planned to do so. A blacksmith receives respect and can wear the nice equipment of other professions. I really like the blacksmith occupation."

A blacksmith paid plenty of taxes!

Weed had a fantasy about blacksmiths. The blacksmiths in Morata would create swords and armour so great that they would represent the continent. Visitors would travel to trade and the tax revenue would increase!

"Thank you for your understanding."

"Of course. I really like blacksmiths...I will prepare support measures."

The word 'exploitation' was obvious just looking at Weed.

“If Blacksmith Street is created then more people will come.”

Customers had to be secured in order for blacksmiths to develop. There were currently a lot of high level users adventuring in the north so they poured into Morata.

It was a good environment for novice blacksmiths to grow and customers could purchase equipment from blacksmiths like Herman. But in the long run, it was necessary to secure iron.

Morata had an iron mine but the amount and quality wasn’t up to a satisfactory level. The standard was so inferior that it didn’t reach even half the level of the iron from the Melbourne Mine.

The mine wasn’t a good environment.

The lack of current material was resolved by melting old iron weapons from the Niflheim Empire. Novice blacksmiths learnt how to smelt rusty weapons. Blacksmiths also imported iron from the mines near other villages in the north.

The amount of resources important was so large that the villages with those mines received enormous profit.

Fortunately the area around Vargo Fortress had steep mountains that were likely to contain mines with large ore deposits. The dwarves also talked about abandoned silver and steel mines.

Weed had the Ellyons work at the mines while users and soldiers

from Vargo Fortress took care of the monsters.

“I will continue to support the blacksmiths in many ways.”

“Thank you. When considering your support for artists, my anxiety was unnecessary.”

Weed hadn’t started the support for users but rumours about him spread thanks to the Village Elder’s actions. Word of Weed’s support for art and performance affiliated professions spread around the continent and people praised him. It was part of why the residents of Arpen Kingdom had such a high degree of loyalty. Now they came to the north from the Central Continent.

“Instead, I have something to ask you as there is something I want to make.....”

“What is it?”

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

There was a part where Herman’s help was needed for creating the sculptures. In order to truly express a God, the sculpture needed a weapon.

“It would be good if a blacksmith participates.”

A large weapon would be too heavy and the weight would destroy

the sculpture. Although Weed's sculpting and handicraft skills were high, if a statue held a giant steel sword over its head then it would naturally break. He wanted Herman to create a large, empty weapon that was as light as possible.

"So... You want me to manufacture a weapon for a sculpture rather then focus on the quality. This is a new challenge so it is interesting. Let's work together."

In fact, Herman was grateful for a chance to participate in Weed's work. He decided to make a bronze weapon for the sculpture. And he asked Weed one more thing.

"If there is a material with a special quality... If I have some can you work with it?"

"Yes, I think I can do it."

"Then I'll give this to you. Treat this as the price."

-The Iron of Darkness has been acquired.

-The Blood-absorbing Jewel has been acquired.

-Iron of Darkness: Durability 9/9

Item related to the Blacksmith production skill.

Ultimate Blacksmith material.

An iron ore offered to a Necromancer and received a strong curse.When used to make a weapon, it will give undead characteristics and the darkness attribute.

It is less affected by holy magic thanks to a protection spell.

1st class Blacksmith item.

Option: Undead will demonstrate further ability when it is used

-Blood-absorbing Jewel: Durability 7/7

Item related to the Blacksmith production skill.

Ultimate Blacksmith material.

A jewel that was the cause of a war between the Masen and Aberdeen Kingdoms.

The jewel was eventually owned by the Aberdeen Kingdom but 3 queens met tragic deaths and their blood was scattered.

The jewel hasn’t been processed yet but it still deals out bad luck to those that work with it.

1st class Blacksmith item.

Options: The effect of skills related to blood will increase.The Luck stat will decrease by 13 when it is processed.

Charm increased by 7.

A special skill can be acquired.

Weed took the items and headed to Hestia's Forge.

"I have to make these immediately."

He put aside making the sculptures and spent one day in Hestia's Forge. He could carve jewels so handling the gem and Iron of Darkness wasn't a problem.

"I shouldn't break the sword again."

Weed dissolved the Iron of Darkness in Hestia's Forge, cooled it with water and beat it with a hammer. Thus a new sword was born!

-Sword of Darkness

Durability 145/145.

Attack 96~137.

A forged sword containing a rare Necromancer curse. It strengthens the characteristics of an undead and the effect become larger the higher the rank.

It has a rough external appearance. It is a suitably scary sword for an undead.

This is the work of a talented blacksmith!

Restrictions: Undead, Corrupt Knights only.

Level 465

Should have no morality or faith.

Options: Firm.Effect of the dark attribute increased by 37%

The Voice of Hatred and Loss will be available tanks to the Necromancer's curse.

Strength +12.

Agility +26.

When commanding the undead, you can extract an extra 13% of

their power.

Holy magic will weaken thanks to protection magic.

-Your Intermediate Blacksmith skill has reached level 10 and has changed to Advanced.

You can skillfully handle iron and metal.

You can further enhance the performance of swords and armour. Special materials are required for this.

Your friendship with the dwarves has become higher and they will respect you as a friend of their race.

The effect of governing the hearth fire has increased by 31%.

You can burn flames of a very high temperature.

Vitality consumption will decrease by half when hammering.

The wearer restriction of each item will decrease by 4%.

All stats will increase by 20 points.

-Your Fame has increased by 130 for manufacturing a special weapon for the undead.

His intermediate Blacksmith skill immediately rose to advanced the moment he completed the Sword of Darkness. His tremendous effort paid off in the end. His rise in skill proficiency from making the Mithril and Helium Goddess' Knight Armour also helped.

"The moment I've been waiting for has finally arrived."

Weed made improvements on all of his equipment.

The Daemon Sword was enhanced a little further and it was the same for the Goddess' Knight Armour.

In order to raise the defense capabilities of the Mithril a little further, he inscribed a complex pattern on it to stop the enemy's attacks. It couldn't be compared to making it with advanced blacksmithing from the beginning but it improved a little bit. In fact, it wasn't possible to manufacture the necessary equipment again every time his skill level rose.

"The Sword of Darkness isn't bad."

The natural of the material meant it was thicker and heavier than a typical sword. Thanks to that the attack damage was good. Weed took out a knife and processed the jewel.

His primary class was a sculptor so carving the jewel was easier than making the sword. It became a glowing red jewel that caused temptation! It was a jewel recorded in the history of the Versailles

Continent as something that caused misfortune.

“The Luck stat is important but… Well, it is inevitable.”

Weed picked up the carved jewel and placed it in a gold ring. The jewel fit in the ring like it was originally made for it.

-Tempting Vampire Ring: Durability 27/27

A ring made with the Blood-absorbing Jewel.

If you continue to wear it then health and vitality will decrease. Eventually the ring will cause a dreadful disease.

A blacksmith with great skills created it for some reason. It will be better off if it doesn’t enter the world.

The nobility of the night will covet this ring.

Restrictions: None.

Options: Reduces the wearer’s health.

Vitality weakened.

Charm increased by 16%.

The ability to dazzle is strengthened.

The effect of blood-sucking will increase.

The hidden power of the jewel will be revealed when blood is drunk.

A truly unlucky item! Weed didn't try to wear it.

"Calling Death Knight Van Hawk, Calling the Vampire Lord Torido!"

Black smoke rose and the Death Knight appeared. A black cloak flapped as the Vampire Lord emerged.

"Master, who are we fighting this time?"

"Any enemy... I want to fight. I want to suck blood so that I can quench my thirst."

The self-esteem of Weed's two summons had been wounded because of their miserable defeat to the Hermes Guild. They had been affected by the holy power so their body hadn't returned to normal yet. In particular, the Death Knight was bare handed and his cloak was torn.

"This is a gift for you."

Weed handed Van Hawk the Sword of Darkness and Torido the Tempting Vampire Ring. He had always provided them with used or rejected products so this was the first time they had seen such dazzling items.

Van Hawk and Torido jumped back.

“No. Such a thing isn’t necessary Master. I can fight with my bare hands.”

“I don’t like jewellery.”

The both of them determined that Weed had a trap n mind. Their wonderful Master-Slave relationship meant they doubted and questioned everything!

“I made it was my heart and soul. It was made with really precious materials especially for you.”

Weed described the equipment. Van Hawk and Torido were relieved and received the items.

“Will you keep listening to my words in the future?”

“I will follow you.”

“I really think that you’re a good Master.”

“Of course.”

“Other Masters wouldn’t have thought to make something like this.”

“……”

“The materials I used to make this……”

“…….”

Weed detained his summons for 3 days and made them work without any rest.

Chapter 3: Orc's Choice

"War!"

"An army of Black Annas are coming."

"I have to leave the castle quickly!"

While Weed was making his sculptures, the Versailles Continent was ablaze with war. When a siege started at a city, the merchants and beginners all escaped outside the castle. That's because the castle would become a lawless area once a siege started so killing and arson would occur.

"Praise God Embinyu."

"Fight back against the infidels."

A collision was also taking place between the Embinyu Church's army and the paladins of each religious order. Other religious orders have become busy since the Embinyu Church was revealed. Paladins and monks aggressively left the cathedrals and monasteries to fight.

Many users also received new quests and an opportunity to gain some achievements.

A war with the Embinyu Church!

No users were free from the confusion. It wasn't an exaggeration to say that the time of hunting near stable castles or villages was over. Villages were destroyed in this dangerous continent and the horde of monsters became stronger.

Even the people who converted to the Embinyu Church became criminals and hunted other users.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Jang Yoon-soo, the Team Leader of the Marketing Department organized a team meeting.

"As you know, a temporary advertisement video was produced by Planning Department based on the recent situation in the Versailles Continent."

"How much are you going to play of the video?"

"More then 90%. First of all, let me tell you the rest."

The light in the meeting room turned off and a video began playing on the wall screen.

A terrible number of the Embinyu army was gathered on the plains.

They gathered around torches deep in the night!

The screen zoomed in on the tent of the Embinyu Church's High Priest.

"There……"

"First offering a sacrifice….."

"Humans……"

"Kukukuk….."

The High Priest said in a gloomy voice. The Embinyu Dark Knights patrolled heavily while monsters also stood at the boundaries. Any user who experienced Royal Road would know what a dangerous place it was.

It was even more scary because the Embinyu Church was the enemy. The Embinyu Church were active in certain areas and most people were aware of their power.

Soon the screen changed to users invading Gradian Kingdom.

"Go, warriors!"

“We will fight until the end to defend our peace!”

The Black Sword mercenary group moved forward through the pouring arrows from the walls! Siege weapons were mobilized for a huge battle.

The Gradian Kingdom was in the western part of the continent without a lot of users because of the steep terrain. The Black Sword mercenary group had set their sights on the Gradian Kingdom and were trying to occupy it. They fought for three days and the entire kingdom was engulfed in a civil war.

Then the screen changed into the Haven Kingdom. An extravagant Royal Palace was being built! The Hermes Guild threw an astronomical amount of money towards the knights and soldiers to raise their loyalty and construct the Royal Palace.

The knights and soldiers were forced into labour like slaves. The capital Aren Castle was like light and darkness, with the slums on one side and bright commercial buildings on the other.

It quickly showed some images of other kingdoms from the air.

And the screen changed once again to show some orcs.

Trees and bushes were on the screen.

“Chwiiiit!”

The orcs didn’t appear. But there were harsh breathing sounds and a glaive shone from a bush.

“Let’s go. Chwi chwi chwik!”

The orcs in the Orc Lands crossed the Elnath Mountains towards the plains.

The screen flashed as it remained in place.

The beasts ran away while the birds flew up into the sky. There was no end to the procession of orcs descending towards the plains. The orcs continued spreading through the east due to their amazing procreative power.

The Elves developed spirit magic while the Dwarves produced their own weapons and governed the Thor Kingdom.

Finally the screen showed some people.

The most famous was Bardray standing on top of Aren Castle and watching his army below. Adventurer Chase wandering around a dungeon somewhere and being pursued by monsters. The Blacksmith Fabio handled iron in a place where deep, red flames were surging.

17 users who represented different classes were shown on screen.

The video ended and Jang Yoon-soo said.

“Right now the Versailles Continent has entered a time of chaos. This point was taken into consideration and this video was produced.”

The video would be shown on the Internet and the broadcast in order to show the current situation in Royal Road. The Versailles Continent changed because it was affected by situations that occurred in each area.

A time of chaos!

In the early days of Royal Road, there were disputes between different kingdoms and monster invasions but there was some degree of stability. It was thanks to each kingdom making an effort to maintain the peace.

The problem was that the balance became upset once the number of users grew. Users who became knights chose profit rather than honour and didn’t do their duty. Lords didn’t care about the residents and made them pay excessive taxes. They didn’t care about monsters running wild. There was no loyalty to the kingdom as they were only interested in war.

Royal Road had no specific storyline.

If the Lords and prestigious guilds in the Central Continent ruled

well then evil forces might not have emerged. The loyalty of the residents decreased, making them vulnerable to convert to the Embinyu Church and increased their power.

As a result, each kingdom in the Central Continent paid the price.

If they looked at Royal Road's history, this period of chaos also existed in the past. At that time, the Warlocks made deals with demons and the kingdoms were embroiled in war. Each religion had their holy power taken away and were greatly weakened.

"Hrmm, how would you judge the strategy?"

The gazes of the people went towards Director Son Il-gang who understood the situation in the Versailles Continent the best out of everyone in the Unicorn Corporation.

He stood up from the chair and started talking.

"The forces of the Embinyu Church has expanded to the size of a huge guild, the emergency of historical monsters and the scrambling of the Warlocks. When looking at the period of chaos in the past, the Versailles Continent seems to be in a big crisis."

The Director and people in charge of various departments had a headache. There were numerous tribes and kingdoms on the Versailles Continent that appeared and disappeared so it was difficult to keep track.

The continent was filled with constant plots and users wandering around looking for monsters. The ones who had to find the solution were the users themselves.

“Wouldn’t that be a problem?”

The fact that the peace of Versailles Continent was unstable due to the exponentially growing number of users wasn’t good news to the directors of Unicorn Corporation.

However, Director Son Il-gang’s expression was bright.

“Heroes are born in the midst of a crisis. When viewed in that sense, the arrival of a time of chaos will require strong unity among users. And people who accomplish great achievements will appear.”

The Versailles Continent was a virtual world! Son Il-gang was confident that it could overcome the problems.

The staff of Unicorn Corporation also reached a similar consensus. Ever since Royal Road opened, the growth of the users on a daily basis was surprising. They made decisions for their own lives.

Looking back on the history, people accomplished many great things with their own power.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

“Hehehe.”

“Okeumke!”

“Heheheheheh.”

The sculptural lifeforms happily spent their days at Vargo Fortress.

“The world is a beautiful place.”

“The clean air and fresh grass is fantastic!”

Weed had granted life to 47 sculptural lifeforms in the Jigolaths. They were sculptures created for a long time be great sculptors. Their desire for life was strong and they were satisfied playing at Vargo Fortress.

They had listened to stories about the suffering that the Wyverns, Bingryong, Phoenix etc. experienced under Weed and thought it was fortunate they got to be so comfortable.

Ohdodok ohdodok!

Cerberus ate the bones of goats and rolled around in the grass. A

multi-coloured poisonous snake called Countryside Snake moved on the tree branched in the mountain and forests. The Death Worm relaxed in the mud.

The sculpture lifeforms spent a quiet afternoon relaxing. The exception was the knight Seville (changed from Silver) Blacksun who was on busy on a mission.

He actively worked with the soldiers and hunters to drive back the monsters. Over time, the Barbarians admired Seville and his troops multiplied to 980 people.

The soldiers received wonderful directions from the knight and battled. He chose 14 talented knight candidates and appointed them as his deputies. Whether they were busy or living a leisurely life, they all settled near the Fortress according to Weed's order!

Goldman and Yellowy sneaked out at night for a meeting.

"These children really have it easy these days."

"It's too easy, gol gol!"

"We need to give them a little trouble."

"They have to work at least 3 times a day. Gol gol!"

Goldman pushed the monsters towards where the sculpture

lifeforms were. Bingryong, Phoenix and the Wyverns also drove monsters there.

"These guys have played an awful lot until now."

"We need to make them sweat!"

The sculptural lifeforms became stronger every day in order to help Weed with his Sculptor Master Quest.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The orcs that selfishly settled near Vargo Fortress.

"Chwi chwi chwit!"

"Daytime has dawned. Let's go fight, chwiik!"

The orcs eventually came to the village. Vargo Fortress overcame the monster invasion with the help of the orcs.

Monsters and orcs fought on a daily basis. The population of orcs declined to 60,000 but that didn't matter to them.

"Chwi chwi chwit, the 1st Hyung has died. 2nd Hyung has also died. 7th Hyung has also died. Mother should produce 5 more siblings, chwiiik!"

“Who are you? Chwi chwi chwit!”

“I am your 32nd son, chwit!”

“You are the youngest, chwi chwi chwik!”

“No, chwik chwik chwik Mother gave birth 44 times.”

The Orcs used their procreative power to take care of the monsters. While the warriors were out fighting, the females were safely cared for.

Several users who chose Orcs also gave excellent performances.

“Orcs will die fighting, chwi chwit!”

“Come with me, chwichiik!”

They led a large number of warriors and raided the camp of monsters. Of course, the plan meant that some Orcs wouldn’t return but they were able to inflict further strikes before dying. If 10 died getting rid of 5 monsters, the next day 13 would go fight. That was the orc’s method of calculation!

— The orc Karichwi didn’t back down from any disadvantageous fight.

— He is a strong and handsome orc.

— I need to be brave in order to become popular among female orcs.

The orc Karichwi was a legend among users. Weed's adventures had a huge influence on the orc users so many of them were recklessly brave.

"This is a big fight, chwi chwit!"

While the orcs fought, the children were growing larger. The orcs fought together in large scale battles so they thought of each other as brothers. Even if they received significant damage in a battle, the orc users were already planning a new one.

"Not this time, chwi chiiik!"

"It will be different next time, chwik!"

"Let's take a lot more. We'll do that until we win, chwi chwi chwi chwit!"

The orc users commanded their fellow brothers and children for the large battles. This was the strong point about selecting the orc race.

Weed fought the Dark Elves and then later they fought against the Undead Legion as colleagues. Users who dreamt about experiencing such large battles flocked towards choosing orcs.

They acquired loot and also plundered the monsters' home camp. If they picked up something expensive then they would go up to Vargo Fortress to buy food and weapons!

"Eat a lot, fight carrying weapons, chwiiiik!"

The orcs were large so it cost a lot of money to create their armour. Their high health and power meant they invested more in weapons. The orcs just looked pathetic to the users at Vargo Fortress.

"Are they going to fight again?"

"Yes, they bought rice a while ago……"

"Anyway, the orcs are great."

"I really don't want to touch those guys."

The maintenance of Vargo Fortress was completed so they had sturdy walls and defences. Unfortunately not that many monsters could come close now. The orcs' desire to fight intensified and they would spar with each other.

“If I win this battle then I will lead 5 more females, chwiiiik!”

The female orcs that Weed avoided! The orc users actively showed off their courage in order to obtain their favour.

That’s because female orcs would give birth to a lot of children, increasing the user’s power. They felt happy whenever they received the love declaration of a female orc.

“Guchwi, I will bear your offspring, chwichichit!

“Thank you, Dechwi! My heart is glad to hear it, chwiiiik!”

“It would be good if someone has the appearance of Karichwi. Chwik chwik!”

The Geomchis and sculptural lifeforms also played an active role in hunting monsters around Vargo Fortress. Users also formed parties for hunting so the number of monsters around Vargo Fortress were drastically reduced.

“Come.”

“Please wait a little more.”

“Shoot now!”

Rangers and archers shot arrows from ambush spots. Archers aggressively took advantage of the distance and terrain! Vargo Fortress also changed tactics from defense to attack.

The armies of the Arpen Kingdom periodically went out the gates to fight the multitude of monsters and this burden was reduced by the presence of the orcs.

“Chase the monsters. Everyone strike and kill it. Chwichichichit!”

The orcs herded together and coolly fought.

-A skilled Orc Warrior was born.

-3 Orc Warriors have become Orc Fighters.

The orc forces quickly became powerful. The orc’s power to rapidly expand was their most terrifying feature! Many young orcs were born even if some settlements were burnt by monsters. The number of individuals quickly increased to 390,000.

Ddiring!

-The Orcs have revealed their existence in the Northern Continent.

The Orcs have expanded their territory in the north through

violence and selfishness. Orcs will fight with strong and dangerous monsters in order to test their limits and grow.

They are weak in front of magic and large monsters.

The orcs are a reliable existence.

If you step into the world as an orc then it will be possible to have many brothers. If you go with your brothers then you won't easily feel fear.

-The Orcs have succeeded in fulfilling the required population.

Orc species can now start at Vargo Fortress.

As humans, various conditions would be required for activities. It included things like politics, security, technology or urban development. The only conditions for Orcs was their breeding power and strength so it was much simpler. Fellow kin and food are the only things required.

Yet the number of people who chose Orcs as a beginner was still low.

Anyway, it wasn't possible to choose classes like magicians. Even combat professions like knights couldn't be chosen.

An Orc would use their own strength to grow as either

Champions or Shamans. However, an Orc could experience the freedom and romance of battles so users who selected this species wouldn't regret it.

Once the video of orcs appeared on the bulletin board, they became the envy of players with different races and professions.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The orcs at Vargo Fortress had higher knowledge than those in other areas. They were influenced by the sculptures and artwork. But even so, the orcs couldn't discuss anything seriously except for food and fighting.

Yet the orcs at Vargo Fortress were engaged in a serious discussion at the moment.

"What's going on, chwiiiit!"

"That is, Karichwi... Chwi chwi chwit!"

Suspicious rumours about Karichwi spread through every settlement. Orc users who heard the rumour laughed as they already knew the truth. However this problem wasn't a matter that the orcs could just overlook.

"I can't forgive it, chwiik!"

“He is our brother, chwi chwik! Even if he ate more food than me, he isn’t a hateful brother!”

Soon 5 Orc Lords headed towards Morata.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Weed’s sculptures caused a huge craze in Morata.

-The statue of the God Galeria has been born!

The Conqueror God! This God disappeared once peace came to the Versailles Continent.

Galeria likes war and territory expansion and will grant blessings to those fighting against Barbarians and monsters.

His followers cause war so they don’t get along with the followers of the other gods.

When praying to him, the power of humans and orcs will increase.

A statue of the God Galeria!

He once again became known through the hands of Sculptor Weed. The stones statue of Galeria would have significant religious

meaning.

A stone statue of Galeria has been completed for the first time in recorded history.

After admiring the statue of Galeria, health and mana regeneration will increase by 16% for one day.

The religious sculpture will permanently increase Faith by 6 points.

Humans and Orcs can now handle heavy weapons more comfortably.

Morale in battle will increase.

The Art stat has permanently increased by 6 points due to the creation of an ancient work of art.

-If a King or Lord who believes in Galeria causes a war of conquest, the fighting spirit of their soldiers will increase.

Movement speed of the army and supply units will increase.

Residents in a war who follow Galeria will have their fatigue decrease.

Kings who cause a war can gain popular support even if the residents' loyalty is low.

More experience will be gained when fighting a bunch of monsters and Barbarians.

When defeated in battle and the territory is taken away, they will lose faith in the God.

The divine benefits from Galeria will be at least 3 times more if many tributes are offered to him.

God Galeria will have more influence over a kingdom than individuals.

"The Conqueror God."

Weed was making sculptures of the various gods he saw at Ratzeberg. Due to the popularity of the popular sculptures, new religious orders and priests arose in Morata.

He didn't separate the good or evil gods and just created sculptures of everything he saw in Ratzeberg. When he finished his 19th piece, his Sculpting skill finally advanced a level.

-Sculpting has risen to Advanced Level 9.

You are advancing towards the ultimate height.

Sculpting has become more delicate and refined.

You have gained a wider insight into the arts and Intelligence and Wisdom have increased by 39.

Charm has increased by 41.

Your Affinity to Nature has increased by 98.

Radiant Sword was learnt so Agility has increased by 7.

-Your Charm stat has exceeded 500 points.

The title ‘Sculptor who can express the beauty of the Gods’ has been acquired.

Favourable rumours will spread because you possess high Fame.

It will be beneficial when receiving an sculpture or adventurer commission.

Weed’s sculpture skill reached advanced level 9 and he even obtained another title.

In the meantime he had gained ‘Artisan of Excellent Works,’ ‘Ghost Captain who sailed into the Unknown,’ ‘Polar Explorer,’

etc. so he was happy to receive a new title.

His Fame also reached 110,000.

“Hmm, did I eat a meal today?”

Woof woof!

A dog passing by Weed on the street barked and shook its tail! Weed continued carving the sculptures. Then 5 Orc Lords came up to him.

“Chwiiit! I came to see the King.”

“Weed come down now, chwi chwi chwik!”

The Orc Lords caused an uproar as they barged into the Garden of the Gods.

The soldiers could’ve overpowered them but that might cause a war with the orcs settled at Vargo Fortress. They were a really troublesome species that caused him headaches.

Weed came down from the statue and asked them politely.

“What is the problem?”

“We’re all aware of it, chwiiit!”

“Chwi chwit don’t take us for fools!”

The Orc Lords strongly shouted.

Weed’s complexion turned pale.

‘Where did a problem occur?’

He started to organize his thoughts.

‘Wasn’t I hoping they would die before reaching the north? No, I was going to take action. I was busy so I couldn’t do that before they got here by sea…..’

Even so, his Sculpting Master Quest involved the Elves, Dwarves and Orcs. He could afford to be generous to the orcs because of that. Weed also believed something else. The orcs used glaives so this wasn’t a species he wanted to anger.

“Chwiichwit, Karichwi……”

“Eh?”

“Don’t pretend you don’t know. Chwichwichwit, we know everything.”

Feelings welled up inside the Orc Lords. Their eyes were red from tears.

“The smell is coming from you, chwi chwi chwit!”

“Chwi chwi chwit, you smell the same as Karichwi.”

Weed tried to smell his own body. Apart from the smell of various foods, there wasn’t anything strange.

“The smell hasn’t be washed off for over a year! We can smell other orcs, chwiichwit!”

“.....”

The orcs could smell their own kin!

In fact, Weed didn’t often wash. These days he just carved the statues and let the rain wash off is sweat. It would be strange if he was wearing expensive clothes but what problem was there if he was wearing beginner’s clothes?

But he wore these clothes for hunting, cooking, gathering herbs, blacksmithing and even carving sculptures. He also sailed to Jigolaths in these clothes.

“We left our home and came here to look for Karichwi. No

human should smell like that, chwichwit. Karichwi is an orc who makes sculptures.”

His habit of not washing meant he was discovered by the orcs.

“We are brothers. Chwiii chwii chwi chwi chwit. It doesn’t matter that you’ve changed into a fragile human due to a curse, chwiik.”

The orcs believed that Weed had turned into a human due to a curse.

“We have decided to follow Karichwi, chwiiik!”

-The Orcs have joined the Arpen Kingdom.

They are a race with amazing survival abilities.

The troublesome part is that they are a race that consumes large quantities of food.

Hordes of orcs enjoy wide lands and fighting.

If Orcs join the kingdom then many events will clearly occur.

He didn’t know if this was a good thing……

Chapter 4: Worst Destiny

No matter what happened on the continent, Weed persisted in making his sculptures for the Garden of the Gods. He was tired from the huge construction on the Garden of the Gods but the crowd cheered every time a fine piece or masterpiece came out.

“Weed’s sculptures are really different!”

“Some might seem plain or ugly but it starts feeling okay once you look at it for a long time.”

He received recognition from people of various classes and roles but the evaluation was that he was a truly excellent sculptor. In fact, the advantage of sculpting was its versatility across many fields but not a lot of people knew this.

A Magnum Opus sculpture!

He worked together with Herman on a statue of God Batalli and gave birth to a Magnum Opus.

The Magnum Opus sculpture increased his contribution to each religious order and gave blessings to soldiers fighting against monsters in the region.

The users and residents also found unity by working on the Garden of the Gods. Weed’s first work after the founding of the Arpen Kingdom was a great success.

“Kuuuk, I have a pain in my lower back.”

“My lower body is numb.”

“I can’t lift my head!”

By the time Weed was carving the last statue, the road was full of collapsed players groaning. They had carried stones and dirt, opened a water channel and laid roads. They also fixed up the garden by planting trees.

There was no end to the required work on a large civil engineering project like this. Those who participated in the construction felt like they had serious heart problems as it finished.

The work was hard and the users often felt the temptation to fall down in the middle. But they couldn’t miss the opportunity to be involved in this construction. This deep emotion was really new to the users.

“Ah… That’s the last one.”

“It was really long.”

“I didn’t fight monsters yet I died 3 times from the work…..”

People were visiting the north and Morata was overflowing with tourists. People who went hunting timed their return to coincide with the estimated completion date while other users visited shops and restaurants.

“This will be the greatest place on the continent once this is complete.”

“It is a completely unbelievable amount.”

“There is nothing like this anywhere else. This place even has Grand Buildings.”

“Indeed. Now it will also be easy to receive blessings from the gods.”

32 magnificent sculptures were erected in the Garden of the Gods through the sweat and blood of the participating workers.

The marble temple also gave off a luxurious atmosphere and there was a square and lake in the garden.

Morata had many exceptional flowers. Weed sowed the landscape with wild flowers and seeds obtained from Prina. Gardeners also cultivated a number of trees and flowers from Morata. The landscape was under 24 hour supervision by the gardeners as the seeds started to grow. The Garden of the Gods will like a hunting ground to challenge for gardeners!

A performance venue was also placed on one side. It would be difficult to make a disturbance in a place with sculptures of gods but the performances told legends and stories associated with the gods. Once songs of praise started being sung, the Garden of the Gods became even more famous.

The speed of this process was beyond imagination and now the Garden of the Gods was almost completed.

Weed postponed the final sculpture until the next morning.

“Delaying by one day will allow more people to enter the city!”

Arpen Kingdom had low funds since it was mostly consumed by this project. If the Garden of the Gods failed then it would be the kingdom that collapsed when the ink had barely dried on the history records.

Weed’s fatigue had also piled up during this time.

“I will do the remaining work in the morning. Everybody had trouble so today you should rest to your fullest!”

The crowd in the vicinity of the Garden of the Gods cheered with joy and scattered to prepare for tomorrow’s big delight.

Weed and his colleagues decided to go to a pub.

There was a huge influx of players into Morata so Mapan set up a store and earned a fortune. He decided to buy them drinks so even the Geomchis and Herman went to dinner.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

“Huhu, I get to count money all day tomorrow!”

Mapan earned huge money from his business. He was a japtem professional merchant and his system covered the entire north. He was the President of the Northern Association of Merchants so he had a lot of influence. He owned important land in Morata and also opened up a weapon store, armour store and leather store in Vargo Fortress.

Other merchants watched Mapan with envy and wanted to learn his business skills.

“Mapan-nim, what is your secret?”

“The many years of trust with my repeat customers.”

Mapan had followed Weed since the early days and they had invested in Morata together. He had done business with users in the Central Continent who came to the north before beginners could start here and maintained it continuously.

Word spread among people and everyone regarded Mapan’s stores as the best. Mapan also used his contacts in other kingdoms

to secure successful trades. He would buy Morata's specialties in bulk to lower the purchase price and then get money and fame when he sold it at his destination!

The development of the north truly gave a lot of money to Mapan. Of course, all of this wasn't his only secrets. Bribery and power was also essential. Mapan was the one who rejoiced the most when Weed became King of the Arpen Kingdom.

If Weed realized his dream of a dictatorship then his profits would increase!

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

"Kyaah, this is really delicious."

"The chicken wings seem to separate and melt in my mouth."

"The meat falling off the bone and this crunchy texture... As expected from the best pigs."

The Geomchi practitioners had spent a long time hunting so they enjoyed the proper food. As the host, Mapan had borrowed the whole pub. Their appetite surpassed that of wrestlers so Fiery Pebble was used to roast the meat.

Fiery Pebble ensured that it was cooked properly while still being juicy. If Weed cooked than the food would taste even better but he was eating today.

“You’ve suffered in the meantime so please enjoy a bite to eat.”

Irene also picked up some meat and gave it to Surka. Irene was a priest so she benefited the most from the Garden of the Gods.

“Free food is delicious.”

Weed was in a relaxed mood as he enjoyed dinner. It was possible to eat dozens of side dishes along with the meat. Mapan was sitting in the corner of a table and his face became pale every time he saw the empty dishes, but he still ate.

Morata’s restaurants and pubs were crowded from all the guests that had come into the city. Merchants were engaged in business at the squares and received huge profit from people preparing for tomorrow.

“Now I think I know how to use my fists better.”

Surka said confidently.

She had been a little passive when hunting with Weed. Her combat style had been bold battles that lowered her health but she had fallen behind in attack damage. Although she could utilize her skills, her battle senses weren’t particularly excellent.

Even if someone had the exact same body, the results would be

different depending on how they utilized it. But in the meantime she had been hunting with the Geomchi practitioners and was able to use them as a guideline.

“I have to learn to hit and hit until I am sore!”

Surka looked young compared to the others and her dimples when she smiled brightly made her even cuter.

There were 3 rules in fighting. Everyone knew them but it was difficult to master without direct experience in hunting. Even if a large number of videos were watched, that wall wouldn’t break until the battle actually started.

Maylon also laughed from a nearby place.

“Surka is scary these days. I don’t know how often she beats up the monsters.”

“Unni is also shooting the arrows better. The Arrow Tracking skill, haven’t you raised it closed to the master level?”

Weed suddenly became curious of their levels. Surka, Maylon and the others had been adventuring for quite a while. He remembered hunting with them shortly after finding Ratzeberg and being surprised at their skills.

Weed asked Surka.

“What level are you now?”

He was reluctant to say his level but they had no such qualms.

“I’m only 403.”

“403?”

“Isn’t my level still a bit low? I think Oppa is probably a lot higher than me.”

Weed was really amazed. His current level was 409. It was high but there wasn’t much difference with Surka.

“Hrm, I’m a little higher.”

“Pale oppa is level 411, are you much higher than Pale oppa?”

“Well, it’s not that high.”

Weed had been suffering at the wall of the 400s. While he was making sculptures, his colleagues had been adventuring and catching up to him. If Bardray came in then he would explicitly curse him!

“You’ve crossed level 400… Congratulations”

“Thank you.”

Weed’s lips trembled as he gave the congratulations. He was eating and socializing when a young boy approached him.

The boy had black hair and cold eyes. Not all NPCs were like that but this boy didn’t have the slightest changes in expression on his face.

Weed felt uncomfortable as soon as he saw him. It was similar to his junior high days when he sewed 400,000 doll eyes and would fear the Vice President. His mouth dried up and his hair stood up in anxiety.

Weed spoke softly to the boy.

“Hey kid, I’m having a meal now so please come next time.”

Weed’s fame was high so it was very easy for him to receive quests. After becoming King, many Morata residents gave requests so he could select the ones he wanted. Weed wanted to forestall him.

“And I am very busy keeping the peace of the Versailles Continent so I don’t know if I can accept your request. Find someone else first. You’ll be able to find some good people.”

He said moderately with the intention to refuse. But the boy just started laughing.

“A human like you has no right to decline my order.”

It was an astonishing remark given Weed’s status of King. But he hadn’t been able to live to this point through his willpower. Since childhood Weed had struggled to stay alive. He sensed that this boy didn’t have an ordinary status.

‘Who are you, the true successor of the Niflheim Empire? Did he show up because I fulfilled some conditions?’

If there was an important quest related to his class then the person would sometimes come meet them.

‘I heard they were all dead but if I suddenly popped up alive….. Maybe someone saved a member of the Royal Family. Then raised them quietly……’

Weed’s brain worked fiercely in order to grasp the boy’s identity. The boy was very proud but he didn’t have any knights escorting him.

Weed’s combat capability meant he would gladly welcome any monster to hit. He thought about using his fists instead of words but then Weed saw the equipment the boy was wearing.

‘Top of the line. His outfit is created by the best dwarven

craftsmen.

His sword contained a black diamond the size of a duck egg. Moreover, the scabbard had a complex pattern drawn on it that proved it was 100% a magic sword. It was uncommon and he hadn't seen anyone with a sword like that before.

His clothes were created with thousands of threads from a special worm that was woven in three strands. The best dwarven craftsmen would require at least 1 month of tenacious effort to make. Of course there was no one among users who wore such clothes.

'He is even wearing winged shoes from Stellese.'

Only the most powerful Barbarian warriors could climb up Stellese Hill. The boy was wearing winged shoes that the Barbarians normally defended. The estimated level of the shoes was 590.

Weed instantly became modest!

"Of course. Tell me what you want me to do."

The age of the opponent didn't matter at all! He received recognition from many people but Weed didn't forget his weak days of the past. He didn't cringe when acting subservient.

"Your sculpting skills are fine."

“There are others better than me.”

Weed worried about what type of quest would require his sculpting skills.

“I want many treasures that the underserving humans have. I’m the only one worthy of a sculpture. I want you to make it out of the Agate crystal that belongs to the human Belsos. I recognize that humans are weak so I will give some of my subordinates to protect you.”

Ddiring!

-The Treasure a Dragon Desires

King Belsos’s injustice!

Look for his legacy and make the sculpture the wicked Akryong Kaybern desires. Akryong Kaybern has determined that you have sufficient skills due to the sculptural tributes offered him.

The arrogant Kaybern has given a command.

“Sculptor, you will need to bring your friends if you want to survive. If you’re late then I won’t like it.”

The Agate crystal is delicate so working with it won’t be easy.

There are as many mysteries as there are stars in the sky.

Kaybern has promised 11 Spartoi to escort you to find the Agate.

Difficulty: Sculptor’s Quest

Quest Restrictions: Have to possess the best Fame as a Sculptor.

Relationship with Kaybern.

Must be resolved within 30 days.

No compensation will be given.

If you fail then Kaybern will kill you.

A minimum of 8 people is required to accomplish it.

You can invite 7 people to the quest. The people who reject will be killed by Kaybern.

“Keheok!”

The identity of the boy in front of Weed was Akryong Kaybern. It was the continent’s first but not necessarily happy Dragon Quest!

There was no compensation and he couldn't fail either. Even if he gathered all the soldiers in the Arpen Kingdom, they would just be grinded between the evil dragon's teeth like the dwarves.

'I've already suffered and now I need to complete the dragon's request if I don't want to be eaten.'

There were two reasons why Weed ended up being involved with Kaybern. He once carved a silly piece based on Kaybern but it wasn't famous. More recently, he had made some sculptures for the dwarves' tribute.

The compensation for the dwarves returning safely ended up leading to this quest.

'Just continue making the dwarves work!'

A Sculptor Quest associated with the evil dragon Akryong Kaybern! To make matters worse, Belsos was the reason why the temperature of the Versailles Continent increased and the Crimson Wing Guild's destruction.

It was like a shrimp interrupting a fight between whales. Either way he was bound to fall down a cliff every step he took.

'This is a Dragon Quest so the difficulty will unconditionally be above average. It is fortunate that it has something to do with sculpting..... If he managed to make the Agate crystal into a

sculpture then it will be a really precious thing to the dragon.'

Weed nodded.

"I'll find the thing you want."

-You have accepted the quest.

Under the direction of the 11 Spartoi, you have 1 month to complete the Dragon Kaybern's command.

It is impossible for you to decline. It is only a matter of whether you die earlier or later.

"You made the right decision. My anger will increase if I wait much longer"

The boy disappeared as suddenly as he appeared. Weed was silent before looking around the quiet pub.

"Keoheoheok!"

"I can finally breathe."

"What was that just now?"

They couldn't say anything while Akryong Kaybern was there.

“You just shared a conversation with a great existence.”

Weed respectfully summarized wat Kaybern said to him.

“The great dragon Kaybern who rules over the Thor Kingdom came here. And he gave me a noble mission to look for the Belsos King’s legacy and create a sculpture from it. Kaybern is after a really precious item. Although it will be difficult, I don’t dare refuse his request. I can obtain such glory from walking the path of sculpting.”

His interpretation……

-The evil dragon Akryong Kaybern left the Thor Kingdom to head to Morata.

He asked Weed who was a complete stranger to find the Belsos King’s legacy.

He said it like it was a good thing but he was forced to accept the dragon’s request or he would die. This was the dirty part about being a sculptor.

“Oh, he received a Dragon Quest from a legend!”

“As expected, Weed the maknae is really different!”

“Ya. Isn’t this something to be proud of?”

The Geomchi practitioners envied him. Being able to do a quest from the continent’s most powerful dragon! The eyes of his younger colleagues were full of compassion as they understood his explanation.

“He is Weed-nim.”

“Won’t he be able to do it well?”

“I believe that no one else except Weed-nim can do it.”

“This looks like a wonderful adventure. I’ll cheer you on.”

His colleagues tried to positively give him courage. Weed shook his head.

“I need to go to the Tomb of the Scorpion King in order to find the remains of King Belsos.”

Maylon nodded her head.

“Oh, is that so?”

She remembered the adventures of the Crimson Wing Guild that had been recorded.

“That is really dangerous. Quite a few people died when exploring it. And isn’t a key needed to enter the ruins?”

“I remember I made some sculptures for them so it won’t be that difficult to enter the dungeon.”

The Tomb of the King Scorpion was currently sealed. If it hadn’t been for the Crimson Wing Guild then he wouldn’t have known how to enter. In order to open the sealed door, 7 scorpions need to be placed at the exact same time so I need at least 7 people.”

“That… It was like that?”

“Yes. And I was told to seek other colleagues for the quest.”

Weed looked around at his colleagues.

“A dragon…..”

Pale was frozen.

“Finding the remains of King Belsos will be dangerous. Isn’t that right? Ah… I need to work at the station for a few days……”

She might be curious but she inevitably had to give up because Maylon was an office worker.

“Then can we get the treasures seen on the broadcast?”

Surka liked big adventures.

“We’ll be in trouble if we touch the wrong thing.”

Irene was nervous while Romuna seemed to be looking for an excuse to refuse.

“Yurin… Kuuck.”

Zephyr wasn’t in a position to refuse so their eyes said they would die together. Hwaryeong and Bellot wanted to go along. That’s because Weed’s adventures were never boring.

“Is it really dangerous?”

“Unni, it will be a huge risk. Couldn’t I create a great song?”

The Tomb of the Scorpion King was perfect for a bard.

‘If Maylon wasn’t broadcasting…..’

If he removed her then he had recruited 7 people.

Seo-yoon had great power but his conscience kept him from requesting her help too often. And he actually had special information about her.

While Weed was creating the statues, a wandering minstrel told him the story of a mad warrior.

Minstrels or poets would often come before kings or high ranking aristocrats to perform or tell stories.

“Your Majesty, do you want to hear a song about when I went to the Tohru Province?”

The king would listen to the bard’s song and give them a reward. A king could deliberately give quests based on information or clues obtained from bards or poets. There were hundreds of talents bards and poets with their own stories.

Weed deliberately didn’t have anything like a Court Party. The Arpen Kingdom’s finances were hovering at the bottom so he couldn’t afford to pay an event fee like that!

“I’m not asking for hundreds of gold for one song.”

Of course, a famous song had value but it could be dangerous to the survival of a kingdom.

“Looking at the past, many residents were squeezed of their taxes to fund the kings’ luxury.”

Weed's thoughts were really ugly whenever he thought of those kings. They were born with a golden spoon in their mouths and sucked it until it lost clarity.

When looking at that, he knew that curtailing his expenses was important. In Weed's case, his fame on the continent was so high that bards would often search for him in Morata.

A wandering bard from the north sang a song about a Berserker who made a Goblin Chieftain retreat.

Seo-yoon had probably gone there to learn her class skills. Of course, this information wasn't certain but he decided to leave her to it.

'If it is a false report then she can come find me.'

Weed smiled brightly after organizing his thoughts.

"Everyone's level is over 400 so we can go."

"Ha, hahahah, shall we do that?"

There was a rigid laugh!

The nice and gentle Pale was infected by Weed and his smile turned rotten.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The stations relayed Bardray's battles and adventures every day.

"The strongest warrior Bardray!"

"Today he challenged a monster that has never been caught before."

"Black Knight Master Quest! He ended it a short while after receiving the request."

The audience cheered on Bardray as news about his Master Quest were broadcasted daily. Bardray had already advanced to the 15th quest.

This Black Knight Quest had a fixed scenario.

A knight had his honour betrayed by a king. He left the kingdom and racked up various achievements, money and made orphans and slaves his disciples. He took an army of mercenaries and raised them into troops. He then reappeared to battle with the kingdom so Bardray ended up defending a fort.

It was a quest of a scale that couldn't be expressed!

The Knights of Telmedun. The infantry battalion of Telmedun.

Bardray picked 30 knights and put them in charge of 2,500 soldiers on the battlefield. These troops were for the Black Knight Quest so they were his personal subordinates. His goal was to raise a substantial number of elite troops.

“We will be able to occupy a small castle.”

Bardray also accepted a number of orphans and his soldiers increased to over 4,000 people. Quite a few troops would be consumed in battle so Bardray left the incompetent soldiers to the difficult tasks to be killed without mercy.

“Have them defend in front of the gates.”

“But Knight-nim, they are flocking to us.”

It was a situation where they had to safely defend the city from the monsters pressing against it. In contrast, standing just outside the gates meant death.

“They need to be able to do this much to become a knight. Then they will be able to accompany me to the end.”

“Understood.”

The orphans who became soldiers were placed outside the gates. Bardray filled the empty vacancies with children with better

talent.

The Black Knight's Quest inevitably required mercenaries so he preferred this method.

In the meantime, Bardray had been deliberately hiding his evil actions behind the Hermes Guild. However the scenes of him abandoning his subordinates without hesitation received criticism from the viewers.

"Completely bad. He abandoned his troops so many times in battle."

"He uses his loyal soldiers as scapegoats in order to easily win the battle. He is really ruthless."

"It is like aristocrats just throwing cash at commoners. Even the knight that fought with Bardray last time was thrown away."

But the remaining troops became stronger so the audience couldn't help feeling excited.

Bardray pursued power. His process of leaving aside any morals to train stronger units was interesting.

While everyone envied his adventures, Bardray wasn't happy at all.

‘How useless and annoying.’

As someone who controlled the Hermes Guild, he could easily mobilize knights and soldiers. A lot of subordinates had already died to save Bardray.

The fact that he had to raise subordinates to participate in a historical war made it a frustrating quest.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The skilled craftsman Fabio.

He was the celebrity dwarf blacksmith that made the best armour and swords. He had created the best armour and gained prominence since the early days of Royal Road so he received regular coverage from the broadcasters.

“This time I will make a decent sword.”

Tang. Tang. Tang.

Fabio returned to his forge without a break. The dwarf he raised as his apprentice carried the materials directly to the fire. The forge was very large and there was already a huge amount of iron ore piled up.

“Dad, an order for one hundred and twenty level 360 swords

came in from the Trigger Guild. Should we accept?”

“Yes, collect it and go.”

A nearby dwarf sorted through a pile of swords and left. Even if Fabio didn’t put his heart and soul into a product, it would still have a minimum of 4~5 options. The attack, defense and balance were also good for the user who would wield it.

“The birth of a true awakened sword is still far away.”

Fabio struck with his hammer and continued producing swords. He created hundreds of swords trying to achieve his goal.

When beating at the sword, it would automatically become an excellent blade. A harmony was born between the iron and the blacksmith’s skills.

The dwarf blacksmith Fabio’s tanned body contained an aura of flames reminiscent of steel. He was a blacksmith that only worked on swords and armour. Sweat dripped off his body as he worked with the iron and flames.

Fabio’s blacksmith skill was 81.7% advanced level 9.

He was a giant crouched in a blacksmith forge.

Notes:

According to the legend of Cadmus of Thebes, the Spartoi are warriors born from the body parts of a dragon sown in the ground.

Chapter 5: Ruins Of King Belsos

There were a lot of conditions needed in order for a farmer to settle in one place. Spacious and fertile land, clean water, free of natural disasters and monster attacks.

“Such good land is expensive.”

Therefore farmers claimed land protected by mountains rather than an expensive field. Wooden fences and trenches were dug to prevent the raid of monster attacks.

When soldiers and combat based users secured the peace of the area, the farmland could be expanded. When working on fields in the mountains, there were frequent cases of people dying to monsters. Therefore they had to go through a lot of trouble to grow crops but farmers liked that.

“It might rain in the evening today. Finish the job quickly.”

They planted seeds from the moment the sun rose on the morning fog and they quickly sprouted into stalks. If they conquered the environment and worked hard to give life then they could obtain a gold field. Only then could they feel the excitement of being a farmer.

Once the fields grew grains or the trees in the orchards grew fruit, they could take it to the market and sell it. Cooks would purchase the products for a premium so a farmer could feel the fun

of being in the agricultural trade. They invested that money into buying more land and growing special crops. They didn't buy weapons or armour and invested it all back in their land.

In the north, Morata's relationship with the Elves wasn't bad and the land was also fertile so it was possible to grow fruits from the Elves. If they took good care of the land then it would also affect the surrounding fertile earth.

The fruit trees were expensive but farmers took great pride in their fields and rice paddies. But when looking at expensive products, the most profitable thing was a herb field!

A herb garden could be created anywhere but it needed moderate shade, nutrients and fertile ground. Good herbs could stop aggressive attacks from mountain animals and monsters and cooks would pay a huge amount for them. Once stabilized, the crops would be easily grown and some land would remain intact.

It was a profession where only farmers with large lands would earn a lot of money so the merchants didn't envy them. But when the limit to expanding the land was reached, they would sell the land to lords or other farmers. They would take unknown seeds and look for other rich land to settle in.

The professional Farmers Guild came to Morata shortly after the Goddess of Freya statue was erected.

"The northern lands are really wide so we're not confined to farming in small territories like the Central Continent."

“Over here. Look at the soil quality here.”

The guild members quickly discovered fertile soil.

“If something is planted here then it will grow well.”

“It goes without saying since this land is blessed by the Freya Church. Let’s farm here.”

At first they just planted simple crops like wheat and rice. Wheat could be easily harvested and a large piece of land wasn’t required. And the abundant harvest was beyond expectations! The grain was unharmed due to the protection of the Freya Church.

While worrying about a monster invasion, they talked badly about the Lord of Morata.

“The Morata Lord doesn’t have enough ideas. He doesn’t do anything even when monsters are threatening the peace.”

“That ignorant fellow doesn’t know anything besides fighting. He is like that.”

The farmers from the Central Continent had exporting in mind. But people migrated to Morata and beginners could also start there.

A consumption market was formed and the lord could give indirect support by building special grain warehouses for the farmers of Arpen Kingdom. Farmers who struggled to grow crops would have their hearts broken because it spoiled from no storage if the lords were inattentive.

“The Morata Lord makes a lot of investments yet he lives simply.”

“Isn’t that just to show a good face?”

“These days he is really aware of these things. If we clear the land then a ranger unit will protect it.”

When a farmer successfully grew crops like tomatoes or grapes, the fame of the area would increase and it was be registered as a specialty. They could then sell it as specialty items. Food merchants would visit them intentionally for purchases and the bulk resources would be stores in warehouses.

Some farmers registered olives as a specialty and cooks who used the raw materials make technological advances. Wine and beer breweries were also managed so grain would be consumed even more.

The livestock industry raising cows and sheep also gave large quantities of milk, cheese and food and Morata’s leather industry was highly competitive.

“Morata’s Lord is really wonderful. Who else would take such care of his farmers?”

“This is excellent timber. If we start growing herb fields in the Arpen Kingdom before it is too late then we can widen into orchards and vineyards.”

“I’d like to start coffee beans and sugar canes.”

Weed played a huge role in the reason why farmers could accumulate wealth. Many users who came to see Weed settled in the area, peace was strengthened and it was possible to defend against monsters.

Only farmers under the extensive protection of the King Hydra or Black Imugi couldn’t feel reassured enough to increase their yields. Just like more farmers were attracted after Morata’s development, it was the same when the Arpen Kingdom was established. Currently agriculture was booming.

There were also wild grass and flowers at Morata’s popular tourist spots.

Many birds flew towards this beautiful city. The birds that ate the valuable grain were the natural enemy of farmers.

“There are so many damn birds.”

“Whoa! I really wish I could get rid of all of them.”

The farmers frantically tried to drive them out of the fields worth thousands of gold but birds kept on flying over the area. It became so popular that travellers came just to see the birds.

“Noona, that bird over there is weird!”

2 special birds were the leaders. The special gold and silver birds pecked at the grains of rice.

Golden Bird and Silver Bird cried out with satisfaction as they ate like princesses.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The expedition left for Argoldia under the Church of Lugh’s request. The fact that expedition was heading towards one of the continent’s 10 famous Forbidden Zones didn’t bother them.

“Ah, I’m tired.”

“There seems to be no end.”

“It is already the second day and we haven’t found anything.”

Of course they couldn’t obtain food or water. The land was barren and hungry man-eating monsters roamed it. They were unable to find the Holy Land in Argoldia.

“We have to overcome it. We can do it.”

The paladins and priests from the Church of Lugh encouraged the tired people. It was natural that many of the users were clergy affiliated professions since it was a quest given by a religious order.

“Weed-nim actively played in one of the 10 Forbidden Zones. And didn’t he succeed?”

“If we give up here and return then we will just stay the underdogs. Let’s all work together.”

Despite that, the endless barren land tempted them to give up.

Hunger and thirst. Monsters that would eat their meat. Even the oasis they finally found had its bottom completely exposed.

“Kuooh… This place is also incorrect.”

“Let’s scatter and look a bit more.”

“It would be nice if it rained tomorrow…..”

“The last time it rained was one month ago, it is really terrible.”

Argoldia was near the territory of the Dark Wood Magicians so

teleport magic couldn't be used. Only small scale magic that didn't cause ripples could be used in battle. If the Dark Wood Magicians discovered them then there would be a surprise raid. The attacks from senior magicians over level 460 were enough to make the expedition worry.

Time passed as they arrived in Argoldia and wandered around. Even if the elite users from Morata participated, a large number of casualties occurred. The fact that many people participated on important expeditions wasn't necessarily a good thing. The users who were priests heard that the Garden of the Gods in Morata was being completed and wanted to return.

"The goal of exploring Argoldia, a Forbidden Zone hasn't been completed yet you want to return to Morata just to see the Garden of the Gods?"

"I think there will be a lot more interesting adventures in Arpen Kingdom."

"That would be better."

A significant number of users belonging to the clergy affiliation and other professions left like a tide. The remaining personnel were only approximately 20 people.

"We must fulfil our mission."

The Adventurer Spenson whose name was known on the

continent decided to lead them until the end and reclaim the power of the Sword of Lugh.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Weed looked at the statues he made in the Garden of the Gods early in the morning. He had decided to complete the final statue in the morning and now wasn't that time.

The night sky was so clear that it felt like the moon and stars were close. But Weed's heart wasn't comfortable.

In the past he had regretted buying a 200 won more expensive salt but recently he had made many more mistakes.

"I made too many mistakes in the battle at the Melbourne Mine."

The fight against Bardray constantly came to his head while he was making the sculptures. Weed regretted his defeat and death but he wasn't angry. The reason was simple. He was weak so he died.

"It is my responsibility to become even stronger."

Bardray was known to be strong. He received support from his guild so the situation was disadvantageous from the beginning. However, that was just an excuse.

His regret was due to not showing all his combat ability in battle.

“I should’ve thought more carefully. I didn’t take advantage of everything to the fullest.”

It was a bad situation but he was used to that. If Seo-yoon’s health had been distributed through the wedding ring then he would’ve been able to hold on much longer. He would also be able to fight more actively if he could’ve utilized the Berserker’s skills.

However the thought of more reinforcements from the Hermes Guild burdened him so he fought hastily and died. He took a big hit all at once, making his health fall too quickly for the wedding ring to take effect.

“I did something foolish. Just like when I bought the 200 won more expensive salt.”

Weed scolded himself for dying. He couldn’t accept receiving so much damage from the Hermes Guild users. Although the situation was complicated, the amount of damage received by the elite Hermes Guild users was amazing. Their skills, level and cooperation was enough that the Belkain couple only irritated them.

“And I was very careless. My preparations were insufficient compared to the enemy.”

He hadn’t used Summon Sculpture intentionally. He didn’t want

to suffer larger damage if they were destroyed. Even Disaster Sculpting couldn't be used because there were no nature sculptures.

Things like a volcanic eruption took too much time to activate, leaving Weed in danger. Therefore it was useless in a decisive moment. It would be better if he had a Disaster Sculpting suitable for the dungeon and then being able to fight.

Moonlight Sculpting Blade was useful in fighting enemies. He used it often in hunting so its proficiency was also high. But it consumed 3 times the mana of Sculpting Blade so it couldn't be used often in battle without something like the Goddess' Knight Armour.

"I released my tension in many ways."

The outcome of his reflection was that Weed was lax in his last battle. If he was defeated then he had to become strong and take away their lives!

"I even lost the decent Talrock's Armour."

A unique class item. He acquired it a long time ago so the options were somewhat old but it was still good to wear. Weed tended to focus on damage more than defense so he frequently changed his sword. He had a soft spot for the armour so it pained it when it was taken away. He felt betrayed that the Talrock's Armour he frequently wore was going into the hands and purse strings of someone else.

“I can’t do that again.”

Before completing the final god statue, he decided to create some sculptures he could use with Disaster Sculpting.

Suddenly haunted to death by a swarm of insects. They could penetrate through rocks or humans and monsters.

In fact, Weed had already made a diverse range of Disaster Sculptures so he struggled to think of some that transcended imagination.

“Whatever it is will be terrible. Even pouring hot water on the body will be fine. I won’t always have ice so I should prepare some sculptures in advance.”

He had experience with the disasters. He prepared sculptures beforehand in case there was trouble in a place like the mine.

It truly wasn’t useless to frequently see bad things.

“A robber who hits the bank several times will probably end up stealing well.”

Weed created the Disaster Sculptures until morning.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

“Is it going to start soon?”

“It really is the end.”

“I’m nervous for some reason.”

“I was suddenly shoved back.”

The Garden of the Gods was going to be completed this morning so a large crowd was gathered. The excitement grew because there was only one last piece left. Those that participated directly were even more impressed.

“Uhh… where will we go after that is created?”

“The expedition to explore the ruins of King Belsos shouldn’t be that difficult. We just can’t make any mistakes.”

“Hah! I’m anxious when looking at the Crimson Wing in the past.”

Surka, Romuna and Irene’s complexion was dark. When the sculpture was completed, they would leave with Weed to explore a dungeon so their expressions couldn’t be bright. Kaybern’s Spartoi had already arrived.

“As expected, you shouldn’t be too good.”

Pale and Irene felt as they watched Weed. They suffered for no reason thanks to that guy's personality!

"Staying near an unlucky person like that really causes bad things."

The morning sun rose and showcased the final sculpture. The crowd became bigger as time passed. It was like feeling hunger for the best dish so they would be even more impressed once the sculpture was completed.

"This morning, it is a really historic moment for the Arpen Kingdom. A new chapter will open in order to reap more taxes."

Weed carved the lips of the sculpture. He had left the Statue of Freya until the end.

Paladins and priests ran all the way from the Central Continent when they heard it was going to be completed. He had already made a Goddess of Freya Statue in Morata but it would only be completed once placed in the circle of gods.

The Goddess of Freya Statue was beautiful so there were several concerns about it being the final work. He applied lipstick to add a shimmering gloss to the mouth, added make-up to the face and the Goddess of Freya Statue was completed.

Ddiring!

-The statue of the Goddess Freya has been born!

She is the goddess of beauty and abundance. The goddess exerts a lot of influence on humans.

The work of a renowned sculpture has expressed her beauty.

By rebranding a work from the past, the Freya Church will consider this sculpture more valuable.

-Friendship with the Freya Church is now 54.

-Contribution to the Freya Church has increased by 960.

You can confirm your contribution points with a religious order under the Religion window.

Total Contribution Points with the Freya Church: 21,291

The contribution points to the related religious orders would rise once related quests were accomplished.

The Freya Church has a cathedral so if the residents' faith increases then the contribution point would rise steadily every day.

The King or Lord can also get major benefits.

Ddiring!

-Sculptures representing the gods have been gathered in one large area.

What will you name the sculptures that have been completed?

“The Garden of the Gods.”

-The Garden of the Gods is correct?

The labourers and users were already calling it that. It wasn’t that bad considering Weed’s normal naming sense.

Construction land, Town next to Morata, Tax Garden and the Hermes Guild Villains were all possible names.

“That’s correct.”

Ddiring!

-The Garden of the Gods has been born on the Versailles Continent!

The place containing the god sculptures has a dignified

appearance. Every race that comes to this place will be able to feel a reverence and piety.

The sculptor Weed who is King of the Arpen Kingdom has completed a massive construction with his residents.

The original forms of the oldest gods have been recovered.

This is a place of religious important so large trees and flowers will bloom while spirits will enjoy it.

Each religious order on the Versailles Continent will register it as a sacred place. Pilgrims will come to visit the Garden of the Gods.

The fame of the Arpen Kingdom is very high.

Those who believe in the gods will receive blessings.

The expansion of the country with a high culture has reached its maximum.

The residents' loyalty has changed to respect to the monarchy itself.

A country's fame was very useful in the trade of foreign and local specialties. Goods imported from a more well-known kingdom would be given a good price when trading. Merchants would rejoice when they procured something from a certain kingdom.

Weed also had a personal message floating in front of him.

His friendship and contribution points with the other religious orders had risen and he also received the blessings of the gods.

A dictator who exploited people was blessed by the gods! In the process of making the sculptures he had completed 2 Magnum Opus, 3 Masterpieces and 7 Fine pieces. He also completed numerous Historic, Religious and Giant sculptures.

His Leadership, Endurance and Perseverance stats also rose by a lot due to leading other people and creating the sculptures.

His sculpting skill proficiency reached 38.2% advanced level 9. His skill proficiency steadily rose thanks to the creation of a large religious work that spread through the whole continent.

Weed's increase in sculpting skill proficiency wasn't the biggest harvest from this work.

When he looked at it in the long term, the creation of the Garden of the Gods not long after the founding of the Arpen Kingdom would result in great benefits.

"Kyahahaha! It is finally over!"

"Now let's play!"

Users who participated in the Garden of the Gods cheered, throwing up their caps. The musicians played their instruments vigorously.

“Travel, Wind, Pork, please come to these restaurants. I will give it to you for a cheap price. Lettuce will be free!”

“Deliciously dark beer! My place just got a new cook so dishes are flying out. Guests follow me if you want to eat!”

“Grass Porridge Cult! Grass Porridge Cult members. There will be a regular dinner today at Pulsul Cafe!”

The people in Morata had been waiting for this day so it was no different from a festival. There was a flurry of petals to celebrate the completion and stores opened wide their doors. The shacks and houses also put up signposts.

-I carried stones in the Garden of the Gods 14 times.

-I shovelled for 4 hours at the Garden of the Gods.

-Merchant’s House. Donated 2 pieces of marble.

Every place has something they were proud of.

Tourists and settlers kept on coming from other places so the

atmosphere continued for a while.

Weed might be the King but he was also the sculptor who created an enormous piece of work that drew crowds. Even if other sculptors received the support of a guild, it will be impossible for them to match his popularity.

Many residents smiled brightly and gave expressions of pure joy as the Garden of the Gods was completed. The status of the sculptor would change the piece of work.

Weed thought it was a chance to look good for the residents and used Lion's Roar.

"The Garden of the Gods will be opened for free forever!"

"Hooray Arpen Kingdom!"

"Hooray the continent's best sculptor Weed!"

Weed brought greater joy to the users!

"I really have no choice but to like Weed-nim."

"Yes. I really love Weed-nim's adventures and it is the reason why I came to Morata."

To be honest, Weed had no choice but to make it free. It had a large influence on the clergy affiliated professions, making going there an essential part of their profession.

If he received an entrance fee then the income would be really huge but the task would've been impossible if the crowd didn't participate. It wouldn't be easy for Weed to charge an entry fee without any resistance.

In addition, it was also unfortunately classified as a religious building so he couldn't charge an admission fee. However the positive effects from completing the Garden of the Gods weren't small. Weed had no choice but to be satisfied with that degree.

"There will hopefully be more good facilities in the future. I'll be able to collect the taxes for those."

If other lords, sculptures or architects on the Central Continent to build a great building or piece then they couldn't hire a large amount of people. Apart from conditions like technology and development, a large and long term investment of money was required. When looking at how long it would take to succeed and the benefits, it wasn't an easy decision to make.

It was a great achievement to be able to build a Grand Building on the Central Continent. The cities in the Central Continent had high economic and technical prowess but were somewhat impoverished as a result of the war.

But the lords hadn't been worried about increasing the number

of users. The lords just thought of ways to squeeze the users. New users were still growing so they only thought about raising the taxes higher. Their focus was just on the immediate profit. It was the same for all the surrounding lords so it was difficult for things to change.

That was the circumstances of the Central Continent so it was no wonder Weed was so popular among the general users. The people who suffered under Weed in Continent of Magic couldn't understand how he could be such a kind King of Morata.

"You should go do Kaybern-nim's important task."

A Spartoi clad in shining armour came to Weed. Weed had wasted one important day making sculptures so it was necessary to hurry. He couldn't imagine being late for Kaybern's quest.

"There are many things I need to do as Arpen's King but I'm going now. Wy-3!"

A wyvern came flying and landed in the Garden of the Gods. He decided to use the wyvern to move to Belsos' dungeon. The terrain was unknown and the Spartoi had high resistance so Yurin couldn't move them with her Picture Movement. The bystanders looked on in amazement at Weed, the wyvern and Spartoi in the Garden of the Gods.

"Are they the Weed-nim's Royal Knights?"

“Look at that armour. It isn’t ordinary.”

“It looks really strong. Isn’t that in the mid or late 400’s?”

“I thought that the Arpen Kingdom’s army was weak… He really hid such knights!”

“Why does the Arpen Kingdom have Royal Knights with such high levels?”

Weed and the Spartoi were also broadcasted live on television screens.

“They are Spartoi!”

“Spartoi, aren’t they made with the body parts of extremely strong dragons?”

“Yes. I’ve never seen Spartoi in battle but considering the standard of armour they are wearing, they should be able to face off against the highest class monsters. I estimate that their correct level is 500.”

“The Spartoi have amazing magic resistance, the health is close to infinite and there are hardly any dents in their armour.”

“Ah, it really is amazing! Did Weed-nim receive a Dragon Quest and is being escorted by the Spartoi?”

“If it is anyone else then I wouldn’t understood but it isn’t strange if it is Weed.”

The hosts at the broadcasting station’s studios said with amazement. Many late level users were interested in the Garden of the Gods so they were also shocked at the sight.

“I thought the Arpen Kingdom was weak since it was just founded?”

“I thought the north wasn’t a particularly big deal but it really can’t be ignored.”

The broadcast of the completion of the Garden of the Gods suddenly came alive at the appearance of the Spartoi.

The Royal Knights symbolized the power of the Kingdom. A person had to go through a series of complicated quests given by the King in order to be appointed a knight. Once users were a knight they would receive benefits like a salary, horses and armour but they had to swear allegiance to the king. The appointed knights would command soldiers to hunt monsters in dungeons.

He had to pay attention to things like this when becoming a King. Wonderful knights would increase the fame of the King and the Honour stat would rise. They could also proudly boast about them.

While everyone was impressed with the Spartoi, Weed and his

companions were the only ones who knew that they belonged to Akryong Kaybern.

If Weed didn’t succeed in his quest then they would become hostile straight away.

Chapter 6: Final Sculpting Master

“The fog is spooky.”

“I heard it is always full of fog here.”

Weed and his colleagues arrived at Musos Valley that contained the Tombs of the Kings riding the wyverns. The eyes of the Spartoi glared into the distance as they looked for monsters or threats. Mountain beasts and monsters wandering around turned pale and escaped from the Spartoi like there was an earthquake. It was the futile appearance of high ranking monsters. They also didn’t like Van Hawk and Torido.

Weed clicked his tongue.

“If I caught and peeled off their leather then I could’ve sold it for an expensive price.”

“This seems to be correct.”

Pale who was searching discovered the entrance. It was the entrance to the tomb of King Belsos that was previously opened by the Crimson Wings Guild. But there hadn’t been any visitors since then so it had been sealed up again.

They cleared the stones at the entrance and entered the ruins.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The stones walls in the interior of the ruins was a natural cave carved in a flat and wide form. There was a big, circular pillar in the middle but monsters could be hiding in the area so they were nervous.

"This is where I show my skills."

Pale went forward.

"Wind's Eye."

-When the space is connected, it is possible to see through objects.

It was an archer skill he acquired after reaching level 400. Even if he hadn't obtained another archer technique, Pale had grown in pure combat. He was an archer who faithfully followed Weed and raised his stats and skill proficiency.

Pale placed an arrow on his bowstring.

"Twilight's Arrow."

-Sticky webs hanging from the arrow will slow down the enemy's speed.

“Wind of Guidance.”

-It is possible to hit targets seen with Wind’s Eye. The arrows have to be aimed accurately in order to track down the enemy.

Pusyung!

Pale looked at a wall and shot his arrow. His archery proficiency meant he could combine four types of skills on one arrow. The arrow flew straight and moved along the wall before disappearing.

After a few moments.

Kyahaak!

The shriek of a monster was heard. Pale used his rapid fire skill and continued to shoot arrows until the monster’s scream gradually disappeared. He showed a glorious way of hunting monsters in dungeons. It was an ability that only high level archers could execute!

It didn’t matter if there was only one but if there were multiple monsters then it would be difficult to deal with. Arrows could reduce the monster’s health by many times before they arrived. It could also be used to lure a monster. Pale’s arrow could get rid of the enemy or slow them down.

The monsters that arrived became the victim of Surka’s fists.

“Yon han kwon, Matchless Power, Wheel Power!”

Abdomen, flanks, forehead.

The distinct skills hit different areas like a storm. Feeling the tingling power in the fists and the sound of something being hit was the best.

“Heheh, haven’t I become a lot stronger?”

Weed was gratified that his companions grew a lot.

“Well done. This means we can stay together the next time I receive a S class quest.”

If the suffering was divided up then it would be reduced. He was much more comfortable suffering with his companions than alone! The blood drained from his colleagues’ faces as they heard Weed’s words. They boasted about their strength and now they were involved in something bigger!

And he increased the speed as they aggressively explored the ruins.

In the past, the Crimson Wings Guild had gathered 300 users to explore the tomb of King Belsos. At that time, they were one of the overwhelming guilds on the Versailles Continent so it was possible

to do something like that.

“If we keep on going straight down then we will reach the door to the King’s tomb.”

“I understand!”

“Irene-nim, I have received a blessing so only restore my health if my life is at risk.”

“I’ll do that.”

Weed commanded before exploring the rest of the ruins. The group was filled with people over level 400. The individual power was quite strong compared to the Crimson Wins so their exploration was much more effective than the previous ones.

He also put Kaybern’s Spartoi to use. The Spartoi were skeletons that wore the first class armour the dwarves made. They were humanoid skeletons so sharp bones were visible. Weed gave the Spartoi instructions.

“Go and fight.”

Although dealing with the monsters with his colleagues were tolerable, the small insects called Armoured Insects in the ruins were annoying.

“There is no obligation to listen to your words.”

“It is necessary for the work the great god Kaybern has entrusted me with.”

“…Understood.”

The Spartoi walked up in their rattling armour and cut the Armoured Insect. They felt like machines as they handled the Armoured Insects in the blink of an eye.

‘It would be nice if these guys were my subordinates…..’

He estimated that the Spartoi’s level was at least 520 so they were dependable in battle. They were magical creatures born for battle! Weed looked at their form from behind.

‘It is fine for them to die. If the Spartoi are wiped out by monsters……’

Weed would swipe the armour and swords the Spartoi had equipped! Weed’s eyes became sly.

“Spartoi, keep on charging forward from now on!”

“Kirit, understood.”

The Spartoi moved forward as hundreds of monsters with sharp claws emerged. Fierce fighting broke out inside the passages.

“Well done, Spartoi!”

Weed watched the fight while cheering on the Spartoi. The sharp claws relentlessly attacked the Spartoi. They attacked with their claws as well as biting and spewing fire.

But the Spartoi’s health didn’t decrease that much no matter how they were attacked. Akryong Kaybern’s strong protective magic was hanging around them.

The sharp clawed monsters were the ones who hesitated instead. The Spartoi didn’t feel any sense of crisis at all and hunted down the enemy one by one.

“Well, of course they won’t die that easily.”

Weed had the Spartoi defend their position. Thanks to the Spartoi’s excellent attack and defense, hunting became easy.

“Calling Death Knight Van Hawk, calling the Vampire Lord Torido!”

“Master, you called.”

“Fight.”

Torido and Van Hawk helped out in battle while Weed used his secret sword technique.

“Sword-cloning skill!”

5 fake bodies were formed. After being defeated by Bardray, he realized he needed to raise the proficiency of his various combat skills. He aggressively utilized sword skills in a fight. The fake bodies attacked the monsters with sharp claws. The monster’s claws struck Weed after he ran forward.

-You have been attacked by the Malluk.

-The blessing of the goddess Freya on the Goddess’ Knight Armour has been activated.

Defense will increase by 27% depending on the damage from the monsters.

His defense had increased thanks to the Goddess’ Knight Armour.

“Okay, this is enough that I don’t need to move.”

Weed improvised a combat style that was different from normal. Normally he would go forward and deliberately fire off his skills. Even Bardray admired his sophistication and agility in battle.

“Close Eyes Tightly, Radiant Sword!”

Pabababababak!

Weed had been hit by sharp claws and used a secret sword technique. Now three shining sparrows emerged. It rushed to take care of the enemies while he closed his eyes. He didn’t avoid any attacks and continued using his combat skills.

Raising Resilience and Perseverance required a lot of patience since most people tended to avoid damage rather then be hit. The change in his hunting method made it a little more efficient. However his fighting style worsened like he was in a dogfight.

“Hit me more, still too weak. Give it to me, come on!’

This was the first time he used the Goddess’ Knight Armour in battle. His basic defense was high and the helium meant mana recovered quickly so Weed could continuously use his sword skills. Bellot breathed out a deep sigh.

“Weed-nim is really…..”

Even if he was ignorant, he shouldn’t fight ignorantly. A man should consider his appearance when fighting. Hwaryeong just smiled.

“Weed-nim has that beastly charm. Kyaaaak!”

"....."

She was a really friendly older sister buts sometimes Bellot really couldn't understand Hwaryeong.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

They arrived safely at the entrance to King Belsos' stone chamber. The Spartoi helped a lot but they were tired from the many monsters. Weed didn't look good despite standing still for most of his battles.

Irene asked anxiously.

"Are you okay? Should I use some treatment magic on you if you're in a bad condition?"

"That's okay. Phew."

His Perseverance now exceeded 900 points and his Resilience over 500. This was the result of the vicious hunt and making sculptures.

Warriors tended to develop defense skills by blocking attacks with shields. It was difficult to raise basic stats like Weed.

He would purposely end up in the wrong place when attacking

monsters.

“I really made the right choice with this armour.”

“……”

The difference between the 85 defense of Talrock’s Armour and the close to 300 defense of the Goddess’ Knight Armour was like heaven and earth. If he used Armour Polishing that increased defense by 20% widened the gap even further. The effect of the 200 defense difference reduced the monster’s attacks by 1/5th.

“Now I only feel a ticklish sensation.”

Once he wore the Goddess’ Knight Armour, he could ignore various attacks and fight more aggressively. That alone had an impact on his attack power and the helium also quickly refilled his mana.

The use of secret sword techniques and various combat skills also increased his hunting speed. It was regrettable that he lost the Talrock’s Armour but it led to a profound growth in various abilities.

“It would’ve been perfect if I sold it off at a high price to a good buyer.”

“Huh?”

“Nothing. Now let’s all place the sculptures.”

They were the scorpion sculptures that symbolized King Belsos. Weed picked up a red stone from the altar. He had made the pieces in the past but he couldn’t remember the details.

A huge quantity of sculptures had passed his hands and spread through the continent. A vast amount was also piled up warehouses. The sculptures could be sold at a good price on anniversaries or with special sales.

“I’ll create better scorpions than back then.”

Weed took the ores and started carving scorpions. And he handed it one by one to his colleagues.

“Put it on at the same time.”

“Yes.”

A tense atmosphere flowed for a while. The Crimson Wings Guild had gone to the tomb of King Belsos and ended up cursing the entire Versailles Continent. If they took that into account, there would be a great risk if they entered.

Naturally Weed had considered that part.

‘I’m doing this secretly because I don’t know what the result will be. I can deny it until the end.’

He hadn’t made it public like the Crimson Wings Guild and the entrance of the ruins confirmed that there was no one else inside.

Kukukukukukung!

The door made a large noise as the red scorpions were placed. There was a significant amount of monsters wandering inside. They cried out harshly as they saw Weed’s party and attacked.

“Spartoi, go to the front and protect the entrance.”

“Understood.”

They were the monsters that protected the King’s Tomb so they were more dangerous and higher levelled. The video of the Crimson Wings’ attempt provided many useful information.

Weed decided on a stable hunt without overdoing it this time. Thanks to the Spartoi guarding the entrance, he decided on long range attacks. Romuna’s senior magic, Pale’s arrows and Zephyr’s ranged fishing rod were quite powerful. Surka’s fists and the Spartoi damaged any beasts that tried to sneak out.

“I have to start dancing as well.”

“Unni, I’ll play a quick rhythm!”

Bellot and Hwaryeong’s song and dance dazzled the beasts. Weed stopped using Radiant Sword and used the bow and arrows from the Elves to methodically eliminate the beasts.

The entrance was thoroughly blocked and they hunted through long range attacks. Experience and loot easily piled up from the beasts. It was a situation that all combat affiliated users dreamed of.

“It is a little bland. I want to go up close!”

But in the end, Weed chose to leave the safety of the Spartoi and hunt the beasts. The beasts were dangerous but the Goddess’ Knight Armour showed its power.

“Healing Hands!”

Irene treating the Spartoi wasn’t necessary but he could still receive intensive care. Weed was good at staying still when carving sculptures but he wasn’t satisfied with that when hunting.

He wanted to raise his skill proficiency and obtain loot!

“Weed-nim, I’ll cover you.”

Pale concentrated his arrows on the bests behind Weed. Romuna

also prepared her spells.

The beasts were dazed and weakened by Hwaryeong and Bellot so they moved slower. He fought within the controlled space of the King's Tomb.

"Kyah!"

And Weed's eyes became wet as he saw the gold scorpions, gold, silver etc. piled up in the treasury. He had seen it in the video of the Crimson Wings Guild's invasion but it was still impressive.

"G-gold coins and jewels..."

Weed's voice trembled like a young boy confessing to his first love. But his face looked like a politician who had seen a huge bribe.

"You shouldn't go there. Weed-nim!"

"I know there will be trouble if I touch this."

His colleagues were suspicious of Weed trying to collect all the treasure. The Crimson Wings Guild made the mistake of touching the treasure and caused a huge curse. The treasure was like a pie in the sky. People suffered huge risk to come here only to not be able to take anything away.

Weed's brain returned when his colleagues pulled his arm. He calmly analysed the gold coins, jewels and items!

'The jewels have a lot of value. If disposed of, they would go for at least 3.4 million gold as the market price. If Mapan sells it then he can achieve at least 3.67 million gold.

Taking into consideration the fluctuating market price, there is at least a 3% error margin. Weed didn't touch the stacked up gems.

"Chyap chyap chyap chyap!"

Saliva just dripped down!

"Oh look at this sparkling jewel."

"Unni. This bag as well. This is the bag that the princess from the Rosenheim Kingdom wore."

"Really? It is a limited item. I also wanted this."

Hwaryeong and Bellot couldn't keep their eyes off the leather accessories and precious jewels.

"Kyaaaah. So pretty. I want to wear this and show off in a square."

“Look at this glistening hue.”

The girls were happy just looking at the bags, jewels and boots.

“Isn’t this a staff for a priest?”

“Look at these diamond encrusted gloves.”

Irene and Surka’s eyes shook as they looked at the equipment. Romuna showed a lot of interest and lingered in front of a magician’s robe surrounded with a red light.

Weed wasn’t the only one that became greedy when looking at the items! Weed found something strange about the accumulated jewels.

“The workmanship is quite excellent. A dwarf’s work? But it isn’t a method that the dwarves like.”

Dwarves preferred workmanship that emphasized the beauty while this one was simple and expressed the colour of the jewel.

“There are even more strange things.”

Weed was able to recognize that a glass item was completed by a sculptor with considerable skill. There was also a large coffin in the centre containing the remains of King Belsos. The pattern engraved on the lids that was designed to harmonize the spirits

wasn’t ordinary either.

“The standard of the scorpions also isn’t ordinary.”

All Weed needed to do to enter the King’s Tomb was to make scorpion sculptures. But the scorpions in this tomb was so sophisticated that it made his work seem like something made by an infant. There were many treasures but he wanted to check the sculptures because he was a sculptor.

“Maybe this is…”

Weed raised his hand to the scorpion pattern on the wall.

“Inspect!”

-You have failed.

“As expected, this is…”

Weed became even further convinced.

“Inspect!”

-Scorpion Sculpture

A sculture created by the Sculpting Master Belsos La Deus the

3rd. He expressed the form of the scorpion that he really liked.

Artistic Value: 472

Special Options: Increase the breeding rate of scorpions.

Power is stored in it

“He is a Sculpting Master!”

Weed had met the final master, King Belsos. And the memories contained in the sculpture started to show.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Belsos was born in the southern desert.

He possessed the blood of a king so he was often pursued by assassins. He followed along with the desert tribes and carried their luggages.

He was interested in swords and sculptures. Belsos carved small sculptures by hand and received recognition from the targets. He learnt how to use the sword from mercenaries wandering the continent and the desert.

He became an adult and returned to his clan. Belsos wore a

scorpion necklace and had fresh tribal tattoos on him.

After he became King of the Brukan Kingdom, he ruled over the southern desert. Belsos was called the Great King of Fire and numerous fire spirits followed him.

“The march of the Brukan Kingdom.”

“Gather the soldiers in the desert!”

There was a war with the other desert tribes. They slaughtered the nomad tribes and took away their camel, cattle and sheep. King Belsos’ father had been killed by them so he left none untouched.

The army of the tribes consisted of over 100,000 camel cavalry. They wielded long, curved swords and bows skillfully. They fought differently from the knight corps of the Central Continent who threw spears while engaged in melee fights. But their combat power wasn’t inferior to the knights of the Central Continent.

On the other hand, the Brukan Kingdom was lacking by 30,000 soldiers. This included the general infantry that didn’t ride the camels. King Belsos’ army also contained tens of thousands of fire spirits as well as humans.

If the battle occurred in the grasslands or forests instead of the desert then everything would be burnt. The fire spirits were able to roam around freely in the sand of the desert.

King Belsos brought peace to the desert through the fire spirits. However he couldn’t be a good king. The land was a desert so grain couldn’t be grown and there were fights between tribes over oasis.

King Belsos had no choice but to enter the Central Continent. He mobilized his fire spirit friends and gained a wide territory through war.

The vast treasures they obtained every time they won a battle clouded the eyes of his tribesmen and they wanted more blood instead of working the land.

Belsos felt lonely as he could hardly ever leave his palace. But his people further extended the war. The desert tribes had been trained in battle so the walls were no longer impregnable targets. Even if Belsos didn’t fight, the blood of his people continued being sacrificed to the kingdoms in the Central Continent.

“The sculptures are beautiful but they are unable to make up for the humans’ greed.”

King Belsos turned to his spirits and sculpting. He collected rare materials and made sculptures in his palace.

A garden decorating an oasis in the desert, a camel peacefully drinking from a stream etc. were all sculptures created.

The desert tribes who had fallen to the allure of war couldn’t understand the meaning of the sculptures. As King Belsos’

territory expanded and more warriors were recruited, more treasures came into the palace.

Once the king became older, those who regarded themselves as successors appeared and fought among themselves. Belsos' army of fire spirits were quiet but there was already a horrific slaughter outside.

Belsos just continued making fire spirit sculptures. It was to the extent that the number of fire spirits following him couldn't be fathomed. Then he eventually abandoned his human flesh and became a spirit.

He was the king of the fire spirits.

After Belsos disappeared from the royal palace, the fire spirits also vanished. There was no more reason to fight and the Brukan Kingdom collapsed. The successors entered the palace and plundered everything expensive. The many beautiful sculptures that Belsos made in the palace burned.

The Brukan Kingdom were weakened by the war between the tribes and the Masen Kingdom once again drove them back into the desert. Fortunately, several mementos and other valuables had been moved by Belsos to the Musos Valley before the palace was plundered.

There was little remaining of King Belsos despite his achievements.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

-You have obtained information about the Sculpting Master Belsos La Deus the 3rd from the sculpture.

You have obtained information about the Brukan Kingdom.

Historical knowledge has been acquired.

Knowledge has increased by 14.

You have already completed the quest associated with Elemental Sculpting.

“The Sculpting Masters truly don’t live ordinary lives.”

Weed felt bitterness as he watched the memories contained in the sculpture.

“Someone who died… He built up treasure because he felt loneliness!”

It was truly unfair! The king never enjoyed the luxury and pleasures. When viewed from Weed’s personal perspective, he couldn’t understand the king.

It would’ve been lovely if he had that much wealth. He would use

it. He would collect more treasures and use his power to rule over the people of that world.

Anyway, Belsos wasn't a usual king. He lived his life and became a master at sculpting spirits.

Every Sculpting Master had their own strangeness.

Darone created many pieces of the same woman and eventually realized Sculpture Transformation through his affection for the sculptures. Zahab loved a queen and developed Sculpting Blade and Radiant Sword. Emperor Geihar Von Arpen gave live to the sculptures he viewed as friends and developed Sculpture Life Bestowal. Finally, Belsos was king of the desert until he disappeared to become a spirit.

"I have to be careful. I can't be exploited or squander my money."

Weed was in a much lighter mood but he also felt wary as he visited the King's Tomb.

It wasn't possible to call the Sculpting Master King Belsos a perfect man.

Chapter 7: Spirit King's Sculpture

Weed informed his other colleagues of the information he obtained. Irene smiled lightly.

"The King of the Fire Spirits cursed the continent to be hot because people carelessly touched his relics."

Surka also expressed her excitement at the interesting story.

"I like hearing about unusual stories of the past. Aren't we the only ones who know about this unknown history of the Versailles Continent?"

Hwaryeong and Bellot were discussing putting on a show about King Belsos.

There were a lot of small scale performance venues in Morata. Performances often occurred in Light Square or Bingryong Square and stats would increase depending on the success and audience reactions.

Weed created sculptures with historical stories and this historical information would have a good effect on the performances. The audience welcomed this with performances because they could gain more knowledge stats.

Of course, it was only possible to gain some stats the first time

hearing the historical fact. That's why the audience kept on demanding better performances. It was the reason why bards travelled around the continent asking for stories.

"Then I just need the Agate crystal."

Weed found numerous Agate crystals in one place. The quantity was quite a lot as he saw at least 120 of them.

"But I don't know if I can take it!"

Belsos' tomb had many treasures such as a desert warrior's equipment. But there was no assurance that he could leave with the sculpting material.

"I have to do this somehow."

Weed was deep in thought The treasures couldn't be opened that easily. Some traps might be installed! In this case, he had to be suspicious and watch the boundaries.

Weed felt even more suspicious thanks to his experiences so far.

"The Dragon's Quest won't end this simply. Why else would the Spartoi be sent for support? We wandered a short while looking for the ruins and there was a fight against the monsters but I can't really say that we struggled."

Usually quests of this difficulty would work out fine and he would feel happy until he was hit in the back of the head. So far he had many experiences with high difficulty quests.

“There is nothing that can be easily solved in this world.”

His colleagues stood quietly and waited for his choice. If the wrong choice was made then everyone would be in trouble so they had to believe in him and wait.

Zephyr whispered.

“I’ll just believe in Weed-nim’s decision.”

Bellot also spoke in a low voice.

“These are also my thoughts. We will become cockroaches that won’t die even if we’re stepped on.”

Weed’s other colleagues also agreed.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

“I won’t do that.”

Weed decided not to touch the sculpting materials.

He felt tremendous anguish but the agate crystal was more important than gold or jewels. The Crimson Wings Guild had touched the treasures out of greed and suffered for it.

“It is like ordering a fried chicken that came marinated.”

Weed looked around the king’s chamber for other materials and treasures. Based on the memories he witnessed from King Belsos’ sculpture, he needed to discard greed.

“I understand that he made a lot of elemental sculptures.”

Belsos had lived an arduous life from an early age and the spirits were his friends. And he discovered a statue of a Fire Spirit that was half finished!

It wasn’t made with an ordinary skill. It had the appearance of King Belsos ling in the desert and his entire body seemed to consist of an elemental spirit. Weed looked at the unfinished sculpture and it seemed like a puzzle had snapped in place.

“The Agate isn’t a treasure but I don’t know if I can take it. I don’t know if a curse will happen or not.”

Weed had his Sculptor profession in common with Belsos. Sometimes having spirits as partners would lead to social problems.

“But King Belsos was a Sculpting Master so he must have

Elemental Sculpting.”

Weed had learnt the skill on his own but judging by the memories he saw in the sculpture, King Belsos 100% had Elemental Sculpting.

“If I complete this sculpture then I would probably learn Elemental Sculpting.”

If so, he obviously had to finish this sculpture. This was a place related to a sculptor so the statue could be seen as a very important key. His colleagues just continued to watch as Weed’s thoughts got deeper and deeper.

“How are we going to do this?”

“I don’t know. I don’t think we can escape with the treasure right now.....”

“Let’s check the surroundings once again.”

“Ah, he’s laughing!”

A rotten, confident smile was on Weed’s face.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

“Calling the fire elemental, lullulu!”

Weed sang as he carved the sculpture of the spirit.

“Indeed, this luxury is really different.”

King Belsos had left an unfinished sculpture behind and there were materials available to complete it.

If an elemental shaman went on this quest then they could build up achievements. Or they would discover a high ranking spirit turned to stone. The power of the spirit inside the stone would match the shaman’s attribute.

Flames rose significantly every time Weed carved the stone. It was like adding oil to a hot frying pan in a Chinese restaurant.

-Your health has decreased by 237 after being burnt by the fire.

While Weed was suffering making the sculpture, the others were just eating jajangmyeon with pickled radishes.

Flames continued surging as he sculpted the figure. It was the best environment for the formation of an elemental sculpture.

Pale came and informed him.

“Weed-nim, it is time for those guys to appear.”

“It has already been 1 hour.”

King Belsos’ tomb was infested with the beasts. They periodically entered the stone chamber via other passages. Weed also needed to handle them with his group. He could leave it to his colleagues and the Spartoi but he wanted to hunt directly.

“Radiant Sword!”

The degree of proficiency had increased and now 5 sparrows of light appeared. Flashy effects occurred as the 5 sparrows collided with the monsters. His sword techniques had clearly become stronger as Sword Mastery increased.

“Weed-nim, this time it is the Ice Locker.”

The boss class beast, Ice Locker!

“Sword-cloning skill!”

Weed used Sword-cloning instead of Radiant Sword. The effect of Sword-cloning when hunting against 1 strong monster was really good.

Sya sya sya sya syak.

Weed formed 9 clones.

Grrrr.....

The Ice Locker looked confused as its eyes alternated between the clones.

Pale, Zephyr and Surka had yet to attack.

“I’m going!”

Weed ran towards the Ice Locker. His clones also ran at the same time.

Kyaho!

The Ice Locker breathed out strongly in front of him. Extreme cold!

It hit one of the running clones and the body froze.

Kyahahahak!

The Ice Locker’s elbow then struck the clone violently. The clone turned into a grey light and scattered. The enemy’s special attack was effective at neutralizing the Sword-cloning skill.

While the other clones induced the monster's attack, Weed's Daemon Sword struck the neck of the Ice Locker.

-You have dealt a fatal blow!

The other clones then jumped onto the Ice Locker. Weed aggressively continued with his attacks.

-You have dealt a fatal blow!

-You have dealt a fatal blow!

-You have dealt continuous fatal blows!

-The Ice Locker has hit its head and has become confused.

"Step on it!"

After it fell into confusion, everyone gathered together and mercilessly showered attacks upon it!

"Die."

"Hit it!"

Now Zephyr and Surka who had been waiting struck. Romuna's magic and Pale's arrows also hit.

Weed's 'Step on it!' was the signal!

Hwaryeong and Bellot who had low attack, defense and health normally couldn't participate in close combat but they also played an active role. They poked with a dagger and hunted with steel instruments. Weed attacked the opponent with Sword-cloning while Zephyr and his other colleagues supported him.

It was a classic party combat when dealing with strong monsters! The monster was weakened after being confused by the continuous fatal blows so it was easily taken care of.

His battle style really changed after learning a secret sword technique. Sword-cloning had a tremendous effect when hunting several monsters at the same time. The clones helped with defense and also improved overall damage.

Although the rapid mana consumption was a disadvantage, it made hunting significantly faster. Furthermore, his mana regenerated quickly thanks to his ring, Baharan's Bracelet and the helium in the Goddess' Knight Armour so he didn't feel the need to conserve his use of Sword-cloning.

The Geomchi practitioners still couldn't take advantage of the skill properly but Weed was perfectly utilizing it.

"This secret sword technique is really great!"

He gained skill proficiency, experience and loot!

Weed and his colleagues had brought a lot of bags into the dungeon. It was filled with loot every time they hunted.

-Should I depart now?

-Waiting a little longer is acceptable.

Mapan periodically sent whispers to Pale to confirm the situation. Recently he had bought 12 tamed gargoyles for a very expensive price. Only the highest level merchants could have a flying gargoyle transportation unit.

Mapan was prepared to come and trade at any time.

Weed's group used various ways to hunt in the ruins.

"This is a great hunting ground."

There were many beasts so somethings King Belsos' jewels would drop as loot. It would be different if he came alone but his trusty companions were professional and organized. Now that Weed had taken care of the boss monster, he didn't worry about defense as much and had higher damage.

His companions' skills also harmonized well. They had grown together from the early stages of the game so they could

understand the meaning with just one look.

‘He intends to hunt for 3 more hours. Ugh, I can’t feel my legs.’

‘So many of these beasts have come out. I once again raised my Perseverance stat while hunting with Weed-nim.’

‘Ah, I would like Weed-nim to prepare a good meal and I want to walk around wearing the new shoes and clothes that I bought.’

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

“Kuhuhuhuk.”

“Sa-hyung, this is really nice.”

“Yes. This is the taste of hunting.”

The Geomchi practitioners also used Sword-cloning and Radiant Sword. The monsters were getting increasingly stronger so it took more then the basic sword skills to hunt them properly.

They found it fun to find treasure in dungeons or hunt boss monsters together. It wasn’t possible to catch the boss monsters by themselves but their combined power was like a death penalty.

Wielding a sword while riding a horse or a wyvern was a man’s

romance!

“It is exciting.”

“Yes, Teacher-nim!”

“Let’s have unlimited fun!”

Orcs were now in the vicinity of Vargo Fortress and high level users had come en masse. The Geomchi practitioners defeated the monsters and seized the rugged mountains.

They climbed to the top of a high mountain and shouted wildly. The clouds moved around underneath them. It was a wonderful sight. They enjoyed a wild life while depending on their strong power!

The Geomchi teachers and practitioners didn’t care about their levels. They were just satisfied at being able to fight freely. They ran down the mountain trails covered with the dew of dawn and felt an exhilarating feeling as they fought against monsters.

Their Weapon Mastery skill had increased and they were thankful they could fight like this.

Experience accumulated and they acquired more levels and loot. They had adapted after the time spent in Vargo Fortress and recently fewer people had died.

“No. 2.”

“Yes, Teacher-nim.”

“We have a pretty old map of Royal Road.”

“Time has passed already, Teacher-nim.”

“Yes……”

Geomchi looked at the iron sword in his right hand.

‘I’ve realized the taste.’

He thought that virtual reality was really wonderful. As the flesh became more developed, there were fewer chances to show it in reality. Even if a quarrel occurred with someone else, you weren’t supposed to fight or hit the person. Martial arts were only used to entertain the crowd.

Royal Road helped to relieve his desires.

“The student who was caught holding an iron pipe in junior high really likes this.”

“The practitioners also like it.”

The dojang practitioners adventured in Royal Road while risking death in every battle. They willingly entered the capsule even on weekends or breaks.

“But it is really strong.”

While Geomchi was inspecting his sword, Geomchi5 came and asked quietly.

“If we don’t do our best here then wouldn’t our pride be hurt?”

The instructors and practitioners accepted death lightly.

In Royal Road, it would be difficult to win if there was a large difference in level or equipment. The judgement and reaction of the body was a huge help but it was limited.

“It sounds like a fun dream. Here.....”

“.....”

“I want you to learn this sword. By learning the sword, you will end up looking at yourself.”

In reality, even if they trained for decades then one mistake would cost them their lives. They were full of vigour when young but became weaker once they aged.

Even if it was impractical, that was still life. That's why the instructors chose the rough roads when learning the sword. If they experienced real physical suffering, threats to their lives and the joys of becoming stronger then they would be great swordsmen.

Once all these things got stronger, they would find their inner voice.

"We will become stronger in this place."

"Then……"

"This will be a good learning experience."

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Weed only had 6 days left to spend in King Belsos' Tomb. That's because Akryong Kaybern's quest had a time limit!

"This rude, spoiled lizard has done nothing to help!"

While hunting and creating the sculpture, he heard rumours from outside.

-Bardray has completed yet another quest.

-Was it shown on a broadcast?

-Not yet. The news just broke. It will be broadcasted this evening.

Bardray had succeeded in his 15th Master Quest. Class Master Quests normally had between 15~20 steps so he had almost reached the end.

Weed was only on the 14th quest. The Sculptor Quest might have been shorter than the Black Knight's due to some luck but he was at a disadvantage.

"Eueuum!"

He felt a pain in his stomach as he continued making the elemental sculpture.

"If I'm feeling a pain in my stomach then I need to eat some medicine."

When taking into consideration that he couldn't be late to meet Kaybern, there wasn't a lot of time left. The advantage was that half of it was already done but it was difficult to express the rest.

The elemental sculpture caused huge flames every time used Sculpting Knife so the environment was bad. It reduced his health and also obstructed is vision. He had to bear with the fire difficulties in order to complete the tricky sculpture. Working faster could ruin the work so he needed to be focused and

meticulous.

“If I somehow manage to raise my level then I will kill that lizard.....”

He had hunted dragons when playing Continent of Magic. Weed made a promise for the future.

Ddiring!

-Please set the name of the new sculpture.

“A Tribute from a Junior Sculptor to Belsos La Deus the 3rd.”

Weed had completed the elemental sculpture. Flattery while setting the name was indispensable!

-A Tribute from a Junior Sculptor to Belsos La Deus the 3rd is correct?

“It is a great honour to be able to work on the elemental sculpture originally made by the King. That’s correct!”

Weed cried out. He had 6 days left to complete Kaybern’s quest.

-Magnum Opus! A Tribute from a Junior Sculptor to Belsos La Deus the 3rd has been completed.

King Belsos lived a lonely life while making the sculptures. Not a lot is known about his sculptures so artists can't evaluate it properly.

King Belsos left the work unfinished and the genius Sculptor Weed who has been rising like a comet on the continent has completed it.

Sculptor Weed is also the King of the Arpen Kingdom. His sculptures have always been a big topic on the continent and nobles covet his pieces.

If this remarkable piece of work becomes known then it will be an opportunity to evaluate King Belsos' artistry.

Artistic Value: Source belongs to Master Sculptor Belsos and a joint work with the next sculptor= 19,834

Special Options: Belsos...health and mana regeneration will increase by 31% for a day.

Power over the fire spirits across the continent will increase by 3.2%.

The level of the Summon Fire Elemental skill will increase for 1 week.

More fire spirits will appear.

The power of any fire magic in the vicinity of the sculpture will increase.

All stats increased by 24.

The effect doesn’t overlap with other sculptures.Current number of Magnum Opus created: 15.

-The skill proficiency of Sculpting has improved.

-The skill proficiency of Handicraft has improved.

-Fame has increased by 1,953.

-Art stat has increased by 21.

– Perseverance has increased by 7.

-Charisma has increased by 9.

-Fighting Spirit has increased by 3.

-Affinity to Nature has increased by 37.

-You have created a sculpture of the Fire Elemental King.

Due to the special experience, your fire resistance has increased by 3.4%.

-All stats will gain an additional 3 points for making a Magnum Opus sculpture.

Weed didn’t create the sculpture by himself so he obtained less stats. Even so, it was a Magnum Opus so it was a great harvest!

‘All my effort and bloody sweat I shed has been rewarded. This thing was exceptionally difficult. Not every sculpture will be easy.’

King Belsos had flames wrapped around his entire body. It was difficult because he had to express it naturally, not artificially but he managed to accomplish it with no mistakes despite the flames.

Most sculptures blended in with the surrounding scenery. Some gave the feeling of serenity under a clear sky filled with white clouds. The Garden of the Gods was a magnificent work of art that stretched into the sky and incorporated the earth as well.

The light emitted from the Fire Elemental King sculpture gave off a strong presence.

Weed was satisfied with himself.

‘These materials are really good.’

His colleagues also admired the work.

“As expected from Weed-nim, you made a Magnum Opus.”

“I knew that a great work would come out.”

“…….”

His companions accepted the sculpture he made with so much difficulty like it was natural!

Weed forced a smile onto his lips.

Thanks to the rise in fire resistance, hunting became easier. Typically ice magic was more dangerous. The body couldn’t move and it would lose combat power. But many monsters utilized fire and there were dangerous fire spells.

Furthermore, if his fire resistance reached 100% then he could use the Dragon Sword, the Red Star. Weed’s fire resistance was already over 7% thanks to the magic circle in the Jigolaths and now it had increased by 3.4%. If he wore an accessory like the Ring of Famous Fire then his fire resistance would increase even further.

‘If I buy a necklace or bracelet then I can increase it by 79%.’

If he used Sculptural Transformation into the relevant race and his blacksmith skill was applied then he could take advantage of the Red Star.

'A day will come when I can use that item. I can't throw anything away.'

Picking up japtem gave him a rewarding feeling. It was the spirit that wanted to save so much it would transfer a used diaper to another child!

The resistance would change depending on the species he changed into with Sculpture Transformation. But if he prepared it in advance then he could utilize it.

It would be possible to become the original owner of the Dragon Sword.

"That is the difficult thing about stolen goods."

After meeting Akryong Kaybern, Weed realized he couldn't use it for normal hunting. If he utilized it moderately in important moments then he could see it for a high price when the time came.

Then the temperature of the stone chamber rose. The high temperate was like flames were occurring at midday in the desert.

The huge, golden statue of the scorpion opened its eyes.

“Eueuum.....”

“Isn’t this really serious?”

“Somehow the signs don’t look good.”

Weed’s and his companions recalled the suffering of the Crimson Wings Guild in the past. King Belsos had wiped out the entire expedition and the continent fell under a curse.

“Gulp.”

Weed was as vigilant as the time he heard that city gas prices were rising on the 9 o’clock news.

Flames spread quickly and a fire spirit came flying out. The fire spirit wandered around inside the stone chamber. It was a cool but frightening sight.

The Fire Elemental sculpture started burning even though he hadn’t given it life.

-Humans have visited my land.....

The second coming of King Belsos! Weed quickly kneeled down.

“I have a lot of respect for the Great King Belsos and it is an extreme honour to meet you. I am a junior sculptor wandering the continent. I came here due to the request of the wicked Akryong Kaybern but it is an honour to meet you!”

Weed fired off flattery like a quick fire gun! King Belsos looked at Weed and his companions.

-You are qualified to meet me. Without being blinded by greed... My test was passed brilliantly.

Ddukkum!

He wasn’t just talking to Weed but the party in the corner.

-And there is a person following my path to glory.

King Belsos was covered with fire. And King Belsos walked with his fire towards Weed.

-Raise your head and stand up. People who realize true beauty don’t have to bow.

-Dignity and Honour have increased by 24 after being recognized by Belsos, the Fire Spirit King.

Weed’s head spun fiercely. If he could live like that then the

world would be good. However he did everything possible in order to live.

‘Would I score more if I lived like that? It is imperative that I be polite. This might seem like the rules of decorum among sculptors but it is strange for another sculptor to receive equal treatment.’

Weed decided to lower his head a bit more.

King Belsos had a ruthless persona. It was the same in the past when he was a human and when he cruelly expressed his displeasure to the Crimson Wings Guild.

He was even scarier now that he was so polite. It was like the neighbourhood child in the public baths who would behave before drawing on the bodies of other men there.

“No it is okay. This is easy for someone like me who is following the path of a sculptor.”

He had no prior knowledge of King Belsos but the words fluently flowed out of Weed’s mouth.

It was a voice that was a master of flattery!

Chapter 8: Choice Of The Northern Lords

Fire spread wildly around the body of King Belsos. Fire spirits were also flying around the stone chamber.

-It is rare to see a junior sculptor with such a wonderful attitude.

Weed's thoughts were correct. King Belsos was weak to flattery! They might pretend differently but there was no one who didn't like flattery.

-Yet here you are.

King Belsos grabbed Weed's arm.

-Your health has decreased by 489 after being burnt by the fire.

-Your health has decreased by 832 after being burnt by the fire.

-Your health has decreased by 1,309 after being burnt by the fire.

-Your health has decreased by 372 after being burnt by the fire.

-.....

Weed's health fell excessively. But despite that, Weed's eyes were

shining like a lantern.

“Your Majesty, thank you very much!”

His colleagues couldn’t stop their admiration. When hunting and adventuring, it was relatively easy to raise intimacy with the village residents. But it would be difficult for someone to think about intimacy in this situation.

Usually people would stiffen when encountering a powerful monster but Weed’s instincts had kicked in.

-I want to thank you for coming here and finishing the sculpture I couldn’t complete in my lifetime.

“Comparing myself to the Great King Belsos is like eating kimchi ramyun with chopsticks. No, the sculpture was already equipped with the proper form and proportion.”

-Humble sculptor, you are putting down your skills.

“My sculpting can’t compare to that of King Belsos. I might receive recognition through the Versailles Continent for my sculptures but it is modest compared to your sculptures.”

-You will develop more in the future.

“I’d like to be taught by a great king like you.”

Weed was able to carry on dialogue about various topics.

-You passed my test so I will give each of you one present. Say what you want to have.

Ddiring!

-You have completed the sculpture and finished the adventure in King Belsos' ruins.

You can receive a present from the Fire Elemental King Belsos.

You can choose between summoning fire spirits, advanced fire magic or pick something from the treasury.

"Hrmm....."

Deep anguish rose on Weed's face. His other colleagues also received the benefits of completing the adventure despite Weed making the sculpture.

In the meantime, Romuna didn't think too deeply and chose first.

"Your Majesty, I'd like to learn advanced fire magic."

-You will receive something in accordance with your proficiency.

Romuna’s robe clad body was covered in flames.

-You have acquired the fire magic, Flame River.

“Kyaah!”

Romuna uttered an ecstatic cry. It was a wide area magic that would cause a river of flames to wipe out the enemy. Unlike the ‘Burn’ spell, there was no need to be close to the enemy to strike.

But Flame River wasn’t a useable magic in a dungeon. On open areas like the plains, it was a magic of mass destruction! The biggest advantage of a magician was their destructive power so obtaining advanced magic was a great profit.

“We would like to receive a treasure.”

-This place contains things that I collected when I was human. I no longer need it as a spirit. You can choose one item from among the goods.

Everyone else excluding Weed examined the treasures. Although the jewels were desirable, most of the items here were unique or legendary! Treasures that were enough to expand a kingdom on the Central Continent were gathered here. They were presents prepared for a special quest or event.

Hwaryeong chose a pair of beautiful and brilliant ruby earrings.

“I.....”

Weed was conflicted even at the last moment. It was difficult for Weed to choose based on what he knew about King Belsos. One of the top treasures Weed had, the Teuresec’s Horn couldn’t be compared with the items here.

‘The fire spirit will help sweep up the enemy.....’

Spirits could be mobilized for combat without mana consumption.

The Crimson Wings Guild leader Terose had desired the flame sword and was burned up! The flames struck the shield and armour and baked the enemy. Defending against the best sword was impossible. Furthermore, if monsters were gathered than the fire would spread as mass killings were possible.

Everyone worked hard to hunt but the outcome also depended on their skills and weapons. If he obtained the flame sword then Weed would be quite comfortable despite his lacking level. His blacksmith skill and fire resistance meant it was possible to use the sword.

“So my choice is... I don’t want Great King Belsos’ treasures. I’d like to receive some some Agate crystals as a sculptor. Kuuck.”

Weed said with tears flowing down his face. In the end, Akryong Kaybern won over his greed.

-Sculptor, you really want…

I have a number of sculpting materials gathered that isn't necessary. You can have all the sculpting materials.

"Thank you for your kindness."

In addition to the Agate crystals, there were several materials that weren't expensive or difficult to obtain.

"I would've preferred something expensive, my worst destiny….."

Weed lost all his strength as he walked to collect the Agate crystals.

-You have received a present from the Fire Elemental King Belsos.

-Sculptor.

"Yes, Belsos sunbae."

Weed’s words became short.

He deserted the relationship after getting what he wanted!

-My thirst for art has risen again after seeing the sculpture.

“So?”

Now the only thing left was to leave the ruins so Weed asked bluntly. Of course, he would instantly cringe if King Belsos showed any signs of physical threats.

-I would like to make a sculpture with you.

Ddiring!

-The Fire Elemental King Belsos has made a proposal to make a sculpture together.

Belsos can stay in the human world for a week and you can’t leave the King’s Tomb.

In the past he had collaborated with Darone and was taught Sculptural Transformation! At that time, Weed was low levelled so he learnt a lot.

But now he was on an almost equal footing with Belsos from his

perspective.

‘It is impossible to make a large sculpture in a week so I can work on a sculpture with the Agate crystals.’

If he worked on it with a Sculpting Master then it would be a work with a high artistic value.

Weed asked in an uncertain voice.

“If you try and claim ownership later.....”

-I have no desire for that as a spirit.

“As you know, this isn’t an industry that is very rich.”

-I have no intention of receiving anything.

A contract will be made before starting the work.

“Then it is good!”

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Seo-yoon entered Morata with light steps.

Architecture, sculpture, artworks, performances and cooking! Normally she didn't meet any people in the hunting grounds so she was happy to see the bustling city.

She had watched from the early days as Weed raised Morata. This was the city that Weed protected and was the Lord so she also had a lot of contribution. She had settled early in Morata, cleared the dungeons in the north as a Berserker and sold the loot she obtained in the stores.

"I'm sorry but I can't dispose of these precious materials yet, Visitor-nim. How about going to the kingdom in the south where you can receive a fair price?"

"I'll sell it here. It is okay even if the money is less."

-You have contributed to the development of Morata.

Contribution has increased by 17.

She disposed of precious materials early on and helped with commercial development. It was common for high level users who came to Morata to wear the equipment she disposed of.

Once the park and bridge were opened, she also gained enormous contributions. The north was plagued with a host of migrants so housing was insufficient and construction costs were required.

She had 32,000 contribution points. It was a very high amount.

‘One day I want to go here with him.’

She thought about going around Morata with Weed on a date. Thanks to the impact of the Tower of Light, there was a bustling night scene. At night, lights from the building could be seen in the clear water running under the bridge. And when looking at the Tower of Light from a far place, there was a wonderful atmosphere between lovers.

Seo-yoon was standing beautifully on the bridge!

‘I’m not very charming.’

Seo-yoon enviously watched the female users walking around with men. If she wasn’t wearing a mask then many people would be rushing.

There were many male users who looked at the Ice Beauty to relax before leaving on a hunt. The crowd in front of the Ice Beauty was equal to those in front of the Goddess of Freya Statue. Unlike the other sculptures, there was a mania involved with those watching the Ice Beauty.

‘I’m not pretty because I’m too pale. Weed-nim doesn’t dislike me……’

Seo-yoon had been pretty since she was a child but she had no idea about her own beauty.

When she walked to school, the men and women would look at her face. But none of them tried to start a conversation with her.

Seo-yoon thought she wasn't attractive but the actual situation was completely different. Her beauty was so dazzling that all thoughts left their heads. They didn't dare say anything. They were just happy if they could see her again.

After trading in the stores, she sat near the fountain and watched people. The sweet sound of music from nearby performances drifted on the wind.

Seo-yoon closed her eyes lightly.

She hadn't come here for some time so the number of users since the Garden of the Gods was finished was intense. At night, the city was bustling with tourists.

Beginners lived together in shacks Novice users who settled early in Morata could go on adventures and receive quest rewards. The city was gradually evolving to form a middle class.

"Looking for a party to take on a level 180 dungeon. You can check the shares distribution."

"Priest looking for a group. Anyone seeking a priest? Level 230, I won't doze off and will work hard!"

“The Grass Porridge Cult is going on an expedition. A level restriction of 210 or more. Up to 300 people going to the west. Gather!”

As the level of the users increased, the goods also became more sophisticated. However intermediate users didn’t have the funds to build houses on the hills or rivers with good views. Their priority was investing in equipment rather than homes.

The stabilization of house prices was an extremely sensitive topic to users. In Morata, anyone could easily build a shack so the low housing prices were maintained. But the shabby houses would harm Morata’s landscape.

This housing problem was easily fixed by the appearance of the new ceramist profession. Ceramists had amazing dexterity just handling the soil. They collected soil from the river instead of hunting.

“I have to quickly create a workshop!”

A ceramist needed their own workshop. It was difficult to work with fire in the city and monsters infested the riverside. The monsters were just snacks to Weed but they were a fearful existence to the ceramists.

They utilized their ability to the utmost and built houses. The house was made of pure clay and earth! The lakes and river near Morata had a lot of mud so it was a good building material. The houses built by the ceramists were a huge topic among the Morata

users.

“How much is the cost of construction?”

“It is just water and soil so it is a similar price to the shacks.”

“Oh, really? How many days does it take to complete?”

“One day.”

“The best! Can you build my house? I’ll give you a fee.”

There was an active response among the intermediate users as word of the clay houses spread. It was an opportunity for beginner ceramists to earn money!

The strong point of the clay houses was that it was built with natural materials. Therefore it wasn’t complicated to heat the room by burning wood so it was popular among users.

“Kyaa…How good.”

“This way. It is incredibly warm.”

Having such a warm seat on a cold night really set the mood. The Morata users could rest and fully enjoy their adventures in the north. Friends gathered to bake sweet potatoes and eat fish while

discussing their expeditions and hunting. Along with honeyed grass porridge, there was nothing more they wished for.

As the level of the users grew, they moved out from the shacks to the clay houses. The shacks on the hill and the clay houses near the riverside helped to maintain the cheap housing prices. The clay houses were the new characteristic of Morata so the ceramists had a chance to gain a position early on.

Apart from the houses, they made bowls and pottery that sold extremely well.

The Ellyons that moved to Arpen Kingdom also mined more minerals and cultivated grains. Coffee and melons were also registered as new specialties.

There was an especially big reformation from the extensive visit of clergy affiliated professions. Religious orders from the continent dispatched priests and paladins to see the Garden of the Gods and praised the King of Arpen as smart.

The kingdom gained fame and increased its relationship with the various churches. Players wearing white uniforms or holy armour continued coming from the Central Continent. Priests and paladins weren't the only ones that could be seen in the Garden of the Gods.

"How much money do you have?"

“3,400 gold. Why?”

“If you donate here then you can raise your contribution.”

People came to the Garden of the Gods to donate a substantial amount to the god they believed in. The donations were collected and architects started to construct cathedrals. It was the reason why construction still continued in the vicinity of the Garden of the Gods.

People who came to the Garden of the Gods also visited the Art Centre and the Arpen Kingdom’s culture expanded.

-The Arpen Kingdom’s culture has become widely known.

Many visitors bought artworks as commemoration and brought it back to various cities and kingdoms.

Weed’s status as a King also affected his sculptures. Knights and soldiers would pledge their loyalty more easily. Just like Weed’s fame as a sculptor, the kingdom’s culture also expanded at an incredible pace.

-Tares’ Cathedral has been completed. Its religious influence in the Arpen Kingdom has risen.

-The Arpen Kingdom’s reputation has reached a small mountain village in the far reaches of the north.

Merchants from the Central and Eastern Continent are eager to engage in dealings with the Arpen Kingdom.

They are eager to import high quality agricultural products.

-Arpen Kingdom's political influence has increased and it can meddle with the politics in nearby villages.

The lords won't rejoice as the residents would become more eager to join the Arpen Kingdom.

It is possible for areas with low loyalty to their lord to revolt.

If the rebellion succeeds then the area will belong to the Arpen Kingdom. However, the King will lose honour and diplomatic relations will worsen.

Weed wasn't the type to stir a rebellion to expand the region and increase the population. Even if the area expanded into the north, Morata would still be the best city.

The goods that novice blacksmiths and tailors also spread through the merchants' trade network. Adventurers gathered rare items from dungeons and traded the loot so the development potential of the city was endless.

Word of Morata's miracle spread on the bulletin boards. It was to

the extent that novice users unconditionally wanted to start in Morata.

While the Arpen Kingdom's fame and political power was rising every day, the other lords in the north couldn't catch up with its development.

"A person is coming!"

"Hey, go and help them!"

When the northern lords found migrants heading to Morata, they would prepare houses and stores. Guild members also pulled out weeds to prepare farmland.

"Lord-nim, thank you very much."

"No. If you feel any discomfort then come to me at any time."

Everyone was also delighted when a child was born. When the residents increased by 3 than 4 people, the population would eventually grow until it became a village. Weed managed to develop Morata from the time it was poor so they believed it was possible.

"I'm sorry Lord-nim. I haven't forgotten the benefits I've received from you. Hey, let's go."

But people kept on leaving the territory! Those who heard about Morata's advanced technology, huge economic scale and amazing culture would pack up their baggage and left in the evening.

People cruelly left with their carts full of things!

Many users hunted and adventured in the north so the visitors to the northern lords' villages increased. They had hope but there were no large benefits.

"Shall we hunt in the vicinity and then return to Morata in the evening?"

"Let's quickly hurry."

"I have an appointment in the evening near the Tower of Light... Let's hunt fast."

"Yes!"

Even if dungeons and hunting grounds developed, users still returned to Morata. While the population of the villages painfully increased by 100 people, Morata was increasing by 20,000 or 30,000 people.

"Keohuhuhuk!"

Morata's mine development was weak so the villages could trade

with them but they couldn't catch up with the sculptures and support facilities.

"The guild's funds are in bad shape from the mercenaries hired. Hahahat!"

They couldn't build any buildings. They had heard about the Grand Buildings constructed in Morata through the broadcasts. The hearts of the northern lords suffered a blow.

"Why is Morata's beer so delicious?"

The 2nd Northern Alliance had been formed to declare war. However Morata's users had increased by dozens of times and their levels also rose so it was difficult. The reaction of the other lords was also negative.

"War? Oh, that isn't possible so leave us out of it."

"Why fight when the odds aren't in our favour? We will just end up paying war preparations to Lord Weed. Have a conscience."

"Do you have confidence you will win if you declare war on Morata?"

There was a large trade relationship with Morata so the northern lords didn't want a war. Some lords actively developed their mines and relied on exporting it. If a war started with Morata, it would lead to a halt of the exports and most northern users would follow

Weed. If it ended then their lands would be abandoned by users. There wouldn't be any visits from hunting parties.

The prestigious guilds in the Central Continent had strong power and military strength but the situation was different in the north. Morata had a low tax rate and fantastic environment so the future of the Arpen Kingdom was bright. The historic Garden of the Gods was completed so it had a massive popularity.

Meanwhile the lands of the northern lords were infertile, the population's skill level was low so their loyalty was also low.

-The residents of Armang Village want to be permanently dependent on the Arpen Kingdom.

Morata's thriving culture has captured the hearts of the residents.

Residents have abandoned their hopes for their Lord and wish to become part of the Arpen Kingdom.

Specialties: None

Population: 4,329

Monthly Tax Revenue: 7,989 gold.

-The residents of Ekwinok Village want to be permanently

dependent on the Arpen Kingdom.

Morata's economic power and population has made them envious.

The Lord's effort isn't bad but there is no hope for children in Ekwinok Village.

They choose to belong to the Arpen Kingdom.

Specialties: None

Population: 5,828

Monthly Tax Revenue: 4,124 gold.

The power of culture!

Armang, Ekwinok, Yoanna, Yusellin were part of 8 villages that wished to become part of the Arpen Kingdom.

The residents voluntarily decided to accept Weed's rule. There were very small villages with no lords but six villages were ruled by guilds.

"Ah... Crazy. How did this happen?"

The lords were faced with an unenviable situation. They would need to mobilize the troops to quell the residents. But the loyalty of the residents' would continue to decline and that would lead to the population decreasing. They would gain a tremendous notoriety.

"At this rate, it is impossible to follow the speed of Morata's development....."

It was difficult for their population to even reach 10,000 yet Arpen Kingdom had millions of residents. The situation had already deteriorated for the lords. The situation would worsen if there was excessive military spending or monster attacks.

Users in the north had many chances. In the early days, they had invested large amounts of funds into mining and agricultural development. They didn't expect that they would be like a rural village next to Morata. Watching the residents protesting, the lords had to make a difficult decision.

"What should we do?"

"Guild Master-nim, now our culture, technical capabilities and gap in military force means it will be difficult to survive against Morata in the long-term."

"What will happen if we become subordinates of the Arpen Kingdom?"

"We will lose our political rights as Lords but can't we still keep

out investment funds?”

“Several opportunities can be obtained but there will be more users.”

If Weed governed their villages then it could develop rapidly. Furthermore the technology, population, trade, fame and specialities of the Arpen Kingdom would be shared so there would be a favourable environment.

“But we still have absolute power in the area as the Lord. If the situation changes later and the village develops.....”

Some lords were unwilling to obediently leave their seats. They were attached to their ego and power.

But the merchants that belonged to the guild said.

“We need to decide in the early days of the Arpen Kingdom. If we miss this opportunity then the situation might worsen and the village will disappear.”

“Guild Master-nim, we’ve seen Morata’s development speed. And what about Vargo Fortress? People with a higher average level than our guild are hunting there. Arpen Kingdom’s military is also growing quickly.”

“Remember why we were driven out of the Central Continent. Wasn’t it because we lacked power? Weed won’t cause a war in the

north but if he does then our villages will cease to exist."

"If we delay anymore then other villages will join Arpen Kingdom first."

"It won't be good if we join later. There will be a larger economic gap with other villages. The users in the north also won't have significant expectations. If they leave Morata to adventure, our villages are close to they might not choose to stay in our village. This village will have really weak growth potential. It won't be easy to develop on our own."

The merchants were actively trying to persuade them to annex to the Arpen Kingdom. If they integrated with the Arpen Kingdom then they would receive great benefits in trade and taxes.

In fact, they watched people trading at the entrance and squares and realized they couldn't compete with the Arpen Kingdom. Even if the northern lords gathered together, it wouldn't be easy to achieve their goals.

The users with combat affiliated professions didn't have anything to say. Developing a village wasn't their area of expertise so they didn't mind belonging to the Arpen kingdom as long as it was profitable. In order to receive class skills, adventures and hunting quests, they needed to go to Morata.

They had the power of a lord but their investment funds were slowly disappearing. The guilds were also active in the Arpen Kingdom. It would be more beneficial to belong to the Arpen

Kingdom so they had no choice but to give up the Lord status.

"Everyone's opinion has been understood. Then let's accept the will of the residents."

Eight large and small villages decided to join the Arpen Kingdom.

Chapter 9: Activities Of The Sculptural Lifeforms

Weed moved on foot to Akryong Kaybern's lair. He took Wy-3 to Thor Kingdom and walked to the place to meet Kaybern alone in case he would die.

"Aigoo, my destiny……"

Not long ago he was waiting in a pub drinking beer while the dwarves transported the treasure but this time he was going directly.

"It is a real mystery why I have struggled so much."

Weed sighed as he took a break. He didn't know why his life was full of such hardships.

"If it is like this then I need to prepare my willpower for whenever my money falls."

Weed headed upwards towards the lair. He had heard the good news that the territory of Arpen Kingdom had expanded due to the villages joining it.

The villages were shabby with a low population so it wasn't a huge event that he would rejoice of as a King. But the villages had

been integrated so it was already crowded with users.

The merchants judged that it would have good development prospects since the villages belonged to the Arpen Kingdom so they invested and built houses in good locations.

The lords also made peace with Weed so there was no need to worry about security.

A few days ago, users started building shacks in the villages. Farmers cleared the land while miners wandered around looking for mines.

The quests and hunting at the villages weren't that appealing yet. Because once someone left the village, the intimacy and achievements would disappear. But once they joined the territory of the Arpen Kingdom, soldiers would herd monsters and dig dungeons. It was also possible to get achievements for the Arpen Kingdom.

Morata would benefit if the other villages grew so it was possible to see potential in them from now on.

The finances of the Arpen Kingdom had gone up again after building the Garden of the Gods so it could afford to invest in new facilities for the villages.

The market squares and necessary buildings were built. Road construction to Morata, the capital city of the Arpen Kingdom was

initiated. Once trade expanded between villages, it would be helpful for the expansion of culture and stability of the village.

Users would naturally visit more if the villages developed. Morata had been growing rapidly for a long time but the villages that just belonged to the Arpen Kingdom were still in their early stages.

Grrrr.....

Kyaung!

The road to the dragon's lair was strewn with monsters. His nerves were tugged as they growled ferociously. The high level monsters had yellow saliva dripping from their fangs so Weed felt threatened.

However he entered the territory of Akyrong Kaybern with the Spartoi so it was rare to receive attacks from the monsters. He wasn't happy but he had received Akryong's invitation!

'A dragon is no different from a god's curse. Salt should be sprinkled in the pot and could be eaten in the next life.'

He arrived at the entrance to the lair while he was thinking.

-You have lost the privilege of leading the Dragon Kaybern's Spartoi.

The Spartoi split up and returned to their role of guarding the entrance. Weed went alone into the lair.

Rare and usual magic books, equipment and treasure were scattered around like random piles of trash. The tribute from the dwarves of the Thor Kingdom every year was piled up.

And the black dragon was lying coiled up!

-You have fallen to terror at the sight of Kaybern.

All physical abilities have decreased.

Weed kneeled down immediately.

“You were resting comfortably. I am the humble sculptor Weed. I came with the sculpture Kaybern-nim desired.”

Once again, he had experienced many struggles and complications. He sensed he shouldn’t come too close to him! There was no meaning to raising intimacy so he just wanted to give the item and leave quickly.

The head of Akryong Kaybern approached closer. The dragon spewed out a breath with a strong smell.

-Sculpture?

“Here.”

Weed took out the ‘Dazzling Kaybern Statue’ from his backpack.

The Agate crystal!

The sculpture was created with finely wrought sparkling crystals like stars in the sky. The large and small drops of jewels expressed the shape of a dragon. Weed remembered making the sculpture with King Belsos. King Belsos had been excited as soon as he heard an explanation of the work.

-It will be a really creative sculpture.

“Do you think it is okay?”

-Stunning. It is difficult to make a sculpture out of connected crystals.

-Jewelry sculpture! The Dazzling Kaybern Statue

The sculptor has taken the last step and created a piece with a legendary sculptor.

Agate crystals containing the brightness of stars, a clearer and more mysterious treasure does not exist.

Artistic Value: 12,843

Special Options: Excessive beauty that causes bad luck, the chances of meeting bandits will increase by 4 times.

Dignity +89.

Charm +145.

Value can’t be questioned closely.

The effect doesn’t overlap with other sculptures.

Number of Jewelry Sculptures completed so far: 1.

The surface of the Agate crystal shone beautifully. Weed took out the sculpture he worked on with King Belsos and offered it to Kaybern.

“Ah.....”

The sculpture held in Weed’s hand flashed as the Agate crystal found the light. From the dragon’s head to tail, the crystals were gathered one by one to form a complete sculpture. If sunlight even touched it a little bit, the Agate would catch the light and flash. There really couldn’t be a work more beautiful or flashy than this.

-Put it down and leave.

Kaybern said before yawning and closing his eyes. He still had some expectations but the dragon just stayed quiet without any compensation.

Ddiring!

-The Treasure a Dragon Desires

You have obtained the object that Akryong Kaybern desired within the stated date.

The dragon has an interest in sculptures so a treasure made of better materials was required.

It is an honour just surviving a meeting with Kaybern.

The quest is successful!

‘T-this rotten dragon…..’

Weed struggled not to shed any tears. But the corner of his eyes was wet as grief and regret welled inside him. He never cried even if he watched a sad movie.

“Thank you for receiving it, Kaybern-nim.”

Weed said goodbye and exited.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

“Ah, I want to go on vacation.”

Today was the day she needed to go to work early at the broadcasting station. Shin Hye-min was hosting the ‘Story of Versailles Continent’ program. Today, the 1st and 2nd parts of the program were being shown. The script was checked in advanced and she filed some forms.

“I really want a break to go on adventures with everyone.”

Shin Hye-min calculated how much her severance pay would be if she resigned before shaking her head. Going on a foreign trip for 1~2 years was a salaryman’s dream but it reality that was impossible.

“Oh Joo-wan ssi, there really is a lot of news to introduce today. Did you sleep well at night? The dark circles under your eyes seemed like you stayed up all night.”

“A monster invaded Beast Village yesterday but I guess Hye-min ssi hasn’t heard about the tourist that drove them off.”

“Omo, there was something like that? The viewers will probably be curious about that. Today I have important news to deliver.”

Shin Hye-min and Oh Joo-wan proceeded with the broadcast.

“Many people already know this. Bardray has completed the 15th stage of the Black Knight quest.”

“It’s really incredible. The knights and infantry division that Bardray raised really grew nicely.”

“Today we’ll show you videos of important events that happened. Hasn’t the warrior Python also succeeded?”

“His nickname Wolf of the Wilderness really fits as there is no warrior that can hide from him. He is a popular figure that wields a greatsword without any hesitation.”

The first part of the news program was about the users challenging the Class Master Quests. No one had completed it yet so the first person to take the glory and rewards was a major concern.

Whether it was finding treasure or a dungeon, the difficulty meant the success rate wasn’t high but the compensation was generous so many users felt it was worth challenging the difficult quests.

That was how it became a representative of the news program for

each broadcasting station. They passed on important information about the Versailles Continent to the users and ratings would rise.

The 1st part was about Bardray while the 2 part would be about other people's adventures.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The residents of Thor Kingdom were relaxing while drinking beer.

"Did you hear from the broadcast that Weed apparently met Akryong Kaybern?"

"Really?

"Yes. The residents are clamouring that a great artist met Kaybern and returned unharmed."

"Well, his sculpting abilities are very excellent."

"Keoheok, he met Kaybern?"

The Dwarf users were surprised.

The Central Continent users' interest in Weed had greatly increased in recent years. He received a bit hit when defeated by

Bardray. But rising to the position of King of the Arpen Kingdom and creating the Garden of the Gods drove a huge interest again. The King expanded his territory while regaining trust.

But they couldn't assume that was everything. Many users watched Weed from Continent of Magic and there were even more fans in Royal Road. Weed had exerted an overwhelming strong power from the beginning. He had been silent for a while so they had no choice but to feel excitement and expectant.

"Kya! Weed survived a meeting with the dragon....."

"The guards from before were the Spartoi belonging to Kaybern."

"Ah, I'm really curious. Is it on the broadcast schedule?"

"No, I don't know yet."

"Putting everything else aside, he really is very brave."

Weed was also sitting in the tavern called Iron Hammer. He could get free beer as an intermediate blacksmith so he stopped by before a long flight.

'My successful quest with Kaybern has become known.'

Weed celebrated with a cold beer. There were many travellers

around Royal Road who were interested in famous adventurers so news of what they did spread quickly. The quest that he just completed was a wonderful event among the dwarves!

'I can now feel comfortable.'

Currently Weed's sculpting skill was at 49.2% advanced level 9. He only needed 50% more proficiency to fully master his skill.

'Kuooh, the investment for sculpting is too big.'

Raising the national power of the Arpen Kingdom. A huge amount of effort was required to reach the stage of a perfect Class Master. Fortunately, the Garden of the Gods was successful so he could take a breather.

'I can raise the rest of the sculpting proficiency as I advance through the remaining quests.'

Weed had learnt 5 secret sculpting techniques that could be used for quests and adventuring.

The Dragon Sword, the Red Star was dangerous to handle but its combat power couldn't be compared. It would exert a large effect in one on one combat.

"I will peel the leather off that shameless guy and bake it."

Weed cursed Kaybern before leaving Thor Kingdom.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

"As you know, Kaybern's quest has ended safely."

Weed finished his quest and met with Pale and his other colleagues. The party had been expecting a reward or something but they couldn't say anything after seeing Weed's expression.

It was an expression filled with hate for Kaybern!

'There is something weird about his smile……'

'He is giving off a really bad expression.

Still, they felt refreshed from everything they collected at King Belsos' Tomb. Weed had only seized the Agate crystals so the damage was big.

Hwaryeong asked sweetly.

"So what are you going to do now Weed-nim?"

"I'm going back to my Class Master quest. I'm going to Harsel."

He was going to mobilize Bingryong, the wyverns, Goldman,

Yellowy, Phoenix, Golden Bird, Silver Bird, the lifeforms from the Jigolaths and his natural disaster sculptures.

Weed wasn't a pure sculptor who didn't know about battle. He manufactured new armour, learnt another secret sword technique and raised the proficiency of Radiant Sword enough to be useful.

Furthermore, he had learnt Sculpture Life Bestowal early in his career. Those lifeforms had become stronger so the remaining quests would be slightly easier. The Orcs and Elves were on an expedition to explore Ratzeberg.

Hwaryeong hesitated before saying.

"We'll go with you."

Weed looked at them as Pale laughed and said.

"We've already discussed it between ourselves. We will help with Weed-nim's quest."

They could only watch as Weed had been persecuted by the Hermes Guild. So they would like to help with the Sculpting Master Quest.

The hot friendship between companions!

They also felt sorry because Weed was always cooking meat for

his colleagues.

“Everyone, I’m touched……”

Surka laughed cutely.

“There’s no need. When we proceed with our Master Quest later on then Weed-nim can help us!”

“Master Quest?”

Weed suddenly felt some reservations.

His Sculpting Master Quest was already difficult enough and now he needed to help the Class Quests for his friends! The company consisted of an archer, ranger, dancer, bard, magician, priest and fisherman.

“If it is complicated then I can go to Harsel by myself……”

“Don’t you have to leave immediately since it is far away? Wy-3, come here!”

Wy-3 came after Hwaryeong called and lay on the ground! His companions were always feeding them snacks so Weed’s sculptural lifeforms obeyed them as well.

“Wy-1!”

“Wy-2!”

His colleagues sat down as the wyverns continuously arrived. Bingryong and Phoenix were also waiting in the air with Yellowy and Goldman on their backs.

The lifeforms from Jigolaths had decided to leave a little earlier and he would meet them in Harsel.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The Sulleion Tribe!

They were a warrior tribe that dominated the rugged, high mountains of the Harsel Mountain region. If he got rid of them then he could rescue a sculptural lifeform species.

Weed’s mind was urgent.

“Poor guys, you must’ve suffered a lot so I’m going to save you for the sake of justice.”

The yield brought by the Ellyons to the Arpen Kingdom was incredible.

5 metre strawberries and 8 metre watermelons! Apart from the large size, it tasted so sweet it was like honey. This helped increase the game of the area and in the long run it could be registered as a specialty. Thanks to the farmland acquired from the several villages, the yield and profit was quite high.

“Are they called the Arnin? They’re waiting. I have to make them work properly.”

The Arnin were in a large crisis because they were trapped by the Sulleion! Weed arrived at the Harsel Mountains and worked out an easy plan.

“I have to strike slowly from the outskirts.”

The whole mountain area was their territory so he decided to confront them openly instead of avoiding them.

Zephyr asked with a face full of concern.

“Isn’t the plan too simple?”

“It is good that the plan is simple.”

“.....”

The Sulleion were known as great warriors. But when taking into consideration the abilities of Bingryong, Phoenix and his other

lifeforms, fighting in the mountains shouldn't be too much trouble.

Rather, it was impossible to sneak into their home base. The King Hydra with 9 heads, Phoenix, Fire Giants etc. were clearly visible! Even if their combat power was strong, it would be impossible to move secretly over such a large distance.

"I have to make the sculptural lifeforms fight properly. I have to make everyone work."

Weed believed in the sculptural lifeforms that he had brought up so far. The standard of one sculptural lifeform was equivalent to a boss class monster. If they combined and work together in battle then a tremendous power will be exerted.

"Calling Death Knight Van Hawk, calling the Vampire Lord Torido!"

"Master, I was waiting for a battle!"

"You called."

His two summons also came out. Weed posed like their master and said.

"You, did you forget the ring and sword I made you?"

“.....”

Torido’s eyes frowned while Van Hawk’s skeletal jaw clattered. They had heard those words at least 999 times!

“When you wear it, is it okay?”

“.....”

“If you don’t answer then I’ll take it back.”

“G-good.”

“Wonderful.”

“You need to pay back the expenses for the sword and ring. Understood?”

“Understood.”

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Bbuuuuuuuh!

Weed blew the Teuresec’s Horn. It was an item that raised the morale of the sculptural creatures and increased the effect of recovery in battle.

“Go.”

In the meantime, the sculptural lifeforms had been clearing monsters around Morata or Vargo Fortress. While the wyverns were used as transportation, the other sculptures had been given time to grow.

“I was really worried their stomach would be plump.”

Weed’s expression indicated he was going to make them work.

“Kwaaaaaaah!”

The 9 headed King Hydra moved its huge body up the Harsel Mountains.

Death Worm. The colossal monster lived in the ground. Weed named it Death Worm because the worm’s body could grow up to 200 metres. Currently its body length was 95 metres but that was still enough to crush or eat any monsters in the ground. If a monster was swallowed then it would be instant death! The earthworm’s body had a type of charm as it wriggled.

The Fire Giant ran around wielding a sword of fire. There was also Cerberus and Knight Seville.

The 47 lifeforms born in the Jigolaths consisted entirely of

different species. They gave off an absurd feeling of oppression!

Bingryong, the wyverns, Imugi, Phoenix, Golden Bird and Silver Bird were also waiting in the air as support.

Biiiiiiik!

There was a sharp sound and something moved between the bushes and trees on the mountain.

“It is those guys.”

Pale had good insight so he discovered the Sulleion among the bushes.

“Approximately 300 people are waiting with arrows and spears.”

Weed still hadn’t determined that far.

“Is that all of them?”

“They’re coming from hidden caves so it might be dangerous if the sculptural creatures move forward. Wouldn’t it be better to stop now?”

Weed shook his head.

“It’s okay. We won’t encounter most of the enemies. Just watch how I fight.”

Lion cubs became strong by being dropped off cliffs. Weed had a similar sentiment.

“It is better to cull the weak guys early.”

From now on, he needed to earnestly pinpoint the abilities of the lifeforms. If he knew the limits of their individual ability then he could develop tactics.

The Sulleion moved in groups and were bold warriors. If a boss monster entered their area then they would attack in unison and sweep the monster up.

Therefore Weed was also slightly concerned about the safety of the sculptural lifeforms.

“They’re coming!”

The sculptural lifeforms had gone nearly halfway up the mountain. Then the Sulleion suddenly popped out behind rocks, bushes and trees and struck.

The King Hydra’s 9 heads spat fire at the warriors.

The sculptural lifeform of a female high elf that Weed called Eltin

launched a barrage of arrows.

Gernika the female Barbarian warrior! She held an axe in her left hand and a mace in her right. She knocked down the Sulleion warriors with her strong power.

The female swordsman Vindex. She moved quickly and fought the warriors with a thin, sharp sword.

Most of the sculptors in the Jigolaths were lonely men so they made pieces of women. They were strong and full of thirst to tear monsters to pieces!

There was also an elegant peacock like sculptural lifeform with thin and long legs. Surka found it very cute and kept on stroking Epullit's head. When the Sulleion warriors approached, Epullit suddenly opened its wings.

Chweraeraeraeraek!

It released poison hidden in the wings. It was a clever and quick but the combat power wasn't obvious with a look. However, it was a very dangerous monster because it emitted a poisonous fog. The grass quickly withered up and died thanks to the poison mist.

Weed's party watched from afar as the lifeforms played a very active role. It was expected since they were each over level 400.

A sea of fire engulfed the Sulleion warriors everywhere the Fire

Giant walked. It was truly overwhelming combat power!

"Indeed....."

Weed laughed with satisfaction.

"It is like I thought. I can work them well from now on!"

Every individual lifeform was a boss level monster. Each of their characteristic battle skill seemed to match each other. It was possible to smash any resistance if they combined their formidable power. Thanks to the help from the sculptural life forms, they could overwhelm the entrance of the mountain area.

"The scouting skirmish is over. I guess that's enough. Climb up!"

Weed's group climbed up the Harsel Mountains.

Yoo Byung-jin was laughing while watching on the monitor.

"Yes, you should be careful. The sculpting lifeforms are strong... But the Sulleion are also formidable warriors."

Weed's adventure was also being prepared to be broadcasted. Even if it wasn't a live feed, it was an important battle to be broadcasted.

Perhaps the viewers wouldn’t be surprised about the sculptural lifeforms. Their power was as expected. But if they entered the centre of the Harsel Mountains then the sculptural lifeforms would be in danger.

The Sulleion tribe’s Elders were talking on Yoo Byung-jin’s other screen.

The Elders and soldiers met over a bonfire. They looked like big reptiles but they were the rulers of the Harsel Mountains.

— People have appeared on our mountain.

— Are they strong?

— It is a standard that we can win.

— Go out and fight.

— No, lure them in deeper.

— Then.....

— Huhuhuk, we won’t let even one of them leave alive.

— That is a good way.

The Sulleion tribe was clever. They would lure Weed's group to deep in the mountain region and then fight with their real power. The warriors secretly concealed in the cave would wipe out everyone! Just like the Sphinx refused to leave the Rosenheim Kingdom, some flying lifeforms might choose to die rather than escape. Weed would lose Bingryong, Yellowy, and the Wyverns that he had raised with affection.

"This really seems interesting."

Yoo Byung-jin waited for the exciting results.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Squeak squeak.

A field mouse cried out at the location of the Sulleion Elder's meeting place.

"Lure them more....."

The country mouse searched for bread crumbs but there wasn't a piece of food to be seen.

"Let's show those intruders what type of place the Harsel Mountains is....."

Jjijik!

The country mouse found a piece of meat underneath a warrior's feet. It went to a gap in the wall and added it to a pile of stuff. The spy didn't make a noise as it ran on all fours.

"We have to find a place to kill all those guys."

It finally managed to place the piece of meat in its mouth. The country mouse went back quietly to the hole it dug. It was returning to Weed and the other lifeforms.

The country mouse was also a sculptural life form. Its name was literally Country Mouse!

It wasn't beautiful but the sharp teeth and claws were somewhat endearing. A sculptor working in the Jigolaths' coal mine lamented his fate and made the sculpture.

Weed had the Country Mouse spy on the Sulleion.

Jjaejaejaek!

Silver Bird had also been painted over and was sitting on a branch. The bird listened to their words in the daytime while the mouse listened at night.

Weed utilized them completely.

Chapter 10: Sulleion Tribe's Trap

A time of chaos! The television ad seen at Unicorn Corporation started to be shown.

"Why is this suddenly coming out?"

"It seems like an ad intentionally directed to us."

Recently people were feeling a serious crisis.

War was taking place throughout the Central Continent. In the past there were wars between influential guilds and now monsters and the Embinyu Church had joined in.

-The Hwisurun village has been decimated by monsters. Tourists should be careful when travelling. It is recommended that warriors who aren't level 320 don't visit.

-Sergy City is being attacked by the Embinyu Church. Is there anyone that will come and save them?

-Thieves have broken into Freddy's store. Looking for equipment to fill the walls. All merchants are welcome to come and sell their goods.

Various terrible stories of cities or castles collapsing frequently

appeared on the bulletin boards. Monsters appeared on the previously safe plains and roads connecting cities.

“I’m really very worried these days.”

“Life is becoming increasingly harder. Where is security to take care of the monsters and restore the peace?”

“Everybody is busy these days playing war.”

“Whew… Even going outside the gates is frightening.”

“It is even harder to hunt.”

While hunting in the plains, mountains or forests, they had to be careful that other monsters wouldn’t intrude. The entire kingdom was confused and then it shook when the Embinyu Church invaded.

Monsters would sometimes change their habitats so the users couldn’t relax. Many commissioned mercenaries so the compensation when completing a mission was reduced.

“I have nothing else for you, I’m sorry.”

“What should I do? The goods I promised were robbed by thieves……”

Residents lived in poverty so they couldn't give proper compensation for simple requests.

"Ah, it is really hard to eat."

"It's too difficult."

"There are no requests so I can barely pay the repair costs."

In the past, there had never been monsters invading the city and users had to conquer it with their own power. That situation had changed a lot. The merchants were constantly plagued by bandits and the Embinyu Church and civil war dealt a terrible blow to the market.

"Hey, did you earn some money?"

"Don't talk nonsense. It is difficult to even pay for my carriage repair costs."

Delivery of military supplies to kingdoms and large guilds could reap great trade benefits. But there were already exclusive traders for those cases so everyone else could just watch them maintain the monopoly.

The situation for general users and residents was increasingly deteriorating so there were bursts of complaints against the merchants.

“That can’t happen, really!”

“We paid so many taxes just for this!”

Although merchants had to pay excessive taxes, they could still engage in difficult business. Sometimes they would get angry but merchants were weak in combat.

Needless to say, the general merchants were the ones with unfavourable news.

“Until when do we have to put up with this? I can stomach it if there is a slightly good request but they are just telling us to die!”

“I closed down 5 stores. Outside is dangerous so the number of people who are hunting has decreased. The quality of goods has also fallen.”

“They’re dumping dirt on us!”

A meeting of small and medium sized merchants blamed the lords and guilds. The classes most affected by the chaos on the continent were those like merchants, farmers, miners etc. It was difficult for them to work.

The guilds weren’t satisfied with the territory they had secured and kept on waging war to expand it.

The confusion on the Central Continent even spread to the mountain village as large number of monsters appeared there.

-The Embinyu Church can’t be allowed to obtain a seat.

The religious orders of the continent made a declaration against the Embinyu Church. The Knights Templar and monks of the monastery started moving.

As a war started between the Embinyu Church and other religious orders, the users started to realize the Versailles Continent was changing.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

While Bardray was in the midst of an ongoing quest, the Hermes Guild was also busy moving. They collected enormous taxes from the Haven and Kallamore Kingdoms while scheming.

“A good chance like this won’t come again.”

“It isn’t possible to refuse an offer from the Hermes Guild. We accept. Let’s get along well in the future.”

The Black Lion Guild had received a huge blow at the Melbourne Mine. When compared to the overall scale of the guild, it was just one defeat but Carlise and their elite members had been

annihilated!

This spread awareness that the Black Lion Guild was poor compared to the Hermes Guild. Members of the Black Lion Guild left while its rival the Beden Guild used that chance to expand their power.

Of course, if they allied with other small guilds then they could successfully regain the lost territory. However the Hermes Guild was behind the Beden Guild. They secretly sent them power to cut off the Black Lion Guild and secure the Tullen Kingdom.

The Beden Guild had experienced the power of the Hermes Guild so they couldn't refuse the suggestion. They had to pay a tribute in exchange for securing the entire Tullen Kingdom but it was better than being dismantled like the Black Lion Guild.

Lafaye held a meeting with the leaders of the Hermes Guild.

"The Beden Guild should take 2~3 months to clean up the Tullen Kingdom."

"Do we really need to join with the Beden Guild? We've proved the strength of our forces."

"There is a geographical problem because of other kingdoms between us and the Beden Guild is familiar with the circumstances of that region so they can handle the annoying problems."

“But later on, if we perhaps get tired of them.....”

“Then we’ll wipe out the Beden Guild. Incidentally, the core high level users of the Beden Guild are on a separate operation.”

“Later we will just leave a shell.”

“The problem is the occupation of the Lasalle Kingdom.....”

“That operation is underway. Our aggressive attacks with capture it within a month.”

The Hermes Guild made the decision to throw their army at the Lasalle Kingdom. Then they planned to invade the Britten Alliance Kingdom immediately afterwards to strike at the Cloud Guild.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Wy-3 was flying in the air with Yurin.

“This is a good view. It is thanks to Wy-3 that I can feel something like this.”

“Kkaruruk. Kya kya kya kya.”

The wyvern was weak to praise.

“I’d like to take you flying through the sky after this. From morning to night. And all night long.”

“…….”

Wy-3 seemed to lose all its strength in its wings at Yurin’s words. He was already running around a lot and now the passenger had increased by 1 more person!

Wy-3 and Yurin were flying above a steep mountain. She had come to draw a map of the Harsel Mountains at Weed’s request.

“Go to a place higher than here. I need a wider view.”

“Kkiruk!”

Wy-3 flapped its wings and soared into the sky. In the meantime it had been hunting and raising its level so its maximum speed had increased.

Yurin looked down at the Harsel Mountains from the clouds. The Sulleion had built a fort on the steep Tubkal Peak. The walls consisted of rocks and cliffs so it could be called a blessed fort.

“I need to draw the terrain of these high mountains.”

Yurin began drawing a detailed map.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

“Well, it is like that.”

Weed developed a new strategy based on the information Country Mouse and Silver Bird got from the Sulleions.

“It certainly isn’t a bad strategy.”

The Harsel Mountains had a steep terrain so it was easy to draw in enemies deeper to take advantage of it. The Sulleion could take advantage of the caves and planned a strategy based on their strengths!

Weed praised them.

“They’re pretty smart guys!”

Pale had great expectations.

“Then what tactic should we take?”

Weed had a great reputation on the continent. It wasn’t an exaggeration to say that he had the best leadership and commanding ability. He even brought the Lord of the Continent Seal as well as Teuresec’s Horn. With Weed’s current Leadership level, he could raise some barbarians into elite troops with just a little training.

Pale already knew Weed's battle capabilities but he had even more expectations of his tactics.

"These guys are quite clever and are using various ways……"

"What will we use?"

"We won't waste their effort."

"Eh?"

Pale thought it was impossible.

But Weed led his sculpture lifeform troops and advanced towards Tubkal Mountain. They entered deeper into enemy lines. The sculptural lifeforms used the terrain and space to fight the Sulleion warriors.

It was impossible to hunt in a party in the Harsel Mountains. That's because they needed to bring enough troops to fight against the Sulleion!

The sculptural lifeforms were strong but lacked speed compared to the Sulleion.

The terrain was absolutely disadvantageous.

“King Hydra, go to the right side. Your mission is to entice the attacks from the enemy. Guernica, stay back and defend your position while helping your colleagues.”

The sculptural lifeforms changed formation according to Weed’s order. They crossed over 9 mountains towards Tubkal Mountain while enemies continued emerging from hidden caves.

The Sulleion warriors tended to focus on one target to attack. The dangerous lifeforms fell back while those with high health were at the front. He changed the hunting party according to the characteristics of the lifeforms when the terrain changed.

“Flame River!”

Romuna attacked enemies using the new magic Flame River that she learnt. The hostile warriors were swept by the river of flames!

“Kyaah, really strong!”

Weed smiled bitterly every time Romuna rejoiced at the strong wide area magic! His companions also showed outstanding performances as they moved forward.

The wyverns, Bingryong and Phoenix supported them from the air while defeating enemies.

“Concentrate your attacks on one point and if the enemies scatter then fight daringly. You ate a lot a while ago so don’t let your behaviour be slow!”

Under Weed’s command, the sculptural lifeforms was able to draw out 35% more of their capabilities. Once he fully utilized the sculptural lifeforms, they were able to show a devastating power. The lifeforms who could use arrows and magic were quite useful so they were placed safely in the centre.

The fearsome concentrated firepower achieved a winning streak! Pale and Romuna used ranged attacks while Surka and Zephyr took care of any enemies who got close.

“The location of the Sulleion’s fortress… There should be 6 more mountains.”

Weed used the map to calculate the distance. They had already crossed 9 large mountains as they headed to Tubkal. It had already been a while but there still remained a long distance to go.

“There is a dangerous place in the middle…..”

A canyon was just a place where they could receive concentrated attacks. Usually the wyverns would be scouts but the Sulleion moved secretly through caves so they weren’t easy to notice. In the worst case scenario, they would quickly be besieged!

“Shouldn’t we go back now?”

Irene showed an anxious countenance. She was a priest so she was very reluctant to be besieged. In an urgent situation she wouldn't have time to cure everyone. Someone would probably die so she wanted to avoid that situation.

"I have an idea so let's continue for a little longer."

When there was a slight break, Weed would cook and wrap bandages around the injured sculptural lifeforms. He decided not to use his achievements with the Freya Church to bring Alveron so Irene had to take care of recovery alone.

She didn't have as much skills as Alveron but the King Hydra had a close to immortal life. The King Hydra wouldn't die if there was even 1 head left. Therefore Irene could treat the other creatures.

The lifeforms quickly became friends with the priest Irene. The priest really was an excellent class at increasing intimacy!

Weed allowed a longer break than normal and made a sculpture. This was usual behaviour so no one paid attention to it. He carved the form of wide mountains out of a wooden board.

A few hours later, Pale stopped moving.

"This seems a bit risky to cross."

It was a stream of flowing water. Normally the water would only go up to their knees and waist but the rain water changed it into a rapid torrent. Weed looked at the map and confirmed the location.

“Based on the map Yurin drew, this is one of the best places to attack. We have to get past this stream if we want to reach Tubkal Mountain.”

Knowing the terrain in advance was a high advantage in not getting lost in the mountains. There were three dangerous areas on the way to Tubkal Mountain and this was one of them. If they swam across then they would be attacked by arrows from the woods on either side of the stream.

Pale, Romuna and the sculptural lifeforms would have no chance but to be put in a disadvantageous situation. This wasn’t the place Weed had been sculpting.

Romuna spoke in an unconfident voice.

“Isn’t there a safer detour?”

“We will have to go back 2 mountains. It will also be a formidable climb. It is better to pass here quickly while being careful and prepared for combat.”

Weed moved forward the sculptural lifeforms with high health.

“You absolutely can’t relax. Pale-nim will go first to keep watch.

Romuna-nim should prepare some magic beforehand.”

Unlike their worries, the enemy didn’t show up and they could pass the flow of water unharmed. But after that, the standard of the Sulleion warriors generally rose.

So far they had fought against general soldiers but now the elite level warriors appeared. They were true warriors beyond level 420! The Sulleion warriors hurled an onslaught of attacks without regard for their lives.

The sculptural lifeforms had grown well after being given life in the Jigolaths so they fought well despite being pressed by the enemy. The health of the lifeforms declined as the Sulleion warriors died.

In particular, the sculptural lifeforms like the Fire Giant showed an unsurpassed ability. Due to its fire characteristics, the Sulleions that lived in a reptile habitat tended to evade its attacks.

“I’m a little nervous!”

Irene said with serious concern.

“This is completely behind enemy lines. In addition, they could get reinforcements from the connected cave and we can be besieged. It is too dangerous even if the sculptural lifeforms are strong!”

The sculptural lifeforms hunting speed was exceptionally fast thanks to Weed's commands. Even with Sulleion warriors surrounding them on all sides, the lifeforms built up terrifying achievements.

The King Hydra was intimidating while the Death Worm would suddenly emerge from the land to threaten the enemies.

Swit swit swi swi swi swi swit.

The Countryside Snake also spewed poison while arrows and magic attacks were also concentrated. The large sculptural lifeforms were organized and they assaulted the warrior troops! They were highly effective and powerful and wiped out the Sulleions.

Of course, no one had died yet but Irene hoped to not be put in a situation where the entire party would die. Furthermore, the loss of even one sculptural lifeform would be an irreparable loss for Weed.

Therefore she made up her mind and decided to stop Weed. Her common sense said that Weed was unusually hurried.

"The enemies seem to be luring us here."

Weed nodded at Irene's comment.

"That's accurate."

“This plan.....”

“We are luring them as well.”

Weed pondered as he looked at the topographical map Yurin drew.

‘The greatest fortress. If we punch through from the outskirts then it will take some time. They will either expand their defense or focus on a surprise attack.....’

It required a lot of time to reach Tubkal Peal. They had to fight against the Sulleion that had been propagating in the Harsel Mountains. Despite winning against the enemy, the situation would become more disadvantageous the deeper they got into enemy lines.

It was an exhaustive war so there would be several problems with supplies. That’s why he decided to confirm the enemy’s movement through Silver Bird and Country Mouse and have a big battle all at once.

“Now you just have to believe in me.”

“The chances of success?”

“I can’t be sure but if those fellows are clever than they will lie

down and let us turn them into kimbap.”

Irene decided to believe in Weed. It was the words of a person willing to risk the body due to the tolerable hospital cost!

The next dangerous area they encountered after the stream was a rocky canyon. The rock walls on both side was 2 kilometres high. It was a place that would make someone’s jaw drop and want to retreat! The road passed through the water flowing into the canyon.

Zephyr looked around with a tense expression.

“It isn’t possible to move through here without receiving a surprise attack.”

The Sulleions used narrow caves that seemed invisible so they couldn’t be seen until they appeared.

“Should we go along the top of the cliffs so we can move quickly?”

Pale walked forward with his arrow already prepared. Somehow this place felt like enemies were waiting!

“No. We’ll go to the bottom of the canyon.”

“Yes? But there will be no place to escape. Aren’t the steep

canyon walls just like receiving an attack from a castle wall?”

“That’s what I’m aiming for.”

Weed chose the side of the water channel.

The sculptural lifeforms moved through the wide canyon with the walls stretching high on both sides.

‘This time they will come out. Because this is the most favourable terrain.’

Weed entered the rock canyon with that idea.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The Sulleions hid in the caves on both sides of the rocky canyon.

“I’m too smart.”

“This is my plan.”

“Stupid humans. Kkuukkuk!”

The Elders and warriors found it difficult to stop their laughter. They were extremely confident in their smarts!

‘This place is too good to pass up.’

‘Ah, God gave me everything! Everyone else is so stupid.’

They waited silently while Weed’s group and the sculptural lifeforms entered the rocky canyon.

“They fell in a perfect trap!”

“Get rid of them!”

The Sulleion warriors appeared all at once.

The steep rocky canyon was covered in the dark blue colour of their skin.

Book 30: Statue In The Square

Chapter 1: Great Disaster At Rocky Canyon

Weed was embroiled in deep agony.

‘The truth is that I’m not a hidden genius.’

His school grades weren’t that good. But he thought that South Korea was the victim of irrational thoughts.

“My test scores are a little lacking but the rest of my grades are fine. Ah, that reminds me of the score for the morals test... It was very low.”

Memories of his teachers scolding him resurfaced. The biggest beneficiary for the abolition of corporal punishment was the schools!

Anyway, his plan to lure the Sulleion was a resounding success.

“They’ve fallen into the trap that we dug. Kkuukkuk!”

“Kill. Catch them and eat them!”

“Kuooooh!”

There was the roar of monsters from both sides of the rocky canyon! While the shallow water flowed through the rocky canyon, the dark blue skin colour of the Sulleions holding spears and bows could be seen.

It wasn't easy for many adventurers in the continent to see such a scene, let alone feel confident. Those at the bottom would be perfectly isolated and killed! It was a terribly overpowering impression from the viewpoint of the party concerned.

Pale's fingers holding an arrow trembled as he felt the pressure.

"My archery skill means that I can aim at the top of the canyon but then what?"

It was impossible! The Sulleion warriors continued to shout. This was an action to increase their morale before battle. The morale of a monster played an important role in changing its basic stats.

"The humans won't be able to escape and they will be our food."

"Kiyaaah!"

The warriors yelled loudly as they had secured the favourable terrain of the rocky canyon. There was a minimum of 3,000 Sulleion warriors gathered. The terrain of the Harsel Mountains became steeper as it could deeper so it was one of the worst places to encounter an enemy.

Yellowy cried out with pensive eyes.

“Ummoooooo.....”

It was a situation where he might finally be turned into a ribeye steak. The King Hydra’s 9 heads stretched in all directions. The Black Imugi spread its wings as it prepared to soar up. The flying creatures could escape into the air so those on the ground resented Weed a little bit.

Nevertheless, it was decided they would fight until the end. The 47 sculptural lifeforms from the Jigolaths were willing to give up their lives.

“I have to kill even one more before the end.”

“Even if I disappear... I will have no regrets about my short life.”

The creatures made by the sculptors were determined to burn up and die a violent end. In contrast Bingryong, Goldman and the wyverns were relaxed.

“That human is planning a sneaky operation.”

“He is a cunning fellow, gol gol gol!”

“He won’t let us die here. He will continue to make us work.”

They had experienced a few crises with Weed so seeing an army of monsters was as familiar as eating and drinking water to them. Bingryong and the wyverns especially knew Weed very well.

Meanwhile, the cries from the Sulleion became more frequent as the warriors prepared for battle.

Their choice of a weapon was a bow! They had taken control of the high ground in the rocky canyon so they could shoot arrows down. The Sulleion warriors used steep tipped arrows and a good hit rate so the damage was fairly high. If arrows were fired simultaneously towards the ground then it would be a rain of arrows.

Except for the King Hydra and Phoenix who had high health, the rest were in big danger! The flying creatures could escape in the air but they decided to fight and protect Weed's party.

The sculptural lifeforms were facing a major crisis. If his subordinates were wiped out then he would need to create new ones so it was regrettable.

But Weed still had a rotten smile on his lips.

"I'm also a genius."

This was a good day for something unfortunate to happen to the other party so a warm laugh emerged!

“Weed-nim, do something quickly.”

Weed took out a sculpture after being reminded by Irene. It was a sculpture of this rocky canyon! Yurin had drawn the map in details and he made the sculpture out of green jade. His advanced level 9 sculpting and use of precious materials meant that a Fine piece came out.

“There is a little crack but… I can certainly use this.”

At that moment, the Sulleion warriors finished their preparatory yells and nocked the arrows on their bows. Weed’s party members gazed at the sculpture. Surka who was standing next to him asked.

“Are you using Sculptural Destruction?”

When his Art stat was converted into either the Strength or Agility stat, he could demonstrate a tremendous fighting ability. He was also wearing the Goddess’ Knight Armour. If he used the Wings of Light and flew up the cliff then he could fight against the Sulleion warriors. But that wasn’t why he lured the enemies here.

“No. The skill I’m using now… Great Disaster Nature Sculpting!”

-You have used Great Disaster Nature Sculpting.

20 Art stats have permanently disappeared.

20,000 Health and Mana has been consumed.

All stats have been temporarily reduced by 15% for 3 days.

Affinity to Nature has fallen.

Great Disaster Nature Sculpting can only be used once a day.

When a great calamity is called upon, fame or infamy can be increased depending on the damage.

It is possible to die in the middle of the disaster so be careful.

A catastrophe occurred in the rocky canyon where he lured the monsters. This was his ulterior motive!

Weed's plan was perfect but there was an inevitable problem. Depending on the situation, it would take some time before the disaster started! The time taken for every disaster to activate was different so there was no way to determine this part. They had to focus on defense until the disaster occurred.

"Koheom, this stage is my favourite."

Prior to large battles, Weed would clear his throat before singing a song. Tension filled the battlefield from the Sulleion warriors and the sculptural lifeforms gathered. The person who couldn't carry a tune, it was his live stage!

But Hwaryeong who was wearing ruby earrings and necklaces went out first.

“I’ll buy some time.”

Before the arrows were fired, she walked forward and sang.

-I wake up smiling.

A thrilling feeling flutters in my chest.

I’d like to be held by someone.

I want it to last until the end.

Hwaryeong’s sweet song spread through the canyon. She was a dancer with a very high vocalization skill. Intermediate level 4! The drawback was that it was a class with no combat skills but the monsters closed their eyes at the dancing girl so they were liked in parties.

Despite the danger, her body moved boldly in a colourful dance. Her vocalization skill made a clear and beautiful sound at a rich volume.

“Keeek.”

“That woman is singing.”

“Don’t pay attention and shoot. Catch them and eat them!”

It was like a situation where the instruments weren’t ready to be played in a country market. However, Hwaryeong was the best instrument. There wasn’t an expensive microphone but she had no trouble expressing the emotions of the song.

-I’d like to hide but they seem to know.

I am like this.

I want to be cuddled in the morning while it is raining.

She raised her voice and sang. Her vocalization skill meant the sound could be heard even from the top of the rocky canyon. She had the correct pitch and inhalation power.

Her sweet whisper entered the ears of the Sulleion warriors who hesitated to shoot their arrows. Furthermore, the terrain of the rocky canyon meant that the sound naturally echoed!

“That woman sings well.”

“It will be a waste to kill her.”

“Shall we catch her and make her a slave?”

The Sulleion warriors froze as they listened to her sweet song.

-I want to be a girl

It is a shame.

But you’re a married man with a wife.

The sweetness of the lyrics suddenly became ridiculous. Hwaryeong was affected by Weed’s crazy songs. But excluding the lyrics, the melody and sound were the best.

Her unbelievably clear voice showed a finesse that ranged from bass to treble. She was singing a song purely with her own ability.

Bellot also pulled out a harp and started playing.

-Your daughter is really stunning.

Chocolate was bought for your child.

Child. Your teeth will rot and you will need to go to the dentist!

It was no wonder that she got the nickname Fairy when she was onstage. She had a youthful and refreshing charm. The artistry and emotion in her song could clearly be heard. She could sing almost any genre such as passion or pain on the stage. It was possible to enjoy the stage thanks to her irresistible charm.

Due to the special character of Hwaryeong's dancer body, smoke and lights also appeared around her.

"Kueeeek!"

"It is beautifully composed."

"These are really good lyrics."

The Sulleion warriors liked it so their spears and bows waved.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

"The broadcast will begin. 4, 3, 2, 1."

The KMS Media studios gave notice that they were going to show Weed's adventure. Even if it was broadcasted, it would be too late for the Hermes Guild to interfere.

"Weed's adventure! It is the time that many people have been waiting for."

Shin Hye-min smiled and started the program. Part 2 of the Story of Versailles Continent special program!

After talking about other trivial news with members of the panel, the critical part of Weed's adventure was started. If they wasted time then there was bound to be a build-up of complaints from viewers.

Today they announced in advance that Weed's adventure would be broadcasted so audience ratings were fixed at 11%.

When Weed was defeated by Bardray, the station officials had shaken their heads.

"It is a serious thing. Weed is the only person who can increase audience ratings like this....."

"The viewers were really anxious when Weed and Bardray had confronted each other. He was defeated and died so the topic has ended."

"It is unfortunate. His performance was really good."

The broadcasting stations neglected Weed after that. He wasn't often mentioned in the news and programs didn't feature Weed. But the audience didn't care about such things and were just as excited as before about Weed.

The atmosphere was hard to understand at first glance!

In the meantime, Weed had become King of the Arpen Kingdom and successfully made the large sculptures. Now the Dragon Quest was gradually being shown.

As the situation in Royal Road deteriorated, more people started wishing for a hero. They were looking for a true hero who would defeat evil and return justice.

“If you look at the news, there is always something about a city falling or village being destroyed.”

“Even when hunting or fishing at the river, they would encounter a patrol of Embinyu Cult members and everyone would die.”

“The Lion Castle has announced a list of exiles. Those who don’t follow their words will no longer be able to use the Lion Castle Guild’s hunting grounds and cities.”

“They’re really bad guys.”

The majority of Weed’s quests involved winning against evil opponents. While many people called Bardray a God, they had to admit that he handled his subordinates excessively after his most recent quest. The Hermes Guild’s misdeeds were also severe enough to mention.

“I think Weed-nim should’ve won.”

“They only fought once. And it wasn’t a fair fight.”

“Those Hermes guys, I really want someone to step on them.”

The public liked a protagonist who got stepped on and got up despite the adversity. As Weed’s fans increased further, he became more famous and also inspired more hate against Bardray.

“Then we will proceed with the video that viewers are expecting.”

KMC Media played the video on the screen. This time it wasn’t KMC Media’s exclusive broadcast. The other stations also began broadcasting it at the same time.

Even though Bardray’s Master Quest was progressing, the ratings couldn’t even compared to those of the current broadcast.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Hwaryeong’s song gave a deep impression. Good music had the power to make people happy. He realized how good music was despite it being just sounds.

-3,022 Sulleion warriors have heard the song and cheered.

They can’t fully understand the lyrics but they think it is a very

great song.

In particular, the good point is the flashy performance by a beautiful woman. The Sulleion warriors are male so they like it when they see a beautiful woman.

131 Fame has been acquired as their hearts were stirred.

Weed also had an overwhelming impression.

“Indeed... It definitely is a dentist profession.”

The core of the song was about someone who had a child with rotten teeth living well when marrying a dentist. The main character was someone who desired the husband. A message about dental care and not being frightened by it was embedded.

Weed couldn’t sing but the song soothed him.

“Next time I’ll use the opportunity for a duet.”

“Okay!”

Weed and Hwaryeong decided to have an impromptu performance later.

“Kyahaoooh.”

“I heard a good song. She is talented but now I’m hungry so let’s catch them and eat!”

The Sulleions gradually drifted from their impressed state. The song ended and they were once again poised to attack.

Hwaryeong’s vocalization skill was high but the effect became duller as the Sulleion warriors listened to it longer.

The lowest level soldiers were 200 while the average ones had a level of 300. And there were at least 1,000 elite soldiers level 420 so it would be difficult to handle with the power of the sculptural lifeforms!

But now signs of the Disaster Sculpting started appearing.

Dududuk.

Rocks from the canyon started falling on the heads of the Sulleion warriors.

“This is… Kkueeeek!”

A bunch of rocks from the top of the rocky canyon rolled to the bottom. The warriors tried to avoid it but there were many people gathered and they fell to the bottom one after another.

“Wow… Weed’s skill is really amazing. More than 100 of them have died!”

Surka admired it.

Chunks of rocks rolled and made a ringing sound as they landed. However this was only the harbinger of the true disaster. Weed’s expression intensified.

“The most recent time I used Great Disaster Nature Sculpting was in Rosenheim Kingdom.”

He used it on top of the pyramid in order to escape from the Embinyu Church. The powerful catastrophe covered the area in a flood of water!

“My Affinity to Nature is over 1,000…..”

The power of Great Disaster Nature Sculpting depended on his Affinity to Nature. Selling Selina’s flowers also gave an option that raised it by 7%. Creating the Garden of the Gods and various items also increased it by 9%.

“But now it isn’t because of items.”

While adventuring, he deliberately looked at blooming flowers and wild grass. His Affinity to Nature climbed slowly but steadily.

He also took cuttings from dying trees and moved it to a good place so it could grow. Using eco-friendly materials like mud for pottery and created a botanical garden of an unprecedented scale in the Garden of the Gods. The natural botanical garden made the vitality of the plants even more voracious!

The reason he was so concerned with nature conservation was due to Great Disaster Nature Sculpting.

“I made a Magnum Opus sculpture of the Fire Elemental King. Now my affinity is 1,291. If I add the flower bracelet and the Fine sculpture that I broke.....”

He thought it was strong before but it was no match. This was a standard that made the Rosenheim Kingdom disaster pale in comparison.

Weed’s face stiffened.

“Everybody gather closer.”

Bellot asked with a strange look.

“Gather?”

It was unexpected words!

“It is difficult to guess how much power it will have but we will

definitely be swept up by the disaster if we don't stay close to the centre of the canyon."

Weed yelled using Lion's Roar.

"All lifeforms stick closely to me!"

Rather than being comfortably scattered, they were densely gathered like a peak hour commute. Weed, his colleagues and the sculptural lifeforms moved closed to the stream of water flowing through the middle of the rocky canyon.

"Ummoooooo!"

Yellowy's survival instinct meant he attached himself right next to Weed and he wouldn't move. He knew that being with Weed was the safest place!

Phoenix, Bingryong and the other flying creatures hurriedly rushed up into the sky.

And a disaster starting occurring in the canyon! A landslide occurred in the steep canyon as the rock walls 2 kilometres high started falling.

"Kueeeeeeeeek!"

"It is suddenly crumbling!"

“Brave Sulleion warriors, avoid it!”

The warriors tried to retreat back to the caves but the entrance was narrow and they became all tangled up. While they were trying to escape, rocks fell on them and they became one large ball.

“Kaaaaah!”

“Chyu chyu chyu chyu.”

The Sulleions warriors were crushed to death by the rocks!

Dozens, no hundreds of warriors were brutally taken out. The number of soldiers who tried to avoid it but ended up falling down the canyon couldn’t be counted. They were like leaves crashing to the ground after a harsh wind.

Even if it was just this, the effect of the disaster was tremendous. A landslide had occurred on both sides of the canyon.

Weed, his colleagues and the sculptural lifeforms could relax and enjoy the plight of their enemies as they were also in a crisis. Huge chunks of rock of a colossal size were falling from the top. It didn’t stop and continued rolling into the middle of the canyon.

Weed said.

“This is a really strong skill but the small side effects.....”

His colleagues and the sculptural lifeforms also knew about the side effects. The answer was obvious. The rocks were already falling mercilessly! Great Disaster Nature Sculpting meant the person who used it could also die!

“Come over here!”

“Move to the right!”

“Kyaaah! Huge chunks from the top.....”

“Wah, how amazing!”

“It is really thrilling! It will be a jackpot if we survive this! By the way, doesn’t it seem like we’ll die?”

“I lived a good life and didn’t do anything bad so why is this happening.....?”

“Don’t lie. Weed-nim! I will give 130 gold for a soup made from Yellowy.”

“Last time we hunted in the evening, you asked if I wanted ham hocks.”

“Omo, one piece of beef ribs will be very delicious.”

“Ummoooooo!”

The group gathered together as there was the thunderous sound of rocks hitting the ground. Water sprayed as they feared falling rocks!

“Now are we going to live or die?”

“We will live.”

Weed had prepared beforehand when he decided to use Great Disaster Nature Sculpting in the rocky canyon. It was fortunate that he occupied the centre before he used the skill. Many rocks fell close by but it didn’t directly hit them.

“Now it should end soon……”

The rocks and gravel had poured down in large quantities and the Sulleion warriors suffered an enormous blow that was difficult to recover from. A minimum of at least 600 warriors had died from the rocks.

“Isn’t that a lie?”

Surka pointed to the top of the rocky canyon with a finger. It was a place difficult to see from their position.

Kugugugugung!

Even if it was moderate, there was a chance of a larger accident happening with Great Disaster Nature Sculpting. When it shook, the top of the rocky canyon tilted forward and collapsed.

The Sulleions had used the caves to move to the canyon. The rocky canyon was perforated with caves so the landslide meant all it shook. It was normal for parts of the canyon to collapse.

Weed's last scream!

"My damn destiny……!"

It was questionable how effective it would be but Irene cast protection magic.

"Divine Protection!"

The light of protection wrapped around all of them.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The earth shook and roared!

After a few moments. The dust cleared to reveal the forms of

Weed's party and the sculptural lifeforms.

"Uhh, we're alive."

"Are we really alive? It felt like I died."

"We're not dead?"

No one had died but Zephyr was covered in blood. They were in the centre of the canyon and the King Hydra had protected them from chunks of stone with its body.

"Kuwoooooh, it hurts!"

The King Hydra had the best health so it wouldn't die easily. No matter how much health was lost, it wouldn't die as long as all its head wasn't cut off.

Of course, its level as a sculptural lifeform wasn't very high so it had fairly slow health recovery. 2 of the King Hydra's heads were completely intact so it screamed with pain as well as asking for something to eat.

"It will take time for the King Hydra to re-join the battle."

Weed quickly analysed the situation.

The collapse of the rocky canyon surprised them but apart from the King Hydra, none of the sculptural lifeforms were significantly hurt.

“The problem is how many of those guys received a blow.”

The collapse happened in the rocky canyon. About a quarter of the terrain had been completely changed by the disaster. The Sulleion warriors had suffered much damage. But a fairly large number still survived.

They had tremendous health! They survived like cockroaches and the blue skin was once again seen in the rocky canyon.

“Kuooh, kill them!”

“In the name of the Sulleion warriors!”

The strong and tenacious soldiers were angry. A third of the tribe had died thanks to the disaster. The rocky canyon had received a blow. Weed’s Great Disaster Nature Sculpting wasn’t perfect so there were quite a few places that hadn’t collapsed. The healthy soldiers stood up carrying bows.

“Well, there was still a lot of damage.”

When looking at the scale of the rock canyon, Weed predicted that at least half the warriors had survived. But a lot more had died or suffered a major blow to their health.

The Sulleion warriors were even more outraged.

“Today’s catastrophe was a bit moderate so we still have to fight.”

Weed had a long term and devilish plan so the Sulleion warriors were lucky they didn’t suffer more damage. A lot of warriors received a temporary impact from falling down but they would recover over time.

“We need to attack before those guys wake up. Everyone attack!”

Weed gave a battle command to his sculptural lifeforms.

The Great Disaster Nature Sculpting had succeeded in shaking up the enemy. The Sulleions tried to use the terrain of the Harsel Mountains to their advantage but Weed struck the terrible blow first.

Now it was a race against time!

Except for the injured King Hydra and the earthworm, the remaining lifeforms bravely advanced towards the enemy. Yellowy didn’t want to fight but Goldman rode him into battle.

“Multiple Shot!”

Pale placed arrows on his bow and continuously shot towards the enemy. Once one arrow was fired, it dispersed and 40 arrows hit multiple enemies. They focused on killing the enemy instead of survival. The arrows were fired blindly towards the Sulleion warriors hit by the rocks!

"If I follow Weed-nim then I don't need to worry about anything when fighting."

It was a privilege to be able to fight on a battlefield like the rocky canyon. Pale removed an arrow from his quiver and bit it in his mouth before using an archer's agility to run around firing. He was narrowing the distance towards the place where the Sulleion warriors were struggling to get up. Pale shot excessive amounts of arrows towards 100 enemies approaching.

"This place fits my taste. I'll sweep them all away."

Romuna happily prepared her magic.

A river of flames!

Magicians enjoyed fighting 3~4 monsters at a time. But the Sulleion warriors were already sticking closely to the rocks while shooting arrows and they were prepared for magic.

"I have to come out. I'll smash them with everything I have!"

Surka left Irene who was treating the King Hydra and ran out

with his fists.

"If I can survive here....."

Zephyr also pulled out his platinum fishing rod and increased its length. The fishing rod was light, had surprisingly high damage and the fishing line meant it could be used freely so it was a wonderful long distance weapon.

"Huh huh huh huh hung!"

The White Tiger sculptural lifeform ran around biting the warriors. Knight Seville, Cerberus and the Countryside Snake were also active.

Anyway, the Sulleion warriors were numerous so they quickly recovered. The warriors launched arrows in the sky while the wyverns, Phoenix and Bingryong also became active.

They were surprised by the canyon's collapse but they quickly figured out the situation.

"Master isn't dead."

"He won't die from something like this."

"Ggeug ggueg, there are quite a few left."

“Freeze them.”

“Fight as quickly as possible. If we don’t then there will be no end to the nagging.”

Bingryong breathed out. And his Ice Breath hit the warriors on the slopes of the rocky canyon. Phoenix went to the other side of the canyon and breathed fire. The wyverns flew about capturing soldiers!

A confused fighting scene had begun while Bellot and Hwaryeong started preparing their singing and dancing again. The effect was significantly reduced once the battle started but they could raise the abilities of their colleagues.

Only Weed hadn’t fought yet.

“I don’t know how long my mana will last. No matter how far away, I’m able to bring them with a mysterious art. Summon Sculpture!”

It was a spell to summon a sculpture he had already carved! The Sulleion warriors were waking up. There was the sound of fighting and miscellaneous pieces of small stones falling down.

Romuna’s Flame River had swept away a few warriors. Golden Bird and Silver Bird fought together. If this was a normal fight then this would be the height of his power.

There was a stark contrast to when he was defeated by Bardray and the various preparations he made afterwards. The form of Weed's sculpture slowly rose from the ground.

It was the Chaos Warrior Kubichya! A combat affiliated monster! Weed had hunted the Chaos Warriors when he was in the Jigolaths. The warrior had thick muscles. Weed also made his face give off a strong impression! The eyes were also torn from side to side.

If he appeared on a blind date then the partner would kneel down with fear.

Chapter 2: Fire Warrior

“It’s really affordable.”

Weed looked at the sculpture with satisfaction. He had made a statue of the Chaos Warrior Kubichya using the materials he had obtained from King Belsos.

“It is expensive but I’ll use it well.”

He had recycled the materials. Weed used a secret sculpting technique.

“Sculpture Transformation!”

-Sculpture Transformation has been used.

The infinite affection for sculpting makes the sculptor and statue resemble each other!

He grew 2 metres 20 cm tall and flames erupted around his body.

-Your body shape has changed so a number of equipment can’t be worn.

When wearing armour, the durability will decrease from the flames melting it.

New equipment is needed depending on the species.

-Sculpture Transformation has changed you into a species that rules over fire.

This species can use a unique short distance teleport spell.

Your Art stat has disappeared and Strength, Agility and Wisdom have increased greatly.

This will last until Sculpture Transformation is released.

Weed didn't wear the helium armour and other equipment in case it would be damaged. He had the fire axe and leather belt with special resistance that he found from the Chaos Warriors in the Jigolaths. But such unique weapons weren't necessary for Weed.

The Dragon Sword, Red Star.

When including the equipment that all users carried, it could be called the best sword.

"I haven't been able to use this Dragon Sword once since I've found it. To be honest, I was just lucky to be able to pick it up... Now let's fight."

Weed pulled out the Red Star. And he slowly withdrew the sword

from the scabbard.

Sururururung!

There was a music like sound as the sword was removed. Weed's favourite sound was then heard.

-The Dragon Sword Red Star has been equipped.

You are lacking in the restriction level and fire resistance. But your Blacksmith skill means the weapon can be used.

You won't get tired when using skills.

You will move more quickly and the probability of enemy attacks missing will increase.

Attacks will penetrate the opponent's armour. Magic protection can be ignored and penetrated.

The probability of inflicting severe injuries will increase and the opponent's fighting spirit will be reduced.

The power of fire will be doubled.

The power of fire will greatly increase the damage of the sword.

Magic resistance + 30%

The magic contained in the sword will cause monsters below intermediate level to be intimidated.

The power of attack skills will increase.

You have the ability to control fire.

The techniques stored in the sword is available.

Fire Arrow, Wrath of Fire, Fire Explosion, Fire Extinction, Sword of Hell, Summon Fire Hydras.

You are unable to use the special skill Red Star due to insufficient Wisdom, Intelligence and Mana.

Earth Extinction is unable to be used due to insufficient proficiency in Sword Mastery and Mana.

The Chaos Warriors are a tribe that governs the power of fire.

Red Star: when attacking with fire, you can convert it to Health and Mana.

Maximum value of Health and Mana will increase by 120% and recovery rate will double.

A pure white flame burned around Weed's body that had changed into a Chaos Warrior.

His Art stat had disappeared after Sculpture Transformation while his other stats had increased by a large number. The sword even gave additional effects.

"Is this the feeling of an omniscient landlord?"

When Weed transformed into a Lich, he could wear Barkhan's items and summon the undead. There were some bad side effects with the power of the undead but its strength has already been proven many times. Weed had a wonderful time conducting the undead and it was so cool that viewers were still enamoured with the reruns.

The collapsed rocky canyon packed with the bodies of the warriors meant he could summon a legion of undead. The undead had a strong power but it wasn't possible right now when the sculptural lifeforms and his colleagues were under attack.

He had a lot of affection for his sculptural lifeforms like Goldman who chose death, Yellowy who took his threats and Wy-3 who he always rode.

"I need to make them work for the rest of their lives. If they die here then I will be the one who receives the damage. Calling Death Knight Van Hawk, calling the Vampire Lord Torido!"

“You called Master.”

“Defend this place. Protect the King Hydra.”

“Understood.”

Van Hawk and Torido were his subordinates so they came whenever he called. Weed looked at the rocky canyon and used a skill.

“Blink!”

At that moment, Weed appeared behind a Sulleion warrior who was just firing an arrow.

“Keek?”

The Sulleion was a reptile like tribe so flames were their nemesis. Weed wielded the sword wrapped in flames and brought it down.

-The power of fire has dealt a fatal blow to the warrior.

They have lost their power to fight.

“Blink!”

Weed continuously moved along the rocky canyon and subdued those firing a bow. When Weed continuously swung the sword, surprisingly an 8 metre high pillar of fire occurred.

The enemy couldn't avoid it and were wrapped in flames as their health fell. If they fell from the high canyon then they would die from the crash damage!

Currently the Sulleions' natural enemy was Weed himself.

"Get rid of the fire human."

"He is the most dangerous."

The arrows were concentrated on Weed. The arrows were also shot from the opposite rock wall.

"Blink."

Weed used short distance teleportation while attacking so he wasn't caught. This was why Weed suffered when he needed to hunt the Chaos Warriors and Kubichya.

He tried to emulate a Chaos Warrior's power and knowledge. Weed took full advantage of the power of the sword and cunningly used Blink.

"Flame Explosion!"

Fireballs emerged from the sword and scattered in all directions, causing an explosion! The Sulleion warriors received significant damage and crashed into the ground.

Naturally it was beneficial for the Sulleion to besiege the enemies from the high walls. But in a geographically challenging rock canyon like this, if they suffered a blow and fell down then it was over.

Due to the combination of Disaster Sculpting and Sculpture Transformation, this rocky canyon had become the Sulleions' tomb.

Weed used Blink to flash across both sides of the canyon and defeat the warriors holding bows.

"The Sulleions' bows aren't lacking. There is a low level restriction and no species restriction. The option also has the Quick Fire skill so it should sell decently. I can receive a high price for it."

People have settled in Morata from the Central Continent so he could easily sell level 300 weapons now. He continued fighting after checking the item.

"He's coming this way. Help!"

"Euweeeek. I want to run away."

“Heuiiik.”

“Kiyaaah!”

The Sulleions were intimidated thanks to the power of Red Star and they couldn’t respond calmly to Weed. The arrow attacks slowly weakened and his flying creatures could fly about the canyon. The sculptural lifeforms and his colleagues were also fighting together at the bottom of the canyon.

There were many injured and weakened Sulleions from the rock collapse and quite a few died during the fight.

“We are warriors who rule the Harsel Mountains and we drove the intruders here. We still have a huge power!”

“Get rid of all the enemies here. Get revenge for our people with our own hands!”

The tribe’s Elders tried to raise the morale of the warriors again. Morale and organized combat were essential in a massive battle. Weed appeared next to the Elders.

“He came here. Call for reinforcements.”

“He is the boss of the intruders so we must kill him!”

The escorts for the Elders raised their spears. Their levels was a little higher than 420.

Weed cast a skill.

“Wrath of Fire!”

A column of flames burned up the warriors. The best part about the Red Star was its ability to take away the enemy’s combat power when an attack succeeded.

Once engulfed in flames, it was impossible to recover with being treated by priests. Furthermore, the Chaos Warriors was a species that had its health and mana naturally filled by the flames emitted by Red Star.

It was like a vampire receiving an indefinite supply of the blood of young women. In that situation, a vampire could fight against someone stronger and win.

His ability to use magic attack skills completely changed his combat power. Weed harnessed the skills of the Dragon Sword and Chaos Warrior to eliminate his enemies with an electrifying charisma! Every place he passed was devastated with flames.

Of course, he never forgot to pick up the loot dropped by the Sulleions. The Sulleions had ruled the Harsel Mountains for a long time so they had expensive loot.

“Warriors, that female warrior looks weak. Eliminate that woman.”

Some of the Elders made fun of the lifeform Gernika. She was a Barbarian warrior who fought with weapons in both hands. She became the target of lots of enemies.

Then the head of the Death Worm appeared where the Elders were and it swallowed them. The Death Worm was just a gourmet earthworm. It was a picky eater so it went for the commanders first. It had been timid since the rocky canyon collapsed but now it was finally starting to fight.

Meanwhile the King Hydra was rapidly restoring its health with Irene’s help.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The battle of Rocky Canyon!

Weed’s quest was relayed live and caused a large ripple. The collapse of the rocky canyon was a shocking video that transcended imagination. And the achievements of the sculptural lifeforms!

-Bingryong is strong.

-Full of dignity. The strong monsters are no match against it.

-The Phoenix is also visible. Its wide area flame magic is really scary.

-Weed's subordinates are really no joke.

The Phoenix's supreme skill that scattered feathers and burnt the rocky canyon. The sculptural lifeforms had unique skills that were amazing. The sight of all these skill running amok in the rocky canyon was a flashy scene.

The sculptural lifeforms were so popular that fan clubs had already formed. The audience also couldn't overlook Yellowy, Bingryong and the wyverns who were extremely popular in Morata and played crucial roles in many battles. It was to the extent that chefs in Royal Road developed Bingryong ice cream and wyvern chicken!

The viewers also noted Weed's combat ability.

-It is different from how he fought before.

-He seems to be overflowing with an uncontrollable power.

-I wanted to see something like this. This is the Weed from Continent of Magic. That completely different feeling when slaughtering monsters!

-Ahu…. I would like to see a real fight like that. But the reality is that I would only run away.

-He’s so strong yet he died to Bardray?

-I wonder if something was behind it. Maybe he got paid to lose. Wouldn’t a lot of money have to be given in order to do that?

-Weed-nim wouldn’t do something like that. Don’t talk carelessly when you don’t know Weed-nim.

-The Weed-nim I like is pure and unspoiled so don’t share such conspiracy theories.

-But his strength is really no joke. He is indeed Weed. My heart beats fast whenever I see him!

A hot battle as a Chaos Warrior! The viewers had no choice but to be excited as they watched Weed battle. They were totally engrossed in the battle as he took care of those handling the bows and the Elders.

Of course, that was due to greed for their items but the audience was fascinated by the fast and tough battle.

Normally they would approach carefully, confirm the health, be blessed with magic and fight stably.

-If you’re in a war then wouldn’t the correct answer be to dominate everything?

-I know. Weed fights like a man!

Not only was his individual power strong but he also had excellent commanding skills. The tactical operation focused on the sculptural lifeforms and to lure the enemies was completed without a hitch.

Every time Weed pointed a finger and issued a command, the sculptural lifeforms would take out the Sulleions. It was like when he commanded the forces of the ghost ships. Of course, the noise of the battlefield meant Weed needed to whisper so the audience couldn’t hear him.

-Gernika, don’t back out. Vindex, you’ve encountered so many. Aren’t you tired of playing yet? Now kill them! Countryside Snake, don’t just lick them and use your poison. Earthworm! Why are you sleeping in the ground for more than 20 seconds?

A storm of nagging! If someone was in danger then he would rescue them using short ranged teleportation. It was different from how other users handled their subordinates.

-Bardray deliberately threw his men into danger.

I don’t know this guy’s original self. = Comparison? This is the difference in the capabilities of a true commander.

-Kya! I'd like to see such a battle.

There were also people who brought down the mood.

-I can also fight like that. If they had high level and wore good items then everyone could act like that.

-Wake up. If you were in that situation then you probably would've been killed in just a minute.

-Weed's movement speed, reaction speed and judgement, he takes advantage of everything. Could I really fight in a melee combat like that?

-Leave. You're not someone who played Royal Road properly. You probably can't even kill a rabbit after you connect.

The viewers couldn't take their eyes off the television as the battle continued. It was like watching a movie and Weed's unpredictable element made it fun. He planned to destroy the enemy in the disadvantageous rocky canyon.

Even if he was careful when causing a disaster, it would still be difficult to control. He should've utilized his skills and continue fighting the enemy in the outskirts of the Harsel Mountains.

But Weed committed to it.

“In the worst case, I can hit them and escape. I can retreat and use the cliffs or mountains at my back to defend and hold out for at least 3 months. I can hunt to eat and drink rainwater so living will be reasonable.”

So far he was able to endure by utilizing the skills of his sculptural lifeforms. The public had no choice but to be wildly excited.

“He foolishly fell into the Sulleions trap.”

“His plan to hit back against the ambush was perfect but Weed wasn’t able to expect this degree. Ah, how disappointing.”

Once the battle started, the people following the progress sighed deeply. But soon they changed their words and were busy complimenting him.

“Ohhhh! Weed’s subordinates really possess wonderful battle ability.”

“That weapon is from the Chaos Warrior Kubichya. According to what I heard, it is the weapon of a dragon.”

“The fact that it is a dragon’s weapon hasn’t been confirmed yet. It seems to have huge attack power and is an item that can use fire magic.”

“It’s wonderful! Did you see it just now? The sword burns all the flying arrows. That boldness and timing of his actions is only possible for Weed.”

“Haven’t you said those words a few times about Weed’s broadcasts?”

There was a relay of compliments.

LK Game station had recently become friendly with prestigious guilds, including the Hermes Guild. They needed to get along well with the large forces in order to secure a combat video. A portion of the proceeds from the advertisements during the broadcasts also needed to be paid to the prestigious guild.

But it couldn’t be compared to the viewers expected for Weed’s broadcast. The presenters knew what the audience wanted so they didn’t stop praising Weed.

“Ohhh, Weed.....”

“An arrow attack is being prepared against him and the warriors are gathering. Does he still not know about it?”

“He might not have enough mana to escape.”

“It is a crisis!”

The hosts raised the tension while watching the progress. There was an urgency about the broadcast that surpassed those of the finals of a football match!

“Weed has fallen down the rocky canyon due to the enemy’s attacks!”

“He fell from a serious height so Weed should receive a large blow.”

“Ah... That’s not the case! He moved through the air with continuous blinks!”

“As expected, he handled it very flexibly. He has a miracle like skill management.”

They were very busy following the video.

“Weed is on the ground. Now he is laughing as he acquires loot!”

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Weed used the magic of the Red Star multiple times. It was the feeling of taking a bullet taxi after always catching a bus.

“Now this is a good harvest!”

There were many wounded Sulleions scattered among the rocky canyon and Weed hunted them down. After transforming into a Chaos Warrior, he didn't even wear armour. He could endure with his basic perseverance and resilience.

The Red Star and his charisma meant fighting the Sulleions weren't a problem. The sword's short range teleportation and ability to restore health meant he didn't need to worry about his health decreasing!

"Retreat!"

The tribe's Elders finally decided to retreat. Then the warriors started withdrawing from the rocky canyon. They passed through the narrow caves that hadn't collapsed.

Weed yelled using Lion's Roar.

"Don't chase them!"

Normally in large scale battles, they would pursue any retreating enemies. The cavalry could chase down and overwhelm the monsters on the plains. Knights had a large advantage so the plains monsters were good prey for them. After the assault from the knights, the more intelligence monsters would decide to flee once morale lowered. A few days chasing and hunting the prey could gather loot, fame and experience. There were a lot of benefits to choosing a knight profession.

Several sculptural lifeforms had quick movement speed but this was the Harsel Mountains with a steep terrain. Weed and the sculptural lifeforms were also tired so the Sulleions could strike back if they chased them. It was difficult to control himself as the commander but this time it was necessary to endure it.

-A miracle like victory has been achieved in a canyon of the Harsel Mountains.

During the battle the enemies became panicked from the constant attacks.

Victory has been won with unpredictable leadership.

Even with excellent subordinates, a victory without the loss of any allies is praiseworthy.

-Fame has increased by 1,210.

-Charisma has increased by 6.

– Leadership has increased by 5.

-The Sulleions' hostility has increased by 100.

-You have gained great battle experience.

All combat related stats have increased by 1.

-Your level has risen.

“Huhuk, my items are going away. Ah… A guy holding a bow has been caught.”

Weed had regrets even after winning a great battle.

“I should get rid of the guys around here.”

Weed went around the collapsed rocky canyon with his sculptural lifeforms and took care of the Sulleions warriors one by one.

“Spare me.”

A Sulleion warrior begged with a pathetic face.

Weed spoke with a regretful expression.

“I’d like to do that. But… I can’t because of the loot.”

Slice!

If he spared prisoners after a huge victory then Honour and Dignity would increase. Of course, simply commanding knights

would increase fame and the Honour stat by a lot.

Even the Arpen Kingdom's lower taxes increased Honour.

"There is no meaning to eating soup with rice when there is no honour. Fame is also worth a mention."

When a king had high honour, knights would walk at his feet. Weed presently had 165 Honour as King of the Arpen Kingdom and that was quite high.

More free knights would come as the fame of the Arpen Kingdom spread across the continent.

"I heard there is a true king in the north."

"It is apparent when talking to the residents."

"There is a long distance but... I will go in order to meet a King I can serve for a lifetime."

Free knights were leather clothes and a shabby cloak came to the north. Free knights killed monsters and some frequently swore allegiance to other lords. But many knights moved to find a new lord after the collapse of the Kallamore Kingdom.

Weed's honour stat was low compared to art, strength or agility but the numerical value didn't need to be compared. The kings of

other nations just lived without caring about honour.

-The tyrants are only eager to collect taxes.

-How foolish, the warmongers don't care about policies or numbers at all.

-They are unscrupulous and don't defend chivalry.

-Complete bullies.

They had the worst reputation that even dogs passing by would bark at them! In particular, the users that were lords or kings had particularly bad reputations.

Thus the free knights of the Versailles Continent drifted towards the Arpen Kingdom. Soldiers needed a lot of investment and hard work in order to become a knight. When receiving the loyalty of a free knight, this part could be easily settled.

Of course, there was one important thing for the stingy Weed.

"These knights, they take too much salary. The employment costs are no joke. The money for their food costs alone……"

It wasn't free so he was sad that his tax money went towards the knights that swore loyalty.

Currently the Arpen Kingdom had 240 knights.

The character of the knights would change depending on the king. The kings who lived in luxury and debauchery while collecting taxes would have knights who ignored the residents and enjoyed hedonism.

The knights of the Arpen Kingdom were frugal and enjoyed culture. They also voluntarily worked to keep the peace by fighting monsters and bandits. They hadn't fought in dangerous places yet so it was impossible to compare them to the same standard as other kingdoms.

"Kyahh, we really won!"

Surka was delighted even when her gloves were ragged from hitting the enemy.

"I really thought I would die after falling into the trap."

Weed hadn't told his colleagues the detailed plan to lure the enemy. They just maintained a thorough security and gained experience. They were surprised twice by the disaster and the extermination of the enemy.

Romuna scolded her.

"There's no such thing. Weed-nim is an expert at things like this. He had any number of tips and tricks."

Zephyr also acknowledged it.

“Today really is a day of delicious dishes.”

Hwaryeong had experienced many things while hunting in dungeons under Weed’s leadership.

“I need to keep a well-rested bottle of wine for days he won’t let us rest.”

The strategy was evaluated as bold and aggressive tactics on television but his colleagues thought different.

‘Whenever he smiles like that, he is up to his ugly tricks.’

‘He is truly cunning…..’

‘He must’ve really experienced a lot since childhood.’

Originally the world was like this!

Anyway, Weed’s real goal was to rescue the Arnin kept at the Sulleion’s fortress.

“We’ve defeated quite a large number of troops here. Let’s advance there immediately.”

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The Sulleion’s fortress at Tubkal Peak.

It was a place with decent scenery as clouds and the Harsel Mountains could be seen under their feet. The Sulleions piled stone on top of the mountain and built a fortress that looked like an upside down blade.

When riding the wyvern and looking at it from the sky, it was a terrain that made it difficult to attack.

Weed arrived at the neighbourhood with his colleagues and the sculptural lifeforms. This was a dangerous place for an ambush but it was no surprise the dispirited Sulleions didn’t attack.

“Now we just need to win here.”

Weed first checked the terrain of the fortress through Yurin’s drawing. The slope of the jagged peak was so severe that it was difficult to pull any siege weapons manufactured by blacksmiths.

“Intruders have come here.”

“Close the gates.”

“Place the archers. And take out the defensive weapons from the

warehouse.”

The Sulleions confirmed Weed’s presence and shut the gates as they prepared for a siege! They took out defensive weapons they looted or obtained from dwarves that were taken prisoner. There were plenty of boiling oil, arrows, crossbows and devices that drop stones!

“This will be a very difficult challenge. It won’t be easy to make this place surrender.”

Pale climbed to a high place and clicked his tongue as he examined it. The Sulleion fortress had well maintained walls. Typically he would need 5 times the troops if there was going to be a war of attrition.

“Smoke!”

To make matters worse, smoke was rising from the fortress. When under attack by humans, the Sulleions would light up beacons to summon reinforcements.

“They’ve made all the preparations.

The Sulleions scattered around the Harsel Mountains had been brought back to the fortress. They entered the fortress using a small cave prepared beforehand and could also use it to spread out to the surroundings outside.

The Harsel Mountains was optimized for the Sulleions that lived there. His Sculpting Master Quest required him to rescue the Arnin so if he took too much time then he might be back to square one.

Pale asked.

“How will we fight?”

He believed that Weed would somehow have a trick.

“We should eat before fighting. It will be needed against these guys.”

Weed took out advanced ingredients and sparingly cooked dishes. Freshly baked bread, drinking soup made from dark meat broth to taste appetizing was the purpose. Normally they just ate barley bread with jam so this was already a luxury feeling!

“It will take a little time to cook the dishes so please enjoy.”

Weed took out all his cooking tools and ingredients. The meat, vegetables and other ingredients were kept frozen by Bingryong but his skill proficiency was 89% intermediate level 9 so the taste didn’t drop.

Just having a level 6 beginners cooking skill was enough to make a savoury smell emerge from the food. There were seasoned pork ribs mixed with the thigh meat of a sheep.

“Please eat simply. I’ve prepared a lot so you don’t become full too quickly.”

Sea bass, Flounder, Salmon, Flatfish, Sea Bream and Tuna!

They were caught from the sea east of Morata. Although they had been frozen. Weed’s knife cut them into quality sashimi!

“The taste is melting in my mouth.”

“Ah… There is a clear freshness.”

When it was brought out, the container immediately became empty.

“You’ve gone through a lot of trouble.”

He gave slices of tuna to the sculptural lifeforms. The King Hydra’s 9 heads fought among themselves over the food.

“Continue eating. It is just getting started.”

The next dish Weed made had shark eggs, shellfish and fish boiled along with a special sauce. He decorated it with potatoes, vegetables and dipping sauce before serving it in a container.

Hwaryeong was the first one to try it.

“How is it?”

Hwaryeong closed her eyes at Surka’s question and seemed to think of something.

“I can taste the deep sea the moment it touches my tongue. Fish are endlessly born and are swimming in the deep and mysterious ocean….”

Waguwagu.

“Aw, let’s eat together!”

Weed didn’t pay attention to their evaluation of his dishes. Fine cuisine didn’t appeal to everyone’s taste buds. He wanted to eat oden and ddeokboki the most.

“I am happy when cooking delicious dishes!”

Weed cooked ingredients from various areas of the continent and studied their taste. He had an intermediate level 9 cooking skill but it still took a long time to serve his party. He didn’t have a lot of time to make the food.

When he went hunting or on adventures, he ate simply. If he opened a restaurant with various ingredients supplied to him, it

would be difficult for him to cook professionally. But he was able to build a significant depth to the flavours from land and sea ingredients.

“Here is some wine and brandy as well.”

“Kyaah, I really wanted a drink. I’ll drink just a little bit.”

Blowfish tempura, oysters, sashimi, traditional snacks and ham hocks.

The wyverns ate happily. Yellowy shed tears as he swallowed vegetables and gravy.

“Umoooooo, this seems to be the last food we will ever eat.”

“Who knows... We might die after eating this.”

The last supper! Goldman went to a corner and shed tears as he ate clams.

“Master, I’m still happy that we could be together.”

Weed had no such aims but his sculptural lifeforms were paranoid. Weed laughed with satisfaction.

“I’ve only been scolding them. Sometimes I should make food for

the children. I didn't think they would be moved like this."

"Huhuhuhuk."

The sculptural lifeforms gradually shed more tears. After the meal, the efficiency of Weed's party and the sculptural lifeforms increased. Their exhausted body and vitality was restored due to the adequate rest.

The effect of his intermediate cooking skill meant they gained at least 9 levels. Health increased by 18,284 while vitality and endurance grew by 50%. The rest of his stats increased by more than 35 points!

Even so, the stat increase wouldn't play a decisive role in battle. But if they ate well then they could fight better. It was the reason why Weed arranged delicacies of the sea and land and shared it with his colleagues and sculptures.

The founding ceremony for the Arpen Kingdom was simple but he was really grateful to all the people here. He wanted to continue growing together with his sculptural lifeforms. He was also grateful to his colleagues in many ways.

That's why Weed didn't spare on using the expensive ingredients. Of course it was different on the surface.

"I just wanted to try cooking… I had some materials left."

“Then you will do this again the next time there are food ingredients left?”

“There won’t be any left.”

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The 3 Mad Sharks of Becky Nin!

Weed visited their pirate ship a week ago. He got there quickly due to Yurin’s Picture Teleportation. As soon as Weed appeared, he treated the pirate ship like his house. In the process he discovered a bit of seafood in the ship’s warehouse.

“You must eat a lot of seafood since it is easy to obtain.”

“No. I’m homesick for land food and would rather eat meat more frequently.”

“I’m turning pale from eating sashimi on a daily basis.”

Weed didn’t listen to their opinions.

“It seems like you have a lot of seafood left…..”

“It’s not that much?”

“I will come and take it tomorrow. There should be enough to fill eight carriages.”

“Huh, is it possible to get that much seafood so quickly even if we’re on the sea?”

“I’d like different species like oysters and clams.....”

“Haha, what a good joke.”

“These days your bounty has increased quite a lot... Congratulations.”

“Ah, thank you very much. It is thanks to pirating. Raising one ship was very tough. It really is worthwhile to indiscriminately loot while at sea.”

“You’re notorious and have the murderer status so it will be unlucky if you meet someone looking for profit. They will be able to claim your bounty at a kingdom.”

“.....”

There was a mean smile on Weed’s face that the 3 Mad Sharks of Becky Nin couldn’t forget. They were considerable threats and Weed was someone who would go through with it.

“You’re a really bad guy that we respect. You haven’t forgotten

and are still blackmailing us.”

“We still have a long way to go. There is a lot to learn.”

“In the world of bad actions, there is definitely a difference between us!”

The Mad Sharks used their fleet to gather the amount of seafood. They barely fulfilled the quota when Weed and Bingryong came. However Weed didn’t collect it completely free.

“If you take it then won’t people just think of it as robbery?”

In fact, it was like robbery.

“But it will be wrong to give money between us.”

“What if.....”

“We’re close friends who adventured together so there shouldn’t be a money deal.”

“.....”

The 3 Mad Sharks of Becky Nin weren’t the type to refuse money. But they had to consider the other party involved. They knew what to expect from Weed.

“I have a knack for guessing the talent of people.”

The pirate ship was made of rotten wood! Something made from a sculptor would be a fine talisman at sea. The ship’s movement speed would increase and they wouldn’t suffer as much damage in storms. The pirate’s skill and stats also helped.

Many carried sculptures made for land but the sculptures attached to the bow would have a larger effect.

Heint made a different offer.

“Kya! I would be willing to give up money for a sculpture.”

They wanted a sculpture that expressed the wickedness of pirates.

He would feel bad making just one sculpture. Weed had a relationship with them so he couldn’t say no. It would be bad if he needed to have more dealings with them in the future.

“I will make you more sculptures.”

Weed also produced more sculptures for the other ships. It was the so-called 1+1 offer! He made a dolphin that could be occasionally seen at sea. Dolphins often hung around ships and increase sailing speed and luck!

“In order for us to do this..... We will work harder as pirates in the future.”

“I’m glad you’re satisfied. Then.....”

Weed had a rotten smile on his lips.

That gentle smile stayed as he left the pirate ship of the 3 Mad Sharks of Becky Nin.

Chapter 3: Tubkal Peak

Weed was aware of the fact that he didn't have much time.

The Sulleions were extensively spread throughout the Harsel Mountains and they had a quick breeding rate so it was only a matter of time before their numbers were restored.

"Unfortunately the fight needs to be over by today."

If he used Great Disaster Nature Sculpting then he could deliver a huge blow at the beginning. But the restrictions meant he could only create a disaster once a day. If he waited then the warriors would only increase.

"Even if I could use a disaster, I can't kill the Arnin so I need to fight like this."

Great Disaster Nature Sculpting would just cause a huge problem to his rescue plan. Weed once again used Sculpture Transformation to change into the Chaos Warrior Kubichya.

"The most important thing is speed. Everybody prepare for battle!"

His colleagues and sculptural lifeforms had large expectations.

“What is your strategy this time?”

“Is there something that will change the terrain of the Sulleions’ habitat?”

“Tactics that I can’t even imagine always seem to succeed.”

Irene, Pale and Bellot were nervous as they watched from the side. The sculptural lifeforms were ready to follow any orders. They were well fed so they could exert even more of their ability.

“Umoooooo, I’m going to live.”

“Gol gol gol, I’m happy to be here with everyone.”

“Wy-3 will die before I do.”

The oldest among the wyverns, Wy-1 snapped towards Wy-3.

“Yes, I will die first.”

“Master will ride you alone… Because he finds your flat back excellent.”

“Guuuh, that’s not it. You don’t know how hard it is.”

“I’m full!”

“I ate many ostrich eggs a short while ago.”

“I want to eat just one more!”

“I wanted to eat it!”

In the midst of this, jealousy was also occurring! He endowed them with life in the Jigolaths so his intimacy with them was still low.

This moment was also broadcasted live to the stations. Over tens of millions of viewers were watching it in real time or in Royal Road pubs as they ate food and drank beer.

They were watching Weed’s adventures rather than trading in the market square.

“Now, let’s get started.”

Weed gave a command.

“Guys, attack. Let’s go!”

He chose a frontal attack. He really looked reckless as he ran up the slope towards the blade like fortress!

Weed's sculptural lifeforms also followed him towards the fortress. Yellowy, Goldman, Fire Giant, White Tiger, Knight Seville, female warrior Gernika, female sword user Vindex and the high elf Eltin all ran with him.

The flying creatures in the air also prepared to attack.

Arrows fired once they entered the range of the fortress on Tubkal Peak.

"Blink!"

Weed instantaneously teleported in front of the gates.

"Sword of Hell!"

The Red Star generated flames that covered the entire sword.

-Damage has increased by 329%.

Weed hit the gates with all his strength.

Kwaaaang!

A thunderous sound resounded as the gates were hit!

-The gates of Tubkal Fortress have been destroyed.

Your combat stats have increased by 1.

When the gates broke, the Sulleion warriors waiting immediately swarmed out.

“An unjust human.”

“Get rid of the enemy’s leader.”

Arrows and spears shot at him but Weed just used a skill.

“Blink!”

The next place he appeared was a house in the fortress!

“It isn’t here.”

Weed chopped the wooden building with the Red Star. And the whole building was engulfed in flames in seconds.

“There! The place lit up by fire.”

“Blink!”

He avoided the Sulleions and teleported to the heart of the

fortress!

“Kuwaaaaah!”

“Eliminate those guys.”

“Kill all the bastards who came here to die!”

Weed could hear the sound of battle at the gates. The colleagues and the sculptural lifeforms had been blocked by the Sulleions. There was the something shaking and the walls vibrated as Death Worm travelled through the ground to collapse the walls.

A fierce battle was taking place between the thick walls and broken gates. The oversized sculptural lifeforms couldn’t squeeze past the gates but their bodies acted as a defense line.

“You have to make them fight well.”

Weed gave Goldman the command. Goldman was timid but he could fight well. Their movements weren’t efficient but Weed’s original goal wasn’t to capture the fortress. Weed would infiltrate the fortress alone in order to rescue Arnin.

“The sculptural lifeforms have to live well so they need to conserve their lives. They need to fight in moderation.”

Fortunately Irene was a reliable healer so he could feel relieved.

“Keeeeook!”

A large crocodile on all fours called Nile opened his eyes as it approached the gates. He would exert his maximum force in rivers or swamps. The short legs and heavy tail meant it was hard work to ascend or descend the mountain. His movement speed would become faster as the battle continued but it couldn’t maintain it for long.

He waved his tail while walking on all fours so Hwaryeong and Bellot really thought he was cute.

“Weed-nim, does Nile really need to fight? I will accomplish his share so can’t you remove Nile?”

“Omo, look at this pattern on the side of his stomach unni!”

They opposed Nile participating in battle. They didn’t want dust or bruises to damage the soft leather!

“Time is money. Quickly finish this!”

The fortress was built on a high peak so it wasn’t that wide. Most buildings only had 1 or 2 stories so there was a narrow range to search. The Country Mouse from the Jigolaths also squeezed through holes in the walls and searched for the Arnin.

The Sulleions had a tight defense but they couldn't stop a Country Mouse from moving around.

"Kill him!"

The problem was that the Sulleions carefully watched Weed who was holding the Red Star and gathered excessively. It was natural to fiercely attempt to kill the other side's leader in a siege. Weed had entered the fortress so they didn't need to send their soldiers out. There were at least 300~400 warriors running after Weed.

"It isn't here. Blink!"

Weed continued searching for the Arnin while slicing at any visible enemy warriors. He needed to search the building so it was bound to take some time. Country Mouse also looked into each building but there was no news.

"I won't permit you to enter here. Kyahat!"

A Sulleion warrior leapt towards Weed. Weed accepted the enemy's spear with his sword. The Red Star's flames spread to the enemy.

"Chieeeeek!"

The enemy were continuously in great pain and he acquired the loot! Weed didn't want to fight. He might've harnessed the power of the Red Star as a Chaos Warrior but that wasn't enough to fight

hundreds of enemies in their fortress. Blink also consumed mana so it couldn't be used indefinitely.

"He's coming this way."

"Block. Kiyaaaaaah!"

Warriors ran towards Weed with their spears in front of them.

Syuik!

He cut the spears with the Red Star. Then he struck while passing by their side. The Sulleion warrior died as he was wrapped in flames and Weed moved onto the next enemy.

He was inexperienced with handling the Red Star but the effects meant it wasn't that hard to attack. If he connected to the appropriate body part then there could be continuous attacks depending on the decline in health. After hitting the enemy as many times as necessary, he would move on to the next one.

Weed was efficient at hunting a group continuously. He had become a master of grinding efficiently. Not only was Weed good at handling the sword, no one could collect the loot as quickly as him. He would never leave an item behind on the battlefield.

"Heriam Fencing!"

Weed overpowered 5 Sulleion warriors with continuous strikes. They were caught by the fireball of death and their loot taken!

Weed attacked quickly so his health was quite reduced. He wasn't wearing the Helium armour or any other type of armour. Therefore his defense was quite low and his health suffered a lot of damage. He was able to withstand it because the Red Star restored his health.

"Not here either."

The Tubkal Fortress was the paradise of the Sulleion warriors.

"Grrrrk, I heard screams from here!"

"He entered the building."

"Some of you will form a defensive wall while the rest will get rid of him."

Weed's every move was reported in real time. The Sulleions fought a lot more defensively than usual in the aftermath of the rocky canyon battle so it was difficult to search the buildings. They were the level 400 elite warriors that hadn't participated in the previous battle!

Weed sometimes ran around deliberately provoking the elite warriors and dragged them after him.

“These ugly guys. Your appearance should at least be like me.”

“Kill him!”

“Blink!”

He looked for a place in the fortress with no enemies and sprinted there while fighting the enemies.

“The fire man is around here.”

“There!”

He had to search the fortress on limited mana while the enemy was growing in numbers. But he had to find the Arnin quickly and rescue them or he would fail!

-Country Mouse, have you found anything?

Weed whispered while fighting.

-Squeak squeak!

Country Mouse had been searching among the buildings but still couldn’t find anything. The buildings here were quite shabby so it was easy to eater through cracks in the door or holes. But there

were no Arnin anywhere.

"It is impossible to search the fortress one after another....."

His colleagues and sculptural lifeforms were also limited in time. That's why Weed attracted the attention of the Sulleion warriors while searching the fortress.

"It still isn't here....."

Weed checked the warehouses and derelict buildings but still couldn't find a place where prisoners were confined.

"I need to change my point of view. I can't just rush around searching blindly. Blink!"

Weed rose to the tallest tower in the fortress.

The wyverns were flying around attacking soldiers on the ground while his colleagues and sculptural lifeforms were battling the Sulleions around the walls. Pale and Romuna were active while Hwaryeong's body danced tirelessly as see drew the warriors' attention. Their attacks got even more desperate the moment she stopped dancing.

They were no less busy than Weed's battle.

"That guy went up."

“We have to bring him down. Beware.”

“Chase and kill him!”

“Throw the spears.”

Spears and arrows flew at Weed. There was no time to think calmly.

“I need to make the Arnin work. Anyway, I don’t know whether they’re alive or dead. Spending their whole lives cooped up and working....”

It was the mindset of someone perfectly exploiting their workforce. After rescuing the Arnin, he would make them work like slaves.

“Escape must just be a dream. They worked all day long and were only given the minimum of food. They will be grateful for someone like me to come and rescue them.”

The doors and windows of the buildings in the fortress weren’t suitable as a prison. They wouldn’t be pampered for 2~3 years but would be made to work for 100 years.

“There won’t be any fresh air or sunlight. When taking into account the characteristics of the Sulleions, they must be

imprisoned underground.....”

Underneath the fortress! That would certainly be the place where they were imprisoned. Until now he had been thinking like a human but the Sulleions also lived underground. Weed sent a whisper to Country Mouse.

-Is there something like a cave in the ground?

-Squeak squeak! There is.

-The location of the entrance?

-Two places. In front of the warriors’ lodging and next to the large building in the centre.

In the meantime, the Sulleion warriors had arrived on Weed’s tower. Weed’s health had already decreased to 46%. The Red Star replenished health and mana but it would become dangerous as the battle was prolonged.

“Blink!”

Weed moved to the large building in the centre.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Pale sometimes saw flames rising from buildings and admired it.

“He is really courageous.....”

His plan to enter the fortress alone! They were good words but if he died then the rescue would fail. The fortress was built on the steep Tubkal peaks so it was really difficult to make it surrender in a siege.

Weed had looked at Yurin’s drawing and made the decision to fight the Sulleions.

“The plan to draw the enemy using the Chaos Warrior can only be used by Weed-nim.”

But it really might be possible for him to return after rescuing the Arnin. Pale had seen many cases where Weed had accomplished a strange success. But even if he thought so, it really was difficult this time.

“Anyway, we have to make sure as much of them gather on the walls as possible. We have to hold them. Pay attention to your vitality and mana while fighting.”

Pale fired arrows towards the heads of the warriors on the walls. The sculptural lifeforms also climbed up the walls and fought. Zephyr and Surka also occupied the walls. They fought with Gernika, Vindex and Seville.

Pale caught sight of a wyvern aiming at an enemy.

“Wy-3, this way!”

Wy-3 who had been circling in the air started flying towards him.

“I’ll go with you.”

Pale and the high elf Eltin rode Wy-3 and flew up into the sky. If an archer had a high position then their attack range and power would become stronger.

He looked down at the spectacle from the wyvern. The King Hydra’s 9 heads were grabbing the arrows and spears while the Death Worm wriggled through the ground and struck the enemies. White Tiger and Cerberus had a competition as they ran along the walls biting the enemies.

The crocodile Nile crawled slowly but when he caught the enemy, he quickly bit them in a few mouthfuls. He was a large crocodile that opened his eyes sleepily while eating the Sulleion warriors! Weed also wound a strap of leather around his body so Nile didn’t receive a lot of damage from the spears.

The sculptural lifeforms had quite a high level. It was amazing watching them fight against the Sulleion lifeforms.

“I really wanted to come to a place like this. It isn’t necessary to worry when following along behind Weed-nim.”

It was on the scale of participating in the pyramid sculpture or fighting the Immortal Legion.

Pale looked over the fortress and fired his arrows. He breathed out as he pulled arrows from his quiver and enjoyed the pleasure of shooting enemy archers.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Kir was a beginner who started in Morata.

“Heh, this place was recommended by others but is this really it?”

The information boards about Royal Road recommended that Morata was the best city for beginners. Even his parents were in Morata.

“Son, you should see Royal Road.”

“Why should I?”

His father said with a deep sigh.

“You don’t have friends.”

“Friends aren’t necessary to live in this world.”

“You might meet a girlfriend while adventuring.”

“Marriage is called the grave of life.”

“...Still, Royal Road by itself is worth it. City life is dreary and insipid. It is possible to feel the spirit of pioneering in Royal Road that isn’t possible in modern times. It is a resort and playground for adults. Many connections can be made in Royal Road so it is also useful.”

“I’m going to pass the civil servant exam.”

“.....”

His son couldn’t understand his real intentions. But Kir felt curious about Royal Road so he started it after all. He read it on the bulletin boards but he was still uncertain about starting in Morata.

“I shouldn’t believe people’s words these days.”

Kir decided to look around Morata. He talked to the guards in the Central Square first.

“You are a human who just started your adventure so it is best not to go too far away. It is better to run simple errands around the square in order to buy a city map.”

Kir ignored their words and toured all over the place. People who trading and entering stores at the market. Merchants were laughing after a successful trade. Some users had thick stomachs and this was evidence of a high ranking merchant.

“Since there are a lot of people buying and selling goods, this seems to be the downtown area. It is a pretty big city.....”

Tourists walked around Morata’s attractions. Kir followed them.

“The city is really beautiful but those rumours seemed to be fanciful nonsense!”

He thought all the stories were exaggerated and climbed the hill with the tourists.

“Kyah, how cool!”

When looking at the city from the hill, the buildings looked amazing. The Arts Centre, Cathedral, Grand Library, sculptures and various European style buildings were present. Architects played an active role so there were few buildings that were similar.

When looking from a high place, it really seemed like a painting of a city. Beyond Hestia’s Forge and the Research Tower, the landscape was very beautiful.

It was a fascinating urban landscape! It was the best thing Kir had seen so far. The smell of the forest was different from the pollution and clogged buildings in reality so it really made his heart pound.

“T-this is a little bit worth seeing. But it still isn’t enough to make me admire it.”

Kir came down to Painter’s Hill. When he looked around, the figure of the painters drawing was very charming. Monsters dripping saliva, an urban landscape and a bloody battle between elves and orcs. Tourist and users paid a high price to buy such pictures.

“It is futile spending money on such things.”

Kir came down the hill and continued walking. Chefs were engaged in business in the streets. It was a place where they could taste the delicacies of the continent.

“I’ll have to try it later on. It is better to eat something delicious. But it will be interesting to see what they taste like.”

Kir drifted towards the place where the shacks were collected. He had read a variety of information on the bulletin boards. The benefits of lower taxes and sculptures, various facilities and a variety of quests!

These were all real but it wasn’t the only thing Morata boasted of.

-There are many pretty girls among Freya's priests.

-When it is just looks, then Morata... Huhuhu.

Many good looking females like treasure are there. This was the decisive reason why he started in Morata but he still doubted the story.

"From what I saw so far... They seem a little pretty."

Kir was tricked into thinking it wasn't that bad as he headed to the shanty village. Yet he saw the form of girls wearing beginner clothes planting potato seeds in the fields. Every shack had a little piece of land where people could plant potatoes or sweet potatoes.

"Well, to be able to meet a pretty girl in a place like this....."

Kir couldn't understand it so he headed further upwards.

Seo-yoon was working in a field with no one there so she took off her mask after she started sweating.

"Keheok!"

Kir felt his heart stop as he saw Seo-yoon. It was the appearance of a goddess level beauty!

“Owaaaah.....”

Kir couldn’t talk.

Seo-yoon was planting potatoes to feed the calves. She was a resident of the kingdom Weed ruled yet she still lived in a shack.

“T-this place is Morata.”

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

-Dungeon: You are the first to discover the Underground Tubkal Fortress.

Rewards: Fame has increased by 2,610.

Experience and item drop rate will double for a week.

The first monster killed of each type will drop the rarest item.

As expected, the hole inside the fortress that Weed entered led to an important underground facility. And 10 elite Sulleion warriors were protecting the entrance.

“Invader, you dare enter a place like this!”

These elite warriors had far higher levels and better equipment. Weed thought it wouldn't be easy as he looked at them.

"10 enemies are quite a lot. Blink!"

He teleported past the elite warriors defending the entrance.

"Kueeek!"

"Kkiyaaaah!"

The elite warriors shrieked as they chased him. The spears they threw flew past Weed and impacted with the ceiling and the floor. This sense of urgency and thrill!

"If I'm caught then I'll die!"

Weed ran with his full strength. He ran to the right every time a crossroads appeared but he tried to survey as many things as possible. He hoped to find the prison cell that the Arnin were trapped in. If he found a closed door then he quickly opened it.

"An unjust human has entered."

"Kill him!"

He only found elite Sulleions in the rooms. They formed a line

behind Weed as they chased him. There were over 100 enemies gathered so it was impossible to fight them and win!

"There are 2 steps to my strategy."

Step 1 was to get away from the enemies.

Step 2 was to run away quickly.

Weed bent his upper body and ran on all fours. It was a movement skill that increased his speed by 60%. He was a little more vulnerable but he would use any method to survive.

"Catch him....."

"Give him as food for our children."

"Should we bake him?"

"He is already slightly baked. He is just a runner."

The Sulleion warriors were discussing how to deal with Weed while chasing him. In fact, this dungeon was no different from their home so Weed could only helplessly get trapped.

"The intruder is coming this way!"

Now warriors even appeared in front of him. Weed changed to the other direction. The warriors were running around so he couldn't go wherever he wished.

"This place is very deep… And I have to choose the most probably place."

Weed looked ahead and selected a direction when there was a fork in the road as he continued running. However there were two elite warriors blocking his way.

"Die!"

Enemies were chasing from behind so he was forced to cancel the Quadruple Run skill while moving forward.

"Close Eyes Tightly!"

-A spear has struck your shoulder.

Health has been greatly reduced.

-A spear has hit your head.

A critical hit!

You have fallen into the chaos state.

When he opened his eyes again, the landscape around him was shaking from the elite warriors behind him. His view was a mess thanks to his state of confusion so it was difficult to find the way.

Even when he ran into a wall, Weed hopelessly looked for an open place and ran. The worst situation was taking place!

'The chaos state will last for another 13 seconds.....'

The elite warriors chasing were closing the gap.

"He is going over there!"

Weed ran against the walls thanks to the chaos state so the chasing warriors were advancing very quickly. This was also their habitat so they took a shortcut and showed up in front of him. In the end, he was forced to carry out a 3 stage operation. He ran forward while protecting his head.

"Close Eyes Tightly!"

Pepepek!

"Close Eyes Tightly!"

Papak!

“Close Eyes Tightly! If you can kill me then kill!”

He continuously pushed the Sulleion warriors away and broke through! Despite his defensive skill, Weed’s health was constantly decreasing.

He utilized the Red Star’s power but that was only a last resort.

Although the passages were narrow, the elite soldiers would keep on gathering and the sculptural lifeforms and his companions wouldn’t last forever. Weed was lacking time.

“Time didn’t pass as quickly when I was working a part time job washing dishes in a restaurant as it is now.

Deolkeong.

“Ah… Intruder. Kill!”

Only Sulleion guards met him every time Weed opened a door.

“Good gracious. There isn’t much health and mana left….”

If he continued constantly breaking through the enemy then he wouldn’t have enough health, mana or time.

Chapter 4: Stone Statue In The City

“Catch him in here and eat!”

The warriors’ morale rose further as Weed ran away. If at least 4 warriors blocked Weed then he would us Blink.

“He won’t have a tough taste! The food will be bad for me.”

“It smells delicious.”

“Over there!”

The monsters raced around after Weed. But the situation right now meant he couldn’t endure it much longer.

-A steel arrow has hit your side.

Weed continued to be injured by the arrows and spears while escaping. He didn’t wear any armour as a Chaos Warrior so his health continued dripping down and even bandages didn’t help. He even banged into walls while running at top speed so his health decreased to below 10%.

It was okay to maintain a low health in a steady hunt but right now it was terribly dangerous.

“I have to really avoid it!”

Weed measured the distance between himself and the Sulleion warriors chasing him. And he cast a skill.

“Blink!”

He teleported into a room he already passed! He hid in a corner of the room and waited for the Sulleion warriors to pass.

“He went that way.”

“That is the place where our leader is. Stop him at all costs!”

Weed waited until he couldn’t hear footsteps anymore.

“I’m lucky. I managed to survive somehow.”

He sensed that he had entered quite a deep place. He dug out the steel arrow lodged in his body and applied herbs to the wound.

-The herb has been burnt so it can only display 37% of the effect.

“My valuable herbs. How much would it be if I sold it to a store.....?”

After the simple treatment, the Red Star quickly restored his

health and mana. His health was 23% and mana 31% when Weed left the corner of the room.

“I’ll just take a little look.”

Tadadadadak!

“He must be out here somewhere.”

“I’m going over there!”

Weed naturally hid in the corner of the room again when he heard the footsteps and cries of the Sulleions.

“I have to recover half of my health.”

Weed looked at the Red Star. This was the first time he used the sword properly. It was like a sword of god with complex magic patterns carved in it. Great attack magic was sealed up in it.

“I can draw out even more of the sword’s power later when my level increases….”

Weed was greedy for the sword. Anyone who saw the Red Star would desire it. The flame attributes increased the combat power by several times. If this sword only had minor side effects then could be used against a dragon.

“I need to be more comfortable. I can’t get caught so I need to move secretly.”

Weed decided to go out to the passages once his health was 46%. He had no choice but to go into danger because time was money.

“Then I need to move onto the next strategy.”

Weed took out a sculpture. It was a sculpture of an elite Sulleion warrior that he carved beforehand! The jaw expressed their long, drooping appearance and there were fine scales at the neck.

“Sculpture Transformation!”

Weed’s body changed from a Chaos Warrior to an elite Sulleion warrior. The Red Star was disarmed and he equipped the bow that he previously acquired as loot. And he left the passage and casually joined with another warrior.

They gave Weed a strange look and examined him from top to bottom.

‘Perhaps I was discovered? Indeed… Come to think of it, Sculpture Transformation doesn’t change the smell.’

Sculpture Transformation wasn’t a complete transformation. There were numerous reasons why a person could be detected and it was difficult to fool species with a keen sense of smell.

But fortunately the Sulleions had no nostrils so they didn't have a sense of smell.

The elite warrior asked.

"You seem to be hurt. Where did that injury come from?"

Weed shook his head and spoke.

"I fought against the intruder."

"Where? Everyone is in an uproar looking for him."

"I ate him."

"Is there any bit left?"

"No. He also tasted bad. By the way....."

Weed carried on the conversation and the elite warrior didn't doubt him. His webbed feet squeaked against the ground and scales covered him as he held a spear.

He learnt to imitate the speciality of a species and their minor mannerisms such as when he transformed into the orc Karichwi. He had no qualms or remorse about lying or scamming.

Weed's standard was enough for him to give a university lecture about it.

"That guy came in to save the slaves called Arnin so more intruders might be coming."

"Ah, those guys? Then we need to protect the prison cell. Let's go quickly."

The elite warrior walked down the passage and chose the right fork. Weed followed with his spear pointed to the ground. It was because he saw injured Sulleions walking this way.

"I am coming too."

"You can rest. There are 10 people there."

"I can still fight. I want to eat more intruders."

"Then let's go."

Weed was guided by the elite warrior and arrived in front of the Arnin's cell. They had gone up 3 storeys rather than down from the room where Weed had hid.

The jail cell that the Arnin were trapped in was quite large. It was guarded by 10 elite warriors and the one accompanying Weed

added one more warrior.

‘Here is another group. If only there were only 1 or 2.’

Weed had to make a judgement. Now that he knew the location of the prison, he could come back or use this chance. He needed to handle it before the turmoil outside ended.

‘Infiltrating here with Sculpture Transformation isn’t hard but it will be difficult to escape with the Arnin.’

Weed chose to break through.

“Calling Death Knight Van Hawk, calling the Vampire Lord Torido!”

There was a dense fog as the Death Knight and Vampire Lord were summoned!

“Master, is it a fight?”

“I don’t want to drink the blood of reptiles… Have you forgotten the classy tastebuds of an aristocrat? A beautiful girl would be good.”

Van Hawk loyally took out his sword but Tori looked around with a frown.

“Fight quickly! They aren’t food.”

The Death Knight and Vampire Lord attacked the elite warriors.

“A betrayal!”

Weed threw his spear and instantly struck two elite warriors with his Daemon’s Sword. But it wasn’t possible to deal a large blow.

The elite warriors had a considerable level. Furthermore, the skin had a special quality so general attacks weren’t effective. Although the limbs were thin, their spears had surprisingly strong power and attack range. 11 elite warriors would be difficult for just Weed and his two summons.

“Van Hawk, there is no time to waste. Fight against many of them. Torido, you return to the back!”

Van Hawk rushed recklessly while blocking the arrows and spears with this sword. A Death Knight wouldn’t back away from a battle. The Sword of Darkness that Weed created also emitted a dark aura.

Torido returned to the back and used curse magic and vampire skills!

“Keeek, this is the nobility of a vampire of the night!”

“Don’t look at his red eyes.”

The Sulleions instinctively feared Torido. Their concentration was low so they fell under his brainwashing magic. Torido showed a power appropriate for a high ranking monster. Weed chose a side. He aimed at one monster on the right.

“Radiant Sword!”

5 sparrows emerged from the Daemon’s Sword and cut the elite warrior! It was the warrior who brought Weed here.

“Kueek, the one I thought was a colleague….”

“Life is just a series of betrayals. That is being an adult.”

“Dirty bastard!”

“Water is valuable so I only wash once a week!”

The warrior that brought Weed died!

“Sword-cloning!”

Afterwards he used his Sword-cloning skill. The only meaning it had was to attract eyes to the fake bodies.

“Concentrate our attacks!”

Weed, Van Hawk and Torido started hunting while his clones lured them. Their formation changed to damaging one target.

“We can’t give them any time. Run them down!”

Weed and Van Hawk’s health dropped by a large amount. However they could fight more easily once 7 warriors remained. Tori restored his health by sucking their blood and started attacking the enemies quickly.

Meanwhile Weed and Van Hawk succeeded in disposing of 2 each. This wasn’t a situation to save mana. There were 3 enemies left but he didn’t know when reinforcements would appear.

After the battle finally ended, he took deep breaths while thinking.

“It wasn’t easy.”

Van Hawk was a wreck while Torido became even paler because the taste didn’t suit him. Weed’s health once again dropped to 7%.

“As expected from the Sword of Darkness and Tempting Vampire Ring I created.”

"....."

In order to succeed in life, he had to make them work! Weed picked up the items from the elite warriors. He couldn't miss any loot because they might be indispensable items.

-You have acquired the Key to the Underground Jail.

This key can be used to open a locked door immediately.

Kkirik.

He could finally meet the Arnin, the sculptural lifeform species created by Emperor Geihar Von Arpen. This was a delightful moment!

"I went through a lot of trouble so I have to make them work for their whole lives!"

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Shin Hye-min was deeply grieved.

"Ahh, the attack on Tubkal Fortress feels fantastic even after the battle at the rocky canyon.

Oh Joo-wan received her words.

“It is a really amazing battle. Seeing a siege taking place against that backdrop is really wonderful.”

Shin Hye-min was a ranger so she was thinking about how much fun it would be if she was there. The sculptural lifeforms were desperately roaring as they fought while the Sulleion warriors fought to protect their home base.

The sculptural lifeforms used skills while the warriors took advantage of the terrain to aggressively defend the fortress. There were many flashy and great scenes.

“Weed didn’t take an adequate rest and just hurriedly plunged in. Did Shin Hye-min anticipate this?”

“Weed’s methods always break expectations.”

“But the battle doesn’t seem to be going like he hoped.”

“Yes, it does seem like that. Despite the large sacrifice at the rocky canyon, there are still quite a large number of Sulleion warriors. At present, it seems impossible to make the fortress surrender.”

“We should assume that today’s attack is a failure. And Weed’s situation will just be exacerbated tomorrow or the day after tomorrow.”

The sculptural lifeforms gave up on climbing up the walls while Pale and his colleagues had switched to defense. They were being pushed back by the endless reinforcements from the caves that opened into Tubkal Fortress.

“Weed-nim will have to rebuild his power.”

It was predetermined by the script to mention the withdrawal but it truly became dangerous after a long time passed. Despite the high levels of Phoenix and Bingryong, there were too many Sulleion warriors. They emerged from narrow caves one after another to participate in the fight.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

When he opened the door, a large number of Arnin sleeping on the ground could be seen. They were sculptural lifeforms living as slaves.

“Who are you?”

The sleeping Arnin woke up and saw Weed.

“I am.....”

Weed concentrated strength into his eyes. He was trying to suppress the tears of joy but a rotten smile couldn’t help forming on his face. He heard the circumstances outside through Irene’s whisper so he said simply.

“Your friends the Ellyons asked a favour of me. It is to help you escape from here.”

“Really?”

The Arnin got up. Even when they did that, they were still quite smaller than the dwarves.

-Quest: Ellyons’ Friends

You have met the Arnin species.

Lead them safely out of Tubkal Peak.

The Arnin’s breeding ability has been restricted until they can live in freedom.

There are a total of 342 currently alive.

You have to return to the Ellyons with the maximum number of Arnins alive.

If more than 10 people return alive then the Ellyons will understand that it is a difficult request.

Now all he needed to do was get out. Weed wrapped bandages

around his body and asked for confirmation.

“Are you able to fight?”

He had prepared a lot of spears and to lend to the Arnin.

“We don’t know how to fight.”

“Then you at least know how to hold a sword. Isn’t that so? Think about it.”

“We don’t know.”

“Even magic or spirit magic is good.”

“We don’t know how to use it.”

It was like taking 342 children who didn’t know how to fight out into a battlefield.

“I guess I have to do it anyway.”

Weed transformed back into the Chaos Warrior Kubichya. It was necessary to change his body into something most suitable for battle. The Red Star was armed once again.

“Follow well. Be careful not to fall behind.”

The moment he was about to leave, the Arnin spoke.

“Excuse me, our animals are also here. It isn’t possible for me to leave here without them.”

“Please bring our animals as well.”

“We took care of them and gave them rice every day so we can’t live alone.”

Ddiring!

-Quest: Ellyons’ Friends

The Arnin are eager to take the animals they raised to escape.

If you try to bring them by force then it is likely to cause a lot of trouble.

If you save the animals then they will thank you sincerely.

Weed gave a deep sigh.

“Did I sell a country in my previous life.....?”

He didn’t know why his life became this twisted. He had to somehow succeed in the quest to rescue the Arnin. Weed licked his lips.

“I will rescue the animals next so just come with me.”

“Really?”

“Yes, of course.”

Weed naturally had no intention of coming back to help. This was a comfortable hunting ground but the others were having difficult against the Sulleions.

“It isn’t possible to do that. If we escape then the Sulleions will grab the animals and eat them.”

“We won’t go along without them.”

Unfortunately his easy lie didn’t work.

“It will be dangerous. It is already difficult with my skills to bring you out. You have to live. Your friends the Ellyons are waiting for you in Morata.”

“I want to raise the animals. I would rather you come back for me after helping them first.”

He came here with such difficulty..... The degree of difficulty for this quest was too high.

'However I can't give up here.....'

The standard of the northern users were high so there should be a lot of people hunting in the Harsel Mountains. But the number of users at the level to hunt here were still small so it was much more efficient to hunt at a safe dungeon or hunting grounds.

The bitterness of going ahead of other users!

The quest was difficult because he couldn't fight back against the continuously propagating Sulleions.

'I can't leave and grow my sculptural lifeforms some more before returning..... It will take too much time.'

The monsters didn't lack intelligence and would also grow like users. Their numbers would grow even more and the defences of the fortress strengthened. So he had to make a decision now.

'If I bring 10 of them back to Morata by force.....'

That was his idea to complete the request. But forcibly taking out 10 Arnin while fighting as well....

"Yes, I will rescue the animals you've raised!"

A plan of desperation!

In the worst case, Weed would escape alone and aim at the next chance or he would kidnap some Arnin. If he brought them by force then the quest wouldn't be a simple success and his high fame would fall.

Intimacy would also fall and he wouldn't be able to make them work for the Arpen Kingdom. But the more he hesitated, the more dangerous it would be for the sculptural lifeforms.

"Thank you very much."

"Where are the animals you raised?"

"It is near here. We will guide you."

Weed led the way with Van Hawk and Torido. He killed any Sulleion warriors before they had the chance to call for reinforcements. His colleagues could lose at any moment so he couldn't feel calm. Then 1 of the Arnin said.

"These guys are unlike how they normally are."

The warriors from underground were busy flocking to the surface.

“The place is just around the corner.”

There were 4 elite warriors guarding the entrance. Weed confirmed the status of his body and briefly took deep breaths.

“Van Hawk, take 3 of them. Torido will quickly take care of 1 and then help you.

“Understood, Master.”

Van Hawk and Torido promptly began hunting. This time there were only 4 and he was using the Red Star so they had no difficult killing the elite warriors and obtaining the key to open the door.

Weed’s eyes became large.

“These guys are.....”

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The battle at Tubkal Peak.

Pale’s vitality and mana were almost at the limit. The sculptural lifeforms fought but they were tired from the endless warriors. They were intimidated by the flying creatures and the King Hydra so the Sulleions didn’t dare go on the offensive. Even in their weary state, Hwaryeong and Bellot continuously attracted the attention of the enemies through playing and dancing.

Pale pulled an arrow out of his quiver and shouted.

“Is there no word from Weed-nim yet?”

He shot the arrow precisely into the forehead of a warrior! He didn’t know if it was because they were defending the fortress or the damage was too large but the warriors were attacking prudently.

Maybe this was even scarier.

The Sulleions were carefully surrounding their strong prey in order to build up their power and get rid of them all at once.

Irene who was treating the health of the sculptural lifeforms replied.

“Wait a moment.”

“We have to retreat. Tell him that now is the time to leave.”

“He said that if we wait a moment, it will all work out.”

“What does that mean.....?”

It was at that moment.

Dozens of griffins flew from the Sulleions' fortress on Tubkal Peak. Numerous saber-toothed tigers were running through the open gates. The Arnin were sitting on the heads of the saber-toothed tigers.

The Sulleions didn't raise docile animals like rabbits, sheep, pigs, chicken or cattle. Instead they raised griffins and saber-toothed tigers to be used as food. The Sulleions also raised them to ride the monsters in the air and on land.

If time was given then they would become more powerfully and be able to expand outside the Harsel Mountains.

The problem was solved as soon as Weed saw the griffins and saber-toothed tigers. By accepting the Arnin's request, he killed two birds with one stone. And the free griffins and saber-toothed tigers attacked the Sulleion warriors at the Arnin's request.

"Kueek, those guys have appeared outside!"

"It is a big deal. A big deal."

The Sulleions were defending the fortress so they couldn't stop the griffins and saber-toothed tigers running away.

"Aim for the bowmen and open up a path for the saber-toothed tigers!"

Under Weed's command, the party managed to retreat safely from Tubkal Peak! The damaged Sulleions couldn't chase after them.

Ddiring!

-The battle against the Sulleions at Tubkal Peak has ended in a draw.

The Sulleions are the rulers of the Harsel Mountains. If you captured their fortress then you would've gained control over the mountain area.

But it is a miracle that you've managed to escape safely with no one dying.

The Sulleions who suffered considerable damage will elect a Warchief and strengthen their defences against another siege.

-Fame has been acquired based on your contribution in battle.

Weed took the sculptural lifeforms and returned to Morata with his colleagues. The griffins and saber-toothed tigers settled down in the area east and south of the Harsel Mountains.

They would keep the Sulleions in check.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

“.....So I’ve returned safely.”

-Thank you very much. I never thought I could meet my friends again.

Ddiring!

-Ellyons’ Friends has been completed.

The sculptor Weed has rescued the Arnin who have been forced into labour by the Sulleions.

-The sculptural lifeform species, the Arnin and Ellyons have settled in the Arpen Kingdom.

The sculptural lifeforms remember the past glories of the Arpen Empire and will work for the kingdom.

You have showed courage, heroic commanding ability and decision making based on respect of life.

-Fame has increased by 2,580.

-Your level has risen.

-The sculptural lifeform species, the Arnin and Ellyons will work

for the kingdom.

-Your degree of intimacy with the sculptural lifeforms has risen.

They won't forget the impression you gave of overcoming huge danger to save them.

-Charisma has increased by 15.

– Leadership has increased by 23.

-You have gained great battle experience.

All combat related stats have increased by 3.

Weed laughed warmly. Judging from recent broadcasts, a person didn't have to be handsome to be popular. He squinted his eyes and laughed despicably.

"I really glad I could meet you."

The Sculptor Master Quest was completed. Instead of getting equipment or items, the Arnin were good at raising animals.

The Arpen Kingdom grew livestock that could be used in leather, meat, food etc. so they were useful for many areas of development.

‘I can make them work forever.’

They sneaked from the Sulleions’ possession and came to Weed. The only thing left was to exploit them from now on.

“Anyway, it is better in my kingdom.”

Weed’s Arpen Kingdom in the north was emerging as a country cantered on beginners.

If he comprehensively looked at the kingdom’s economic power, military power and overall power, it was no made for the traditionally strong Central Continent. The only way to overcome it was exploitation!

In fact, the situation surrounding Weed wasn’t that good.

Bardray and the Hermes Guild were consolidating the Haven and Kallamore Kingdoms and the scale was enough to be called an Empire. After the defeat of the Black Lion Guild, they also controlled the Tullen Kingdom through the Beden Guild. They had the best economic power and military power.

They were also users with high level rankings. There were rumours that the conditions to join the Hermes Guild were beyond imagination. Their power was equal to the Cloud Guild, Roam Guild and Black Sword mercenary group combined. They were a guild designed to rule kingdoms.

There was no way the Arpen Kingdom could compare to their power, funding ability and military troops.

“They will never offer me a contract. The Hermes Guild would have to go back on a lot if they did that.”

This point was really clear to Weed. The Hermes Guild had sharpened their swords at him so he couldn’t go back after crossing the river. The Arpen kingdom was still weak but his subordinates would do a lot of good work and the Sculpting Master Quest would have its own income.

Weed had just fulfilled the 14th stage of his Master Quest. There wasn’t much left until he became a true Class Master.

“It would be a huge amount of money if I’m successful first!”

The broadcasting stations would pay a large reward in order to show the first Class Master. That role should be kept for him when it happens.

Then Weed’s backpack opened and a sculpture of a deer that he hadn’t given life to walked out.

The Baby Deer, the face was clear so he thought it could be sold for a decent price. There were certain forms that were sometimes the most popular.

The Baby Deer said.

“Sculptor-nim who can breathe life into art.”

Weed became sorry every time he was praised as an artist. It was an occupation that needed creativity or else he would face endless anguish. When were interviewed in broadcasts, it was a big topic about how they chose the occupation of sculptor. He couldn’t say that he chose the profession by mistake and since then worked hard to live.

But Weed answered with a serious face.

“Yes. Speak, Deer.”

“I’m thankful that you cherish sculptures in your heart.”

“……”

Weed was a little embarrassed by the words.

“Thank you for calling the life in us and making sure that we can live.”

“You don’t have to do that. This is just something I have to do. I want the world to see a cute sculpture like you.”

It was like the harmonious dialogue between a father and daughter. Yellowy standing next to him who was often called rib

eye steak resented his words.

“A sculptor like you is the only one who can understand the heart of the sculptures. Therefore I have something to ask you. Will you please learn more about us sculptures?”

Ddiring!

-Sculpture’s Eyes

The new challenge as a sculptor is to expand your understanding of the sculptures.

Trap your body in a sculpture where not even the wind can be felt.

If you watch the world through the eyes of a sculpture for 1 month then you will learn many things.

Difficulty Level: Sculpting Master Quest

Quest Restriction: Level 8 Advanced Sculpting

If the sculpture is destroyed by animals or people then you will fail.

If you release the skill ‘Sculpture Formation’ then you will fail.

-You have acquired the Sculpture Formation skill.

Sculpture Formation: Your body is made into a sculpture.

Stone will form around your body when the skill is first cast. You will be unable to move for 1 month while the skill is in duration.

Even if the connection is ended, the stone statue will remain intact with the durability depending on your art stat.

“Hmm.”

Weed finished his calculations for the 15th quest in an instant. He was lucky since it was a Sculpting Master Quest almost impossible to fail. He could just comfortably relax and spend the next month as a stone sculpture.

Royal Road was four times quicker than reality so it actually wouldn’t take that long.

Weed smiled and said.

“I’m eager to better understand your heart. I will take this chance to learn.”

-You have accepted the quest.

“Thank you. For accepting my request.”

The Baby Deer once again returned to being a sculpture.

The eyes of a wooden doll! Normally the average was 1 gold but the taxes meant it would be at least 4 gold.

And Weed’s complaints started.

“The sculptor profession gives me trouble every time.”

Anyway, he needed to do the quest. He should quickly bring it to an end.

‘At least there doesn’t seem to be any significant risk.’

He should take a wyvern and fly to a cliff before using the skill.

“No. Something terrible might happen.”

After the Great Disaster Nature Sculpting that brought down the rocky canyon, he realized that a cliff definitely wasn’t safe.

“The plains won’t work since monsters will be there. The middle of the sea is also dangerous.....”

There were also disasters at sea. Storms and unimaginable dangers were scattered out at sea. He only needed to look in Morata's library to see many misadventures related to the sea. Nowadays, the beach and Port Varna had been created around Morata. There were many users enjoying marine adventures, fishing, swimming etc.

"I can't believe in the people in this world... Where should I spend my 1 month?"

Weed decided on the inside of Morata. When considering monsters and nature, Morata was judged to be the safest place.

"It needs to be there for 1 month."

There were plenty of sculptures displayed in the city. Sculptors worked in the street but there were also many in the Art Centre and the Cathedral.

"I need to be just another statue on the street."

Weed knew that he shouldn't inform anyone of this. The quest itself wasn't difficult but there were many people with grudges against him.

"There is the Hermes Guild and users who received damage from me in Continent of Magic. There should be at least 100,000~200,000?"

The grudge was on the scale of a small city!

“They will come flocking if they learn of this. They will thoroughly interfere.”

Weed walked towards a dim place in Morata. When facing the vampires in the past, he had done much hunting here but the city had developed since then. The newly constructed buildings made it feel different every time he came to Morata.

“A place with no people would be good. A quiet place where I won’t receive interference.”

There was nowhere in Morata where there weren’t people. It had grown into a city and was now the capital of a kingdom. Carriages passed through and beginners ran around.

Weed hid his face behind a robe and passed the central lanes. He went to Morata’s outskirts and decided on a side street going up a hill.

“This place is good. Not many people around.....”

He carved a sculpture and waited for 1 hour but no one passed by. Weed wore the Goddess’ Knight Armour, Daemon’s Sword, Baharan’s Bracelet and the Elegant Black Helmet of a Young Noble before using the skill.

“Sculpture Formation!”

-Sculpture Formation skill has been used.

You can’t move while the skill is active.

He became a stone statue from his foot upwards. After his entire body became stone, he couldn’t move so it felt a little stuffy. He looked at the world through the sculpture’s eyes but even when surveying the area restlessly, the stone eyes didn’t move.

‘This is perfect and no one will know.’

Weed was delighted to be the only one with the secret. And after 10 minutes passed.

Hwiing.

Several leaves fell onto the lane. It was a really quiet place in Morata so it was extremely boring. All he could do was watch the landscape change and the sparrows flying past.

‘Anyway, it will be good if I succeed in the quest. I’d like it to rain.’

Weed found it boring but still maintained his connection. However he needed to eat rice and also clean. Taking care of chores and the physiological aspects of his body were all essential parts of living as a human!

‘Well, it isn’t a big deal. Morata is a safe place. I guess I’ll go clean.’

Weed exited the game.

Chapter 5: Black Knight's Route

Various users on the Versailles Continent were busy doing their Class Quest.

The so called Rankers! They had the highest level and class skills so the users were excited about that fact itself.

"Did you see Chase-nim?"

"Kyah! He didn't waver for even 1 second and just entered the cemetery at midnight."

"He seems to be seeking a rusty iron sculpture."

While people were going off on adventures to become a Class Master, the users were looking on with large interest. Then CTS Media broke an exclusive scoop.

"We've just obtain information on the closest person to become a Class Master."

"Yoo Hye-na ssi, how interesting. Who is it?"

"Yes, I'll let you know soon. If I say he is a dwarf then everyone will probably know."

The blacksmith in Kuruso, Fabio! It was an exclusive scoop that he almost mastered his skill.

He made it this far without doing any quests and stayed in his forge making equipment. He was considered to be the best blacksmith and CTS Media obtained reliable information that he was close to becoming a master craftsman.

“Ah... If it is Blacksmith Fabio then the likelihood is high. Yoo Hye-na ssi, but I haven’t heard any news about his Class Master Quests.”

“I checked and he hasn’t even started his Master Quest. His only purpose seems to be raising his skill to reach master level.”

After the broadcast, users eagerly went to Kuruso in the Thor Kingdom to receive these weapons. The weapon of a Blacksmith Master!

The value and rarity was beyond imagination so it was difficult to even settle on a high price. If Fabio mastered the blacksmith skill first then he would receive great glory.

It was the same for the first person to finish the Master Quest.

Other famous users’ challenges were broadcasted in real time and the Master Quest became increasingly competitive.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Bardray had advanced to the 16th stage of his Master Quest.

“Telmedun Knights, I will leave the castle’s defences to you.”

“Please watch carefully. We will cut off the head of the rebel army.”

Bardray’s knights and infantry division were victorious in battle and earned enormous compensation. They carried on mercenary activities and cruelly plundered cities! The knights were heavily armed and trained the infantry. He recruited talented boys from cities and towns as knights.

Bardray was building a place in the history books of the Versailles Continent!

The knights and infantry were raised on sharpened swords.

The Knights of Telmedun.

The infantry battalion of Telmedun.

65 knights and 4,000 infantry!

They were currently employed on the side of the Fontainebleau Castle to take care of a rebel army. Bardray had the authority to command all the troops.

“I like this.”

Bardray decided after examining the terrain of Fontainebleau Castle and village.

“The thick and high castle walls are good for defending and it is a rich place.”

When the rebels tried to invade, the knights repelled them. The Telmedun Knights were raised to feel no fear and brutally killed the enemies, even those that surrendered.

And there was a banquet to celebrate their victory.

“Telmedun Knights, what are your dreams?”

When the Lord asked, Bardray took out his sword and said.

“A strong person has everything. My dream is to become stronger.”

The other Telmedun Knights also pulled out their swords and made the same promise.

“Kuaaak!”

“Treachery! Protect the Lord!”

“Guards!”

The banquet hall where musicians played and exotic foods were arranged became a mess of blood. The infantry who were waiting in the hallway with their crossbows defended against the army.

Bardray took control of Fontainebleau Castle.

Ddiring!

-The Bloody Knights has been completed.

The Telmedun Knights have captured Fontainebleau Castle.

The knights have accomplished glorious achievements on the battlefield and their disregard about spilling blood makes them an existence that can’t be ignored.

-Fame has increased by 3,329.

-You have failed to obtain Honour with this quest. Dignity and Honour have decreased by 13.

-The loyalty of the knights and infantry has fallen due to the cowardly actions. The reputation of the Dale Kingdom has fallen.

-Strength has increased by 11.

-Fighting Spirit has increased by 19.

The Black Knight's 16th quest was completed!

Normally he would render services to high ranking nobles or royalty and gain territories. But even if wonderful services were rendered and a large war won, there was no guarantee he could get a good territory. Therefore Bardray just took it away using force.

A general knight thought very highly of loyalty and honour. Those things didn't matter to a Black Knight who endlessly pursued strength and power.

"I have to continue to make them train."

The quest was finished but Bardray had no intention of stopping the training of the knights and infantry. The Black Knight's quests were related to battle so the existence of a knights division was essential.

The Telmedun Knights' destiny was to be forged for Bardray's use.

"And now I have to....."

Bardray closed his eyes. The next Black Knight's quest would appear when he closed his eyes. It was like something was urging on desire.

Wide burning plains.

Screams were heard as a fortress collapsed.

The Telmedun knights and infantry cruelly slaughtered everyone.

The army Bardray raised was destroying everything.

It was revenge on the king that deserted him.

Ddiring!

-Black Knight's Route

The Black Knight offers his loyalty to no one. You are naturally walking your path as retaliation against the king.

You have an endless greed for power.

You use everything you can to get what you want. And it is possible to obtain even stronger power after accomplishing your goal.

But this isn’t a gift given to the righteous.....

Level of Difficulty: Black Knight Master Quest.

Quest Restrictions: Level 9 Advanced Sword Mastery.

Knights division needed.

-A secret sword technique can be created through this quest.

A new technique will be born depending on the behaviours and actions shown the quest.

The creation of a new skill was born from the process of completing a Class Master Quest. It was a technique that only belonged to Bardray, the new Black Knight Master.

-You lack the necessary skill proficiency in Sword Mastery to start the quest.

It isn’t possible to complete the quest yet.

Bardray’s forehead contorted.

“That’s too bad.”

His Sword Mastery skill was only level 8 advanced. He needed 10% more to increase the proficiency. He wasn't able to start the quest or create a new secret technique yet.

In front of Bardray, the form of Fontainebleau Castle distorted to become the Telmedun knights kneeling. When he pushed, they disappeared like fog hit by sunlight and he returned to Haven Kingdom's capital, Aren Castle.

He could hardly complain because he wasn't qualified to complete the quest.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Tailor Drago.

He was one of the continent's top three tailors including Cadmus. He travelled to the north after hearing that Morata was becoming the centre of sewing.

"This has the best cloth weaving technique. The leather working too, it really is the best in the continent."

Morata was considered the best in sewing since the time of the Niflheim Empire.

However it had been some time since the days of the Niflheim Empire and the Central Continent had gone ahead in culture, finance and military power. Due to the cold and monsters, this

area had been closed off from the rest of the continent. Morata especially excelled in handling leather and cloth.

Thanks to the dwarves from Thor Kingdom, the elves and the barbarians, this place now boasted a huge productivity.

The southern continent was a civilization of mysterious magic while the west contained strong tribal nations. These days the entire continent was being built up through technology and trade.

Some kingdoms were now declining thanks to the Embinyu Church, monsters and other unknown reasons. On the other hand, Morata was currently flourishing ad this was a large blessing for tailors.

Drago owned a costume store in Morata. People came to Bingryong Square in Morata to order clothes from him. Tailor Drago was a specialist in women's clothes. He boasted of his ability when he came to Morata and increased his customers.

His customers included high level adventurers, merchants and professional mercenaries. Some were regular customers in the past from the Central Continent who placed an order for some clothes.

His specialty was using the best fabrics for coy exposure. Drago and Cadmus were tailors that diligently made clothes in Morata.

Ddiring!

-You are the leading trend in fashionable clothes in Morata.

Your luxury clothes have been registered as a specialty of Morata.

A tailor who put in the effort could have their products registered as a specialty. A tailor was a respected occupation in Morata so fabric and leather were developed for them.

Luxury clothes registered as a specialty could be sold to aristocrats or magicians.

“Robe specialty store. There are different designs and patterns depending on the level and magic.”

“Cloaks that flutter in the wind as well. Cloaks specializing in agility can be custom made.”

“Pants. There are light and elastic so they won’t feel uncomfortable when hunting. Made from the finest Morata fabric that have basic defense, are airy and will block rainwater.”

The desire that people had for clothes never ended. It was to the extent that they wore mountain climbing clothes suitable for the Alps or Himalayas for the hill at the back of the village.

In Versailles Continent they had to fight monsters so they weren’t conscious of the price when buying slightly better clothes. They even wore clothes with magic resistance to hunt deer.

Thus the tax revenue from Morata's tailors was quite large. Drago's business in Morata was continuing to prosper.

"Now my sewing skill is advanced level 8."

He made a dress with jewels and advanced one proficiency level. There were many bards and dancers in Morata so a lot of related clothing orders came in. Hwaryeong was also one of his regular customers.

"I'm not qualified thanks to reaching advanced level 8... Should I challenge the Tailor's Master Quest?"

Drago was fairly unknown in order industries. He was a blue collar man so it was difficult to gain a name through adventures like Weed. The reality was that tailors weren't as popular as blacksmiths. The majority of battle affiliated classes preferred armour over leather clothes.

"It is fine if I come out nicely on broadcast. Then I can sell my clothes for an even higher value."

Drago decided to start the Tailor Master Quest. He went to the Tailor's Guild in the middle of the night and spoke to an instructor.

"I know how to dress a person and now I wish to create the best clothes."

He started the Tailor Master Quest with great expectations!

“Tailor, so far you’ve made a lot of clothes for many people.”

Drago sorted the fabric, made the clothes and gained money so it was natural. He made dozens of clothes daily. When receiving an order, it was possible to make many of the same designs for a guild rather than a personal order. There were also things like the Grass Porridge Cult uniforms that he always needed to have hundreds in stock.

“As a tailor it is really important to be faithful to the basic work. Because clothing made incorrectly would have no choice but to feel uncomfortable when someone wears it.”

“I think so as well.”

“The basics are required to walk steadily along a tailor’s path. If you go to the guild’s warehouse and sew 100,000 doll eyes then you will definitely improve in the basics.”

Ddiring!

-100,000 Dolls’ Eyes

Meticulously sew eyes onto dolls.

If you distribute the completed dolls to Morata's children then they will be very delighted.

Level of Difficulty: Sewing Master Quest.

Quest Restrictions: Level 8 Advanced Sewing.

Defective products must be less than 20.

If the quest fails then you will need to start from scratch.

"A-a quest like this at the very beginning....."

A dark future was in front of Drago.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Weed connected on a semi-regular basis as time passed but nothing special happened. Leaves fell on his head and birds also sat down to play.

'This quest is indeed too easy. It is only a matter of time until I succeed.'

Morning, lunch and evening.

Very little changed in his little corner as the set rose and set over

his statue.

‘I have to finish it easily so I can bring my Master Quest to an end.’

Six days passed with nothing happening. The only thing he could do was watch the surroundings so Weed was bored. Even if the hill had a good view of the beach, it became tedious as time passed. It was the outskirts so Weed couldn’t see most of Morata.

‘There isn’t anything serious today either.’

He looked for movement before deciding to go exercise at the dojang and catch up on housework. Therefore he exited early.

And some people approached after 20 minutes had passed.

“Is this the way to go out to the fox hunting ground?”

“It was definitely in this area.....”

“It has been blocked.”

“I guess we can’t see any foxes today.”

4 beginners were walking with ropes and traps. They received a quest to collect fox leather and tails so they chose a shortcut but

went to the wrong place.

“It clearly isn’t here so let’s go somewhere else.”

“Eh? There is a sculpture here.”

“It is common to see sculptures in Morata.”

“Look closer. Doesn’t it seem like a sculpture of King Weed?”

Ddiring!

-You have appreciated Sculptor Weed.

Weed has great fame as an adventurer, sculptor and king.

He left behind a sculpture of himself.

It is possible to feel Weed’s courage, honour and leadership from its appearance.

Health, Mana and Vitality recovery rate will increase by 37% for a day.

The effect of sculpting will increase by 6%.

An adventurer’s skill level in dungeons will increase by 1.

Leadership has increased by 29.

Movement speed has increased by 12%.

Fame will increase by an extra 20% when completing a hunt or quest.

When fulfilling a special request from the residents of the Arpen Kingdom, the nation’s achievements have increased by an extra 50%.

All stats have risen by 9.

The sculpture is imbued with blessings of an intense light that will inhibit the activity of dark monsters nearby.

As a cultural relic, the area’s political power has expanded.

All stats related to combat, adventuring and art have gone up by 1 thanks to the great hero sculpture.

“It’s not a joke, this.....”

“It was hiding in a place like this! A complete treasure.”

The beginners carefully touched the sculpture.

“The human body ratio is really amazing. The legs are a little short but.....”

“If the colour wasn’t darker then I’ll really think it was alive. It looks really similar.”

After surveying the sculpture, the beginners realized that it wasn’t stuck to the ground.

“Should we take it?”

“It is too valuable to be here so let’s exhibit it in the square. Then a lot of people will be able to see it.”

However the weight of the sculpture was too much for 4 beginners.

“I’ll go and bring some people. Protect it.”

“Yes. I understand. Hurry!”

One beginner ran to the Central Square and exclaimed.

“A statue of Weed-nim has been discovered! It is a tremendous piece of work but we can’t bring it by ourselves. Someone come

and help!”

There were people engaged in business, tourists, people looking for a party or just talking etc.

Many of them turned towards him.

“For real?”

“There is no reason for me to lie. It is in the city!”

“Let’s go.”

“Grass Porridge Cult, go quickly!”

2,000 people left the Central Square at once! Stats would rise when looking at the sculpture so people who were going hunting came along as well.

“What is it?” What’s up with that?”

“A statue of Weed-nim has been found.”

“Really?”

The people increased further! The lane next to the hill became filled with people.

“It really is a sculpture of Weed-nim. It is his sculpture.”

“Don’t push from behind!”

“First let’s carry this to the square. Warriors with a lot of strength should come out first.”

“This is just as important as carrying stones for the Garden of the Gods or the pyramid! Only 20 people come forward.”

A tailor covered the sculpture with a cloth. And the strong warriors carried the sculpture!

“Clear the way in front!”

“Please get out of the way.”

It was a delicate packing movement that required a considerable amount of direction.

The sculpture of Weed was installed next to the altar and fountain in Central Square that could be seen from a far distance.

Chapter 6: Statue In The Square

When Weed had connected again, everything had changed. Central Square was narrower than Bingryong Square and Light Square but it was the most crowded place.

‘Keheok! Why am I here....?’

Weed was confused but people were just engaged in business like usual. Beginners were filling buckets with water and looking at the sculptures as they passed by.

“This sculpture was found?”

“Yes. It looks just like the real thing.”

“I’d like to touch it.....”

Two females were looking at the sculpture from close by.

“But the height isn’t very tall.”

“The face also seems ordinary.”

The female users left and beginners wearing the default beginners’ clothes appeared.

“Weed-nim, I will follow Weed-nim and live eagerly. Please watch me in the future.”

Merchants who finished their business folded up their stall and talked to others.

“Thank you very much for helping develop Morata. I’ve had fun doing it.”

Weed was a statue so he held still without any movement. The merchants stood next to the altar and stared at the sculpture with a serious face.

Warriors and adventurers hunting in parties also approached. In Morata it was basic to appreciate an artwork before exiting the city. If they didn’t appreciate a statue or painting before going hunting then they would be reviled.

“It is the first time I’m visiting this place. I went to hunt in a far place and died but I still enjoyed it.”

They never imagined that the sculpture was actually Weed frozen in stone.

A short dwarf came as well.

“Kyah! I’ve travelled throughout the continent and Morata is the

first place where I've tasted such good beer. I'm really thankful that such a lively place has been created."

Older uncles and aunties holding hands also came to see the sculpture.

"I'm from the Grass Porridge Cult."

"Hooray King Weed!"

Some users who liked Weed didn't come empty handed. They left wild flowers and grass from hunting outside under the statue. Even those who disconnected and came in again, they admired the sculpture and talked about the development of the Arpen Kingdom.

"It is good to be a resident of the Arpen Kingdom. Indeed."

"Yes. I told you it was right to enter this kingdom. There's no place like this on the continent."

The form of beginners just starting Royal Road could be seen running around Central Square. It wasn't possible to feel boredom when seeing people moving brightly.

People looking for a party to hunt or someone to trade with were also present in the Central Square. Bards also performed in public with instruments.

Weed's heart was also peaceful as he heard the music.

'The residents are enjoying themselves... And there is business even in the middle of the night. The merchants are earning a large sum of money.'

He was really happy as a king.

'This is perfect for taxes.'

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

A secret meeting of the Grass Porridge Cult.

"The maintenance of facilities is necessary for business in Ekwinok village."

"There is a request for the architect Monbert. Extending the commercial buildings will raise the scale of the market in the short term."

"Yusellin village, there isn't anything special right now but it has high growth potential thanks to a dungeon."

"Should we dispatch adventurers so that it fits the characteristics of a pioneering village?"

“Log-nim, I heard that recently you couldn’t do you job thanks to a quest so I’m sorry for asking you this favour.”

“Thanks to the increasing number of people moving, the village of shacks are growing.

“A construction site for shabby hours has already been prepared on the steep hill. We don’t have to specifically worry about that for the moment.”

The Grass Porridge Cult was proud of the era of prosperity. It was impossible to even guess the size now as it was natural for users to join the Grass Porridge Cult when they started in the Arpen Kingdom.

The Grass Porridge believers had deep admiration every time Weed governed wisely.

“The Grand Buildings were completed on our behalf. Let’s use it eagerly!”

“I really think that there is only Weed-nim.”

The other lords were compared to him.

“The lord of Boron village destroyed the castle to build a new one.”

“It is simply nonsense. Weed-nim is like a giant, black star. Tsk tsk.”

“If that money was used by Weed-nim then he would’ve built another building.”

“Did you hear that Dians village had their taxes increased by 2%?”

“Are they just going to keep on raising taxes?”

“So terrible!”

The source of the members’ loyalty was these talks. Weed was sincerely respected by the Grass Porridge Cult.

While other people were facing war, destruction and unfavourable taxes, Morata was the only favourable place to live on the Versailles Continent. The wonderful King Weed who illuminated the world!

“There are many things more delicious than grass porridge. We’re not cows so we can’t live just on grass porridge. I’m already at the level where I can drink bean soup or eat steak. I really was stupid.”

It was the confession of a beginner who started in Morata.

“I had forgotten for a while. The reason why Weed-nim gave us grass porridge!”

“Grass porridge! Grass porridge! Grass porridge!”

“The Grass Porridge’s spirit that symbolizes freedom will continue from now on. Even if we have warm meat soup, we can’t forget the stingy and bitter taste of grass porridge!”

“Hooray Grass Porridge Cult!”

Grass porridge might be a meal for beginners but it was also a symbol of freedom.

“We are like grass that is stepped on. One root is easily pulled out but if we gather together then we can accomplish anything. Follow Weed-nim!”

“Grass porridge, grass porridge, grass porridge!”

“It’s not just grass. It is the combination of our effort to grow!”

“Grass porridge, grass porridge, grass porridge!”

The Grass Porridge Cult members from Morata were distributed throughout the north.

— Weed-nim, a lot of handymen are necessary.

— It doesn’t matter if I have to eat grass porridge.

It was an absurd situation when considering that Mapan had participated in setting the foundation in the past. After the Arpen Kingdom was founded, the Grass Porridge Cult members actively looked for work. Morata was receiving a huge influx of people in a very limited land but the city was strengthened to be comparable to a kingdom.

“The town should develop more quickly. We can’t allow a situation to form that will require Weed-nim’s attention.”

“Many people are already working but we need someone to manage the roads and villages. Weed-nim has a lot to do since being killed by Bardray.”

“That’s our fault. We should’ve come out earlier!”

The Grass Porridge Cult started clearing mines, building, hunting and adventuring in the territory of the Arpen Kingdom.

“Bamboo Shoots Porridge unit. Let’s hunt near Rubens River today. We have to take the lead for the recovery of peace. Go and gather the alumni.”

“Bamboo Shoots users gather here!”

“Toadstool unit, what are you doing? Monsters are invading Staen Castle! Let’s go right now!”

“Wooo, catch everything!”

In the past it was a gathering of beginners but over time their overall levels rose. Considerable monsters of their level were wandering the plains while they invested in buildings or restoring peace.

Bold investment and time were needed for the villages to develop and the Arpen Kingdom to expand. The development process would be reduced by the accumulated power of the users.

“Lord, you have to pay back His Majesty’s grace. As an architect I think you should name a square after Weed-nim.”

“This artwork here.”

“Business will be for one or two days. Should I open the first general store in Armang village? If I trade for a week then I’ll be able to recoup my investment.”

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

A small guild from the Central Continent moved to Arpen

Kingdom. They wanted to be included in the Grass Porridge Cult as well.

"Do we really have to throw away our guild's identity in order to join the Grass Porridge Cult?"

"Guild Master-nim, it is required in the Arpen Kingdom."

"Are there any restrictions on hunting grounds or anything else? But I've never heard about anything belonging exclusively to the Grass Porridge Cult."

The users that migrated from the Central Continent were tired of such persecution. They came to the north but if there were restrictions then it would be very unfortunate.

"Nothing like that. Full members of the Grass Porridge Cult will receive a 5% discount at all restaurants in the city."

"Is it the Lord's restaurant?"

"No. Most of the restaurant owners are Grass Porridge members so we receive benefits. It also comes with more side dishes. And you will receive a 10% discount when purchasing hunting items from merchants."

"That's fine."

“You will get a discount when renting a horse or carriage and the earliest start time for performances will be available at half price.”

“Is that all?”

“A discount when buying paintings and sculptures! We also provide information about adventuring and hunting and provide credit security for businesses. If there is a difficult quest then we are happy to go together.”

The Grass Porridge Cult contained considerable benefits!

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The masked Seo-yoon was walking around Bingryong Square.

“Soft fur coat for sale. You are able to wear it over armour. The lowest price is 390 gold.”

“Feel free to look around. All items necessary for hunting are here. Second hand goods also available.”

“Fresh fish jerky! The taste when chewing is different. The fish jerky can be chewed in battle to give a feeling of fullness.”

She approached a merchant engaged in business.

“Excuse me, where can I buy tableware and furniture?”

“Are you buying for a shack?”

“Yes.”

“There are many items for the mud houses sold in this area. The items to decorate the shack are sold in Bull Square.”

“Thank you.”

The merchant heard a beautiful and warm voice. It was a voice that gave off the feeling of beauty for some reason. Seo-yoon headed to Bull Square to buy tableware and furniture that would match a shack.

Making furniture was also a side job for sculptors. If they used tree logs then they could carve desks, beds, chairs, dining tables and sofas etc. But apart from design, durability was also an important part.

“Oppa, this is a lion.”

Couples also came to buy a wide variety of goods to decorate their shacks. They could find decorations for the living room, bedroom, kitchen, den etc. at a fairly decent price. After decorating the house, they could rest and also show it off to friends so it was a temptation they couldn’t overlook.

Seo-yoon picked various goods but realized there was some missing.

“The items you’re looking for… You have quite an eye. They are a bit expensive. If you go to Central Square then the merchant Anders will be selling them.”

While searching for the goods in Central Square, Seo-yoon found Weed’s sculpture near the fountain.

“……”

She knew that it looked exactly like Weed. Seo-yoon watched and waited for the group of people watching the sculpture to pass before going forward.

From up close it looked exactly like Weed.

“……”

Even though it was night time, Seo-yoon bought goods from Central Square and spent time there. There was nothing to do to kill time except for shopping.

In Central Square there were miscellaneous goods and attractions worth seeing. Time wasn’t fixed but it was normal for pubs to be busy in the evening and for people to go hunting in the morning.

It was a little quiet because it was evening but Central Square was a market that was open 24 hours. In the morning dishes like bear barbecue were available so the market was even more popular.

“There is a performance by Hairen at the venue.”

“She has already returned to Morata?”

“Let’s go quickly!”

Lots of players went to see the performance of a popular female bard. The people’s interest in the sculpture of Weed was reduced.

When Weed’s sculpture had first been on display, Central Square was swarmed with spectators. The ripple effect meant that the sales of merchants in Central Square increased by as much as 10 times.

Unlike other cities, Morata was rich in cultural benefits. The beginners and high level users could both get stats from the sculpture of Weed. But it had been on display for 10 days in Central Square so the attention fell as time passed.

However, there were still busy periods where a line was required to see it.

Seo-yoon secretly approached the sculpture and looked around.

Magic illumination was everywhere although it was night so the square was dim.

'Should I really?'

Her heart jumped wildly in her chest. Seo-yoon lightly raised her face that was covered with a mask.

As the moonlight shone on her face at that moment, Seo-yoon lightly kissed the sculpture.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Lee Hyun connected to the item auction site after a long time. Nowadays, his source of income was the fees from the broadcastings stations rather than the sale of items.

"Hrmm, the prices of the items haven't fallen as much as I thought."

This was the first thing he had been worried about with Royal Road. If there were no new users then the price of the item was bound to drop.

However Royal Road was attracting users exponentially. The ridiculously fast growth of the Arpen Kingdom was proof of the strength of beginners under level 50. The power was shabby but the beginners showed a wonderful strength when gathered!

Leather from beasts was being supplied on a daily business so the sewing and leather industry were developing every day. Necessary goods for beginners were also procured so commercial activity was brisk.

“It will be okay if I sell my items a bit later.’

Lee Hyun regulated the timing of sales. The market price fluctuated within several minutes but if people were lined up for it then the price would jump.

Useful weapons were found from hunting and new combat methods developed.

While combat affiliated professions were most popular in Royal Road, professions like thieves or adventurers were also indispensable. Large and thick shields were useful in prolonged battles against monsters with strong attack power.

However, a magician or archer was integral members of a party to shave down the enemy’s health. If they had the blessings of priests then the knights didn’t’t need to bother with the shield.

Therefore the prices of shields had fallen into a slump. The shields were needed for sieges or dungeons so they were still consumed to a certain extent.

“The magic items are still expensive... It isn’t good to be a

magician.”

The price of exclusive magician items transcending imagination! NPCs tended to have a good impression of magicians due to their high intellectual ability.

In a hunting party they just fired magic attacks from behind. There were flashy effects and tremendous damage from spells requiring memorization so magicians were a very popular profession. They also had a variety of secondary magic such as flying through air, teleporting or walking on water so it was an interesting profession.

But magic items were really difficult to make and the equipment was expensive so many struggled.

“It still isn’t time to sell Barkhan’s full set.”

The necromancer goods were still at a low or medium level so he needed to wait a while before selling Barkhan’s set. If Lee Hyun sold the items then there would be a huge uproar on the auction site.

He was comfortably exploring the auction site when he saw a product that was causing a huge shake.

Tallock’s Armour.

“Don’t tell me……”

He clicked on the auction. A familiar item appeared! It was an item that he repaired and polished daily.

-Wasn't this armour on television?

-The armour that Weed the God of War used?

-Take a look at the ID of the person selling it.

-It is Bardray.

-A perfect jackpot.

The starting price for Tallock's Armour was 1.3 million won! It wasn't a low price but many people were raising the bidding.

It had a variety of options but the level limit of 350 was relatively low. The fact that it reached 3.7 million won was due to the fact that Weed wore the armour!

The auction ended in 5 days so the price was likely to go even higher.

Lee Hyun bit his lip.

"Bardray, that bastard....."

Bardray was regarded as the strongest warrior on the continent and respected as a superior user. They were enemies but Weed didn't have hostile feelings towards him.

However the sight of the auction upset his stomach!

"Bardray, later I will definitely kill you. And....."

Lee Hyun would get revenge in more than one way.

"I will also take an item away and sell it for a high price!"

It was enough to make Lee Hyun's body feel weak. His anger at the loss of profit!

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The road to Korea University.

Lee Hyun took the bus. Usually he walked but he took the bus to save time and now he regretted it.

He met a junior from his department on the bus.

"Sunbae-nim, hello. Are you going to school?"

“Yes.”

The one who greeted Lee Hyun was the junior that followed Choi Sang-jun. In Royal Road, they had also hunted together in the Melbourne Mine.

“Do you have time to eat rice with me? I’d really like to hear about your adventures.”

“I ate breakfast.”

“It is lunch time. Do you want to enjoy the tonkatsu at the Humanities Hall cafeteria? It is delicious.”

“I’d like to do that but I’m only drinking water these days because of a stomach ulcer. I can’t have greasy food.”

“I’ll buy it for you.”

“I’m suddenly hungry.”

There were already many rumours about Lee Hyun’s character among the juniors.

When the fact that he was Weed of Royal Road was still unknown, they had seen him stuffing a chicken. He had no presence in the classroom except for his activities during the MT.

“We had a sunbae like that in our department?”

“Doesn’t he seem to be avoiding us? He doesn’t accept it when I greet him.”

“I heard he doesn’t listen in classes. He just scribbles in his notebook. Recently he didn’t even submit his report. Having a sunbae like that is really troublesome.”

“Ah, is he the man who is always with Seo-yoon sunbae-nim?”

An insignificant existence like a cockle on a tidal flat! This all changed after it was known that he was Weed the God of War.

The juniors said pointless things every time he had class.

“Isn’t Lee Hyun sunbae wonderful? He seems to be locked in deep thought and full of agony….”

“It could be called a compelling appearance? Most people would be bragging about being Weed the God of War but he just attends school quietly….. Kyaah! That duality is attractive.”

“He has a really manly form when battling. I would like to see the orc Karichwi.”

“Doesn’t he have the sculptor profession? Normally is it a very difficult profession. I never thought I would see pretty sculptures

when adventuring.”

“Did you go to Morata? A perfect hero. I really want to eat just one meal with Lee Hyun sunbae-nim.”

“My sibling told me to receive a signature but I’m shaking..... What should I say?”

Lee Hyun instantly became a great sunbae in the virtual reality department. He became a star at his school. Lee Hyun didn’t want to be bothered by his juniors until he graduated. Fortunately many women didn’t dare leap the wall that was Seo-yoon.

“Why are those two meeting?”

“What weakness was caught?”

“Did she also bring him a wrapped lunch? I really like Seo-yoon sunbae.”

That also changed these days.

“I think those two people look really good.”

“Seo-yoon sunbae had a natural reason for that choice.”

Lee Hyun was eating tonkatsu in the school’s dining room. Aside

from nutritional food cooked by a person, he really liked tonkatsu and ramen.

'When I was young, I really wanted to eat tonkatsu with my younger sister.....'

It wasn't a restaurant but he was really happy when eating a frozen tonkatsu at home with his sister. Tonkatsu reminded him of eating at home but he hadn't eaten it lately. It was due to the oil used in the cooking!

"I wonder what your ideal person is? I like a man I can go on adventures with."

"Ah, yes."

Seug seug.

Lee Hyun instantly cut the tonkatsu with his knife when it came out. The meat was cut into exact portions.

"Someone who can protect me. If we venture into unknown lands together then wouldn't it be good to share those heart palpitations?"

Omul omul.

"It would be nice."

“Are you perhaps Seo-yoon’s boyfriend? We met in Royal Road.”

“Got it?”

“Yes. I heard they go on dates in their capsules.”

“That’s right.”

Lee Hyun felt the satisfactory taste as he chewed the tonkatsu.

‘Tonkatsu is good!’

Lee Hyun couldn’t taste any oil. He had no interest in the noises made by the juniors sitting around him. No faces floated to his mind.

Lee Hyun didn’t surface until he finished eating and got up.

“I ate well. Then I’ll see you next time.”

“Yes, Sunbae-nim!”

The junior’s expression showed satisfaction as she thought she had made a connection. She expected that they would talk closely if they met in school from now on. And maybe he would give support items in Royal Road or introduce her to quests!

Lee Hyun walked the lawn while the hot sun blazed down on him. He saw the large tree that he sat under with Seo-yoon for 1 year.

“It won’t be possible for me to eat boxed lunch for at least a year.”

The food from Seo-yoon wouldn’t come anymore.

Lee Hyun had become increasingly paler as the holiday passed and his sister noticed before she finally made a decision. In the evening, his sister had put on bean paste pork stew and said softly.

“Your major classes, painting, specialty classes and Royal Road seems to be taking a toll on your body these days.”

Lee Hyun’s body wasn’t the same as before. He developed muscles from jogging 10 kilometres every morning.

“Your body doesn’t seem as good and you often have a cold these days....”

He had purposely taken lots of cold baths in the meantime. It was natural for colds and coughs to appear. He also slept without a blanket and ate a lot of ice cream. Naturally his body would ache and feel a cold! He also stayed up all night so his eyes were bloodshot.

“Oppa, are you feeling really sick?”

Lee Hye-yeon placed her hand on Lee Hyun’s forehead. When she took his temperature, it was so hot she was surprised. She put hot water in a bottle and placed it on his forehead.

He drank plenty of warm water and also ran until his entire body sweated.

Lee Hyun spoke feebly.

“I can bear with it. I’m just a little busy with several things.”

“Let’s go to the hospital.”

“I don’t need the hospital!”

He would absolutely never fake an illness serious enough to require the hospital!

“Just rest for a little while. By the way, what time do you start tomorrow?”

“Can I go to school? I would like to go but I don’t know if my body will be better tomorrow. I’m worried my body will become much worse if I go to school.”

“School originally started in the first week. Just stay at home.”

“.....”

Lee Hyun didn’t have to go school and could just play Royal Road. Like a boomerang he could return to the past.

Lee Hyun made exaggerated tired movements as he leaned on his chair.

“Anyway, I need to consider your body. There is a lot of time on the holidays but once I go to school then it will be more difficult.”

“You’ll be able to do well, Oppa. I will also help you if you need it.”

“I just want to rest slowly. I always seem to be busy and can’t enjoy life.”

“Oppa.....”

He feigned illness with his sister and decided to register a 1 year absence from school!

“I’m finally free from the headache inducing things.”

Lee Hyun walked through Korea University and recalled his 1 and

a half year of memories.

“That bench was changed with my registration fee. Even the flowers planted in the flower beds… The new gym and staff dining room as well.”

His eyes caught sight of the familiar sights.

“But if I take a leave of absence for 1 year then I won’t have to pay the tuition fee.”

The leave of absence system was the largest benefit of the university! Lee Hyun went to his department office and filled out his absence application. Originally the law in Korea was that it needed to be done before the course started but that didn’t apply any more.

The reason he wrote down for his absence was ‘Revenge on Bardray.’

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Lee Hyun returned home with light footsteps. He was in a relaxed mood because he didn’t need to pay tuition for 1 year.

“This 1 year might turn into 2 or maybe 3 years.”

If his younger sister went studying abroad then he would use

every method to extend his leave of absence.

He went into the yard and gave rice to Dogmeat.

“Eat a lot.”

Bark bark bark!

Dogmeat seemed to have some sense of self protection and was on a diet these days.

“You have to gain a lot of weight. The fat should flow heavily.....”

He wanted to connect to Royal Road but he had a heap of chores to do. Lee Hyun also fed the rabbits and ducks.

The work was complicated sometimes but he couldn’t give up on raising animals. The delight at seeing them grow larger every day!

While Lee Hyun was enjoying his peaceful time, construction was in full swing next door where his neighbour had moved out a short time ago. Lee Hyun lived in a residential area but the most spacious land next door had been sold recently for a high price. Then the house was knocked down and a mansion built.

Seo-yoon’s house!

She heard that Lee Hyun was taking a leave of absence from school and bribed the next door neighbour. Of course, she only planned on a simple American wooden fence for the side walls attached to Lee Hyun's house.

The effort of Ban Jik-seok to win her heart had no effect.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Choi Ji-hoon sat down in a cafe that could see the Han River.

"The time has come....."

Today was the day of his date with Lee Hye-yeon. He thought it would be nice to go see a movie or eat at a nice place but decided to go biking.

-I wanted to go bike riding 1 month ago. But I stopped because I was tired.

Lee Hye-yeon was scary. Despite the fact that she was busy every day, she still agreed to this date.

While Choi Ji-hoon ordered coffee and cookies, the eyes of the women in the cafe looked at him. He was tall and well-dressed so it was natural for him to capture their eyes.

But Choi Ji-hoon no longer paid any attention to them. He was

caught by Lee Hye-yeon's charm so he couldn't like any other women.

"She is a really good woman."

She didn't yield to the difficult environment and grew up well. Choi Ji-hoon was completely different from the him who chewed gum in the past!

"Smart, neat and good looking, there really is no gaps. If we're able to live together happily then anything will seem trivial."

Thick bags were underneath his eyes from the lack of sleep. Cho Ji-hoon was happy even while waiting for her. A date early in the morning instead of at night was a great change of pace.

Bururuu!

His phone vibrated and Lee Hye-yeon's name floated on the screen.

"I guess she is coming now."

Choi Ji-hoon felt his heart beat faster as he answered the call.

"Where are you now?"

It was a bit after the promised meeting time already so he wasn't embarrassed to say that he arrived before Lee Hye-yeon.

-I'm sorry. I suddenly have some work to do so I can't go.

"I see. It's okay. If something happened then it can't be helped."

Choi Ji-hoon was a man who understood.

"But what happened? Was it something difficult?"

–Oppa made a mess while doing the laundry. His hairs were left behind in the bath... I need to help.

"That....."

Choi Ji-hoon was ditched to clean the bath!

-Perhaps Ji-hoon oppa should come here?

"I-I'm not very good at cleaning....."

–You don't want to?

"I'll go. Shall I go to your house?"

-Thank you. Come quickly.

Choi Ji-hoon grabbed his keys and wallet before rising from the seat. He checked the time on his luxury watch.

Many women were caught by Choi Ji-hoon’s body.

However the reality was that Choi Ji-hoon had to go quickly because he was lectured.

Chapter 7: Hermes Guild's Endless Greed

Weed once again accessed Royal Road.

'There are many people in the square today.'

It was possible to feel Morata's development when looking at the square. He heard stories from merchants and users walking by.

'Now there is only 6 days left.'

The quest required him to last 1 month. He was bored staying still as a statue but it was a quest he could fulfil safely.

There were also people who showed up in the square in the late hours. Dawn passed and more people came. He saw birds as the sun came up and also received warm light from the sun.

'There isn't anything serious today either.'

There was unlikely to be a dangerous incident in the middle of the square so it was fun watching people.

Weed often engaged in business at Serabourg Castle in Rosenheim Kingdom. He did business as a sculptor, cook and blacksmith so he was able to overprice customers as time passed.

Merchants who succeeded in a big adventurer and gained wonderful profit from trade regularly appeared in Morata.

"It is said that Spenson-nim has found the Church of Lugh's sanctum in Argoldia."

"Ah, they finally did it."

"They are in the process of restoring the sword's power. Those who stayed until the end of the quest have received a complete jackpot."

It was also possible to hear news about adventurers and goods that were popular. He also had information about the Class Master Quests that a wide variety of people were now qualified for.

The skill proficiency required for combat classes was a little low. Even if they weren't famous, people who raised the basic skill plunged into the Class Master Quest.

They didn't think they would be the first to succeed but it was still worth doing it. And it was possible to raise their fame so the number of people completing the Master Quest grew to 54.

Weed was almost at the final step so he wasn't interested in other competitors.

'News about Bardray is sparse these days... I don't know what he is doing. I hope he is planting pumpkin seeds somewhere.'

The hatred generated due to Tallock's Armour!

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The day of decision for the Hermes Guild.

"War will start at dawn today."

Lafaye declared at a meeting of leaders. The army was already waiting at the borders of the Lasalle Kingdom. Bardray also stopped his Master Quest progression in order to command Haven Kingdom's army.

Lafaye spoke to make it certain.

"We will leave the United Supremacy alliance when we strike Lasalle Kingdom."

It was a big alliance of prestigious guilds on Versailles Continent. United Supremacy. Rather than expanding and fighting each other, they would join forces and keep their own occupied territory.

The Hermes Guild had precedent for breaking this thanks to the invasion of the Black Lion Guild's Melbourne Mine.

They had already received warnings from the other prestigious

guilds in the United Supremacy alliance so mobilizing an army against Lasalle Kingdom was like a declaration of war towards the entire continent.

The leaders were somewhat worried because of this point.

“Have any counter measures been taken for when we leave the alliance?”

“Our Hermes Guild is might but it will become difficult if they join together against us.”

The plan for the occupation of Lasalle Kingdom had already been decided but it was impossible not to feel anxious.

Lafaye carefully explained.

“According to the current situation, the other guilds haven’t completed their territory expansion yet. They are still battling their enemies in the kingdom so it will be difficult for them to throw military power against us.”

Lafaye was the guild’s external cannon.

Bardray exercised substantial control in the Hermes Guild but that was because Lafaye gave him permission. The important goals and detailed plans for the guild were determined by Lafaye and his advisors. Things like the development of the kingdom, measuring personnel, military education and diplomatic negotiations were

done by Lafaye.

The Hermes Guild had grown thanks to Lafaye. Thanks to the intelligence staff behind Lafaye and the support of his advisors, his decisions were at a wonderful standard.

“And I’ve prepared some pre-emptive measures against some guilds that we should pay attention to.”

“I’ve never heard about this. What is the plan?”

The Hermes Guild’s territories were large and they had 100 leaders. Thus not all of them would know everything about the plan.

“It was still too early to tell you. I gave power to the hostile forces opposing them. There is sabotage, assassination of key figures and support such as in the case of the Beden Guild taking control of Tullen Kingdom.”

“It was very successful in the case of the Black Lion Guild and Tullen Kingdom. If the plan goes well then we’ll be able to make them flustered. But do we have the troops and funds to pay for war with the Lasalle Kingdom?”

“I decided to use the troops I dispatched to Morata to take care of Weed. Other secret battle companies are also prepared. The taxes from the Kallamore Kingdom are huge so we can afford it.”

“We’re stepping on a long tail. If they notice what we did then won’t we be in an even more difficult position with the other guilds?”

“Everybody is already watching us. Our forces are greater at present even if they attack. There is no meaning if the United Supremacy alliance breaks and an alliance that sets its sights on the Hermes Guild forms. It is better to be the person that strikes first.”

Anyway, the Hermes Guild needed to fight against the prestigious guilds if they wanted to conquer the continent. The temporary cooperation was just for their own interests!

The Hermes Guild hid their power and was able to quickly occupy the Kallamore Kingdom. The prestigious guilds had become tense and watched them.

Thus they decided on the strategy of striking first. The expansion of the Hermes Guild’s military power was smooth thanks to Bardray’s fame.

They stood as the pinnacle of overwhelming power that other guilds couldn’t compare to.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The Hermes Guild’s shock invasion of the Lasalle Kingdom!

The magician units moved on a large scale, destroyed a castle and commenced the war. The knights were trained to the best standard while the infantry and armoured troops were the best army on the continent.

The scene of the troops marching on the plains of the Lasalle Kingdom was a truly fearful sight.

Breaking news! The Haven Kingdom that is one of the major powers on the continent has declared war against the Lasalle Kingdom.

The Lasalle Kingdom won't be able to hold up and it is only a matter of time until they are occupied!

The Haven Kingdom's quick advance will have a great impact on the continent.

The ripple effect meant there was no news more important than this. Battles frequently happened on the Central Continent but a war between kingdoms didn't occur that easily.

The Haven Kingdom was ahead in territorial area, population, military strength and economic strength. Therefore it was a one-sided invasion and the broadcasting stations were reporting it heavily. The Lasalle Kingdom wouldn't even last 5 minutes against the Haven Kingdom considering the difference between them.

To make matters worse, the quality and quantity of the military

was no comparison.

-The Hermes Guild has invaded? Are there any who surrendered?

-I'm a merchant. Everyone has closed up shop and is moving on but what way is safe?

-I know how Bardray fights. The war will end in the Lasalle Kingdom's defeat so let's go sightseeing.

The knights in the Hermes Guild were trained in various assault tactics that were useful against the weak army of the Lasalle Kingdom that was full of plains.

The Haven Kingdom's troops completely overwhelmed the Lasalle Kingdom that it was only a matter of time before it was completely occupied.

-A war has happened again. I'm sick and tired of it.

-The Hermes Guild is too terrible. Do they really have to cause a war to broaden their territory while the Central Continent is suffering from the Embinyu Church?

-That is because of their strength. The person who suffers damage is someone weak. Of course, not many were thinking with their heads.

The viewers went on the boards and blasted the Hermes Guild's ambition. The Guilds that belong to the United Supremacy also had an emergency meeting to prepare countermeasures.

The Hermes Guild's invasion of the Lasalle Kingdom was clearly them leaving the alliance. But they were already engaged in war so it was impossible to prepare a large scale military. It wasn't possible to stop the Hermes Guild with a small army.

"Will the Roam Guild help us?"

"The Cloud Guild can afford it so we will join you."

"The Black Sword Mercenary group?"

"We have recently been commissioned for a difficult request so we can't spare many people."

The United Supremacy guilds sympathized with each other but each of them wanted to reduce the damage as much as possible. There were other prestigious guilds but the Hermes Guild had secretly obtained their support.

The meeting continued but the collection of forces didn't formally become an alliance.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The best equipment, skills, hunting ground and mercenaries hired for a shaman.

Dain received all these benefits when hunting in a dungeon. The Hermes Guild treated her differently from the general users in the guild. The Hermes Guild had a policy of preferential treatment based on their abilities but Dain received more special treatment than normal.

“Who is she?”

“I don’t know. Guild Master-nim knows her personally. He told us to give her any support she needs.”

Dain possessed a high skill proficiency as a shaman so her level quickly rose. The guild’s support team periodically contacted her.

“Do you need anything more?”

“Right now I’m okay.”

“If you need any consumable items then tell us. And if there is a city or castle that you want to govern then just request it.”

Those with ability in the Hermes Guild were offered a territory. However if they didn’t demonstrate their skills on the battlefield then they would be stripped of their position.

They would still give Dain a position even if she didn't have the skills. Including Bardray and Lafaye, she was one of the original 7 core members that founded the Hermes Guild in the early days of Royal Road. Even if the Hermes Guild gave priority to those with abilities, they couldn't help treating the founders differently.

Dain didn't care about power but she was interested in the Kallamore Kingdom.

After being plundered by the Hermes Guild, there was barely enough food left for the residents to the extent that they died from starvation.

"Any territory that belongs to the Kallamore Kingdom is fine."

"Permission from Guild Master-nim is required for the Kallamore Kingdom... I will contact you after confirming it."

The guild gave a reply in just a few hours. The Kallamore Kingdom didn't matter so they offered her a territory.

"Please save the population as the security there is low."

"A place with low security? Indeed... Those places are favourable for hunting so it will be good to raise the fame. I understand."

The following day, the Hermes Guild decided to give Dain Evaluk Castle. It was one of the most populated areas in the Kallamore Kingdom but there were currently riots occurring due to excessive

taxes. Monsters also frequently appeared there so it was a really dangerous place.

“The knights and infantry will also support you. And you don’t need to pay taxes for 3 months.”

It was the continuation of the exceptionally privileged treatment.

Once Dain was the lord, she cut taxes for the residents and focused on repairs of facilities and the walls. The invasion of monsters decreased so the rate of decline of the residents’ loyalty slowed. The first priority was to earn back the residents’ trust.

She was the only lord in the Kallamore Kingdom who invested in art. An exhibition space was prepared for sculptors and painters.

Kallamore, the kingdom of knights. After it was occupied, the flower of art started blooming.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Weed heard news about the war while he was still a statue in the square. The merchants walked the streets and spread rumours but the only stories were related to the war.

“The users in the Lasalle Kingdom only fought a few times before they died. I heard that seven castles have been occupied in 1 day.”

“Wahh, this is really frightening. Why is their advancement speed so fast?”

“I heard that the army was divided into three parties and used a wave offensive. Each division has 150,000 troops... I can’t even imagine it.”

The merchants in the square were anxious. War on the Central Continent would also have an influence on them.

There were massive amounts of refugees and the prices of things like grain and iron became unstable due to massive inflation.

Weed prayed as he constantly heard news of the Hermes Guild’s victories.

‘Fall. Fall completely.’

He had a hostile relationship with the Hermes Guild so it would be troublesome if they grew larger.

An adventurer ran up and said.

“It was difficult this time but the Hermes Guild has managed to occupy Suokun Fort!”

But Weed wasn’t disappointed. The Hermes Guild was huge but there were many variables in a war.

‘Lose. Lose.’

The merchants engaged in business around the statue also chattered away.

“I heard they just received Ellabas Plains. The occupation rate is really fast.”

His body couldn’t move and he was forced to listen to news about the Hermes Guild’s victories. Sometimes he also heard news about the Roam Guild or the Black Sword mercenaries.

They started to sneak out of their own kingdoms and launched a war of aggression against other kingdoms. The Hermes Guild’s invasion of the Lasalle Kingdom spread like a shockwave across the Central Continent.

Once the United Supremacy alliance was broken, the members indiscriminately rushed into war.

“Now it really is a time of war.”

“Our lives will change thanks to what happens on the Central Continent.”

“This fight might be the birth of an empire. Then we will have to live under their rule in the future.”

The news of the war decreased people's interest in the Master Quests. The number of people in the square and broadcasting stations talking about the quests noticeably decreased.

The Master Quest was a fierce competition but the Adventurer Chase, Warrior Python, Farmer Miretas and Weed didn't progress that quickly. They had to go to distant places, defeat legendary evil or find something legendary.

The Class Master Quest revealed the hidden history of the Versailles Continent. The quests were difficult, the progress speed was slow and the knowledge they obtained wasn't shown on broadcasts.

If they were the first one to complete the Master Quest then they would get honour and be acknowledge as the most outstanding in their profession on the continent.

But the Versailles Continent was once again engulfed in war and the Embinyu Church was spreading like wildfire so the users' interest turned to the war stations.

"Weed-nim is the only one people can believe in."

"Yes. The God of War will protect us."

"Weed-nim has to kill Bardray."

A lot of people were searching for Weed but he was actually the statue covered with rain and dust. The weather became dark and damp as night fell.

There was only 2 days left until his quest completed. The period was only one month but he was bored so he wanted to go hunting.

‘This weather must be annoying Yellowy.....’

Weed spent 2 more days as a statue before finally completely the quest.

Ddiring!

-Sculpture’s Eyes has been completed

You have successfully understood being a sculpture for the required time.

-The skill proficiency of Sculpting has improved.

-2,002 Fame has been acquired for being a sculpture that changed the city.

-Your Perseverance has increased by 39 for spending time as a sculpture.

-Endurance has increased by 17.

-Luck has increased by 21.

-Thanks to the new experience, your Art stat has increased by 51.

-The cultural value of the Arpen Kingdom has risen.

-Sculpting skill proficiency has increased by 0.9%.

Weed realized something when doing the quest. He didn't know the purpose of the quest but now he could understand the heart of a sculpture a little better.

"It is tedious."

That was everything! The sculpture was nice from the viewpoint of the person who passed by and saw it but for the sculpture it was completely boring.

"It won't be hard to sell."

His sculptures were the most popular. Weed's philosophy in life was to try and buy things even 200 won cheaper.

-The quest Sculpture's Eyes has been completed.

So far as a sculptor, you have discovered Razteberg the first city on the continent.

The Elves' question has been settled.

The Orcs have been taught sculpting.

The Dwarves have recognized your sculpting skills.

The sculpting of the Arpen Emperor is expanding into the world again.

The Ellyon race has been found.

The Arnin race has been rescued.

You have created new history while walking along the path of a Master Sculptor.

The continent's artists and sculptors will look up to you. Now it is possible to advance to the next stage of the Master Quest. Please meet the Ellyons and listen to their story.

-The effect of the Sculpture Formation skill has ended.

His stiff body returned to normal. The corners of Weed's eyes trembled like a sad movie has been seen. But the tears never

flowed! He had gone on a long journey with the Sculpting Master Quest.

‘Now it is almost at the end.’

He remembered the way he felt when he first learnt sculpting.

‘I really thought my life was ruined… Even in the difficult situation I didn’t give up on the arts.’

In the beginning he was immersed in selling off sculptures for 2 silver. He made sculptures even while hunting and questing.

‘I’ve had a lot of fun though.’

He also made Bingryong after coming to the cold north and fighting the vampires.

‘I received an important enlightenment about art during the ice storm. Art isn’t different from nature.’

He could make sculptures using everything in nature. The damaged pyramid and sphinx destroyed by the Embinyu Church were also treasured memories.

He used the strength of sculpting in order to fight against the Immortal Legion.

Even the wyverns he gave life to were still useful today.

Weed accomplished his adventures with sculpting so it was impossible to separate them. Morata's development also stemmed from sculpting. Blacksmithing, Sewing, Fishing, Mining, Sailing were all skills learnt with the help of sculpting.

This was the fateful path of a sculptor. The important memories naturally surged when he thought about it.

'Once I've mastered sculpting then I need to master blacksmithing.'

Of course he would also master his Sword Mastery skill when fighting against monsters.

Weed's goal was to master all his skills!

Anyway, now his priority was to leave Central Square. He had spent 1 month as a sculpture so it was awkward for him to suddenly move. There were still people talking around the fountain so Weed maintained his posture as a sculpture. He was holding the Daemon Sword and Sculpting Knife while staring at the sky. He didn't even blink his eyes when people looked at him.

'Hrmm…..' It is harder trying to stay still when I can move.'

No events happened in Morata's Central Square but it was always full of people.

‘A chance will come.’

Evening was approaching so Weed persisted in maintaining his posture. And after complete darkness fell, he saw a carriage approaching his area. Weed moved the moment the carriage passed. He quickly wore a robe and used Quadruple Run to leave his position.

“Eh? Weed-nim’s sculpture is gone? It was here a little while ago.”

“Where is it?”

“I don’t know. It is gone all of a sudden.”

“There’s no such thing. It’s not like a sculpture can move.”

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Weed met the Ellyons working in the mines.

“Please tell me what I need to do.”

There wasn’t much left to the long journey so his heart was a little urgent. The Ellyons put down their pickaxes and received the beef jerky Weed gave them.

— If it is you then we can believe it. This is a story I haven't told you. In the past, humans started going to war after the Arpen Empire split. There were lifeforms like us who scattered across the continent and lived elsewhere.

Weed nodded.

"It seems like that. Would you like me to collect another species?"

His target was to grab another sculptural lifeform and make them work!

— No, that's not it. There was a friend who didn't live with the humans and protected us on the continent.

"Who is it?"

— The hero Bahamorg of the Arpen Empire. He is an existence born with us.

The now familiar videos appeared in front of Weed.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

After the Arpen Empire split apart, the humans warred among themselves.

During this era of war, the Britten Alliance, Kallamore, Tullen, Masen, Gradian, Norton, the now disappeared Mapon and Bromba kingdoms were formed.

The power of humans weakened and monsters invaded once again. The sculptural lifeforms of the Arpen Empire were either caught as prisoners or found new settlements.

Bahamorg.

When the Arpen Empire unified the continent, he was the hero who led the sculptural lifeforms.

“Kurehah!”

He yelled in a large voice as he fought the enemies and monsters. He was a hero who played an active part in a place where magic was dancing wildly.

There were no weapons he couldn’t handle and he defeated large monsters and senior magicians.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

‘He is very strong.’

Weed thought as he watched the video. Judging by his fighting,

he was far stronger than Golden Bird. He might even be equivalent to the one who plunged the sword into Barkan! As the guardian of the former Empire, he was part of the strongest class of monsters.

'It is good if I can make him work.'

While the Ellyons and Arnin were steady workers, Bahamorg was a hero born for war.

"So what happened?"

— He fought at a settlement for some other friends. If it wasn't for him then it would probably be difficult for us to survive directly. He never rested and moved to other places to fight for the safety of our friends.

Weed also liked that point. There were lots of strong monsters. But if they were sincere then he could make them work really well.

Weed would exploit a target once he made them work.

— But when we saw him at the end, Bahamorg was full of wounds and poisoned that he would've died at any moment.

"Oh!"

Weed thought it was a waste. A really wonderful sculptural lifeform that he could put to work had died.

— I’m sorry for Bahamorg. Can you find out what happened to him? He probably returned to the capital of the Arpen Empire. It has been a long time since he died but any news is good.

-Hero Bahamorg

Bahamorg who endlessly pursued strength!

A sculptural lifeform that Geihar Von Arpen, the Arpen Emperor made after envying the strength of the Barbarians.

He was an illustrious warrior who stood at the forefront of every battle. After the Arpen Empire split, Bahamorg’s fate is unknown.

The Ellyons want to learn about his last moments.

This is the last adventure in the Class Master Quest.

If you accomplish this mission then it will lead to the final process to become a Class Master.

Level of Difficulty: Sculpting Master Quest

Quest Restrictions: Level 8 Advanced Sculpting

Sculpture Life Bestowal is necessary.

“Finally the end of a long adventure.”

As expected, the request this time wasn’t that easy. It was like dropping a 100 won coin and trying to find it again 1 year later. Or when the pork roast he bought disappeared without a trace.

But he didn’t want to give up. Weed was the type to breakthrough if he was put into a corner!

“The capital of the Arpen Empire… I will find it.”

The great Antarosa!

Once ruins were left of the Arpen Empire’s Imperial Palace and city buildings.

Monsters swarmed the place at night but the shattered rubble everywhere made it even more dangerous. There was no protection from walls and no guards were stationed there!

In the early days of Royal Road, there was a boom of adventurers going on expeditions there. Numerous magic items and history books were discovered.

A large number of knowledge and treasure on the Versailles Continent came out of Antarosa. In the past, it was the capital of the Arpen Empire and there were all kinds of buildings.

Historical or high value artwork and treasures were still being unearthed now so there were still many adventurers who aimed at finding a jackpot.

“I’ll do my best to investigate.”

-You have accepted the quest.

— I will wait for the good news. Bahamorg was a hero who protected us.

“I’ll complete your request to the end without giving up. He has to be alive....”

Chapter 8: Song For Bahamorg

Weed received Yurin's help and arrived at the capital of the Arpen Empire, Antarosa.

"The wreckage of the shattered buildings are completely scattered around."

The ruins where 1,000 years had passed! Some buildings only had the ceiling deformed while others were so completely destroyed it was impossible to grasp the shape. There were no buildings left untouched.

The very large area also had plenty of monsters. There was a mix of weak wolves and stronger monsters like a level 520 boss. It was the core habitat so all sorts of monsters could be found.

The wealth and power of the Imperial Palace had disappeared as adventurers searched for treasures while navigating the monsters. It was impossible to see the wonderful buildings from the past.

The monsters mainly lived underground in Antarosa. They built nests in the complicated sewage and went up to the ground at night.

Antarosa was larger than Morata and the entire Arpen Kingdom and there was a battle against the monsters every night. Even the reputable rankers couldn't risk hunting a bunch of monsters. The prestigious guilds wouldn't be able to handle all the monsters

wandering around at night.

There were hundreds of thousands of monsters living underground. Many adventurers entered due to their curiosity and died.

Antarosa might be the capital of the Arpen Empire but it was the dream place for treasure hunters dreaming of a jackpot. If they dug up the wreckage of a noble's house then sometimes precious metals or expensive equipment and jewellery would emerge. Any kingdom would desire these treasures and if a person gave it to a king then they could become a lord. Or they found an item they could wear themselves so many treasure hunters came here to test their luck.

The ruins near the river. There was a tavern next to a broad river that originally flowed through Antarosa. Guests were there to receive quests or find treasure. A stable accommodation was required in order to search the large Antarosa.

"Ohuhuhuk, I dug at the land for three days and couldn't find anything.'

"Baisul-nim, don't be disappointed and drink your alcohol."

"Kyah, how refreshing! I was looking for Hidram Mansion but I never found the location of the building. I've already dug at five points but it is futile. If it is going to be like this then I'm better off exploring a dungeon."

“Illedo-nim, I heard you found something in the vicinity?”

“A little gold nugget. I would’ve preferred a magic book.”

If they were lucky then there could gather various things from Antarosa so there were always lots of people. Hundreds of people dug in the ruins and stayed at inns or taverns.

Weed ate food at a bar and got information. If he just listened quietly then he could obtain information. This was a large area so the adventurers were active in exchanging information.

“The south side of the water cistern has been almost completely searched. There hasn’t been anyone who found anything there lately.”

“The Imperial Palace was discovered after digging at 7 points. Tens of thousands of users can fit inside it.”

“I heard that everyone who entered that place hasn’t come out alive.”

“If it is dangerous then there is more profit!”

It was difficult to find an area in the ruins without any people.

Weed drank milk and ate bread. It was an area in Royal Road where honey and milk really flowed.

When considering the standard of the users, it was a really dangerous place thanks to the monsters. If 100 people entered then only 1~2 at most would come out alive.

But treasures and equipment were consistently found and people who discovered them would earn huge profits. The treasures decreased steadily as the adventurers navigated danger and death. But it was still almost impossible to explore the catacombs due to the dangerous monsters. There were still treasures sleeping there.

The items from Antarosa would be a great help to users who weren't able to obtain a proper footing in the early days of the Versailles continent. Right now exceptionally good adventurers were flying around the continent.

"I have to give up the request from Count Charlemange. I came to save the Stone Lion... The weight seemed tolerable but I thought I would be able to quickly find it."

"Yet?"

"I can't find it no matter how I look so someone must've taken it already."

The stories from people drinking continued flowing into Weed's ears. But the only information he received was about searching for treasure.

‘Bahamorg… Nobody knows him.’

The sculptural lifeforms had a decided life expectancy when they were given life. If they didn’t die in battle then they would also grow and age. Even if Bahamorg survived his injuries, it was a distant time so he would already be long dead.

“There is no guarantee that he is here… I would be more comfortable working.”

The Sculpting Master Quest had various different contents! Weed ate food and waited for night. And it was time for the monsters! He could see monsters moving on a large scale outside the window. Monsters woke up and wandered the ruins. The land where legends were sleeping!

According to history, Antarosa was lost when the Arpen Empire fragmented. It was the target of military invasion and plunder. After that monsters surged and people left it alone.

And Antarosa became a city controlled by monsters. It was included in the territory of the Britten Alliance but merchants didn’t come anywhere near it. Users stayed at taverns and inns hidden by magic.

Weed was safe but his heart didn’t feel comfortable.

“Will you be staying overnight? It is 30 gold.”

That price was far too expensive for one night.

“Is it possible to lower the price a little?”

“No, Customer-nim.”

“I didn’t want to say this but I am a very famous person on the continent.”

“Then you will be able to give even more money.”

The inn’s owner had a stubborn character. Nothing Weed used worked.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The Geomchi instructors and practitioners hit the dungeons.

“This is the entrance to the dungeon.”

“We will go first, Teacher-nim!”

Their hunting proficiency became amazing after the Geomchis learnt Sword-cloning and Radiant Sword.

“This is the effect of skills.”

“It seems so. It can be used so easily that it is like a washing machine.”

They reached level 400 using only basic skills and now they properly utilized their attack skills. They also invested in wisdom and knowledge and their attack went up with each increase in skill proficiency.

And the advice Weed gave them was crucial.

“Even though risking your lives when fighting is acceptable for Master-nim, what about when hunting in a party?”

“We want to do that but… They need to be worthy.”

The Geomchi instructors and practitioners tried hunting in a party in the Yurokina Mountains. They wanted to fight together with female warriors but not many had come to the north.

“Your achievement points means that you can hire priests for hunting. There is the Cathedral of the Freya Church in Morata so it is easy to find priests.”

“Kuheom! If you say that then we’ll go look.”

Geomchi headed to Light Square with his disciples.

“That uniform is really beautiful.”

“Teacher-nim! Did you see that priest that passed by just now? That innocent face is my ideal type. The beautiful texture of her hair.....”

“Third Sa-hyung, one person has come!”

The female priestesses of the Freya Church boasted amazing beauty. That’s why the Freya Church was the most popular among users.

“Shall we take a priestess and go hunting?”

“Yes. Weed-nim said it is possible with our achievements, Master-nim!”

The Geomchi instructors entered the Freya Church’s Cathedral.

“A person who did us a large favour has visited. What would you like? If you want a better weapon then we’ll give it to you.”

So far they kept getting rid of monsters and stacked up many achievements that they didn’t use. It was enough to obtain a weapon and employ many priestesses.

General users knew how to utilize the achievements but it was difficult for them to obtain. Most swordsmen weren’t willing to

risk the death penalty.

“I want a weapon but it isn’t necessary now. Instead, I’m going to go hunting so it is possible to bring a priestess?”

“If you’re fighting against the monsters then of course the priests will support you. Please ensure that they’re not injured or killed. If that happens then it will be difficult to put the priests in any more dangerous situations.”

“I’ll make sure that not even a drop of water will touch their hands.”

Each Geomchi instructor hired 1 priestess respectively. They didn’t know the value of achievements until now. Thanks to the priests, their hunting efficiency increased by 3 times more. Receiving blessings and treatment during a battle was a good thing!

“This is a good world.....”

“It is fortunate that we understand now.”

“Listen! If we get injured then they will touch us to use healing!”

The Geomchis used a different method of fighting. Normally they were concise and effective when attacking and defending. But they deliberately fought more aggressively after seeing the priestesses.

They thoroughly protected the priestesses from the monsters. The priestesses were employed with achievement points so it wasn't necessary to distribute the experience and loot.

"Master-nim, we will go as well."

"Go and collect them quickly."

The practitioners also went to Morata to collect some priestesses,

"I'm sorry but there aren't any priestesses left of a standard to go hunting. Instead, a male priest...."

"That's okay!"

Once the priestesses of the Freya Church ran out of stock, they hired priestesses from other religions! Since then monsters fell around Vargo Fortress. The valuable achievement points decreased over time.

Monster invasions still sometimes occurred at Vargo Fortress but the area had stabilized.

"Swordplay is truly beautiful."

"I understand, Master-nim!"

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Weed left the inn early the next day.

“First I have to look at any sculptures found here.”

Most of the products unearthed here had already been sold to aristocrats of the Britten Alliance Kingdom. The memories in the sculptures might contain some clues.

“Your fame as a sculptor is well known on the continent. Count Baldmong loves art. Come in.”

“I’ve heard a lot of stories about your adventures. I always wanted to meet you.”

“I heard there was a king of a small kingdom in the north so it is an honour to meet you.”

It wasn’t difficult for Weed to meet the nobles of the Britten Alliance Kingdom. But the number of sculptures recovered was extremely small. They weren’t even displayed in hallways and were kept in warehouses.

“It is a very elegant sculpture.”

“This sculpture is very old. It might contain some historical

information.”

“Can I look at it for a while?”

“Of course.”

“Inspect!”

The cracked and peeled lion sculpture. When he examined the memory contained in it, the Imperial Palace and capital of the Arpen Empire could be seen.

It was difficult to imagine now but various sculptural lifeforms prospered and lived there. A direct statue of Emperor Geihar Von Arpen that he carved himself stood near a fountain and the continent’s greatest treasures were visible.

“I know the form of the city in the past so finding treasures should be a little easier.”

If he obtained clues for treasure then he would stay there and dig. He wanted to do that but he was King of the Arpen Kingdom.

“Bahamorg didn’t appear.”

Many of the sculptures unearthed were damaged.

“Can I fix it a little?”

“It would be an honour to have a famous sculptor like you fix it.”

Weed received the quest to restore the sculpture then checked the memory contained in it again. The video showed more detail about the surrounding landscape but Bahamorg’s last moments couldn’t be found.

“I’ve obtained quite a bit of information. I should think positively. It isn’t good to continue with negative thinking through my entire life. At least I know he wasn’t where these sculptures were found. Then I’ll have to use legwork.”

Weed spread out a map of the ruins.

He really didn’t know if Bahamorg managed to come back here. There was a large possibility he might’ve died along the way.

If he didn’t come to Antarosa then the search radius would widen further. It really wasn’t an easy quest.....

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

One week later.

“This way won’t work.”

Weed put down his shovel and pickaxe.

“I haven’t learnt anything from these ruins....”

In the meantime he had gone around Antarosa like the other adventurers and dug at the ground.

“Would you like to partner up with me?”

“Your pickaxe seems unusual. It is like a wave spreads out from it.”

He received lots of offers from other users. His strength and vitality made it seem like Weed was playing whack-a-mole. Once he started digging then the wreckage was scattered everywhere.

Weed refused all their suggestions and was immersed in digging the land.

“Bahamorg... Old Barbarian hero... His equipment would be nice... If I dig it out... It would be a treasure that would cause a storm of money... That magic tower... The treasure warehouse of the Imperial Palace...”

He transformed into a treasure hunter while looking for Bahamorg. However it really wasn’t easy to search for treasure in Antarosa.

The only income from one week of work was two antique armours. The historic value meant he would be able to receive at least 1,500 to 2,000 gold. In Weed's case, if he melted it down and remade it then he could create a wearable level 300 armour. Other adventurers were think this was a decent harvest for one week's worth.

But he went through the repetitive motions of digging and looking for Bahamorg in the day and returning to the inn to sculpt at night.

His Mining skill rose from 1 level to Intermediate level 2. His technique to dig the land was growing!

"The cost of the inn is too expensive so this way won't work."

Even though Weed had excellent digging ability, it was impossible to search through the wide wreckage. He dug at the locations most likely to find something.

"So far I've had no luck but it will only take one success for that to change!"

His unfortunate destiny was always offset by his luck.

"A different search method....."

Weed had an excellent reasoning ability. So far he had spent 98% of his life as a worker!

“The only thing I know is that Bahamorg was heading to Antarosa.”

Weed daringly decided to abandon the wreckage in the ruins. He could take advantage of various skills like Mining, Sculpting or Sculptural Memories but the area was too wide. And the various other skills he learnt weren’t helpful.

“It would be really lucky if I could discover his belongings here but there is no guarantee.”

Weed hadn’t found any clues despite digging for a week. In addition, his pickaxe was increasingly moving towards treasure rather than his original goal. It wasn’t to find the treasures of the Arpen Empire but to find information about Bahamorg.

“What information can I use to search?”

Weed organized his thoughts. He knew that Bahamorg was very strong. He read the history books in Morata’s library but Bahamorg wasn’t listed.

“Maybe if I….”

Weed pulled out his Sculpting Knife. He used stone that were originally walls to carve Bahamorg.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

That night monsters went around Antarosa. They fought among themselves and also hunted small animals.

Sometimes human like monsters would also dig at the ground to find things. The monsters in Antarosa were equipped with their own intelligence. Sometimes they collected treasure and wore it.

Users wanted to hunt mobs that had treasure. But the creatures were much stronger at night. During the day, they lived in complicated passages underground so they were hard to track. Some succeeded several times but it was a significant risk.

Even if weak monsters found treasure, it would be immediately taken away by the strong monsters. Many great treasures ended up with boss class monsters.

The monsters also found the sculpture of Bahamorg that Weed carved.

“Kiiik?”

“Kuooh.”

The monsters weren’t interested and just passed by it.

“I’m hungry.”

“I’m going over there.”

They liked gold, silver and jewellery. Mountains of treasures were stored in their lair. But as expected, some monsters didn’t overlook the piece of art.

“Keeek, this.....?”

Just before sunrise, a monster found the sculpture and showed interest in it.

‘Yes, it is a success.’

Weed had transformed into a crow and was watching through a gap in the wreckage. The monster that recognized it was a clue!

“Why do you look like that, kikikik.”

“Just smash it.”

Kwajijijik, pasasak, sseoook!

A monster brought down an axe and broke the sculpture! Weed had to witness the sight of his work being smashed.

‘That bastard.....!’

He had no choice but to endure it as monsters roamed around Antarosa. The monsters went away in the morning but only a few pieces of Weed's sculpture could be seen.

"There is a problem with my work in this form."

Weed decided to improve it.

He could make sculptures out of things other than stone!

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

At dusk before evening came.

Weed made his sculpture again.

"Moonlight Sculpting!"

Brilliant light stretched out from his hands and illuminated the sky! The flashy light was used to make a beautiful sculpture.

Moonlight Sculpting was very handy because he only needed to use a little bit on different sculptures. A sculpture made from light! The subtle gloss and luxurious colour added to a sculpture made it even more wonderful.

But this time he made it only out of light so it floated into the air.

Bahamorg's sculpture!

Weed made the form of a barbarian warrior out of light.

"Won't the light catch attention in the dark? I don't want it to be too bright."

He didn't want it to be like an overly bright signboard.

"The monsters also like shine. The colour nuance needs to be set.

Weed blended the silver and gold light of the Antarosa sky to carve the form of Bahamorg. He didn't have enough time so it was a work he made in earnest. The sculpture was made in a rush but he was experienced with dealing with light.

The sculpture of Bahamorg was finished and floated in Antarosa's sky.

"Now he will be recognized."

Weed decided to wait comfortably. This time the monsters wouldn't be able to destroy it.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

“It is Weed’s sculpture.”

“Weed the God of War was here!”

The atmosphere at Antarosa was giddy as the adventurers saw the sculpture of light. They considered Weed as their idol.

While adventuring alone, they faced considerable hardships. Just as they were frustrated and about to give up, Weed overcame many obstacles so he was their target.

“Where is he?”

“I wonder if a quest brought him here.”

“People are less interested in Antarosa these days but they will come flocking thanks to Weed-nim’s presence.”

The places where Weed went always ended up crowded with people. It was the same logic where people visited places that a celebrity did on television. Ship captains sailed towards Jigolaths while tourism packages were released for other locations.

“Will he be in the area?”

“He probably already left. He always suddenly appears and vanishes. He might even be eating a steak in Morata.”

“That’s right, users of Royal Road often wonder about what he is doing.”

“He usually disguises himself to travel.”

The users never noticed when Weed was sitting in a tavern by himself. He had released Sculpture Transformation from his crow state but they still didn’t know. Just a little change in the parting of his hair was a perfect disguise!

In fact, sometimes his close companions were also surprised. He wore cool cloths and armour in battle but the durability would fall so he switched to beginners’ clothes when it was required and his atmosphere completely changed.

“This time has come.”

Weed finished his meal as evening approached. It was a little difficult to purchase food since so many people wandered the ruins. Adventurers also came to the tavern to obtain information from others.

Today instead of a crow, he would use Sculpture Transformation into a monster.

Chapter 9: Monsters Of Antarosa

“There’s something there.”

“What? Is it something to eat?”

“No.”

“Then I have no interest.”

The monsters of Antarosa were also indifferent to the sculpture of light.

“Get rid of it.”

“Kya kya.”

There were those that threw axes and stones. Weed had climbed onto a pile of deserted rubble and looked at it.

“Look at his eyes.”

There were greasy eyeballs between torn eyes.

“That snout even eats their own species.”

Weed looked like a monster called the Deruger so he was avoided. He had a large charisma as a dominate monster but his appearance also played a role. Weed muttered as he surveyed the attitude of the monsters.

"Everybody is envying my face. Becoming a plastic surgeon would be good. They often earn money so it wouldn't be bad."

An inherent danger in people's lives was that the slightest mistake could cause the collapse of their dream! Weed steadily watched the monsters looking at the sculpture in the sky and waited for a special reaction.

'Perhaps the clue isn't here.'

Information about adventures was often hidden. This degree of difficulty was natural was tracking down an old sculptural lifeform. But even puppies in the mountains knew Weed so he planned to take advantage of his fame. If he posted it on the bulletin board then users would see Bahamorg and provide information. NPCs living throughout the continent would also see Weed's work and talk about it. It was the system that used his high fame as a sculptor to break through.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The inhabitants of the village made a lot of noise.

“Do you know Sculptor Weed? He made a sculpture in Antarosa.”

“It is a sculpture made of light that is very wonderful. It illuminates Antarosa at night.”

“Any adventurers who hear the story would want to go see it. It is to that extent.”

The adventurers of Antarosa went to other villages and spread the news of Weed’s sculpture. Rumours spread among the residents of the entire continent. The aristocrats who liked art also had a large interest.

“A sculpture of a barbarian warrior! It is Sculptor Weed’s work so I definitely want to possess it but it isn’t possible to bring it here.”

“These days, a sculpture by Weed is necessary to ensure the dignity of the nobility. I won’t be sorry even if I waste one year’s worth of profit to obtain a work that Weed produced.”

Quests also occurred at a sculptor’s guild near Antarosa.

“Weed is a true artist and adventurer. He has the status of a king yet he still drifts around the continent. When people come to see the light sculpture then they might commission some valuable sculptures.”

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Song Su-cheol finished his part time job and returned home.

“Phew, today was really long.

He was working at a fried chicken store in order to raise tuition money for university. Every day he had to cut and fry chicken so he always came home exhausted.

“I wonder what happened today.”

He turned on the computer and checked the bulletin boards. Even reading what others were saying about Royal Road was interesting. He always checked it every day. His character’s level was only 156 but he was still interested.

“I’m in an area with no special quests... A person called Millennium Fox seems to have obtained a rare spear.”

Royal Road was too enormous so there were separate bulletin boards for villages, cities and castles.

Title: Topic about Weed’s sculptures

Title: The dignity of the sculpture of light

Title: Weed is the best

Title: How can I marry Weed?

“Weed has made another one.”

He was a god to Song Su-cheol. His stress could be released when watching Weed’s adventures. Song Su-cheol didn’t only like Weed because he enjoyed the adventures. Any user playing Royal Road on the Versailles Continent would have affection for him.

The prestigious guilds turned evil and started killing the users. Weed’s adventures had all been to protect the peace of the continent. He made the Versailles Continent slightly easier to live it so people wanted to cheer him on and give support.

“Ah, over here….”

Antarosa!

It wasn’t far from the castle he was currently located in the Britten Alliance Kingdom.

“Besides, I think I’ve seen this sculpture before.”

The sculpture of light felt familiar. There was clearly a time in the past that he had seen it.

Title: The sculpture that floats in Antarosa

Title: How far will Weed’s expressive power go?

Title: The candid confession of a sculptor. It is impossible to be imitated by a beginner.

No matter how many posts he saw, no one had seen the original form of this sculpture.

“It is amazing. Doesn’t anyone know its true identity?”

Song Su-cheol thought about it. Weed must have made a sculpture in Antarosa for his Master Quest. If he publicly wrote it on the bulletin board then it might be a hindrance to Weed.

“I need to go hunting as soon as possible. Luckily the wolves breed quickly so it is easy to hunt with a party.”

Song Su-cheol entered the capsule and connected. But he felt empty as he knew something and couldn’t report it.

“I should write a fan letter to Weed-nim.”

Weed’s email recorded on the auction site had already become famous. Thousands of people sent mail every day so it probably wouldn’t be read.

“However I got into Royal Road thanks to Weed-nim.”

Song Su-cheol thought carefully before sending a mail.

Title: Hello Weed-nim.

You might not read this but I am a novice user called Jer living in Edgar Castle in the Britten Alliance Kingdom.

My class is a warrior. I wanted to protect people as well as use various types of weapons.

This time I saw the sculpture that floats in the sky of Antarosa. Weed-nim must’ve come to Edgar Castle to see it.

The dead body of the barbarian warrior that expresses the same features?

I saw the corpse in a dungeon but was killed by a monster. I was too scared to go back to search for items but Weed-nim must’ve seen it judging by the sculpture.

I’d like to talk longer but now I need to connect to Royal Road.

I hope you stay healthy for the peace of the continent.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Edgar Castle!

It was a place crowded with merchants and travellers because it belonged to the Britten Alliance Kingdom. Beginners who chose this place to start could obtain all types of items for a cheap price.

There were many merchants with escort or monster extermination requests so many battle professions were also here. Despite that, quite a significant number of users had left for the north. They were envious of Arpen Kingdom's dynamic economy.

"Looking for a party to hunt red wolves. I am a warrior. I am level 156 and wearing steel armour with 53 durability!"

Jer cried out eagerly in the square. Once a certain level was reached, it would be difficult to hunt unless they went as a party. In Jer's case, he hunted more eagerly than other people and raised his level.

"Shaman looking for a party to hunt red wolves. I am level 174 and have indispensable skills to help people grow."

A female shaman called Sullia was next to Jer. The red wolves had recently become popular so it was easy to obtain a party. The red wolves were level 200 but their leather could be sold at an expensive price so many people hunted them.

A party was made with several professions before leaving to hunt. Jer watched them with envious eyes. If a warrior lacked

ability then the lives of the party would be at risk. When a party fell apart due to a monster, he had the obligation to stay in the hunting ground until the end until he died. That's why warriors were usually the leader of a party but not many people knew Jer.

The users he hunted with in the old days levelled up faster than him and went to other areas. Quite a few people also went to the north. Usually the leader of a party was a warrior and they didn't want 2 warriors so a chance rarely came to Jer. They preferred knights well equipped with armour and familiar with the hunting ground.

Then a level 200 scout called Scott with a fairly high fame in Edgar Castle approached.

"Well, a long talk isn't necessary so would you like to go hunting with us? I have a priest, magician and thief. Everything is prepared."

"Yes, I will."

Jer quickly agreed since this chance wouldn't come often. Scott's hunting party was famous for being efficient so he thought he could follow and raise his level.

"Are you a shaman?"

"Yes."

“Let’s go together.”

“Thank you very much.”

And they started hunting at Mt. Rondis that contained the habitat of the red wolves. Jer and Sullia then encountered a limitless harsh treatment.

“That’s not straight? Bring the monsters. Ah, you’re so slow.”

“Why are you already trying to grasp an item? Our party has rules so that only the people who hunted first can grab anything. You didn’t know that?”

“Later when the hunting ends, you don’t have to worry about the cost of repairs. The party will be hunting all day so prepare your spirit.”

Jer was in charge of pulling the monsters and defending. The party’s other users just maintain their position and attacked. The priest sometimes treated him but it was delayed so he couldn’t help feeling anxious. As a shaman Sullia had to attack, give blessings and heal so she was very busy.

Although they encountered harsh treatment, they couldn’t leave the party because Scott was famous so if he spread rumours it would become more difficult to find another new party.

But a person had followed Jer here from Edgar. He was a person

wearing dirty beginners clothes! He sat behind a tree and carved sculptures while waiting for the hunt to end. Occasionally words were muttered.

"There is a deficit in health insurance this year."

He would sometimes sigh while taking a break.

"Inflation is continuing to rise... The economy is becoming increasingly difficult to live in. It will be hard to live unless I experience a financial windfall."

And he still had a happy dream.

"I need to save eagerly so that I can sleep in."

He continued sculpting while looking at Jer being mistreated by his party. Jer and Sullia worked hard for 3 hours before they were discarded.

"Did you receive the quest to inspect Mt. Bermer?"

"Yes. Now there is an uproar. The quest won't be successful unless I have the rock slash skill."

"We are heading there to. Jer and Sullia isn't part of our regular party so it isn't possible to go there together. Then I'll see you next time."

Jer and Sullia were left there alone.

“Shall we return to the castle again?”

“It will take too much time. Looking around here for a party might be better.”

Other hunting parties were also challenging Mt. Rondis. It wasn’t a dangerous dungeon so people didn’t need two warriors or a shaman. While they were thinking, the person sculpting got up and approached them.

“You are the warrior called Jer right?”

“Yes, that is me.”

Jer tilted his head to one side and looked at the person who spoke to him.

‘Eh. I’ve seen him somewhere.’

The person was dressed like a common beginner but his overall body and voice was familiar. He was clearly someone important.

‘Have I hunted with him? Did he hand me a cheap sword before?’

His memory wasn’t bad but he couldn’t recall no matter how he thought about it. The uninvited visitor said.

“Would you like to hunt with me if you have time?”

“Well, the circumstances mean I don’t have a party so I’d like that.”

Jer willingly came forward. Even if he couldn’t remember, it still felt somewhat good.

“Oh, but Sullia-nim.....”

“It’s okay. You don’t have to worry about me.”

The uninvited visitor became lost in thought as he looked at Sullia.

‘That equipment.’

His first love, the shaman Dain had worn the same type of equipment.

“You may come along as well.”

“Really? Thank you! I’ll work hard.”

She was a shaman so she was more interested in magic than physical combat. Jer and Sullia joined the party of the uninvited guest.

Jer asked.

“Are your other colleagues in a place far from here?”

“The party is only us.”

“Eh? We need to recruit other professions.”

Jer looked at the parties nearby. All of them consisted of different professions so it was impossible to hunt with just a warrior and shaman.

“We will be sufficient.”

The man was brimming with confidence! Sullia smiled brightly and asked.

“Do you have experience hunting the red wolves?”

“I’ve never done it. Although I’ve hunted similar guys.”

“These wolves are stronger than you think. It is impossible with just us....”

While Sullia was saying that, a red wolf wandered behind the visitor.

“Be careful!”

The red wolves had a habit of suddenly attacking when it was close to something. The visitor looked back and frowned.

“Ssup!”

Kakang! Kkang kkang!

The red wolf used its last effort to try and run away but it died! Jer and Sullia were amazed.

If someone was over level 200 and wore armour then they could easily hunt the red wolves. Yet he had killed the red wolf with just his combative spirit!

“The hunting place isn’t here.”

“Then where are we going?”

“We’re going to hunt in a dungeon.”

Dungeon hunting!

He was a warrior so of course he would like to try it. But he knew how dangerous hunting in dungeons was.

“By ourselves? Where is it?”

“Jer-nim knows the location.”

“Me?”

Jer asked with a confused face.

“I don’t know where it is. Were you just teasing me?”

The face of the visitor slowly cleared up.

“Don’t tell me… Perhaps…”

“You noticed. That’s right.”

“Is this a dream?”

“……”

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Drafukin Dungeon!

The average level of the monsters was 430 so it was a dangerous place. Many famous hunting parties in the Britten Alliance Kingdom had to bow their head and leave it. Many hunting parties came there but never reached the end. The degree of danger was higher than normal but it was a comfortable place to raise their level.

“Here.”

Jer guided Weed and Sullia there.

“I hunted here with the Cloud Guild before.”

“Ah, I remember. Didn’t they hold a large publicity campaign and went hunting about 4 months ago?”

“They only reached the 3rd underground floor before having to withdraw. I was following when I fell into a trap and saw the corpse of the barbarian warrior.”

Weed changed his armour and sword to his best equipment. He also used his Sword Polishing and Sword Grinding skill.

“Then let’s go.”

“Are we really going to hunt here?”

Sullia asked in a disbelieving tone.

“Of course. Calling Death Knight Van Hawk, calling the Vampire Lord Torido!”

The hunting preparations were completed after calling the Death Knight and Vampire Lord.

“Please use some movement blessings.”

“I’ll use it now. The meaning is unknown. A cool wind blows. Please make my partners lighter. Even their footsteps will become light. Spirit of the Wolf.”

A shaman could use various blessings to increase movement speed, attack and defense. Even if their healing was weak compared to priests, they were quite useful. Many people travelling to distant cities paid magic to receive movement blessings from a shaman. In Weed’s case he had Yellowy and Wy-3 so he had no particular need for it.

Monsters with a dark affiliation called Drakin appeared on the 1st floor. They looked like a common lizard but were much larger and could use black magic.

Jer and Sullia watched the interesting battle.

“I’ll have no regrets even if I die.”

“I don’t care about dying since I can brag to my friends.”

Weed ordered Van Hawk.

“Go ahead and fight.”

“Understood.”

If it was difficult then he would send in his subordinates first. The Drakin’s black magic was ineffective against the Death Knight’s resistance. Van Hawk had a higher level than the Drakin so he could knock them down safely. But the defense of the Drakin’s skin was high so it didn’t die easily. It would continue to bite or use black magic every time it was hit.

“There should be no problems. Go, Torido.”

Weed also used Torido and the hunt succeeded. He had previous knowledge of the monster. But no matter how much he read about it or watched videos, seeing it in person was different. When he used all his skills to hunt, it was easier than he thought.

“They have fairly strong defense. Concentrate your attacks on one point!”

The Drakin hunting time was reduced thanks to the attacking

one point system. The destructive power of Heriam Fencing's successive attacks was also successful. At first it took 4 minutes to hunt and that time was shortened to 45 seconds.

"It's okay now but I should gather some more help. Summon Sculpture!"

Golden Bird, Silver Bird, Yellowy, Goldman, high elf Eltin and the female barbarian Gernika was called.

With his sculptural lifeforms, Weed could make any party configuration at any time. The only regretful part was that none of his sculptural lifeforms knew how to use holy magic.

Weed's achievements with various religions meant he could hire a priest but he didn't want to do that. Although he needed to be careful with the sculptural lifeforms, he had better things to spend the achievements on than priests.

"Let's go."

Weed walked along with the imposing sculptural lifeforms. Every time 1~2 Drakin emerged, they would immediately receive a concentrated attack. Van Hawk, Torido and the sculptural lifeforms had a strong power so the monsters' lives were easily ended.

"Bahamorg who is Emperor Geihar Von Arpen's warrior is lying here. We need to go to that place. There is no time to rest."

“Ssajakjak!”

The Golden Bird was more diligent than usual when hunting. They finished off the horde on the 1st floor incredibly fast.

Sullia was standing by with treatment magic prepared but there was nothing for her to do. She wasn’t lacking in ability as a low level shaman so it was frustrating as she could only watch the situation.

Weed utilized his bandage skill, his herb knowledge and sewing skill to make first class bandages.

“What is the defensive power of that armour?”

Jer found it strange and asked.

The Drakin rushed at Weed but he didn’t seem to be injured that much. This was the astonishing power of the Goddess’ Knight Armour.

“This armour, it is better than I thought. And I’ve added 900 perseverance and 500 resilience.”

“Keheok.”

Weed carved sculptures and raised his perseverance. He had read

the stories but the hunting was at a fearful standard. The monsters didn't even have a chance to hit them!

Drakins that showed even more fearful battle magic came out on the 2nd floor.

"Golden Bird and Silver Bird, disturb the enemies. Eltin support from behind with arrows."

The sculptural lifeforms were accustomed to hunting with Weed. Jer and Sullia had nothing to do and just watched from behind. This dungeon had too high of a standard so they would only be a nuisance if they went out. But it was a great honour just being able to follow and watch Weed fighting.

Of course, they swallowed their saliva every time the Drakin died. If they could get even a little bit of the spoils then it would be a true jackpot!

Naturally Weed didn't show any signs of noticing. During the battle, Weed was meticulous about picking up japtem even when fighting the Drakin. Jer and Sullia couldn't erase the feeling of being bridesmaids.

"Ah, that's right! I didn't do the party invitation. I often hunt alone. And usually I receive invitations from my colleagues."

Ddiring!

-The King of the Arpen Kingdom Weed-nim has invited you to the party.

Both of them accepted the invitation to join the party.

“Our presence in the party won’t mean much though.”

The level difference meant that the experience received wouldn’t mean much.

“Just wait a moment.”

And the hunt continued once again.

-Your level has increased.

Huge experience from the Drakins! Jer and Sullia wouldn’t receive a lot of experience from the red wolves because their level was too low. However, the hunting speed of Weed and the sculptural lifeforms was too terrifying and their levels rose. The amount of experience accumulated and shot up.

Chapter 10: Bahamorg's Memory

Weed spoke to them.

"There is no great significance on levels. It is better to steadily raise skill proficiency. Even if you raise your level now, it is always better to invest in skills and stats."

He was able to see the characteristics of other battle professions just by looking. Jer was a warrior who fought directly with monsters so he needed to pay attention to his skills.

Weed led the way in battle while they followed. There was high tension because this was a dangerous dungeon but it inevitably became boring since Jer took a back role.

Weed asked him.

"Shouldn't you have high health as a warrior?"

"Yes! But I never guessed I would have a role here."

"Torido, here is a guest."

Even a low levelled warrior could be useful to the party! Jer got his blood absorbed by a vampire so his resilience and vitality increased. It wasn't a special help but Sullia also raised her skill

proficiency by casting blessings and other necessary magic.

They instantly moved to the 2nd and then the 3rd underground floor! There were no special obstacles here. Weed's sculptural lifeforms had been perfectly conditioned in battle. It took a little more time than the 2nd floor but it didn't feel difficult with Weed leading the party.

Jer was worried when first forming the party but the results showed that it was the right thing to do. They didn't even pass through half of the 3rd floor before arriving at the destination.

It was a narrow path barely possible for them to break through. Next to it was a dark cliff.

"It is here. This is the place where I fell down and discovered it. It isn't deep but there are monsters down there with the barbarian corpse so we need to pay attention."

"I understand. This is a dangerous place. Van Hawk, Torido."

"You called."

"Go down at the same time as me."

"Understood, Master."

Weed jumped down with Van Hawk and Torido. But they only

fell down a little bit before wings spread! Torido immediately opened his black cloak which fluttered and stopped them in mid-air.

“Yahaaaak!”

Only Van Hawk fell!While he fell and received the concentrate attack of the monsters, Weed and Torido landed safely. The children of the Drakin lived here.

Golden Bird and Silver Bird followed to join in the attack while others shot arrows. But to Weed they were simply there to clean up the remains.

“Here.”

Weed discovered the body of a dead barbarian leaning against the wall.

Hero Bahamorg of the Arpen Empire. His body had died on the battlefield and returned to stone. He was in a dreadful state with arrows, axes and broken swords driven into his body.

“He really is dead.”

It really took a lot of time to find him for this quest. He searched all of Antarosa and several traces in the Thor Kingdom before he was able to find it.

“Anyway, it is lucky that I found it.”

Weed looked at the memories in the sculpture.

“Inspect!”

-You have observed the corpse of a sculptural lifeform.

Confirmation of detailed information is impossible.

-Name: Bahamorg

Alignment: Aggressive

Level: 577

Species: Barbarian

Profession: Iron Blood Warrior

Title: Immortal Warrior

Fame: 8,932

A life form that Emperor Geihar gave life to. He is always at the forefront of battle and brought numerous victories for the Arpen Empire against strong monsters.

In the past he was a legendary hero of the Arpen Empire but now hardly anyone knows him anymore. His loyalty and affection to Emperor Geihar was special.

He continued moving around the continent and fighting after the Arpen Empire split apart until he eventually died from his wounds.

+ Can handle all weapons.

+ Steel like vitality and resilience.

+ Can increase the defense and morale of allies through yells.

+ Full of life like a fountain.

+ Master of protection skills.

+ Excellent magic resistance.

+ High concentration.

+ Not verified.

+ Not verified.

+ Special skill: Not verified.

+ Not verified.

And Weed saw Bahamorg's memories.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

"Your name is now Bahamorg."

"Understood. But I will live my life for myself."

Bahamorg was born in the period of the Arpen Empire. And his life was spent fighting from beginning to end. He fought enemies and monsters in plains, deserts, cliffs, caves, marshlands etc. He defeated wild animals in the snow and monsters attacking cities.

"Kuhaaaah!"

A wild cry would ring out.

"If there is an enemy then I'll get rid of it. I like fighting."

Blades and arrows couldn't penetrate his body as he broke through gates with his incredible strength. Even the rush of a

troop of knights that felt like a mountain couldn't press him back.

Bahamorg grew into the hero of the Arpen Empire. And after the death of Emperor Geihar, he fought to protect the sculptural lifeforms.

"I am the Emperor's... Now I don't have anyone to live for."

Bahamorg constantly showed his devotion for Emperor Geihar. He helped other sculptural lifeforms while returning to Antarosa. His depressed will weakened his strong body. His myriad wounds were continuously aggravated and poison spread through his entire body. Monsters and assassins also attacked him along the way.

Eventually he was forced to stop for treatment while heading to Antarosa. In the end he was attacked by Drakins in this dungeon and thus the best warrior in the Arpen Empire died.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Ddiring!

-You have obtained the information necessary for the Hero Bahamorg quest.

If you tell the Ellyons about his final moments then the request will be completed.

Weed stood in front of the barbarian's corpse. Jer and Sullia understood that the barbarian corpse was for a quest so they waited quietly. Weed close his eyes and examined the videos that he saw.

He was a warrior that used his own body to win against the attacks from his enemies. That was how Bahamorg became a great warrior.

"He is indeed worth of being called a hero."

He missed Emperor Geihar so he returned to Antarosa only to die. A warrior that overcame any pain couldn't endure the pain in his heart.

"Isn't this herb really good?"

"It makes my skin more beautiful."

"Gol gol gol. I'd like to apply it as well."

Suddenly he heard the sound of Gernika, Eltin and Goldman rubbing a herb good for the skin onto their face! Yellowy was also eating the herb.

"Whew."

A sigh naturally emerged from Weed's mouth. The impression that Bahamorg left on him also disappeared!

"There is no need to go back right now."

Weed had found Bahamorg. The warrior that devoted his life to the Arpen Empire was now lying alone. Weed respected him as a warrior so he couldn't stand it. Of course he needed to revive him and make him work forever.

"Sculpture Life Bestowal!"

-Life was given to the corpse of the hero Bahamorg.

The sculptural lifeform has gained new life.

The effect of carving the sculpture isn't applied and the level will be reduced by 5% from when it was alive.

It hadn't been possible for Weed to hunt while making the Garden of the Gods. Since then, he went with his colleagues to King Belsos' Tomb and to face the Sulleions so he reached level 416. The level and art stat that he painstakingly raised had decrease but it was worth it to restore Bahamorg to life.

The fossilized body of Bahamorg started moving again. The weapon struck body that was leaning against the wall gradually woke up. The hero of the Arpen Empire had been awoken by Weed after a long time.

“This place is.....”

Bahamorg spoke with a bewildered face. A long time had passed so it wasn’t easy to remember the past. Weed wished that he had forgotten everything.

‘That way I can cram my teachings into him.’

Bahamorg shook his head and spoke in a low and heavy voice.

“Ah, His Majesty Emperor Geihar died and I was on the way to Antarosa.”

“.....”

Perfect memory. Unlike Goldman whose body was destroyed, Bahamorg only had severe injuries.

Weed started pretending.

“I am Weed and I respect His Majesty Emperor Geihar so I walked along the path of a sculptor.”

“I am Bahamorg. Am I alive thanks to you?”

“We’ll be together often in the future. You have many injuries so

please stay still. I'll treat you."

"I....."

Sullia tried to go out but she was detained with a whisper! First impressions were important so he applied the bandages gently.

"Geez, it must hurt a lot."

Weed gently pulled weapons and arrows out of Bahamorg's body. He could rework these items and sell them out!

'They're in pretty good condition.'

He could estimate a price for these items. As soon as the weapons were recovered, Bahamorg's recovery rate was on par with a troll. He even recognized Golden Bird.

"Senolia... Why are you here?"

"Bahamorg, it has been a really long time."

"Everything is still confusing."

Bahamorg and Golden Bird felt less burdened now that they had met each other again. They started sharing memories of Emperor Geihar. One thing was clear to Weed.

The past was over. The patron guardian of the Arpen Empire would work for him in the future.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Jer and Sullia also rode the wyverns back to Morata. They had decided to settle in the north after meeting Weed.

“The shacks are relatively cheap homes so please have fun in the future.”

“Yes. Thank you very much.”

“Then I’m going to leave.”

There were a lot of interesting places to see in Morata so their interest in Weed decreased. Morata was the choice place for beginners ever since things about it started being broadcasted. Information about various famous places in Morata such as Painter’s Hill was broadcasted.

They busily started settling down in Morata. Weed watched them go with warm eyes.

“That is two more people I can get taxes from.”

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The Vent Castle merchant Gamong!

“I’ve heard a lot of rumours. You have brought the precious olives! There really are a lot of people looking for it these days. Of course a fair price will be struck.”

-Large scale profit has been gained. Fame has increased by 126.

-You have succeeded in a series of transactions and your Accounting skill proficiency has risen to Intermediate level 2.

You can gain a higher price when buying and selling goods.

The ability to trick naive buyers has been gained.

-You have acquired trade experience.

“Hehehe, thank you very much.”

She sold all her goods from Morata at Vent Castle. Her skill proficiency quickly increased while the amount of transportation reached 12 carriages.

“I heard that the merchant Gamong is building a lot of wealth these days.”

“Gamong’s commerce ability is great. Her mindset of helping people while gaining a profit…. It is a fine merchant attitude.”

“Do you want to learn about trading? Then it would be good for you to learn from merchant Gamong. She can sell goods obtained from Morata at an expensive price.”

The merchant users needed to be sensitive to rumours. Beginners would submit to danger and travel to further places just for an extra 4 coppers added to the price of olives.

Buying cheap and selling for an expensive price! When the quantity was enough to fill one carriage, the price difference added up to a large amount. If they delivered regularly and gained large profit then their fame would rise. A merchant’s fame was very important in regards to quest success rates and compensation.

“Who is Gamong?”

“Is she the best merchant for selling grocery supplies from Morata?”

Many merchant users wanted to meet Gamong. Novice merchants had no capital when first handling food! Morata’s agricultural products were high quality so they were good for growing in the beginning stages. With the dignity of a proud city, Morata traded to various places.

“Mister, I’ve arrived.”

“It is dawn so you’ve come early today.”

“Yes. So that the items will be fresh. Today I have twelve carriages full of goods.”

“I’ll only buy fresh goods from merchant Gamong. The price is also a bit cheaper than yesterday. What else is necessary?”

“Do you have any iron pieces?”

“There isn’t a large volume… But if it is merchant Gamong then I have to accept!”

The novice merchants who heard the conversation between Gamong and the customer were shocked. If other people spoke then there would be no interest in trading.

-Maybe I’ll take something for a fair price. If you don’t want to sell it then take it to the road.

-You want to reduce the price of something? I won’t sell so look elsewhere.

Yet they praised merchant Gamong!

“Excuse me, are you possibly a merchant from the Central Continent?”

A beginner merchant carrying japtem in his bag gathered up the courage to ask.

“Nope. I started in Morata. I am part of the Toadstool group in the Grass Porridge Cult.”

“Ah... Then how were you able to become so famous?”

There was a rule among the merchants in the Central Continent. Never ask for someone else’s trade routes. They respected knowledge but didn’t share it with anyone else. Because a merchant was an occupation that required going around to build connections and trade. Gamong differed in this area from other people.

“I mainly trade in Vent Castle.”

“Vent Castle....”

“Ah! Vent Castle that nobody can enter! I’ve seen it on the bulletin boards. You really went there to trade?”

“Yes!”

Gamong informed the beginner merchants of a method.

“I can introduce you to Vent Castle. They are still lacking many

groceries. Will you buy some and come with me to Vent Castle?”

“Thank you very much.”

“I’ll never forget this.”

Most beginner merchants focused on scraping together japtem and trading to the distant Central Continent. However over 100 merchants entered Vent Castle.

“Gamong introduced you so you can enter.”

“If Gamong recommends you then I can trust you and begin trading.”

“This is really fresh milk. I’ve been looking for this. I’ll like to buy it before it become popular so do you have anymore? I am willing to pay 17 copper for one bottle!”

The novice merchants scored a big profit in Vent Castle. Even if the among an individual bough wasn’t a lot, they still gained more than they spent so it was a large victory for them. Since then a sincere trade route operated between Morata and Vent Castle.

“Many people are entering these days and it is possible to know the taste of beer. I’m lacking many things these days so should I go trade?” I should be able to gain a little bit.”

“I’ll have it tomorrow!”

Merchants started to believe it was possible to succeed in the north and began moving there with their transportation carriages. The Arpen Kingdom had expanded so trade also developed with other villages.

“Did you stop by Ekwinok?”

“No. I sold all my goods in Armang village.”

“I don’t have anything left either… I have to return to Morata quickly. All the dungeon supplies in Yusellin village have been consumed so they are having a tough time!”

The novice merchants carried the necessary goods and energetically went around the north. Warriors and knights weren’t the only ones relevant to a kingdom. The activities of the merchants helped in fattening the kingdom. Village development, birth rate, technology, culture, economy, food production etc. all grew thanks to the sweaty efforts of the merchants. The merchants formed a trade bridge from Morata to the entire north.

Gamong didn’t have the monopoly any longer so she gave up a lot of wealth. Vent Castle was missing many goods but other merchants bought them so it was difficult to sell at an expensive price.

“Hehehe, it is still very good that Vent Castle is developing.”

Gamong believed that the merchants could live once the entire north developed. If Arpen Kingdom expanded and developed then the merchants would become wealthier. Gamong would drink toadstool porridge while talking to other merchants about her intentions.

“Gamong-nim’s idea is correct. I’ll try harder. Kuuuk.”

“Tokkung-nim, are you okay?”

“I have 870 health left… I didn’t die.”

“If it is like this then I should seize more spoons.”

The merchants sold quality products and also spread Morata’s culture and politics around the north.

“Ibellin Castle hasn’t accepted anyone yet. Did Gamong-nim succeed?”

“Not yet. But things will be sold there eventually. Morata’s goods are high quality so the odds are in my favour!”

Merchants risked their lives and property while challenging the north. Naturally Arpen Kingdom’s influence and economic power expanded together with them.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The Dark Gamer branch in Morata.

They frequently gathered at a pub in Bull Square. Many tourists and users had flocked to Morata. There were also many places to hunt in the north so the Dark Gamers were active in this area.

“This city is good because the prices are really cheap.”

“That’s because the taxes are low.”

“The disadvantage is that the compensation for escort quests is low.”

“Yet this is still a good place for everything. It is truly wonderful.”

Participation in war or dangerous things like escorting through dungeons was a source of income for the Dark Gamers. Morata was peaceful so they got less money from the requests than in other places.

That’s why the Dark Gamers were hermit types or those who wished for adventures to grow. This place had an active market, artwork, squares, cathedral, a large library, the Research Tower, Hestia’s Forge and the Garden of the Gods so it had the best infrastructure. Taxes were low and there were no fees for dungeons or hunting grounds.

That's why many high level users threw away their positions to come to the distant north. The completed Grand Buildings and Garden of the Gods meant that mid-level users could easily grow. It was to the extent that a small village made of migrants from the Central Continent formed in a matter of days. The relatively high level users significantly expanded the population, causing a higher tax income and quicker development.

The Dark Gamer branch set up in Morata thrived after just one week.

On the second floor of the pub.

The Dark Gamers were holding an important meeting.

"I heard that the power of the Hermes Guild is rapidly expanding from people who participated in the war on the Central Continent."

"They are intensively recruiting mercenaries and Dark Gamers so it is clear they are preparing for a war."

The Dark Gamers were spread across the entire continent. News about the continent's affairs was learnt through them.

The Hermes Guild, Cloud Guild, Lion Star, Roam Guild and Black Sword Mercenaries. They were the prestigious guilds that divided and ruled the land on the continent.

“The Hermes Guild secretly interfered in the affairs of the Tullen Kingdom.”

“The expansion is very quick and dangerous.”

If they added the Tullen Kingdom to Haven and Kallamore then the Hermes Guild would become even bigger.

“What is the power of the other guilds compared to the Hermes Guild?”

“It’s hard to guess but the Hermes Guild should be two or three times stronger than the others. The other guilds are a problem but the Hermes Guild is the biggest threat.”

The Dark Gamers didn’t want one power to control the Versailles Continent. They didn’t wish for incessant turmoil and war. They wanted a continent overflowing with freedom and the spirit of adventures.

“Once the winner on the Central Continent is decided, they will expand to other places. It is only a matter of time until they reach the north. The places where we can live from now on will become increasingly less.”

The Dark Gamers sensed the impending crisis. They couldn’t let go of their profits on the continent.

“But what we can do?”

The circumstances were different for each Dark Gamer but profit was their priority. Even if they had strong individual ability, it would be difficult to deal with a guild capable of taking over the Central Continent.

“We do things that can be done. Think about why we’re in Morata.”

“It is easy, free and good for everyone.

“Whoever controls the Central Continent will fight against this Arpen Kingdom later on.”

“That is certain but the Arpen Kingdom is incapable.”

The Dark Gamers assessed that the Arpen Kingdom had a high development possibility. There were many beginners and migrants from the Central Continent. The development speed was wonderful but its power can’t oppose the military might of the guilds from the Central Continent.

“The king’s military is poor. He hasn’t promoted the kingdom or ruled over the territory that well.”

“I heard news that Vargo Fortress is starting mine development.”

“Can’t we join the military?”

If the Dark Gamers joined Arpen Kingdom’s military then there was no doubt that there would be an enormous power boost. But they were individuals who acted for profit so they weren’t suited for obeying the commands of others or leading on the battlefield.

“We do things that can be done. Everyone should’ve been in the library.”

“Of course we’ve gone. That place is useful to investigate quests.”

“Many people come to Arpen Kingdom just for its large libraries.”

“There are many requests piled up there.”

“It is like you said. I was surprised to see it.”

Beginners and users who received quests while talking to the residents or hunting would register it at the library. The unsolved quests were stacked and ranked from lowest to highest difficulty. Morata had many beginners so it was mainly quests with low difficult but there were requests with various restrictions and high difficulty.

“We should attack those quests aggressively. It will also help the Arpen Kingdom.”

“That is a good idea.”

The Dark Gamers decided to collect profit from quests and this would also benefit the Arpen Kingdom.

Pioneering, subduing monsters, treasure hunt, discoveries etc. The completion of these quests would be useful to the Arpen Kingdom in various ways.

“Will this power be enough for the Arpen Kingdom?”

“It will count.”

“If we start to move then other Dark Gamers will as well.”

“I’ve posted about the quests obtained from the library and a lot of people have joined.”

The Dark Gamers started playing a strong role in the background of Arpen Kingdom. The Morata branch informed the Dark Gamers of their decision through their bulletin boards. They garnered the sympathy of the Dark Gamers playing an active role in the central, east, south and west continents.

Traditionally their policy stated that they wouldn’t fight directly against any guilds or kingdoms. But if they secretly supported the Arpen Kingdom then it wouldn’t harm them.

“The Arpen Kingdom… How fascinating.”

“I knew Weed from his time in Continent of Magic. He always did everything alone. Now it will be okay if we go hunting or adventuring around Morata.”

The Dark Gamers flocked to Arpen Kingdom.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The capital of the Lasalle Kingdom surrendered to the Hermes Guild after two days. It was a situation where everyone couldn’t help looking up to the military power of the Hermes Guild.

-They will pay attention to managing the domestic affairs of the Lasalle Kingdom for now.

-The Hermes Guild needs to consolidate our power in Lasalle before people ally against them.

However the Hermes Guild’s next move was contrary to their expectations. They arrived at the border of the Britten Alliance Kingdom 10 days after occupying Lasalle Kingdom.

“Show them the dignity of the great Haven Empire.

“The Hermes Guild is unbeatable.”

Thousands of knights. And the military troops surpassed 550,000 people. The knights gripped their swords all at once.

“Beat the drums to signal the attack!”

A violent assault with the sound of drums.

A clash with the prestigious Cloud Guild that controlled the Britten Alliance Kingdom was inevitable. This was the biggest war that would occur on the continent.